

NOVELSGURU.COM

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PROLOGUE

I kept my focus on the ceiling as he kept on pumping, I no longer feel anything in that department. I just let him do his thing, take control of my body, my heart, and my soul to his greatest satisfaction. At first it was disgusting, or rather after the whole ordeal I'd be very disgusted with myself but now I have trained my mind to no longer focus much on it. After all, there's nothing I can do about it.

Makhathini has been doing this to me for 5 years now, I became his "wife" after his wife died. He didn't want to find anyone else whilst I was around at his house. Makhathini and his wife adopted me when I was 10 years old, I spent most of my life in an orphanage somewhere in KwaZulu-Natal. His wife couldn't have kids, by then they were residing in Kzn before relocating to Johannesburg. He was against the whole adoption thing, he hated me since from day one. See, he is a cultural man and doesn't take kindly to the modern ways of living, and that is

adoption. He couldn't understand why his wife couldn't bear him any children. I've witnessed him abusing her on a daily basis and she took it in, the following day she would smile as if like nothing happened. Just to keep peace in the house. She died a terrible death, she was brutally murdered by what we think is Makhathini's rival, she never got justice because the perpetrator was never found.

Makhathini is in the taxi business, back at Kzn he used to work at some construction company, when the company shut down he had made enough money to get himself a taxi in Johannesburg.

Round about now, he has at least 6 taxis and he still wants more... When I became his "wife" at the age of 16, he didn't hesitate with the sexual abuse. I felt pregnant and had an abortion, I think I've had 3-4 abortions thus far until I found out about contraception. A condom is not even up for discussion with him. He has made sly comments about me not "falling pregnant" in actual fact, I wouldn't bring a child into this environment. What if I have a girl with him, I feel like the baby is going to suffer at his hand. I don't see him being a loving

NOVELSGURU.COM

father, although we live with his 14 year old Daughter. He had a child with another woman, and his late wife was kind enough to mother her until she passed on. God bless rest her soul..

Bongeka's Mom is in Kzn, Makhathini cut off any communication between them. It got harder when we all moved down here in Johannesburg. After the death of his wife, I had to resume the role of being a mother to Bongeka.

I laid there and quickly drifted to a world of my own that I've created, one where there is so much peace. I must say, it keeps me sane. His groans and moaning got a bit louder next to my ear, his one hand found its way to my neck and he choked me. I closed my eyes and tried so hard to not give him the satisfaction that he is hurting me, that he is taking a piece of me. I have mastered the art of being silent, I don't even moan I just keep very quiet except for my unstable breathing. I was sweating and so was he, his moan got louder whilst his hand was still choking me. I bit my lower lip to have this

NOVELSGURU.COM

over and done with, tonight he is taking a bit longer than expected.. I let him do his thing, while I found peace in my imaginary world, a world where all of this cruelty doesn't exist. I let it only exist in my reality but not in my mental state. He moaned louder one last time as he came deep inside of me, I was glad that it was finally done. Now I can breath...

I expected him to get off immediately but he didn't, he still laid ontop of me and I took in all his weight, I dared not to move until he moves.. This is my life, this has been my life for the past 5 years, I'm 21 years old now and I wonder how long it's going to take before he eventually kills me..

I AM NONGCEBO AND THIS IS MY STORY01

I do the same routine every morning. I wake up at 4am, prepare Makhathini's bath and then make him breakfast. He is not a big fan of bread, he would rather eat soft than to touch bread. At times, he

NOVELSGURU.COM

would eat yesterday's left overs. When he takes his bath I'm left to iron his clothes, then when he starts dressing up I put the breakfast on the dining table and switch on the TV for the morning live news.

Makhathini is 40 years old, he's old enough to be my Father and yet he is doing all these disgusting and unspeakable things to me..

After preparing everything I don't go back to bed, Bongeka gets up at 5am and by 6:30 she has to be on her way to school. She schools a bit far from home, at some private school. When Bongki is gone, that's when I can go back to bed and rest... I made my way to him with a dish cloth so that he can wipe his hands, by now he had moved from the news on TV to reading a newspaper..

Him: Any plans for today?

Me: I need to go buy groceries later on He cleared his throat..

Him: Uzoshaya ucingo (you'll call me)

I'm not allowed to go anywhere alone, or should I say anywhere far alone. I can roam around the hood that he has no problem with because he has almost every eye watching me, and if I wanna go to town he will send one of his boys to take me.. He provides for me very well that I won't lie, he buys me clothes and everything but all of that is not worth the pain that he puts me through..

I heard him making his way into the kitchen, my heart almost stopped. I was shaking while washing last night's dishes, I am dead scared of this man. I felt him standing behind me, he was standing very close to me

Him: Ngizokubona ngeskhathi (I see you later) Me: Yebo

He kissed me on my cheek while grabbing my ass, I stopped what I was doing for a moment. Then I heard him walking away, now I can finally breathe...

I looked at the time and it was 4:45, I prepared Bongeka's bath.

Bongeka is a very good child, we get along very well .. I knocked twice in her room..

Me: Bongki

She didn't say anything. I knocked again twice and then I opened the door, she was still fast asleep.

Getting Bongki out of bed in the mornings is very difficult, especially when it's cold. At times I literally have to drag her out of bed. My relationship with her is very good, she is very respectful and I'm grateful for that. She is aware of the abuse that goes down under this roof, Makhathini doesn't even care about his Daughter's mental state. I've never come across such a ruthless and cruel man.. She rubbed her eyes..

Me: Wake up or you'll be late for school
Her: I think I'm sick

Me: Nice try.. You going to school, end of story

I walked out to prepare something for her, at least she's not complicated. She eats cereal, and I make her a lunchbox that she takes with to school. As soon as she leaves, I get my much needed rest....

I was woken up by a knock at the door, we live in the hood. In a 6 room house, it's nice I can't complain.

We have an alarm system, only because our previous dog attacked the meter man so we had to take it to SPCA. I checked the time and it was 11am, I had two missed calls from Makhathini. Just when I was about to gather my strength and get out of bed, I heard the kitchen door opening..

Makhathini: Noli!! (shouting)

That wasn't good, that wasn't a good sign. He stormed into the bedroom with his gun in his hand, out of fear I sat up straight.. He gave me a vicious look..

Him: Kunini uBanele akokota? (Banele has been knocking)

Me: I must have overslept

Him: To a point where you didn't even hear your phone ringing?

Me: It's on vibration

Him: Noli ungisusa emsebenzini ngento engekho?(You made me leave work for nothing)

Me: Ngiyaxolisa Zulu ngeke kuphinde kwenzekke (I'm sorry, it won't happen again)

Him: For your sake I hope not

Banele must've been knocking for a very long time, I think he ended up calling Makhathini thinking that something is wrong. I exhaled in relief when he walked out and I got out of bed to take a bath..

I went to the lounge and I heard them talking outside on the stoep, He was scolding him .. A lot of people would ask why I haven't ran away? I tried that situation and he found me. I didn't get far because I didn't have anyone to run too, yes I had a bit of my money I could've checked myself into a lodge for a while but Makhathini found me and I paid heavily for that. He even stopped giving me hard cash as a punishment, Banele is going to be the one paying for everything..

NOVELSGURU.COM

I took off my nightgown and turned to the big mirror on the bathroom wall, I still have the bruise from last week. My mind quickly took me back to that night, I had gone out to the local shop a bit late and delayed so much that when I made it back home Makhathini was there and he thought that I had gone out to see someone. He beat me up, I could still feel the sole of his shoe against my skin. I cried and begged him but he went on until he was convinced that I had been punished enough.. A knock disturbed me, I quickly wiped my tears and wore my gown again..

Makhathini: Noli

I went and opened..

Him: uBanele une R2 000, uzothenga konke okufunayo (Sticks has R2000 with him, you'll buy everything that you need)

Me: Ngiyabonga (Thank you)

His eyes went down on me, he lowered my gown exposing my nipple. He played with his thumb around my nipple.. I closed my eyes.

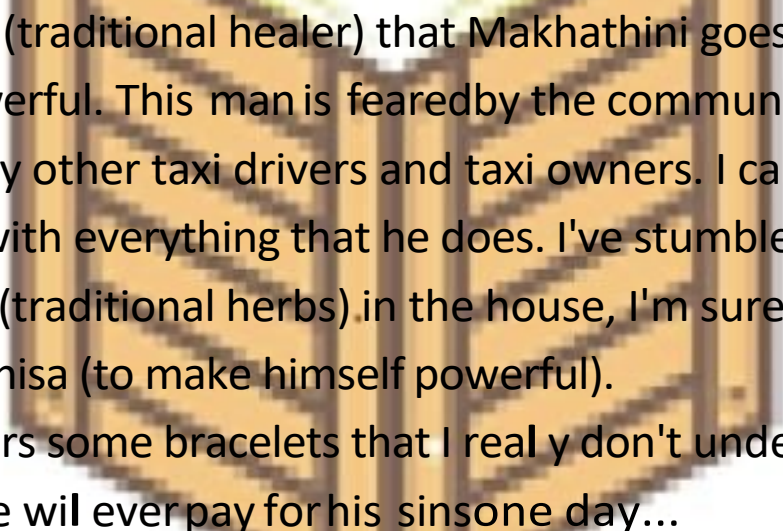
NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I will call you when you are in town
Me: Okay

He fixed me and then gave me a kiss, he then left. I locked and leaned against the door with my eyes closed, I waited for my heart to beat normal again. Lord knows how much this man scares me...

.

To be continued 02



The Inyanga (traditional healer) that Makhathini goes to must be very powerful. This man is feared by the community, respected by other taxi drivers and taxi owners. I can say he gets away with everything that he does. I've stumbled upon a lot of muthi (traditional herbs) in the house, I'm sure he uses that ukuziqinisa (to make himself powerful). He also wears some bracelets that I really don't understand. I wonder if he will ever pay for his sins one day...

NOVELSGURU.COM

I like going out to the mall, at times I force Banele to drive me to a mall that's far from our hood just so I can get fresh air. I'm always cooped up at home being a "housewife". He doesn't want me to work, he told me straight that I don't need a job when he provides for me, everything I want I get so what do I need a job for? Did I mention that he is very insecure? He randomly checks my phone to see if I'm not chatting to a guy. At least he allowed me to complete my Matric, I passed it very well. I thought I was going to continue maybe go to tertiary but he shut that dream quickly by making me a stay at home "wife".

As the car moved, I focused on the view. The beautiful houses that we passed, the weather was sunny and I enjoyed the ride. I enjoyed day dreaming about a life better than this one.. I got a text message from him:

"Anikafiki".. (You haven't arrived)

NOVELSGURU.COM

I swallowed first before replying.. "Asikafiki"..

(No we haven't arrived yet)

I looked at my phone waiting for his reply but he didn't reply, I put my phone on my thigh..

Banza: Ngiyaxolisa uma ngikufake enkingeni (I'm sorry if I've caused any trouble for you)

Despite everything that I'm going through, I don't let it change me. I'm a humble, friendly, and loving person. I don't allow Makhathini to change that.. I smiled at him as he was looking at me through the rear view mirror..

Me: Ungabine worry (Don't worry)

He smiled and concentrated on the road.....

Banza brought me back to reality from a world of my own, when I looked out of the window it was damn busy. Taxis here were just driving as if like there were no road rules, they just cut in and pretend like nothing happened. I don't see myself driving in this place, I freeze and then get stuck in

the middle of the road causing nothing but disturbance to the other drivers..

Banza: Sesifikile (we are here)

He was waiting for me to give him an order.. To be honest I'm not quite familiar with Pretoria, it's literally my first time being here. I looked around, it was very crowded and I was getting a bit dizzy, it looks so complicated where to from here? Banza was just driving around waiting for an order..

Me: I don't really know this place Banza, let's drive around until we find something..

Him: Yes Mam'

We were in his conquest, such an old car but it got us here. I don't know why Makhathini didn't give him his BMW 320i, it's a 2015 model.. Makhathini's call came through, I answered...

Me: Zulu

I've gotten used to calling him that ever since I stepped foot in his house when I was 10, at first he

hated it because he couldn't love a child that was not his. As time went on and I grew up to be a young woman, he eventually accepted. We have an odd relationship, at times he treats me like a child, he reprimands me like one too. I think we have kept the Father and Daughter relationship stronger than the "wife" and "husband" relationship that we have. I am not his wife legally, he just made me one right off the bat.

Him: Anikafiki namanje? (You not there yet) Me:

Sesifikile (We have arrived)

Him: Namhlanje why nithathe iskhathi? (Why did you take long today)

Me: Sise pitori Zulu

I dare not call him by his first name, unless I want trouble..

Him: ePitori? Nidlule zonke izitolo naya ePitori? (Pta? You passed all these stores and went to Pta)

I swallowed, I could've lied but I'm not a very good liar. He knows how to suck the truth out of me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Kwenziwani engaka ePitori? (What's been done there)

I didn't know what to say, I heard someone calling him..

Him: Sizoyixoxa kahle le ndaba (We will discuss this matter further)

He hung up.. It was suddenly quiet in the car, he has just made me uncomfortable with that statement. I saw Banza pulling up to what looked like a mall or something..

Him: Mhlambe le ungayijabulela? (Maybe you'll like this one)

I nodded..

Me: Ngiyabonga Banza Thank you)

He got out from his side and came to open the door for me, I got out and he closed the door...

.

To be continued

Abezi 25 bazosithola phambili, they will find us on

NOVELSGURU.COM



the road

03

KELSO BHEMBE (KB)

We were parked in an Alley observing Carlos as he made the exchange with a guy wearing a suit....

Me: Where the fuck is Station? Sole:

Relax Kels

My phone vibrated, I checked it. It was a call from Prison..

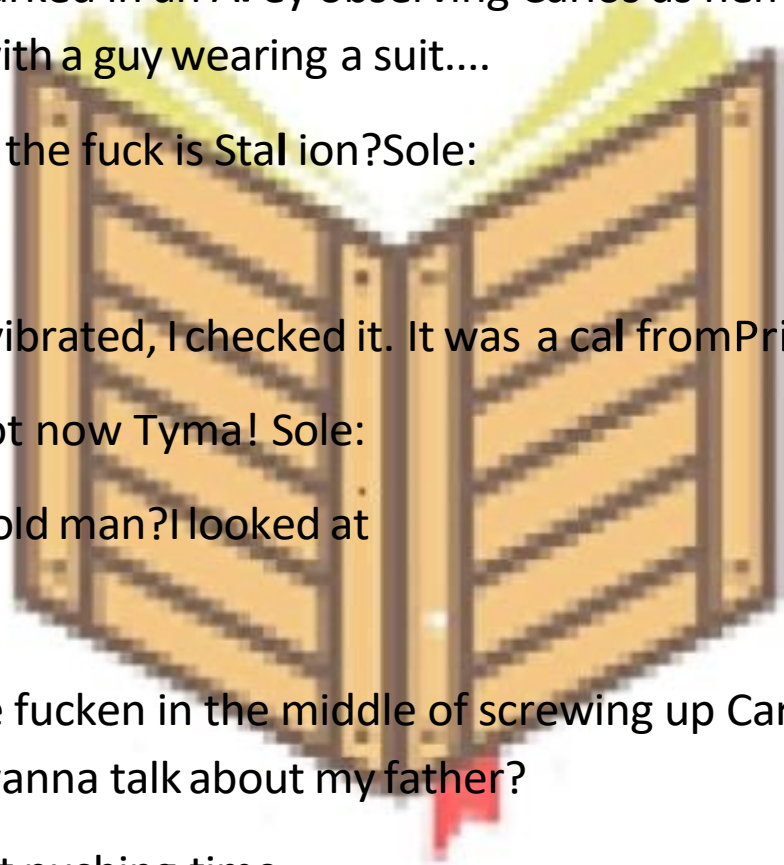
Me: Eish not now Tyma! Sole:

How is the old man? I looked at him..

Me: We are fucken in the middle of screwing up Carlos and you really wanna talk about my father?

Sole: I'm just pushing time

Me: Push time by watching porn and jerking off!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lead us Sole, be the fucken captain of the cumsquad!

Sole: What the fuck is wrong with you? I kept quiet..

Me: If that son of a sea biscuit Stal ion doesn't show up! I swear I'm going to fuck him up!

Sole: He's here

Me: It's about time!

We both got out of the car as Stal ion parked behind us..

Me: Where the fuck have you been?

I walked up to his car and opened the door then dragged him out..

Me: You think this is fucken game? I put my foot on his neck..

Me: You think we here to play? Sole:

Kels cut it out Man!

He pushed me off.. **NOVELSGURU.COM**



Station: Always a pleasure Kels

Me: I'll fucken cut your balls right now!

Sole: Stop this nonsense! Carlos is going to getaway!

We all made our way to Carlos, we took out our guns. He spotted us and tried to make a run for it, but we had already tailed..

Me: Don't make me fucken shoot you Carlos! Your brains on the ground won't be appetizing

Carlos: Kels what is this now? Sole aimed his gun at the Client..

Sole: Please put your motherfucken hands where I can see them Sir

The client put his hands on his head..Sole:

Perfect!

Me: My my my.. You sneaky Italian sly! What do we have here?

I opened the briefcase that was on top of the bonnet..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Carlos: That's 50 grand but it's not for Carlos

Station went to check for any weapons in the car. I closed the briefcase and made my way to Carlos..

Me: Let's talk for a second

I put my arm over his shoulders and we started walking..

Me: Carlos this is my territory, I've warned you before

Carlos: It's just a clean transaction, Carlos doing business here

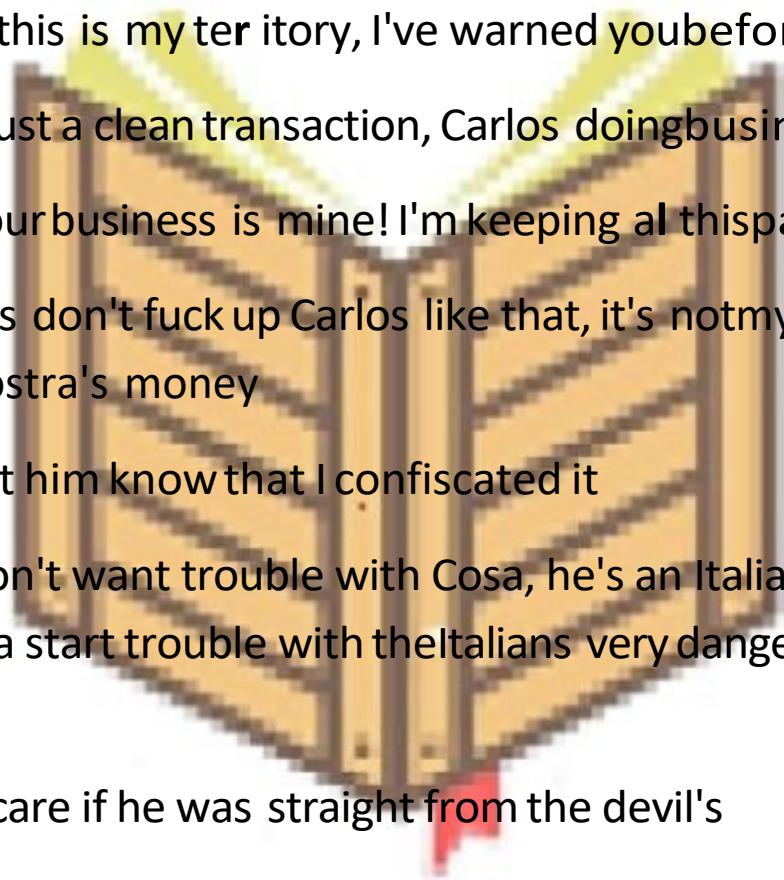
Me: Now your business is mine! I'm keeping all this paper

Him: No Kels don't fuck up Carlos like that, it's not my money!
It's Cosa Nostra's money

Me: Well let him know that I confiscated it

Him: You don't want trouble with Cosa, he's an Italian God. You don't wanna start trouble with the Italians very dangerous Sons of bitches

Me: I don't care if he was straight from the devil's



NOVELSGURU.COM

asshole! This is my territory and I'm keeping the money!

Him: Why you keep creating problems for Carlos? I thought we were friends

Me: No I thought we were friends! You and me I thought we were tight more than a virgin's hole! But there you are breaking my virgin's hymen Carlos..

She's bleeding and there's no turning back Him:

Virgins can turn to whores

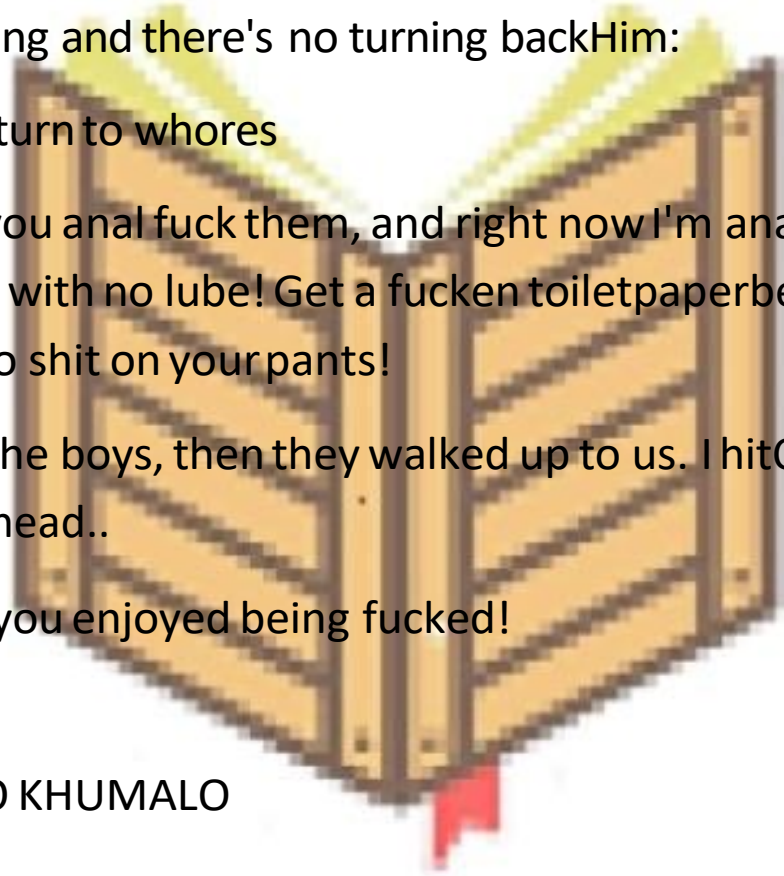
Me: Not if you anal fuck them, and right now I'm anal fucking you with no lube! Get a fucken toilet paper because you going to shit on your pants!

I looked at the boys, then they walked up to us. I hit Carlos at the back of his head..

Me: I hope you enjoyed being fucked!

NONGCEBO KHUMALO

I learned that we were walking inside the sunnypark



NOVELSGURU.COM

shopping center. It was breath taking..

Me: This is beautiful Banza wouldn't you say? Him: It is,
I'm glad you smiling

Me: A different environment for a change

We made our way to checkers, he took the trolley.. Banza:

Budget R2 000

Me: Noted

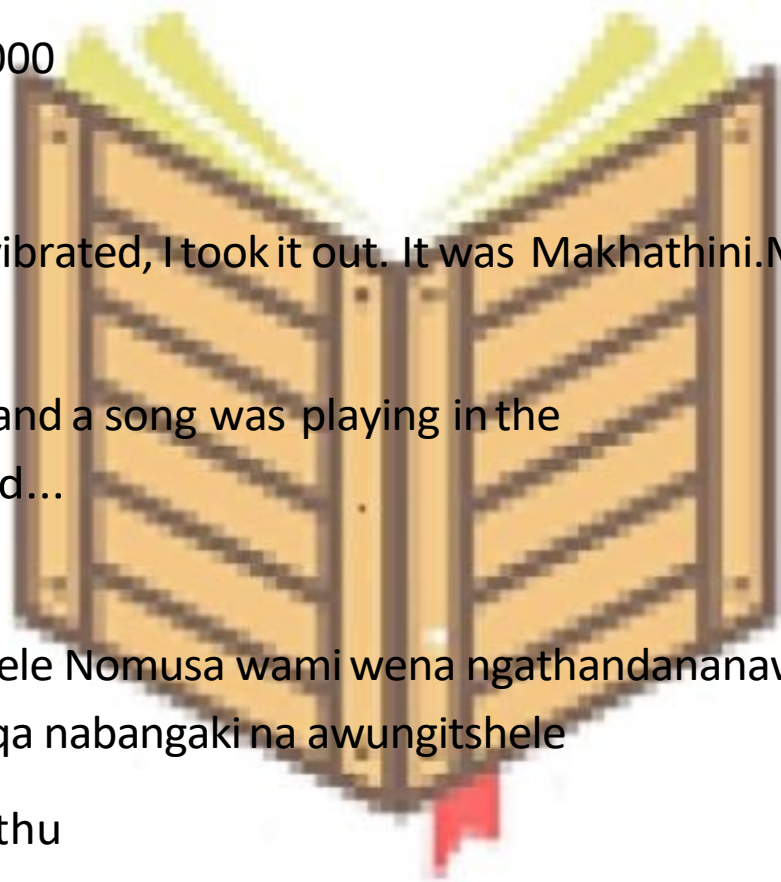
My phone vibrated, I took it out. It was Makhathini. My heart
dropped.

I answered and a song was playing in the
background...

"Awungitshela Nomusa wami wena ngathandanawe
wangibhanqa nabangaki na awungitshela

Babebathathu

Kwakungamele ukuthi ningibhanqe nabantu abaningi
ngoba nani niyazi kulomhlaba kunezifokwakumele
nithande mina ngedwa"



NOVELSGURU.COM

It was ironic that he would be playing such a song right at this moment..

Him: Makhumalo

Me: Zulu

He calls me that when he is trying to "humble himself". I'm glad they never changed my Martenalsurname when I moved in with them..

Him: Angifuni mina nawe sixabane (I don't want usto fight)

I waited for him to continue..

Him: Engaka ePitori Mkam yini? (What's in Pretoria my wife)

Me: I just wanted fresh air that's all, didn't mean to come across disrespectful

Him: Ubu ngasho ngani izolo ukuthi uzoya ePitori (Why didn't you mention last night that you will be in Pta)

Me: Ngiyaxolisa (I'm sorry)

Him: Angifuni nje ukuthi silwisa into engasile (I don't want us fighting over nonsense)

Me: We won't take time

Him: You won't take time? Ayikho eNext door iPitori Makhumalo (Pta is not next door)

Me: Ngiyezwa Zulu (I hear you) Him:

Give Banza the phone

Me: Ngicela ungalwi naye bandla yimina onecala Zulu (Please don't fight with him, I am the wrong one)

Him: Lingawa lixoshwe yizinkukhu Makhumalo wena umela enye indonda (the sun will fall down before you defend another man)

I could sense the anger in his voice..

Him: Niyakitazana emakhoneni yini? (Do you guys tickle each other in private)

Me: Cha Zulu (No) **NOVELSGURU.COM**

I passed the phone to Banza..

Banza: Makhathini...

Banza looked at me..

Banza: Yebo Zulu

He handed me back the phone..Me: Zulu

Him: Ngingalibangisa ePitori manje ngikumoshele usuku!
Ngingathi ngikhuluma nawe bese wena unika UBanza Ucingo (I
wil drive down there and ruin your day, don't ever give Banza
the phone when I'm talking to you)

Me: Ngiyezwa Zulu (I hear you)

I know this is going to go on and on..

KELSO BHEMBE (KB)

Sole's golf was parked inside MaGumede's yard. I parked mine at
the gate as Stal ion parked on the other side of the street. I
drive a red golf, Sole drives a white one, and Stal ion drives a
charcoal one. In

NOVELSGURU.COM

the hood they know us, we make a statement..

MaGumede has allowed us to rent her outside rooms, we just renting two of them for business. She was sweeping the yard as we got out of the car..

We respectfully made our way in...

We pay her a lot for those rooms, with her state of finance she didn't turn us down. She was wearing her pink gown, still had traces of calamine on her face. It was pretty clear that she hasn't taken a bath..

Me: MaGumede

Her: Awww yangena imali (money just entered my yard)

This woman has 3 daughters. They are not working and they all have babies, the last born even has 2 babies so they are struggling financially. She has since tried to hook me up with her first born..

Me: Ngeke sithathe iskhathi (we won't take much of your time)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Awungithi fa fa ngeyama gwinya (Can I have money to buy vetkoeks)

I took out my wallet and took out R100 from it, she dropped the broom..

Her: Awe Ma.. Yadla intombi yakwa Gumedeliphuma nje ekuseni

She lifted up her leg and then when she brought it back to the ground, she fell flat on her butt..

Sole: Wtf? (Whispering)

Sole is coloured, he doesn't understand this tradition. Station helped her up..

She took the R100 from me..

Gumede: Kodwa ungivelelaphi ngane yakwa Bhembe (Where do you come from)

We left her like that all dramatic then we made our way to the back. Lazola was doing laundry, her big breasts were falling out from her bra. Her Son was playing around..

Me: Lazo

NOVELSGURU.COM

She got up and fixed herself..Shs
looked down and smiled..Her: Kels
Sole nodded at her..Stal

ion: Lazo

Lazo: Stal ion

She wiped her hands..

Her: I'll get you guys the keyMe:

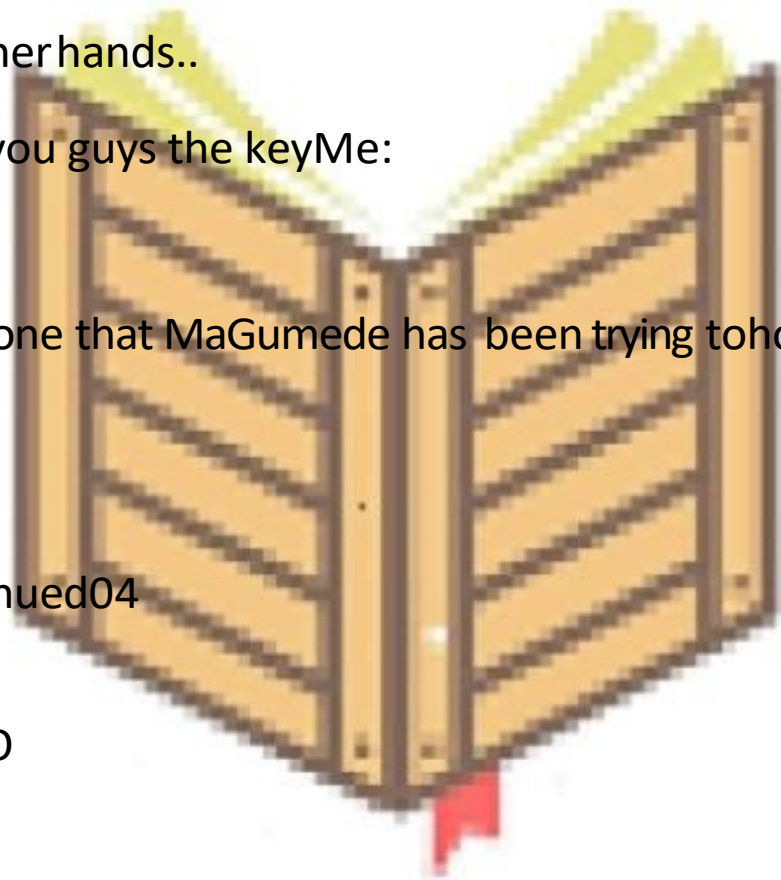
Sharp

Lazo is the one that MaGumede has been trying to hook me up
with..

.

To be continued04

NONGCEBO



NOVELSGURU.COM

When were done with groceries, Banza suggested that we go get something to eat.

Despite Makhathini's tantrum. I really enjoyed this outing..

Banza: uSharp?!

smiled..

Me: I'm okay just worried about you Him:

I'm more worried about you (Silence)

Him: Nongcebo why haven't you poisoned him?

I looked at him, this is the very first time he has suggested something so vile. He looked at me hoping to get the answer he wants to hear..

Me: He randomly makes me taste the food I dish up for him. Plus I am not a killer, Mam' Gladys would turn in her grave if I do something like that

Him: So you going to let him ruin your life? You deserve better. You very beautiful and you deserve a man that can love you better. He knows that he

has found a jewel in you, he will never find another woman as beautiful and humble as you

He laughed..

Him: At the taxi rank they always wondering why you went for him, most taxi drivers think you gold digging him

Me: It's easier for people to talk when they don't know your situation

Him: I wish there was something we can do

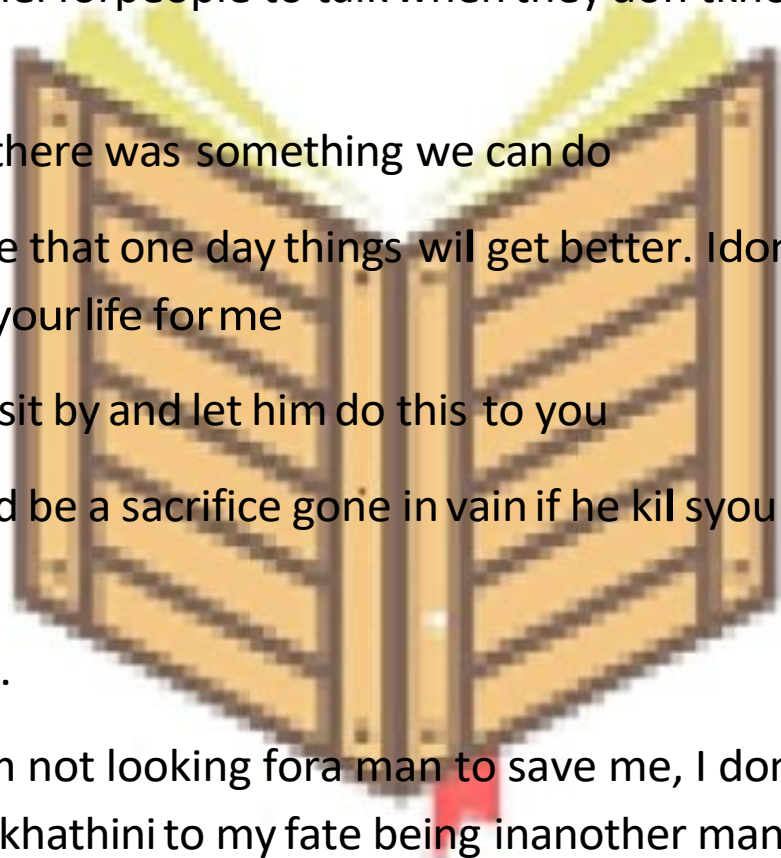
Me: I believe that one day things will get better. I don't want you risking your life for me

Him: I can't sit by and let him do this to you

Me: it would be a sacrifice gone in vain if he kills you and me both

He nodded..

Me: Plus I'm not looking for a man to save me, I don't want to go from Makhathini to my fate being in another man's hands. I know not all men are like him, but I would really like to have my freedom and be my own person. Get to know Nongcebo once



more, my life has been controlled by him for so long I don't even know how it feels like to live for me. I don't know what I like, I don't know what I hate. I don't wanna be dependent again, I wanna be my own woman

He smiled..

Him: I understand

KELSO (KB)

We were chilling in MaGumede's yard just listening to music. Eating and drinking Corona beer. I met Sole and Stalion back in my high school days, my father wanted a different life for me so he put me in a private school. We were very notorious, we broke the school rules a lot of times and we were expelled at the time. When they excluded me in grade 10, I didn't see myself going back to school. My father wanted me to switch schools but I was a very troubling teen so I gave up on school. Stalion and Sole we continued being friends, they would visit

NOVELSGURU.COM

my hood a lot and they liked the kasi vibe.

We then decided to take this route and get up to no good. At first it was just for fun, just a thrill, just a dare game! I remember we first robbed some guy around here just for fun, and when we got away with it. We started doing more and more of that.

Robbing people of cell phones and money. The dream didn't last that long, we got arrested but later on pardoned because my father ran the prison and he had contacts. Sole's parents disowned him, after the private school was expensive. Sole moved down here with me and my family as he didn't have anywhere else to go, so to prevent just sitting and doing nothing. We decided to do petty crimes. Being the son of the most notorious criminal came in handy, we were able to get away with everything.

When Stalion saw that this life might work for us, he also dropped out in grade 11 then joined us. He wasn't disowned though. It wasn't easy to get where we are today, and we not where we are as yet. Our biggest heist was when we robbed a fidelity truck,

even with that we were just trying our luck and our luck worked. We robbed it in the most quiet town in another province, and when we weren't found the case went cold. That was years ago but we still enjoying the fruits of our labour, that's why we haven't resorted to a major heist as yet but then unfortunately with gangsters money for us is never enough.. I wouldn't ask for a better crew, these motherfuckers are my brothers.

Sole moved away from the hood, he is living in town. So is Station but they live a bit far from each other.

I didn't move away, my Grandmother and my niece they mean a lot to me and I don't wanna leave them just as yet..

Station and I sang along to the current song that was playing..

Us: "Njengo Zam no Khensani ang'funi sijole sizesishade, ngizok'dlisa fresh saan' never mind my dangerous lifestyle"

NOVELSGURU.COM

We both laughed..

I trust Sole more than I trust Stal ion. See, Sole is chil ed and Stal ion is a humble dangerous motherfucker, a green snake in a green grass thatyou wil neversee coming until it bites you..

Londiwe walked in, Londiwe is Sole's girlfriend. They have been dating fora while now, ever sincefrom when Sole was stil living here and we were stil trying to find ourway in the gangsterworld.

She's beautiful but just like Stal ion I don't trust her,she's fucking up my boy. She's the quiet type, the type you would neverthink can get up to no good.

Sole got up as she made her way to usSole:

Hey babe

They hugged and kissed.

Londi: Kels

Me: Ngwana

She looked at Stal ion..Her:

Stal ion

NOVELSGURU.COM

Stal ion: Londi

She sat on Sole's lap. I have my suspicions that Stal ion and Londi are fucking..

MaGumede's last born came through dancing..Her:

"Angiku understandi Mzeke"

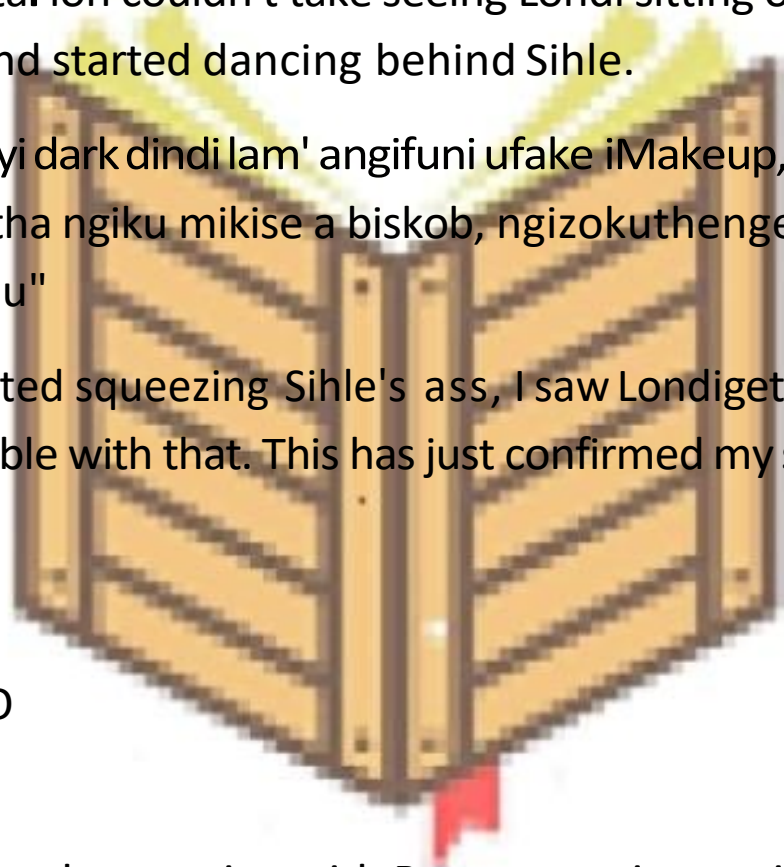
She started dancing in the middle. Unlike her sisters, this one is very wild. Stal ion couldn't take seeing Londi sitting on Sole's lap, he got up and started dancing behind Sihle.

Stal ion: "Uyi dark dindi lam' angifuni ufake iMakeup, ngiyokuthatha ngiku mikise a biskob, ngizokuthengela amakota wase lubedu"

Stal ion started squeezing Sihle's ass, I saw Londi getting uncomfortable with that. This has just confirmed my suspicions again..

NONGCEBO

I really enjoyed my outing with Banza, now it was time to go back home. Banza was driving and I was sitting at the back, as he was playing a song and



NOVELSGURU.COM

started singing along busy stealing glances at me. This has become our favourite song, He always plays it to change my mood when he is driving me somewhere.. I couldn't hold back I started singing along..

Me: "Come if you got real love for me" Him:

"vele nginalo uthando"

Me: "Stay away if you got games and tricks for me" Him:

"Izanayo"

Me: "I want a man that means everything he says, and not a boy full of tricks"

He laughed.. Him:

"Ayeye"

Me: "I don't believe in magic, I believe in love everlasting. I can understand that houdini was a great magician, he could a lock from any position. Ohh but my heart is nothing like those locks.."

Him: "Ayy maan Njengo Zam no Khensani ang'funisijole size sishade, ngizok'dlisa fresh saan never mind my dirty overall "

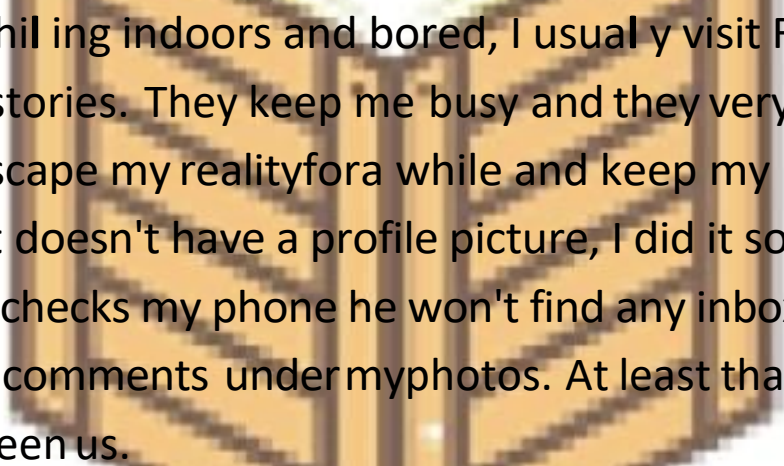


I laughed out loud, at least he knows how to make me laugh. I enjoy spending time with him, he makes me forget about my cruel home life...

.

To be continued05

NONGCEBO



When I'm chilling indoors and bored, I usually visit Facebook to read some stories. They keep me busy and they're very nice. They make me escape my reality for a while and keep my mind busy. My account doesn't have a profile picture, I did it so that when Makhathini checks my phone he won't find any inboxes from guys or romantic comments under my photos. At least that keeps the peace between us.

I love romance, makes me not want to give up on love no matter how difficult my situation is. I believe

NOVELSGURU.COM

there's still a few good men out there.. My reading was interrupted by Bongeka's phone call coming through.

I answered..Me:

Hello

Her: Mamma

Me: What's the matter?

Her: I'm at the Nurse's office, please call Dad to come and pick me up I'm not feeling well

Me: What's wrong Nana?

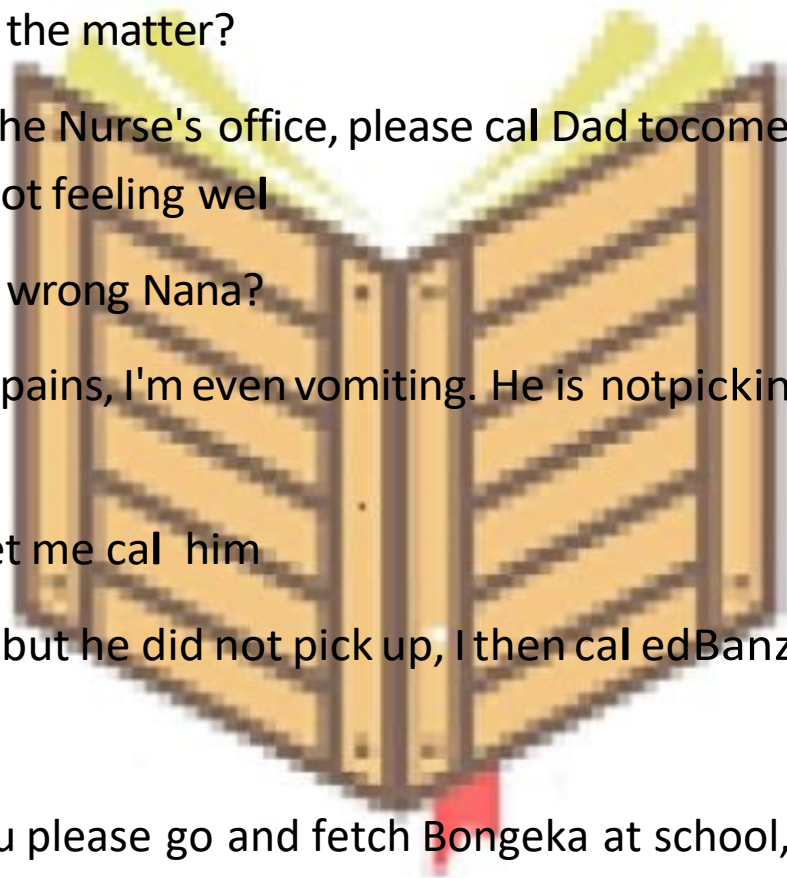
Her: Period pains, I'm even vomiting. He is not picking up

Me: Okay let me call him

I called him but he did not pick up, I then called Banza..

Him: Hello

Me: Can you please go and fetch Bongeka at school, she's not feeling well



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Okay.. I'm on my way thereMe:

Thank you

I hung up and cal ed Bongeka..

Me: Nana Banza is coming to get youHer:

Okay thank you

When I was done with the cal I cleared the cal I made to Banza, I'm not supposed to cal him I don't want Zulu going crazy on me.

KELSO (KB)

I looked at Lindo it was just Me and her. Sole went to take a piss and Stal ion left a few minutes ago. I looked at her and I think that was making her uncomfortable..

Me: Le oyenzayo ijinde straight (You should stop what you doing)

Her: What are you talking about?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Uyazi (You know)(Silence)

Me: Sole loves you and you going to hurt himHer: I

don't know what you talking about

I splashed my beer on her legs..

Me: Ungangenzi islima wena (don't make me a fool)

She looked down, my phone rang. It was my BabyMama Amanda but we call her "Power".

I got up and walked away to answer the phone..Me:

Muntuza

Her: uBusy? Me:

Not exactly

Her: Can you please come get me, I wanna go to town

Me: iTaxi iyenzelweni kanti? (what are taxis for)Her: I'm going with Hakeem

I looked at the time..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Can we go later? I wanna go home and lie down a bit I've had a few beers

Her: Okay

Me: Ngiyak'thanda yezwa? (I love you) Her:

Mxm.. Bye Kelso

She hung up..

Power and I were a power couple back when we were teens. Things didn't really work out between us so we called it quits then got back together again. We were just on and off but now it's been a while since we haven't gotten back together. Things were hectic when she was still pregnant, we used to fight a lot. Power is very stubborn and difficult, she used to challenge me a lot so one time I lost it and got physical with her. She was 5 months pregnant, she almost lost our baby and since from then she doesn't want to give me another chance.

NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM

I waited for them as Makhathini's phone call came through..

Me: Zulu

Him: Kwenzenjani? (what's going on)

Me: When Banzi dropped me off I received a call from Bongeka, she's not feeling well so Banza is getting her. We tried calling you

Him: Sebafikile (are they already there) Me: Cha...

Him: I'm on my way, prepare something for me Me: Okay

He hung up..

KELSO (KB)

I drove straight home after Power's call. I wanted to lay down a bit before going to town..



NOVELSGURU.COM

My Father fell in love with a woman that he thought he could build a home with. My Mother was a very good girl and came from a religious background.

She was home grounded and hardly went out, always indoors and studying. I don't know how they met because she is from a different hood and my Father was just messed up. He was a hardcore criminal and part of the infamous gang, the 28s.. He was really taken by my Mother, and my mother was taken by him too

It was a perfect love story, and he decided to think with his heart and not his head. He told my Mother everything about himself and the gang, still my Mother wanted to be with him.

Despite her family hating my Father she forced to be with him, then she fell pregnant with my Sister. Things were still rocky between them and later on she fell pregnant with me. Dad still took her to school because her family made her choose, and she chose love. Things started getting a bit hectic for her when my Father started getting arrested

NOVELSGURU.COM

busy going in and out of jail, she had to endure the hardships of being a single Mother. Money was there yes but my Father was hardly there.. When my Father was released, she made him choose. He chose us and walked away from the gang. I still don't know how they let him go just like that without any repercussions. He looked after us whilst my Mother went on to obtain her law degree, by then she had changed. She was hardly around and she was always fighting him Only for my Father to find out that she had fallen in love with someone else, he was also doing law. My Father went crazy, he wanted to kill the guy but my Mother did the unthinkable. She turned my Father in by Snitching to the police about everything, as if like that was not worse enough she turned state witness and testified against him just to keep him locked away to save her "Lover". She was the one who had him put away for a long time, he's never coming out..

My mother was looking forward to making peace

NOVELSGURU.COM

with her family now that my father was no longer in the picture, her family forgave her after finding out that she betrayed my Father. They made her to give up, that's when we came down here to live with our Paternal Grandmother. Since from then, we never heard from her. That situation affected my Sister greatly, she wanted that Mother and Daughter relationship and Mom wasn't there

Mom didn't want anything to do with us and her family hated us more because our father was not their favorite person. What damaged my Sister more was when we learned that Mom got married to her lover, and had a family of her own. She tried contacting her but my mother lost it. Told her to get lost she's not her Mother. Just like that my Sister turned to heroin. She was introduced to it by her boyfriend. She started stealing from home, selling things to feed off her addiction. It was very difficult for my Grandmother, and Dad wasn't here to make the situation better. She even left home to live with him in the streets.. She came back one day with a baby, gave the baby to my Grandmother and

NOVELSGURU.COM

disappeared again. This time around she came back in a coffin, she had overdosed.

What my Mother did to my Father made me not to trust any woman, Power doesn't know much about my lifestyle. She knows that I get up to no good but she doesn't know how deep it is. I've kept that from her so that one day she doesn't turn against me and do what my Mother did to my Father. That's why I'm currently not in a serious relationship with anyone, I just fuck and pass. Women have proven to be dangerous.. As long as I live I'll never wake up one day and trust a woman, nor fall in love that hard. I don't want what happened to my father to happen to me. I have since been carrying deep resentment for my Mother, especially after my sister passed on. She ruined us, she ruined everything. If it was up to me, I would walk up to her house and shoot her family right in front of her. Her husband and her kids just to put her through that pain she put us through. One day I will, and she will never see it coming. I hate that cunt with all my heart.

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued06

POWER

My relationship with Kels has always been Rocky. Back in high school I was the most popular girl, I had too much confidence and I always fit in. Had a couple of guys here and there, at times I was called a "bitch". Yes I was that bitch that most girls envied until I met the infamous "Kels". By then I had a boyfriend, he literally took me from my boyfriend..

Kels was not the best boyfriend, I think he dated me for his own selfish reasons because at some point he truly broke me. He said and I quote "You think you are that, when you date me we are going to play the game of love according to my rules". He became my worst mistake, more especially because I was hard

NOVELSGURU.COM

headed and stubborn. He used to beat me senseless, at one point he locked me in his room for 2 days. My parents went crazy...

He was a very shitty person and that's when I knew fear to its darkest depths. There's 2 incidents that I'll never forget, one was when he beat me after I had slapped him. He almost cracked my skull. The second incident was when I was pregnant. 5 months pregnant. He threw me down and pressed his foot hard against my tummy, he had accused me of cheating and that the baby wasn't his. He threatened to cut me open if I didn't tell him who the real father was. If it wasn't for his Grandmother, Hakeem was never going to be born. After that incident, I broke up with him but he kept on coming to my house and causing drama. Especially when he was drunk. He would be banging the door at 2am, my father would always fight with him..

When I had enough I was ready to turn him in, until his Grandmother talked to me. Kels is masking a lot of demons deep inside of him. Apparently when he

was young, girls used to bully him. I heard of a girl in his primary school that used to bully him together with her group. That was both in grade 6 and 7. He was never a happy child. One incident I heard about from his Grandmother was that, those girls took him to the toilets once. Stripped him naked and shoved sticks deep inside his asshole, they brutally violated him. If that was not enough they let him walk out naked, I think that was the lowest point of his life.

His primary years were traumatic for him, I believe that's where his resentment for popular girls surfaced. Come to think of it, his high school years he was dating only popular girls. By then the bad boy behaviour was already there. He was getting into fights, getting expelled literally the whole school knew him and his two friends. His Grandmother was always attending meetings, he caused that poor woman a lot of stress. Though he's a bit better now since he grew up but that ruthlessness is still there.

I never asked him about his primary years, I didn't want him flipping out on me. I just let things be.

When Hakeem was born, he embarrassed Kels by looking exactly like him. DNA tests were not even needed, and as time went on I let him have a relationship with his Son hoping that he will change him but most of all I didn't want Hakeem to grow up representing me that I didn't want him to have a relationship with his father..

I called him again, he didn't pick up. Me:

Kels come on!

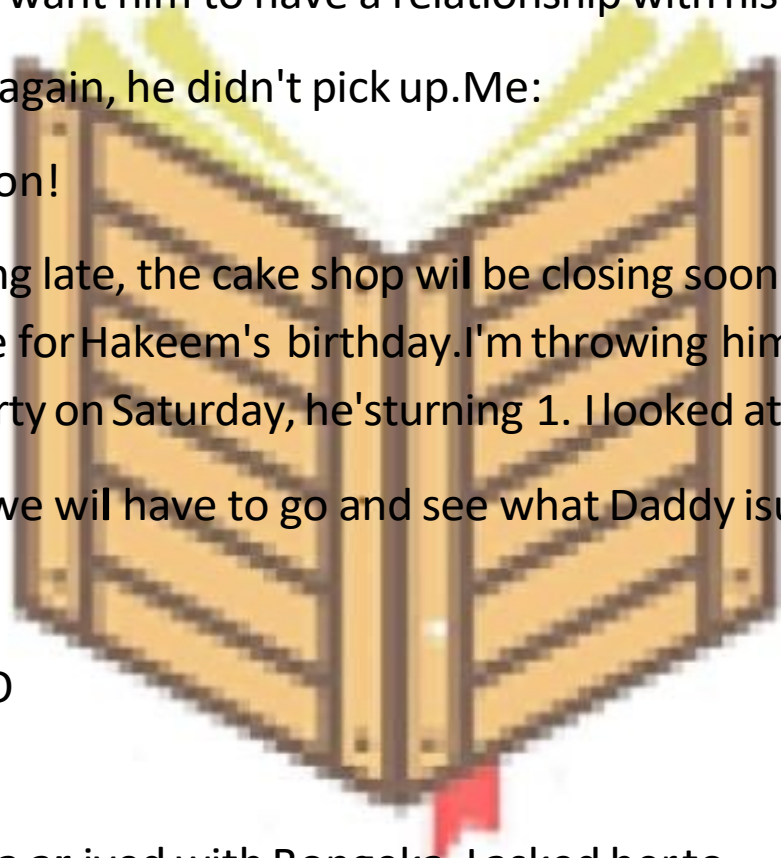
It was getting late, the cake shop will be closing soon. I want to order a cake for Hakeem's birthday. I'm throwing him a birthday party on Saturday, he's turning 1. I looked at Hakeem.

Me: I think we will have to go and see what Daddy is up to

NONGCEBO

When Banza arrived with Bongeka, I asked her to

NOVELSGURU.COM



change and go straight to bed. I made her drink painkillers and gave her a water bottle. She was really in pain, she rolled on the bed a few times before eventually falling asleep.. Banza didn't stay for that long, he had to go back to the taxi rank..

Makhathini walked in right on time when I was done preparing his lunch. Oxtail liver, Pap, and a green salad.. He had put his newspaper under his armpit..

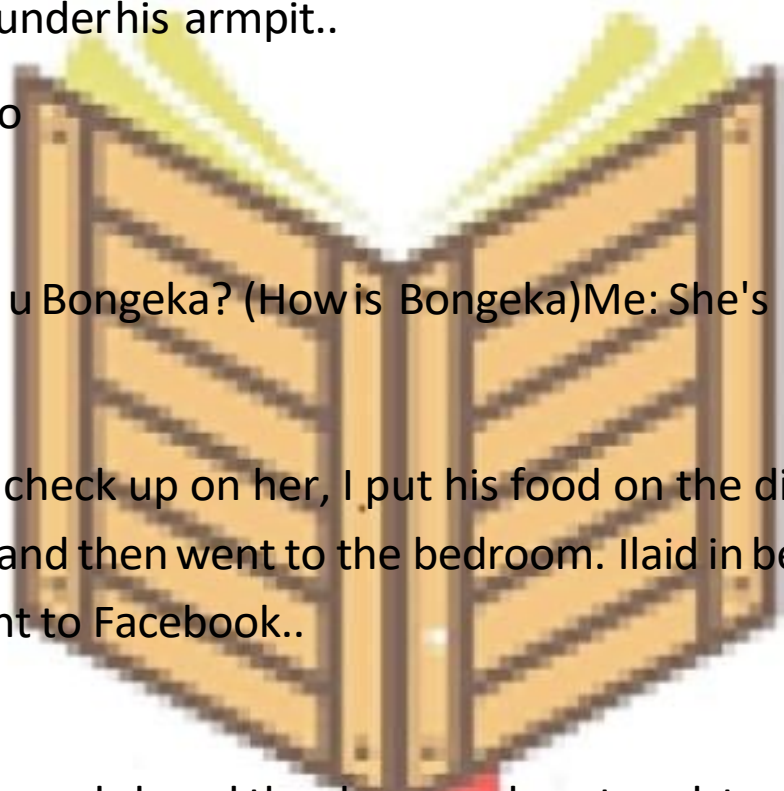
Him: Ngcebo

Me: Zulu

Him: Unjani u Bongeka? (How is Bongeka) Me: She's sleeping

He went to check up on her, I put his food on the dining room table and then went to the bedroom. I laid in bed and went straight to Facebook..

He walked in and closed the door, my heart sank to my knees. Maybe he's going to confront me about the Pretoria situation. He laid next to me without saying anything, then he started fondling my



breasts. I closed my eyes and took a deep breath...

Sex with him is just sex. He is either ontop of me or I'm ontop of him. No major 4play, just the same old boring routine for his enjoyment. I put my phone away as he started undressing, the best thing to do is follow through and not piss him off. Plus, I'm in alot of trouble. When he was done undressing himself, he started undressing me. He got ontop of me and started kissing me. He doesn't have bad adour at least, I'd rather take the smell of his perfume spray than bad adour. He kissed my breasts and directed my hand to his crotch so I can start giving him a hand job as he continued sucking my nipples. He's the only man I've been with and at times hormones do betray me, I wouldn't say I fully enjoy the sex but I do get wet most of the time especially when he starts sucking my nipples or fingerfucking him. His manhood wasn't that bad, he wasn't bad at all. When he was hard enough he parted my legs and then inserted himself deep inside without any warning. I flinched. He's probably doing this to confirm that I didn't sleep

NOVELSGURU.COM

with anyone in Pretoria..

POWER

It was hot I won't lie, it's a good thing that I carried an umbrella. Hakeem was on my back, at least Kelso's place is not that far.

His car was parked outside close to the big gate, we went through the small gate and started in the main house. Kelso occupied the whole space outside, turned the rooms into a bedroom, bathroom and a lounge.

I knocked, the security door was locked.

His Grandmother opened the door and smiled when she saw us..

Her: Amanda

Me: Ma

She opened for us and I closed the umbrella. We made our way in..



Her: What a nice surprise, didn't know that you guys were coming

She took Hakeem from my back.

Me: We actually here for Kelso he is supposed to take us to town..

I put Hakeem's bag on the floor..Me:

Ukhona Ma? (Is he around) Her: Yebo

Ukhona (He is around)

Kelso's house is very beautiful, he really fixed his Grandmother's house. I wonder what he does now, he never told me and I don't want to ask. With Kelso you don't know. You can innocently ask and then he's just going to flip out..

Me: Okay let me check him

Hakeem cried for me when I walked out..Her: Hai

hau..

Me: His bottle is in his bag Her: Okay

let's get your bottle

I walked out and knocked on Kelso's door.

I knocked a few times without a response. I didn't even realize that the security door wasn't locked. I opened it and then opened the door, I made my way in and went to the bedroom. He was sleeping whilst playing music softly..

"Hey pretty mama how you doing Said I'm
just in town for the weekend Looking for a lil'
trouble to get into
Baby tel me what ya drinking and I got you"

I stood at the door and looked at him. He was laying on his back one leg slightly raised up to his knee. He was only in his boxer briefs with a small pillow on his crotch. He had the back of his hand against his forehead.

NOVELSGURU.COM

"This is my song for real no doubt

See the DJ is making me feel thugged out As I walk

you to dance floor

We begin to dance slow

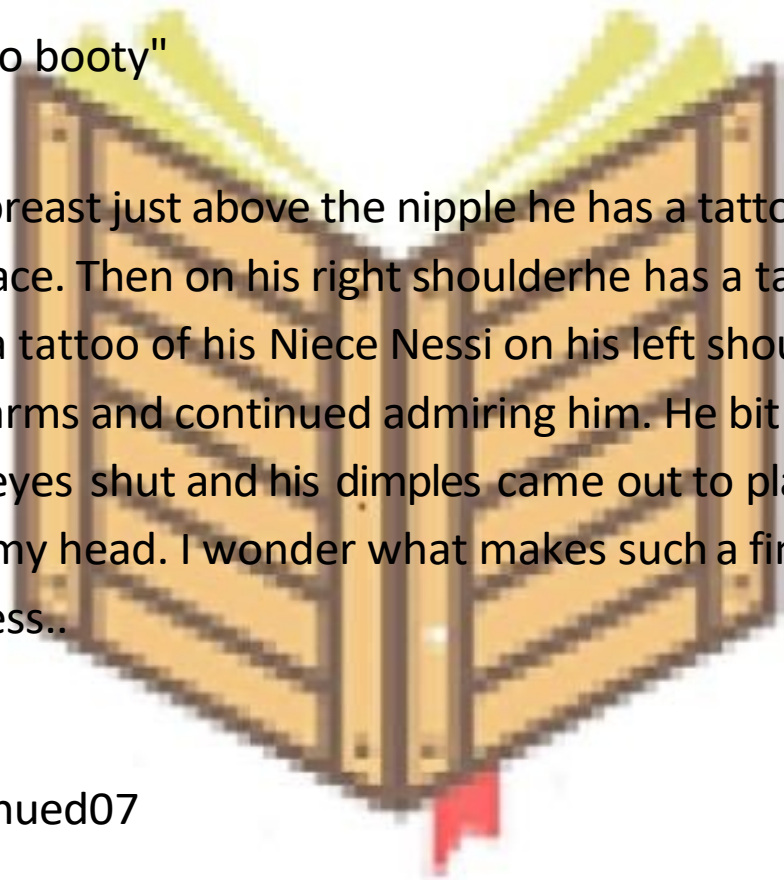
You put your arms around me I'm

feeling on yo booty"

On his left breast just above the nipple he has a tattoo of Hakeem's face. Then on his right shoulder he has a tattoo of his sister, and a tattoo of his Niece Nessi on his left shoulder... I folded my arms and continued admiring him. He bit his lower lip with his eyes shut and his dimples came out to play, I smiled and shook my head. I wonder what makes such a fine Brother be so ruthless..

.

To be continued07



NOVELSGURU.COM

POWER

Normal people would wake up and freak out that someone is just standing at the door of their bedroom and watching them sleep, but Kelso opened his eyes and looked at me standing there. No worries, and no stress.

Him: For how long have you been standing there? Me: Long enough, didn't wanna wake you up

He yawned..

Me: Kelso we already late

Him: Can't we do it tomorrow? Eyy ng'khatheleAmandla (I'm tired)

Me: She already has a lot of orders for the week Him: Call her
ke

Me: Yazi Kelso if you didn't want too, you should've just said so

He looked at me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm sure if Sole or Stalion could call now and say come, uzoya.. But when it comes to your Sonyou complaining!

Him: Kanti when did I say I won't buy it? Is she the only one selling cakes?

I folded my arms..

Him: Ngiyabuza Power, is she the only one selling cakes?

Me: Okay then I'll just get Hakeem and go back home

Him: Uzong'dina Amandla and I'm not in the mood
Me: Sorry to be a nuisance I'll see what I can do

Him: If I get off this bed, uzokhala straight! (if I get off this bed you going to cry)

Just like that, his mood changed.. Him:

Why should we always fight? Me: I'm not fighting

He got up and got out of the bed, my heart started to beat fast.. He had that death stare.

Me: Kelso I'm not fighting

He got closer to me and I held both his hands..Him:

Wenzani? (What are you doing)

Me: I'm not fighting njenaHim:

Let go

Me: Akies ke

Him: Let go Amandla

Me: Only if you promise not to hit me

Him: Why would I hit you? Because I'm going to the bathroom to take a piss!

I slowly let go of his hands. The bastard wasn't true to his statement, he grabbed me by my neck and pinned me against the doorframe choking me..

Him: Are you trying to say my Son is not important to me?

I was trying to get his hand off but I couldn't, he is way too strong...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: What's that comment you made about me

putting my friends first? First of all I don't answer to Sole and Station! I answer to no one! ! Do we understand each other?

I tried to nod..

He let go and I started coughing..He sighed..

Him: Look at what you made me do

I was coughing with tears in my eyes..

Him: Uyathanda masi busy sixabana so? (Do you like it when we busy fighting like this)

I shook my head no..Him:

Look at me

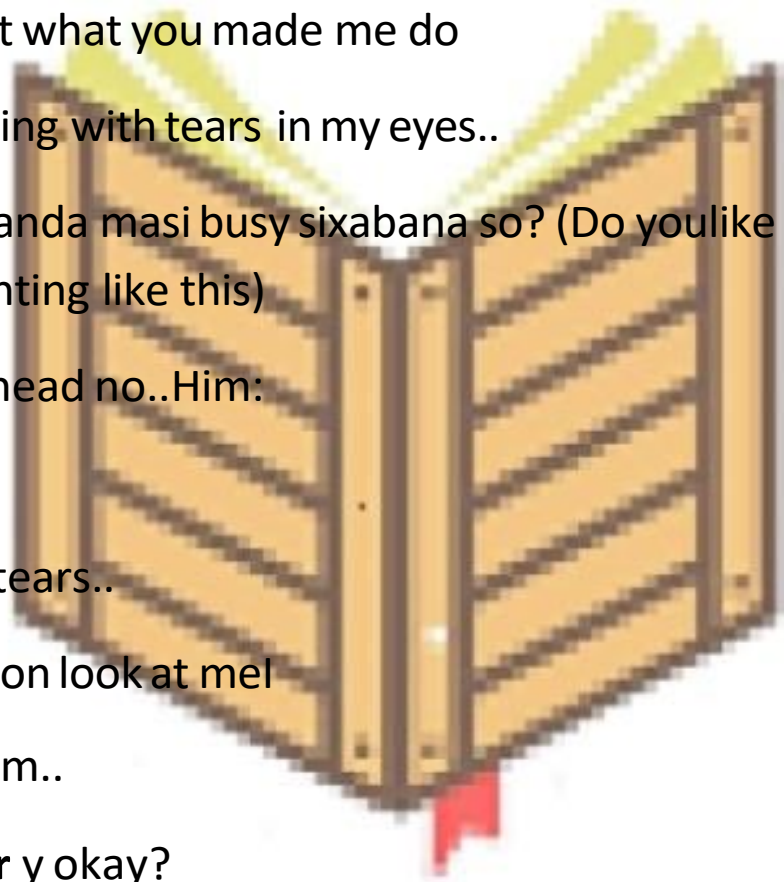
I wiped my tears..

Him: Come on look at me!

I looked at him..

Him: I'm sorry okay?

I couldn't hold back my tears and I was shaking like a leaf.. He put both his hands on my cheeks and



NOVELSGURU.COM

started kissing my tears..Him:

I'm sor y Baby

He moved to my mouth and French kissed me..Him: I

didn't mean to hurt you

His voice becomes a bit soft when he apologizes..He picked me as we continued kissing..

Him: I'm so sor y

He moved to the bed and sat down with me sitting on top of him..

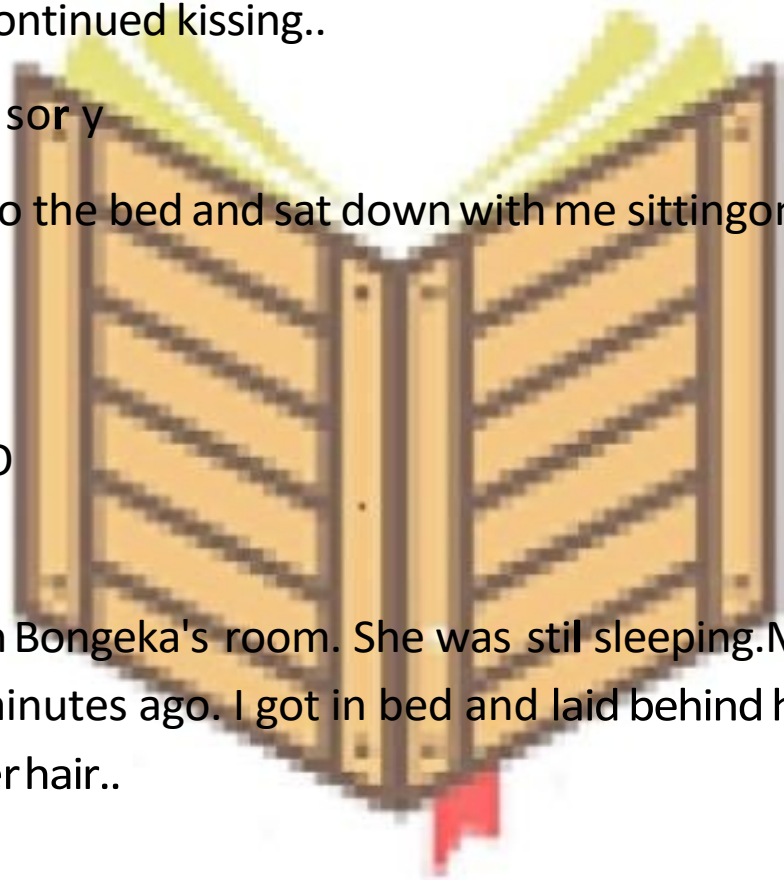
NONGCEBO

I was now in Bongeka's room. She was stil sleeping.Makhathini left a few minutes ago. I got in bed and laid behind her, I started brushing her hair..

Me: Hey

She didn't open her eyes..Me:

Bongeka



NOVELSGURU.COM

She moved..

Me: Unjani manje? (how are you feeling now)She turned and looked at me..

Her: I'm a bit betterthank you

Me: I'll make you something to eat okay?She nodded..

Her: Can I ask you something?Me:

Ask?

Her: Are you going to leave?Me:

Huh?

Her: One day when you get really fed up, are yougoing to leave? Run away and nevercome back?

I didn't know how to answer to that..Her:

Can you take me with you?

I smiled at her.. Me:

Bongeka you..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: We not happy here, so why can't we run away?

Me: It's not that easy Nana

Her: He is a human being, he is not God. There has to be a way that we can beat him

Me: One day we will find a way Her:

Why can't we kill him?

Me: Bongeka!

Her: If we run away he is going to come and look for us, when he finds us he's going to kill us. We will spend most of our lives running and living in fear, he won't stop until he finds us. If we kill him then we will be able to live in peace

Me: We are not going to do that Her:

If you're scared I can do it Me: Hey

listen to me

I put my hand on her cheek..

Me: You're not a killer and I'm not a killer! I always tell you that no matter what happens in life, never let someone change who you are

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: But..

Me: Bongeka promise me that you won't try to kill him

She nodded..

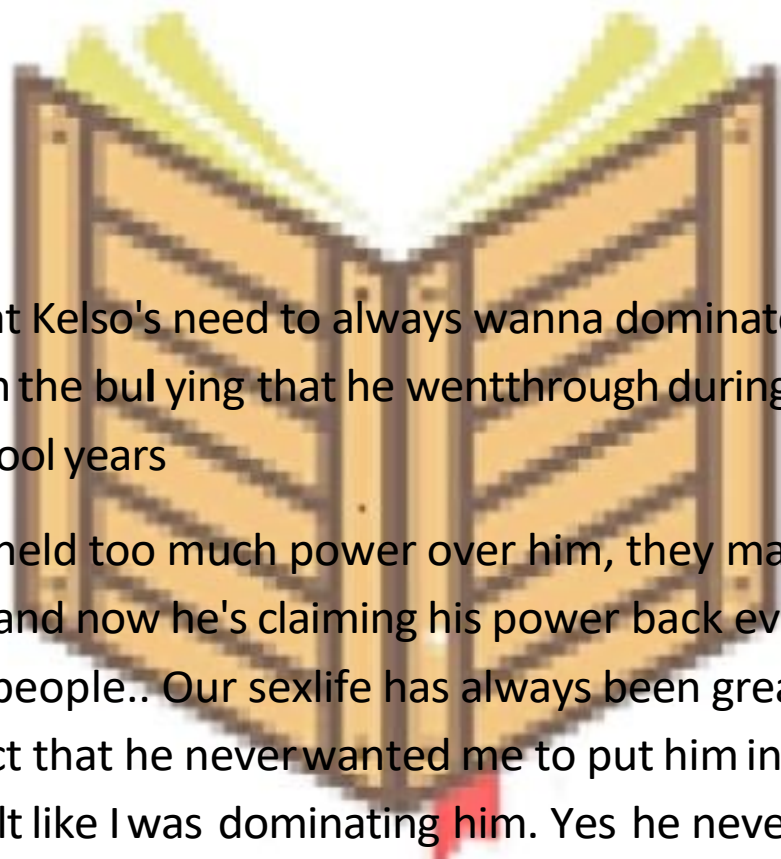
Me: I will find a way to get us out, I promise I hugged her..

Me: I promise

POWER

I believe that Kelso's need to always want to dominate results from the bullying that he went through during his primary school years

Those girls held too much power over him, they made him submissive and now he's claiming his power back even from the wrong people.. Our sex life has always been great other than the fact that he never wanted me to put him in a position where he felt like I was dominating him. Yes he never had a problem with me being on top but it was always according to his rules. His hands were always



NOVELSGURU.COM

around my waist, he would actually help you to go up and down on him. When you have had your bit of fun, he will lift up your ass a bit and bump from underneath.

There more he tears up your pussy the more and more it turns him on. Your screams, cries, moaning makes him very hard. He literally finds pleasure in you responding to the way that he wants. If you beg him to stop you give him more power, if you cry you will only make the situation worse. He sexually finds pleasure in your pain and by putting you through pain.. At first I didn't like his ways but I got used to being fucked so hard that my sexual relationships with other guys were just boring. My body and my mind became programmed to his way of doing things..

Clothes were now scattered on the floor, my clothes to be more precise. [REMOVED]

07

NOVELSGURU.COM

POWER

[REMOVED]

Clothes were now scattered on the floor, my clothes to be more precise. I was on my knees with his black cock filling my mouth.

He pushed my weave back as I continued, he bit his lower lip as I went for the deep throat feeling the tip of his rock hard shaft buried deep inside. Far inside that I gagged. I took it out and filled it with my saliva, then I gave him a hand job..

Him: Fuuuck that's good!.. Keep going..

He directed it again, and literally fucked me deep inside my mouth. He grabbed my weave at the back and kept on pushing himself in and out of my mouth..

Him: Ohhhhh fuck baby!!

I put both my hands on his thighs for support and let him be..

Him: Look at me.. Don't take your eyes off me

NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at him and he kept on until my eyes filled with tears, I wanted to breathe. I needed a breather or else I was either going to vomit or pass out..

Him: Yeah look at me.. (soft voice)

Only when my tears started to stream down he pulled out and polished his cock, I wiped my tears and caught my breath. He got me on my feet and picked me up. He threw me on the bed and grabbed my leg, he pulled me to the edge and separated my legs. He bent down a little then parted my labia with his index finger and his thumb then I felt the warmth that was brought about by his tongue.

He went from my hole to my clit, just switching between them. I grabbed my breasts and squeezed them tight as he ate my pussy for dead life..

Me: Yes eat my pussy like that...He continued..

Me: Please don't stop.. Eat my pussy like that

The pleasure made my legs to vibrate, electric impulses shot through my whole entire body

sending pleasure that I did not ask for. He inserted his two fingers deep inside and continued sucking my clit whilst finger fucking me, I lost my sanity for a moment.. I couldn't keep still anymore..

Him: If you keep moving baby I'm going to stop

That was just torture, how does one keep still at such an intense moment? He just wanted to torture me. I tried to keep still by biting my lower lip hard, my juices were at the mercy of his fingers.. Kels was torturing me for dear life. He ended up stopping then he turned me around, he spank my butt hard a few times then positioned me into a doggy style. He forced it in and I grabbed on tightly to the duvet cover, he pushed in far deeper that I felt the whole of him deep inside of me..

He started fucking me whilst grabbing my weave and pulling my head back, then his hand found its way around my neck. He pulled my neck back a bit hard as he fucked me to the point of no return.. As much as I didn't wanna give him the satisfaction of screaming but I did, and that made him crazy. He fucked me more harder..

NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

I went to the kitchen to call make Bongeka something to eat, I got my phone and called Banza. I'm not a cry baby but the talk that I had with her tore deep inside..

Banza: Hello? I

was sniffing..

Him: What's wrong? What did he do I
couldn't hold back my cries..

Him: Nongcebo what did he do? Did he hurt you? Me: I.. I..
(crying)

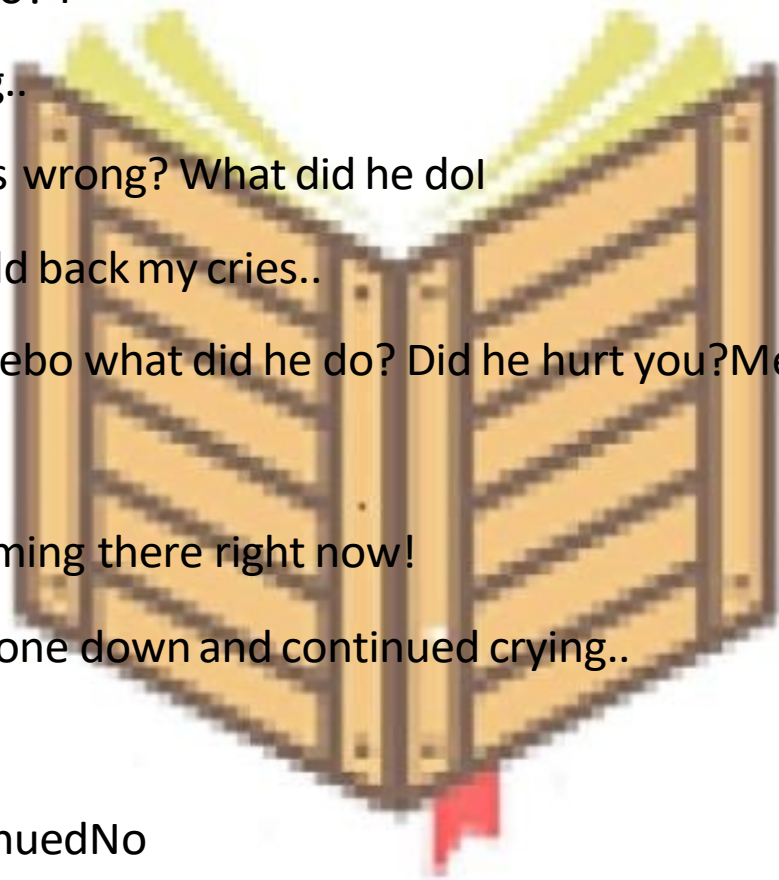
Him: I'm coming there right now!

I put the phone down and continued crying..

.

To be continued

No
edits



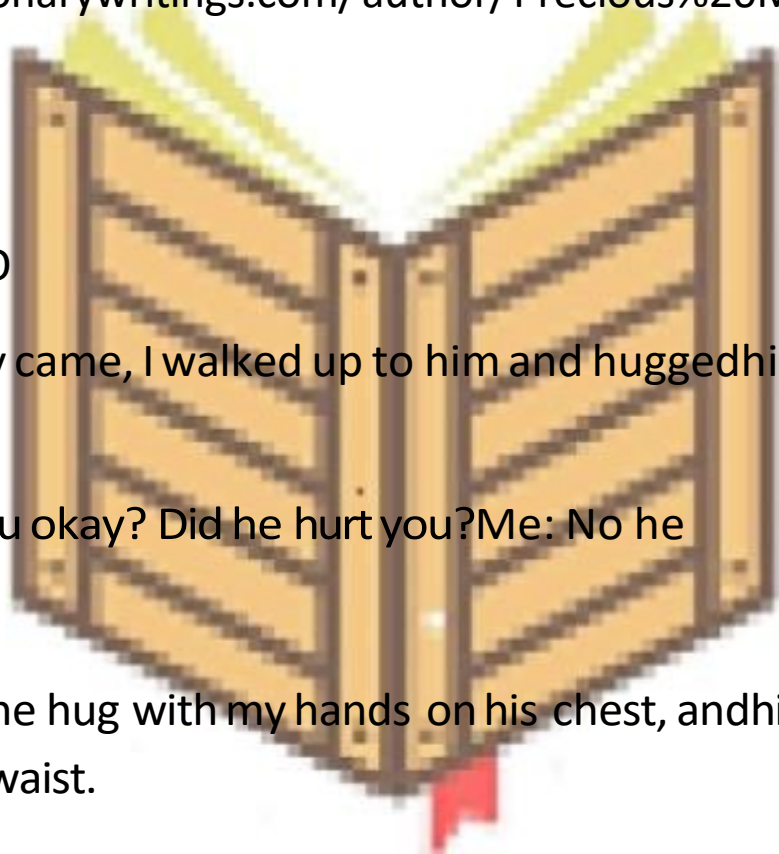
NOVELSGURU.COM

Please read the removed explicit content in the closed group "TTEOPM"

Alternative read the full insert on "Visionarywritings" under Nongcebo

Link:

<https://visionarywritings.com/author/Precious%20Moloi/id/908>



NONGCEBO

Banza really came, I walked up to him and hugged him.. He held me tight.

Him: Are you okay? Did he hurt you? Me: No he didn't

We broke the hug with my hands on his chest, and his hands around my waist.

Me: I'm just worried about Bongeka Him:

What has he done to her?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: She wants to kill him
Him:

What?

Me: She talked about poisoning
He was speechless..

Me: Makhathini is always alert, if I wanted to poison him I would've done it a long time ago. The traditional healer he consults is very vigilant, Makhathini would know when he is in danger

He separated from Me and leaned against the counter rubbing his fingers against his eyes..

Me: This is getting out of hand

Him: Bongeka is very stubborn, she might go ahead with it

Me: She will

Him: I think we should think of an escape plan before she does it

Me: I never really thought about escaping, but after seeing Bongeka broken like that. I really want to go ahead with it

He nodded..

Him: I understand

Bongeka walked out from her room..Banza:

Hey sweets

She walked up to him and hugged him..Him: It's

okay

I rubbed her on her back..

Banza: It's okay I'll get you out of here

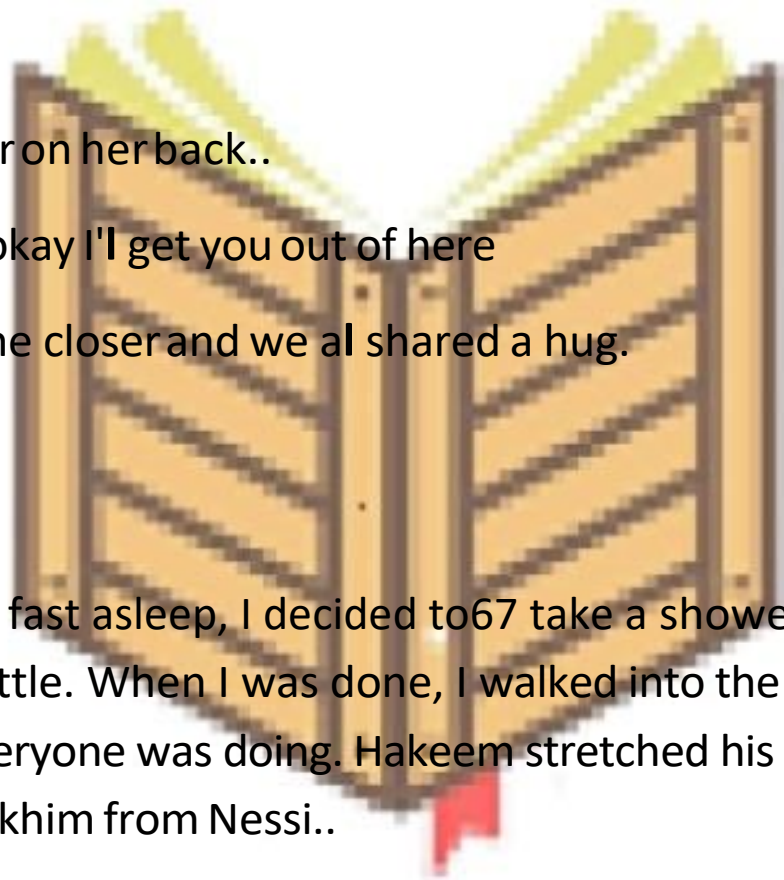
He pulled me closer and we all shared a hug.

KELSO (KB)

Power was fast asleep, I decided to take a shower and let her rest a little. When I was done, I walked into the house to see how everyone was doing. Hakeem stretched his hands out to me, I took him from Nessi..

Nessi: This boy loves you with all his heartMy

Grandmother walked in..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Kelso

Me: Ma

She tried to take Hakeem from me but he protested.. Hakeem:

No!!! Nxa!

I laughed.. My Grandmother rolled her eyes.

Her: This weekend me and my church home cell we going out on a fasting Camp, we need transportation

Me: I'll call Banza and see if his taxi will be available

Her: Ask how much he's going to charge so I can alert the ladies

Me: It's okay I'll pay, you tell me everything that you guys are going to need

Her: We will be at a lodge Me:

Have you guys paid? Her: Yes

Me: You should've told me, I'll replace the money Nessi: Thatha wena Bill gates, Wena Pablo Escobar

Grams: Don't be jelly Nessi

Nessi: I'm just prasing him that's all Grams: I'm going

to the shops I'll be back Me: Take Hakeem with

Grams: So he can cry and then people will think I kidnapped him

Me: You over reacting Ma

Grams: I'll be back

I looked at Nessi..

Me: How is school going Baby? Her: Well

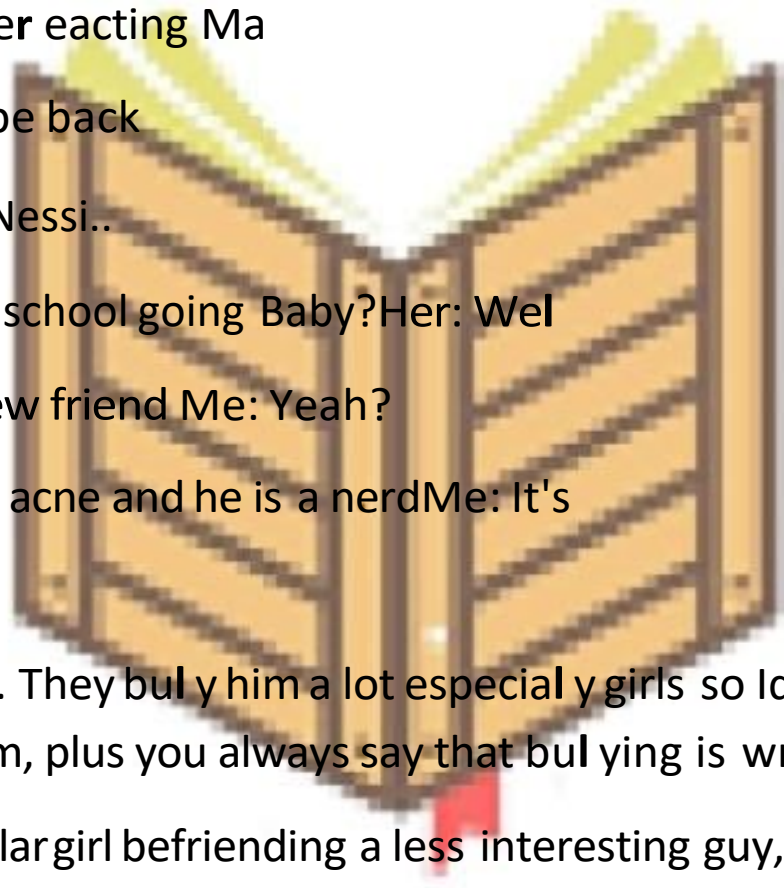
I made a new friend Me: Yeah?

Her: He has acne and he is a nerd Me: It's

a He?

Her: Listen.. They bully him a lot especially girls so I decided to befriend him, plus you always say that bullying is wrong

Me: A popular girl befriendng a less interesting guy,



NOVELSGURU.COM

I'm proud of you

Her: It's not right what they doing to him, peopleshouldn't treat other people bad

Me: That's the spirit

With Nessi saying that, I put Hakeem on top of the counter and took out my phone. I went to Facebook and checked one of those girls who used to bul y me when I was in primary school, the ring leader.

Unfortunately the results came back highly unexpected. I saw a lot of "RIP" on her wal , apparently she passed on a few months ago. Car accident.

What caught my attention was one girl who was posting a lot on her wal , I checked and it was her little sister. I went to her account, they look very much alike. If she wasn't younger I would've thought that they were twins. Her name is Sandisiwe Gxaba, I checked her Timeline.

Apparently she's an author and a brand ambassador for some clothing label. As I went through her things she had posted that tomor ow

she'll be doing a book signing for two of her books at some book store. I called Sole...

Sole: Kels

Me: Do you have plans for tomorrow? Him:

Not exactly why?

Me: I want you to accompany me to some bookstore

Him: Book store? Me:

Long story

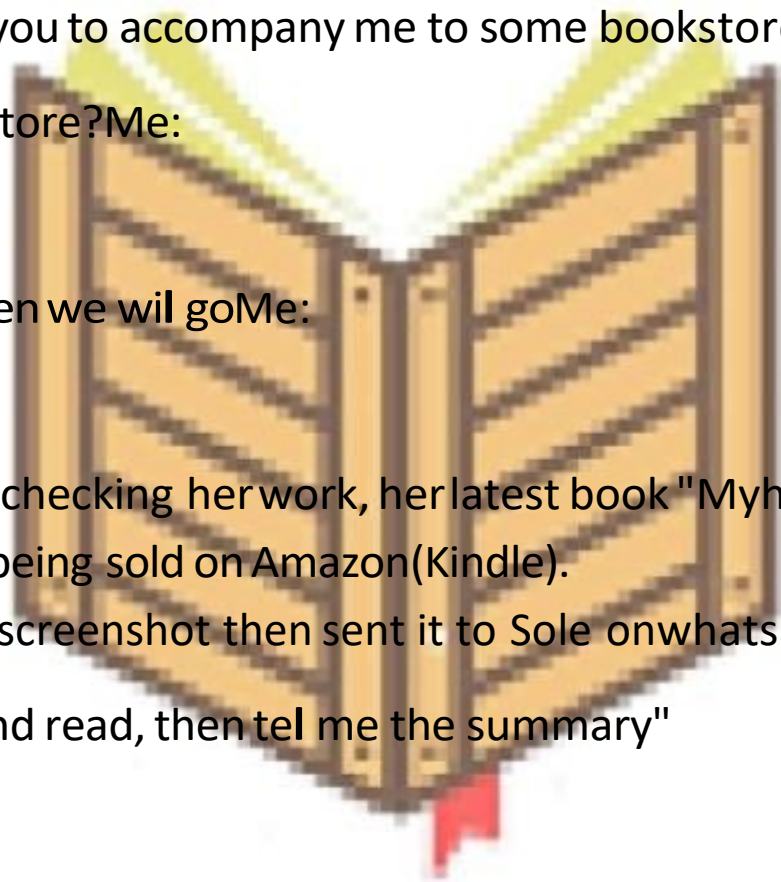
Him: Ayt then we will go Me:

Cool

I continued checking her work, her latest book "My hope is dead" was being sold on Amazon (Kindle).

\$6, I took a screenshot then sent it to Sole on whatsapp..

Me: "Buy and read, then tell me the summary"



MAKHATHINI

NOVELSGURU.COM

I checked through what Bhubesi laid out in front of me. I saw Banza hugging my girls.

The anger I felt deep within, especially when he was that close to Nongcebo..

I didn't hear what they were saying though, but from the look of things they all involved in something..

Bhubesi: Umfana lo uzoba yinkinga (This boy is going to be a problem)

Me: Ngenzani makunje? (What do I do when it's like this)

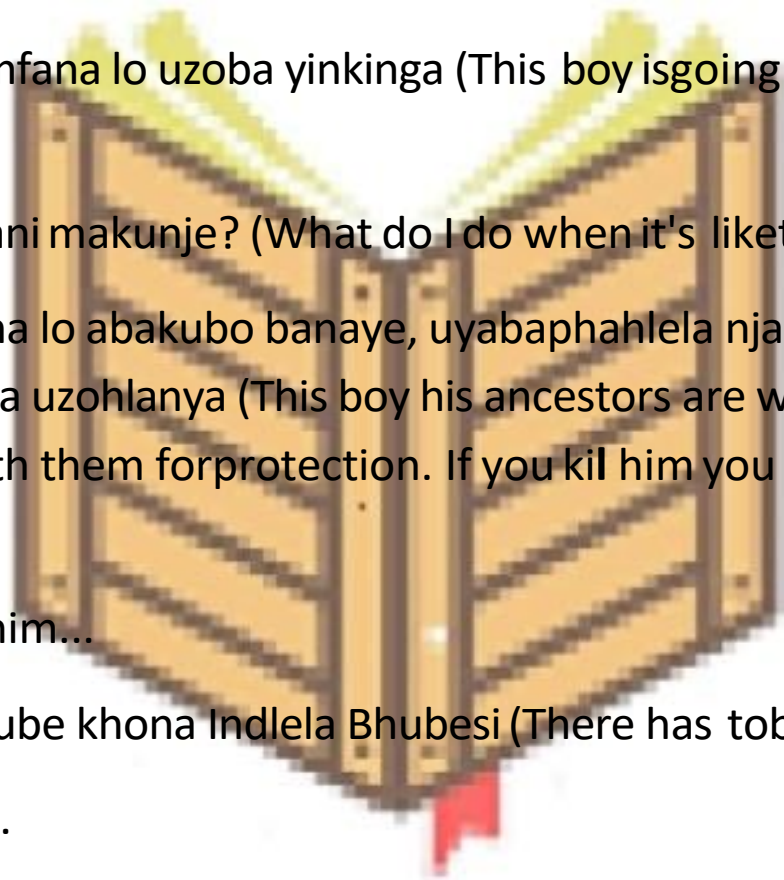
Him: Umfana lo abakubo banaye, uyabaphahlela njalo. UMa ungambulala uzohlanya (This boy his ancestors are with him, he consults with them for protection. If you kill him you will lose your sanity)

I looked at him...

Me: Mele kube khona Indlela Bhubesi (There has to be a way)

He nodded..

Him: Sizoyithola Indlela ngingubhubesi mina (We will find a way I am Bhubesi)



Me: What makes his ancestors so strong?

Him: Ukhokho wakhe bekuyinyanga eqinile, umvikela ngisho nase thuneni (His great grandmother was a powerful traditional healer, she is protecting him even from the grave)

Me: I'm not prepared to lose my family, do something

Bhubesi: Ungathuki Sizoyithola Indlela (Don't fret, we will find a way)

.

To be continued 09

POWER

Kelso walked in right when I got off from the phone with this other guy I've been seeing for almost 2 months now. The truth is that no matter how much I love this ruthless handsome prick that I had a baby with, but we can never be. I miss being in a normal relationship, most of all I miss my freedom. I can't

NOVELSGURU.COM

be with someone and always be scared, I can't live in fear. It's not healthy for one's mentality..

Me: I am ready to go Him:

Hakeem is sleeping

He walked over spanking my butt to go sit on the bed..

Me: I was thinking that he should go to a daycare, especially since I'm job hunting again

He laid back on the bed..

Him: Fair enough, just get a good one Me: Kelso can we talk about something? Him: Talk

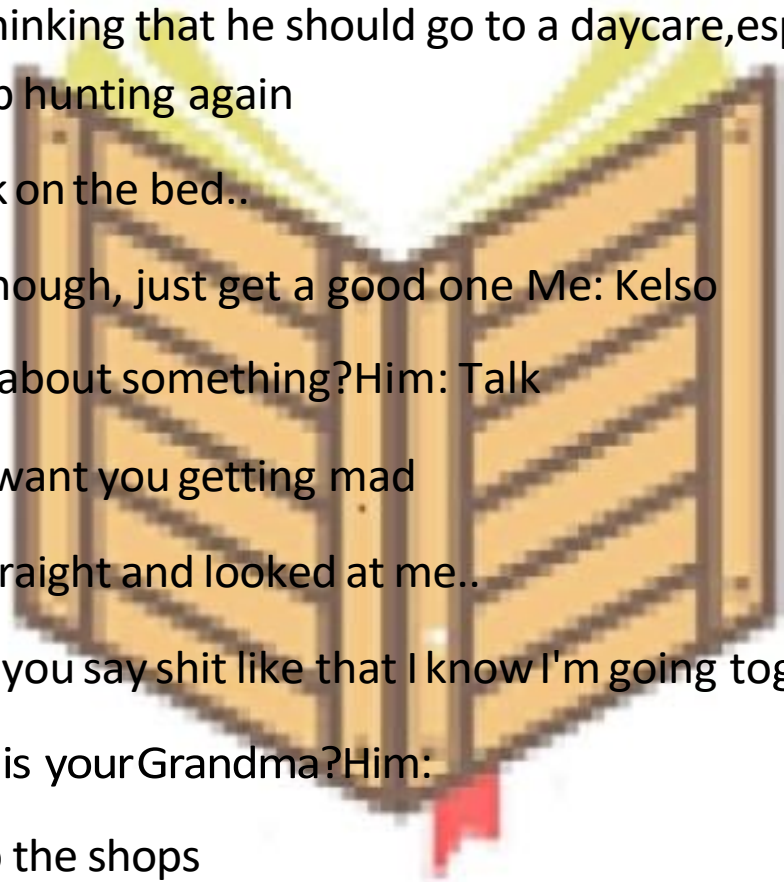
Me: I don't want you getting mad

He sat up straight and looked at me..

Him: When you say shit like that I know I'm going to get mad

Me: Where is your Grandma? Him:

She went to the shops



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Can I open the door?

He got up from the bed and I reacted frantically as he passed me. I heard him locking the door then he came back and sat on the bed with the keys in his hand..

Him: Talk

Me: I'm scared

(Silence)

Him: Power talk! I don't have the whole day I have to go somewhere

By now I was shaking..

Me: Kelso I'm seeing someone, it has been two months now

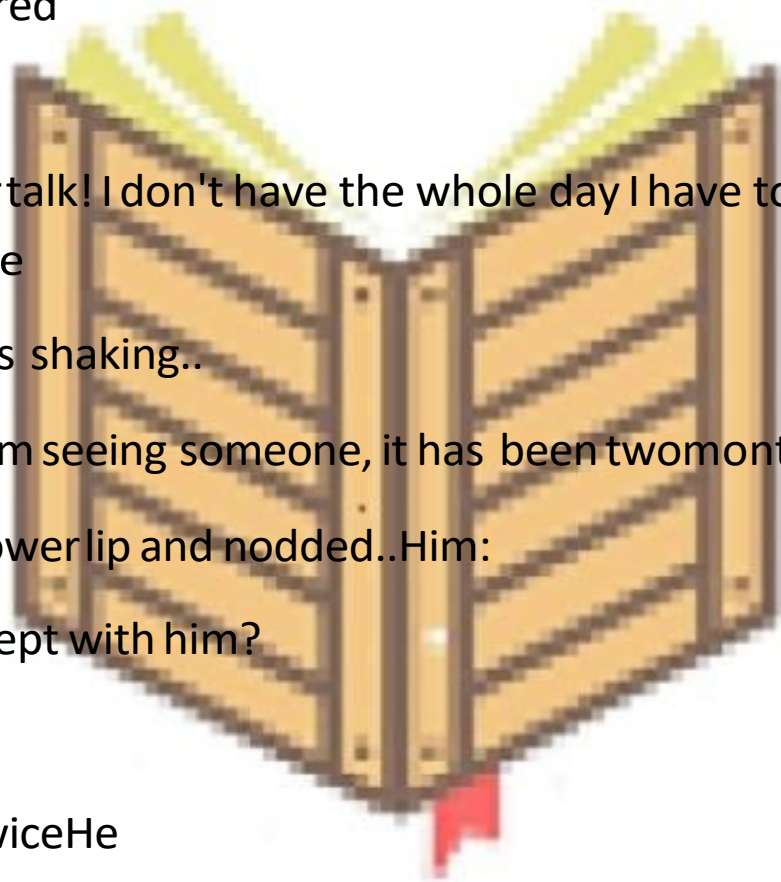
He bit his lower lip and nodded.. Him:

Have you slept with him?

I nodded..

Me: Only twice He

chuckled..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Entlek ngiyanyelwa la (I'm being fucked with)Me: You and I we not in a relationship anymore

Him: No you dumped me! As far as I know I'm still in a relationship with you. Remember Power I approached you, you didn't approach me. I get to decide if we done or not

Me: Kelso don't do this

Him: Ungang'hlanyisi Amandla! (don't make memad)

Me: Kelso angisakufuni (I don't want you anymore)

Him: Okay... Obviously uyashisa I'll give you sometime to cool down

He got up from the bed and moved towards me, I took a few steps back until I was against the wall. He balanced his hand on the wall right above my shoulder. He leaned over and whispered next to my ear..

Him: The only reason why I'm not fucking you upright now is because of Hakeem

He lowered his other hand and forcefully pulled up

NOVELSGURU.COM

my already short skirt. His hand made it's way inside my underwear, then he stuck two fingers deep inside of me. It was uncomfortable because I was in a lot of pain from our sexual encounter. I closed my eyes and gently held his arm. His fingers went in and out with full force making sure that he gets a reaction from me because of what he was doing..

Him: You let him fuck my pussy? Wamyeka wazidalela?

I didn't say anything.. He kept on doing that, this time around it was more painful..

Me: Ke.. Kelso uyang'limaza (You hurting me)

When I opened my eyes tears streamed down, he kissed my neck.. That enticing calm tone that he mostly uses to beg and threaten me at the same made it to my ear.

Him: I'm going to fuck you up one of these days!
Me: Kelso please stop (crying)

I glanced down and I could see that he was getting

NOVELSGURU.COM

an erection.. Should I resist or let him have his way with me so that we can get it over and done with? I was torn between two decisions. With the only escape plan that I could think of, I lowered my hand down to him and massaged him. When he started moaning he removed his fingers from my aching cookie and unbuttoned his jeans, he unzipped it and lowered it down. I had to do the rest by lowering his boxer briefs so Mr man could come out to play. I gave him a hand job as he went back to fingering me. I tried to look for any form of pleasure so that I don't concentrate much on the pain, his moaning and groaning next to my ear was what I concentrated more on, but the pain was still unbearable and I couldn't stop crying. The more I cried, the more he got hard. That went on and on until he finally got his hand back from me again and placed it on my hand assisting my hand from performing a slow rhythm to a more intense one. As he was close to jerking off he literally forced it in between my thighs as I held skirt more up with my underwear hanging low on my knees from its original position..

He buried his face right on the side of my neck as he came in between my thighs, I felt his warm breath hitting my neck. Some of his cum fell on my underwear whilst the rest dripped down in between my thighs..

NONGCEBO

Makhathini walked in as Bongeka and I were busy preparing dinner. Our mood went from happily singing our favorite song to being depressed.. He closed the door, Bongeka and I looked at each other..

Him: Sanibonani

I greeted him back. He took the newspaper from underneath his armpit and threw it on the counter...

Him: How far are you guys with cooking? Me: We just started

Him: Leave everything, I'm taking you guys out

That was unexpected. He has never ate out with us, he only allows Bongeka and I go go and eat out

most of the time and even with that he will send his 3 boys to guard us..

Him: You guys can choose any restaurant that you want

I looked at Bongeka..

Me: Go and change sweets

She wanted to protest but she saw the desperation in my eyes. I don't want her protesting and Makhathini making her his punching bag for the night. She put the knife down and walked to her bedroom..

Me: I'll clear everything

He gently grabbed my arm and looked at me, tonight he was different. He was a bit off, he didn't seem like his usual self..

Him: Ngiyazi MaKhumalo ukuthi emhleni ngulukhuni (I know that at times I'm difficult)

Not at times, he's difficult all the time..

Him: I know I don't show you how much I love you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It's okay

He put his hand on my cheek, the same hand that uses to beat me when he feels like it..

Him: Yikho besengicabanga ukuthi sivele sishade (I was thinking that we should get married)

I immediately looked at him confused as hell, we have never spoken about marriage. Why now? What happened?

Him: Eqinisweni nje ukuthi.. I want you to be my wife ngokweqiniso

I swallowed.. Me: I..

I looked down and he made me to look at him, so I don't forget how evil he is. He wanted me to look him in the eye in case I was thinking about a different response that wasn't going to suit him..

Me: Bengisacela ukucabanga ngayo kancane (Can I please think about it)

Him: Yebo.. Yenza njalo (Just do that)

NOVELSGURU.COM

BANELE (BANZA) MTHOMBENI

Kelso had called me and asked to meet up with me, I waited for him for almost 2 hours. Just when I was about to give up, he walked in. He looked around until he spotted me, then he made his way to me..

Him: Sorry I'm late Man Me: It's

all good

I got up so I can give him a shoulder hug then we sat down..

Him: Just got held up a bit

Me: You wanted to see me about something? Him: Yeah I

wanna hire your taxi for this weekend Me: Going somewhere?

Him: Naa.. It's for my Grandmother Me:

Cool man

He looked at me.. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: K'hambani? (What's going on)

I rubbed my face with my hand..

Me: I need to go up against my boss, I don't even know where to start?

Him: Who? MK? (Makhathini) Me:

Yeah Man

Him: Why?

Kelso and I we from the same hood, we used to be friends when we were young until he chose his own path in life and I did so too. Makhathini lives in a hood just close to ours, could be a 10min drive from ours, so the taxi that I operate for him moves around from his hood to mine most of the time..

People come this side from his hood to go to the shopping centers so I am always busy driving back and forth everyday unless he wants me to do something for him..

Me: I just a favour for someone I care deeply for Him: So what?

You have to take him out?

Me: I really don't know

Him: I can do it for you

looked at him..

Him: You and I go way back, I can do you this favour

Me: You don't do favours for free, your favours come with strings attached. One day you gonna make me repay this favour

Him: That's true

He tried to recruit me to join his gang but I was never really interested in that life, it's just not me..

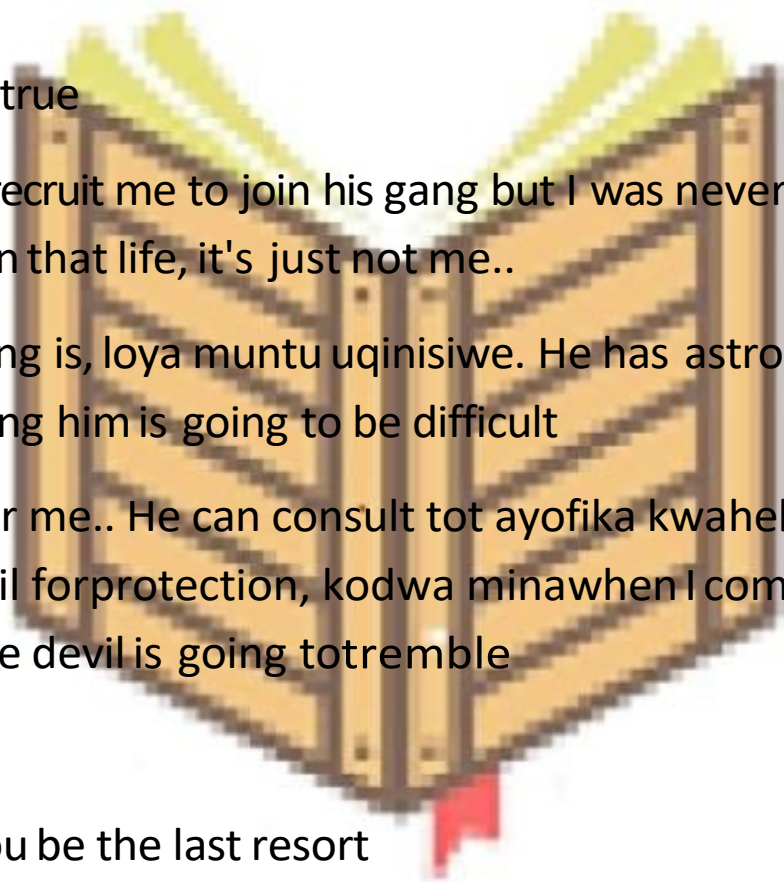
Me: The thing is, loya muntu uqinisiwe. He has a strong inyanga killing him is going to be difficult

Him: Not for me.. He can consult tot ayofika kwahel and ask the devil for protection, kodwa minawhen I come for his life, even the devil is going to tremble

I chuckled..

Me: May you be the last resort

Him: Just say the word Ntwana, you know I got you



I nodded..

Me: Yeah I know

NONGCEBO

I couldn't stop thinking about what Makhathini asked me, we drove to town with my mind faraway. What is he playing at? Why would he bring this up now? What are his true intentions exactly? Why is he suddenly so polite? Something wasn't right. The Makhathini I know doesn't ask, he orders you around. Why is he asking for my permission all of a sudden?

.

To be continued 10

BANZA

I've known Kelso for a very long time now, what I know about him is that he doesn't have a

conscience. I know he would kill Makhathini and not even regret it, what's nice about the situation is that no one likes Makhathini so no one is going to miss him.

Hence why he goes to a traditional healer because he knows there's a bullet out there with his name. He knows that a Glock can clock in soon for him, he has a lot of enemies. The only thing I don't like about Keslo is that, his favours come with strings attached. One day he will ask me to repay the favour and it might be something that I won't like. I don't wanna make an enemy out of him. See, Makhathini is the devil but Kels. That motherfucker is the whole hell and has the best crew next to him. This is how I classify them:

Kelso = Leader (no conscience) Sole =

Brains (Smart motherf***) Stallion = A

snake (cunning)

All 3 of them, they a deadly combination. I know about them because he wanted me to join them, but I wouldn't do that. I am not built for that life..

NOVELSGURU.COM

My Mother walked into my bedroom..Her:

You didn't join us for dinner

Me: I am not hungry

She came and sat down next to me..Her:

What's wrong?

Life was good at home until my Mother started getting sick, then she was forced to resign. My Dad is a mechanic, money doesn't come in every day from him. With that financial situation, after matric I had no choice but to get a job..

Me: It's nothing She

looked at me..

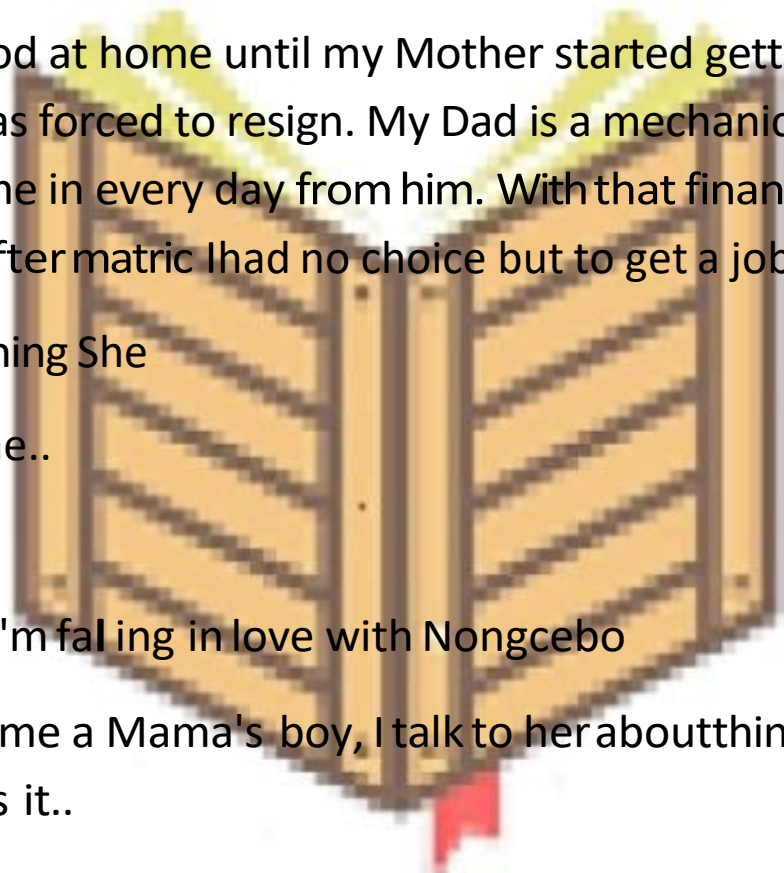
(Silence)

Me: I think I'm falling in love with Nongcebo

You can call me a Mama's boy, I talk to her about things and my Father hates it..

Her: That can't happen my boy Me: I

know but it just happened



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Makhathini is very evil, he won't hesitate to kill you

Me: I just wanted to save her from miserable life

Her: The honest truth is that Nongcebo can save herself. Don't get involved. There's a limit to what a human being can take and one day, she's going to reach her limit then leave. She knows him better than anyone else, she knows what to do in order to escape. What if you risk your life and save her then she goes back? After Makhathini has instilled fear in her at the same time he is the only man that she knows. Yes she's being abused and most victims of abuse they just don't leave. Rescued they will go back until they make a decision deep down to leave for good. If you do love her then you won't put her in danger like that, let it be her. Let it come from her

She held my hand..Me: I

understand

NONGCEBO



NOVELSGURU.COM

The was nothing normal about this. No matter how much we can fake being a perfect family but we not,we wil never be a happy family. We were al quiet and eating our food, most people who were here at the restaurant held smal talks. We didn't, we couldn't hold smal talks. We hardly even do that at home..

Him: I was thinking you and Bongeka can go andbuy clothes this weekend

I looked at Bongeka she was not interested in whathe was saying...

Me: That would be lovely

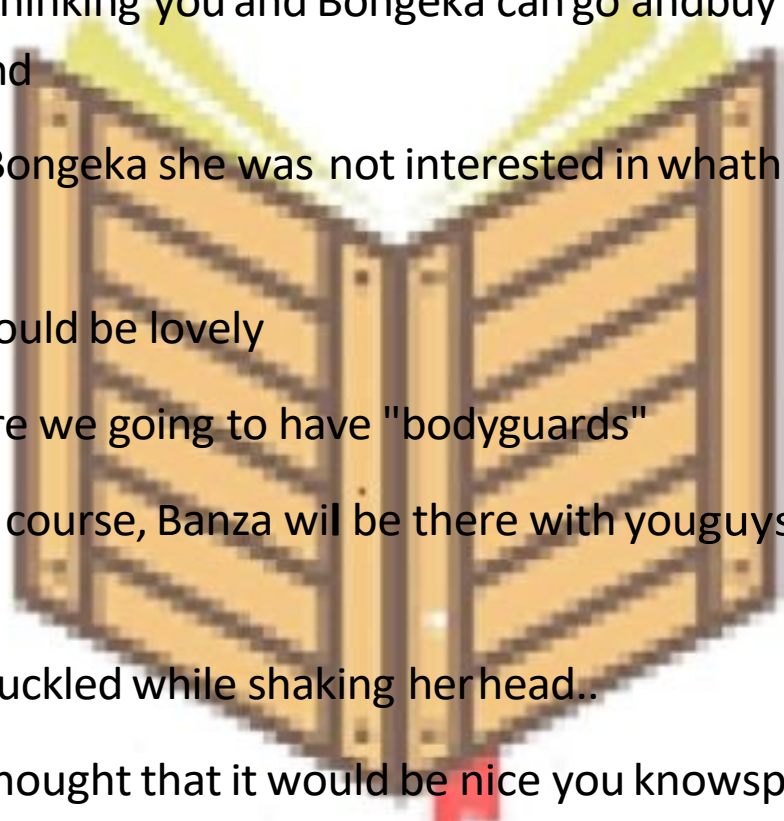
Bongeka: Are we going to have "bodyguards"

Him: Yes of course, Banza wil be there with youguys as always

Bongeka chuckled while shaking her head..

Him: I just thought that it would be nice you knowspend a day together buying clothes, doing your hairand everything that you ladies like doing

Me: I think it's a good idea.. Thank you



Bongeka: Why are you being nice?Me:

Bongeka

Him: It's okay

He put the fork down..

Him: I know that I am a very difficult person attimes

Bongeka: You not difficult, you are evil! You are abusive!
You don't care about us

Him: If I didn't care about you, you wouldn't be in one of the best private schools. You don't lack anything Bongeka, there's nothing I don't do for you. You should be grateful, not al kids get to have whatyou have

Her: Very true.. They don't get to live this miserablelife

He hit the table.. Him:

That's enough!

A feweyes landed on us..

Him: Ngeke ngijikeleze nengane siyezwana? (I won't

NOVELSGURU.COM

argue with a child)

Once again, we kept the silence..

Him: Finish your food! Both of you, it's getting late!

POWER

I woke up to Keslo holding my hand, he was crouching next to me and staring at me..

Him: I didn't mean to wake you up
Me: It's okay, what time is it?

Him: 20:00

Hakeem was sleeping peacefully sleeping next to me..

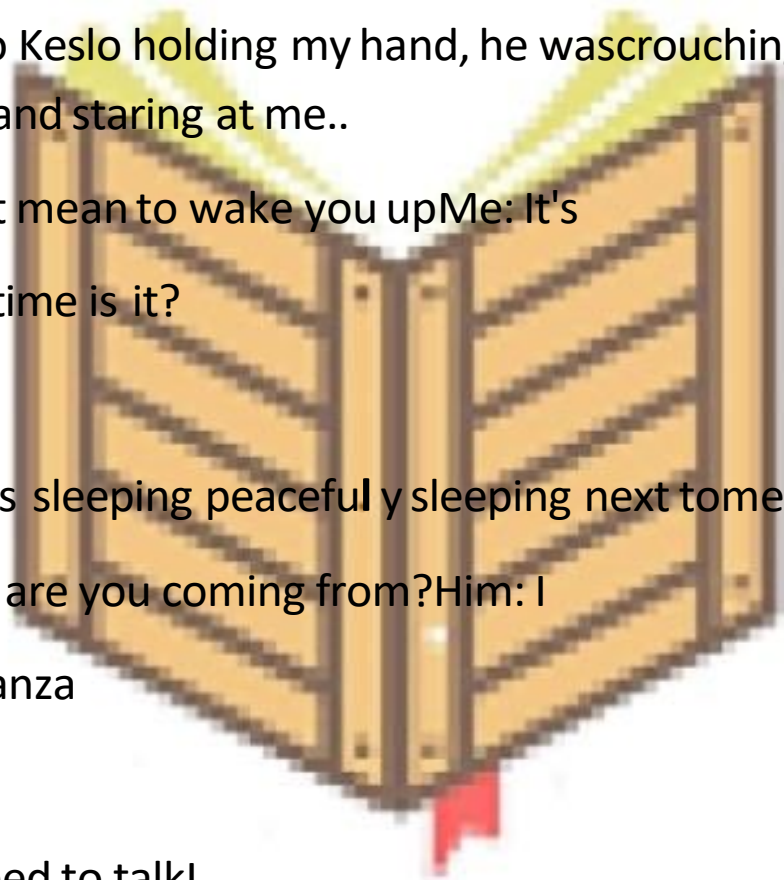
Me: Where are you coming from?
Him: I was with Banza

Me: Okay

Him: We need to talk!

looked at him..

NOVELSGURU.COM



Him: Tell me something, do you love him? I kept quiet..

Him: I want you to be honest with me
Me: I don't wanna fight

Him: We not fighting. I might be fucked up but I'd never attack you with my Son in the room

Fair enough..

Me: He is a nice guy

Him: Is that why you with him?

Me: I'm with him because I miss being in a normal relationship, I miss living without pain and fear

He nodded..

Him: I understand

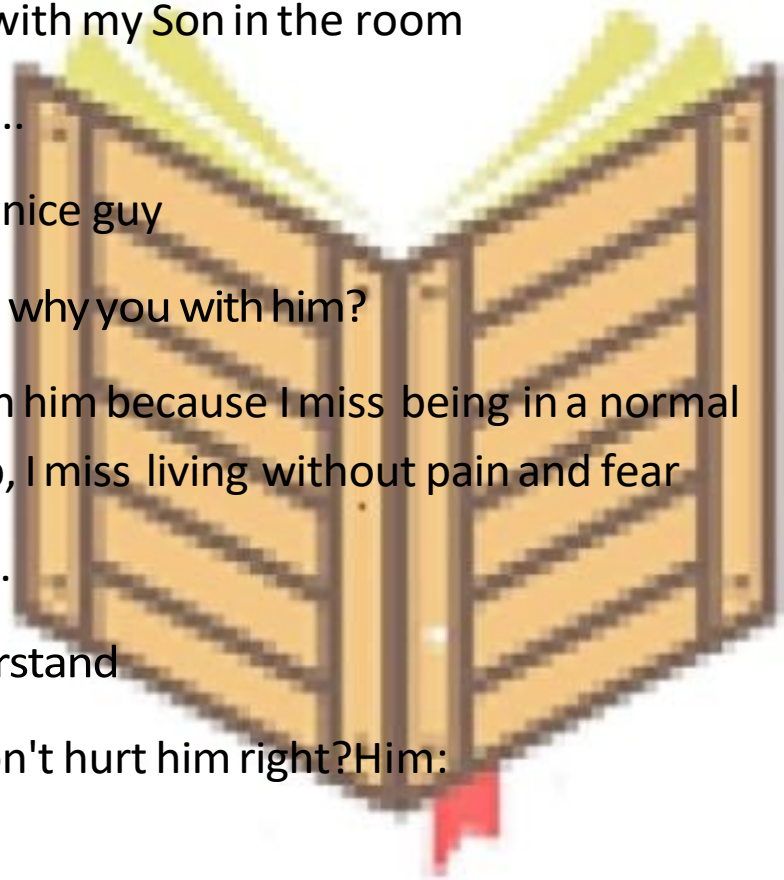
Me: You won't hurt him right?
Him:

No..

He exhaled..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I might have approached you for my own selfish reasons but along the way I learned to love



you

He smiled..

Him: Then Hakeem came, I loved you more
Me: Then why do you keep on hurting me?

Him: I don't know.. I guess I have my own demon that I need to deal with, or maybe I just don't know how to love the way that you want me to love you

Me: It's okay

Him: Hardest decision that I'm resorting too but.. I thought about it and.. I wil let you go no repercussions

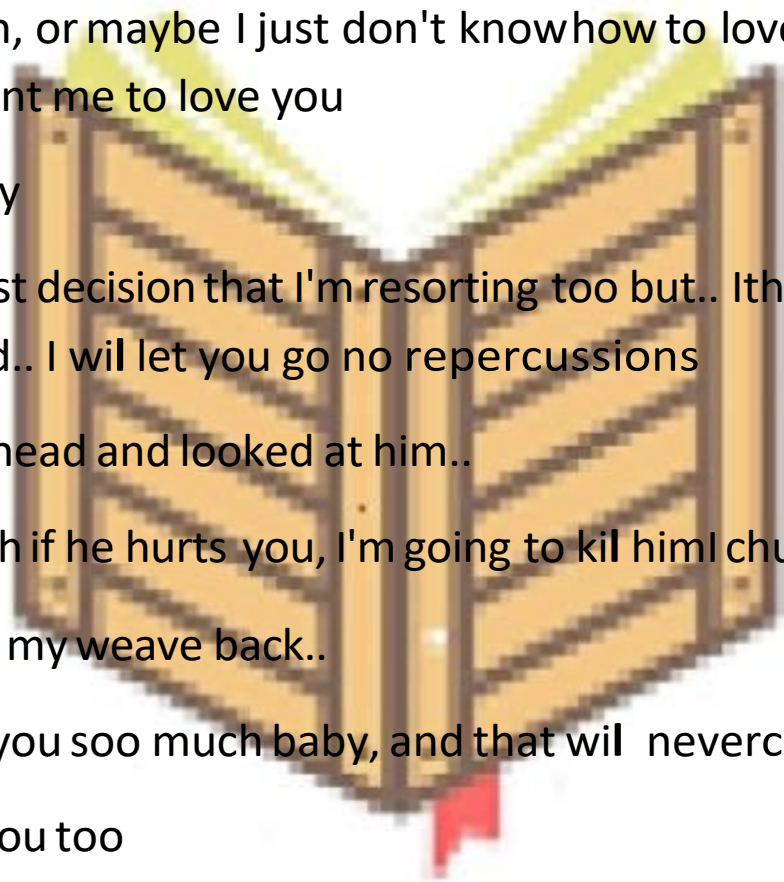
I raised my head and looked at him..

Him: Though if he hurts you, I'm going to kil him I chuckled..

He brushed my weave back..

Him: I love you soo much baby, and that wil neverchange

Me: I love you too



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: But we can't be together Me:

Yes.. We can't be together He kissed
my hand..

Him: I understand and I'm sor y foreverything that I've put
you through

Me: It's okay

He got up and kissed me on my forehead.. Him:

Good night

Me: You not sleeping with us? Him:

I'll sleep on the couch Me: Okay

good night

NONGCEBO

We drove back home in silence, I was stil
wondering why Makhathini was this nice..

Bongeka walked straight to her bedroom, she banged the
door. Makhathini clenched his Jaws..

Me: I'm sor y about her behaviour



NOVELSGURU.COM

He wrapped his hands around my waist..Me: She's just being a Teen

Him: Mina ngijabulela nje ukuthi ukhona uzongisizangaye (I'm happy you here to help me with her)

Me: I love Bongeka with all my heartHim: I know

Me: What you did today was nice, thank you

Him: Ngifuna nje izinto zihluke la ekhaya (I want things to be different here at home)

I nodded..

Him: Why don't you take a bath, when you done we can watch those movies of yours that don't make sense

I laughed..

Me: You just don't understand themHe kissed me on my forehead..

Him: I love you Nongcebo, I promise that I will try and treat you well from here on



Those words sounded like the words of a man who is dying..

.

To be continued

Apologies for the drag of inserts today, not feeling too well when my period visits

11

NONGCEBO

In the morning I was cleaning when Banza showed up..

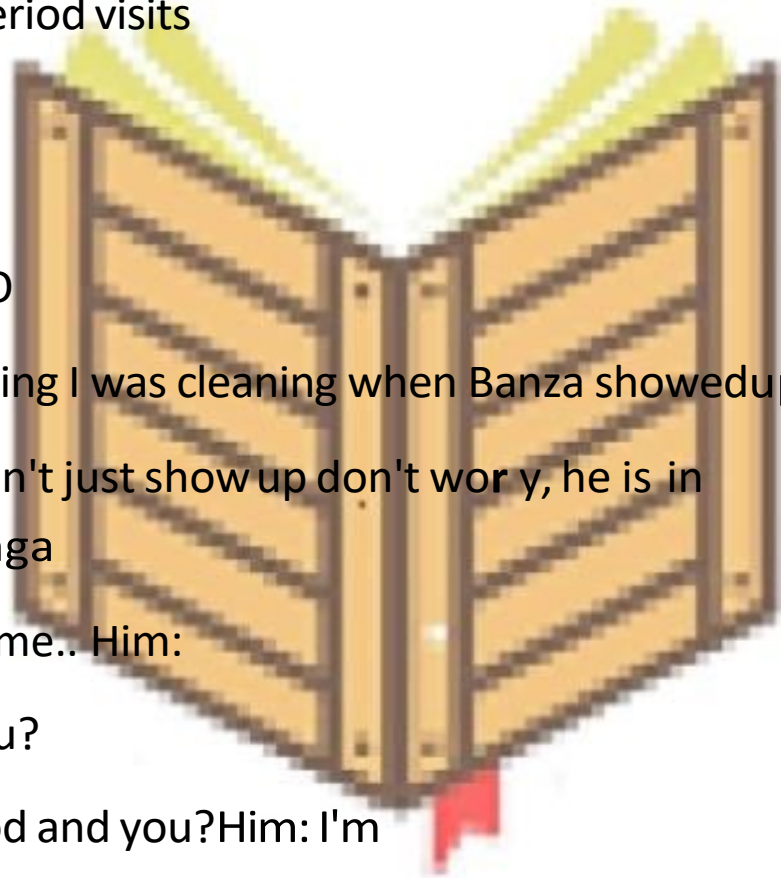
Him: He won't just show up don't worry, he is in Mpumalanga

He hugged me.. Him:

How are you?

Me: I'm good and you? Him: I'm

well



NOVELSGURU.COM

He walked in and sat down..

Me: He took us out last night and made me breakfast in bed this morning

His eyes widened..

Him: What?

Me: I know, we even watched my favorite movies last night

Him: Dammit! I hope you don't suddenly believe his nice act
I shook my head..

Me: I'm not that stupid.. I just want him to let his guard down when he least expects it, we going to escape. He asked me to marry him, I'm going to say yes

Him: Nongcebo

Me: I have a plan. Wedding preparations will need me to be mostly outdoors handling things, that's when we going to escape. I don't have any money saved up because he doesn't give me money anymore but.. I've been searching online shelters

NOVELSGURU.COM

for abused women and children, I found one. It's not in Gauteng though. It's in North West. Bongeka will have to get a transfer if it takes time unfortunately she will have to drop out she will start again next year

He chuckled..Me:

What?

Him: I'm just so proud of you!

smiled..

Me: Wait let me show you

I went and got my laptop, then I sat next to him on the couch.

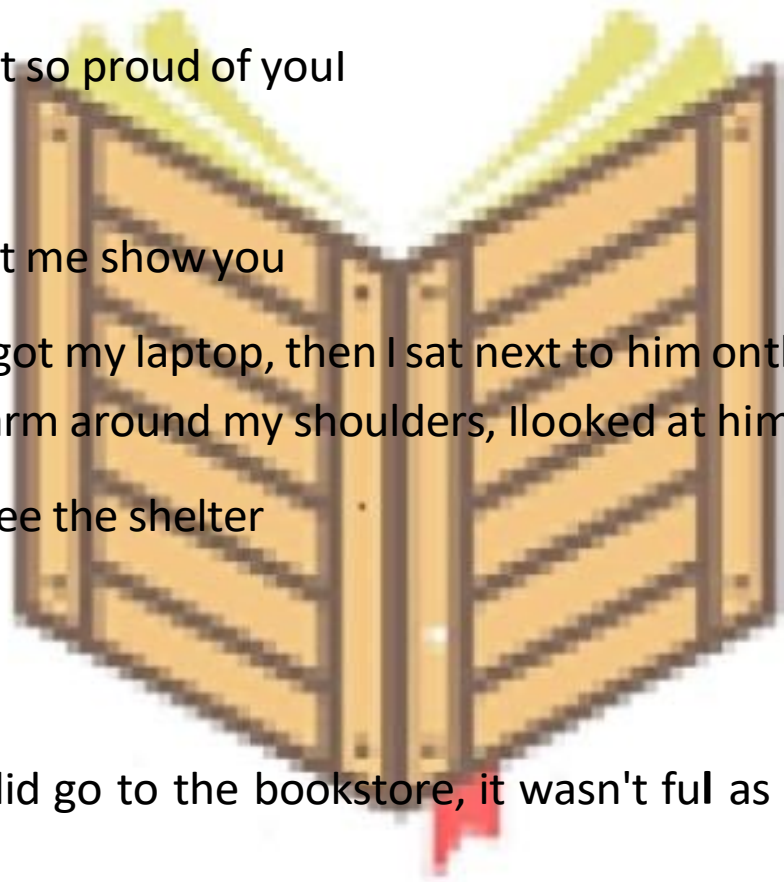
He put his arm around my shoulders, I looked at him..

Him: Let's see the shelter

KELSO (KB)

Sole and I did go to the bookstore, it wasn't full as I would've expected..

Me: I thought it was going to be packed



Sole: She's still finding her way as a writer, she's not that much exposed

Me: How do you know? Sole: I

checked her out Me: Did you

buy the book? Him: No

Me: Why?

Him: We buying the hard copy now aren't we?

He went and got the book from the shelf, but it was a different one from the one I saw..

Me: Besmirch

Him: It's still low on sales, it's falling behind

We went and paid for it then we joined the queue so she could sign it. I looked at her and she looked exactly like her sister. Her smile, her facial structure. I drifted back to those unsettling memories..

*****FLASHBACK*****

Phumla: Do you know what a bitch is?

I was in the girls toilets, naked with both my hands hiding my crotch. She was standing at the door with her two friends, one of the friends had tried flushing my uniform in the toilet next door. I was scared, these girls have been bullying me for a while now and Phumla was 2 years older. A bit mature to be in primary school.. She killed that innocent boy in me, she made me fearful, she made experience depression when I didn't know what it was.

Everyday I wanted to die. I wanted to hurt myself so bad until I died.

Sole pushed me a little, we were at the front of the queue now..I took the book from Sole and walked up to the table. She looked at me and I looked at her, it was like looking straight into the eyes of my bully. I slammed the book on the table, she reacted frantically.

She took it and opened it..Her:

What should I write?

Me: How about your phone numbers?



She chuckled..

Her: I don't think that's appropriateMe: I

don't care what you think

I put my hands on the table and leaned over to her, I could see that she was getting scared..

Me: Write

Her: I think I'm going to call securitySole

pushed me..

Me: Wtf?

Sole: Security is just at the door, you will be thrown out

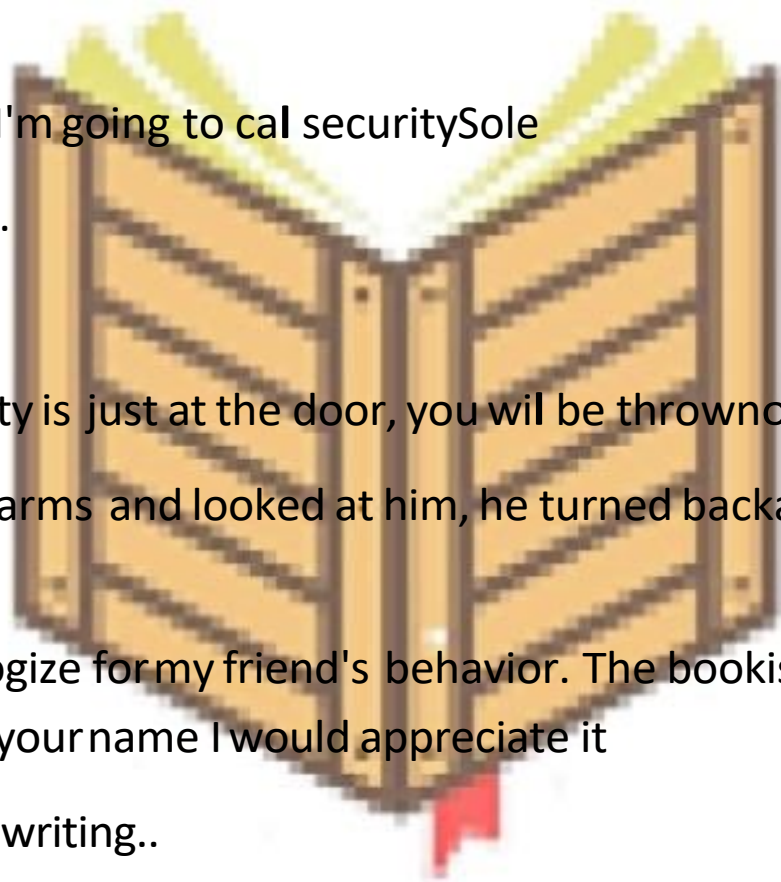
I folded my arms and looked at him, he turned back and looked at her..

Sole: I apologize for my friend's behavior. The book is mine please sign your name I would appreciate it

She started writing..

Sole: I haven't started reading it yetShe

looked at him..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: I wanted to see the face first before reading so that I can put the face on what I'm reading. I will leave a review on your page though after reading

She smiled..

Her: That won't be necessary, you can just text me your review

She wrote down her number..Sole:

That's even better

She handed him back the book and said she they both held it for a while, I rolled my eyes irritated..

Me: Fuck me! Sole:

Thank you Her: You

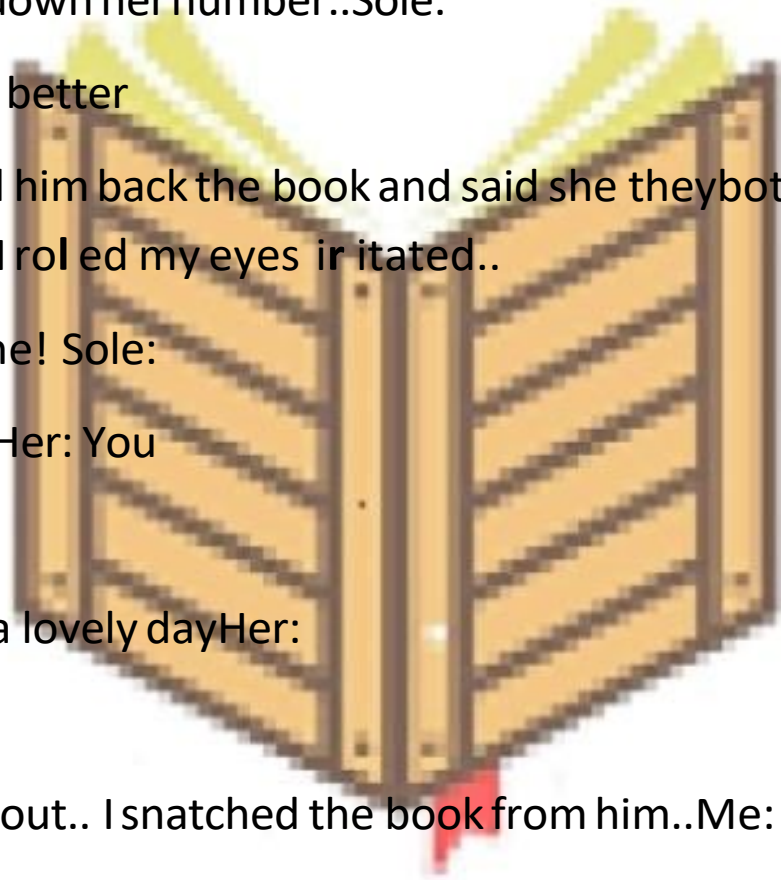
welcome

Sole: Have a lovely day Her:

You too

We walked out.. I snatched the book from him..Me: Nice work

He got it from me again..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: It's mine

I looked at him..

Me: Don't tel me you fal ing her man? Hersisterfucked up my life

He leaned against the car and opened the book..

Me: Let me piss you off a little.. Londi is fuckingStal ion

Him: I know

I was confused..

Him: I knew from the first time it happened

Me: You knew and you not going to fuck him up

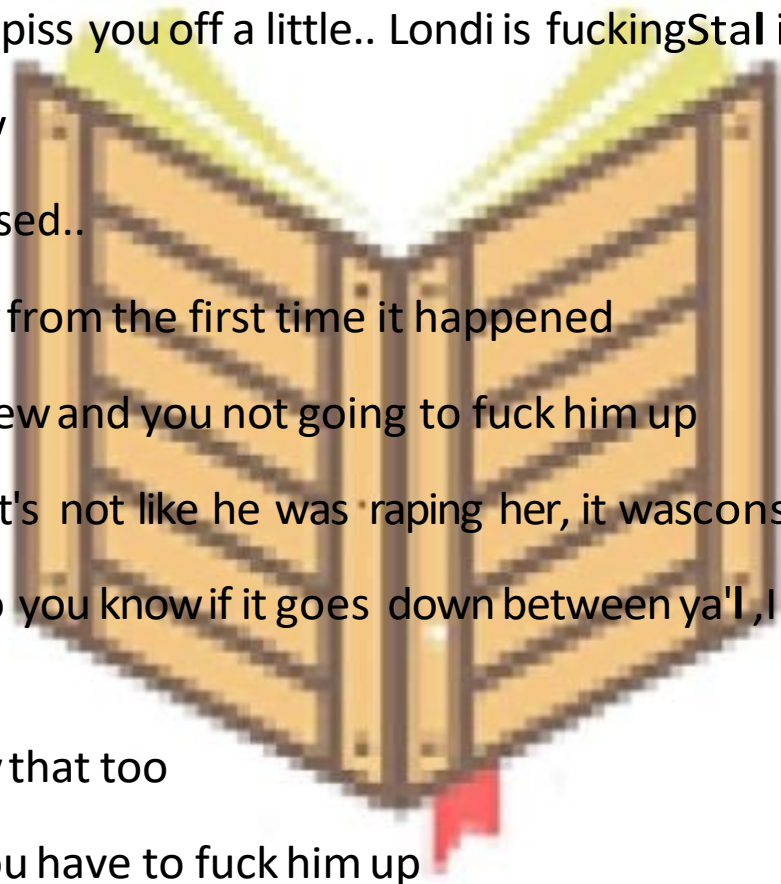
Him: Why? It's not like he was raping her, it was consensual

Me: J ust so you know if it goes down between ya'l ,I am on your side

Him: I know that too

Me: Sole you have to fuck him up

Him: I'm not going to do that.. Can we go now?



I shook my head..

Me: If it was me Station wo-

Him: It's not you, it's me.. Stay out of my business I looked at him..

Me: You are the fucken Captain of the cum squad!

NESSI (Kelso's Niece)

Bongeka was awfully quiet today for my liking, she passed me the cigarette..

Me: You good?

Her: I'm good

Bongeka is in grade 9, and she's my best friend. Our friendship started off a bit weird though I'm 1 grade ahead of her..

Her: Did you post those pictures? Me:

Not yet

Her: What are you waiting for? Me:

For Jesus to come



NOVELSGURU.COM

She laughed..

Her: Give me the damn phone!She
took my phone..

Some girl walked in, she stood at the door when she saw us. We
were sitting on the bench of the girls toilets..

Me: What? Her:

Nothing She
walked in..

Bongeka: Go back to the doorHer: I
don't want trouble

Bongeka: Go back and stand at the fucken doorShe moved
back with attitude..

Bongeka looked at me, I nodded..

Bongeka walked up to her..

She put both her hands against the door and looked at her. All of
a sudden, she head butted the girl..

Girl: Awwww!



NOVELSGURU.COM

She pulled her in and threw her on the floor.

She walked back in and grabbed her tie, then she dragged her to one of the toilets. The girl started screaming. I laughed and started singing..

Me: "It's a hard knock life for us, it's a hard knock life for us! Instead of treated we get tricked, instead of kisses we get kicked it's a hard knock life"

I lied to my Uncle a lot. I made him believe that I'm this sweet angel at school but in actual fact, Bongeka and I we are bullies. We terrorize the school and we are known very well for our notorious behavior. We just haven't got caught yet because they scared to report us. It's a private school, filled with nerds who mostly don't know how to fight.

I uploaded the pictures on our page..Me: Go
Matthew!

I wrote a caption:

"This punk is disgusting! His parents are mostly to be blamed though for not helping him clear that

acne from his face.. Yuk!"The

bell went off..

Me: Fuck!

I went to the toilet.. Bongeka was drowning her..Me: Hey

we gotta squat

Bongeka let her go..

Bongeka: From now on, you are our bitch understand?

The girl nodded repeatedly..Me:

Get up let's go

She got up..

Bongeka: Wipe your face, you disgusting! She took
of her blazer and wiped her face..Me: If you dare

report us

Bongeka: We are going to kill you, do you understand dummy?

She nodded again..

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Let's go We

walked out..

.

To be continued12

SOLE

After that whole drama with Kelso I went back to my place. I knew from the word go that my girlfriend was fucking Stal ion, but one thing that I won't do is attack him. I'm not going to attack him because Londi never came to me and said "Stal ion sexual yviolated me" they have been shagging for a while now and clearly she's okay with everything. If she doesn't consider my feelings in all of this, then why fight for her?

Truthfully speaking I let go the time when I found about this. Yes I was mad, Yes I was hurt but staying in those feelings won't change what happened. The best way is to just let her be, if she's

NOVELSGURU.COM

happy with him then there's nothing I can do about it. I called Sandisiwe, after I had checked her out on social media. She was really beautiful I won't lie. I went and stood at the balcony...

Her: Hello

Me: Still signing books? She

laughed..

Her: Yes I'm still at the bookstore but I'll be leaving soon

Me: How did you know it was Me?

Her: Because I was expecting your call, I'm flattered that you done reading so quickly

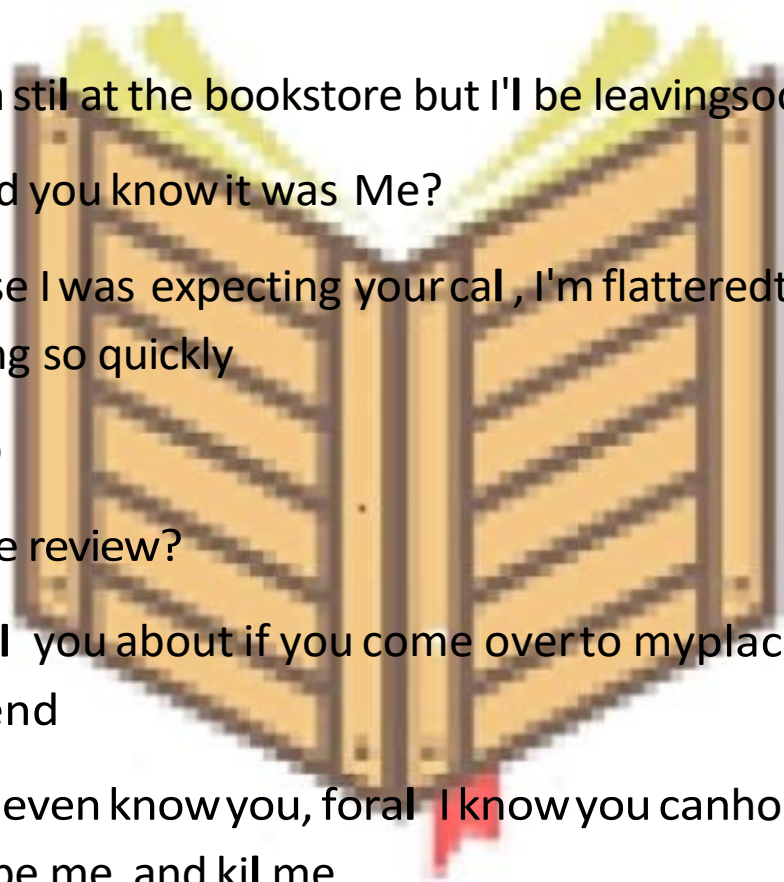
Me: Me too

Her: And the review?

Me: I can tell you about if you come over to my place this weekend

Her: I don't even know you, for all I know you can hold me hostage, rape me, and kill me

Me: Ouch! I'm offended



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: We met like what? 3 seconds ago?

Me: I think you know what's going to happen. I will ask you out, we will go on endless dates then eventually you will end up in my bed. So why not cut straight to it, we start with you coming over for this weekend and then we go on endless dates after. Start with the uncomfortable part first

Her: Wow!

Me: If I wanted to kidnap you, trust me you wasn't going to make it home when you leave the book store

Her: You are so bold! (Laughing) Me: So what do you say?

Her: Read my book first then we'll talk Me: I actually had a surprise for you Her: Already?

Me: Yes Already

Her: I really don't know

Me: Just come if it makes you feel any better!



NOVELSGURU.COM

have a cop car surveillanceHer: A

cop car? Who are you?

Me: I am their friend, they know me well.. I'm that bad friend they always chasing around

Her: Are you trying to tell me something?

Me: I'm just telling you about my good and bad friends

She laughed again..

Me: So what do you say?

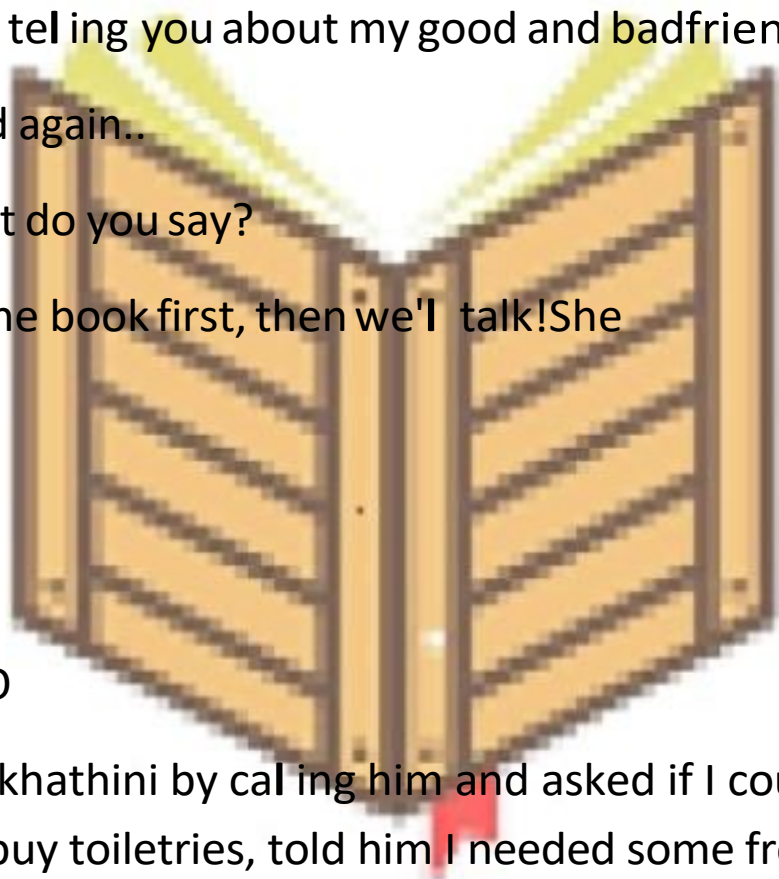
Her: Read the book first, then we'll talk!She

hung up..

Me: Damn!

NONGCEBO

I tested Makhathini by calling him and asked if I could go to the mall to buy toiletries, told him I needed some fresh air. Surprisingly enough he didn't debate that, he actually even transferred R500



NOVELSGURU.COM

to my account. That was a first. Banza drove me to the shopping center that was around his hood.

When I went to the store, he stood outside for a smoke..

I really didn't need toiletries I just wanted some fresh air, but now I will have to buy just to fool him. I took the lotion, then I walked to another aisle while reading through the label. I accidentally bumped into someone, the lotion fell ..

Me: Eish maan!

I picked it up first before looking at him, I went back up and looked at him. His facial expression showed that he wasn't impressed

Him: Kanti ubheke kuphi? (what were you looking at) Me: I'm sorry.. It was an accident

Him: Accident my left foot! How can you walk while looking down, uyahlanya yini? (are you crazy)

I chuckled and shook my head..

Me: Understand that you live in a world with other

NOVELSGURU.COM

human beings. You don't live in this world alone, so since we are sharing this world. Understand that you are going to come across these types of mistakes. You don't have to act out all the time, see right now. I call what you did "Anger displacement", it was a mistake don't always act out

I walked away then he grabbed my arm tightly, I looked at him..

Me: Now you are making a mistake by grabbing my arm in such a manner, and I forgive you. Just human error, nothing more!

He smiled at him..

Me: Have a lovely day Sir

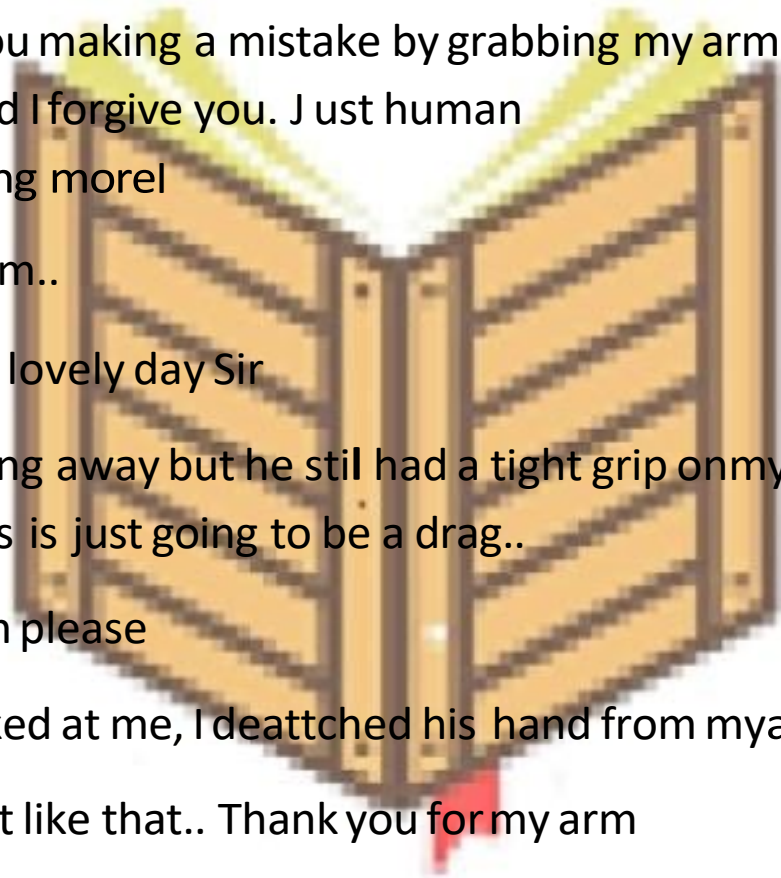
I tried walking away but he still had a tight grip on my arm.. I exhaled, this is just going to be a drag..

Me: My arm please

He just looked at me, I detached his hand from my arm..

Me: Yes just like that.. Thank you for my arm

I then walked away.. I didn't realize that he was



following me until he pushed me a bit..Him: Ohw

I'm sorry.. Human error

He expected a reaction from me, I smiled and continued walking. He pushed me again.

Him: Another human error, I'm sorry

looked down and bit my lower lip.. Him:

What?

He leaned over..

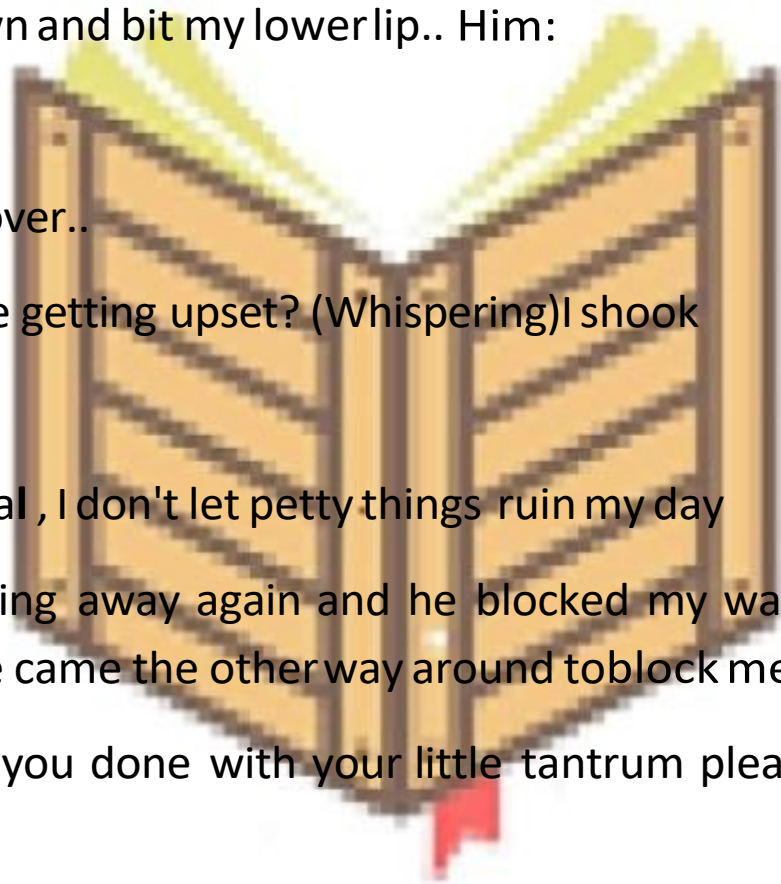
Him: Are we getting upset? (Whispering)I shook my head..

Me: Not at all, I don't let petty things ruin my day

I tried walking away again and he blocked my way.. I turned back and he came the other way around to block me..

Me: When you done with your little tantrum please let me know

I ended up keeping busy by checking the supplements on the aisle and ignoring him.



He got tired first..

Him: Fuck it! You not even worth it
He walked away, I laughed..

Me: Typical

He walked back to me, I didn't let his bruised ego scare me. I've experienced far more from Makhathini. He walked up to me and got really close..

Him: Clearly you not from around here
Me: I appreciate the warm welcome
Him: You've never heard of me

Me: It's not everyday that I hear about your kind

He wrapped his arm around my waist and pulled me closer to him..

Him: Listen sweetheart, don't piss me off

Me: You might wanna get your arm off me, I'm already falling in love. This moment might just end in marriage, I already can't live without you

NOVELSGURU.COM

His breathing increased and he bit his lower lip..Me:

Burning inside?

He let go and walked away..

Him: You should come here every day

Me: Why wouldn't I? Seeing that we just shared a romantic moment

He turned around and gave me the middle finger..Me: I love you too.. Chicken or beef for dinner?

Him: If I come back there I'm g-

Me: We going to fuck aren't we? I knew I should've worn my g-string to make the moment more romantic

Some woman walked up to him..Her: Kelso

He attended to her and then they walked away. I laughed again. Typical small boy with a tantrum..

I saw Banza approaching..

Him: You look happy what happened?

Me: Agh nothing.. You just missed my husbandHim:

Husband?

He laughed..

Me: Ya Kelso orsomething like thatHis

expression changed..

Him: Did you just say Kelso?Me:

Ya... Funny character He gently
grabbed my arm..

Me: This arm has bad luck todayHim:

We leaving

Me: Where too? I'm not doneHim:

To a different store Me: Ohw okay

I turned around as we were leaving, I saw Kelso standing
there checking the toilet papers with the woman. He blew me
a kiss

I winked at him...

NOVELSGURU.COM

NESSI

The Deputy principal walked into my classroom with Bongeka, she went up to my teacher and talked to her. Bongeka looked at me and shrugged her shoulders, my teacher looked at me..

Teacher: Nessi B, you are wanted at the Principal's office. I got up and then we walked out...

Me: What happened? (Whispering)

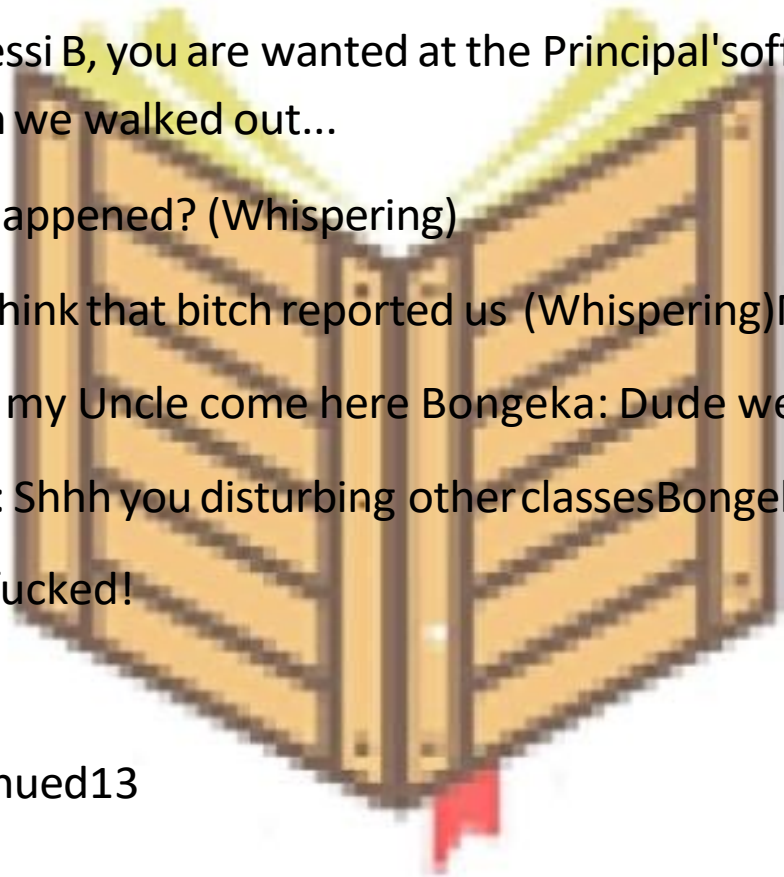
Bongeka: I think that bitch reported us (Whispering) Me: What?

I can't have my Uncle come here Bongeka: Dude we screwed!

D. Principal: Shhh you disturbing other classes Bongeka and I were fucked!

.

To be continued13



NOVELSGURU.COM

NESSI

We sat at the Principal's office waiting for him to say something.. The girl we bullied earlier on was present too. I looked at her, bitch actually snitched..

Principal: bullying has never been tolerated in this school and you girls have just broken the most important rule

We remained quiet..

Him: Mandy has told the school Nurse that she felt but the school Nurse examined her bruises and it was confirmed that something happened to her.

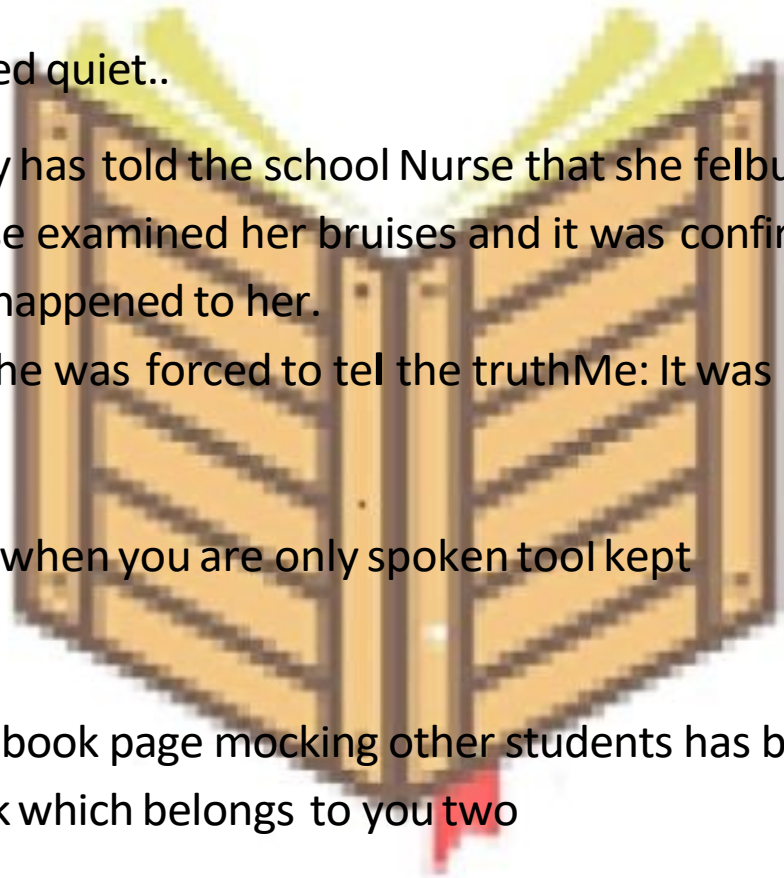
With that, she was forced to tell the truth
Me: It was an accident

Him: Speak when you are only spoken to
I kept quiet..

Him: A Facebook page mocking other students has been started of Facebook which belongs to you two

We still kept our peace..

Him: You have left me no choice but to ask you girls



NOVELSGURU.COM

to come with your legal guardians tomorrow He gave us letters..

Him: If your legal Guardian doesn't come tomorrow, don't bother coming to school

He opened his black book..

Him: Bongeka your Aunt was listed as the Person to oversee any school issues that we encounter with you

He looked at me..

Him: Nessi, your Uncle is listed as the Guardian to oversee any issues that we have with you..

Mandy please bring along your Mother He closed the book..

Him: I will not allow you two to continue with the rest of your classes today, with that being said you are excused and you will be ushered out of the school premises by the guard.

Mandy you can go back to class

This was not happening!

NONGCEBO

I told Banza everything that happened between me and Kelso at Clicks. He couldn't help but laugh too..

Me: So yeah I put him in his place

Him: Kelso doesn't take in lightly when his ego is bruised, so this is going eat him up

Me: He will be alright, he was acting like a child that needed to be put in place. I'm glad I was there to do the honours

My phone rang, it was Bongeka..Me:

Hel o?

Her: Mamncane

Me: Are you okay? Pains stil bothering you?Her: I need

Uncle Banza to fetch me

Me: Why?

Her: Got in some trouble, the Principal excused us from al our classes today



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Trouble? What trouble?Her:

I'll explain later

Me: Okay.. We coming!

looked at Banza..

Me: We have to go and fetch Bongeka from schoolHim: Why?

Me: I really don't know, she will explain laterHim: Okay

let's go

KELSO (KB)

Nessi's call came through while I was driving my Grandmother home.. I answered..

Me: Goose Her:

Goose Me: What's

up?

Her: I need you to fetch me from schoolMe:

Why?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I was excused from schoolMe:

Again.. Why?

Her: Can I explain to you when we get homeMe: Okay

I'm on my way

Grams: What's wrong?

Me: I have to go fetch Nessi from schoolGrams:

Why?

Me: I'm not sure, I'll drop you off then go and fetchher

Grams: Okay

SOLE

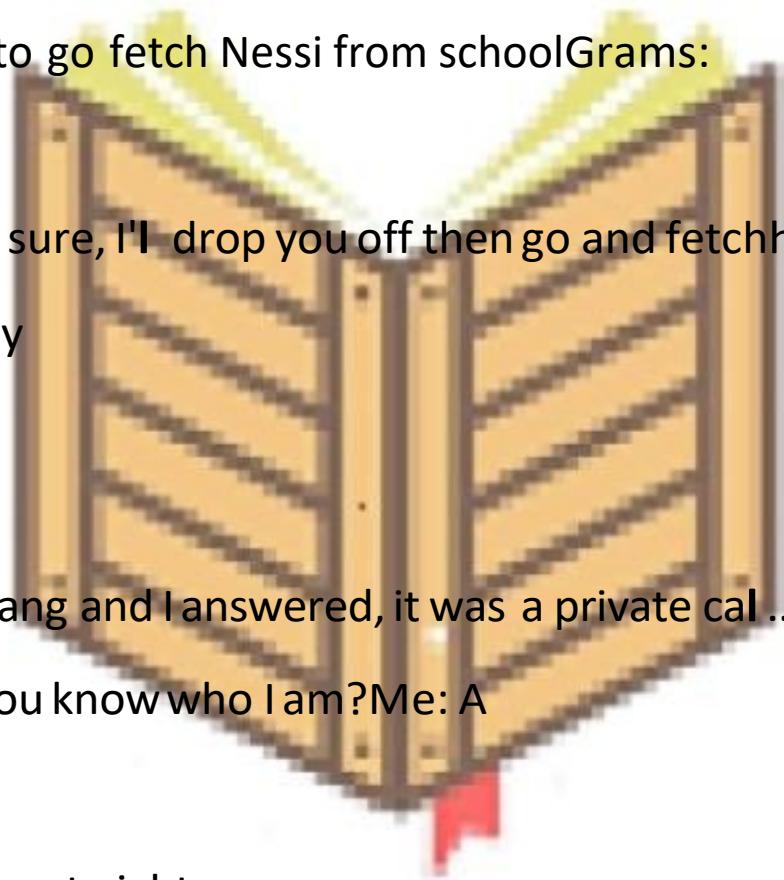
My phone rang and I answered, it was a private call..Me: Hello?

Voice: Do you know who I am?Me: A

stalker?

Him: Your worst nightmare

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: I'm listening

Him: That 50 grand that was stolen from Carlos belongs to me I am currently looking at him right now, I'm about to blow his brains out

Me: That's my business because?

Him: Carlos is a very good employee of mine, dedicated and loyal. Good as he is, I'm about to fuck him up!

Me: Do what you gotta do man, we all gotta do something at some point don't we?

Him: You still don't understand do you?

Me: What I don't understand is why you telling me all of this! Carlos means nothing to me! Whether he lives or dies, I really don't care

Him: If I can kill one of my own imagine what I can do to you and your friends

Me: Blow our brains out? I really don't mind I've always wanted to know how it feels like to die by a bullet lodged deep in my head

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: It won't be funny when I get to you and your

friends, you boys have no idea who you fucking with! You have just made blood enemies with the Italians and we don't take shit lying down

Me: Thank you for the update, truly appreciate it He hung up. This is not good at all

POWER

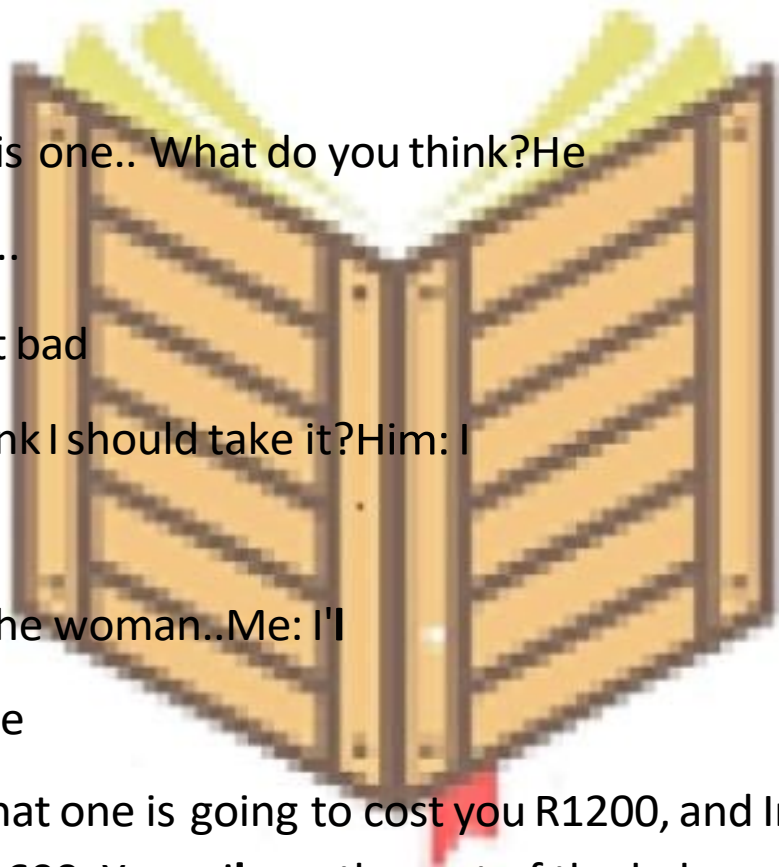
Me: I like this one.. What do you think? He looked at it..

Him: It's not bad

Me: You think I should take it? Him: I think so

I looked at the woman.. Me: I'll take this one

Her: Okay that one is going to cost you R1200, and I need a deposit of R600. You will pay the rest of the balance when you come on Friday to collect the cake



Me: Thank you for allowing to take the orders so late

Her: Lucky for you I didn't have a lot of orders this week

Me: That's good

Her: I'll get you the receipt Me:

Thank you

I looked at my Boyfriend..

Me: Thank you for coming with me Him:

You welcome

(Silence)

Him: How does your baby daddy feel about this? Me: About what?

Him: About us? I

looked at him..

Me: I don't think we need Kelso's permission to date

Him: I'm just asking because a few days ago you were scared and wanted us to break up



Me: I've talked to him about it, he wil stay out of mybusiness

Him: That's good.. I realy don't want Baby Daddy troubles

Me: He won't give you any of that trust me

Him: For his sake I hope not because if he tries anything
I'm going to fuck him up

I laughed..

He looked at me..

Me: I'm sor y I just.. You fucking Kelso up that would be
the day

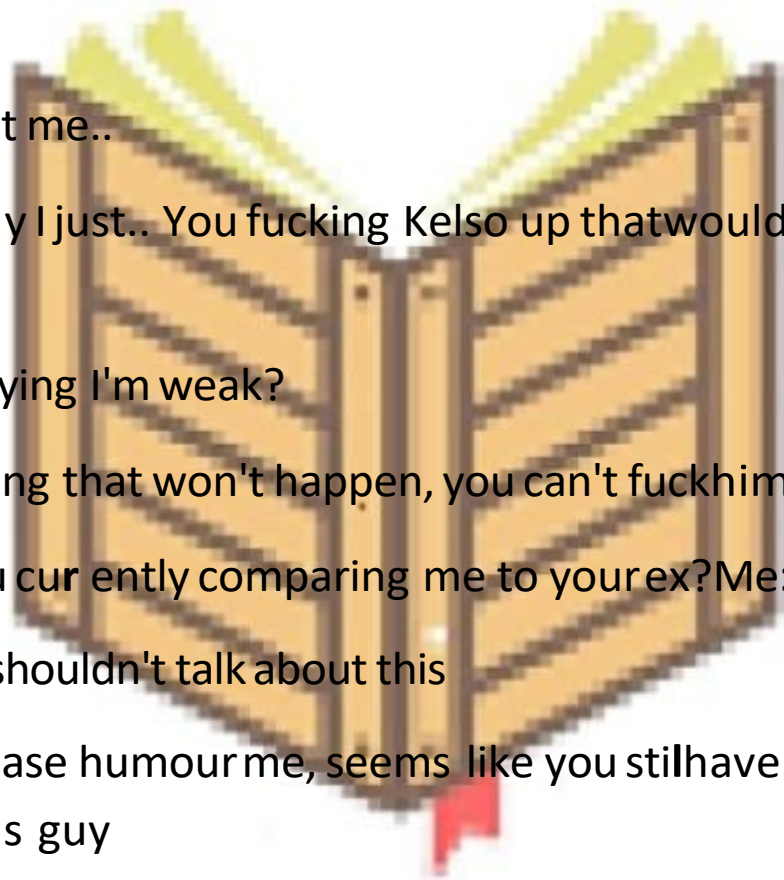
Him: You saying I'm weak?

Me: I'm saying that won't happen, you can't fuck him up

Him: So you cur ently comparing me to your ex? Me:

Maybe we shouldn't talk about this

Him: No please humour me, seems like you stil have a
thing for this guy



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: And it seems like you obsessed with him.. Kelso is not going to do anything so just let it go.Let's focus on us and forget that he exists

He nodded.. Me:

Thank you

NONGCEBO

We arrived at the school and Bongeka was standing at the gate with some other girl. I got out of the car and walked up to them..

Me: Hey

Bongeka: Thank you for coming Me:

What happened?

Bongeka: I'll tell you when we get home I looked at the girl..

Bongeka: This is my best friend Nessi, Nessi this is my Aunt

Nessi: Nice to meet you

NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at her...

Me: What have you girls done?

Bongeka: We will talk about it when we get home She bid her friend farewell ..

Nessi: We scorpions remember that

Bongeka nodded..

Bongeka: See you tomorrow Nessi:

See you tomorrow We went to

the car..

Banza: Hey what happened? Bongeka: I

beat up some girl so.. Me: You did

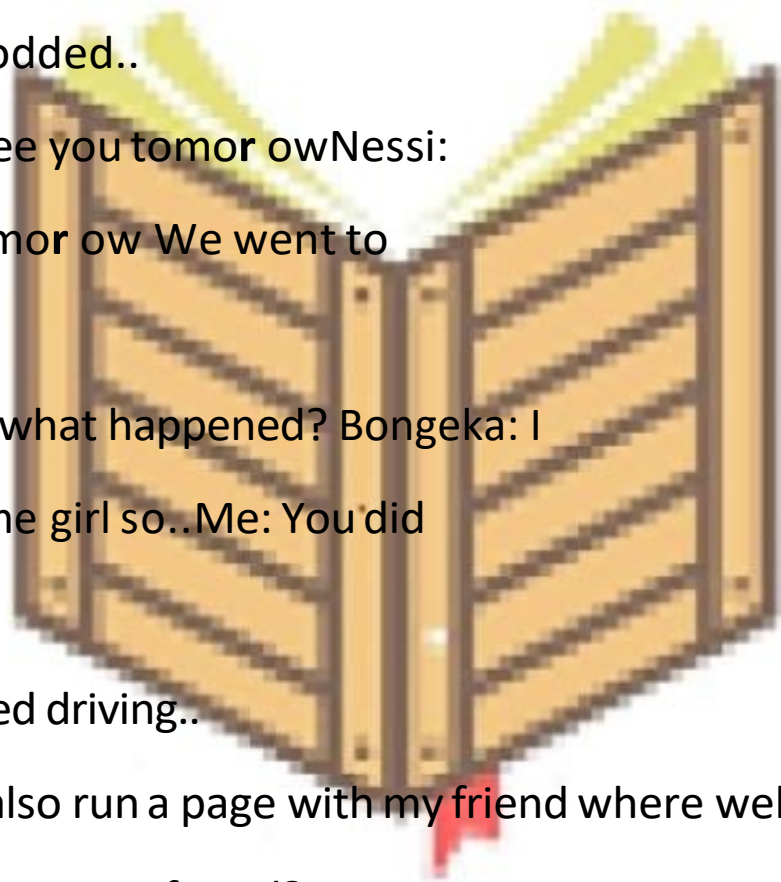
what?

Banza started driving..

Bongeka: I also run a page with my friend where we bul y people

Banza: Nessi is your friend?

Bongeka: Yes



NOVELSGURU.COM

Banza shook his head..

Me: Why would you do that?

Bongeka: I don't know.. Maybe boredom

Me: You don't bully people just because you're bored, what is happening for real Bongeka?

Her: I don't know, sometimes I get way too angry then I think about bad things and I end up doing them

Banza: What kids see, they do

Me: Bongeka is 14, she's old enough to know that bullying is wrong. No matter how angry you are, you don't cause other people pain. You don't treat people like that, it's not right

Her: Well it happened

Me: Do you know how serious this is?

Her: Can we tell that to my Father? He does it to us all the time and he doesn't see anything wrong with it. I am his daughter after all, this shouldn't surprise you

Banza looked at me and I looked at him. I don't

know how Makhathini is going to feel about this..

.

To be continued 14

KELSO (KB)

Nessi didn't tell me what happened at school, she just told me that I should attend a meeting tomorrow at the Principal's office. I doubt it's something big, Nessi is a very well behaved child. Later on that day Sole called for all of us to meet, so they drove down here and we were going to discuss whatever it was over a couple of beers...

Me: So the Italians called you and threatened you? Sole: Yes

Stalion: Can't we just give them back their 50 grand?

Sole: They won't accept it.. It's no longer about the money anymore, it's about Respect. They're very sure that we have disrespected them so they're going to

NOVELSGURU.COM

come for us

I laid back on the chair.. Me:

Then we will be ready

Sole: We dealing with Italians here, I think we should just humble ourselves and make peace

Stal ion: I agree

Me: I say we go to war, we not going to humble ourselves and we not going to let them think that weweak

Sole: Kelso this is not about your ego, some other fights are not worth it.. Trust me!

Stal ion: Think about Hakeem man, it's no longer about you

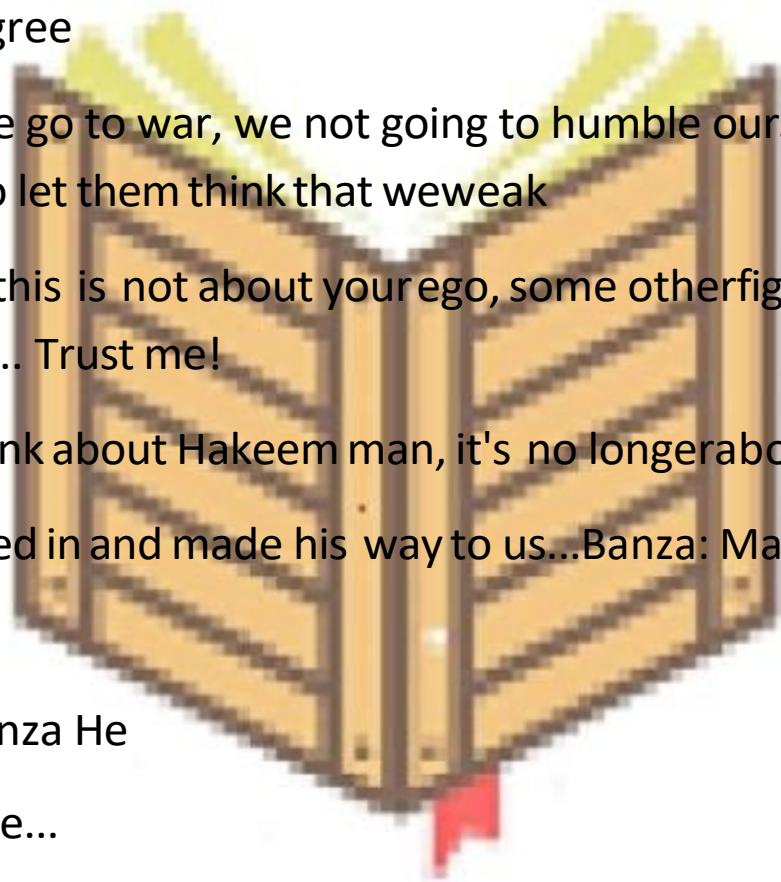
Banza walked in and made his way to us...Banza: Ma

Gents

Stal ion: Banza He

looked at me...

Him: Singaringa? (can we talk)



Me: Sure

Him: In private

Me: Whatever you wanna say, you say it in front of my cats

He nodded..

Banza: I believe there's a girl you met today
Me: I meet a lot of girls

Banza: The one you had an altercation with at Clicks,
Nongcebo?

Me: Ohw my wife, her name is Nongcebo?

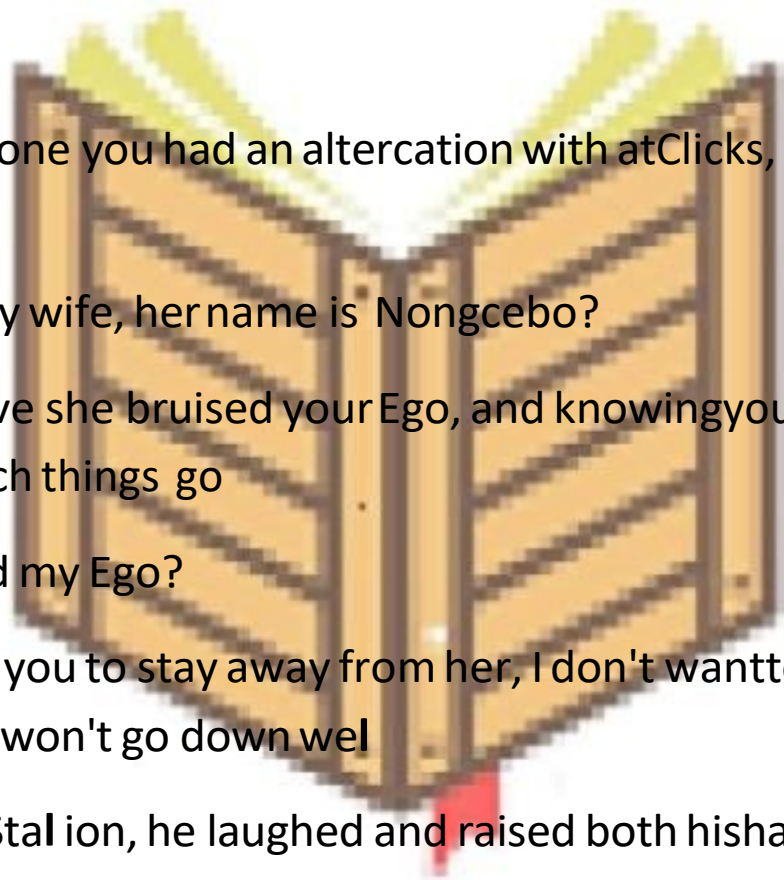
Him: I believe she bruised your Ego, and knowing you. You
don't let such things go

Me: Bruised my Ego?

Him: I want you to stay away from her, I don't want to have it
with you. It won't go down well

I looked at Stal ion, he laughed and raised both his hands up...I
looked at Banza

Me: Are you threatening Me?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I believe that if I was threatening you, you would know

Me: That's true

I looked at Sole..

Me: He's right.. If he was threatening me I would know

Sole laughed while shaking his head.. Banza: I guess we understand each other?

Me: Come on Banza what do you take me for? You and I come very far I respect you

Him: I'm glad to hear that

He looked at Sole and Stalion then nodded. He walked away...

Sole: You not going to let it go are you?

Me: He just threatened me of course I'm not going to let it go!

Sole: Don't you think that he probably cares a lot about this girl? He stood up to you for this girl

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I don't care what he did, but he just threatened me. You don't threaten me!

NONGCEBO

Bongeka told me everything, she told me everything about what she has been doing at school. I held her hand..

Me: I'm sorry for what you are going through. You need to understand that how your father is treating you, it's not your fault. It has nothing to do with you, it has everything to do with him. If a person treats you bad, then there's something wrong with that person and not you. However, how you respond to that is entirely your own fault. But why other people that's your choice, you are doing exactly what your father is doing to you sweetie and you should know better.

You should know better how it feels like so that you don't do it to others. Baby anger and hate those are heavy emotions to carry. They do nothing to your father they are only destroying you.

They are going to make you a vile person and you are going to ruin your life,

NOVELSGURU.COM

slowly but surely. You will end up in Prison, end up in the streets, you going to ruin your life just because you allowed him to have power over your life. Imagine if I walked around everyday mad at the whole world, life around here for you would be more difficult. Having two people mistreating you. Your father only contributed to bringing you into this world, how you turn out it's all on you.

I saw tears welling up..

Me: You still very young, imagine how you going to turn out at the age of 18. Yes he is a bad person, he is a bad human being but if you focus mostly on that it's going to ruin you. Be grateful for what you currently have. A roof over your head, food, clothes, you going to a good school. This is your current reality and not your future. Things can change tomorrow, life is very unpredictable. Instead of concentrating on what's happening why not concentrate more on how your life would be when you leave this place, because we are going to leave soon.

She nodded..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm sorry that his actions made you to resort to such things, I don't want you to turn out like him. You are his Daughter but you not him. You will never be the monster that he is Period! Well not when I'm still alive

She laughed..

Me: When you get angry just talk to me, rather than taking out your anger on people who did nothing to you.

Her: I promise

We heard the door opening..

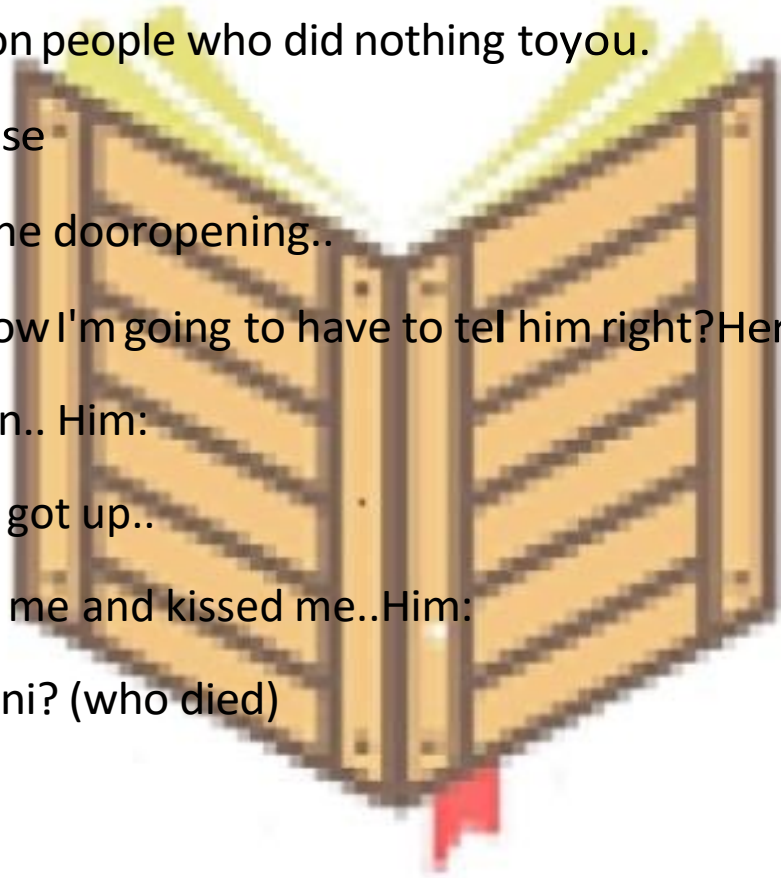
Me: You know I'm going to have to tell him right? Her: Ya I know

He walked in.. Him:

Sanibonanil got up..

He came to me and kissed me.. Him:

Kushone bani? (who died)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I have to attend a meeting tomorrow morning at Bongeka's school

Him: Ngoba? (why)

Me: She got involved in a fight

Him: Uyalwa eskoleni (You fighting at school) Her: It was a mistake

He nodded..

Him: Hai kodwa uyahlupha Bongeka (You very problematic)

Me: It's okay I'll handle it He kissed my cheek..

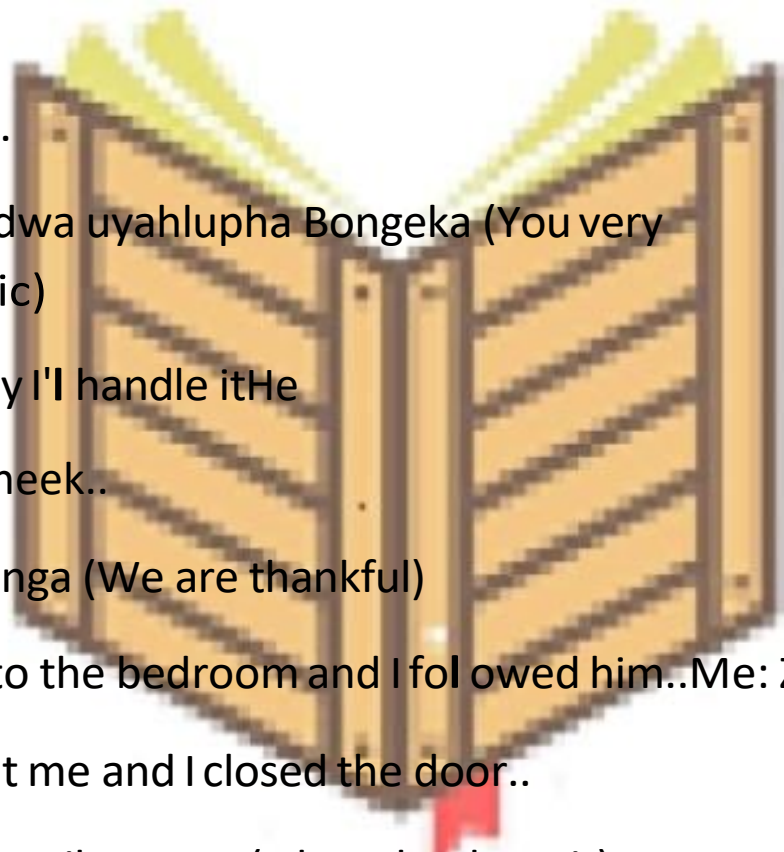
Him: Siyabonga (We are thankful)

He walked to the bedroom and I followed him.. Me: Zulu

He looked at me and I closed the door..

Me: Ngicabangile ngayo (I thought about it) He

waited for me to say something..



Me: I will marry you! His

eyes widened..

Me: Yes I will marry you!

He smiled... I am going to use this opportunity to plan how Bongeka and I we going to escape..

SOLE

I was driving back to my place when I received a call from Sandisiwe..

Me: This is very unexpected!
answered..

Me: Hello?

She didn't say anything..Me: Hello?

I heard her sniffing..

Me: What's wrong? Talk to me

Her: I am sorry for doing this, I know that we don't know each other that well and..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What's wrong?

Her: My boyfriend kicked me out (crying)Me:

Huh?

Her: He came with another girl and just kicked me out

I sighed..

Her: I'm standing at the main gate of the complex with my bags, I don't even know where to go (crying)

Me: Okay it's fine just text me the name of the complex and I'll be there

Her: Okay.. Thank you!

hung up..

KELSO (KB)

When I got home, Nessi was sitting on the couch looking at her Mother's picture. I'm sure that my Grandmother was already sleeping, she sleeps early..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: GooseHer:

Goose

I sat next to her..

Me: What's on your mind?

Her: I wish I knew her, wish I had met her before she died

I looked at the picture..

Her: Why did she abandoned me?

Me: She had problems of her own, but knowing the person that she was. I'm sure that she loved you very much but because of her own demons she couldn't raise you. That's why she brought you here because she knew that Grams and I were going to take good care of you

She smiled...

Her: What was she like?

I pulled her closer to me, she laid her head on my chest..

Me: She was very humble, very friendly, only spoke

NOVELSGURU.COM

when she needed too. She kept to herself, if something was bothering her she would bottle it up and let it eat her than talking about it. With the pain that she had buried deep inside of her she eventually turned to drugs so that she could cope with everything

Her: I see

Me: We can visit her grave this weekend
Her: I'd like that very much

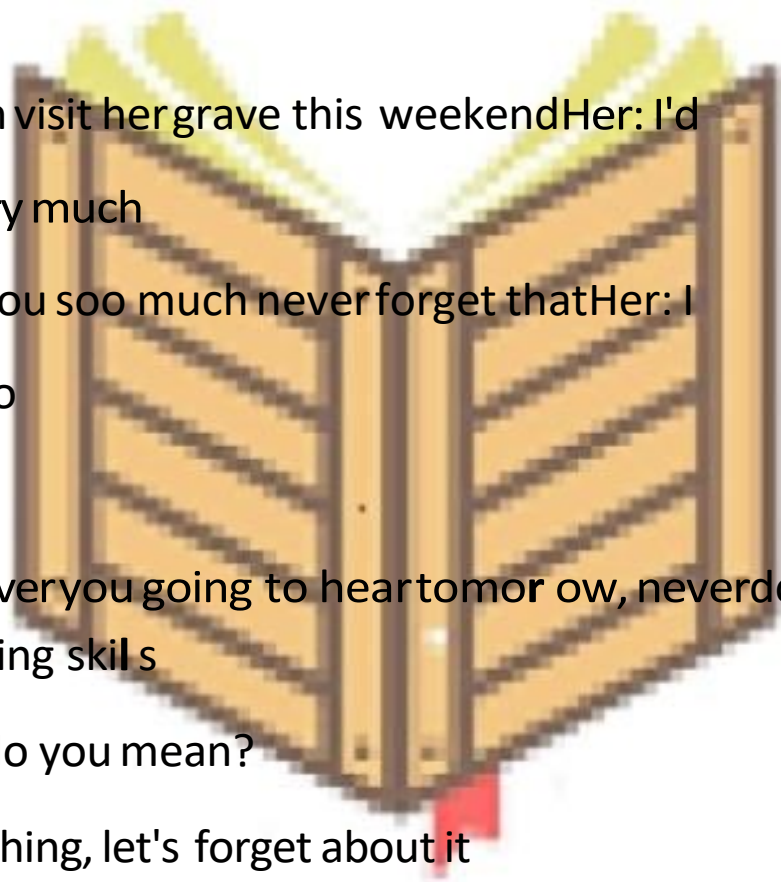
Me: I love you so much never forget that
Her: I love you too

(Silence)

Her: Whatever you going to hear tomorrow, never doubt your parenting skills

Me: What do you mean?

Her: It's nothing, let's forget about it



NOVELSGURU.COM

SOLE

I arrived at the complex, I did see her standing with one of the security guards at the gate. I got out of the car and approached them, when she saw me she ran up to me and hugged me..

Me: It's okay.. I'm here now

She held me tight and just cried on my shoulder..

.

To be continued 15

NONGCEBO

The following morning I prepared myself to go to Bongeka's school. Makhathini was the one who drove us, instead of Banza. He didn't walk in with us though, he had to go back to the taxi rank... He said he will tell Banza to come and fetch us..

At the Principal's office, some girl was sitting with her Mother. She was badly bruised and had a gauze on her nose bridge. She was white, so all the bruises were very visible. My heart was torn into

NOVELSGURU.COM

pieces, Bongeka is responsible for this???

As we were sitting Keslo walked in with Bongeka's friend. He was shocked to see me, I was shocked to see him too. They sat down

Principal: Thank you all for coming

The deputy principal was around too and two Teachers..

Principal: I have called you here to alert you on what has been happening with regards to the students. This school doesn't accept any form of bullying, and bullying brings about unsettling consequences. It has come to my attention that Bongeka Zulu and Nessi Bhembe they have been bullying other students. Their latest victim is Mandy van der Merwe. Yesterday the girls brutally attacked her in the girls toilets. They hit her and flushed her face. She is not the first victim, many students have been bullied on their Facebook page, one being a grade 10 student Matthew who attempted suicide last night when his pictures were all over social media being mocked by these two

Kelso laughed..

Kelso: I don't know what you talking about, myNiece would neverdo such. We talk al the timeabout bul ying, she knows how wrong it is

Nessi looked down..

Principial: Unfortunately your Niece is not asinnocent as she looks

Kelso looked at her..

Kelso: Goose

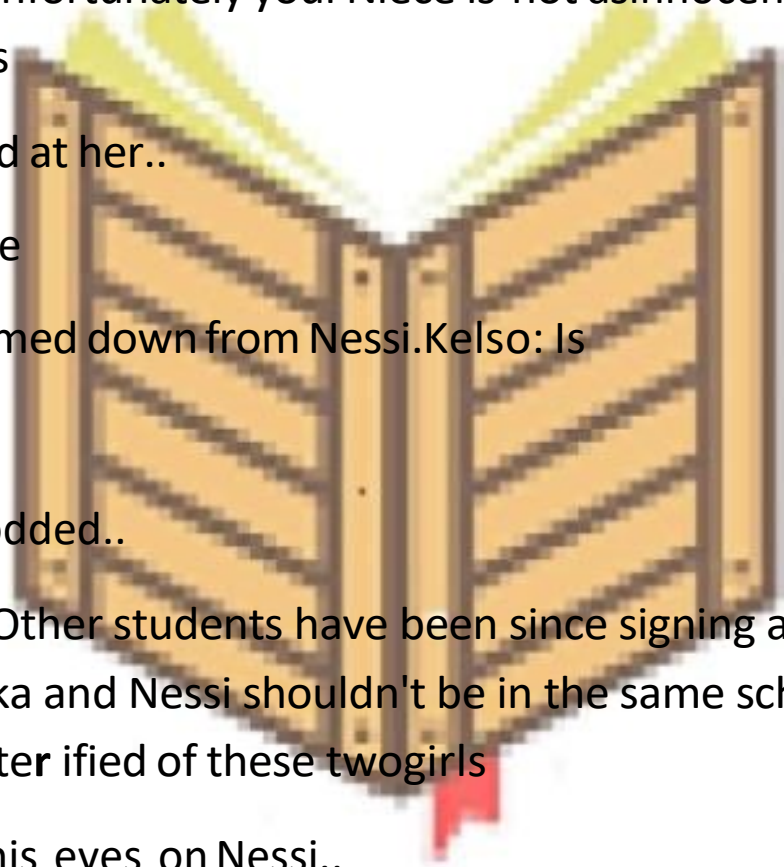
Tears streamed down from Nessi.Kelso: Is it true?

She slow nodded..

Teacher 1: Other students have been since signing a petition that Bongeka and Nessi shouldn't be in the same school as them, they ter ified of these twogirls

Kelso kept his eyes on Nessi..

Mrs Van de Merwe: I send my child here for education not to be violated. I don't know what kids



you raising but these two are hooligans, they shouldn't have a place in the society

Principal: Mrs Van de Merwe and The Botha family, Matthew's family are suing the culprits

I really didn't know what to say..

Principal: I have alerted the Department of Education and unfortunately Bongeka and Nessi are expelled from this school with immediate effect

Kelso started nodding repeatedly..

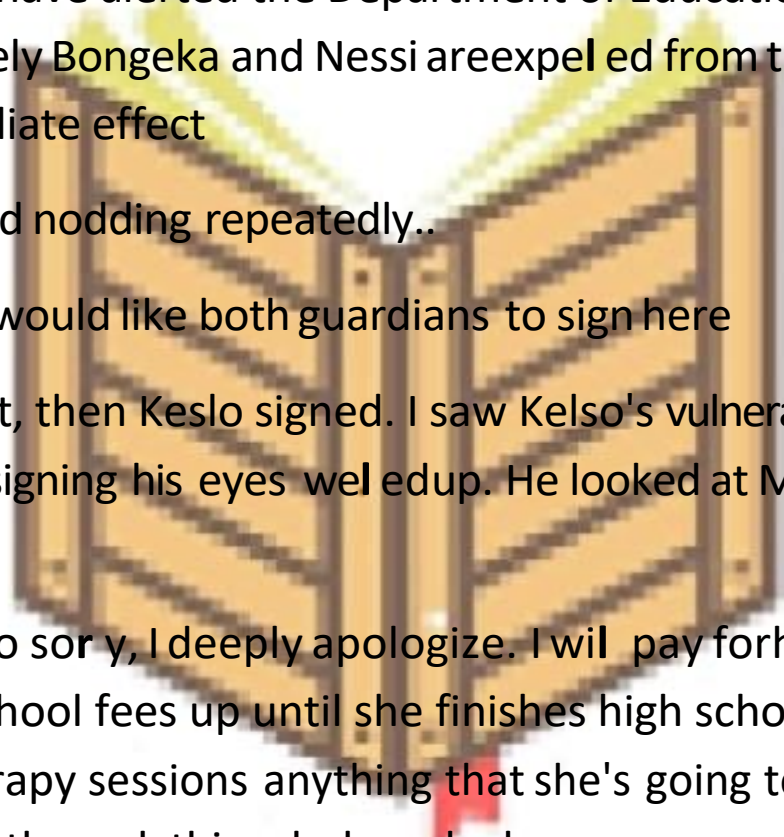
Principal: I would like both guardians to sign here

I signed first, then Keslo signed. I saw Kelso's vulnerable side. As he was signing his eyes wel edup. He looked at Mrs Van de Merwe

Kelso: I'm so sorry, I deeply apologize. I will pay for her medical bills, her school fees up until she finishes high school. I will pay for her therapy sessions anything that she's going to need that will help her through this whole ordeal

He looked at the Principal..

Kelso: I would like to get in touch with the family of



the boy, you have just earned my respect by not allowing such acts to be carried out at your school. My sincere and humble apologies

He left everyone speechless..

Me: I also apologize, there's no excuse to what happened

I looked at Bongeka.. Bongeka:

I'm sorry MandyNessi: I'm sorry

Mandy

Principal: My assistant will give you all the details of both families

Kelso was the first to walk out..

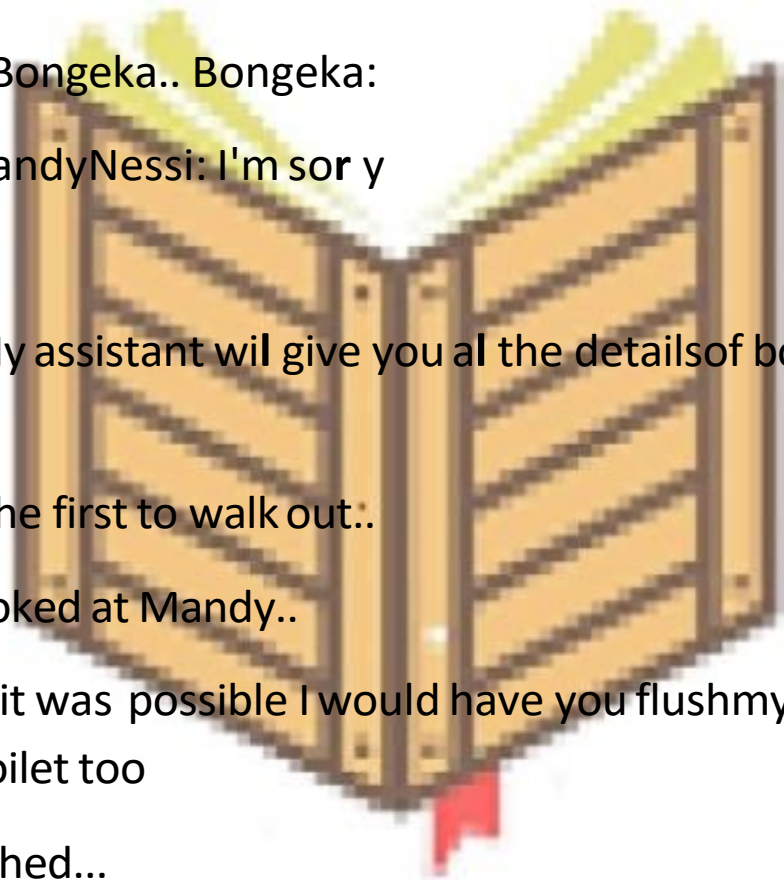
Bongeka looked at Mandy..

Bongeka: If it was possible I would have you flush my head down the toilet too

Mandy laughed...

Mandy: It's okay sorry you got expelled

Bongeka: I deserve it, it's not right to mistreat other



NOVELSGURU.COM

people

Mandy nodded..

We all got up...

Me: Thank you Principal

The principal nodded and we walked out. I got the details from the assistant and then we made our way out. Nessi was in a very bad state, she couldn't stop crying..

Me: Hey come here!

hugged her...

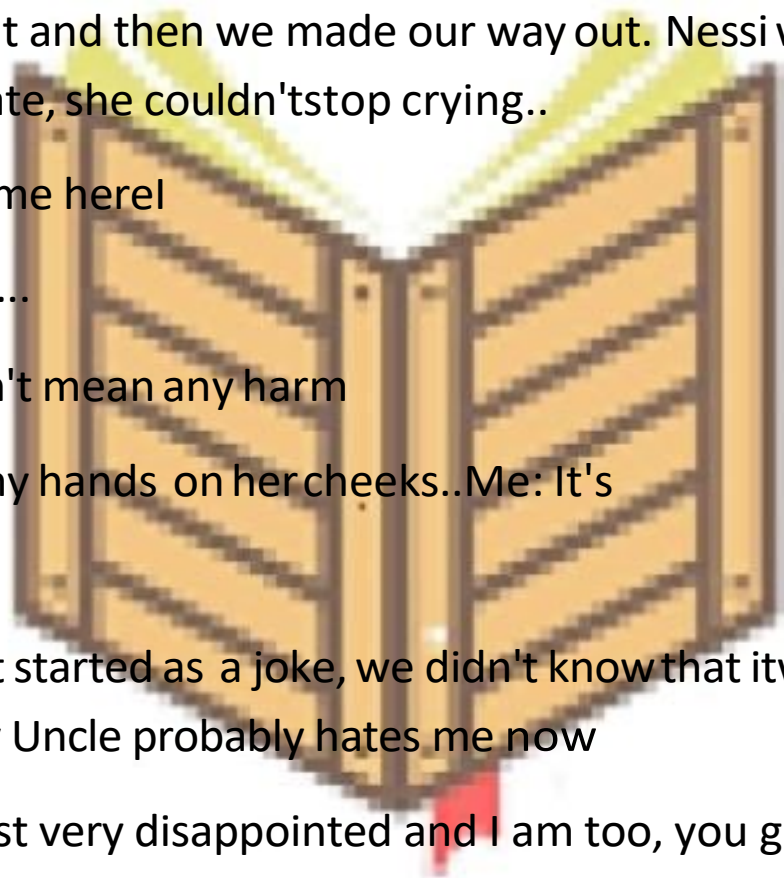
Nessi: I didn't mean any harm

I put both my hands on her cheeks.. Me: It's

okay

Nessi: It just started as a joke, we didn't know that it would get this far.. My Uncle probably hates me now

Me: He's just very disappointed and I am too, you girls shouldn't be doing this. Bullying is very traumatizing, it breaks the victim to such an extent



that they can harm themselvesNessi: I

feel very bad

Me: I know sweetie, it's okay

We all walked out to the parking lot, Kelso was leaning against his car. As soon as he saw us, he made his way to Nessi. He seemed both mad and broken at the same time..

Kelso: I'm so going to fucken kil you!Nessi:

I'm sor y (crying)

He grabbed her by the neck..Kelso:

Why?? Why??

Nessi: I'm sor y (crying)Me:

Ke..

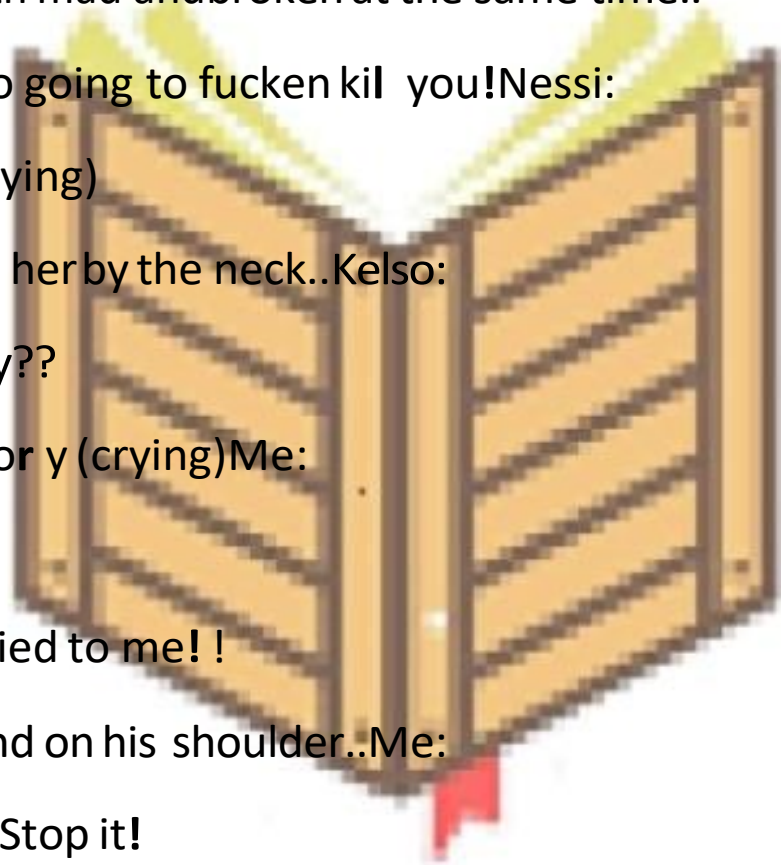
Kelso: You lied to me! !

I put my hand on his shoulder..Me:

Kelso stop! Stop it!

He pushed me away..NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Stop it! Do you want to go to jail? Security is



approaching us

I broke it off then hid Nessi behind me... Him:

Nongcebo move, I don't wanna hurt you Me: Human er

or? Remember human er or?

Him: This is no human er or! It was not a mistake!

Me: Maybe there's a reason why she did it, and if you act like this you won't know what the real reason is behind the bullying so calm down!

Security: Is there something wrong? Me: No I'm

sorry.. We were just leaving I looked at Kelso..

Me: We were just leaving

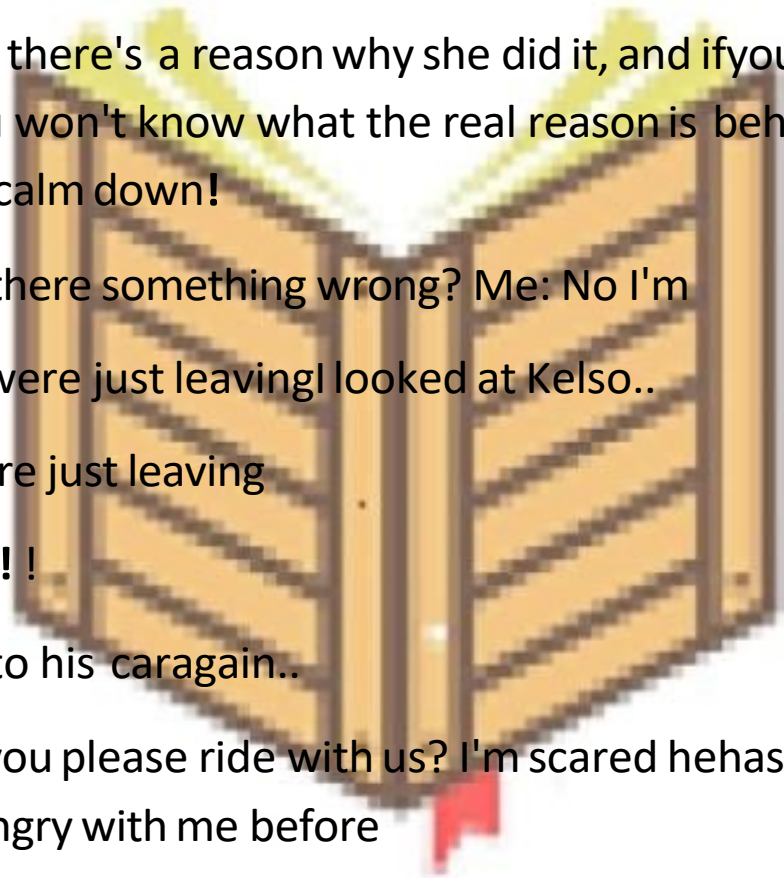
Kelso: Fuck!!

He walked to his car again..

Nessi: Can you please ride with us? I'm scared he has never been this angry with me before

I looked at Bongeka, she seemed scared too Me: It's

okay.. We'll.. We'll go together



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nessi: Thank you

We all went to the car..

SOLE

I looked at her she was still sleeping. Last night I brought her to my place...

She slowly opened her eyes and saw me staring at her, she smiled..

Her: Good morning Me:

Good morning She had a black eye..

Her: I'm sure you wanna know what happened Me: Well

..

Her: I'm sure you also wanna know why I didn't go home or something

I shrugged my shoulders.. She pulled down the covers, she was only in her lace bra and lace underwear. I looked away..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'll wait for you in the lounge

I walked out of the bedroom and went to the lounge, I sat down on the couch and waited for her. She walked in a couple of seconds later, she had put on a t-shirt. Her thick beautiful thighs were hardly even covered by the t-shirt..

She sat down..

Her: I dropped out of university after failing my first year

She laughed...

Her: I fucked up my life and at home they don't even know. They think I'm still at school but in actual fact I am a struggling writer who moved in with her boyfriend because I couldn't afford rent, stupid I know

Me: Why didn't you repeat?

Her: Busary dropped me, I come from a very strict family. They take education very seriously and if they found that I flunked, home was going to be very depressing and Dad was going to disown me

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm sorry to hear that She

shook her head..

Her: Don't be, I've got only myself to blame Me: How

did you meet him?

Her: He is a designer, met him at a club once when I was out with friends. He made me a brand ambassador for his clothing label, didn't pay me much but he gave me a home after I failed my first year and I've been since living with him. Forged my results, at home they think I'm doing my 3rd year

I continued listening..

Her: He changed as time went on. Started cheating, he was emotional y abusive and last night he decided to bring her home

She shook her head again..

Her: He beat me up and dragged me out She

started getting emotional..

Her: She was my best friend and she laughed as he beat me up in front of her



She chuckled and wiped her tears..Her:

Love is stupid I tel you!

POWER

I was at Kelso's house dropping off Hakeem. His Grandmother had agreed to babysit for the day as I was going to do some job hunting. I want Hakeem to spend time with them and get used to them, plus they did pay damages. He was laid peacefully on the couch sleeping..

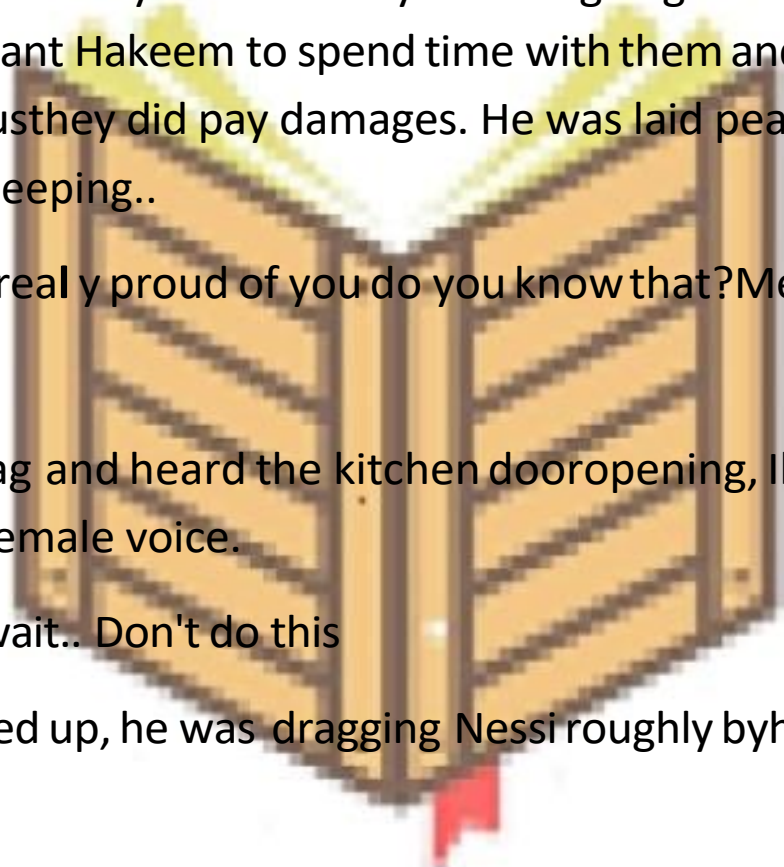
Grams: I'm really proud of you do you know that? Me: Thank you Grams

I took my bag and heard the kitchen door opening, I heard an unfamiliar female voice.

Her: Kelso wait.. Don't do this

Kelso showed up, he was dragging Nessi roughly by her arm. Nessi was crying.

He took her straight to her bedroom, with this lady following them and another girl.. Grams picked up



Hakeem and walked to her bedroom with her.. I walked to Nessi's room.

Lady: Kelso don't do this

Kelso took off his belt and started hitting Nessi, Nessi was screaming and apologizing. The other girl that was with them took a few steps back shaking her head with her hands covering her ears..

Nessi: I'm sor y Uncle (Screaming)

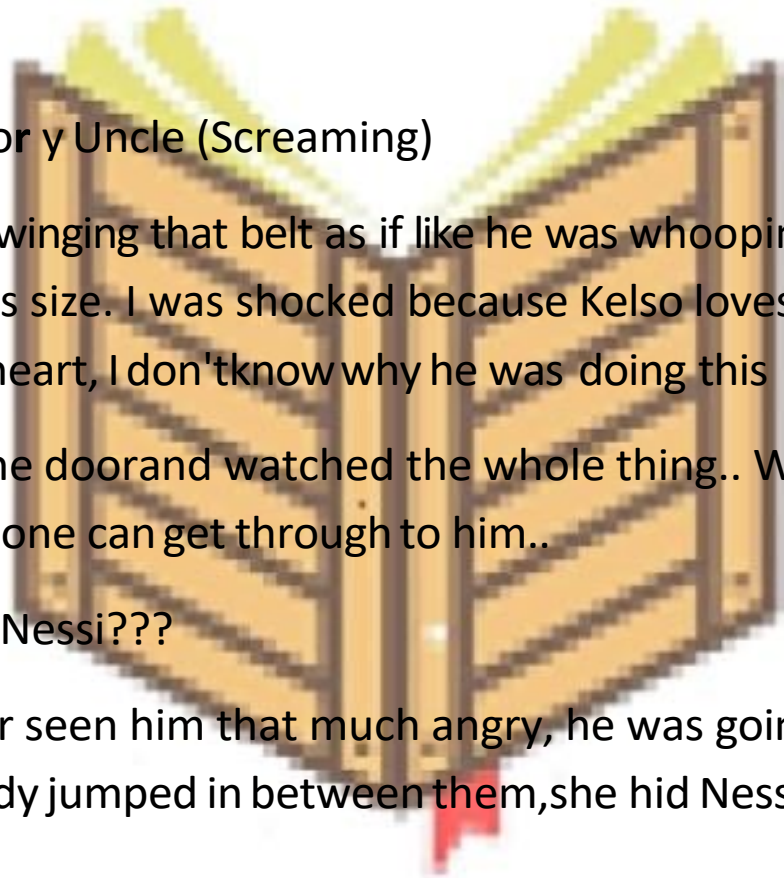
Kelso was swinging that belt as if like he was whooping someone his size. I was shocked because Kelso loves Nessi with al his heart, I don'tknow why he was doing this

I stood at the doorand watched the whole thing.. When he is like this, no one can get through to him..

Kelso: Why Nessi???

I have never seen him that much angry, he was going to kil her.. The lady jumped in between them,she hid Nessi behind her.

Lady: Okay Kelso uzwile! Uzwile! (she heard you)I don't know who she is norwhy she's playing



superhero because Kelso can just turn on her and beat them both. Nessi had her arms tightly wrapped around the lady's waist..

Kelso: Nongcebo suka (Nongcebo move) She didn't move..

Kelso: I said move! This has nothing to do with you! Lady: Sishayeke! Sishaye sonke! (hit us, hit us both) Did she just raise her voice at him?

Lady: If it's going to make you feel any better then go ahead, sinhlanganise sonke ngamakhanda!!! What I'm not going to let you do is kill this little girl in front of me!

Kelso lowered his hand, he exhaled and then threw the belt on the bed. He looked at her and she looked at him.. She moved a little with Nessi and took the belt, she stretched her hand out to him..

Her: Here... Angithi you still going to do it even when I leave so let's rather get it over and done with! Do it, but know that you will have to go through me first to get to her

She took off her t-shirt and threw it on the bed..

Her: Should I also take off my bra so that you can draw a visible map? Should I?

Kelso looked at her and put on his belt...

He clicked his tongue defeated and then walked out pushing me out of the way in the process, the Lady closed her eyes and sighed in relief. I swear my heart bled at that moment, if it was me who did that. He would've possibly killed me, I would have a concussion right now.. She looked at me..

We looked at each other while, why didn't he go psycho on her? Who is she? How was she able to put down the monster in Kelso?

Lady: Oh my word Bongeka!

She went and took her t-shirt and wore it, then she walked out passing as Nessi followed her..

.

To be continued 16

NOVELSGURU.COM

KELSO (KB)

I laid down in bed that night facing the ceiling. Thinking about how bul ying in my primary years almost ruined my life. Tears streamed down on the sides when I thought about that night when I tried to hang myself with a belt. I was young, didn't know much about suicide, all I knew is that I wanted to die so I can be rid of all the pain. If my Sister didn't find me, I probably wouldn't be here today. She held me the whole night and told me that those girls will never stop unless I stand up to them. She told me fear shouldn't cripple me, it should make me courageous. Give me strength and make me strong. One day when they tried to bul y me, I beat one of them so bad that the others took a few steps back. From that day fear left me, I became the motherfucker that I am today..

NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM

Makhathini paced up and down in the room after I had told him about Bongeka being expelled from school, he was fuming..

Him: Imali engaka engiyibhadalayo lapha eskoleni Bongeka? (I've paid a lot of money at that school Bongeka)

Bongeka's school fees is R4500 a month.Me: Zulu

Him: Thula Makhubalo! (shut up)He

looked at Bongeka.

Him: I tried to make you have a better future, I work hard everyday to give you everything! What do you do? You spit on my face?

Bongeka kept quiet..

Him: Phendula maan (answer me)

He pulled her off from the couch by her hair and threw her down on the floor. He started kicking her senseless, I got up from the couch and pushed him with every strength that I had..

Me: Zulu uzobulala umntwana (Stop it, you going to kill her)

He turned to me..

Him: If you have taught her manners she would be behaving!

Me: Have you thought that maybe I'm not the problem here?

Him: Ini? (what)

Me: Bongeka cannot wake up one day and decide to hurt other kids, she learned from the best!

He slapped me across the face..

Bongeka got up from the floor..

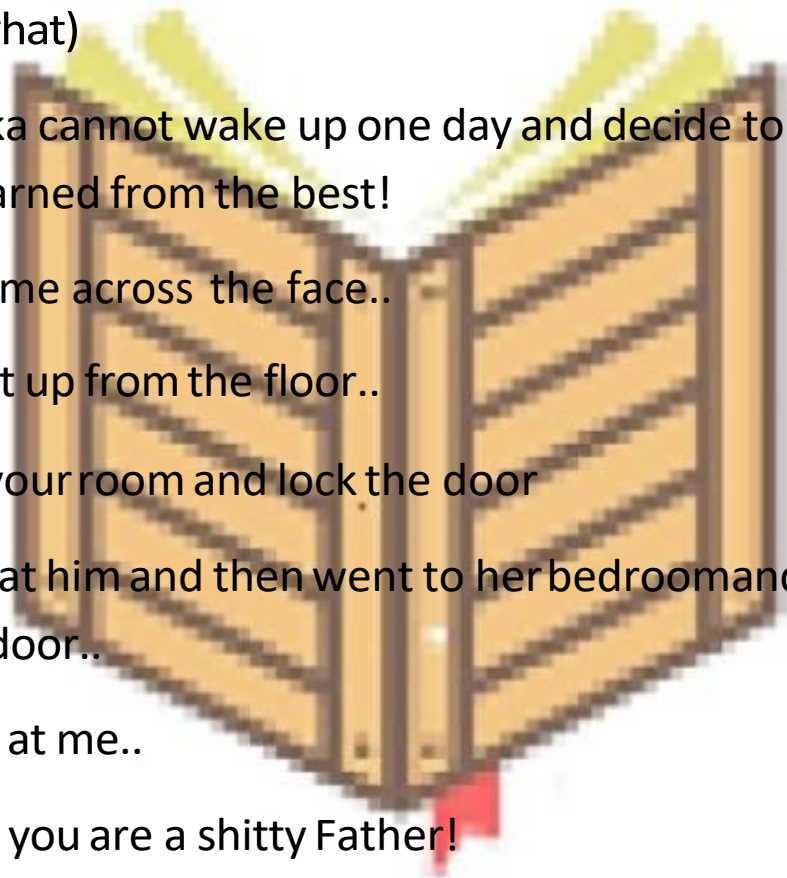
Me: Go to your room and lock the door

She looked at him and then went to her bedroom and then locked the door..

Zulu looked at me..

Me: Maybe you are a shitty Father!

He pushed me and I hit the couch before falling to



the floor..

Me: Beating me won't change the fact that you are ashitty father and a shitty husband in general

He started kicking me whilst I was on the floor, rightnow it's better me at the end of his anger than Bongeka..

KELSO (KB)

In my whole life I've never had anyone stand up to me like Nongcebo did. I've always been able to paralyze anyone and everyone with fear. She stood her ground and never let me intimidate her. She never let the monster in me get to her, she didn't seem that way.

Instead of getting real y mad I found myself with different feelings, I smiled and then laughed..

SOLE

Sandi was on the bed using my MacBook to type chapters for her books. I took my phone and went



NOVELSGURU.COM

to the balcony, I called my PI Valium..Him:

Sole

Me: Did I wake you up?Him:

Yes

Me: I've got a job for youHim:

I'm listening

Me: I need you dig up something about someoneHim:

Who?

Me: Sandisiwe Gxaba, I'll send you her pictures onwhatsapp

Him: I'll be waiting

Me: Dig up anything and everything about herincluding
herfamily

Him: I'll do that

In my line of work it's not easy to trust someone. I need proof
to corroborate her story...



NOVELSGURU.COM

POWER

I didn't go home last night, I slept over. This morning I woke up and made everyone breakfast still thinking about what happened yesterday, Hakeem was busy crawling on the floor..

Grams: Good morning Me:

Morning Ma

Her: I just checked on Nessi she's sleeping, last night I gave her pills to help her sleep

Me: Why would Kelso do that? He loves Nessi with all his heart

Her: It was bound to happen one day, that's why I let it happen. Nessi has a habit of acting out because she thinks that Kelso will always accept her behavior, she needed to see that she's not above everyone

I nodded, she picked Hakeem from the floor. Her:

Umntwana ka Gogo wakhe

Me: Ma can I ask you something? Her:

Yes

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That Lady who came yesterday do you know her?

Her: I've never seen her before

Me: Do you think that she is Kelso's girlfriend? Her: I don't know.. He didn't hurt her did he?

Me: No.. Actually she stood up to him She laughed...

Her: Finally someone who is not scared of him (Silence)

Her: You know that he's going to fall for her right? He's going to fall hard. Mainly because she's not scared of him and he's going to love that about her more

Me: I see

NONGCEBO

That morning I was woken up by Bongeka, I was sleeping on the couch. My whole body was aching..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Mamncane

I looked at her and realized that I had lost vision on my left eye, it was shut..

Me: Hey Baby

Her: How badly did he hurt you? Me:

I'm going to be fine

Her: I'll get you pain killers Me:

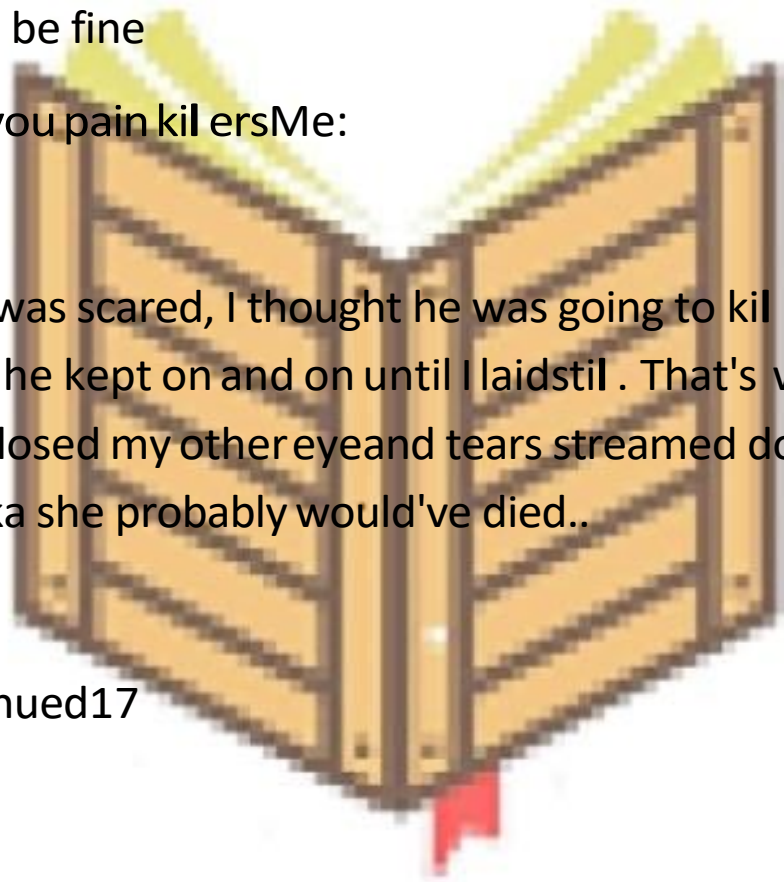
Thank you

Last night I was scared, I thought he was going to kill me. He didn't stop, he kept on and on until I laid still. That's when he stopped. I closed my other eye and tears streamed down, if it was Bongeka she probably would've died..

.

To be continued 17

KELSO (KB)



NOVELSGURU.COM

The following morning I woke up and prepared myself for the day ahead. I wanted to go and see Sole, I need help from his PI.

I was surprised to see Power hanging around the house so early in the morning..

Her: Good morning Me:

Morning

She passed me and went to get the kettle.. Me:

What are you doing here so early?

Her: I slept over

Me: Why?

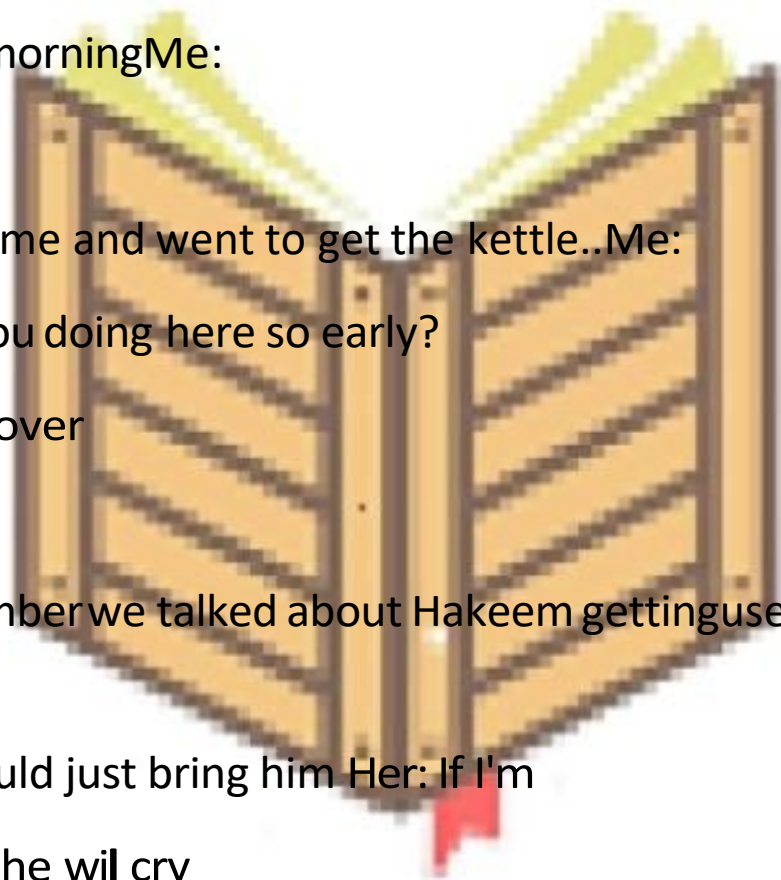
Her: Remember we talked about Hakeem getting used to you guys

Me: You could just bring him Her: If I'm

not around he will cry

Me: He will cry and eventually get used to us

Her: Why do I feel like I'm no longer welcomed here



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You always welcome here

Her: I hope so.. Can I make you breakfast?Me: Yeah

sure.. I'll be in the lounge

I walked to the lounge..

NONGCEBO

The Dr just provided me with the same thing that he gives me all the time. Bathing salts, lavender oil, ointment, and pain killers. He is the Dr that Makhathini always calls to come and examine me...

Banza: How are you feeling now? I was laying on the couch..

Me: I'm still very much in pain

Him: Nongcebo this can't go on, you can't marry this guy

Me: Had it been Bongeka in my shoes, he would've killed the poor child

Him: Next time he's going to kill you

NOVELSGURU.COM

He thought for a while..

Him: I know someone who can take him down Me:

Who?

Him: Kelso

I shook my head...

Me: No.. Makhathini is very ruthless

Him: Kelso has no conscience I know he can take him down

Me: People don't do favours for free

Him: I know with Kelso it's a quid pro quo, he will want me to repay the favour at some point

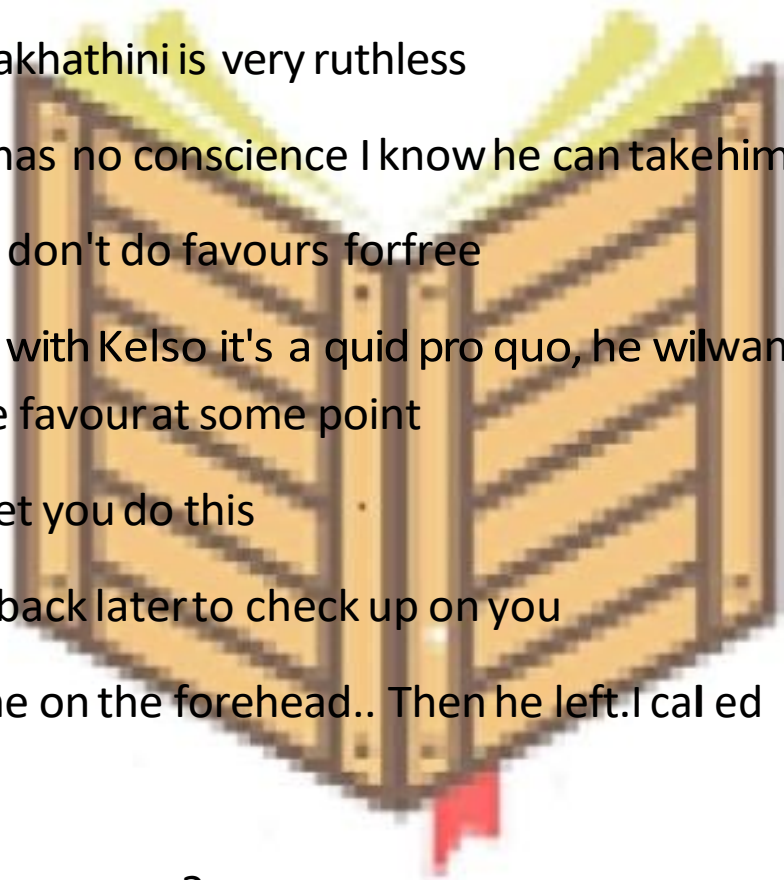
Me: I can't let you do this

Him: I'll be back later to check up on you

He kissed me on the forehead.. Then he left. I called Bongeka..

Bongeka: Mamncane?

Me: Are you still talking to your friend Nessi?



Her: Yes, we talk on whatsapp

Me: Ask her for her Uncle's number Her:

Why?

Me: I think he will be out ticket out of here

KELSO (KB)

I took Hakeem with as I went to see Sole.. He opened the door..

Him: KB

I walked in..

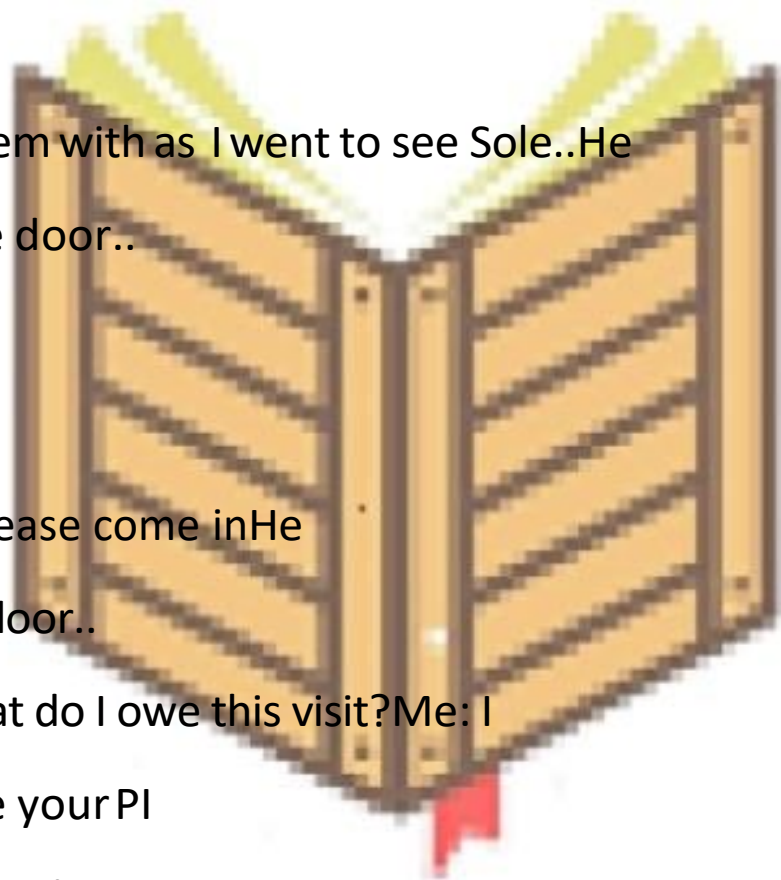
Him: Yes please come in He closed the door..

Him: to what do I owe this visit? Me: I need to use your PI

I put Hakeem down.. Him:

Why?

Me: That's my business



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I'll call him for you Sandisiwe

walked in..

Her: Sole I..

She looked at me..

Her: Oh hi

I looked at Sole..

Her: We will talk later I guess She

walked out..

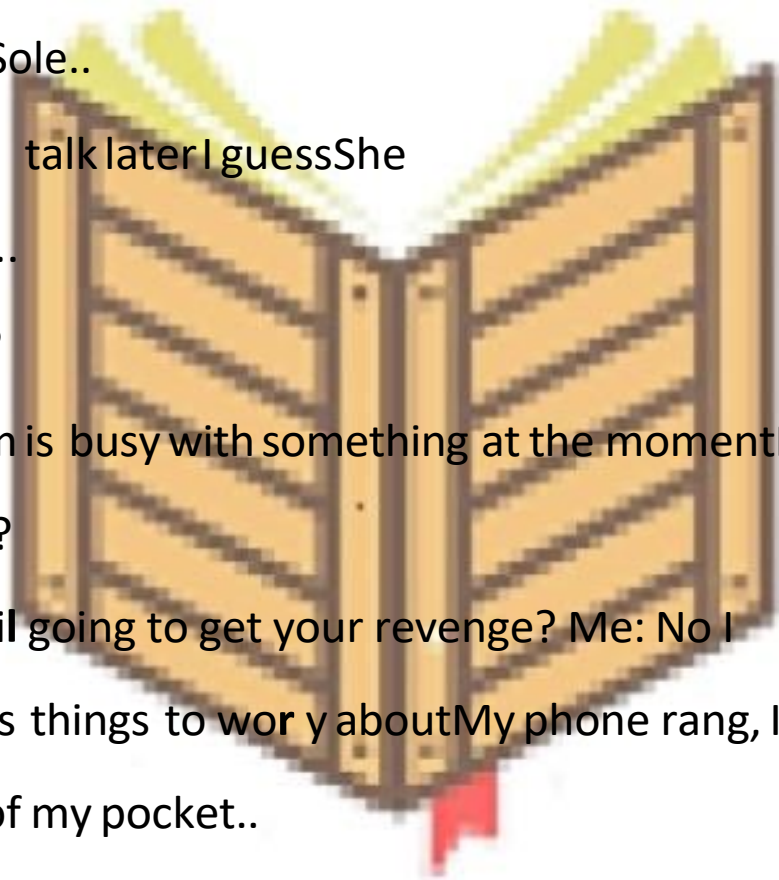
Me: Really?

Him: Valium is busy with something at the moment Me: You
fucking her?

Him: You still going to get your revenge? Me: No I
have serious things to worry about My phone rang, I
took it out of my pocket..

I checked and the number wasn't familiar.. Me: Hello?
o?

Voice: Checking if my husband is not in jail



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How did you get my number? Her: It wasn't difficult really

Me: I see... How are you? Her: I'm in pain

Me: What's wrong?

Her: Nothing much just had an altercation with my husband and things went south for me

Me: You married?

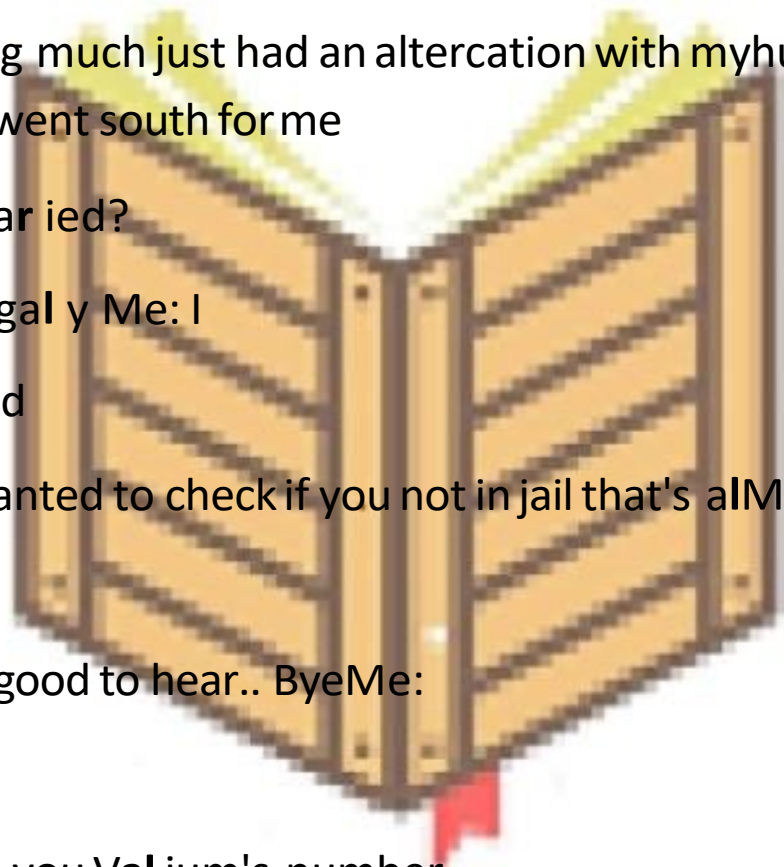
Her: Not legally Me: I am confused

Her: I just wanted to check if you not in jail that's all Me: I'm not in jail for now

Her: That's good to hear.. Bye Me: Bye

Sole: I'll give you Valium's number

Me: No it's okay, I don't think I'll be needing it anymore



NONGCEBO

Banza is not going to let this Makhathini thing go. I care a lot for Banza and I won't feel comfortable knowing that his life will always be in danger. So right now I'd rather have Keslo do it than Banza doing, Kelso and I we mean nothing to each other.. Bongeka brought me something to eat, she helped me to sit up straight..

Me: Thank you Baby

Her: Are ever going to get out of here?Me:

We wil don't wor y

Her: Why can't we poison him?Me:

Bongeka

Her: I'm just asking

Me: Your father knows that we can turn on him anytime, he is always alert. Poisoning him is going to be very difficult, it might even backfire

Her: So how is Nessi's Uncle going to help



Me: Nessi's Uncle seems like someone who can go against him and right now he will be our only hope.. If we run to the shelter he's going to hunt us down and won't stop until he finds us. We will never live in peace, we will always be looking over our shoulders and when he finds us he is going to kill us, I am not for harming anyone but we will only have Peace when we know that your father is no more, at least he won't die by our hand

She nodded..

I texted Banza..

"Don't ask Kelso for the favour just as yet, if my escape doesn't work then we can ask him"

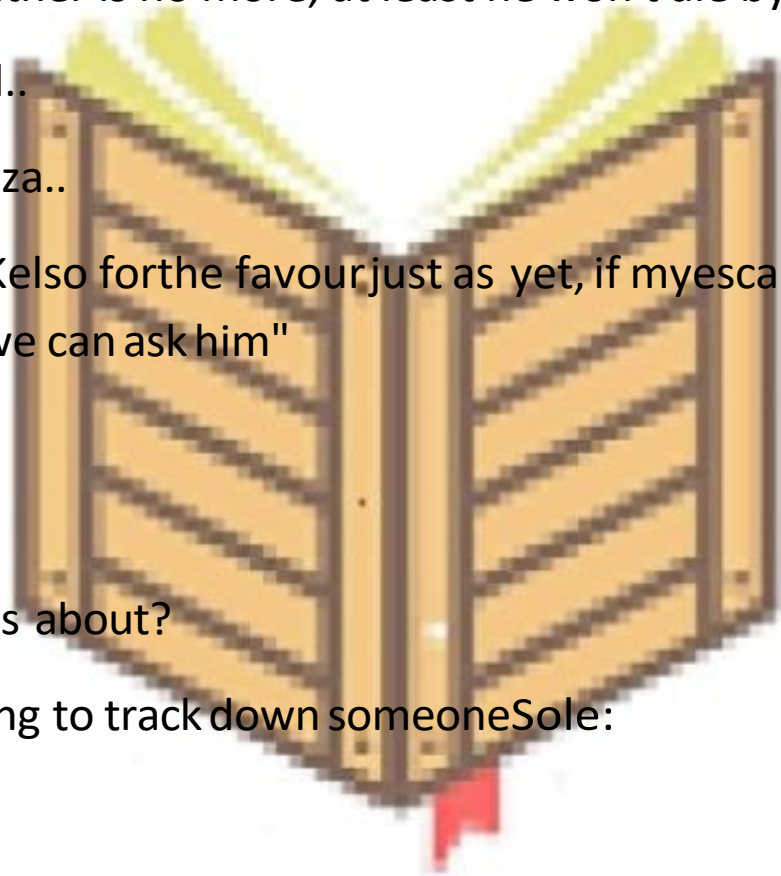
KELSO (KB)

Sole: What is about?

Me: I'm trying to track down someone Sole:

Who?

Me: Some girl



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: Someone you wanna get revenge on? Me: Not really

Sole: Wait... Someone you care for? Me: I don't know yet

Sole: Ask Valium he can get you all the information you need

Me: Tell him her name is Nongcebo, from what Banza and I spoke about I think she's involved with some man by the name of Makhathini

Him: You are going after that girl that Banza cares for

Me: Banza never said they in a relationship, and Banza threatened me remember

He shook his head..

Sole: Banza won't take this just lying down

Me: Banza has never hurt anyone, he doesn't have the guts to do so

Sole: You always starting shit with someone

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How quick can Valium get back to me?Sole: I'm
texting him now

I picked Hakeem up..

Me: You'll keep me informedHim:

Yeah cool man

.

To be continued18

NONGCEBO

[2 WEEKS LATER]

Banza is a very good and humble Person, the last thing I want is for him to get hurt by Makhathini. I don't want Makhathini killing him on my behalf, I would never forgive myself. He does not have what it takes to actually take him on, not because he's weak but because it's not in his nature to hurt

NOVELSGURU.COM

someone. On the other hand Kelso seems like someone who can actually bring Makhathini down, and the only way that I will be able to have my freedom back is when Makhathini meets his untimely death..

I know that what I'm resorting to is not right, I know using Kelso is wrong but I won't be able to live my life on the run. I want peace, I want to be free.

Time is not on my side. The plan is to have Makhathini taken out, then when he is no longer in the picture. Bongeka will go to boarding school and I'll go to varsity. Start my life all over again..

I was feeling a better now, though I wasn't completely healed but I was a lot better. Kelso and I talk on the phone every now and then, I let him know what's happening and when I can't answer his call I let him know why. I am letting him in my world, slowly but surely letting him know what's happening to me...

Ever since my altercation with Makhathini things

NOVELSGURU.COM

have been a bit tense between us, he has given me space to completely heal. He leaves early in the morning and comes back late at night, we hardly say 3 words to each other and though it's affecting him but I'm glad he's giving me peace..

That morning Banza came and fetched me, I had lied to him and said I want him to drive me to the hospital to do an abortion, in actual fact I'm meant to meet up with Kelso

Banza: Are you okay?

I nodded..

Me: Just a bit scared

Him: Want me to go in with you?

Me: No I'll be fine, I don't want you to witness such a sensitive experience

Him: I get you

Me: You can come pick me up later, heard it's going to be a long process



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You'll call me!

hugged him..

Me: Thank you

I got out of the taxi and approached the gate. He waited for me to get in, when I was in he took off. I waited for about 10min before getting out to go and get a taxi..

SANDISIWE

I was on the phone with my Mother..Ma:

How are you holding up?

Me: School is starting to get a bit tough MaMa: Your last results were impressive

Me: I worked hard

Ma: Sandi you can't fail now, Imagine how everyone is going to laugh at us. They will mock us and make silly comments

Me: I know Ma, I won't embarrass nor disappoint

NOVELSGURU.COM

you

Ma: I hope not.. Anyway when are you visiting home?Me: J ust a few weeks before schools close

Ma: Okay because there's something important thatwe have to discuss with you

Me: What is it?

Ma: Can't completely discuss it overthe phoneMe: What is it about?

Ma: Our Pastor's Son has asked for your hand inmar iage, so when you come for holidays both families are going to meet then when we al agreehe's going to pay lobola then you guys wil exchange rings at church

I closed my eyes and exhaled..

Ma: The white wedding wil only take place whenyou have graduated and have found a job

Me: I don't have a say in that?

Ma: Yourfatherthinks that he is a very good youngman, he wil treat you good



Me: I don't love him Ma

Ma: That doesn't matter, so long he loves you. You will learn to love him along the way. You getting married Sandi, no questions asked. If you decline, you will never find such an opportunity again. We don't want you ending up like these girls from around here, no sense of belonging they always played by different guys.. That's not the life we want from you

Me: I understand

Ma: We know what's best for you, you educated and you need someone who is at your level

Me: I have to go Ma, class is about to start
Ma: Okay
take care honey

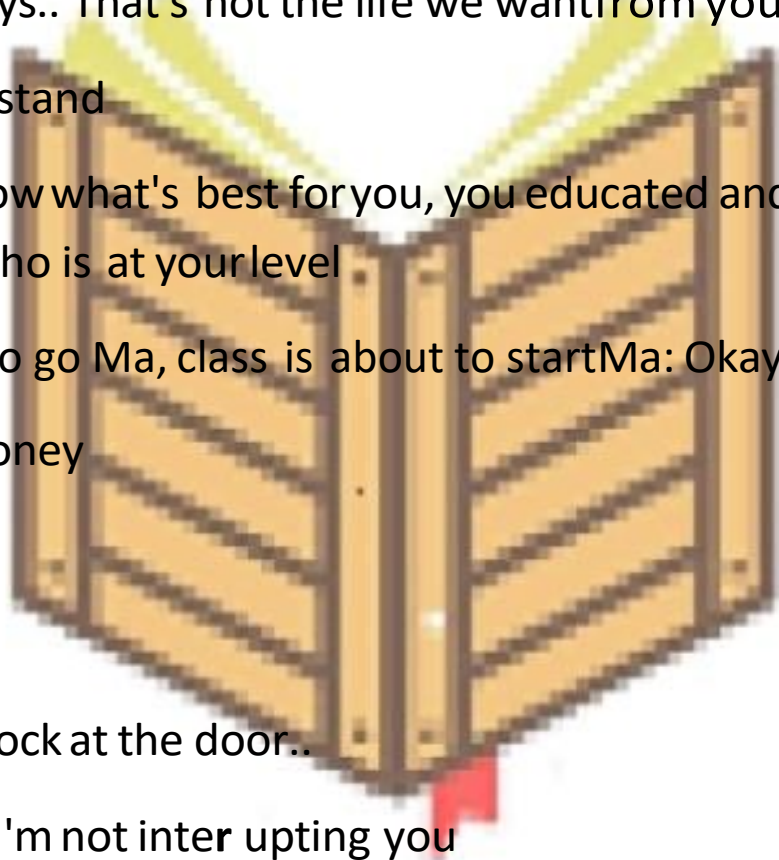
Me: Bye

I hung up..

I heard a knock at the door..

Sole: Hope I'm not interrupting you

At that moment, it was like a light bulb went on in



my mind. I turned around and looked at him. If I could fall pregnant by Sole, it will crush my Parents plans. I don't know him that well, we have known each other for a short period of time but he is a good guy. I was taken by him from the very first day when we met. If I fall pregnant by him later on I know that he can take me back to school, I could benefit a lot from him and I know that he will take good care of me. He looks like a decent guy..

NONGCEBO

I arrived at the mall and stood exactly where he said he will meet me. I stood there for a sweet 5min before he showed up..

Me: Hey

He gave me a hug and lifted me up a little..Him:

How are you?

Me: I'm well and how are you?Him:

I'm good can't complain

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso is very handsome, very charming and any girl

can fall for him. His dimples are the first thing that you fall for, then his perfect smile and teeth.

Looking at him one would deny that he is a hot mess when it comes to his temper, he seems like a perfect gentleman..

Him: How were you able to be let out? Me: I

lied

Him: What did you say?

Me: Said I'm going to the hospital to have an abortion

He laughed..

Him: And he let you go just like that?

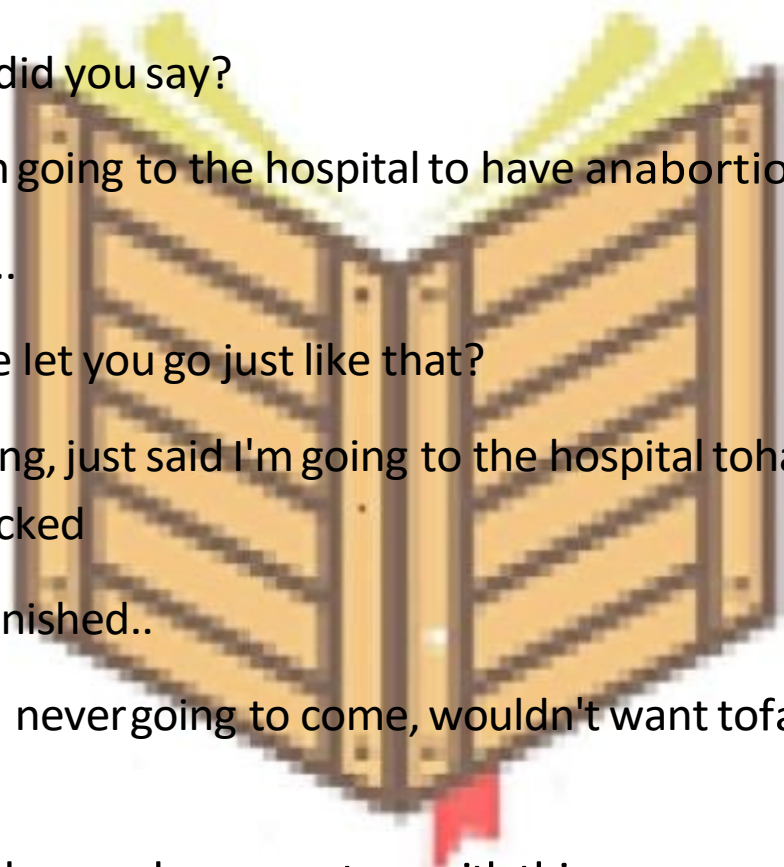
Me: I'm joking, just said I'm going to the hospital to have my bruises checked

His smile vanished..

Me: He was never going to come, wouldn't want to face his shame

Him: I don't know why you put up with this

Me: I don't have a choice, if I wanted to leave trust



me I would've left long time ago. He would find me and kill me, he always finds me

Him: I see

Me: Agh let's not let him ruin our day

He held my hand and we started walking..

Him: If he's like that then he will know that you lied, he will know about this

Me: It's a risk I'm willing to take. At least I feel alive and happy when I'm with you, that's one thing I won't allow him to take away from me

He stopped and looked at me, he put both his hands on my cheeks and I wrapped my arms around his waist..

Him: And I'm just supposed to sit back and let him do this?

Me: Kelso we have already spoken about this, he is a very ruthless man and I don't want you getting hurt.. I would never forgive myself

Him: Clearly you don't know me

Me: Look some day things will work out, nothing bad lasts forever

Him: You are so hopeful

Me: Gotta have hope, that's the only thing keeping me going

He leaned over and kissed me, our very first kiss..Him: Then

we'll just keep on being hopeful

I smiled..

Me: Let's be hopeful We

continued walking...

SANDISIWE

Me: This is how you make perfect pancakesHe looked at them..

Him: Not badI

chuckled..

Me: Not bad at all

NOVELSGURU.COM



We were both standing at the kitchen counter.. I was making him breakfast..

Him: I used to be good at this Me:

Then what happened?

Him: I guess I grew up I

laughed..

Me: Lame excuse

Him: Thank you for the pancakes

Me: It was nothing.. I should be thanking you for what you've done for me

Him: It was nothing too

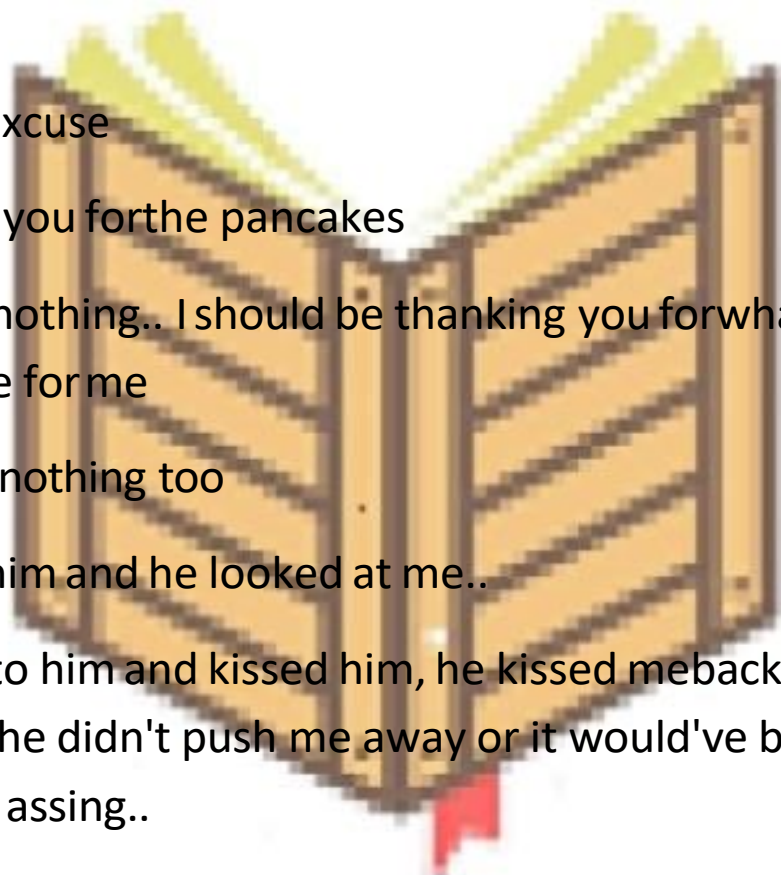
I looked at him and he looked at me..

I got closer to him and kissed him, he kissed me back.

Thank God he didn't push me away or it would've been very embarrassing..

His strong arms settled around my waist squeezing it gently as mine found their way around his neck.

We continued French kissing until he picked me up and placed me on top of the counter. I've been



NOVELSGURU.COM

wearing nothing but t-shirts in the apartment just to tease him, he's a man after all and I'm sure he has fucked me in his mind a lot of times.

He took off my t-shirt and I took off his.. Him: Are you sure about this?

Me: Never been this sure about anything in my life before

He parted my legs and got in between them, he kissed my neck while fondling my breasts

His hands went down from my tummy all the way to my thighs. I took off my bra so that the moment could proceed...

NONGCEBO

Kelso: Why would we start with ice cream first before breakfast?

He spanked my butt..

Me: I love ice cream, couldn't turn a blind eye when I saw it

NOVELSGURU.COM

I stopped..

Me: Let me taste yours and you taste mineHe bit his lower lip..

Him: If only you were talking about somethingI hit him on his shoulder..

Me: You and your dirty mindHe let me taste his..

Me: Not bad

I gave him a full spoon of mine..Me: Okay

here we go

I brought the spoon closer to his mouth, he dodgedit and gave me a kiss. He forced through his tongueinside my mouth, then he pul ed back..

Him: I think I like yours more

He wiped my lower lip.. I looked at him and shookmy head while smiling as we continued walking..

NOVELSGURU.COM

SANDISIWE

This moment was supposed to be beneficial for me, I went in with for one goal but I found myself getting lost in it. So beautiful y lost that everything didn't make sense anymore, the whole world and it's hard trials was shut out from my brain. I liked how his strong arms handled my body, how smooth and dirty the kissing was. Especial y when our tongues found a perfect rhythm, it turned me on more.. The moist of his tongue going around in circles on my erect nipple. How he cupped my breasts and gently massaged it as his tongue softly made my tit more erect. [REMOVED]

To be continued

Please find the removed explicit part of the insert in the closed group "TTEOPM"

Alternatively access the full insert on Visionarywritings under Nongcebo.. Link:

<https://visionarywritings.com/author/918>

NOVELSGURU.COM

SANDISIWE

[REMOVED]

This moment was supposed to be beneficial for me, I went in with for one goal but I found myself getting lost in it. So beautiful y lost that everything didn't make sense anymore, the whole world and it's hard trials was shut out from my brain. I liked how his strong arms handled my body, how smooth and dirty the kissing was. Especial y when our tongues found a perfect rhythm, it turned me on more.. The moist of his tongue going around in circles on my erect nipple. How he cupped my breasts and gently massaged it as his tongue softly made my tit more erect. His finger gently going in and out inside my already wet hole, occasional y pul ing it out and massaging my clit with the wetness with my juices giving his finger no breather. I was soaking wet, I wanted us to get to it already.

He placed both my legs on top of the counter as this coloured was probably going to give me the best

NOVELSGURU.COM

fuck I haven't had in a long time.

He ran the tip of his dick against my hole, my hands laid back on the counter for a balance. He looked at me carefully hoping for the reaction he wanted from my facial expression, and he got it. He took the whip cream that was next to me and put it on my clit, then he went down and licked it off. I wrapped my leg around his neck locking him in..

Me: Ohhh Sole...

He licked it all off, and I bit my lower lip. He came back up and kissed me whilst rubbing himself against my clit, I could feel that he was really hard. Probably after this, a great thing is going to start between us.. I bet him not even suggesting a condom confirmed that he hasn't had it for a while, and he doesn't want anything disturbing him..

He pushed himself in without any warning, I gasped and pushed him off a little..

Him: If I hit it, then it's mine

I pulled him by his neck and we shared a kiss as he trusted in deeper and deeper.

NOVELSGURU.COM

He lifted my ass up a bit as he went for it, starting of gently and increasing his pace. I balanced my hands on his shoulders as I moaned loudly, his moans didn't leave my ear

We continued fucking and after a few minutes he was slamming harder than the first time..

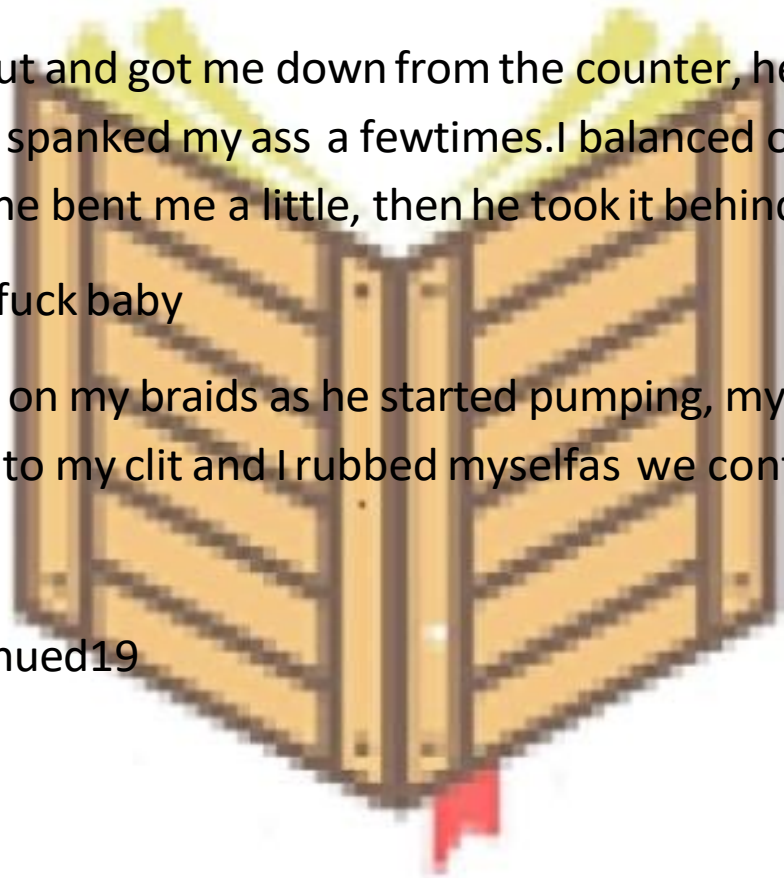
Me: Ah.. Ah.. Ah..Ah..(Screaming)

He pul ed out and got me down from the counter, heturned me around and spanked my ass a few times. I balanced on the counter as he bent me a little, then he took it behind me..

Him: Ohhh fuck baby

He grabbed on my braids as he started pumping, my hand went down to my clit and I rubbed myself as we continued..

To be continued19



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

After spending time with Kelso he drove me to the hospital. I must admit that I really had fun with him, underneath that intimidating personality I unearthed the fun side of him.

I have never met anyone as bold and confident as him, kissing me on our very first date. Touching me and not being scared to show affection in public.

What makes such a guy be so unfortunate in love? Not my words but his. He told me that love is not something that he has sat down and thought off or something that he goes around pursuing. If only he could allow this side of him to take over, then maybe his love life won't be so unfortunate...

He sent me a video on whatsapp of himself driving and singing along to some song, the smile, the laugh and his dimples. I sat there smiling and blushing like a teenager stupidly in love. I stood up as Banza made his way to me..

Him: Hey

Me: Hey

He looked at me..

Him: For someone who just had an abortion, you seem very happy

Me: I'm just happy that I won't be carrying Makhathini's baby

Him: Oh well I see

Me: Come on let's go

SANDIWE

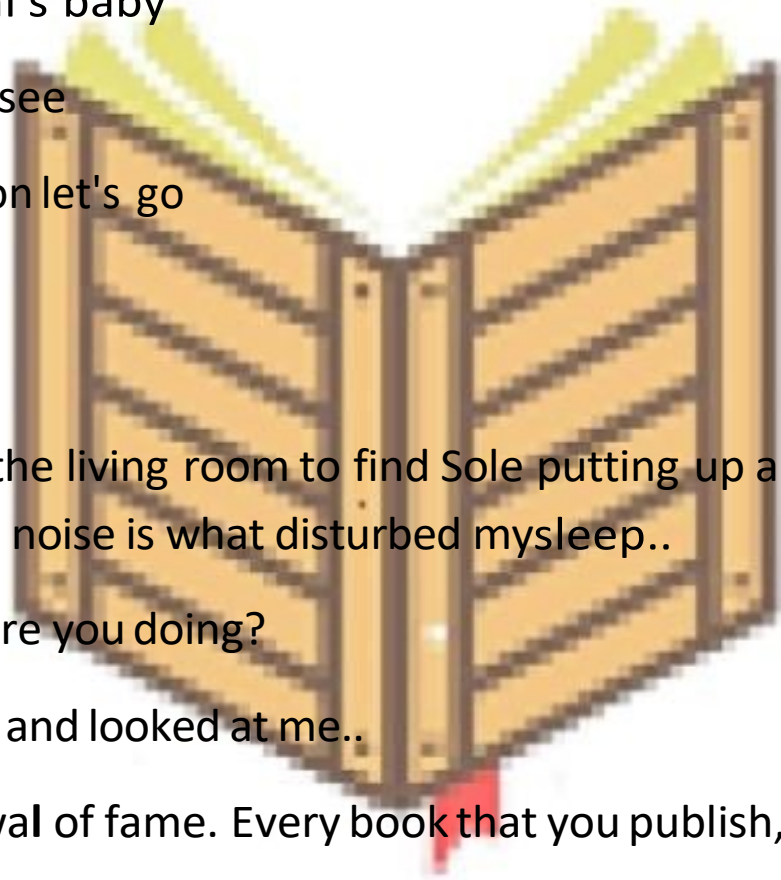
I walked in the living room to find Sole putting up a bookshelf. Literally the noise is what disturbed my sleep..

Me: What are you doing?

He stopped and looked at me..

Him: Your wall of fame. Every book that you publish, you must put it here

Me: Woow



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: It's not finished yet but I'm getting there
Me: It's beautiful

He smiled at me..Me:

Can we talk? Him:

Yeah sure

Me: Uhm we didn't use a condom, so I don't know what's going to happen.. I could opt for a morning after pill

He smiled and shook his head..

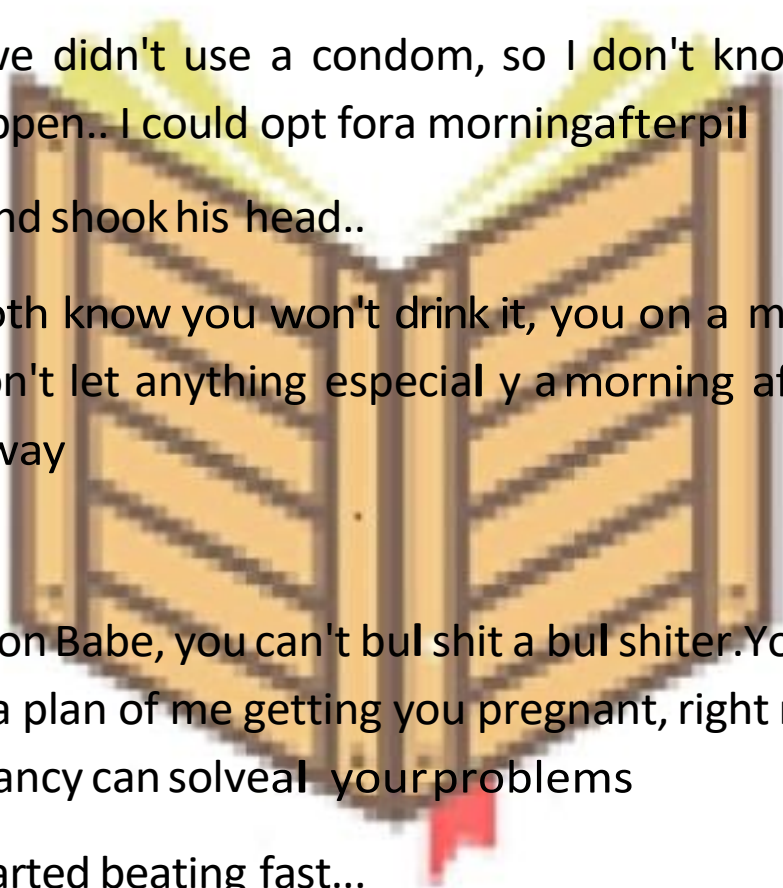
Him: We both know you won't drink it, you on a mission and you won't let anything especially a morning after pill get in your way

Me: Huh?

Him: Come on Babe, you can't bullshit a bullshitter. You woke up today with a plan of me getting you pregnant, right now you think pregnancy can solve all your problems

My heart started beating fast...

Him: Look I know you going through a lot and I don't



know if a baby is going to fix everything

Me: I didn't use you if that's what you thinking, I really like you

Him: Like me to a point of trying to fall pregnant on our first sexual encounter?

Me: Fine Sole we can get the morning after pill I'll drink it in front of you then I'll take my things and leave.. Happy?

Him: Why you getting mad, it's the truth ain't it? Me: You know what Sole, fuck you

I walked to the bedroom and laid on the bed, he walked in and closed the door. He made his way to the bed and laid behind me..

Him: Face me

Me: Please leave me alone

Him: I don't understand how you mad, I'm the victim here shouldn't I be the one getting mad?

I kept quiet..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Stop fighting me and let's talk about this

I turned and faced him..

Me: Fine maybe I did have a mission, I did want to fall pregnant by you. I feel like you can provide me with a stable life, I am at the crossroads and I don't know what to do. Everything is just messed up. I'm scared that you will wake up one day and turn on me, you will find someone else or cheat then throw me out. You are very handsome, you seem financially stable and what am I bringing to the table? Just my vagina and another better one will come and you are going to get tired of me (crying)

I covered my face with my hands..

Me: I just don't know what to do I'm tired, my life is a mess and at times I just want to commit suicide because I feel the pressure more. At least if my sister was here.. I'm sorry you are getting caught in all of my mess

He let me cry without saying anything..

Me: I'm very sorry, this is even embarrassing (crying) Him: Come here

NOVELSGURU.COM

He pulled me closer to him. He laid back on his back and I got on top of him. He ran his hands around my butt..

Him: Are you sure about this? I

nodded..

Him: It's okay we'll have a baby!

I looked at him..

Me: I don't want you to feel used

Him: If you think a baby is enough to ground me then we'll have a baby

Me: Wait you smart, what are you playing at?

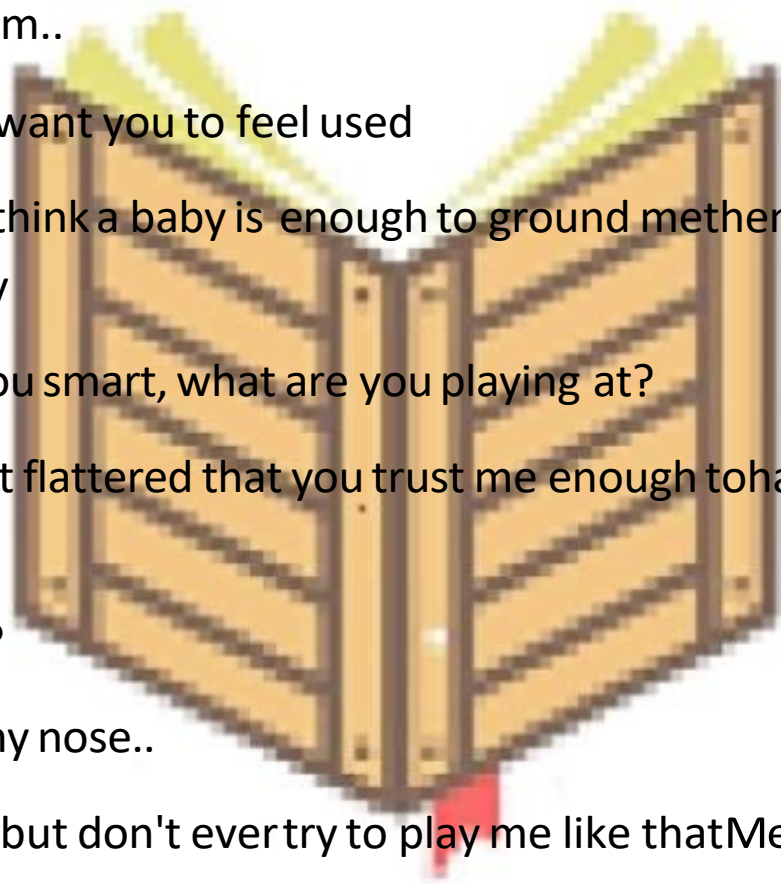
Him: I'm just flattered that you trust me enough to have a baby by me

Me: Really?

He poked my nose..

Him: Really but don't ever try to play me like that
Me: I wouldn't dare

Him: Well then in that case I think the words "I love



NOVELSGURU.COM

you" should be practiced more I

stared deep in his eyes..

Me: I love you Him: I

love you too We both

laughed..

Me: I can't believe that we actually doing this

Him: I can't believe we doing this too, just promise me one thing

Me: What is it?

Him: Whilst we on this train of using me, why not use me to go back to school too?

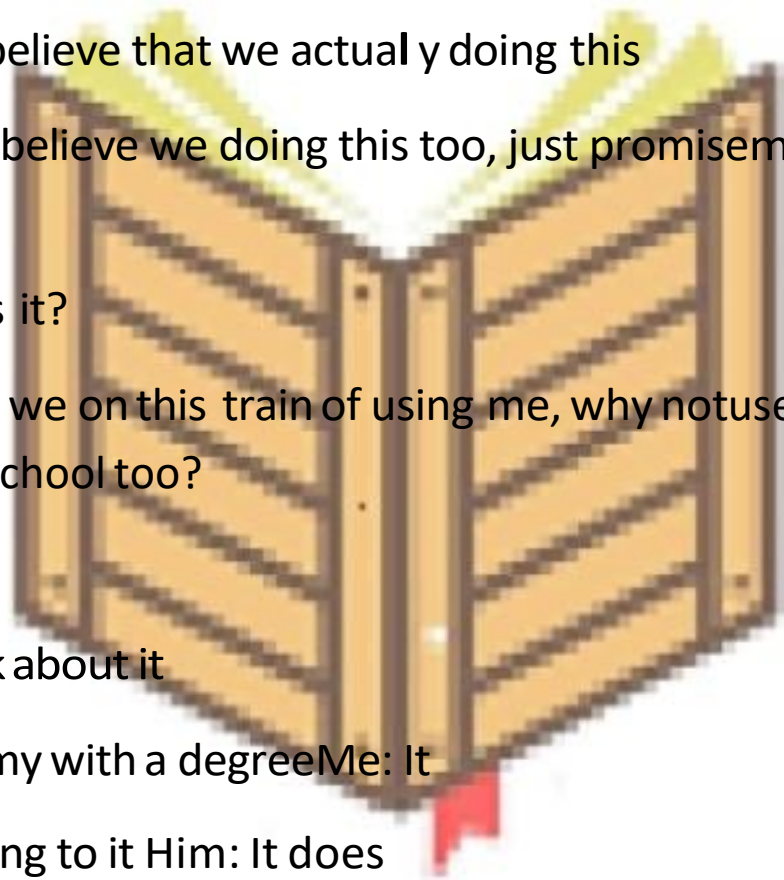
I nodded..

Me: I'll think about it

Him: Mommy with a degree Me: It

has a nice ring to it Him: It does

I kissed him..



NOVELSGURU.COM

KELSO (KB)

I parked at the taxi rank, blocking some taxi from coming out. This is a taxi rank and usually cars are forbidden to park inside. I got out with a few taxi drivers looking at me, I closed the door and started walking to one of them..

Me: Ngingamthola uMakhathani? (Where can I find Makhathini)

He pointed at some taxi drivers who were sitting together and playing cards, I walked up to them..

Me: Sanibonani

They all looked at me..

Me: Ng'cela uMakhathani (may I please speak to Makhathini)

They looked at each other..

Him: Ufunwa ubani? (Who is asking)

Me: Ngicela ukudla indlebe nawe (may I please talk to you)

Him: Mfana omncane qala ususe isenke lakho (Young boy move your car first)

Me: Yeah I'm not going to do that

Him: Ucabanga ukuthi kukuphi la? (Where do you think you are)

Taxi Driver 1: Eyy uzolimala umfana, Makhathini kanti naba nabo Mnaks sebaganane unwabo (This boy is going to get hurt, most of the taxi drivers are getting upset)

Him: Weeeeeee kanti sekumele ngigobe unyawo manje ngoba nawu umfana eqina isende (Now I must bend my foot just because this boy thinks that he is a man)

I saw about 3 taxi drivers making their way to me, one had a sjambok..

Taxi driver 2: Mameshani! Siyalingwa noma ukudelela kwase goli? (Are we being tested or this is how disrespectful boys in Johannesburg are)

Makhathini: Phezu kwakhe gagazi (Whoop him) Taxi Driver

2: Awususe isenkana lakho mfana

(move your car)

Now eyes were on us, I was outnumbered. I glanced down at Makhathini..

Me: I want to talk to you about Nongcebo
He looked at me, then he got up..

Him: Uthini? (What are you saying) Gagazi:

Ma-

Makhathini: Awukahle Gagazi (wait a minute)
He walked up to me..

Makhathini: Uthini? (What did you say)

Gagazi: Khulumelani le kude, phela la siyalayisha, sidliwa yiskhathi
(Talk a bit faraway, we making money here)

Makhathini: Ngithe awukahle Gagazi (I said wait a minute)

Gagazi: Naba abantu, we mnaks iyawubuya iphume kuwe le
Mali ndonda kanti unjani (The money will be deducted from
you)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Makhathini put his hand on Gagazi's neck.. Makhathini: Ngithi awukahle (I said wait a minute)The othertaxi drivers interfered..

Taxi driver: Makhathini ngeke sizwe ngawe (Makhathini we won't hear from you)

They started surrounding him, he looked at me. I winked at him and walked back to my car.. I got in and took out my phone, I texted Nongcebo:

"I'll come and fetch you at 19:00. I don't want excuses, and I don't want stories"

She replied after a few seconds:

"You know that's not possible"

I texted her back:

"I don't care! You my wife and I want to see you tonight at 19:00"

.

To be continued 20 **NOVELSGURU.COM**

SOLE

I had some errands to run, so later on I left Sandi cooking to go and carry out what I needed to do. Right when I got my car out of the garage I saw Londi approaching. I got out and waited for her..

Her: Sole

Me: Hey

Her: What's going on? You haven't been returning my calls

Me: I have been busy

Her: What's going on Sole? It's unlike you to be this quiet

Me: It's late how did you get here? Her:

Uber

Me: I'm going to need my key back Her:

Why?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It's my house

Her: What's going on? I didn't travel all the way here to have you play mind games with me

I looked at her bag..

Her: I'll go inside and take a bath so we can talk
Me: You going back home

Her: Why are you doing this?
Me: How is Stalion?

Her: What?

Me: How is Stalion?

Her: How am I supposed to know? He's your friend

Me: If you going to stand there and lie then we have nothing to talk about

Her: Are you trying to accuse me of something? Are saying I'm sleeping with Stalion?

I smiled..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You just said it!

She dropped her bag on the ground..

Her: It was a mistake

Me: A mistake that happened more than once?Her: Babe

I'm sor y.. You know I love you

She walked up to me..

Her: Let's go inside and fix thisMe:

There's nothing to fix

She held on to my jacket tightly..

Her: I can't lose you over something so stupid, please let's go inside and talk about this.. Please I love you

Sandi walked up to us..Sandi:

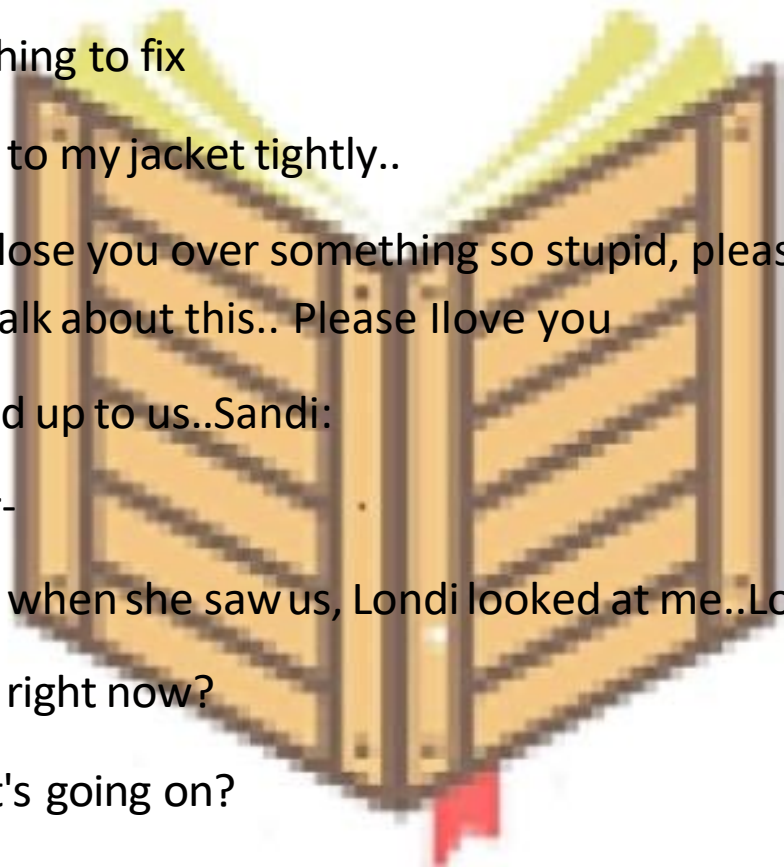
Sole you for-

She paused when she saw us, Londi looked at me..Londi: Are you serious right now?

Sandi: What's going on?

Sandi was wearing my t-shirt...I looked

at her..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Go back inside

Londi: No she's not going back inside? Who is she? Sandi: Sole what's going on?

Me: Go back inside, I'll be right there

Londi: No she's not going back inside! Who is she?

Londi let go of my jacket and made her way straight to Sandi, I followed her and wrapped my arm around her waist then picked her up a little..

Londi: I want you out right now! Who are you bitch? I will fucken mop the floor with your behind you don't know me!

I slammed her against the car.. Me:

Calm the fuck down!

She looked at me..

Londi: I can't believe you doing this to me! After everything that we've been through? Are you serious?

Me: Get your back and leave, don't ever show up here again!

NOVELSGURU.COM

She looked at me and then looked at Sandi..Londi

kissed me, I pulled back..

Me: You really embarrassing yourself in front of her and it's not sweet, get your bag and leave!

I let go of her. She slowly went and got her bag, without saying anything she walked away.. I looked at Sandi..

Her: I'm getting my things and I'm leaving!

She walked back to the house.. This is going to be a long night..

NONGCEBO

Makhathini had called me and told me that he was admitted at the hospital, said there was a commotion at the taxi rank. He didn't go into much detail about everything, just said that he's hurt and they have admitted him for a few days.. Confused as I was, I got a call from Banza..

Me: Hey



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Did you hear from Makhathini? Me: Yes
what happened?

Him: He was attacked by taxi drivers Me:
What? Why?

Him: What did you say to Kelso? Me:
What do you mean?

Him: Makhathini just gave me a description of a guy matching
Kelso

Me: You at the hospital?

Him: Yes.. They roughed him up pretty bad he might be here
for a week or so

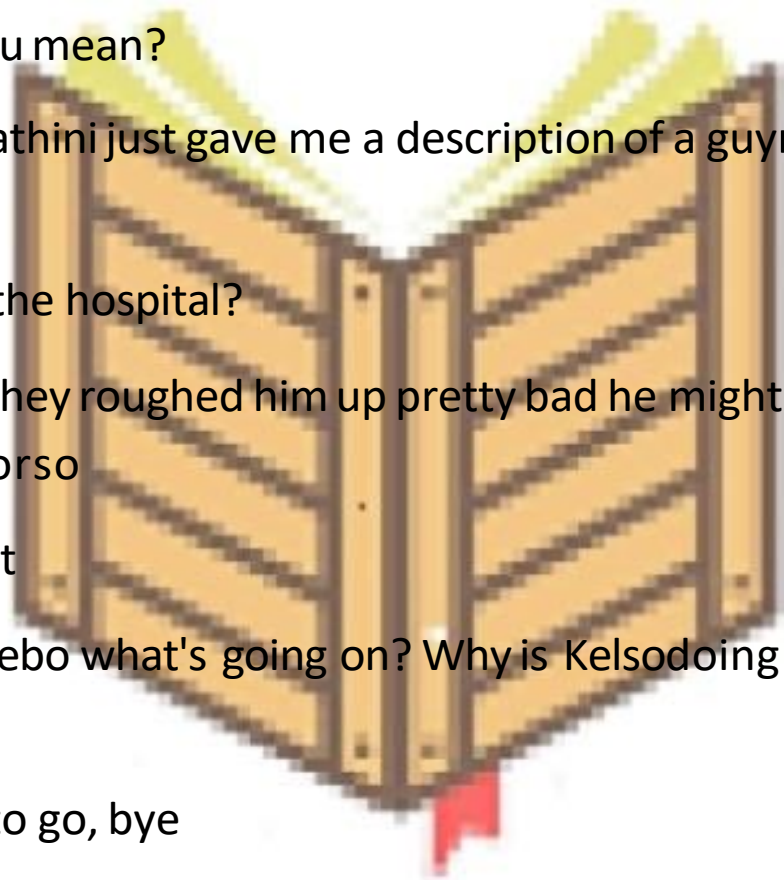
Me: Dammit

Him: Nongcebo what's going on? Why is Kelso doing
this?

Me: I have to go, bye

Him: Nongcebo!

I hung up and looked at the time, it was 18:55.. I went to
Bongeka's room..



NOVELSGURU.COM

She was on a call ..

Me: Get off the phone we are leaving Her:

Where are we going?

Me: Put on something warm, we are going to meet up with someone

Her: Okay

SANDISIWE

Sole: Where are you going? Me: I

don't know.. I'll see Him: Sandi

wait

He tried touching me but I pushed him off..Me:

Don't touch me!

Him: Okay I'll move out you'll stay here Me: No

I'll leave

Him: And go where?

Me: I don't know maybe to hell !



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: It's not what you think it is
Me:

She isn't your girlfriend?

Him: It's a long story, if you can maybe let me explain

Me: I don't want any explanation

Him: You not going, this is no longer about you! If you real y pregnant I can't have you wandering around the streets alone

Me: Go to hel !

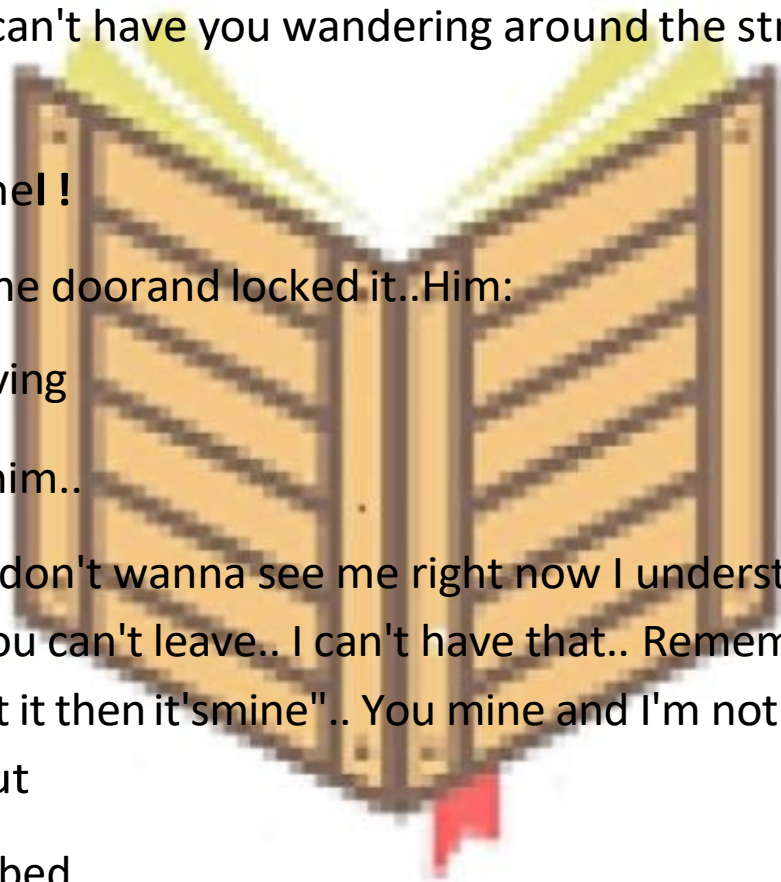
He closed the door and locked it.. Him:

You not leaving

I looked at him..

Him: If you don't wanna see me right now I understand, I'll leave but you can't leave.. I can't have that.. Remember what I said? "If I hit it then it's mine".. You mine and I'm not going to let you walk out

I sat on the bed..



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Bongeka: Where are we going? Me:

We going to meet someone Bongeka:

Who?

Kelso parked at the local shops, he was leaning against his car smoking..

Bongeka: Nessi's Uncle? Are you two dating now? Me: No..

Her: What about Banza? Me:

Bongeka keep quiet

Her: People are going to notice us

Me: That's the least of my worries right now Her:

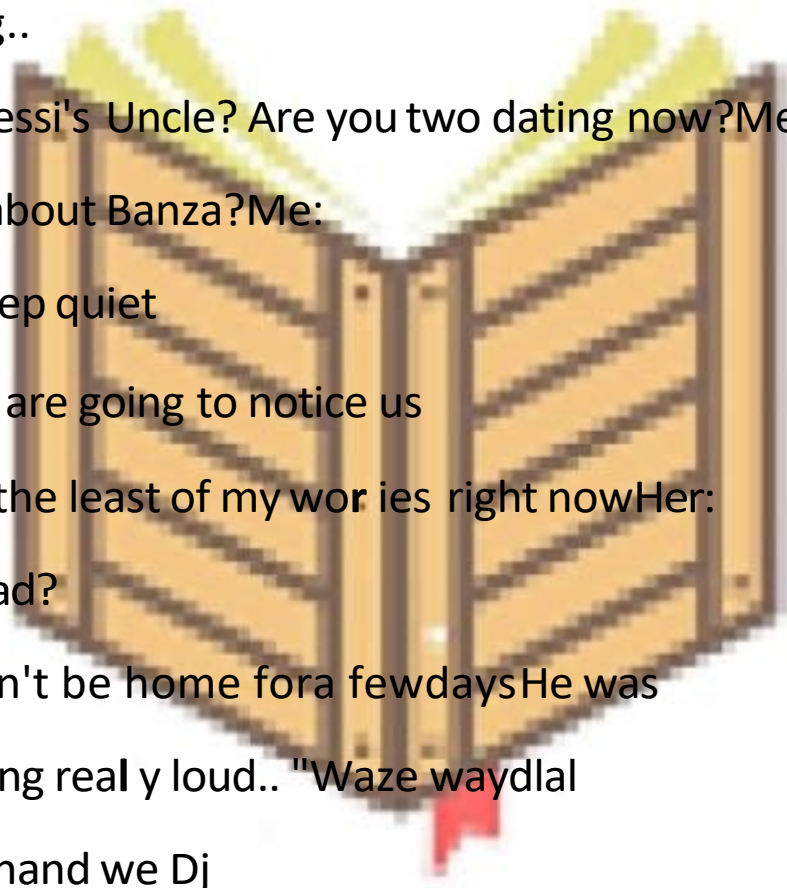
Where is Dad?

Me: He won't be home for a few days He was

playing a song really loud.. "Waze waydlal

ingoma emnand we Dj

Kwathi mangizule ngijubalale umhlaba wonke



Mina ngyathanda ukbona abantu bejabule
Ngyathanda ukuzwa abantu bethi Afro Inhliziyo
iyagxumagxuma iyabonga Dj Mina ngyathanda
ukbona abantu bejabuleNgyathanda ukuzwa
abantu bethi Afro Inhliziyo iyagxumagxuma
iyabonga Dj"

When he saw us he dropped the cigarette and
stepped on it putting it out..

Bongeka: Uncle Kelso Kelso: Hey

baby

He opened the door for Bongeka..Kelso:

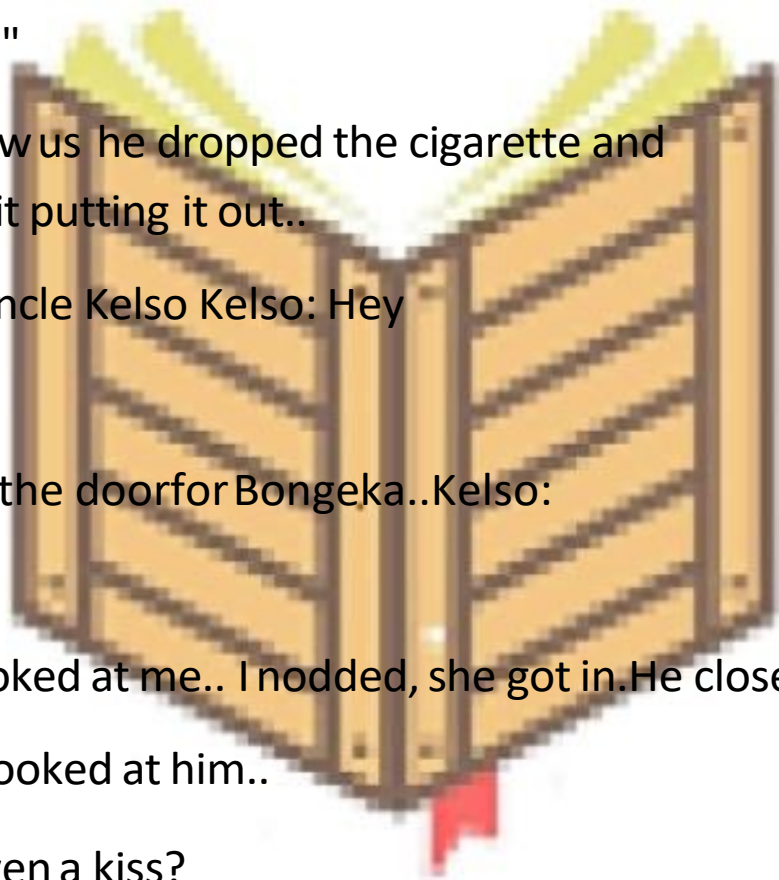
Get in

Bongeka looked at me.. I nodded, she got in.He closed
the door, I looked at him..

Him: Not even a kiss?

He tried kissing me I pushed him back..He

looked at my hand on his chest..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Kelso what did you do?

He put his hands in his pockets.. Me: What did you do to Makhathini?

Him: Angimenza nex (I didn't do anything to him) Me: He got admitted today

He started dancing..

Him: Izwa lenumber "ngiyathanda ukubona abantubejabule, ngiyathanda ukuzwa abantu bethi efro.

Intliziyo iyagxumagxuma ngiyabonga Dj" Me:

Kelso!

He stopped and looked at me..

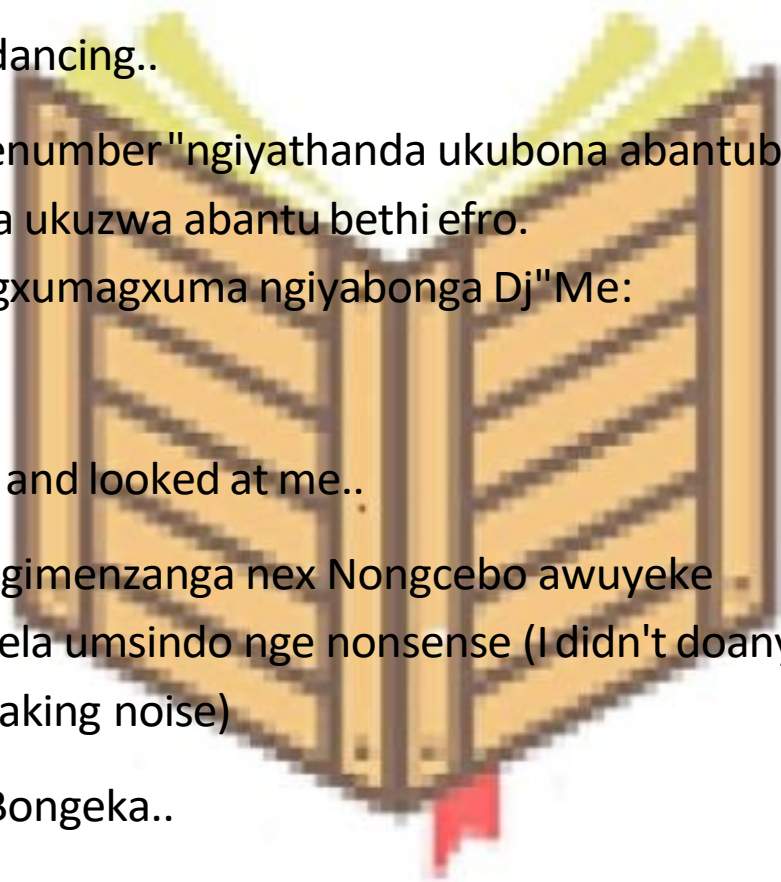
Him: Eyy angimenzanga nex Nongcebo awuyeke ukung'bangela umsindo nge nonsense (I didn't do anything to him, stop making noise)

I looked at Bongeka..

Me: We going to run away Him:

No you not

Me: When he gets discharged he's going to kill me!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You not going to run awayMe:

Kelso

He walked up to me and put both his hands on mycheeks..

Him: You not going to run away because I'm goingto take you from him and he won't believe it this was just an introduction

I put my hands on his...Him:

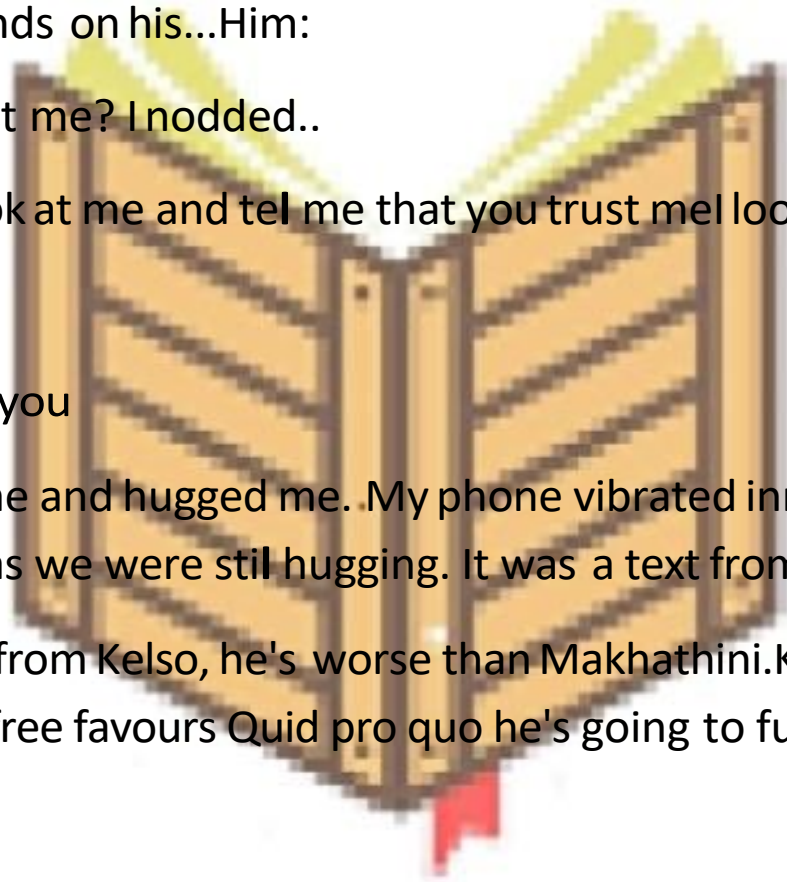
Do you trust me? I nodded..

Him: No look at me and tel me that you trust mel looked at him..

Him: I trust you

He kissed me and hugged me. My phone vibrated inmy hand, I checked it as we were stil hugging. It was a text from Banza:

"Stay away from Kelso, he's worse than Makhathini.Kelso doesn't do free favours Quid pro quo he's going to fuck up your life!"



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continuedNo

edits

21

NONGCEBO

Kelso dropped us off at his house, the girls were happy to see each other again. He left shortly, leaving me with his Grandmother. We had just finished eating dinner and now she was busy telling me stories about Kelso. Such a sweet and kind woman, Kelso is lucky..

Me: Here's your tea

Her: You shouldn't have, you a guest here
Me: It's okay

I sat down next to her.. Me:

He looks different Her: He

was young here

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Can I ask you something personal?

Her: You are Kelso's girlfriend, there's nothing personal

I forgot that he introduced me as his "Girlfriend" ..Me: Was he always like this?

She took off her glasses..

Her: No.. I'm going to tel you this because forsomereason I like you. You seem different

I smiled..

Her: Kelso had a tough upbringing, his father is in jail. His mother walked out on them, his sister died from heroin overdose but what kil ed him more was when he was bul ied at school

Me: Kelso bul ied? Are you sure he wasn't the bul y?

Her: With a past like his.. He channeled his hurt and pain, he turned it into anger. I haven't seen him hurt or scared in a very long time, instead he gets angry.. His anger feeds off from his pain

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I understand.. I'm sure he's not scared of

anyone now

Her: He is Me:

He is?

Her: Yes.. Now this is a secret between us Me: I'm

listening

Her: He is only scared of his best friend Sole, scared of Sole turning into his enemy.. That's one enemy he won't be able to bring down

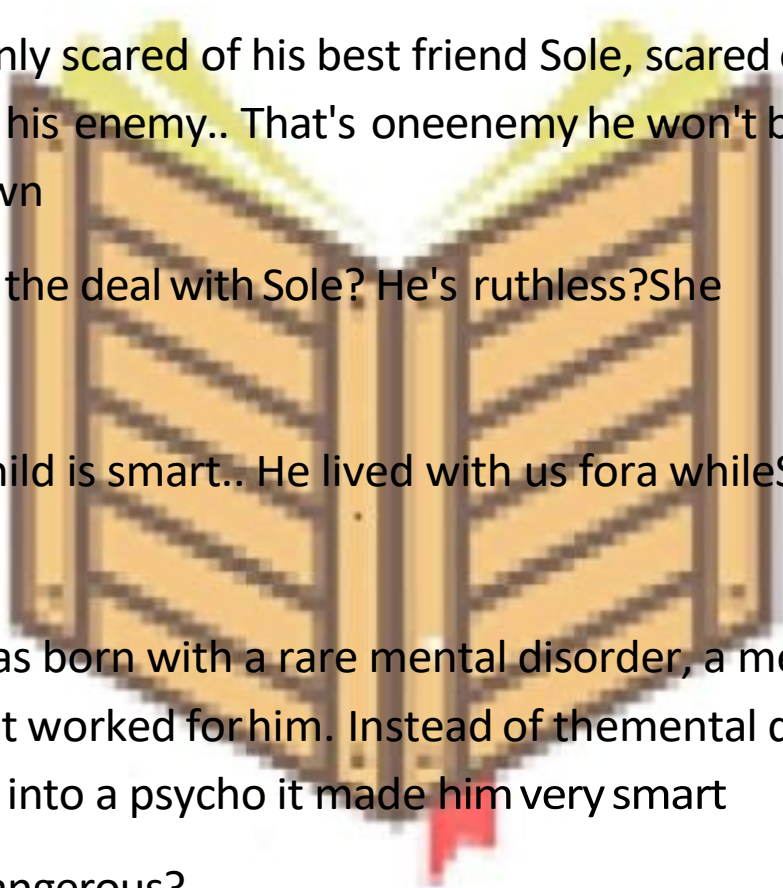
Me: What's the deal with Sole? He's ruthless? She chuckled...

Her: That child is smart.. He lived with us for a while She shook his head..

Her: Sole was born with a rare mental disorder, a mental disorder that worked for him. Instead of the mental disorder turning him into a psycho it made him very smart

Me: Is he dangerous?

Her: Very.. Sole understands the human mind, I'm



sure better than the one who created it. He can be very manipulative, he can control you, he can lead you into doom without you even realizing it and you will never see it coming.

Me: He does sound like a psycho

Her: In my old age I tend to get worried about Kelse getting on Sole's bad side. It could be dangerous for him, very dangerous

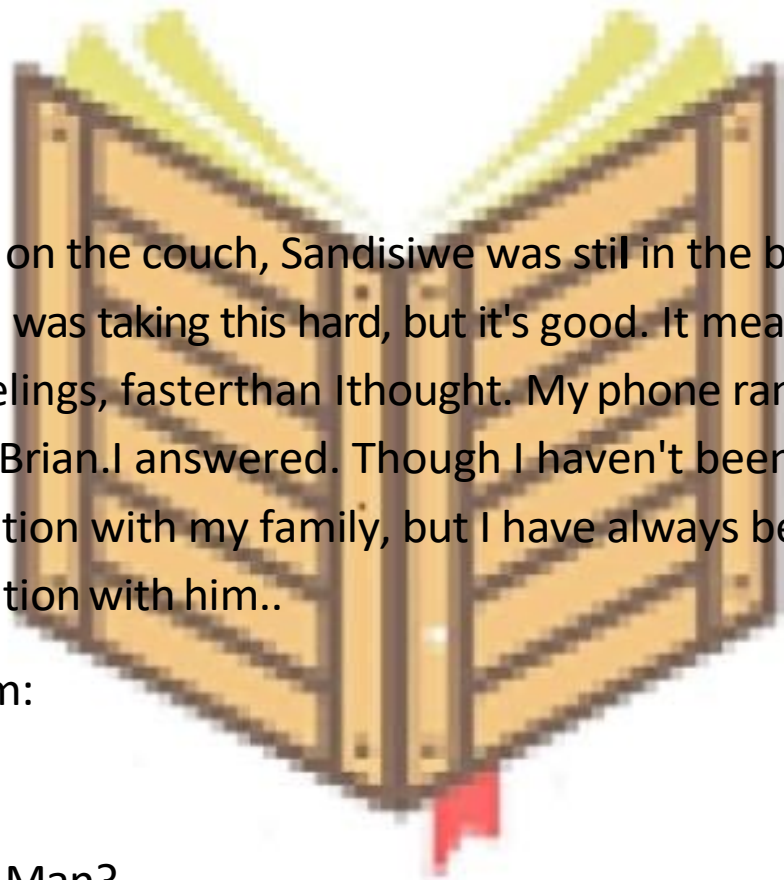
SOLE

I was laying on the couch, Sandisiwe was still in the bedroom sulking. She was taking this hard, but it's good. It means she's catching feelings, faster than I thought. My phone rang, it was my big Brother Brian. I answered. Though I haven't been in communication with my family, but I have always been in communication with him..

Me: Bro Him:

Sole

Me: Howzit Man?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Not good.. Not good at allMe:

What's wrong?

Him: My boy is in hospital sat
up straight..

Me: What?

Him: He tried committing suicide, he's on life support. He's
brain dead Sole, he's never coming back. I'm about to pull
the plug

Me: What happened?

Him: Something about being bullied at schoolMe: Is the
family there?

Him: No they left.. They don't know that I'm going to pull the plug
have the machine switched off

Me: I'm on my way text me the name of the hospitalHim: I'll do
so

I hung up..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Dammit Matthew!

I made my way to the bedroom, she was laying on

the bed. I walked up to her and crouched on the side of the bed.. I gently pulled her braids back..

Me: I'm going out for a while She hugged the pillow tight..

Me: If you leave, no matter where you go I'm going to find you in less than 48 hours and I'm going to bring you back here kicking and screaming. I am attending to an emergency and sweetheart.. You disappearing is the last thing I want trust me, it's a search I'm not prepared to do

I kissed her on her forehead..

Me: I'm going to save my number on your phone, if anything comes up call me. Or if you're ready to talk call me

I took her phone.. Needed her fingerprint to unlock. So I resorted to her pin.. I looked at the option "Enter Pin" just 4 numbers. I looked at the screen for a while and entered the Pin "3322", it unlocked. I saved my number..

Me: Here

She took her phone..

Her: How did you know my Pin?!

looked at her..

Her: What is wrong with you Sole? You not normal

Me: See how it was easy to unlock your phone, it'll be that easy to find you

I gently tapped her thigh..Me:

I'll be back

Her: How did you know my pin?

Me: If I come back and you still here, I'll tell you I walked out..

NONGCEBO

I looked at the time, it was 21:00.Kelso's

Grandmother yawned..

Her: I sleep early, very earlyMe:

Sorry to keep you up



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Don't apologize.. I enjoyed talking to you
Me: I'll sleep with the girls

Her: You not going to sleep with Kelso?
Me: No

Her: I did not expect that, such respect
Me:
Good night

Her: Good night Sisi

I made my way to Nessi's bedroom..

They were on their phones, as soon as I walked in they kept quiet. I closed the door and looked at them..

Me: I'm sleeping here

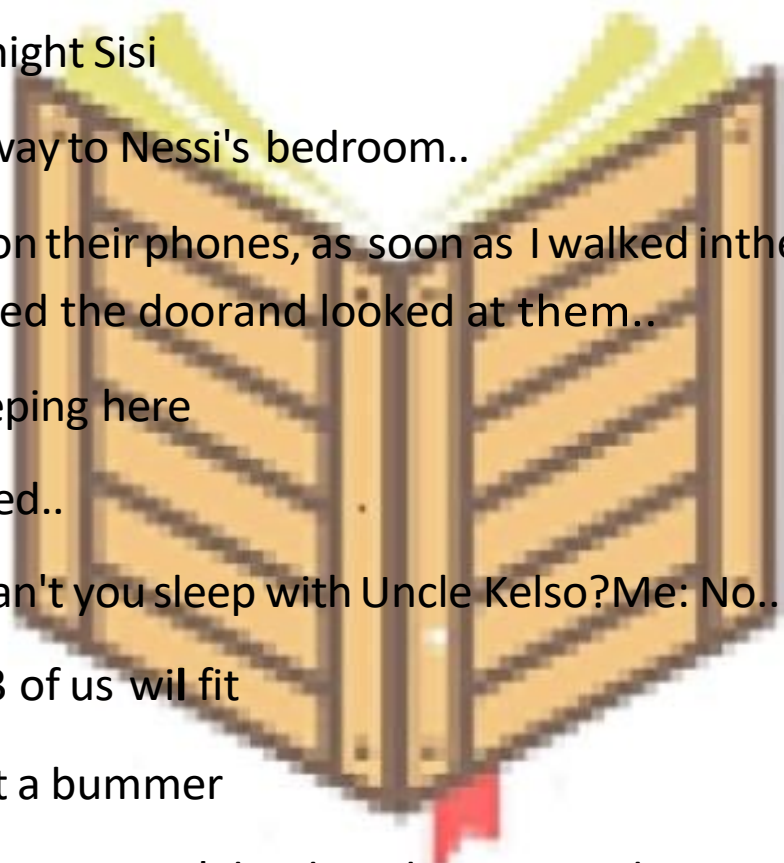
They frowned..

Bongeka: Can't you sleep with Uncle Kelso?
Me: No..

I'm sure all 3 of us will fit

Nessi: What a bummer

Me: Don't worry I won't be disturbing you girls as you chat with your boyfriends



They looked at each other, I undressed and switched off the light..

SINDISIWE

I wonder how Sole figured out my Pin. Something is not normal with this guy. As he was gone I started snooping around searching for something, something that can tell me more about him. I heard the key turning and the kitchen door opening. That was quick, he was gone for like 10min now and already he is back. I made my way to the kitchen, it was not Sole. It was the girl from earlier on..

I looked at her as she looked at me.. Her: I knew I would find you here

Me: Who are you? What do you want?

Her: Sole and I have been through a lot. I was with Sole before all of this. Before this house, the car, and the money. Before he became the hunk that he is and..

She laughed while shaking her head..

Her: I'm not going to let you take him from me
Me: Sole is not here

Her: Well then that's better don't you think?
Me: I think you should leave

Her: How about you leave?

She walked up to the counter and took a knife from the knife stand..

Me: Okay if you want Sole you can take him, this is unnecessary

Her: Problem is that he doesn't want me anymore because of you! I did a stupid mistake and I'm not going to have you ruin us! He has already made his decision and he won't go back on his word! So...

Tell me what should I do now?
I didn't answer..

Her: What should I do? I love him you know, I love him very much

NOVELSGURU.COM

I swallowed.. She stood there and looked at me. I thought of the only way out, I ran to the bedroom

lucky for me I was able to outrun her. I got in and locked the door..

She started banging on the door..

Her: Open or else I'm going to break this door!
Me: Ohh my God what did I get myself into?

Her: Open this door now!!

NONGCEBO

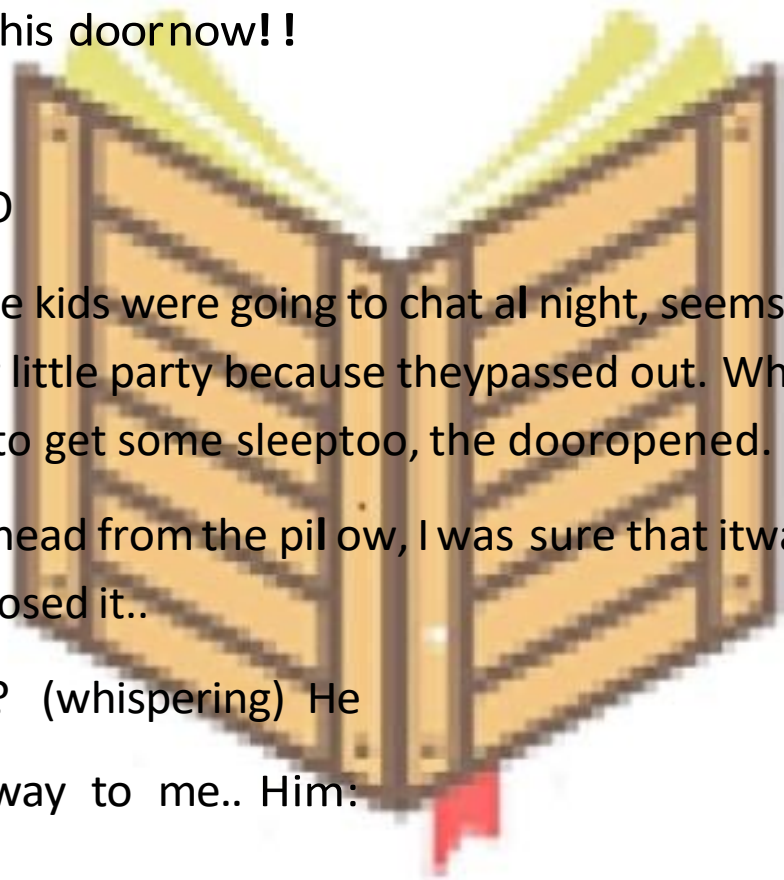
I thought the kids were going to chat all night, seems like I ended their little party because they passed out. When I was about to get some sleep, the door opened.

I raised my head from the pillow, I was sure that it was Kelso. He gently closed it..

Me: Kelso? (whispering) He made his way to me.. Him:

Hey

I could smell that he had been drinking, it was all



NOVELSGURU.COM

mixed with a scent of a cigarette. Wasn't really a turn off though..

Me: The girls are sleeping (Whispering)

Him: Yeah I know, I'm here to get you (whispering) Me: Get me? (whispering)

Him: This is a small bed for 3 people (whispering) Me: I'm not going to have sex with you (whispering)

Him: Yeah I know.. I just want you next to me, wanna hold you the whole night til you pass out in my arms.. I'm thinking you've never experienced that, Just to feel safe in a man's arms

That made my chest warm a bit.. Him:

Come on let's go (whispering)

SOLE

I received a call from Sandi just when I parked at the hospital..

Me: That didn't take long

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Your crazy girlfriend is here and she wants to stab me!

I heard something banging..Me:

What?

Her: She's threatening to break the door, she has a knife and she's going to kill me!

Me: You got to be kidding me!

Her: I don't want to leave here in a coffin okay?Me: Okay calm down I'm coming

I hung up and hit the steering wheel a few times..Me: Fuck you Londi!

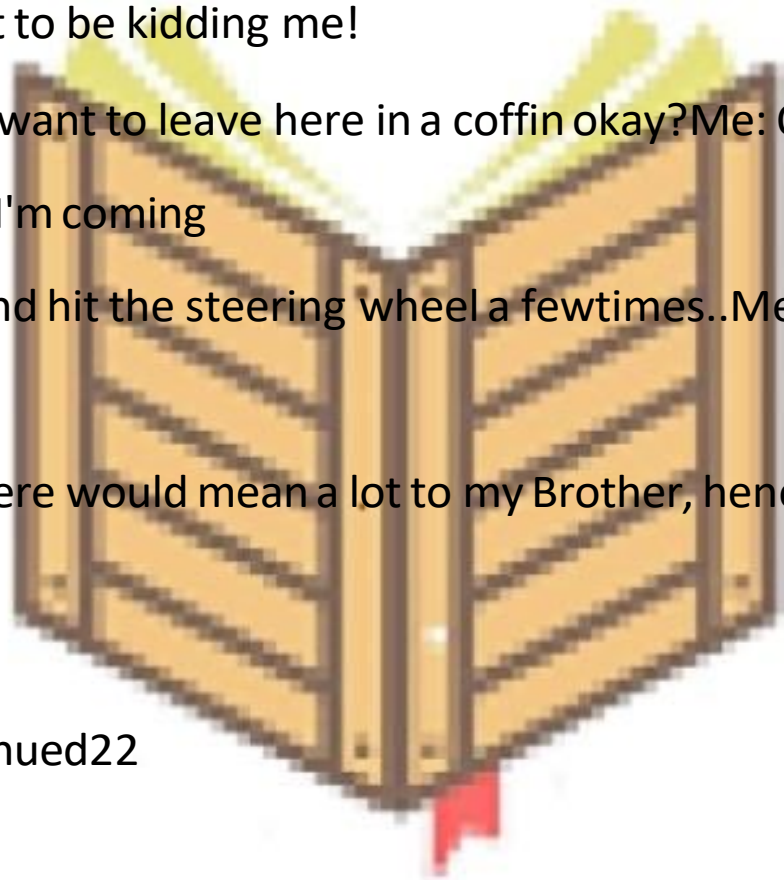
My being here would mean a lot to my Brother, he needs me right now..

.

To be continued22

NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM



How did we get here? From me cooling him down, a date at the mall to me ending up right in his arms? I would close my eyes for a minute then open them again just to make sure that I wasn't dreaming. I would have to run my hand on his arm to make sure that it wasn't the arm of the man who tormented me almost my life. This felt different laying on his chest listening to his breathing and his heart beat at the same time. How does Kelso do it? Be ruthless as he is and still have a heart that is full of affection underneath?

Makhathini has always been one sided. He has always been a monster that never changed, there is no love deep within all that ruthless. My leg across him felt safe, I felt safe that he wasn't going to wake up and decide to violate me sexually. I felt safe that his hands won't choke me until I pass out..

Him: What's on your mind?

Me: I thought you were sleeping

Him: I was but your leg across me is not really

helping

I chuckled and rose my head up looking at him...Me:

What's the plan?

Him: With what?

Me: Makhathini? This?

Him: All I want from you is assurance that when I deal with him, you will be mine after.

Me: Quid pro quo?

Him: Who told you that?

Me: I've come to realize that guys like you don't do anyone favours

Him: I'm not doing you a favour, I'll be doing it to have this moment with you everyday

Me: Why didn't your previous relationships work? Him:

Because I'm Kelso

I laughed..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How is this going to be different?

Him: It's going to be different because I've never

met anyone like you before, anyone who is not scared of me. Look at how relaxed you are, it's different because the first time when I met you. You stood your ground, you didn't see me as Kelso that everyone else saw, you not scared of me

Me: You damn right I'm not! He ran his hand on my thigh...

Him: Hard as it is, you not dropping your panties forme tonight and I respect that

Me: That little guy down there has a different story to tel

Him: We not used to having someone sleep with us without giving it up

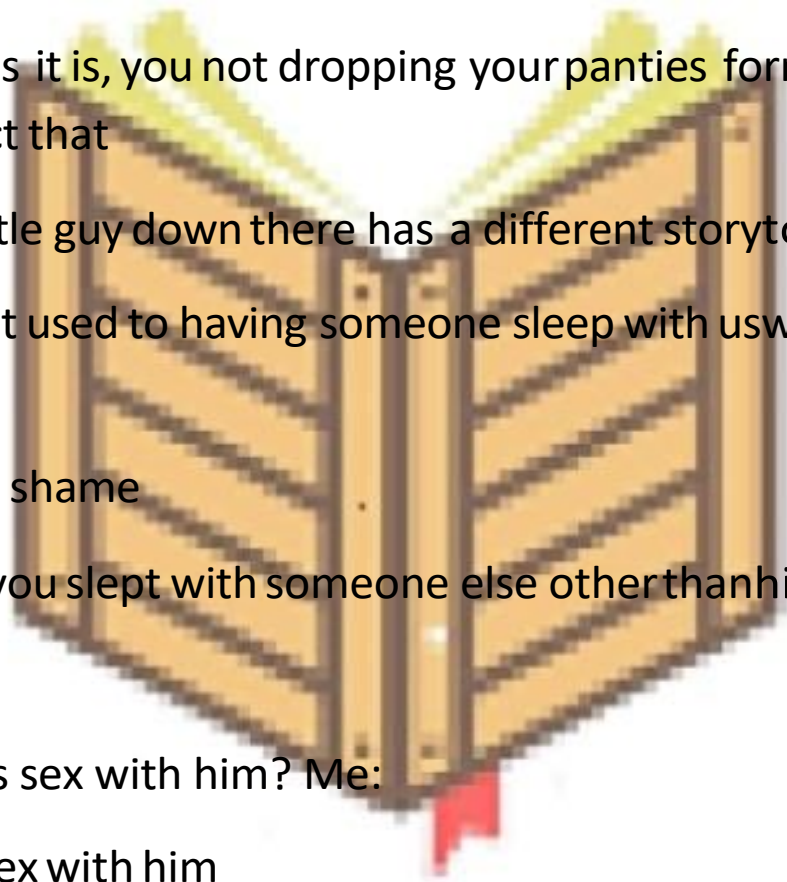
Me: What a shame

Him: Have you slept with someone else other than him?

Me: No

Him: How is sex with him? Me:

Sex is just sex with him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Did you ever come orenjoy?Me: Not
real y

Him: Damn!

Me: I'm used to it

He ran his hand up my thigh..

Me: I'm not going to sleep with youHim: I
know

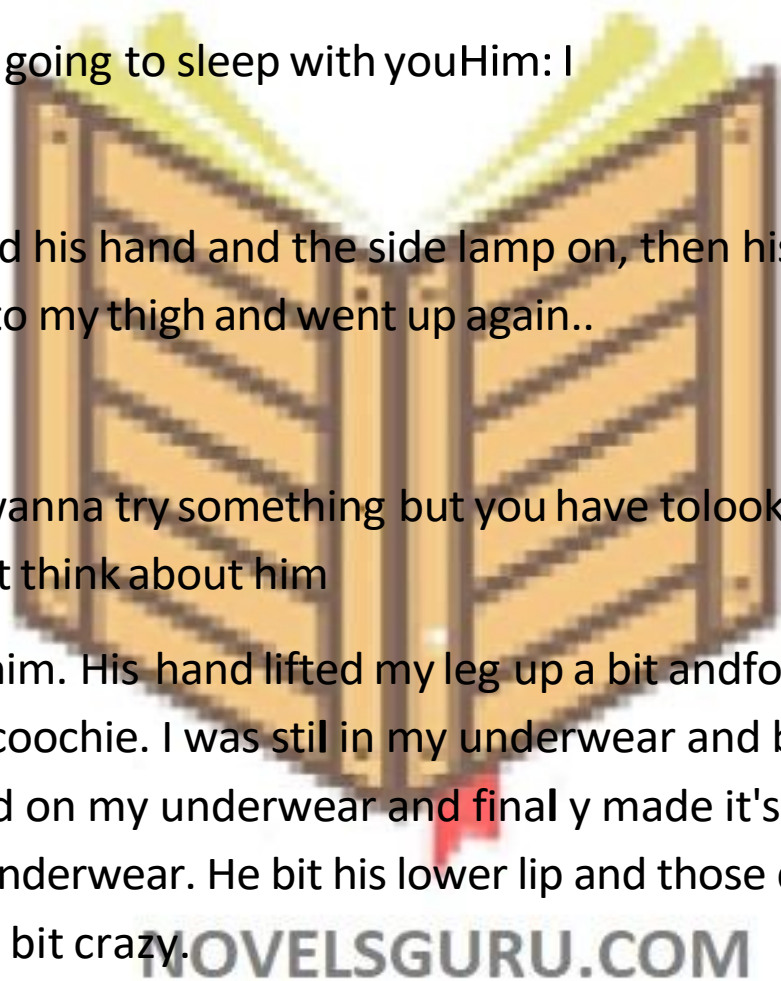
He stretched his hand and the side lamp on, then his hand
came back to my thigh and went up again..

Me: Kelso

Him: I just wanna try something but you have to look at me
so you don't think about him

I looked at him. His hand lifted my leg up a bit and found it's
way to my coochie. I was stil in my underwear and bra. He
ran his hand on my underwear and final y made it's way
inside my underwear. He bit his lower lip and those dimples
drove me a bit crazy.

He started off by gently massaging my clit, then



NOVELSGURU.COM

went down to my hole and rubbed me there until I started getting a bit wet. He gently pushed his indexfinger in, with his thumb focusing on pressing and playing around my clit. As his finger went in and out, his thumb pressed in more against my clit.

My body reacted differently to how it usually does when Makhathini initiates a sexual activity with me..

Him: You still with me? (Whispering)

nodded..

He continued until I got wet, and now my hormones came out to play. I closed my eyes

Him: No look at me!

looked at him..

A part of my thigh could feel him hardening, I don't know what was happening but my breathing escalated. I put my hand on his cheek and brought my lips closer to his. My warm breath hit against his lips, he still bit his lower lip..

Him: Tell me how it feels Me: I

feels good..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: It feels good?

I nodded repeatedly..

He gave me a kiss and then pulled my lower lip gently, he went on to run his tongue on my lower lip. The smell of cigarettes had left him since he brushed his teeth before we went to bed.. He had a minty fresh breath.. Maybe he had been sucking a mint too..

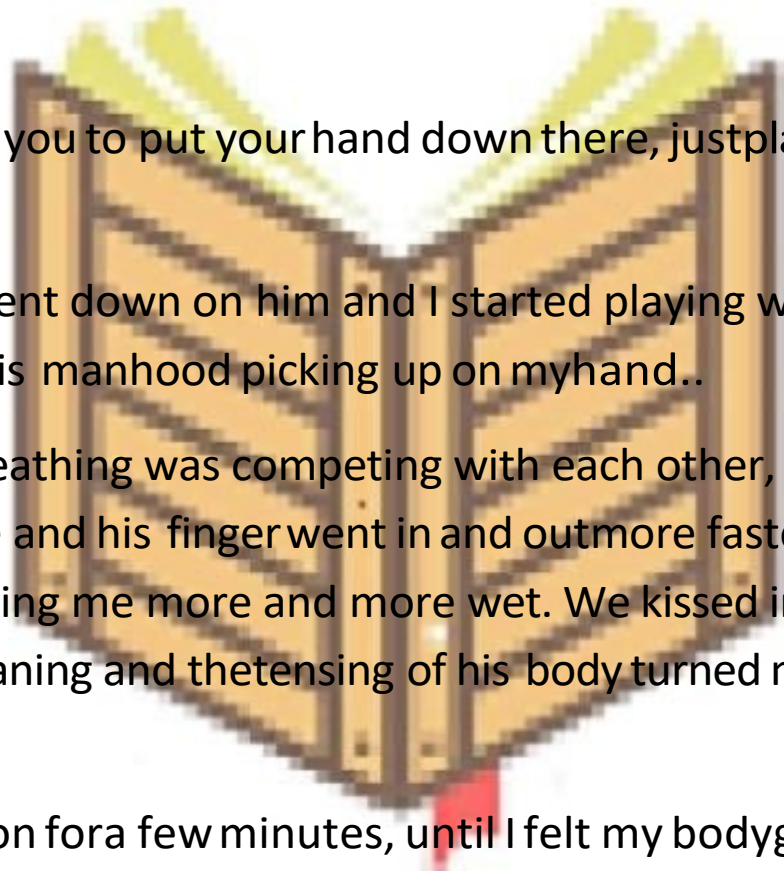
Him: I want you to put your hand down there, just play with it

My hand went down on him and I started playing with him. I could feel his manhood picking up on my hand..

Now our breathing was competing with each other, he picked up the pace and his finger went in and out more faster and harder making me more and more wet. We kissed in between and his moaning and the tensing of his body turned me on more and more..

That went on for a few minutes, until I felt my body giving up to the pleasure. I got more wet and released more juices.

When I felt myself coming, I



NOVELSGURU.COM

pressed my lips hard against his and tried very much to lock him out from coochie. When I finally came, I moved from his lips to his neck and released my last loud moan before catching my breath again.. I even had stopped playing with him.He took my hand down there and lowered his boxerbriefs. He wrapped my hand around his stiff cock and lowered the covers, the partial light that was provided by the lamp made me to see his black cock.

He wrapped his hand around mine and made me to jerk him off faster than my initial pace. His other hand squeezed and tapped my ass.

His moan increased as he closed his eyes and words failing to escape his lips because he was still biting his lower lip..

Him: Ohhhh babe you going to make me nut!

We continued doing that until he came, his semen shooting out. He moaned my name as his semen shot out, it was an erotic moment to witness.

Something I can't really explain in words but

NOVELSGURU.COM

beautiful to witness..

SANDISIWE

I heard Sole's voice. Hers was loud and he was calm as always. After maybe 5min the noise from her died out, I heard a knock...

Sole: Siwe it's me open

I took a deep breath then unlocked and opened. How relieved I was to see him, I got out and hugged him tight...

Him: It's okay

She was sitting on the couch folding her arms and bracing the moment with a little attitude.. We broke the hug

Him: Let me look at you.. Are you okay? I nodded repeatedly..

Me: I'm okay but she really scared me He kissed me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I'm sor y I put you through this

Me: I thought she was going to hurt me (crying)Londi:

iDrama engaka sisi

Him: I took the key that she had, if it makes you feelsafe tomor
ow morning I'm going to change the locks

Me: Okay that's better

Him: Remember... I love youMe: I

love you too

He looked at her..

Him: Does anyone know you here?

Londi: My family hates you, so farthey knowthat Iwent to
visit a friend

He looked at me.. Him: I'l

be right backHe looked at

Londi..

Him: Let's go fora ride so that we could talk aboutthis, I'm ready
to hear you



Londi stood up..

Londi: Final y! !

She walked up to us and pushed me out of the way..Londi:

Askies kancane!

Sole clenched his doors..Sole:

I'll be right back Me: Okay

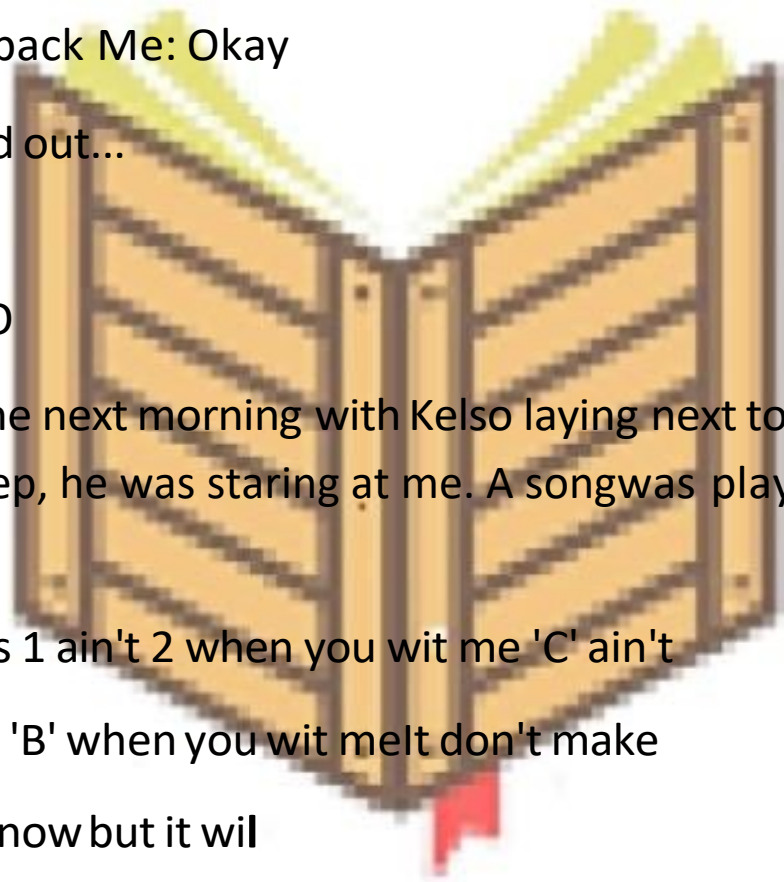
They walked out...

NONGCEBO

I woke up the next morning with Kelso laying next tome. He wasn't asleep, he was staring at me. A song was playing but not too loud..

"Baby 1 plus 1 ain't 2 when you wit me 'C' ain't after 'A' and 'B' when you wit melt don't make sense right now but it wil

Later on when you see how I make you feel



NOVELSGURU.COM

Regular ain't in my vocabulary

When it comes to love makin neither is missionary Positions

girl, pick one, better yet some

Never mind that we tryin a| the fun"l

smiled at him..

Me: Good morning

Him: Morning

Me: Smile I wanna see those dimplesHe

chuckled..

Him: How did you sleep?I took

a deep breath..

Me: I slept good

He gently stroked my hair..Him:

Usgindla va wami

I laughed..

Me: Do you have an extra toothbrush?Him:

Yeah I keeps me one ortwo



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Perfect.. Let's get up and prepare for the day

He got up first, and I got up after him. I followed him to the bathroom, he blocked my way at the door..

Me: Kelso stop (laughing)

I tried to get in but he still blocked my way.. Me: You so childish

He turned around and picked me up, then he placed me on top of the counter next to the sink. He opened the drawer and took out a toothbrush then handed it to me. He took his and the toothpaste. We smeared it on our brushes and started brushing our teeth with him in between my legs. He got his toothbrush out of his mouth and landed it on my cheeks..

Me: I'm going to spit on you Him:

Now that's disgusting

He got me down and stood behind me as we continued brushing our teeth. We looked at each other on the mirror, he winked at me and I winked at him..

SOLE

Sole stretched his hand with his phone in his hand, we were taking a selfie together..

Me: I think that angle is good He kept

on moving his hand.. Me: Babe stop

that angle is fine

He continued.. I sighed and rolled my eyes, he chuckled..

Him: Okay I think this is fine

I smiled and laid my head on his chest as he took the selfie..

Him: And it's done Me:

Let me see

I looked at it.. Me:

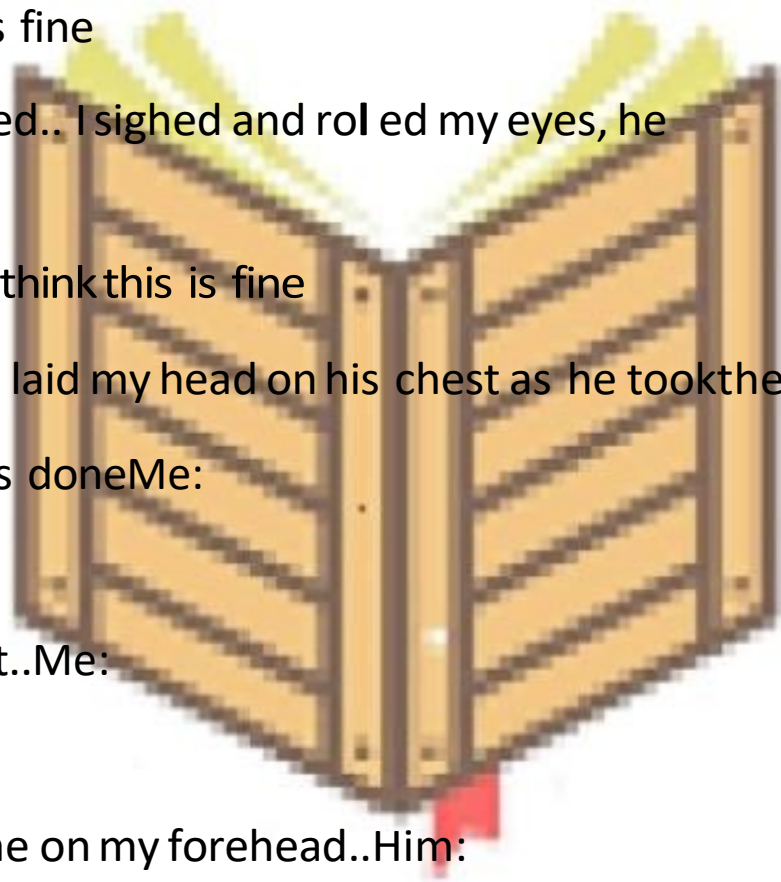
It's good

He kissed me on my forehead.. Him:

It's perfect

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: So how did you know my pin?



Him: I saw you unlocking your phone this other time by putting in your pin

Me: Ohw

Him: Yeah it's not that deep

Me: And the pregnancy situation?

Him: With what you told me about your life, it wasn't hard to put A and B together. Usually a girl would ask about a condom but you didn't. Again, I put A and B together

Me: Makes sense

Him: Are you ready to go? Me:

I'm ready

I took my bag and then we left..

.

To be continued

[08/24, 12:54] : 23

NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Kelso drove us back home later on after we had breakfast. I truly enjoyed spending time with his family and I think Bongeka did too.

I finally had that sense of belonging, felt the warmth, the love and the closeness that they shared. As we weren't treated like strangers, it was almost as if like we were already a part of the family. The beautiful side of life that I never thought existed.. I looked at him as he drove, concentrating much on the road and on the song that was currently playing..

His seriousness was breath taking, not forgetting those everlasting dimples that always came out to play without him even trying hard... He will be picking us up again later on at night for another sleepover..

SANDISIWE

Sole and I went out for breakfast, after that we went to the library. I needed a few novels to keep my mind busy so I can start writing again. Needed

some bit of motivation from my favorite authors and also to exercise my mind. I've been going through so much in a short period of time that I neglected the one thing that I loved doing the most. One thing that grounds my mind from thinking a lot until I depress myself. My reading was short lived by something that Sole was doing. He had taken about 5 novels from different authors, all based on thriller/suspense. He would open the novel, read the introduction then closed it and opened it at the back to read the ending..

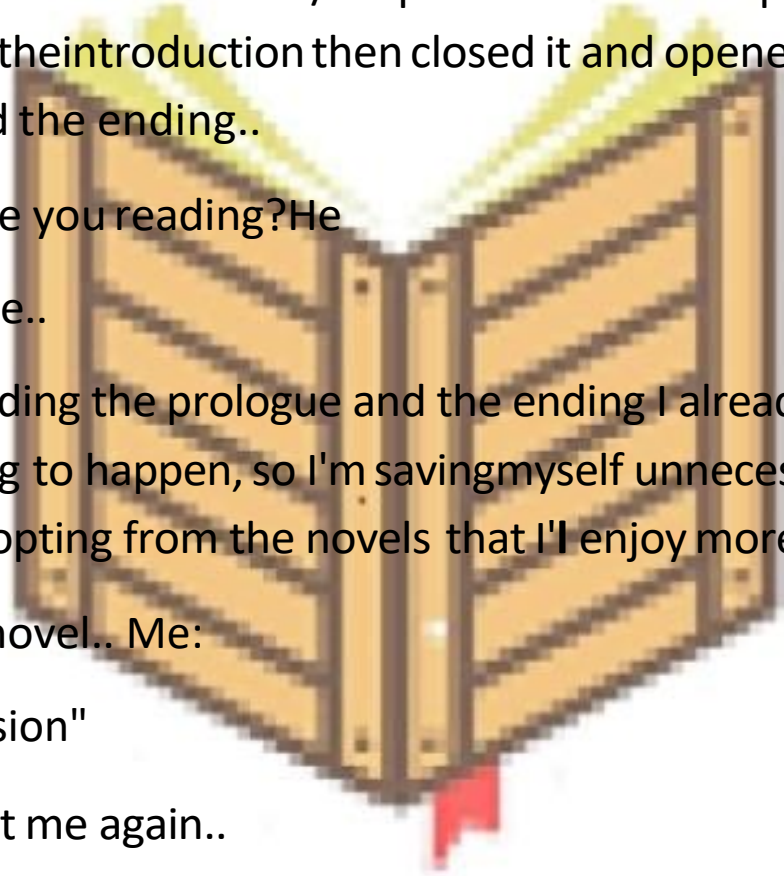
Me: How are you reading? He looked at me..

Him: By reading the prologue and the ending I already know what's going to happen, so I'm saving myself unnecessary reading by opting from the novels that I'll enjoy more

I took one novel.. Me:

"The obsession"

He looked at me again..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Let me guess, a man obsessed with a woman? She finds out a bad trait about him then she dumps him. He can't take that and then starts stalking her, trying to get her back by being obsessed with her?

Him: No

Me: What do you mean no?

Him: His actual y obsessed with his job of being a detective so much that he starts setting up innocent people to make himself the good cop all the time so he can get glory and praise from his colleagues and superior. He's a narcissist

Me: Yeah right.. You got all that from reading the prologue and the ending only?

Him: Yes

I opened the book and started reading the prologue..I went on to the ending

Me: But Babe the prologue does give away anything, the ending is just about him going to jail so how did you get to that conclusion that the obsession is with his job rather than a woman

Him: He talks about himself on the prologue and his job of being a detective, self praise at times can be greatly linked to being a narcissist. He thinks highly of himself

Me: Woow

I got another book..

Me: Tel me about this one

Him: Siwe I'm not your Google, read the book Babe if you wanna know more about it

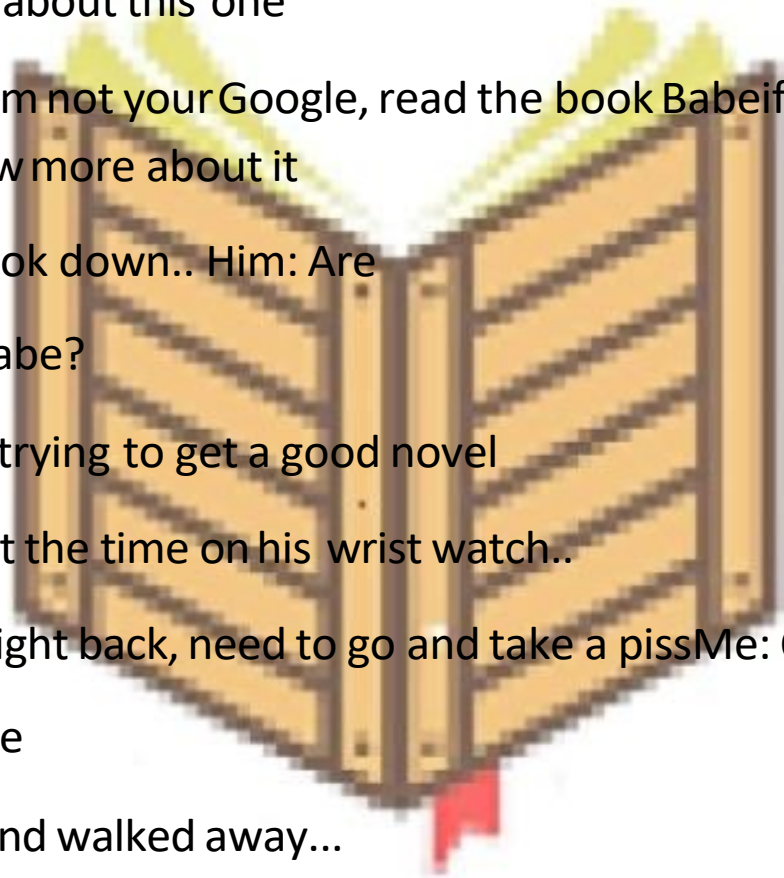
I put the book down.. Him: Are you done Babe?

Me: I'm stil trying to get a good novel

He looked at the time on his wrist watch..

Him: I'll be right back, need to go and take a piss
Me: Okay you'll find me here

He smiled and walked away...



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Me: Did you have fun last night? Her:

Yes I did

Me: I'm glad you did

I took my phone and called Makhathini but he didn't pick up. He's probably ashamed that the great Makhathini had been attacked. He thinks of himself as a God, he thinks that one one can tough him.. I heard a knock at the door, I went to open and it was Banza..

Him: Good morning Me:

Hey

He hugged me..

Him: How are you holding up? Me: I'm

actually good and you? Him: I'm good

too

He looked at me.. Him:

You seem happy

Me: getting a breather from Makhathini is surely



NOVELSGURU.COM

making me happy

Him: Is it?

Me: Yes

Him: I stopped by last night, the house was dark
Me: We went to bed early

Him: Is it because I also called, you didn't return my calls

Me: Banza please don't show up announced, people have eyes around here and I don't want Makhathini hearing things when he gets discharged. I don't wanna put you in harm's way, you know how ruthless he is

Him: I understand
Me:

Thank you

Him: I guess I should get going then
Me: I

think that's better

Him: Bye

Me: Bye



NOVELSGURU.COM

KELSO

I got back home to find Londi's mother crying, my Grandmother was comforting her.

Me: Sanibonani They
greeted back...

Me: Is everything okay?

Londi's mom started shaking her head..Me:

What's wrong?

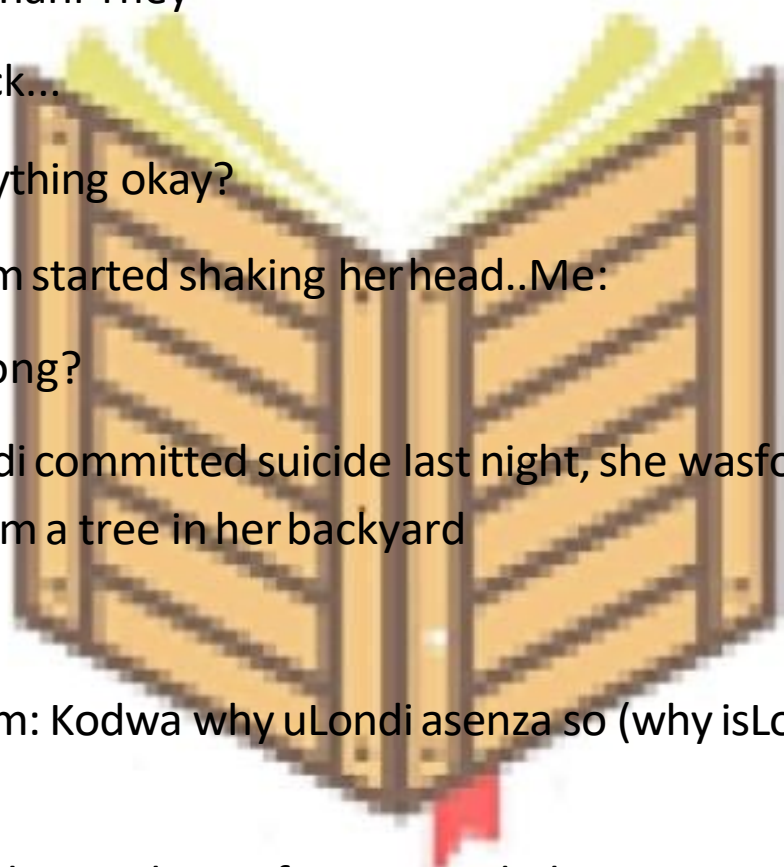
Grams: Londi committed suicide last night, she was found hanging from a tree in her backyard

Me: What?

Londi's Mom: Kodwa why uLondi asenza so (why is Londi doing this to us)

Grams: Londi was always free spirited, she never came across as someone who had problems

Londi's Mom: She knew how to handle the difficulties of life, I don't know why she resorted to



NOVELSGURU.COM

this.. I never saw it coming Me:

Excuse me

I walked out and called Sole.. Him:

Kels?

Me: Did you kill Londi? Him:

Huh?

Me: Londi committed suicide, apparently she was found hanging from a tree at the back yard of her house this morning

Him: I have no idea what you talking about, the last time I saw Londi was yesterday yes. She came here and bothered me, she came twice. We actually drove up to a restaurant last night, we ate and talked then I called her an Uber. I couldn't take her home with because I had someone else in my house. She even texted me a whole bunch of bullshit when she arrived at home. Told me that I hurt her and what not. Part of it I blame myself, I didn't think the breakup was going to lead to this

Me: So you had nothing to do with it?

Sole: I had nothing to do with it, I have an alibi. Cameras outside the restaurant even captured her getting in that Uber

Me: Okay her mom is here

Him: I can only imagine what she's going through
Me: She's broken

Him: I can't even send flowers because she hates me

Me: Oh well what can we say

Him: I have to go I'll check on you later on
Me:

Alright be cool man

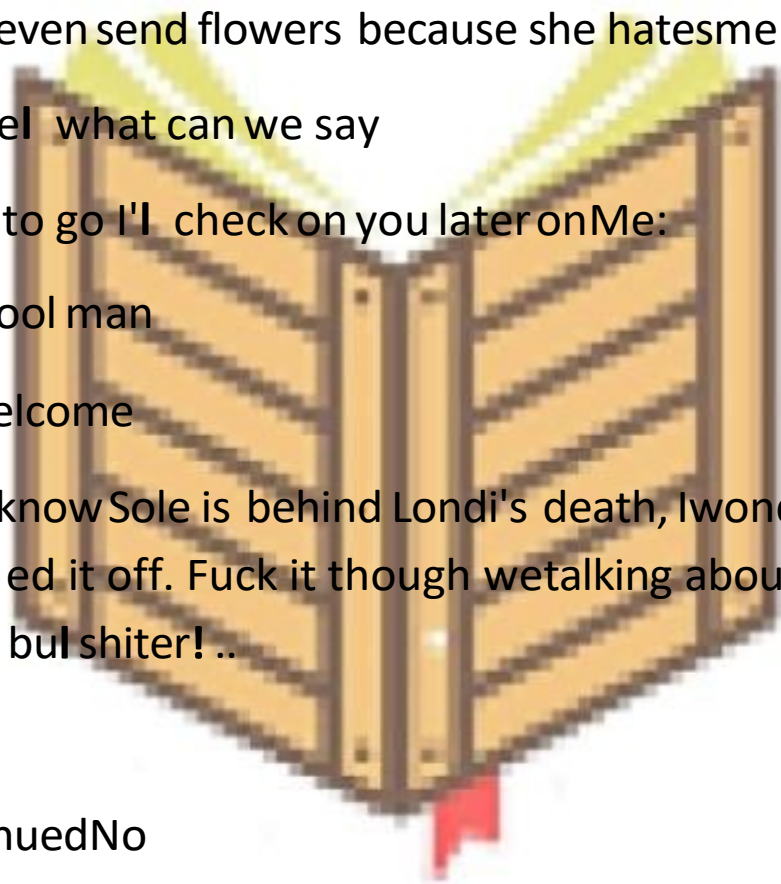
Him: You welcome

I hung up. I know Sole is behind Londi's death, I wonder how he pulled it off. Fuck it though we talking about Sole here, he's a bulshiter! ..

.

To be continued

No
edits



NOVELSGURU.COM

[08/24, 12:55] : 24

SOLE

After my outing with Siwe, we drove back home I had a surprise for her, I'm very sure that she's going to like it. I unlocked the door then she walked in, I closed the door and she led the way to the lounge. I stood at the doorway as she met her surprise. When we were out I had someone deliver all the hard copies of her books that I bought at the bookstore. They were laid out on the couch, with a MacBook and a typewriter on the table

She literally dropped her bag when she saw that, with her hands covering her mouth..

She turned and looked at me.. Her:

Ohh my word!

Me: As your new number 1 fan I th-

Before I could even finish my speech, she literally jumped on me and kissed me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You like the surprise?

Her: I don't even know what to say I put her down..

She walked up to the table..

Me: The type writer will help you with original manuals of every book you write, I also contacted this other publisher that I know. She is very interested in working with you, she read a copy of your book. She's willing to meet up with you tomorrow morning

Her: Sole a MacBook is expensive, it ranges from what? 14 000?

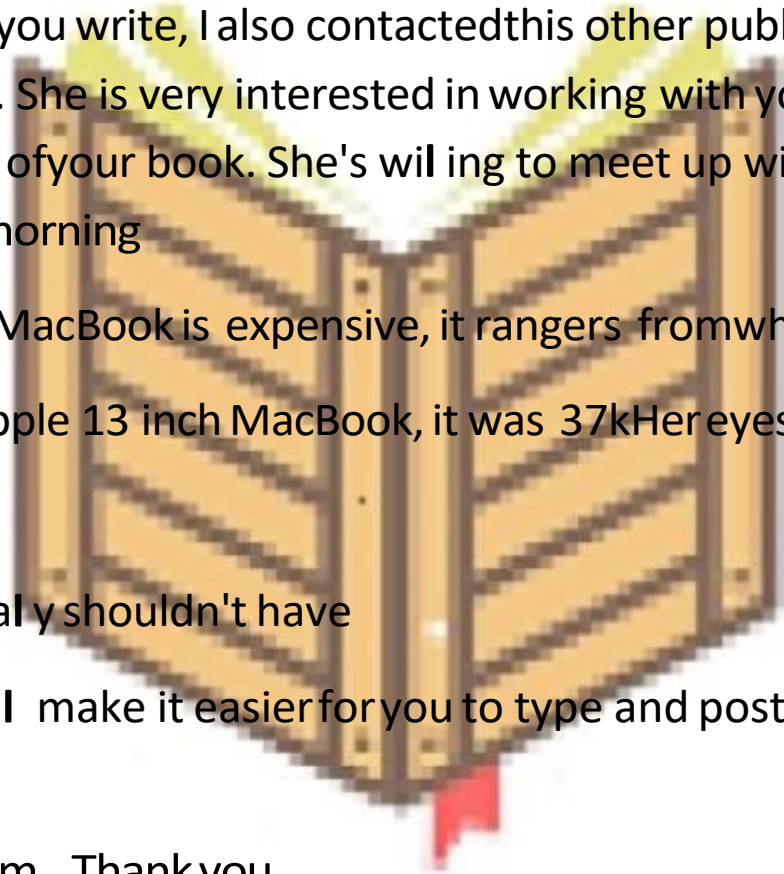
Me: It's a apple 13 inch MacBook, it was 37k Her eyes widened..

Her: You really shouldn't have

Me: Well it'll make it easier for you to type and post on Facebook

Her: Wow I'm.. Thank you

My phone rang, it was my Brother..



Me: I have to take this, it's my brother I walked away and answered..

Me: Hello? Him:

It is done

Me: I'm sorry I didn't show up last night, had an emergency

Him: The school told me about the 2 culprits, It's Bongeka Zulu and a Nessi Bhembe

Me: Nessi Bhembe?

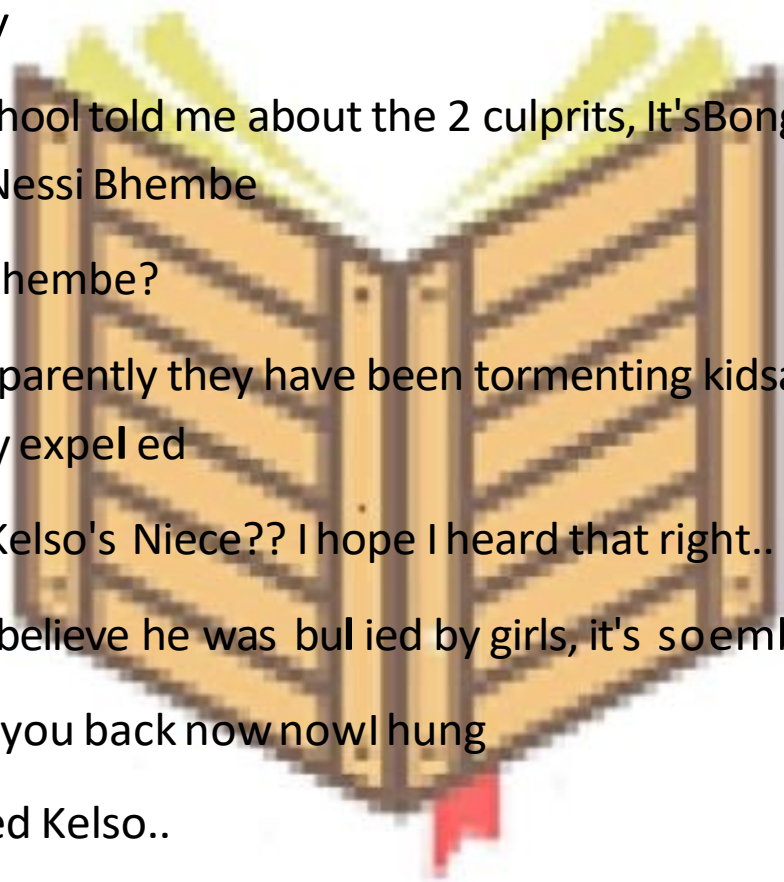
Him: Yes apparently they have been tormenting kids at their school, they expelled

Nessi as in Kelso's Niece?? I hope I heard that right..

Him: I can't believe he was bullied by girls, it's so embarrassing

Me: I'll call you back now now I hung up and called Kelso..

Him: Are you calling to confess your sins? I know you killed her



Me: Nessi is in troubleHim:

How?

Me: My nephew Matthew Botha was bul ied byNessi and he died last night

He kept quiet..

Me: Kelso?

Him: I recognized the surname, just didn't know hewas related to you.. I'm so mad and disappointed, I've always taught Nessi to treat other people withrespect

Me: I know how you anti bul ying, I'm not even going to blame you. This is not your fault and I don't blame Nessi. Bul ying is not taboo, unfortunately Matthew couldn't take the hit

Kelso: I'm deeply sor y man

Me: It's cool. J ust know my Brother won't take this lying down, he might turn her in. Nessi is 16, soon to be 17. The judge might not have mercy he mighttrial her as an adult. She's looking at a sentence forsecond degree murderso get her a judge who wil

NOVELSGURU.COM

at least lay this out as an involuntary manslaughter she might get 12 months imprisonment

Kelso: I'm not saving her from this one, she has to face the consequences of her actions

Him: I have to go, I'll hit you up later Kelso:

Take it easy man

Him: Cool

NONGCEBO

I was checking Kelso on Facebook. His last picture got quite a lot of noise, especially from ladies. I liked how he replied to them.

It was all "Thank you", no sign of any flirting.

There was one girl named Power, she was the only one who replied with a paragraph. Nonetheless Kelso just reacted with a heart, such a savage move especially since the lady went all out. I put a profile picture then sent him a request and liked his picture..



NOVELSGURU.COM

As much as I don't want Banza getting hurt, but also at the same time I don't wanna lead him on. More especially since now something is starting between Kelso and I. I don't wanna give him any false hope so I sent him a text:

"Hey

I'm sorry that I reacted in a rude manner earlier today. The honest truth is that, I think I'm falling for someone and I don't wanna lead you on to something that won't happen between us. You are a very good friend, I hope this won't ruin our friendship. More especially because I care for you a lot as a friend"

KELSO

After that call with Sole, my spirit was down. I am not going to save Nessi from this, I'm not going to save her and make her feel like what she did was right. Another child tragically passed on, she caused a family great pain and heartache. She must

account to her actions. I received a call from my father..

Me: Pops

Him: Why do I feel like I'm being ignored
Me: I've been busy

Him: What's happening in your world?

Me: Nessi bullied some school mate of hers, he committed suicide

My father laughed..

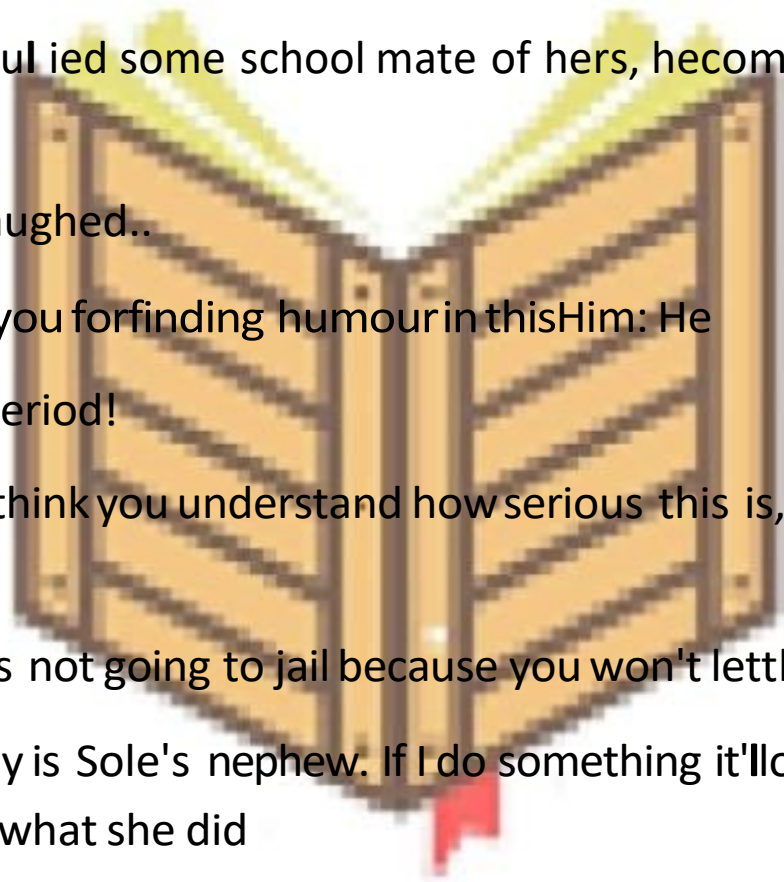
Me: Thank you for finding humour in this
Him: He was weak period!

Me: I don't think you understand how serious this is, Nessi can go to jail

Him: Nessi is not going to jail because you won't let that happen

Me: This boy is Sole's nephew. If I do something it'll look like I am supporting what she did

Him: I told you to cut Sole loose, that bro is an



explosion waiting to happen

Me: Sole is my best friend, I'm not cutting him loose
Him: Take it from me, Sole is dangerous

Me: Sole is not going anywhere

Him: Anyway I want you to stop by today
Me: I'll do that

Him: Cool
Me:

Sharp

SANDISIWE

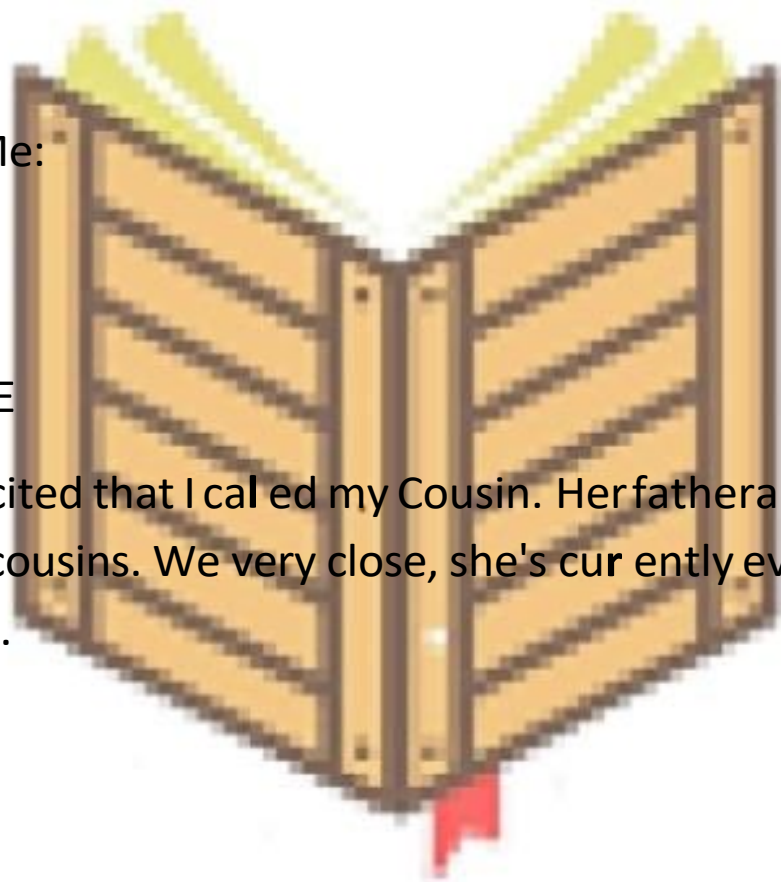
I was so excited that I called my Cousin. Her father and my Father are cousins. We very close, she's currently even my best friend..

Her: Cuz

Me: Cuz

Her: How are you? Me: I'm

good and you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Not so much

Me: What's wrong? Mntaka tat'Gxaba?

Her: Eish mntaka tat'Gxaba this morning when I was going through my mother's things. I found a picture of her, it's an old picture of her and two kids. A little girl and a baby boy

Me: Did you ask her about it? Her: She flipped out

Me: It's not a picture of you, her and Cuz Samkelo?

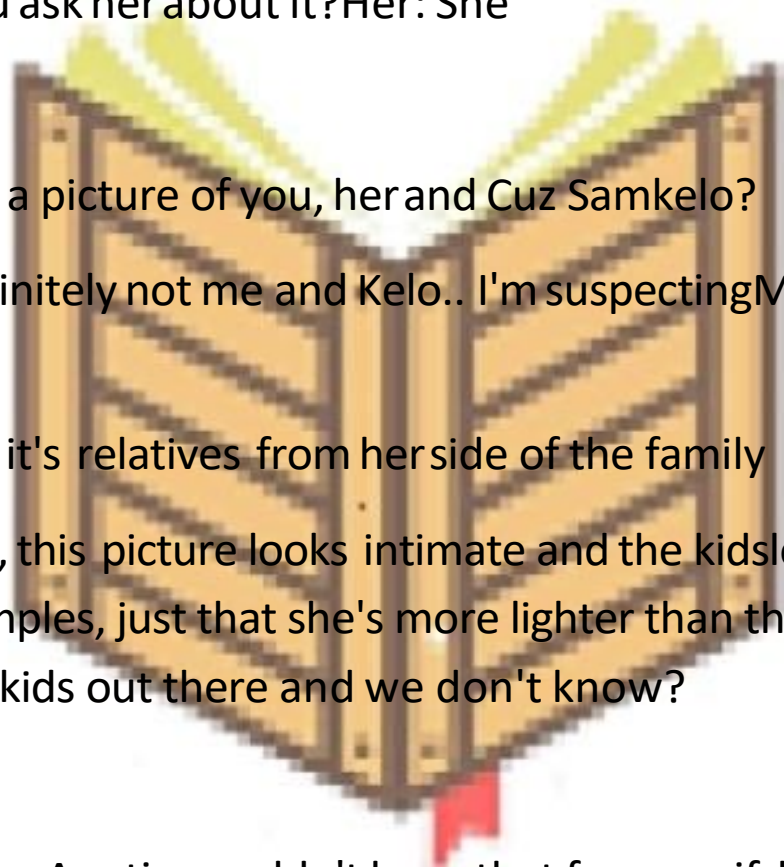
Her: It's definitely not me and Kelo.. I'm suspecting Mom is living a double life

Me: Maybe it's relatives from her side of the family

Her: I doubt, this picture looks intimate and the kids look like her. The dimples, just that she's more lighter than them. What if mom has kids out there and we don't know?

I laughed..

Me: I doubt... Auntie wouldn't keep that from us, if she had other kids we would've told us



Her: This picture doesn't give me peace, I'll have to ask Dad about it

Me: You won't let this go right? Her:

Never!

Me: Anyway I've called you to see if we can meet up this afternoon, have lunch and catch up. I have so much to tell you

Her: Okay we will meet up Me:

Okay Bye cuz I love you

Her: I love you too.. See you later

STALLION

I looked around and then I looked at him. He had on a white suit, had 2 gold chains around his neck. A gold ring on his little finger. Two of his guards stood at the door..

Me: What am I doing here?

Him: You and your friends stole money from Carlos, that money belonged to me

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: I'm sorry I guess.. We didn't know it belonged to you

Him: I am a very forgiving man but you boys disrespected me

Me: We will pay you your money back, we will even double it

Him: Don't insult me, what's 50 grand to an Italian mafia like me?

Me: Exactly what am I doing here?

Him: Because out of all your friends, you were easy to find. You are the weakest link

Me: I didn't know that.. Thank you for the information

Him: There's a way that you boys can make peace with the Italians

Me: How?

Him: Heard of the Dark Lords? Me:

Fancy me please

Him: A group of rich Italian mafias, I am a part of it.

NOVELSGURU.COM



Though we a family but we are also enemies

Me: I stil don't understand how this is relevant tome

Him: I want you boys to cor ect your wrongs by doing me a favour

Me: I'm listening

Him: I want you boys to go after one of my own, that's how you wil repay me my money and make peace

I sighed..

Him: I want you to go after Andre Martinez, then I wil forget about you boys stealing my money

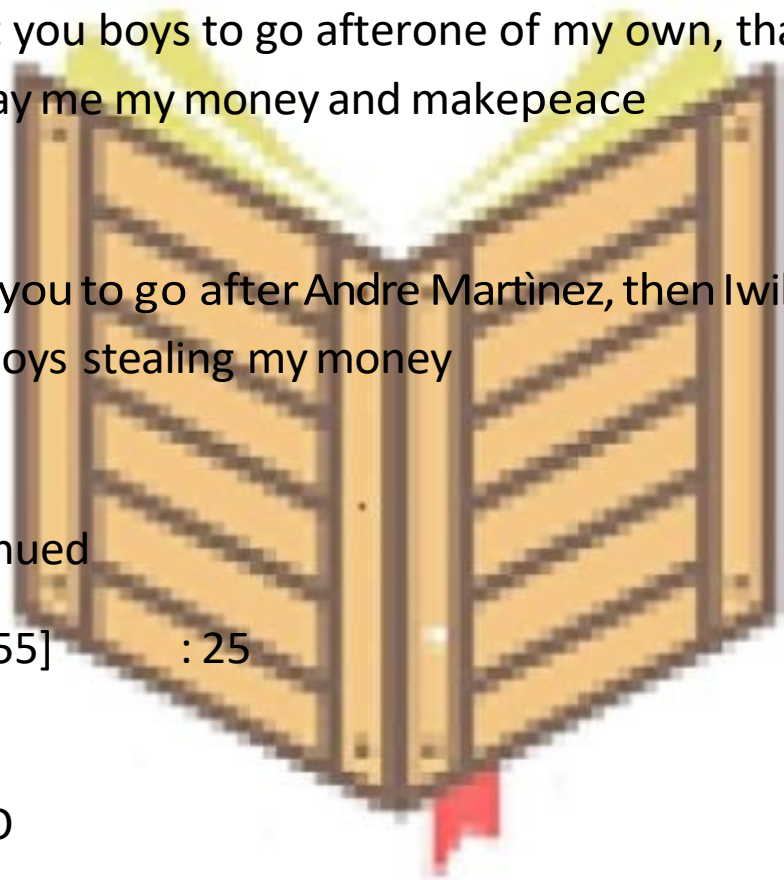
.

To be continued

[08/24, 12:55] : 25

NONGCEBO

Makhathini final y cal ed and al owed Me and



Bongeka to visit him at the hospital. He sent some money, then asked Banza to come and fetch us, we'll start by getting him some food before going to the hospital. Banza was awful y quiet, Bongeka asked if we could also get her some toiletries..

Me: You okay?

Banza: There's someone else right?!

stopped..

Me: Yes Banza:

Who?

I cleared my throat..Me:

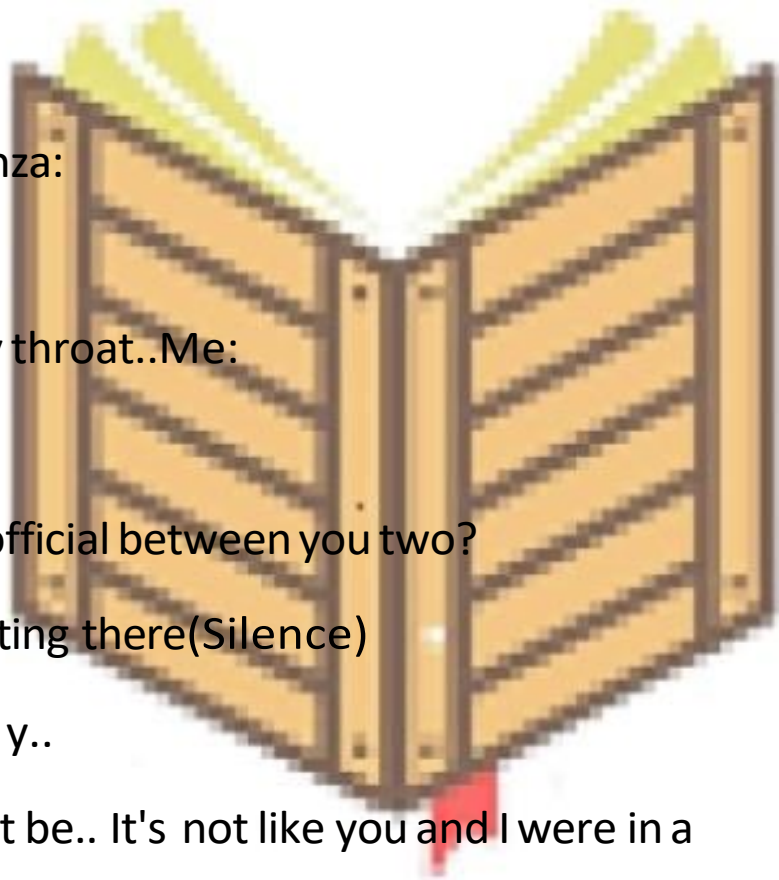
Kelso

Banza: It's official between you two?

Me: We getting there(Silence)

Me: I'm sor y..

Banza: Don't be.. It's not like you and I were in a relationship



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: So our friendship is still okay? Banza: Our friendship is okay

Me: I know you don't like him

Banza: I just don't want you moving from Makhathini and then getting hurt again, but maybe Kelso is bad to the world and he will be different to you. As long as you are happy that's all that matters. Plus Kelso is a better candidate to take down Makhathini, just don't get caught in the crossfire. Be very careful

Me: I will be.. Thank you

Banza: Are you with him because you want to be with him or because you are using him

Me: At first I wanted to use him, but now.. I'm not so sure, I think I might be falling for him

Banza: You deserve love, genuine love. I hope this will be a new beginning for you. A better one

Me: Thank you very much for understanding Banza:

You welcome

NOVELSGURU.COM

SANDISIWE

Sole and I were having a good fuck in the lounge on the couch. He was sitting on the couch and I was on top of him. His hands were around my waist, mine around his neck and my tit buried deep in his mouth. This might just become my favorite sex position. Going up and down on him is also sexually beneficial on my part. It tickles and rubs my clit, with his dick deep inside of me reaching places that have never been reached before.

My phone rang next to us, I took a glance at it and it was my cousin..

Me: Ba.. Babe.. It's my cousin .

I stopped and then took the phone..

Me: I'm supposed to meet up with her for lunch Him:

Answer

Me: I'll get back to her

Him: I don't think she's going to stop calling

I answered..Me:

Cuz

Sole leaned back on the couch with his hands on my butt. He lifted me up a bit and I fell on him, he started pumping me from underneath..

Cuz: Hey.. Calling to tell you that I'm leaving home bit my lower lip and closed my eyes...

Cuz: Cuz are you still there?Me: I'm here.. I'm here..

Cuz: Are you busy or something?Me:

Fuccck Sole (whispering) Cuz: Huh?

Me: I'm still here Cuz

Cuz: I'm driving to our spot nowMe:

Okay.. Okay...

Cuz: I have so much to tell youSole

started pumping hard..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ohhh Shi i t! !

Cuz: Sandi?

Me: Can I cal -

Sole whispered in my other ear.. Sole: If you hang up I'm going to stopHe kissed me on my cheek..

Me: What do you.. What do you want to tel me?

Cuz: So I met this otherguy a while back and I thinkI like him, but you know I have a boyfriend and everything so..

Me: Hm m m m m m m ..

Cuz: Ohh my word are you mastubating?Me: No..

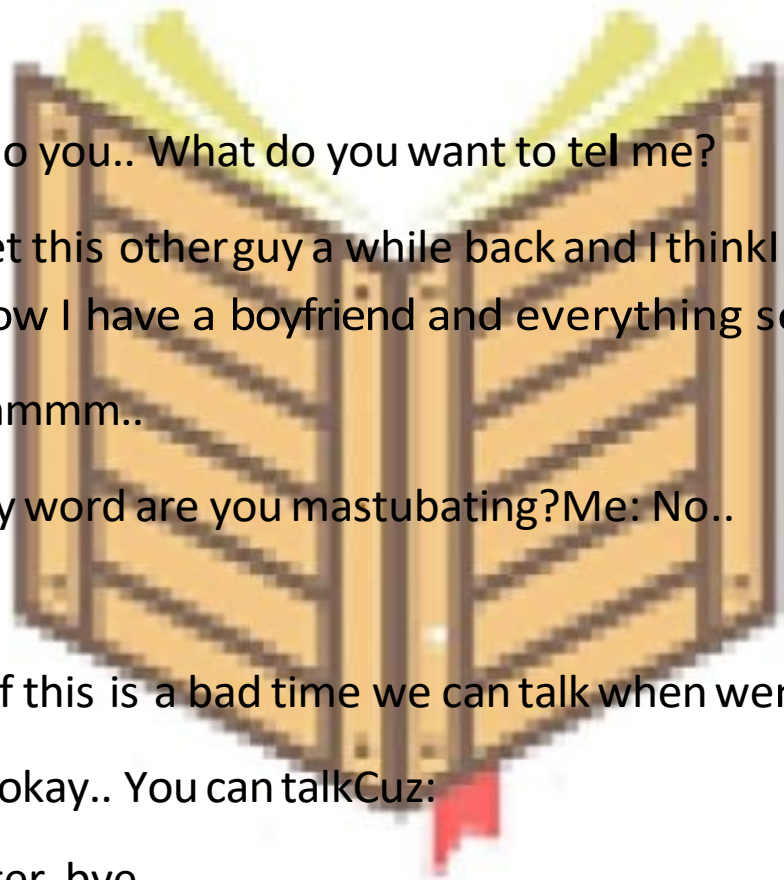
No exactly

Cuz: Real y if this is a bad time we can talk when wemeet

Me: No it's okay.. You can talkCuz:

We'I talk later, bye

She hung. I put my phone away then kissed him..



KELSO

I checked my Facebook and saw that Nongcebo sent me a friend request, I accepted..

Grams: So tel me a bit about Nongcebo Me:

What do you wanna hear about her? Grams: She seems like a nice girl

Me: She is nice

Grams: Not that Power wasn't nice but.. Nongcebo I think I like her

Me: I'm glad you like her because she's going to be here for a long time

Grams: I'm glad to hear that

(Silence)

Grams: When are you going to forgive Nessi? Me: The boy that she bullied died last night She closed her eyes..

Grams: My dear Lord



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: If the family decides to take action, she will be charged with second degree murder

Grams: I need to start praying

Me: Prayer is not going to save her Ma, she will have to account for her actions plus it's Sole's nephew

Grams: What she did was wrong, but she won't survive jail

Me: There's nothing I can do Ma, she needs to understand that her actions have consequences

I looked at the time..

Me: I have to go, I'm meeting up with the boys

NONGCEBO

We walked in at the hospital my heart was beating fast.

Bongeka decided to stay in the waiting area, she didn't want to see him. He was lying on the bed with a cast on his leg. I put the food on the table..

Me: Sawubona

NOVELSGURU.COM

He looked at me.. Makhathini:

MaKhumalo Me: Unjani? (How are you)

Makhathini: Kwa ngcono nje ngoba usukhona (It's better now that you here)

(Silence)

Makhathini: Umuntu akasatholi no Kiss (I don't even get a kiss)
I kissed him, for the first time I was very disgusted with him..

Makhathini: Uphi uBongeka? (Where is Bongeka)

Me: uhleli eWaiting area no Banza (she is in the waiting area with Banza)

He nodded...

He extended his hand and touched my coochie..

Makhathini: Usavalile izinto zami? (Are you not giving it to anyone)

Me: Ngisavalile (I'm not giving it to anyone)

To avoid more awkwardness I pulled the small bench and sat down..

Me: Bathi uphuma nini? (When are you discharged)

Makhathini: Kuthiwa next week

Me: Okay

He held my hand..

Makhathini: Makhumalo ngifuna silungise izinto (I want us to fix things)

I kept quiet..

Makhathini: Ngiyakuthanda Makhumalo (I love you) I faked a smile..

Me: Nami futhi (Me too)

KELSO

I was the first one to arrive at the pub, Stal ion joined me after a few minutes and Sole was the one to arrive later. So unlike him to be late.. Stal ion is the one who asked for this meeting..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Why did you call us?

Station: The Italians got to me

Sole:

Station: Cosa Nostra doesn't want his 50k back, instead he wants us to do him a favour that will mend things between us and them

Sole: What favour?

Station: He wants us to go for an Andre Martinez

Me: Who the fuck is that?

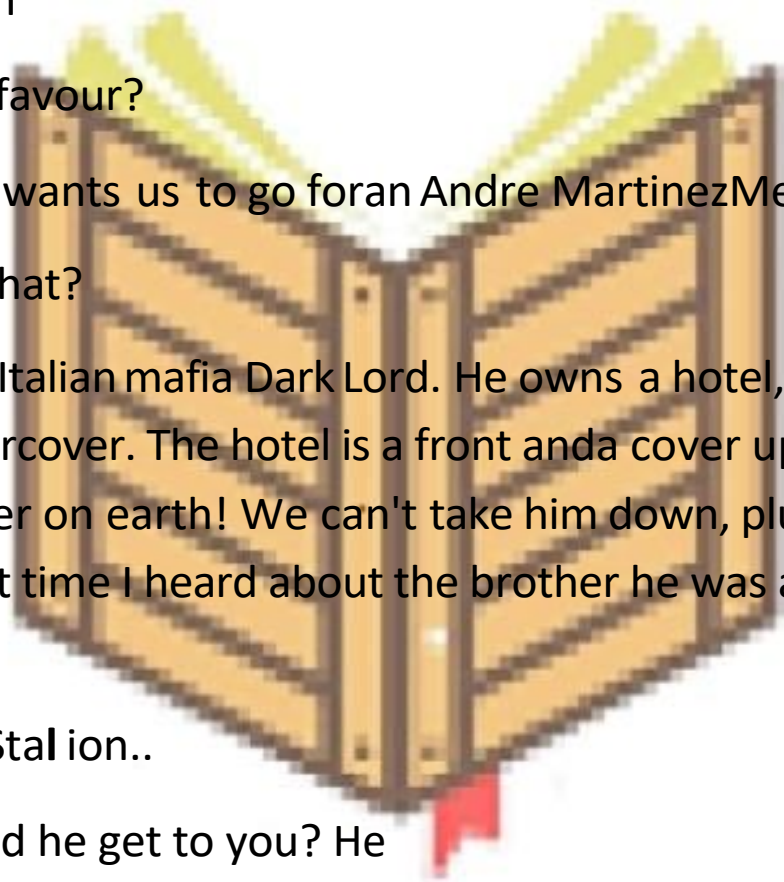
Sole: Some Italian mafia Dark Lord. He owns a hotel, does illegal things undercover. The hotel is a front and a cover up, richest Italian fucker on earth! We can't take him down, plus he has a brother, last time I heard about the brother he was arrested. We can't do it

I looked at Station..

Me: How did he get to you? He

shrugged his shoulders..

Sole:
Weakest link



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Station you are a liability, how the hell are we still keeping you?

Sole: Ohw sorry about Londi by the way Station:

What about Londi?

Sole: She committed suicide last night

Station: Londi would never consider that, you did it didn't you?

Sole: Where's the proof? Station

ion: Son of a bitch!

Station got up and physically attacked Sole. Me: Sit the fuck down man!

He grabbed Sole by his jacket.. Station

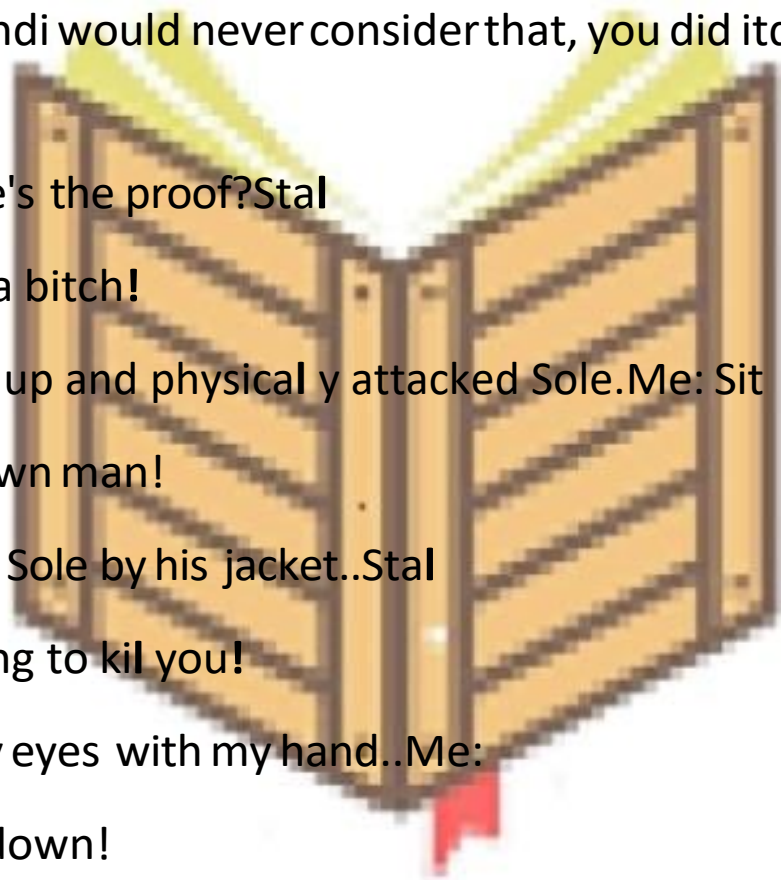
ion: I'm going to kill you!

I rubbed my eyes with my hand.. Me:

Station sit down!

Sole: Get your motherfucking hands off me Station:

Or what?



Stal ion punched him across the face..

Me: What a perfect way to fucken enjoy my day..Stal ion sit down!

He attempted to punch Sole again but Sole blocked the punch. He stood Sole up stil grabbing his jacket.I took my can and sipped from it, people were now watching..

Stal ion: You fucken kil ed her!

He tried punching Sole but Sole moved, Stal ion staggered around almost fal ing. He got his balanceback and went at Sole again. Sole pinned Stal ion's hand against his back and put him facedown against the pool table

Sole: I'm not going to do this with you over somebitch that wasn't worth it!

Sole released him. Stal ion looked at Sole..Sole: Fuck you I don't need you!

He looked at me..

Stal ion: Fuck you too I don't need you

Me: What the fuck did I do?

Station walked out, I looked at Sole..Me:

What the fuck did I do?

.

To be continued

[08/24, 12:56] : 26

[Please be advised that this insert and the removed part of it was sponsored by Bontle_Deigh. Please find the link to her YouTube channel below to subscribe]

.

.

. KELSO

Sole and I hung out for the whole entire afternoon, no make that Nongcebo's text disturbed our hanging out. She had texted me that Makhathini will be discharged next week, and that she doesn't know what's going to happen to us. For the fact that I had

NOVELSGURU.COM

promised her that I was going to take her from him, I knew that I had to act. I remember her telling me about Bhubesi, the Inyanga (Traditional healer) that Makhathini consults with whilst we were at the mall. Bhubesi is very notorious for using his gift the cruel way. By helping people with their evil acts, knowing a person like Makhathini he will go to him when he gets discharged. This fight between Makhathini and I will be intense, so I need to reintroduce myself to him again. I asked Sole to accompany me to Bhubesi, he didn't decline. Sole has been my boy for years now, we always have each other's backs...

We parked at the gate..

Sole: Before we do this, I need to tell you something
Me: What?

Sole: Remember Sandisiwe the author?
Me:

Yeah?

Sole: I'm with her now and I need you to back off. My doing this for you is me gaining your trust that you won't harm her

I thought about it for a while..Me:

It's a done deal

Sole: Let's lock it in

He stretched his hand out to me for a handshake..Me:

Locked

Sole: Let's do this!Me:

Let's do this

We took our guns and got out of the car..

NONGCEBO

Kelso replied to my text by informing me that we should go to his house, he won't be able to fetch us later on as he is busy with something. By now we were back from the hospital..

Banza: What are your plans for the rest of the day?Me: We going to Kelso's place

Banza: Ohw

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: But I can pack a few things then we will go to

the hood and chil you know just have funBanza:

Okay

I looked at Bongeka..

Me: Go pack up a fewthings we wil be staying overat Kelso's
fora fewdays

Bongeka smiled..

Bongeka: Sweet Banza

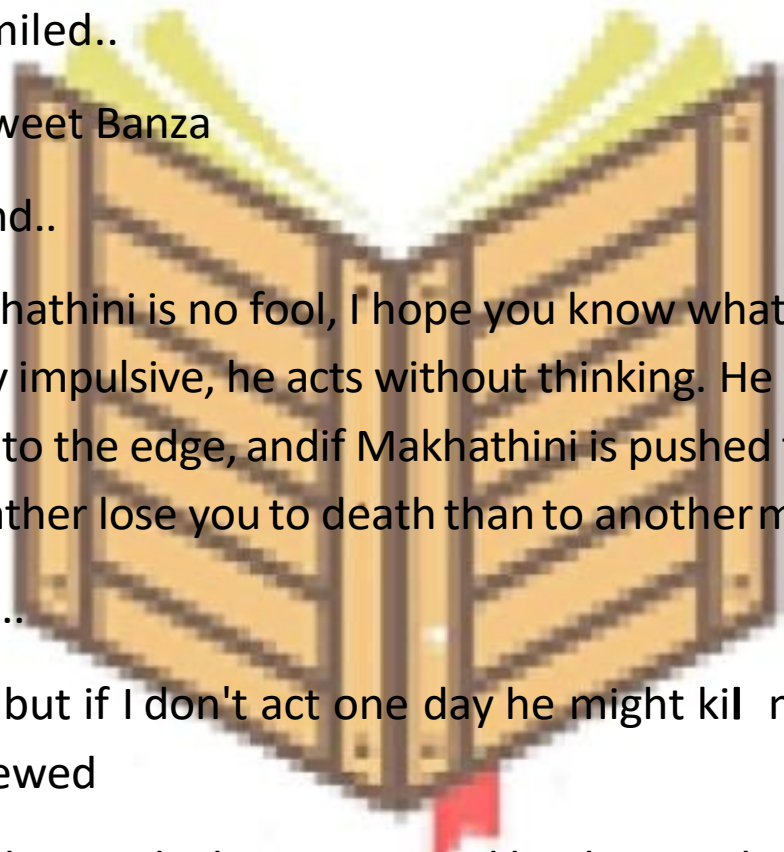
held my hand..

Banza: Makhathini is no fool, I hope you know whatyou doing.
Kelso is very impulsive, he acts without thinking. He might push
Makhathini to the edge, andif Makhathini is pushed to the edge
he would rather lose you to death than to another man

I swal owed..

Me: I know but if I don't act one day he might kil me,so either
way I'm screwed

Banza: I understand why you acting like this. Youhave never
been shown genuine love, Kelso came and swept you off
yourfeet. I won't judge you, it



happens. Sometimes love can make one do crazy things

Me: Thank you for understanding Banza
He let go of my hand..

Banza: Go and pack!
I nodded..

SANDISIWE

I passed her the phone..Me:

There he is

She looked at him for a while..Cuz:

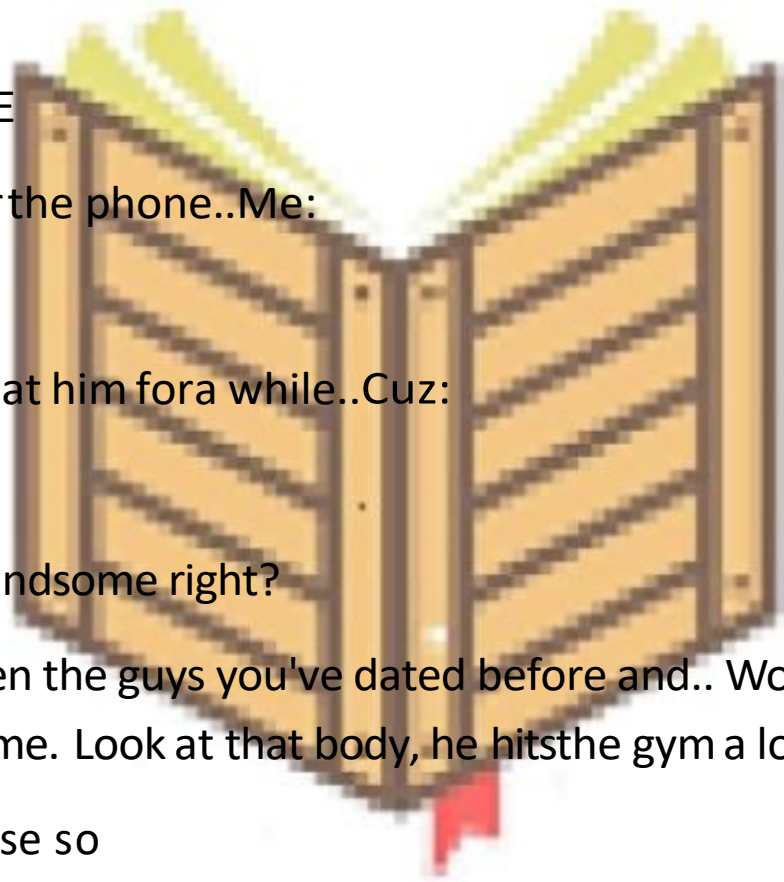
Wow!

Me: He's handsome right?

Cuz: I've seen the guys you've dated before and.. Wow! This one is a flame. Look at that body, he hits the gym a lot?

Me: I suppose so

Cuz: How did you meet this coloured?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Well it's actually funny.. I met him at the bookstore, he came to buy my book and asked me to sign it. Then I just put my phone numbers

Cuz: Does he have friends? Brother? Cousin? Or anything?

I laughed..

Me: You have a boyfriend, and you currently fooling around with someone else

Cuz: I'm a single girl, do you see a ring on my finger? I am single until I'm married. Until I'm married I am single!

I laughed again..

Me: I think he has a friend, he brought him along to the bookshop. He's a douche bag through

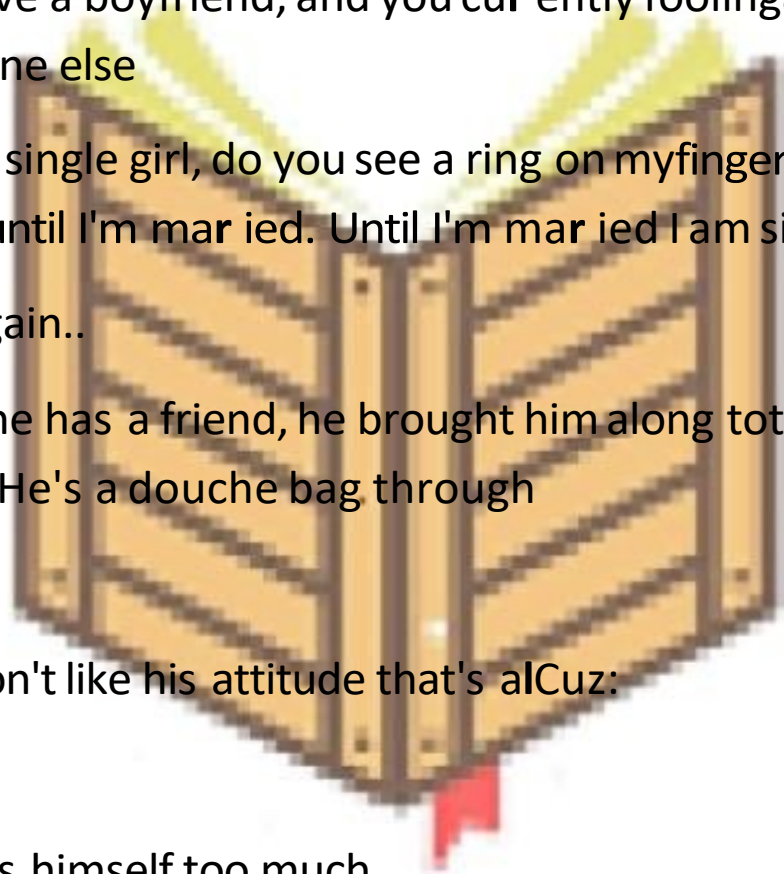
Cuz: Why?

Me: I just don't like his attitude that's all

Cuz: Oh

Me: He feels himself too much

Cuz: He sounds like he is a piece of work



Me: That he is

Cuz: Let me go get us another round of drinks
Me: Do so

She got up and went to get us drinks. I looked at Sole's picture smiling..

KELSO

We walked into the hut, Bhubesi was sitting on the grass mat..

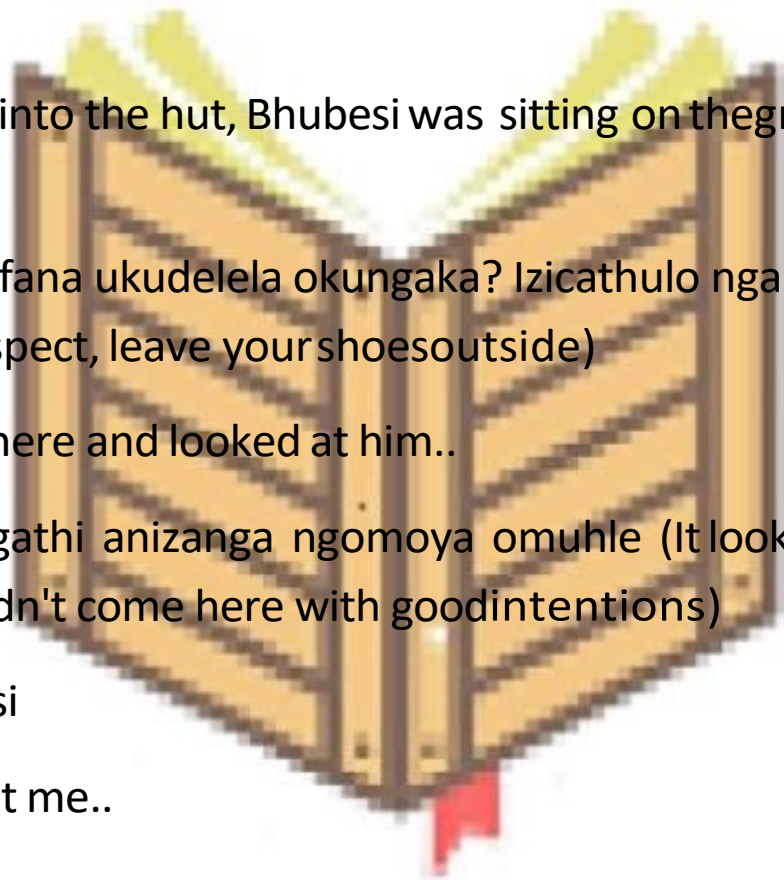
Bhubesi: Bafana ukudelela okungaka? Izicathulo ngaphandle (So much disrespect, leave your shoes outside)

We stood there and looked at him..

Bhubesi: Ngathi anizanga ngomoya omuhle (It looks like you boys didn't come here with good intentions)

Me: Bhubesi

He looked at me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I walked around..

Me: Ngicela ungitshele yiwuphi umuthi onawo wokubulala umuntu afe nya (Please tel me, whichherb do you have here that can kil someone)

Bhubesi: Ngicela niphume (please leave)I looked at him..

Me: Ngizocela usizo (I'm here asking for help)

Bhubesi: uze la ngomoya omubi (you came herewith bad intentions)

I looked at Sole..

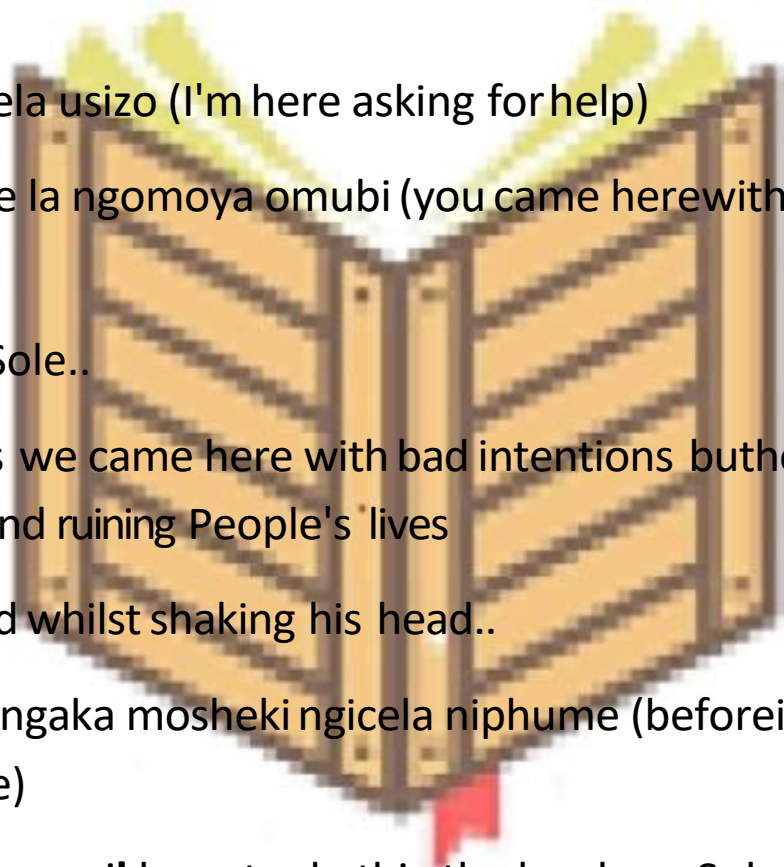
Me: He says we came here with bad intentions buthe is the one kil ing and ruining People's lives

Sole laughed whilst shaking his head..

Bhubesi: Kungaka mosheki ngicela niphume (beforeit gets bad please leave)

Me: I guess we wil have to do this the hard waySole: Looks that way

Bhubesi: Kahle kahle uhloseni ngokuza la? (What



NOVELSGURU.COM

exactly are you doing here)

I took a bottle that was black..Me:

Sole what do you think?

Sole: Black means danger, but it could be a laxative I opened it and smelled it..

Me: Let's see if it's a laxative

I went to Bhubesi and handed it to him..Me:

Phuza (drink it)

He looked at it.. Me:

Phuza (drink it)

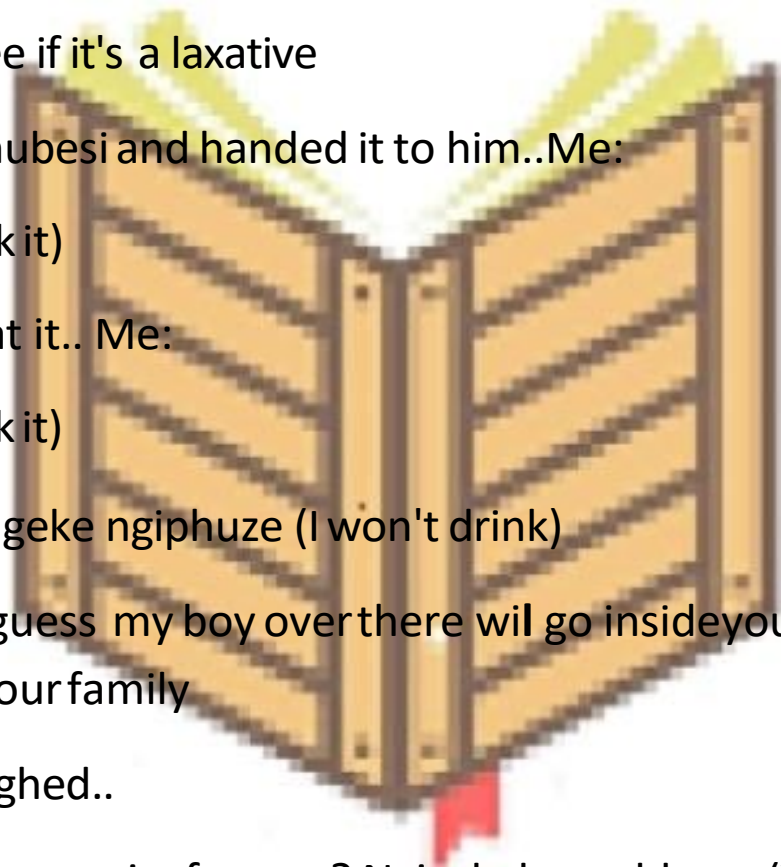
Bhubesi: Angeke ngiphuze (I won't drink)

Me: Then I guess my boy over there will go inside your house and greet your family

Bhubesi laughed..

Bhubesi: Awungazi mfana ne? Ngizpkuloya uhlanye (You don't know me, I will bewitch you and you will go crazy)

Me: Phuza noma siyophuzisa abasendlini (Drink or



NOVELSGURU.COM

we will go inside the house and make your family drink)

He looked at the bottle..Me:

Sole

Sole: On it

Sole moved to the door..

Bhubesi: Yima kancance (wait a minute)He took the bottle..

Bhubesi: Sithembe ukuthi abakini baqinile mfana, ngiyokulwisa ngisho ethuneni (let's hope your ancestors are strong, I will fight you from the grave)

Me: I'll take my chances

He took the bottle and drank the content inside halfway. He had stopped and closed his eyes.. He went again, and again almost vomiting in the process..

He drank again until he finished then he threw the bottle on the floor.. I went and took another one..

Me: I just to make sure that it will do the work

I handed it to him.. He chuckled..

Bhubesi: Ngiyanizwela Bafana (I feel sorry for you)He opened it and drank...

SANDISIWE

Takie's brother Samkelo walked in, we call him "Kelo". I got up..

Me: Cuz!

He smiled at me..

Him: Look at you all grown up Me: No

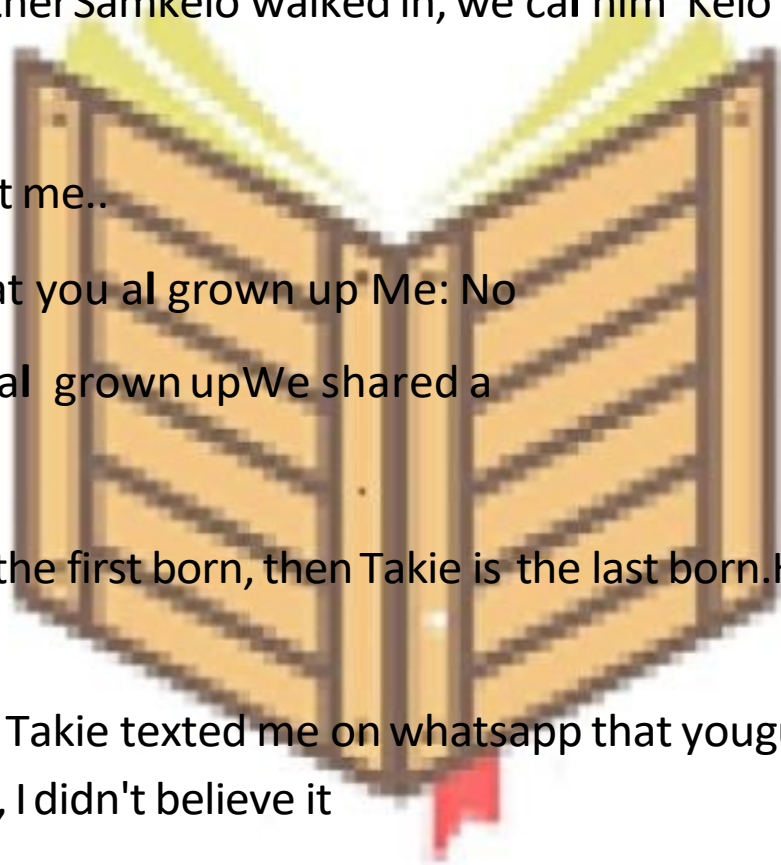
look at you all grown up We shared a hug..

Samkelo is the first born, then Takie is the last born. He sat down..

Kelo: When Takie texted me on whatsapp that you guys are meeting up, I didn't believe it

Me: Here we are

He smiled and his dimples greeted the room. I didn't



NOVELSGURU.COM

know if the alcohol was getting to me or Samkelo actually looked more like Sole's friend the douch bag that he came with at the book store. They look alike, and Samkelo looks more like his Mother then Takie looks like her Father my Uncle..

Me: How have you been? What's going on in your world?

Kelo: Nothing much just doing my last year in law

Me: Following in Mommy and Daddy's footsteps I see

Kelo: What can I say

Me: Yazi you look like my boyfriend's friend Kelo:

What?

Me: I don't know maybe the alcohol is getting to me Kelo: I

guess so

We laughed..

Takie: Do you have his picture? The friend

Me: No.. I'll ask Sole for the friend's Facebook name then I'll whatsapp you the picture



Kelo: Please do I probably have a twin Brother that I don't know of

Me: Ya but he's a few years older than you the friend

Kelo: Let me get myself a drink

He got up and went to get himself a drink..

KELSO

We looked at him, he was laying on the ground with foam coming out from his mouth. Before laying still, he actually fought intense stomach cramps. We had to gag his mouth so that he doesn't make noise. I walked up to him and put my hand on his neck...

Me: He doesn't have a pulse

Sole: He could be dead or halfway there

We had actually waited an hour just to make sure that he doesn't get out and ask for help. Me: Sole

Sole: Yeah?

Me: He wasn't kidding

Sole: About?

Me: We have to find another strong traditional healer that's going to cleanse us, he will fight us from the grave!

Sole: Wipe your prints from the bottles then get his prints on the bottles to make it look like suicide, we will deal with the repercussions of his revenge from the grave later

.

To be continued

PLEASE NOTE THAT THE ROMOVED AS PROMISED WILL BE INCLUDED ON THE NEXT INSERT LATER "INSERT 27"

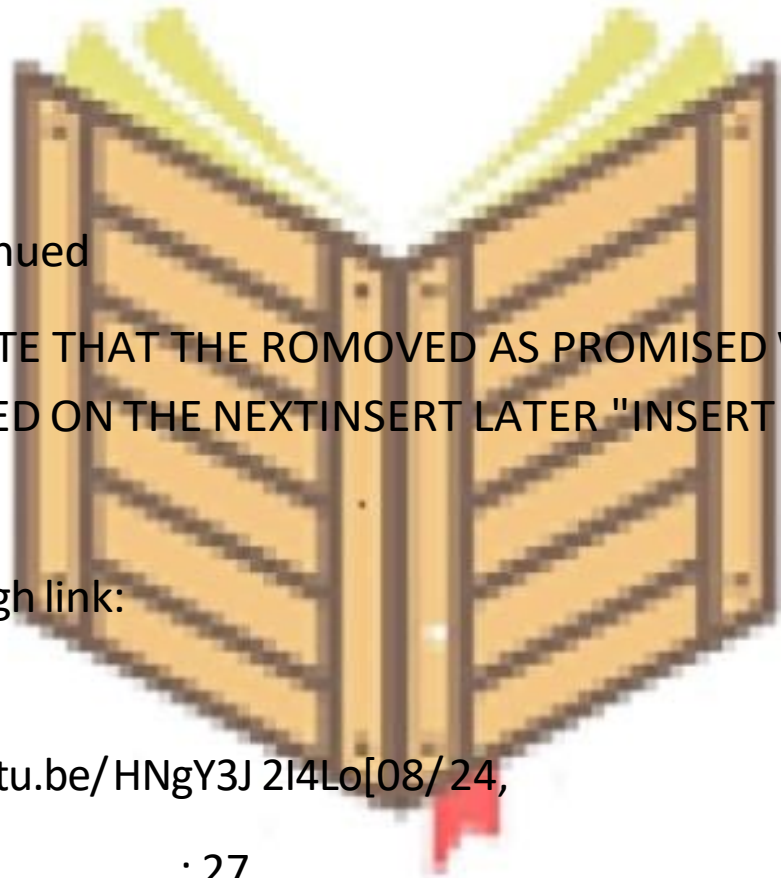
Bontle_Deigh link:

<https://youtu.be/HNgY3J2I4Lo>[08/24,

12:56]

: 27

NOVELSGURU.COM



NONGCEBO

We dropped off Bongeka at Kelso's place, Banza didn't come inside it would be awkward and very disrespectful to Kelso and his Grandmother. He then drove us to this local shisa nyama so that we could chill and eat. I stopped thinking about Makhathini and what's going to happen when he comes back, I concentrated more on this partial happiness.. The shisa nyama was vibing already, I think maybe because it's Friday..

Banza: It's different here, you buy meat and then you braai for yourself

Me: I can see that

Banza: Stand here and book the grill, I'll get us some meat

This place was big, think it was occupying the space of two yards...

Me: The weather is changing

He put both his hands on my arms and started

rubbing me..

Banza: We will go inside when we are done braaing
Me: Thank you for this outing

Banza: What are friends for?

We looked at each other and both laughed..

Banza: Let me get the meat so we can braai, it is starting to get a bit cold. Maybe it's because it's starting to get a late

Me: What time is it?

Banza: I think 18:30
Me:

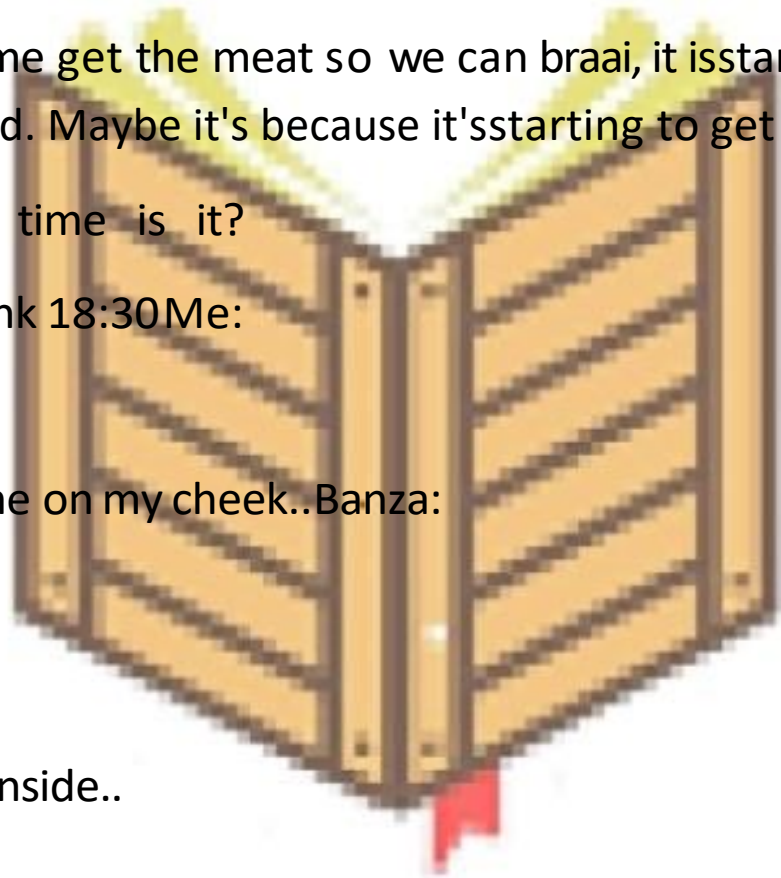
Okay

He kissed me on my cheek..
Banza:

I'm coming

Me: Okay

He walked inside..



KELSO

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole left about 30min ago. I was still parked at the pub, sitting in my car lost in my thoughts. What we did today was crazy! my Father's call came through..

Me: Pops Dad: I

waited

Me: I had other errands to run Dad:

How is it going with Nessi?

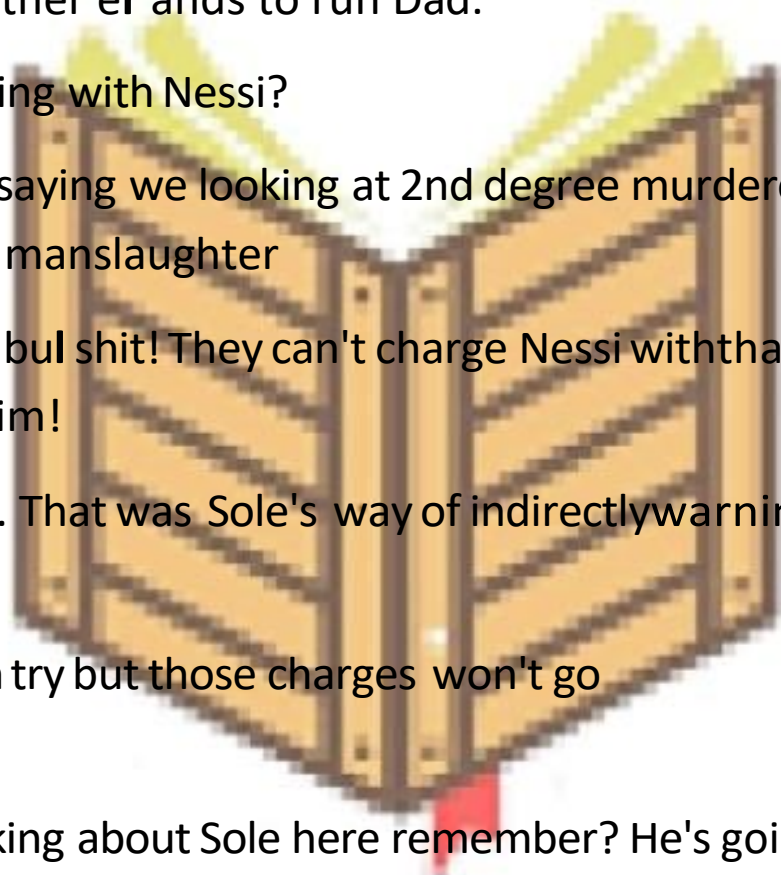
Me: Sole is saying we looking at 2nd degree murder or involuntary manslaughter

Dad: That's bull shit! They can't charge Nessi with that she didn't kill him!

Me: I know.. That was Sole's way of indirectly warning me

Dad: He can try but those charges won't go anywhere

Me: We talking about Sole here remember? He's going to make sure that Nessi goes down and she goes down hard. Him telling me that was his way of telling me to step back indirectly. We will have to let him to do this, he won't have peace until he does



NOVELSGURU.COM

that. Sole acts calm and understanding but I know deep down he has it in for Nessi. Plus he's trying to mend things with his family and he will do it with Nessi whether we like it or not. If we interfere, he will resort to something more drastic that we won't like

Dad: She's 16, I'm not going to have her life ruined like that!

Me: Pops listen to me, let Sole do this

Dad: So you giving up your Niece's freedom and future just to suck Sole's ass?

Me: I'm doing it because I'm protecting her. If she does go inside, we will just get her protection.. Look Pops the squad is breaking, Stalion is in his feelings and if Sole and I don't see eye to eye, it's going to be messy

Dad: Do you Kelso! But I'm going to protect my Granddaughter at all costs. I am the current General remember? I have contacts outside

Me: Pops listen to me! Sole has a rare mental disorder that Doctors can't even make out what it is.

NOVELSGURU.COM

He has been to a lot of Doctors, tests were carried out and they can't make up what's wrong with him! Fighting Sole is suicide, he is a motherfucker! Plus..

Dad: Plus what?

Me: We killed a traditional healer todayDad:

You did what?

Me: He can hold that against me and find a way to incriminate me

Dad: Kelso how can you be so stupid? I told you long time ago to lose Sole! Look what you doing now.. You out of control boy!

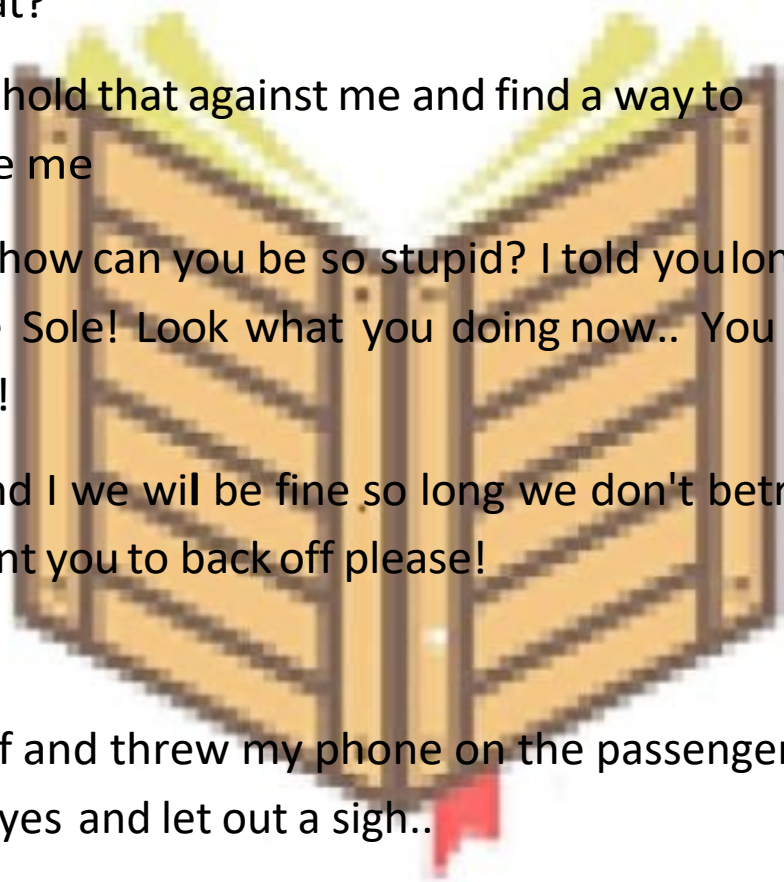
Me: Sole and I we will be fine so long we don't betray each other.. I want you to back off please!

Dad: Ke-

I cut him off and threw my phone on the passenger's seat. I closed my eyes and let out a sigh..

Me: How did things get so out of control?

My phone beeped, it was a whatsapp message from Power.. I opened and she had sent me photos,



NOVELSGURU.COM

photos of Nongcebo and Banza al cosy next to thegril ..

"Look who is here with her boyfriend eShisa nyama".They've been lovey doveys busy making everyone jealous.. Aren't they cute though? Didn't know she was dating Banza.. Ncoooh they cute "

I didn't reply..

SANDISIWE

My cousins and I bumped into Sole at the gate, they were dropping me off because I was sloshed..

Take: Be careful

Kelo was the one holding me..Sole:

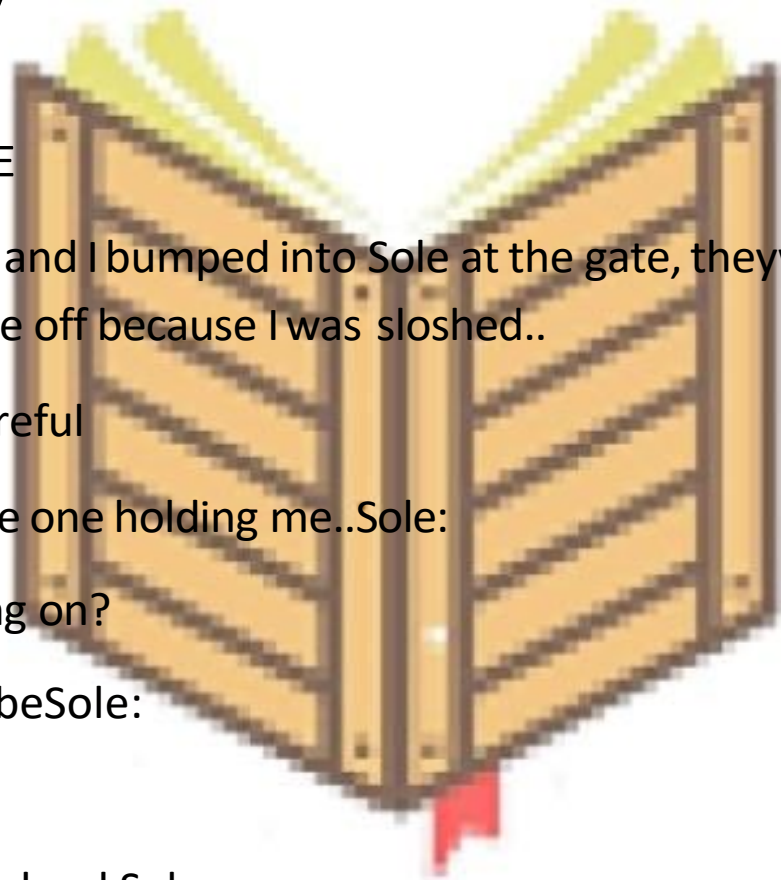
What's going on?

Me: Hey BabeSole:

Hey

Take: She's drunkSole:

I can see that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Takie: I am Takie her cousin, and this is my Brother Kelo

Sole took me from Kelo..

Sole: I am Sole, her boyfriend.. Nice meeting you both

Takie: Nice to finally meet you, she spoke about you the whole day

Sole: That's interesting

Me: Ohh Babe, doesn't my cousin look like your friend?

Kelo chuckled revealing his dimples..Sole:

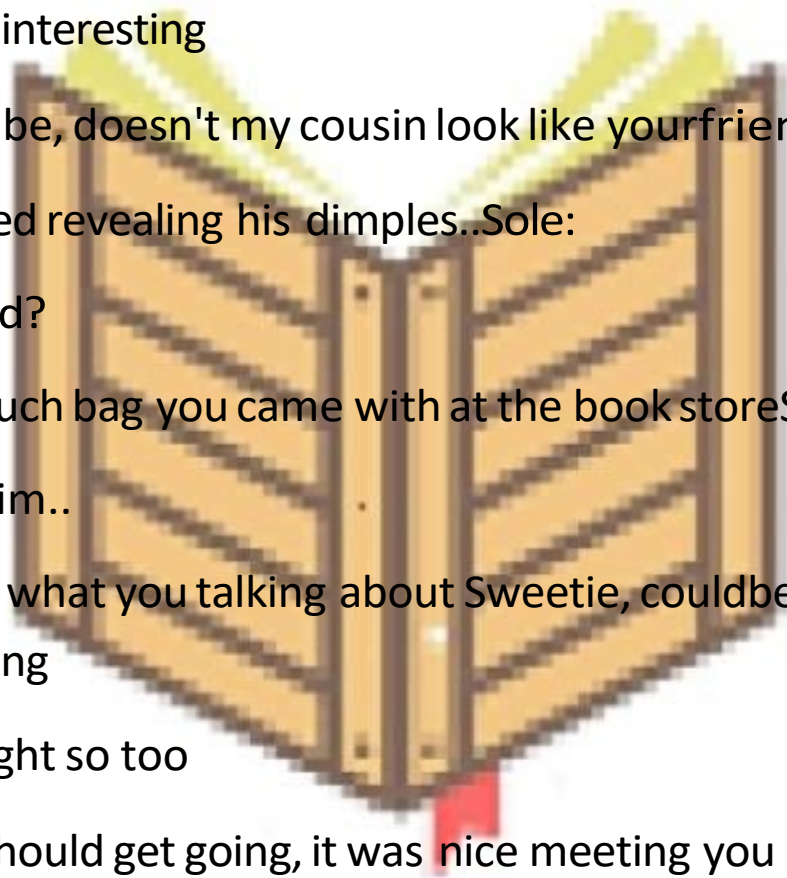
Which friend?

Me: The douch bag you came with at the book store Sole looked at him..

Sole: I don't what you talking about Sweetie, could be the alcohol talking

Kelo: I thought so too

Takie: We should get going, it was nice meeting you



Sole: Same here

Takie: I'll call you tomorrow Cuz Me:

Okay Cuz bye

They walked back to Takie's car.. Sole: We should get you to bed.. Come He let me hop on his back..

Sole: Prepare you a cold bath then take you straight to bed

(Silence)

Me: Sole

Sole: Sweetie? Me: I

love you

Sole: I love you too baby

NONGCEBO

Inside it was a bit warmer. I even liked the music that was playing..



NOVELSGURU.COM

"Ay, we've got a good thing

Don't know if I'mma see you again But is

that a good thing?

'Cause girl, I can't be your man, no ma'am I know

what's on your brain

You probably hope it never would end Like, "is

it the real thing

Or is it just a one night stand?" Well

then"

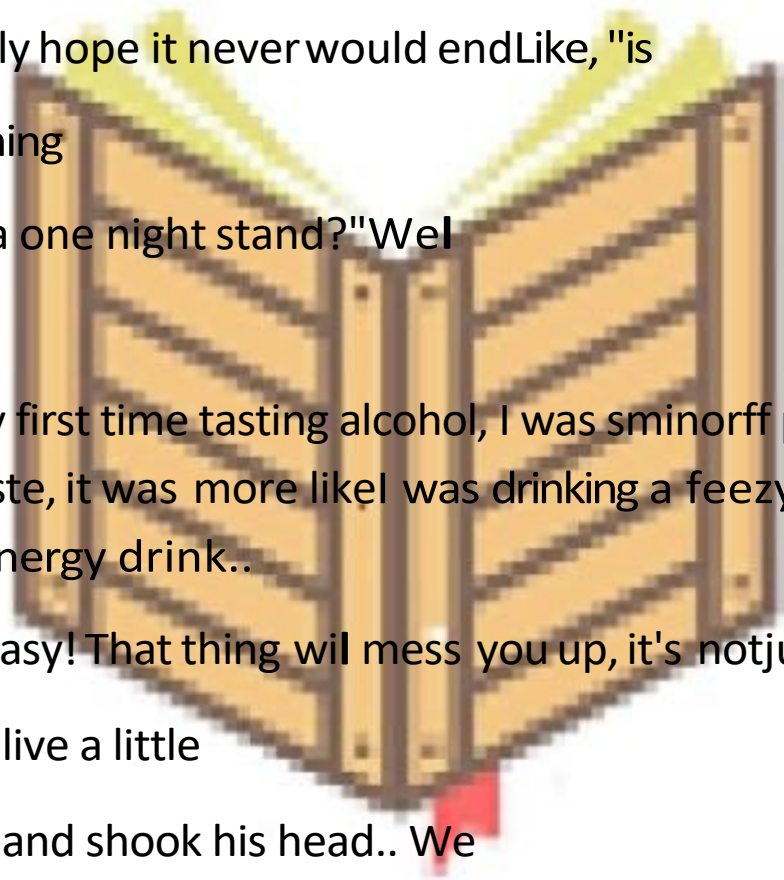
This was my first time tasting alcohol, I was smirff pine twist. I liked the taste, it was more like I was drinking a feezzy drink or rather an energy drink..

Banza: Go easy! That thing wil mess you up, it's not juice

Me: Let me live a little

He laughed and shook his head.. We

continued eating and drinking..



Banza: Kelso's baby Mama is here
Me:

Who?

He pointed and I turned, she was sitting at the corner of the room with her friends..

Me: Ohw I've seen her before

They kept on looking at us.. She smiled and waved at me, I waved back..

Banza: Power!

Me: That's her name?

Banza: Nick name

Me: I need to go and pee

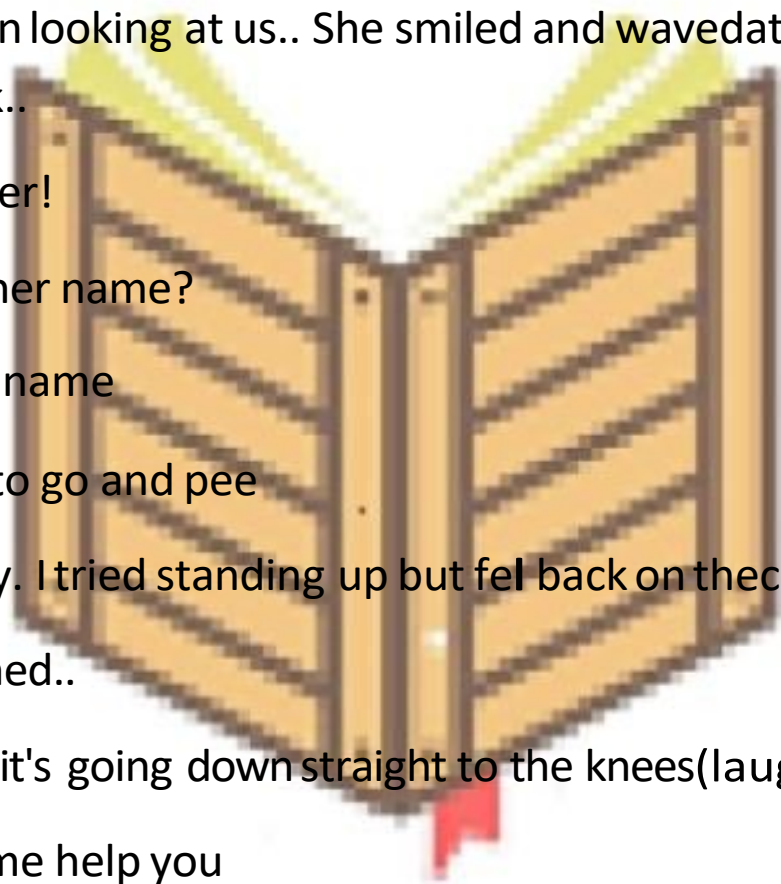
Banza: Okay. I tried standing up but fell back on the couch..

Banza laughed..

Me: It's like it's going down straight to the knees (laughing)

Banza: Let me help you

He got up from his chair and came to help me up..



Banza: Will you be able to walk? Me: I
don't think so (Laughing)Banza: Okay
let's do this

I saw a familiar arm being wrapped around my waist..

Kelso: I'll take it from here

Banza stepped back, I turned and looked at Kelso..He
squeezed my cheek..

Kelso: Look at you, sesiyadakwa? (Are we now
alcoholics?)

Me: Don't be silly.. Banza and I were just chillingWe heard
someone whistling..

Kelso looked around, he waved at some guys.. Banza: I think I
should leave, Nongcebo I'll call youMe: Why? We still chilling
moss

Kelso: I think you done "chilling"

Me: Awukahle nge drama Kelso (Stop with the drama)



Kelso: Eyy angizanga ukuzodlala nawe uyangizwa?(I'm not here to play with you)

Me: Banza brought me here, ngizohamba naye (I'll leave with him)

He shook his head whilst laughing..

Kelso: Ngathi ngizonyelwa la (I'm being tested here)Banza:

Nongcebo you should go

Me: Angiyi ndawo! (I'm not going anywhere)Kelso:

Udakwa kabi ne? Let's go!

He grabbed my arm and I yanked it off from his grip then slapped him across the face.

Me: Kelso awume! (Kelso stop it)Kelso

looked at Banza..

Kelso: Khuluma nomuntu wakho, ngimfuna ekhayamangisuka la (Talk to your person, I want her home when I leave here)

He turned and walked away, Power stood up and ran to him..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Power: Kelso!

Kelso pushed her back..

Kelso: Eyy awungiyeke (Leave me alone)Banza:

Let me take you home

SOLE

Sandi was taking a cold shower.. Sandi:

Whuuuu the water is cold! Me: It'll help

I went and took her phone on the bed, I went to check her family. She had this "Kelo" guy as a cousin on her "Family".. I went and checked his pictures, he did look like Kelso..

Me: Shi i t! !

Sandi: Babe come keep me company! Me: I'll

be there

This is not good..



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Banza did drive me back to Kelso's place. I was still feeling faded..

Banza: If he does anything to you, call me

Something like what?

Banza: Hitting you

laughed..

Me: Don't be dramatic, ashaye ubani? (hit who) Banza: I'm serious Nongcebo

Me: Fine I'll call

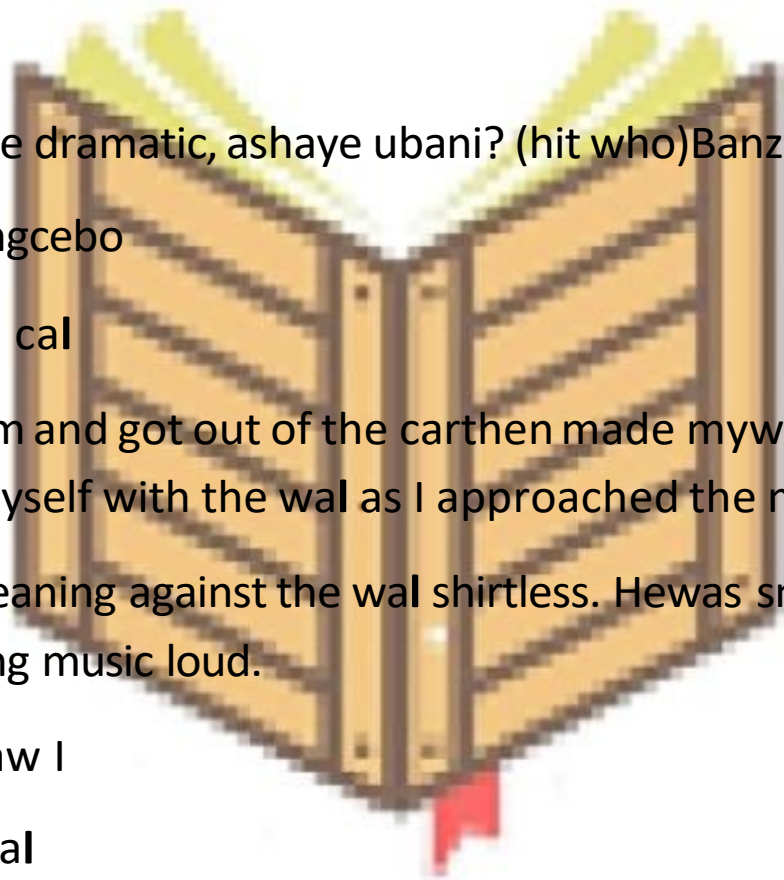
I hugged him and got out of the car then made my way in. I balanced myself with the wall as I approached the music..

Kelso was leaning against the wall shirtless. He was smoking whilst playing music loud.

"I came I saw I

conquered all

Khule ka Gogo



NOVELSGURU.COM

ITv e next door

Singena fokol

But manje s'nqonoMa

usdlel'umona

'zo shiba ngo mgodu Ngithi

nawe uya bona"

He looked at me as I walked inside his room.

I took my shoes off and laid back on the bed. I swear that I felt the bed spinning, I closed my eyes..

As I was trying to get some sleep, I felt him grabbing my leg. He pul ed me to the edge of thebed..

Me: What the?

I looked at him and he gave me a deadly look

He took off my jeans then proceeded to taking offmy underwear..

Me: Kelso..

NOVELSGURU.COM

He took off his jeans and boxer briefs.. He pul ed

my legs and wrapped them around his waist..Him:

There's no other way I can fuck you up! He forced his way in, it stung..

Me: Kelso Yima (wait)

He pressed in and it was painful no lie..Me:

Kelso yima tuu (Kelso wait)

Him: Ungang'bangeli umsindo Nongcebo (don't make noise for me)

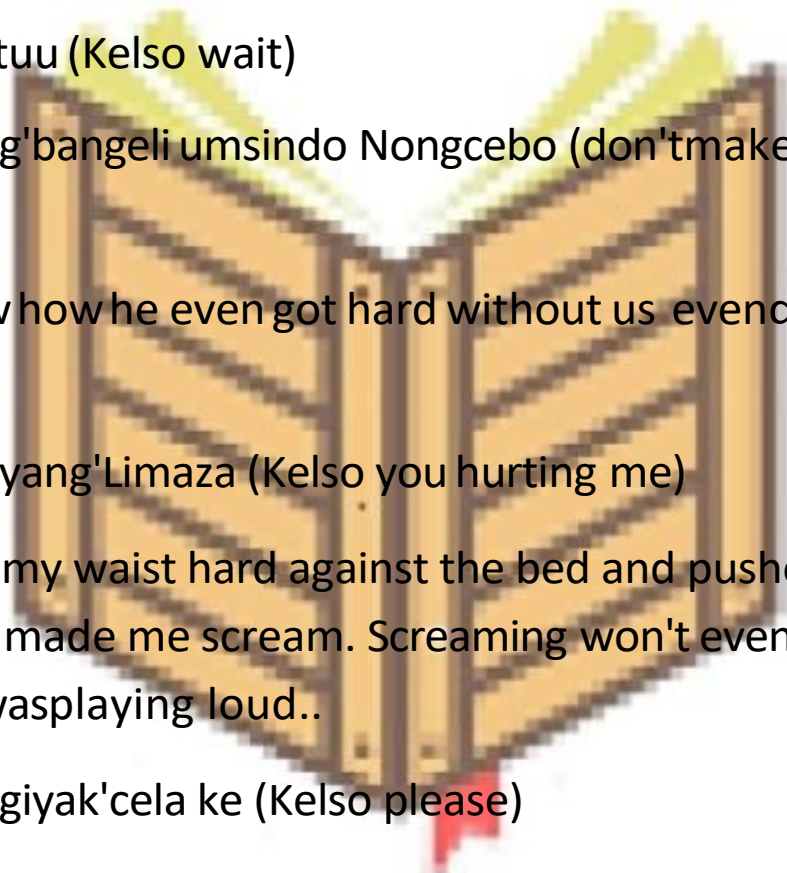
I don't know how he even got hard without us even doing 4play..

Me: Kelso uyang'Limaza (Kelso you hurting me)

He pressed my waist hard against the bed and pushed all of him in, the pain made me scream. Screaming won't even help because the music was playing loud..

Me: Kelso ngiyak'cela ke (Kelso please)

He went for it, he started pumping me hard and I dug my nails deep in his arms..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Kelso askies

He leaned over and kissed me on my neck..

He kept on going without even hearing my plea...

Him: Uyarasa Nongcebo! And this is turning into a rape situation whilst it's not!

Me: Can't we talk about this? (crying)

Him: Talk about what? How you fucken disrespected me in front of that punk Banza or how he was touching you?

Uyang'jwayela Nongcebo! !

Soyadakwa wena? (you now drink) Me: I'm

sorry (crying)

He snuck his hands under my butt and pulled me more closer to him, and it went in deeper. I flinched..

Me: Kelso ngiyak'cela (Kelso please)

He was so strong and I couldn't push me off nor get away, more especially because he was mad so all his strength came out..

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

No edits

[08/24, 12:57] : 28

NONGCEBO

After that whole ordeal I struggled to sleep. I was sitting on the couch crying, since my clothes were in the house I couldn't go in and get my nightwear in the state that I was in so I was forced to put on his t-shirt.. To say my heart was broken, would be an understatement. Kelso hurt me, he kept on going and going. My cries didn't stop him, they didn't even move him. The more I cried and begged the more he found strength to go on. Thank Goodness I'm still on the 2 months contraception injection, he just decided to take advantage of me without us even going for testing first. I thought that maybe our first sexual encounter would be different, I thought he was different. Yes he is a bastard, but I didn't see him that way at first.. Rihanna_Man down was playing.

"I didn't mean to end his life, I know it wasn't right

NOVELSGURU.COM

I can't even sleep at night, can't get it out my mind
I need to get out of sight, 'fore I end up behind bars
What started out as a simple altercation

Turned into a real sticky situation

Me just thinking on the time that I'm facing
Makes me wanna cry

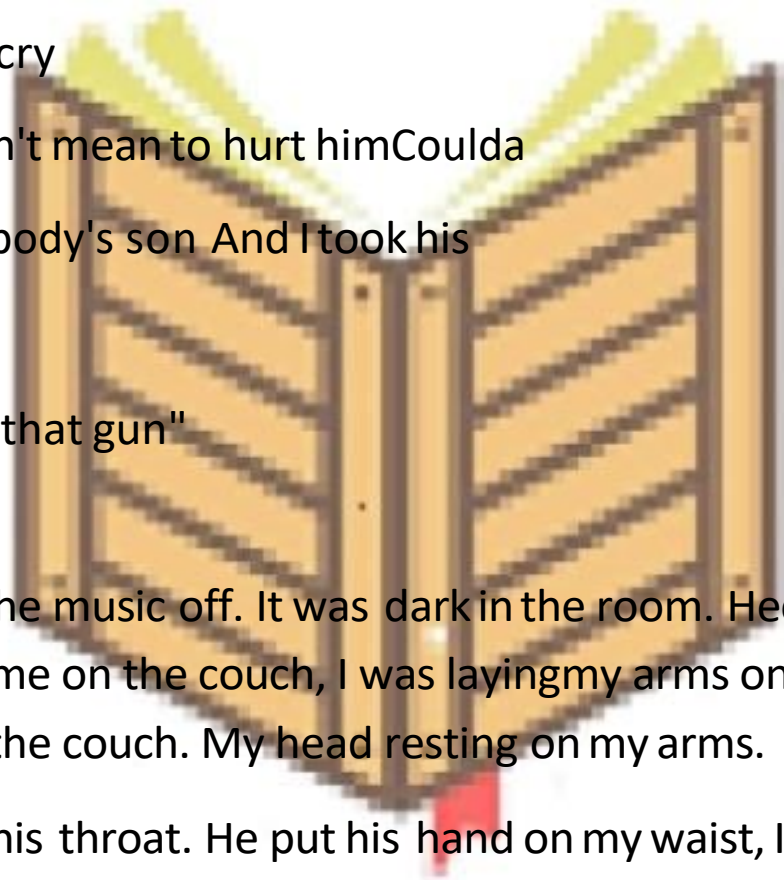
'Cause I didn't mean to hurt him
Coulda been somebody's son
And I took his heart when

I pulled out that gun"

He turned the music off. It was dark in the room. He came and sat next to me on the couch, I was laying my arms on the armrest of the couch. My head resting on my arms.

He cleared his throat. He put his hand on my waist, I flinched. He moved it..

Him: I'm sor y



NOVELSGURU.COM

I didn't say anything..

Him: Nongcebo you disrepected me, not only in front of Banza but in front of a lot of people who fear me. You slapped me, you talked crap. I saw red, and believe me I could've dragged you out of there kicking and screaming by your hair but I didn't. I couldn't lay my hand on you because I was going to beat you up so bad that it would've hurt me. I went about this the wrong way, I didn't mean to hurt you. I'm sor y

I didn't say anything..

Him: Please come to bed at least, you can take the bed I'll take the couch

Tears were streaming down..Him:

Ngcebo please

His voice got more softer..Him: Don't do this to me

He gently ran his hand on my back..

Him: I didn't mean to hurt you, and trust me hearing you crying is messing me up more than I messed



you up

The only difference between him and Makhathini is that he has the heart to apologize. Makhathini would just act like nothing happened. Like what he did wasn't wrong.. Though it still doesn't make it right, him apologizing doesn't make it right..

Him: I know that right now you're thinking that I'm him, I don't blame you. I went about it the wrong way. I promise I won't do it again, if I do it I give you the full right to take my gun and kill me, Sole will help you cover up the murder

I didn't know what to say to him..

Him: Just don't leave me please, I know we've only known each other for a short while but I'll literally go crazy if you leave me. I still wanna push this with you, please don't leave me

I wiped my tears. He got up and came to crouch close to the armrest of the couch.

Him: Next time if you wanna drink rather tell me and I'll go with you, I would never trust another male with you. He's your friend but he still has a dick. If

my female friend was getting sloshed with me, it wasn't going to go well after that. Unless he's seriously gay.. What if you got really drunk and ended up at his place? On his bed then what? Would you like it if I brought my drunk female friend here? Why isn't he in a relationship? Ever since you've known him have you ever seen or met his girlfriend?

He kissed my forehead..

Him: It will never happen again, I promise.. I'm sorry (Silence)

Him: I'm taking you to bed okay?

He got up and gently picked me up... Him:

You so cold

He opened the covers and laid me down. He pulled the bed covers up...

Him: sleep tight

He kissed me on my forehead again...

When he stood up I held his arm, he looked at me.. Me: Don't sleep on the couch

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Are you sure?Me:

Yes

Him: Okay

He got in and laid behind me..He

held me tight..

Him: I'm sor y

SANDISIWE

I woke up the fol owing day with a minor Hangover,if it wasn't for Sole making me drink water I would've woken up with a huge Hangover. After bathing, I joined him for breakfast in the lounge..

Me: Morning Him:

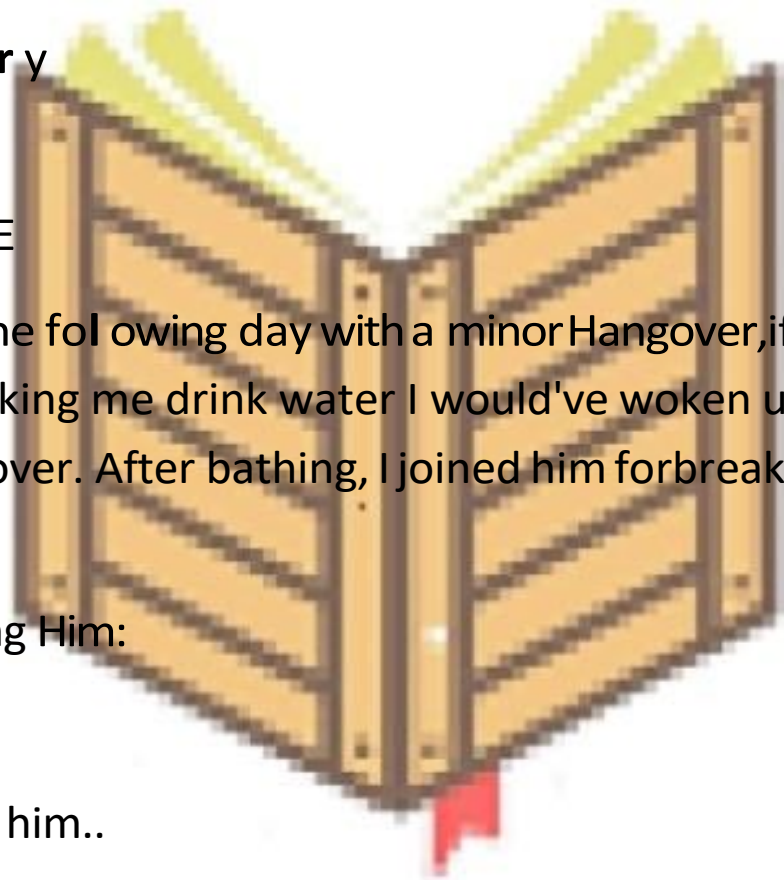
Morning

I sat next to him..

Him: How are you feeling?

Me: I'm okay.. Can I get a kiss?He

kissed me...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: May that be the last time you drink

Me: Why?

He put his hand on my tummy..

Him: We trying for a baby remember?

Me: I total y forgot.. I'm sor y

Him: It's al good, just make sure it doesn't happen again

Me: Ya I won't

He checked his phone, then he put it on the table again..

Me: Babe Him:

Sweetie?

Me: Can I have your phone?

Him: Yeah sure

I took it..

Him: Password is your name

Me: Can I keep it for a week?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You can even keep it for the year Sweetie Me: You have another one stashed somewhere? Him: No... It's the only phone I got

I unlocked it and went to whatsapp...

There wasn't much, he had only 10 contacts. He mostly talked with a Kelso and a Stallion. Nothing serious, just boys being boys..

I checked his Facebook and Instagram together with Twitter. Most girls had inboxed him but he never replied. I put it back on the table..

Him: Found what you were looking for? Me: Yes you can have it back

Him: Thank you

Me: You don't want mine? Him:
For?

Me: check it? Him:
check what?

Me: Anything that's a red flag?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Do I need a reason to invade your privacy? Me: Was just asking

Him: I'm never going to check your phone, if you upto no good I wil find out

Me: How?

Him: I'll know trust me

Me: Then what you going to do?

He looked at me and gave me a serious look.

Him: Wait for you to be at least 7 months pregnant, cut you open.. Take my baby, pray she wil survive and then feed your body to the dogs

My eyes widened.. Him: I'm

just joking Me: You not

laughing

Him: I don't laugh nor smile that much Me:

Ohw

NOVELSGURU.COM

He looked at the time..

Him: I have to go meet up with my brother, I'll see

you later

He kissed me.. Him: I

love you Me: I love

you tooHe left..

NONGCEBO

I woke up a bit a late this morning feeling very funny.
My head was aching when I rose it up from my pillow.
Kelso walked up to me..

Him: GOOD MORNING!!! (SCREAMING)

Me: Eish not so loud

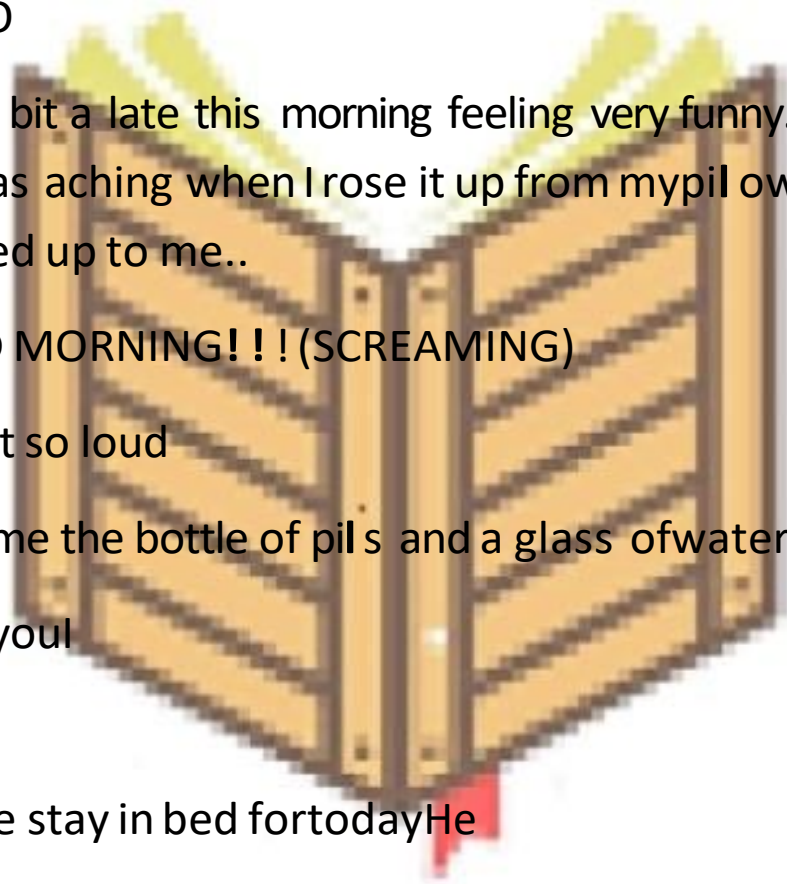
He handed me the bottle of pills and a glass of water..

Me: Thank you

drank 2..

Him: Maybe stay in bed for todayHe

took the glass..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I'll tel the kids to bring you breakfastHe was al dressed up..

Me: Where are you going?

Him: I have a fewer ands to runMe:

Okay

We heard a knock at the door...Kelso:

Come in!

The dooropened and the girls walked in, they wereal dressed up..

Nessi: Morning

I looked at them..

Nessi: Uncle we were asking if we could go to themal ?

Kelso folded his arms..

Nessi: We were also asking for money Kelso: Who

is taking you guys to the mal ?Bongeka: We wil

take a taxi

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: I really don't know

Nessi: We just wanna look at a few things Kelso: No

boys invited?

They look at each other..

Nessi: No boys invited

Kelso: I'll drop you guys off, I don't have money on me we will go to the ATM

They smiled.. Bongeka:

Thank you Me: Go I'm

coming They both walked

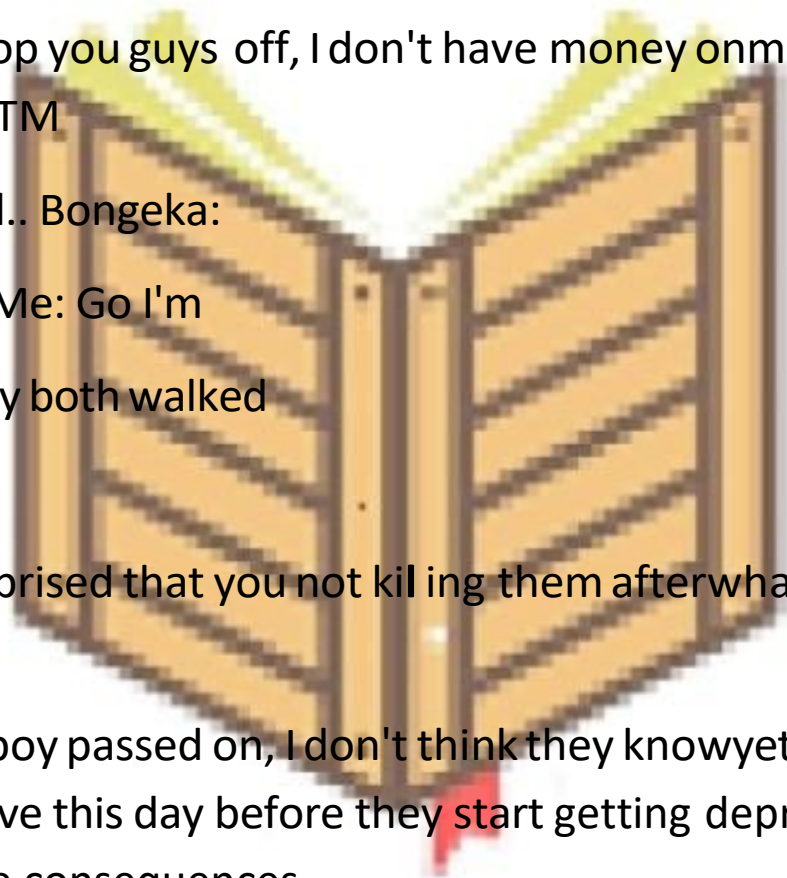
out..

Me: I'm surprised that you not killing them after what happened

Kelso: The boy passed on, I don't think they know yet. So they can have this day before they start getting depressed and face the consequences

Me: He died?

Kelso: Yes



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Makhathini is going to kill Bongeka

Kelso: I don't think they will be harsh on Bongekashe's only 14...
Not really sure about Nessi

Me: Still.. Makhathini is going to kill her

Him: I'm going to take you guys from him..
Remember?

I nodded..

Him: Don't you wanna come to the mall? Me: No
thank you

Him: Can I get you anything? Me:

Snacks or something chill
Him: I'll do
that

Me: Thank you

Him: I'll be right back



MAKHATHINI **NOVELSGURU.COM**

My phone rang, it was Bhubesi's wife..

Me: Salukwazi

I heard her sniffing..Me: Ma

Ngwenya?

Her: Zulu Me:

Unjani?

Her: uBhubesi uaishiyele emhlabeni (Bhubesi is nomore)

Me: Ini? (What)

Her: Uzibulele (he committed suicide)

Me: Uzibulele? MaNgwenya uthini? uBhubesi ngekeakwenze lokho (Bhubesi won't do that)

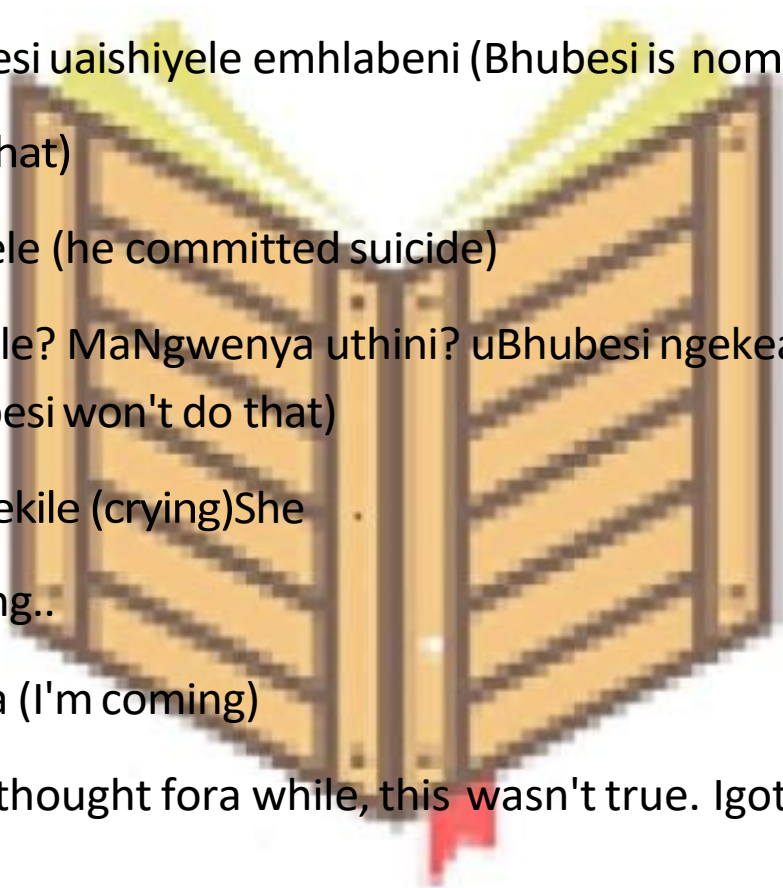
Her: Kwenzekile (crying)She started crying..

Me: Ngiyeza (I'm coming)

I hung up. I thought for a while, this wasn't true. I got out of the bed..

Me: We Nurse?? (yelling)

I have to be discharged today!



I called Banza to come and get me..

.

To be continued

[08/24, 12:58] : 29

[Note that this insert was sponsored by Khanyisa Mnisi, a South African YouTuber. Please find the link below to her channel, view and subscribe]

BANZA

I fetched Makhathini from the hospital and drove him to Bhubesi's house, before driving him back to his house. I didn't go in with him though, I waited for him in the car parked next to the gate. I have been since trying to get a hold of Nongcebo, to let her know that he is coming back home. Her phone rang unanswered. I even sent her a text but still she didn't get back to me. I hope that she's okay, I hope Kelso didn't hurt her..

Makhathini walked back to
the car carefully balancing on his crutch, I got out

and opened the door for him. He made his way in, I went and got in on the other side..

Zulu: Kubi Banele (It's bad) Me:

Bathi kwenzakaleni?

He shook his head.

Zulu: Bathi uzibulele (They said he killed himself) I sighed..

Zulu: Bhubesi angeke azibulale (Bhubesi would never kill himself)

Me: So what are you thinking?

Zulu: His wife said he had to clients before they found him dead

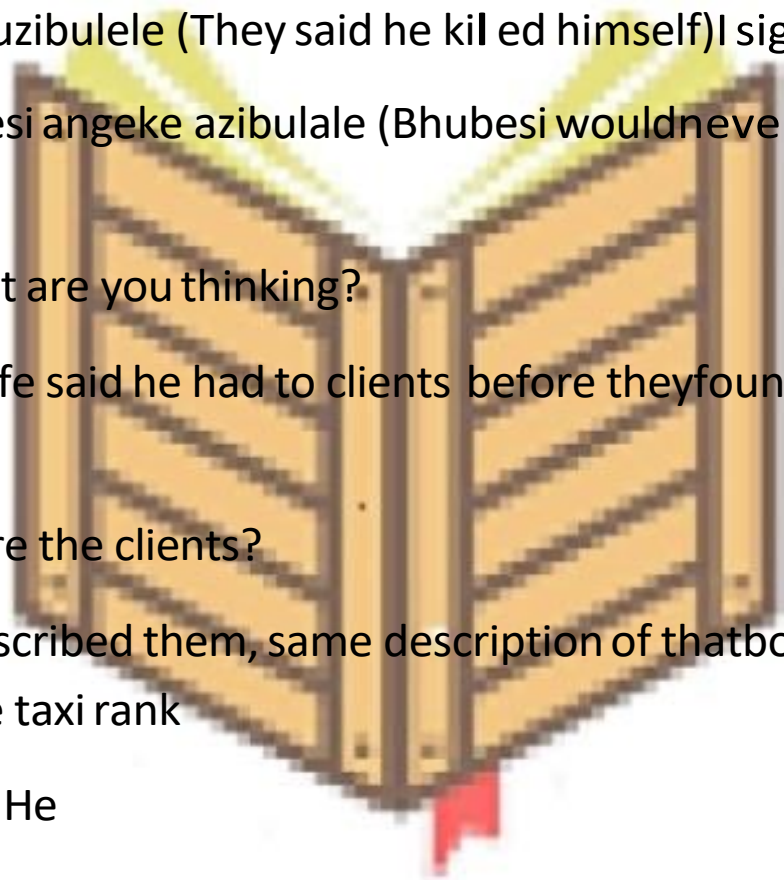
Me: Who are the clients?

Zulu: He described them, same description of that boy who came at the taxi rank

Me: Kelso? He

nodded..

Zulu: He was with a coloured friend



NOVELSGURU.COM

This was new..

Zulu: Lo mfo uKelso ung'funani? Uyangazi nje ukuthi ngiwubani? (This boy what does he want from me? Does he know who I am)

Kelso was being Kelso. I've known him to be impulsive, but this? This was suicidal. He just dug up a grave for himself..

NONGCEBO

I ended up not going to the mall with them, I slept throughout until his Grandmother woke me up. Said she was worried about me and asked if I'm sick. I bathe then she made me something to eat, after that we sat and watched TV.. Kelso's baby Mama walked in, she was holding her Son. The son looked very adorable. He looked exactly like Kelso.

Power: Sanibonani (greetings)

Grams: Power, didn't know that you guys were coming

Power: We just wanted to surprise you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso's Grandmother got up and went to take the baby, he refused..

Him: Nooo!

Grams: Hakeem ngeke wasijwayela la ekhaya (Hakeem wil never get used to us)

Power: That's why he has to spend time here She looked at me..

Grams: This is Nongcebo, Kelso's girlfriend. Nongcebo this is Power Kelso's baby Mama with their Son Hakeem

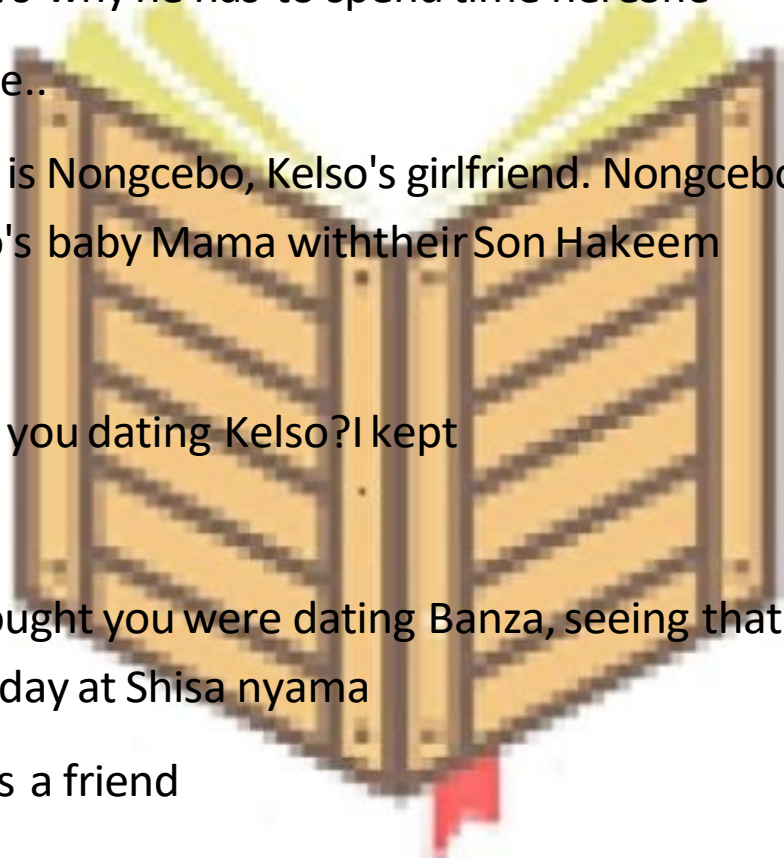
Me: Hi

Power: Hau you dating Kelso? I kept quiet..

Power: I thought you were dating Banza, seeing that I saw you guys yesterday at Shisa nyama

Me: Banza is a friend

Power: You hug and kiss al your friends? Me: I never kissed Banza



NOVELSGURU.COM

She smiled..

Power: Come on everyone saw you, even my friends did. They can testify to that

Clearly she was looking for a fight, and I wasn't going to give her one..

Me: Excuse Me

Power: Hope I wasn't way too forward Me:

Not at all

SANDISIWE

Sole had called me and told me that the publisher is going to stop by, indeed she came. I let her in and made her something to drink.. I sat down opposite her..

Thami: Thank you for welcoming me Me:

Thank you for coming

Thami: So.. Sole tells me that you write? Me: Yes.. I

write for Facebook and an online

NOVELSGURU.COM



publication known as VisionarywritingsShe

nodded..

Thami: Have you been plubsihed before? A hardcopy?

Me: Yes.. I have two books that are published Thami: Which

publishing company did you go with?Me: Self published

Thami: This Visionarywritings, did you sign acontract
with them?

Me: No.. I didn't

Thami: So they don't own you?Me:

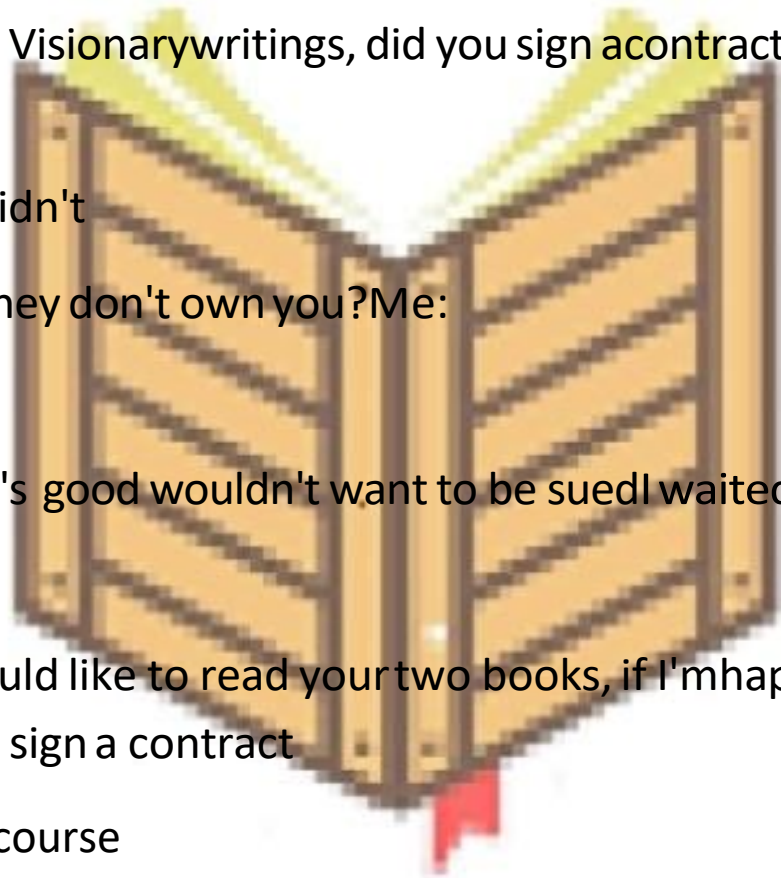
Not at al

Thami: That's good wouldn't want to be suedI waited
forher..

Thami: I would like to read your two books, if I'mhappy
then we wil sign a contract

Me: Yes of course

Thami: Please know that with our family, you wil



NOVELSGURU.COM

get R5000 every month should you sell at least 50-109 books a month. If you sell from 110-200 a month. You will get R7000. Note that marketing is on us too

Me: If I sell less?

Thami: Then you'll get less. The minimum for R5000 a month in your bank account it has to be from 50-109, if you range from 110-200, it'll be R7000. If you sell 210 copies upwards it'll be double that 7000. Don't worry we will put everything in writing

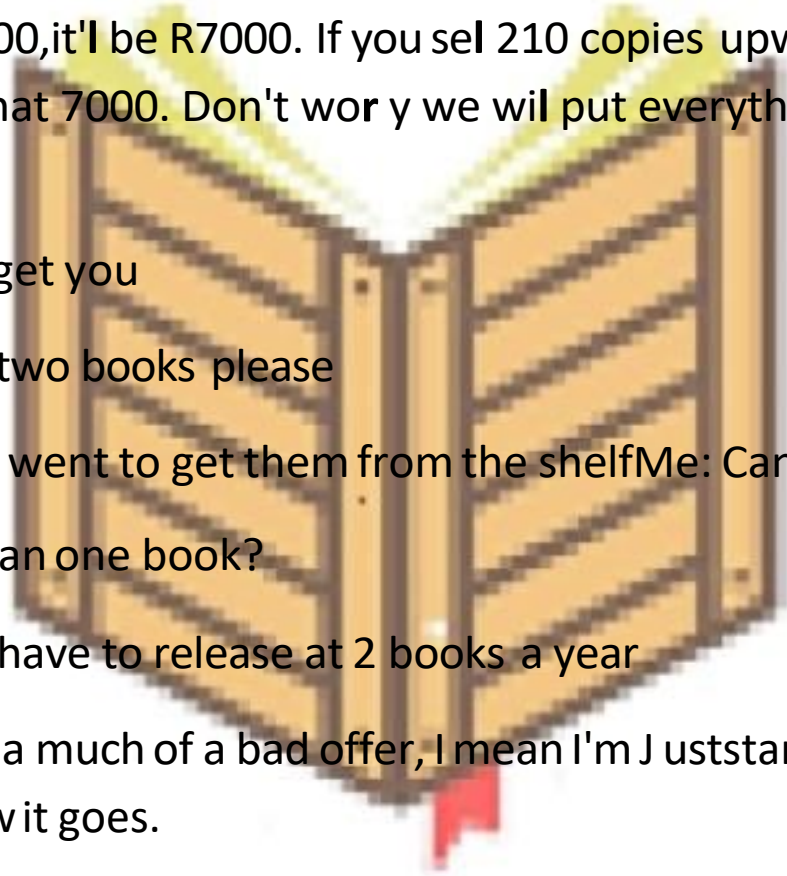
Me: Okay I get you

Thami: The two books please

I got up and went to get them from the shelf
Me: Can I sell more than one book?

Thami: You have to release at 2 books a year

This wasn't a much of a bad offer, I mean I'm just starting so we will see how it goes.



NOVELSGURU.COM

BANZA

We arrived at the house and I used his keys to unlock the door, we made our way in..

The house was quiet..

Zulu: Baphi abantu baku leli khaya? (Where are the people of this house)

I kept quiet..

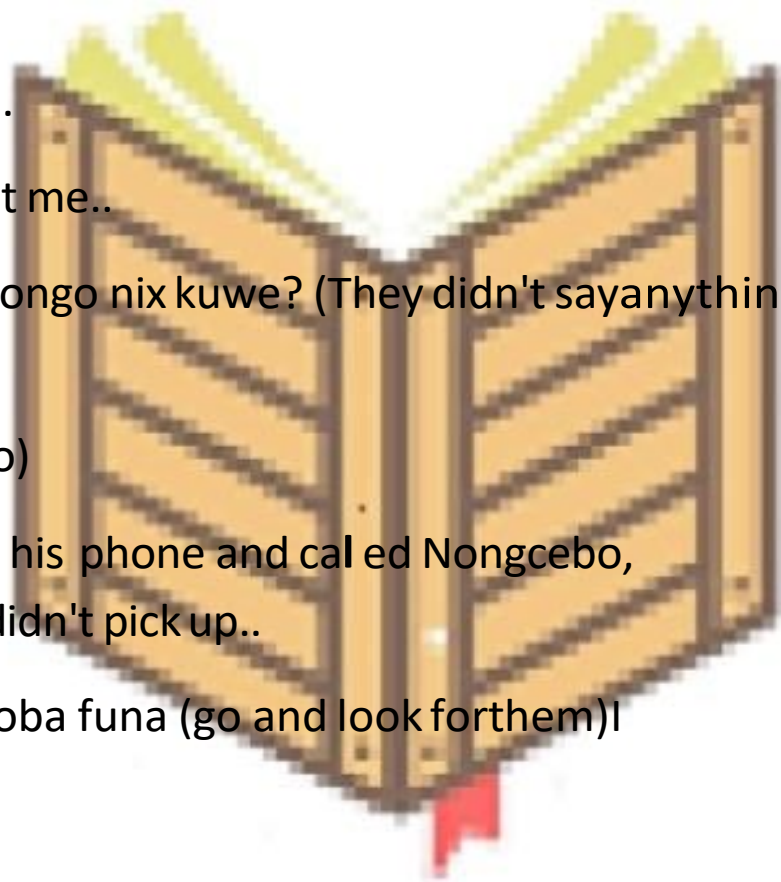
He looked at me..

Zulu: Abashongo nix kuwe? (They didn't say anything to you)

Me: Cha (No)

He took out his phone and called Nongcebo, Nongcebo didn't pick up..

Zulu: Awuyoba funa (go and look for them) I nodded..



NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM

I was laying on the bed watching TV when Kelso

walked. He stood at the doorway and folded his arms looking at me..

Kelso: Manje ukwateleni? (why are you mad)Me:

Angikwatanga (I'm not mad)

Kelso: Njani because I've been trying to get a hold of you with no success

Me: I don't know where my phone is

He walked in and got in bed, he laid next to me..Kelso:

Kanti yini? (What's wrong)

Me: There's nothing wrong

Kelso: Don't give me that.. Ngenzeni? (what did I do)He kissed my arm..

Me: It's really nothingHe kissed my neck..

Kelso: Talk to me

Me: I'm not angry njena

He ran his hand on my thigh..



Kelso: Am I allowed?

Me: Your baby Mama is here He stopped..

Kelso: Power?

Me: Yes

Kelso: Ukwenzi? (what did she do to you) I shrugged my shoulders..

Kelso: Eyy ngathi izong'casula ke skado Indaba kaPower (Power is going to irritate me)

Me: She told your Grandmother that I am dating Banza, she saw us kissing last night at the sishanyama

He laughed..

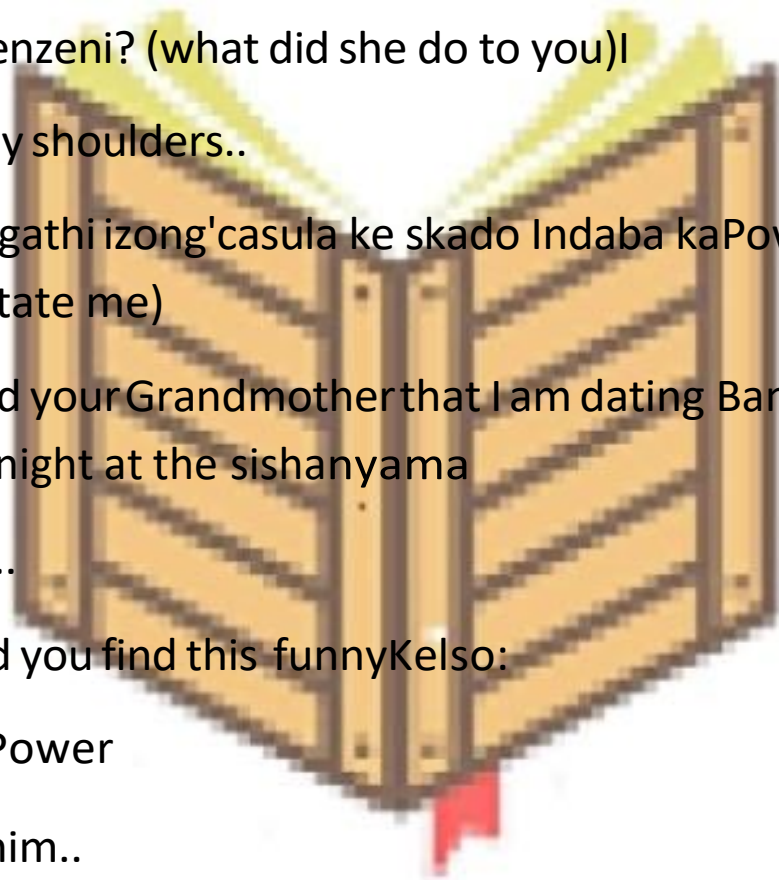
Me: I'm glad you find this funny Kelso:

It's so like Power

I looked at him..

Me: Please don't hurt me Kelso:

Power has a boyfriend



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: This girl looks like she's still into you

Kelso: Power and I can never be, there's a lot that happened between us

Me: Do you still want her back? Kelso: Nex

kanjani skat (no my love) Me: Do you still

love her?

Kelso: She's the mother of my kid, we dated for a long time. She's always going to have a special place in my life but we will never get back together

Me: I see

He lifted my chin up so I could look at him. Kelso:

Ngiyak'thanda Ngcebo (I love you) Me: I love you

too

Kelso: Ngeke phela ngithe Ngiyak'thanda (I said I love you)

Me: Nami Ngiyak'thanda Kelso (I love you too Kelso)

.

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

Link to the YouTube channel, please subscribe <https://youtu.be/xthD7VFhIOk>

[08/24, 12:58] : 30

SOLE

I got an unusual call, Kelso's father asked to see him. I agreed, and passed by at the prison before going home. Visiting hours were over, but since he has privileges around here. He can get a visit anytime he wants..

Him: People grow up

Me: You don't look bad yourself Him:

How are you?

Me: I'm good and how are you? Him: I'm good

He looked around and then looked at me again.. Him: How is your friendship with Kelso going?

Me: It's going to good

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: So much that you would want to turn his Niece in?

Me: That's why I'm here?

Him: bullying happens everywhere and we can't control it. Your Nephew was unfortunately weak and he didn't survive

Me: Same as as Kelso?

Him: Yes but what did Kelso do? He didn't kill himself. He became a motherfucker and never let anyone walk all over him anymore, unlike your Nephew. Nessi didn't kill him, he killed himself. He made that decision!

Me: Let me ask you something!

looked at him..

Me: If my Nephew was the one who was bullying Nessi then she committed suicide, were you still going to say the same thing? That Nessi was weak?

Him: It's different

Me: How? Because Nessi is a girl?

Him: All I'm saying is that, Nessi made a mistake I'm sure she has learned from her mistake. I'm sorry about your Nephew, but there's no way I'm going to allow you to get my Granddaughter locked up. She's the only thing I have that reminds me of my Daughter, and I'm not going to let you ruin that. If you go after my Granddaughter, I'm going to come for you. Remember one thing, I am not Kelso! I have no friendship to lose! Think about that, and sleep on it. If you don't back off.. What's her name again?

That writer? She's going to get a visit from my people

I looked at him..

Him: Sleep on it

NONGCEBO

The girls finally found out about the passing of that boy, they were really taking it hard..

Grams: So what's going to happen?

Kelso: They going to face the law. Bongeka is

NOVELSGURU.COM

underage, they might be lenient on her.. I'm not sure about Nessi

Power: You can't let Nessi go to jail Kelso: I can't

defy the law, it's beyond me Grams: I will have to

pray harder

Nessi: It's okay Grandma, I did something bad. Someone lost his life, a family lost their Son. If it was me who committed suicide it would be hard for all of you

Power: You can't go to jail. You way too young, you have a good future ahead of you

Nessi: I got expelled from school, what future are you talking about?

Kelso rubbed his eyes..

Power: Kelso

Kelso: Eyy awungiyeye (leave me alone)

Kelso walked out of the room, Hakeem followed him..

Power: You not going do something?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Something like what?

Power: Like talk to him? You're his girlfriend after all .. Try something!

Me: Kelso has made up his mind! Whether I talk to him or not he won't change his mind

Power: You are so evil! Just because your little sister or whatever she is won't face the law, now you giving up on Nessi? Sies!

She got up and walked out of the room.. Grams:

Don't mind her

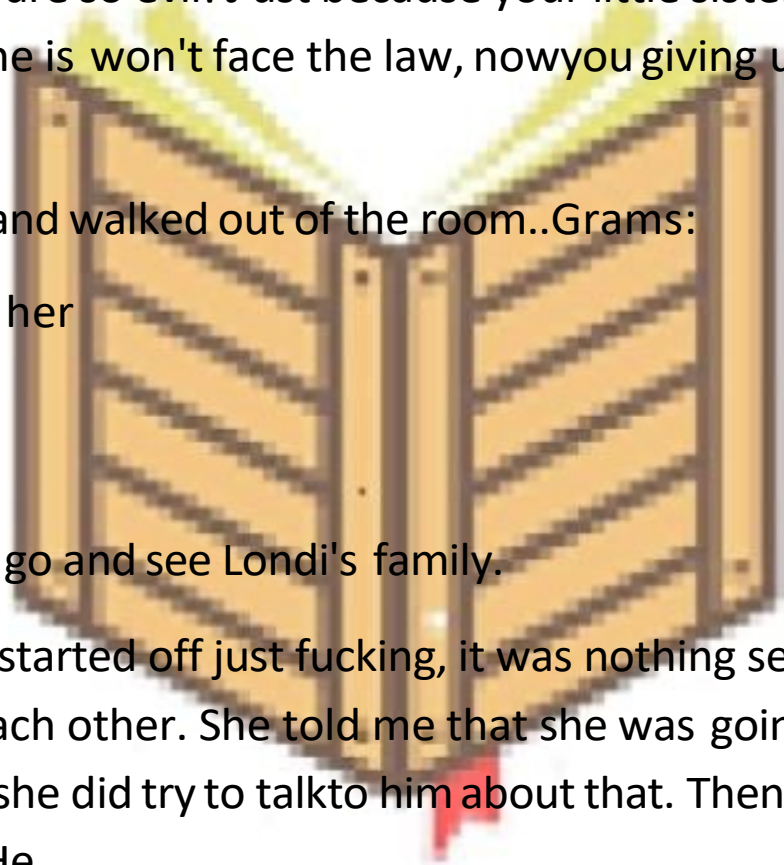
STALLION

I decided to go and see Londi's family.

Londi and I started off just fucking, it was nothing serious until we fell for each other. She told me that she was going to leave him, I think she did try to talk to him about that. Then Sole didn't have that. He

pulled off a perfect murder..

I was in the bedroom sitting on the chair as her



NOVELSGURU.COM

mom was sitting on the mattress..Her: I

thought she was with Sole

Me: She was, but she was ready to leave him. I think Sole couldn't accept that. He killed her, I know he did

Her: I don't understand. We found her hanging on the tree

Me: Trust me he did it She

shook her head..

Her: I never liked him, I know coloureds aren't good but to kill her?

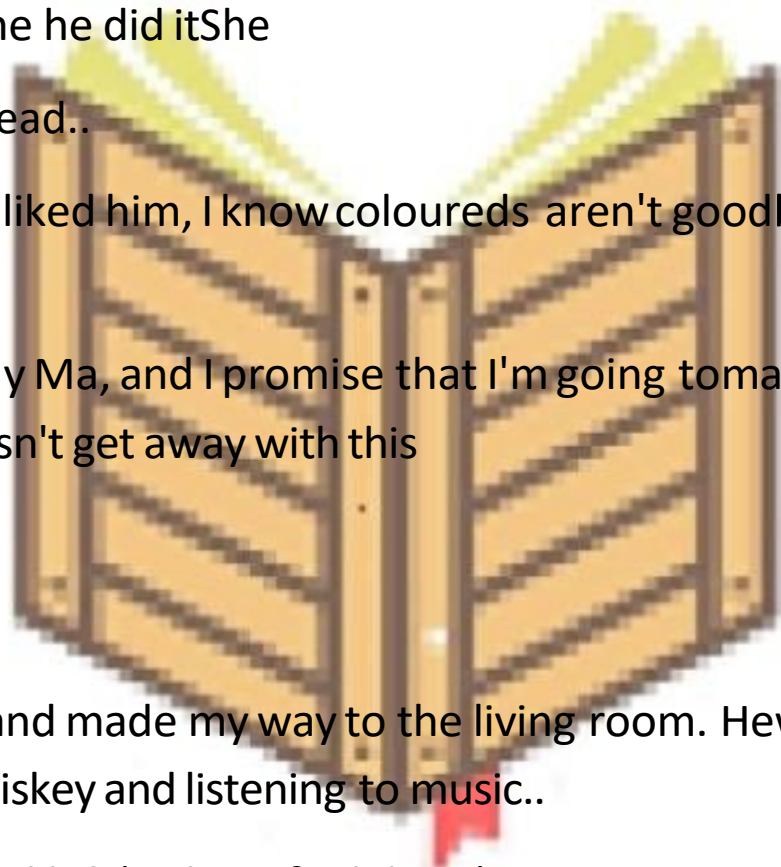
Me: I'm sorry Ma, and I promise that I'm going to make sure that he doesn't get away with this

BANZA

I walked in and made my way to the living room. He was drinking whiskey and listening to music..

Zulu: Ubatholile? (Did you find them)

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Cha (No)

He took his glass and drank the whiskey.

Me: Bongeka was talking about visiting a friend others from school. Since she got expelled she has been depressed. Nongcebo didn't want her to go alone, I think she tagged along

Zulu: You only telling me this now? I looked at him..

Me: If I go and collect them, if I bring them back. Promise me that you won't hurt them

He slowly nodded..

Me: Ngiyabuya (I'm coming)

NONGCEBO

I walked out of the house to Kelso's room. I don't think they heard me as I made my way in. I stood in the lounge and listened..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: There's nothing I can do

Power: There's something that you can do, she is your sister's child. Your sister left her in your care. You will never forgive yourself if you don't do something to help her

Kelso: I knew you were going to say something like that

Power chuckled..

Kelso: Thank you

Power: Don't thank me, just help her

Kelso: I'll try but I'm not promising anything Power: Come here

They both kept quiet for a while... Power: You know I still love you right? Kelso: I know.. I still love you too

They kept quiet again.. This time around, their silence bothered me. I walked in, I walked in on them kissing whilst laying on the bed. Hakeem was playing on the carpet. I stood there and looked at them until Kelso noticed me. He pushed Power

NOVELSGURU.COM

away a little.I

chuckled.. Me:

Wow!

Kelso: It's not what it looks like

Me: I'm just here for my phone, I think I saw it
somewhere

Kelso got out of bed..

Kelso: Ngcebo

I looked for my phone until I found it.. Me: Got it..

I'll give you guys some spaceKelso blocked my way..

Kelso: It's not what it looks likeMe:

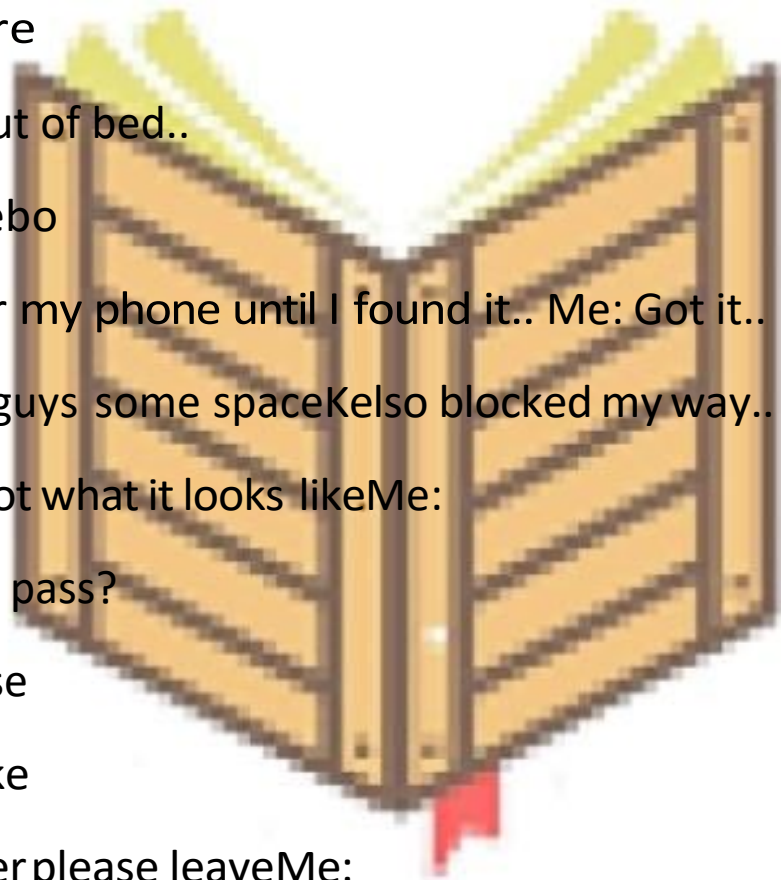
Can I please pass?

Kelso: Please

Power: Haike

Kelso: Power please leaveMe:

No don't.. I'll leave **NOVELSGURU.COM**



Kelso: You not going anywhere

I tried walking away but he stopped me again Kelso:

Nongcebo awume (Wait a minute) Power: If she wants to leave, let her leave Kelso: I said leave Power!

I checked my phone and I had missed calls from Banza. I stepped back a bit and called him. Luckily he picked up on the second ring. Didn't even wait for him to greet..

Me: Hey Banza can you please come and fetch me Kelso: Wtf?

I looked at Kelso..

Me: Come with the Police if you have too Power:

Nazo ke! (here we go)

Kelso walked up to Power and dragged her from the bed.. Power fell down..

Power: Kelso!

Kelso started kicking her whilst she was on the



ground, Power started screaming. That's when Hakeem started crying too. I've been through this, and I know Kelso wasn't going to let her go. If I try to do something, he might hurt me too. In that splitsecond I went and got Hakeem from the floor, I picked him up..

Me: Shhhh.. Look, look at what Daddy is doing? Kelso stopped and looked at me..

Me: Look at Daddy

Kelso walked over to the TV stand, he took his car keys and phone then he walked out. Banging the door..

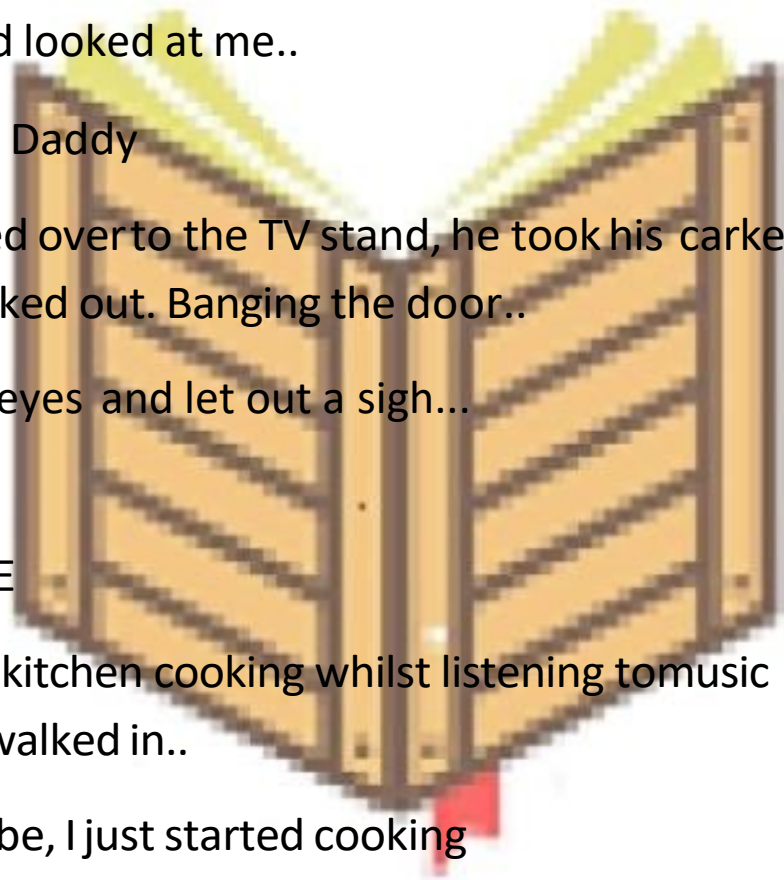
I closed my eyes and let out a sigh...

SANDISIWE

I was in the kitchen cooking whilst listening to music when Sole walked in..

Me: Hey Babe, I just started cooking

He closed the door and then walked up to me



Me: Ohw Thami came

He didn't say anything, he just hugged me and held me tight whilst letting out a deep sigh. He was shaking, but not that type of fearshaking..

Me: Are you okay?

He let me go and then walked straight to the bedroom..

Me: Sole?

I walked to the bedroom but he had closed and locked the door..

Me: Babe what's going on?

I heard a loud scream from him, then I heard things breaking..

Me: Sole??

I tried opening but stil .. Sole:

Motherfucker!!!!!!

I stepped away from the door as things continued breaking..



To be continued

Please note that this insert was sponsored by the admin of "Nonkazimulo Ndunakazi". Please check her page and support

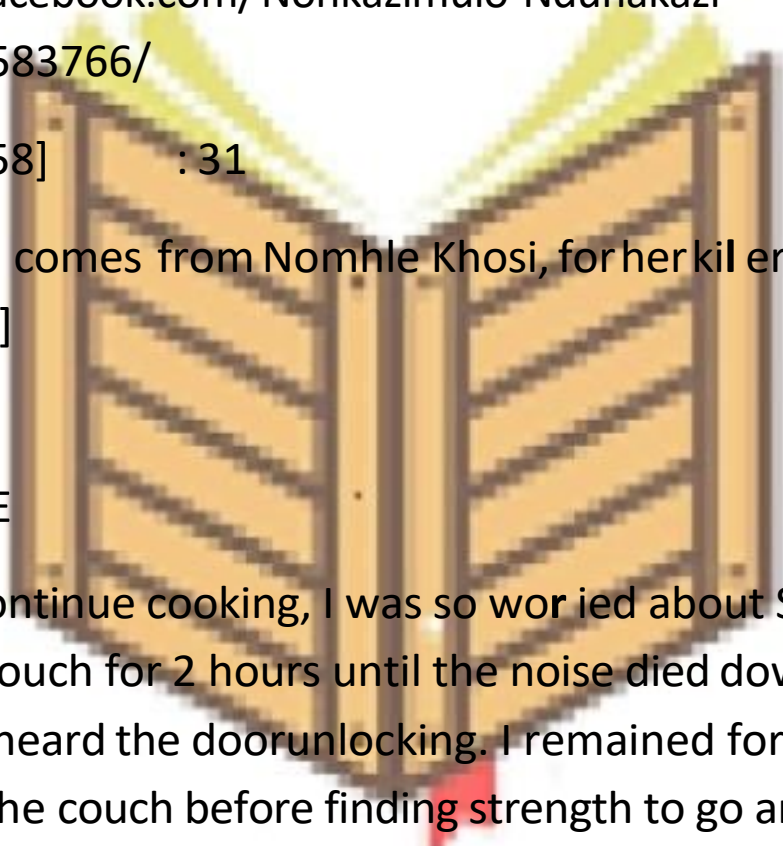
<https://m.facebook.com/Nonkazimulo-Ndunakazi-100951251583766/>

[08/24, 12:58] : 31

[This bonus comes from Nomhle Khosi, for her kind comment on insert 30]

SANDISIWE

I couldn't continue cooking, I was so worried about Sole that I sat on the couch for 2 hours until the noise died down. When it was quiet I heard the door unlocking. I remained for the next 30 min on the couch before finding strength to go and see what happened. I was welcomed by a very disturbing scene. Almost everything was broken, I don't even know how he managed to fuck up the bed like that



NOVELSOURU.COM

too. He was sitting on the floor, at the corner of the room. He had taken off his hoodie and was left with his vest, jeans and sneakers. His left hand was bleeding, I slowly walked up to him..

Me: Sole?

He was staring down on the floor without saying anything.. I knelt in front of him and checked his hand, my heart was beating fast because I didn't know how he was going to react I mean he just turned the room upside down.. I looked at his hand and it was like he had cut himself, he was bleeding..

Me: Babe

He was dead quiet. Physically he was here but mentally he wasn't present. I put my hand on his cheek..

Me: Sole?

I don't know Sole that well, I don't know his family. We have never discussed that part of his life. So I checked him and found his phone in his pocket, then I called the only person I've seen Sole with.

Kelso...

Kelso: What's up?

Me: Hi.. Sor y forbothering you this is SandisiweSole's girlfriend

Kelso: Can I help you with anything?

Me: I don't know what's happening but something isvery wrong with Sole (crying)

Kelso: What do you mean?

Me: He turned the room upside down and hurt himself, now he's sitting on the floor Mon- responsive. I didn't know who to cal I'm scared andwor ied (crying)

Kelso: I'm on my way

Me: Should I wait in the lounge orsomething?

Kelso: No he's not going to hurt you, don't even try to talk to him because he won't say anything. Rightnow he can't hear anything, he has disconnected from reality

Me: Okay I'll wait foryouKelso:

I'm on my way

NOVELSGURU.COM

I hung up and looked at him..

NONGCEBO

Banza did fetch us, Bongeka didn't even want to leave.. I was surprised to see Makhathini back, Banza didn't say anything about that.

Bongeka: You got to be kidding me! Zulu:

Thank you Banza

I thought he was going to get discharged next week.. Banza: I'll leave you guys

Bongeka: Please take me with and drop me off at Nessi's place

Me: Bongeka

Bongeka: I don't wanna be here! I'm more happy at Nessi's place than here

We looked at Makhathini, he nodded.. Banza:

Let's go

NOVELSGURU.COM

They left. I put my bag down and went to sit on the

couch, I looked at him..

Me: Thought you were getting discharged sometime next week?

(Silence)

Zulu: uBhubesi usishiyile emhlabeni (Bhubesi is no more)

My eyes widened..

Me: Kwenzekeni? (What happened)

Zulu: Bathi uzibulalile (They saying he killed himself) I didn't believe that, Bhubesi wouldn't kill himself..

Me: I don't believe that Zulu:

Nami futhi (me too) This was really shocking...

Me: I'll start preparing dinner

Zulu: Cha.. We can go out, you will drive

I do have a license, took one a while back. it was after our big fight and it was his way of apologizing by taking me to driving school...

NOVELSGURU.COM

SANDISIWE

Kelso really showed up. It was him, it was that douch bag from the bookstore...

Kelso looked at Sole.. He went to him Kelso:

Hey buddy

Sole was still quiet...

Me: What are we going to do? Kelso:

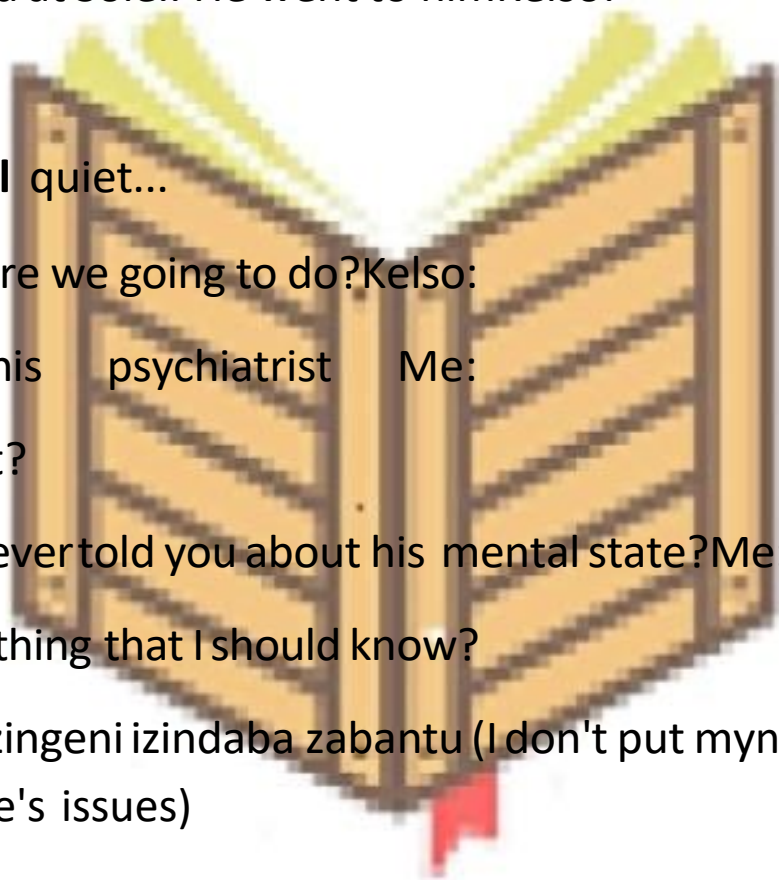
I'll call his psychiatrist Me:

Psychiatrist?

Kelso: He never told you about his mental state? Me: No.. Is there something that I should know?

Kelso: Angizingeni izindaba zabantu (I don't put my nose in other people's issues)

He got his phone and Sole's phone then he walked out, I looked at Sole greatly surprised at what Kelso just said..



NONGCEBO

I drove us to a restaurant. It was exciting to finally drive again, though it was also scary at the same time but he was coaching me..

With his cast, it would've been difficult for him to drive..

For drinks, he got himself a castle lite beer, and I tested the waters by trying out a glass of wine. He didn't say anything. I think this issue with Bhubesi has greatly affected him. It has affected him so much that he didn't even ask where Bongeka and I were, he didn't even argue when Bongeka wanted to go back to Kelso's place.. I understand him, without Bhubesi. He is nothing..

Zulu: Nongcebo!

looked at him..

Zulu: Ubani uKelso? (Who is Kelso) I almost choked on my wine..

Me: An..

Zulu: uKelso is the same Person who started a

commotion at the taxi rank, the same person who killed
Bhubesi

Kelso killed Bhubesi?

Zulu: Angakwenzelani konke lokho? (Why would he do all of that)

Me: Angazi nokuthi ubani uKelso (I don't even know who Kelso is)

Zulu: uMa ngingabheka ucingo kwakho usho ukuthi ngeke ngithole lutho? (If I check your phone, I won't find anything)

I shook my head no, but deep within I knew that if he did check my phone. He was going to find a lot..

Zulu: Angimazi uKelso (I don't know him) He nodded..

Zulu: Kusho ukuthi singaqhubeka ngomshado?(that came unexpected)

Me: Only on one condition He

looked at me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I have gotten used to going out and getting

fresh air. If I agree to marry you, I don't wanna be locked up in the house. If I wanna go out to the mall, may I be allowed to do so?

Zulu: Yebo

Me: Ngiyabonga (thank you)

One day I'll walk out of the house and say I'm going to the mall, then never come back..

SANDISIWE

The psychiatrist came, he came with two Paramedics..

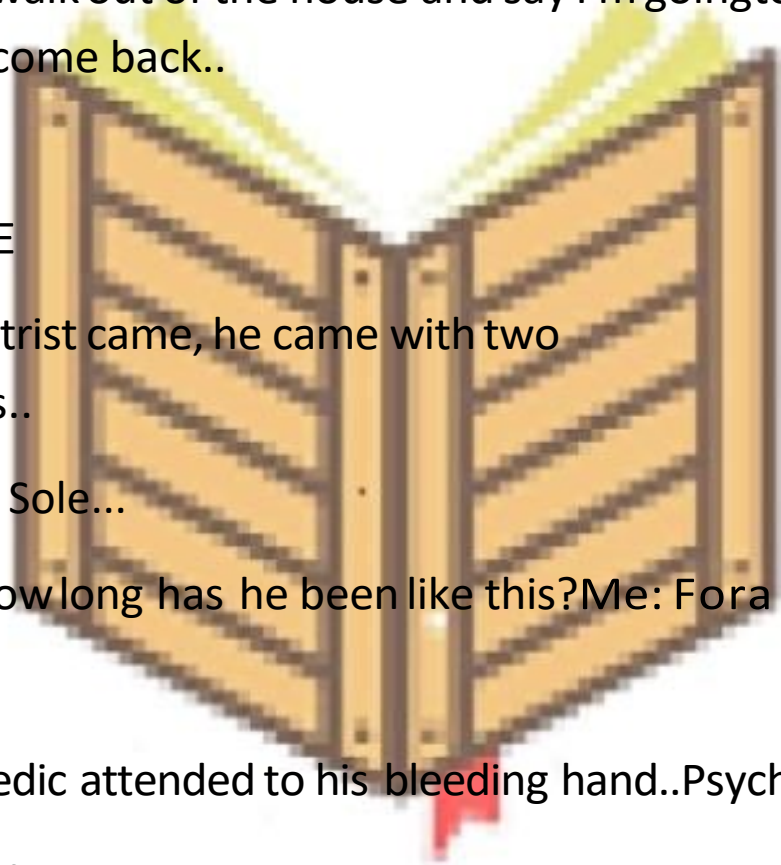
He checked Sole...

Psych: for how long has he been like this? Me: For a while

One paramedic attended to his bleeding hand.. Psych: We taking him in

Kelso: For how long?

Psych: Few weeks, until he goes back to his normal



NOVELSGURU.COM

self

Kelso: I understand Me:

What's wrong?

Psych: he is having a psychotic break, he has deatched from reality. I'm afraid I'll have to starthim on medication now

Kelso: Sole doesn't want to take meds Me: Why is he having a psychotic break?

Psych: With his mental disorder, when he can't solve something it resorts to this. Sole always wants to solve something, no situation should defeat him. If he doesn't have answers or can't solve that situation he breaks down

Kelso: Did he say anything to you? Me: No

The paramedics strapped him down on the stretcher..

Psych: We taking him to the institution Kelso: I'll

fol ow you with my car

Me: Please call and let me know how it went Kelso: I'll do

so

He will call me on Sole's cell phone, since it's with me. I looked at the room, it's going to take me a while to clean everything...

.

To be continued

[08/24, 12:59] : 32

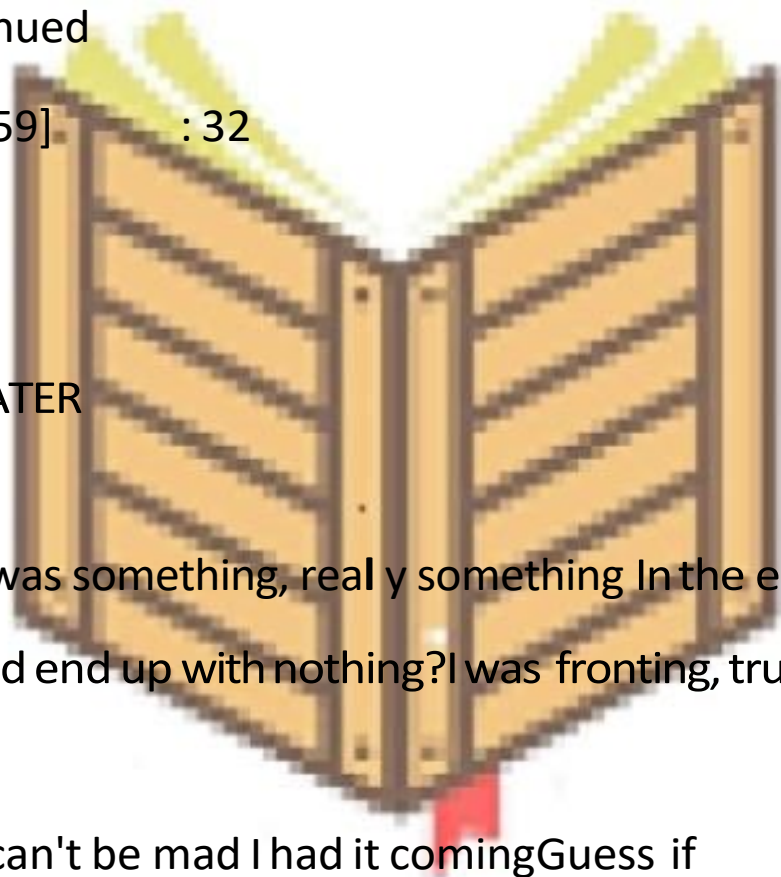
KELSO

2 WEEKS LATER

"Thought I was something, really something In the end, who knew I'd end up with nothing? I was fronting, truly fronting

Girl I really can't be mad I had it coming Guess if

I was half the man I know I am



NOVELSGURU.COM

I would be so good that even Oprah be jealous of you
It's like that, yeah, like that Everything
between us be good

Girl I know what I should have done.

Should have walked away the moment that I saw her
coming

But I blew it, real y blew it And
lost the only girl I love

Dear God if you're listening now I need
you do a thing for me.

You see my baby, she done up and walked out I need you
bring her back to me.

I know that I was wrong, I was guilty in sin Probably
not priority



NOVELSGURU.COM

But dear God if you're listening now I'm

down here

Dying

Begging

Crying

Somebody oughta pray for me"

Since she left, I've been sending her messages on whatsapp. More like lyrics, together with the song. She doesn't reply, she just reads and blueticks. It doesn't matter, so long she reads then it's cool.. I have stopped Power from coming to my house, if I want Hakeem I just go and fetch him. She hates that, but I paid damages so she has no choice..

Nessi: Here

I looked at the pamphlet..Me:

It's a boarding school

Bongeka: We have decided that a boarding school would be better

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: 10k a year? What are they teaching? Medicine?

They both laughed..

Nessi: Fees, food, accommodation.. Everything is included

Me: 20k for both of you

Nessi: At least I'm left with 3 years

Bongeka: It's late now for applications so we will have to apply next year

Me: I'll think about it

Bongeka and I had a chat not so long ago. She told me about her home situation, I decided that she should stay here and never go back. What I'm going to do, is contact social workers. Let them know what's happening so I can legally adopt her. She seems happy when she's around here, I've also taken it up to myself to get them therapy. Have someone deal with their demons professionally..

Me: I don't know how Grams is going to feel about this, she likes having you girls around but.. A boarding school sounds good too I'm sure you girls will be well disciplined there. What I like more is

NOVELSGURU.COM

that there's no boys, it's an all girls school. Bongeka: So what if I get a girlfriend?

Me: See now you talking. A girlfriend is better than a boyfriend. No unexpected pregnancy, no drama

I gave them back the pamphlet as my phone beeped. It was a message from my father:

"Contacts of the traditional healer that's going to perform a cleansing for you. He's good"

Since Bhubesi had been buried, my Father has been trying to get us a good traditional healer. Now I just have to wait for Sole then we will go...

SOLE

I thought about what he said, he indirectly told me that he's going to hurt Sandi if we seek justice for Matthew. That's the part that killed me most, having no choice. See, Kelso's father is a bit of a tough cookie to break. He is the general of the 28s, they everywhere. Every province and they not just 2 or 3 of them. They will get to Sandi if he puts the word

out there, taking them down is going to be messy. I can't even ask Kelso for help, despite the fact that it's his father. We won't be able to take them down. They are a lot and they are dangerous.. My Brother picked up..

Me: Brian it's Me

Him: I thought you were going to come to the funeral

Me: I'm sorry

Him: like how you promised that you would be there when I switch off the machine

Me: Something came up

Him: I'm trying with you Sole, but it's like you don't want to be a part of us anymore. I'm trying to make peace between you and the family

Me: Brian I need you to do something Him:

What?

Me: Don't open a case for those girls He

laughed..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You kidding right?

Me: It won't end well .. Trust me

Him: An example must be made out of them, I need to get justice for my boy

Me: Listen to me, you'll be putting all of us in danger

Him: I'm doing it, and there's nothing you going to do about it

I slammed the phone hard. I thought about Sandi, my baby and how all of this shit won't go down well .. Come on Sole, think of something! If I take them up it'll hurt our loved ones more than it will hurt us. Our loved ones will be the ones to feel the most heat..

Nurse: Sole

I slowly turned around.. Him:

Make room for others

Me: I need to make another call Him: You

get one phone call a day Me: It's an

emergency



Him: I'm sorry you'll have to wait for tomorrow I turned around again and looked at the phone..

Him: I don't wanna use force with you, please step away from the phone

(Silence)

He touched my shoulder. I turned around with the phone cord and placed it around his neck, I started strangling him..

Me: I just wanna make a phone call !!

The other patients in the room started acting out too, chairs were being thrown around. Noises were being made..

We both fell down on the floor, I put him on lockdown. My legs wrapped around him so he can't use his hands to defend himself.

Others: Kill him! Kill him! Kill him!

I saw the guards approaching us, they separated me from him..

Me: I wanna make a phone call ! A bloody phone

NOVELSGURU.COM

cal !! One phone cal !!

The Nurse was on the ground coughing.. Anotherone approached me with a syringe in his hand..

NONGCEBO

After reading the text and listening to the song, I put my phone down. I called the shelter a few days back and they told me that they full for now.

Meaning they've just fucked up the plan of me running away.

Makhathini was mad depressed, since the death of Bhubesi he hasn't been well. He drinks a lot, so much that it's irritating. I have to take him to bed, undress him etc. I know that he will find another traditional healer, but for now. I am opting to something that Bongeka long thought off. Speaking of Bongeka we talk a lot and she's very happy at Kelso's place. I don't want her coming back, and Makhathini has been talking about he wants her back home. I took the blue death and walked to the

living room. He doesn't eat much so the best way would be putting it in his whiskey bottle. Better to act now than later when he goes back to his normal ruthless self, because he will. I opened it and closed my eyes..

Me: Lord, please forgive me for what I'm about to do! I poured it in, not all of it though..

SANDISIWE

I looked at the pregnancy test, it was positive. I closed my eyes with tears streaming down.

This is a mess, I'm pregnant and Sole is not here. He is not himself and it seems like my plan got fucked. I really had hope that we were going to be a small beautiful family, but now. I'm not so sure.

How will I raise the baby alone without Sole's help? What if he keeps on going in and out in the mental institution then what's going to become of me and the baby? Worse now that Thami doesn't wanna work with me. She told me straight that it's not

NOVELSGURU.COM

going to work, so how wil I take care of a baby?I received
a text from my cuz:

"I am at the gate"

I had my clothes packed, when I walk out of here. I'm gone, I'm
gone and I'm done. I have already evenconsidered abortion,
and I'm going through with it..

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by another reader of ours who has
entered Miss SA plus world, pleaselet's show her love and
support as she's one of ourown. "Zinhle Hlehle Mdondolo"

Link:

https://pageantvote.es/pageants/2481/contestants/14918?fbclid=IwAR27jerSCielSKJqzrCvA6twmKCqjtQrAoti15udqKeNIKZLTWuhp-rCD_k

[08/24, 12:59] : 33

NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

After pouring the blue death in his whiskey, I also crushed 3 sleeping pills and put them inside. The whiskey was half in the bottle, and he drank without even realizing what was inside. It didn't take that long for him to pass out...

I packed everything of mine, including my Identity document, my Matric certificate and other valuable things. I have no intentions of coming back here, I am claiming back my life and my freedom.. I walked down the street to the main road, to catch a taxi. I was an emotional mess, couldn't believe what I've just done. I am a murderer.

SOLE

They put me in a straight jacket and isolated me from the rest of the patients. The door opened and the psychiatrist walked in..

He was alone, didn't have any guards with him.. Him: I thought you would still be passed out

Me: How is the Nurse? Him:

He's going to be fine He sat
down on the bed..

Me: You don't know what's wrong with me right? Him: I'm
afraid not

Me: All these tests that were performed all those years ago,
they didn't give any results?

Him: We haven't come across your type of mental illness,
other than the fact that it helps you to be smarter than a
person your age. It worked to your advantage but
nevertheless it has consequences. You have never been
violent with anyone, and for the fact that you attacked
someone it means that more symptoms are showing which
will help us determine what's wrong with you

I kept quiet..

Him: In the meantime we will put you on medication Me: I don't
want medication

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You presented a violent behavior you almost

kill ed a Nurse

Me: The medication won't help, those years ago I've been taking meds and no medication helped so much that I stopped taking them. Why can't I just be let go, since there's nothing that can help me

Him: We can't let you go as yet, not after what you did. I cannot trust you in the society to live with other civilians. What you did today, clearly shows that you are a danger. Until we can be sure that you hold no danger anymore towards anyone then you will be released

He got up... Him:

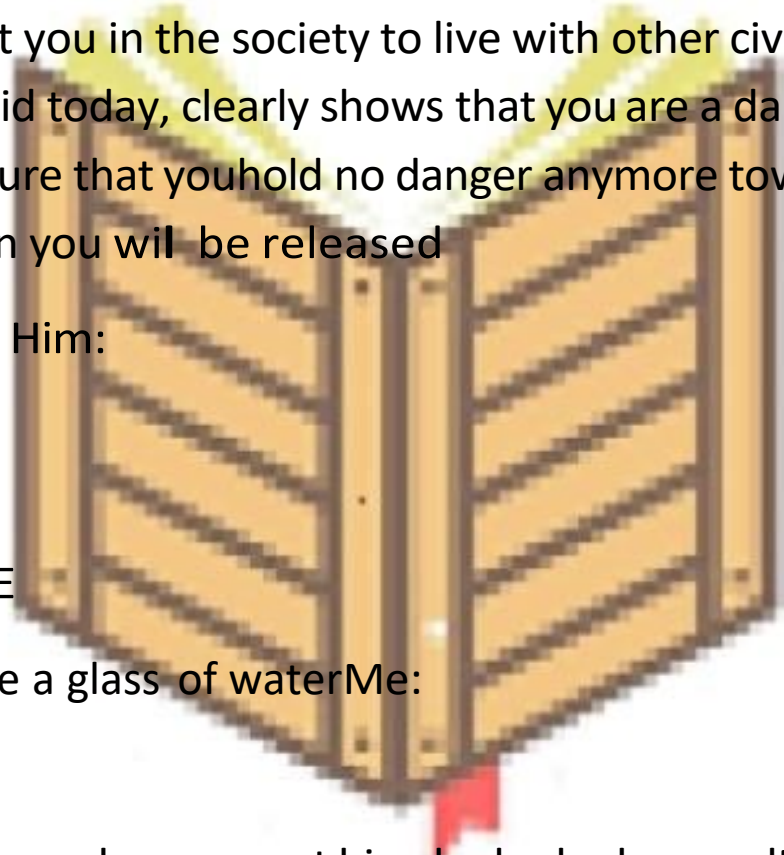
I'm sorry

SANDISIWE

She gave me a glass of water Me:

Thank you

Her: That time when we met him, he looked normal Me: I was also surprised by his behavior, I didn't



expect this

She sat next to me...

Her: But is he a danger to you?

Me: He has never been violent towards me nor abusive in any form. Honestly speaking he has been the best but after this.. I'm scared, I'm scared that one day he's going to lose it and attack me

Her: This is difficult

Me: That's why I'm thinking of abortion, I can't trust him with the baby

Her: Think it through first. Abortion is not a walk in a park, you might regret it. I think you should also talk to him about this, don't take decisions like that on your own. After all, you guys are still in a relationship unless I'm confused, but you need to do this right. Talk to him first and you guys can resort to any decision that both of you are going to feel comfortable with. For now, you can stay here as long as you want

Me: Thank you Cuz

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Mom and Dad they'll be pleased to see you, it's been a while

Me: That's true

NONGCEBO

I made my way to Kelso's place, I saw his car parked outside. It's good that he's here..

For now he's the only choice I have, but soon I will be getting up and getting my own. Then I'll be able to start my life when I have decided on what to do.. I stood at the door of his room and knocked..

Kelso: I'm coming!

I waited..

He opened the door after a few seconds, He did look surprised to see me standing at his doorstep with my bags. I looked at him and he looked at me, tears streamed down..

Him: Come here

I walked up to him and he hugged me.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I killed him (crying) Him:

Huh?

He broke the hug and looked at me.. Me: I

poisoned him

He sighed..

Me: I'm a murderer He

hugged me again..

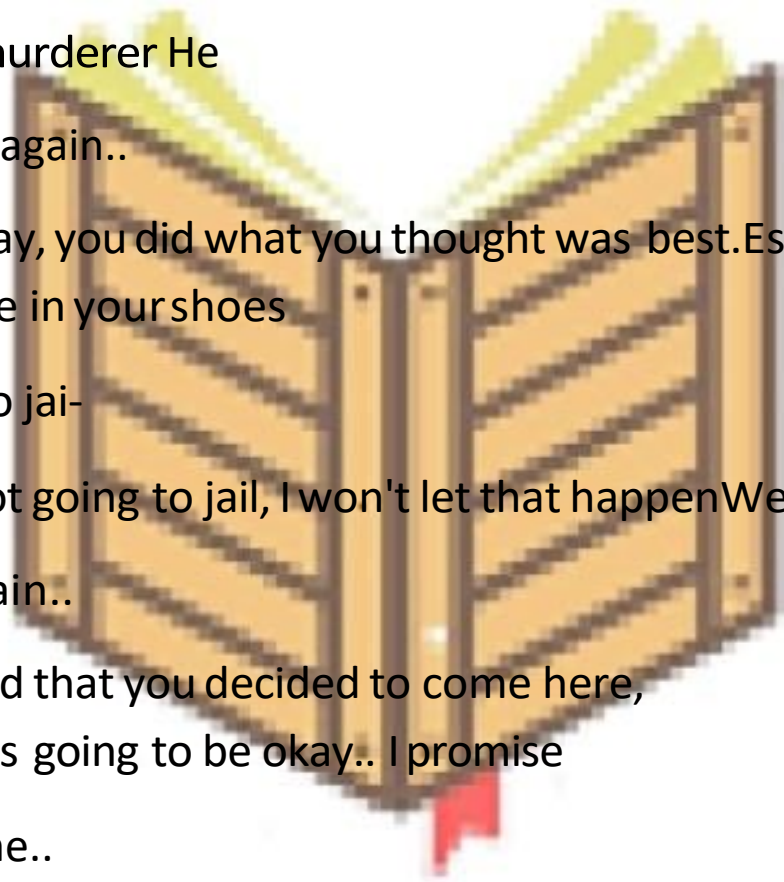
Him: It's okay, you did what you thought was best. Especially for someone in your shoes

Me: If I go to jail-

Him: You not going to jail, I won't let that happen We broke the hug again..

Him: I'm glad that you decided to come here, everything is going to be okay.. I promise

He kissed me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

BANZA

I knocked without anyone giving me any response. I opened the door and walked in.

Me: Zulu? Ngcebo?

It was quiet. I walked to the living room and I found Makhathini on the floor, with a whiskey bottle next to him. I exhaled, he's still at it drinking.. I made my way to him and took the bottle from him, I put it back on the table. I picked him up, heavy as he was and walked to the bedroom with him. I put laid him down on the bed. As I was about to walk out, the wardrobe was open. I looked and Nongcebo's clothes were missing. I walked back to Makhathini, his breathing was shallow. I walked out and I saw the bottle of blue death on the table..

Me: Nongcebo No..

I picked it up so I can have my fingerprints all over it. Then I went back to the bedroom, I took the pillow and put it over his head. I pressed down hard and waited for a few minutes before removing it. When I was done, I got my phone and called the cops

To be continued

Please to those who sponsored inserts fortoday,
I'm waiting for links in my inbox[08/24,

12:59] : 34

NONGCEBO

I was laying on the bed with a pil owon my thighs,Kelso was
laying his head on the pil ow. He was playing with my fingers..

Me: I left him like that

Him: You were bound to resort to that, years of abusive there
comes a time when you can't take it anymore

Me: It stil doesn't make it right, kil ing a humanbeing is not
right

Him: What he did to you was not rightMe: I

can't drag you into this

Him: Don't wor y, such nonsense is my expertise

NOVELSGURU.COM

(Silence)

Me: So what happens from here? Should I not go to jail?

Him: Well you talked about wanting to go to school. How about we make that happen?

Me: I would like that

Him: Registrations are closed for now, we can only apply next year or so. If you wanna do something, maybe we can get you a job?

Me: I've never worked before

Him: I'm sure you will enjoy working, getting your own paper and being your own person

Me: That would be great

Him: Then we can get married

Me: Married?

Him: I'm not losing you again!

laughed..

Me: That's a bit extreme



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: What do you say?

Me: We've only known each other for a while Him:

There's couples who get married after 3 months of knowing each other, there's couples who drag 10 years still dating and not getting married then they break up

Me: I've always wanted to get married some day Him: See..

Why shouldn't we make that happen? Me: Let's get married

He turned and looked at me.. Him:

Are you sure?

I nodded..

He got up and opened my legs, then he got on top of me..

Him: I'm ready we can even do it tomorrow

I laughed..

Me: Tomorrow it's too soon He

looked at me..

NOVELSGURU.COM



Him: Then let's start planningMe:

This is so crazy

Him: I've always lived my life crazyMe: I

can see that

(Silence)

Me: Okay we wil do it, not something big though Iwould like a
smal wedding

Him: Then let's do it

He leaned over and kissed me..

SANDISIWE

I was typing a fewchapters when my Aunt came tome..

Aunt: Takie told me about the abortionI

exhaled..

Aunt: I just wanna talk to you about somethingShe sat

down next to me.. **NOVELSGURU.COM**



Aunt: I had a colleague back when I just started working. She abandoned her kids due to circumstances and a feud that she had with her children's father. She left them when they were very young and never looked back. She thought about them everyday, never had peace. She learned later on that her Daughter passed on from an Overdose, her Son resorted to the life of crime. Had she took her kids with, and saw them passed their father's mistakes. They probably would've had a better life.

Giving up a child whether it's abortion, abandoning them, it will haunt you forever. I don't know what the story is with your baby daddy but don't punish this innocent soul. Maybe the pregnancy was unexpected but this soul didn't ask to be conceived, don't punish your baby for his mistakes. I know you young and you still unsure about your future, but God made this creation to happen. God will see you through. I want you to think about it before resorting to a permanent decision based on temporal emotions

Me: He would've made a great father

She smiled..

Her: Then you have no reason to do this. The baby will be a constant reminder of the love you guys both shared. The baby will heal whatever was broken, there's nothing as beautiful as bringing a human being into this world. Loving someone unconditionally it's a great feeling

Me: Thank you Auntie.. Kelo and Takie are blessed to have you

Her: I hope so.. I know you have issues with your family and it's okay, know that we're here to support you and the baby

Me: Thank you very much

Her: You're welcome.. Let me go and make you something to eat

Me: Thank you

Such a wonderful woman, I wish that she was my Mother..

BANZA

NOVELSGURU.COM

The door opened and another detective walked in. He closed the door and sat down.

Him: We won't charge you with anything
Me: I have already confessed

Him: You didn't do it, did you?

Me: I poisoned him then I put a pillow over him. I did it

Him: Why?

Me: He was a ruthless person
Him: Do you feel any remorse?
Me: No

Him: You didn't do it

Me: Why are you so sure?

Him: Poisoning is not what a man would usually resort to in killing another man. It's either you shoot him, beat him to death, or hire someone to do it. You are covering up for someone, and I'm sure it's a woman

Me: Who are you?

Him: I am detective Nkambule, King Nkambule

Me: I've heard about you.. Best in the game

Him: That's why I've been brought here to handle your case

Me: Just charge me with homicide already

Him: He's not dead

I looked at him..

Him: He's in a critical state but he's not dead. So far it's just attempted murder

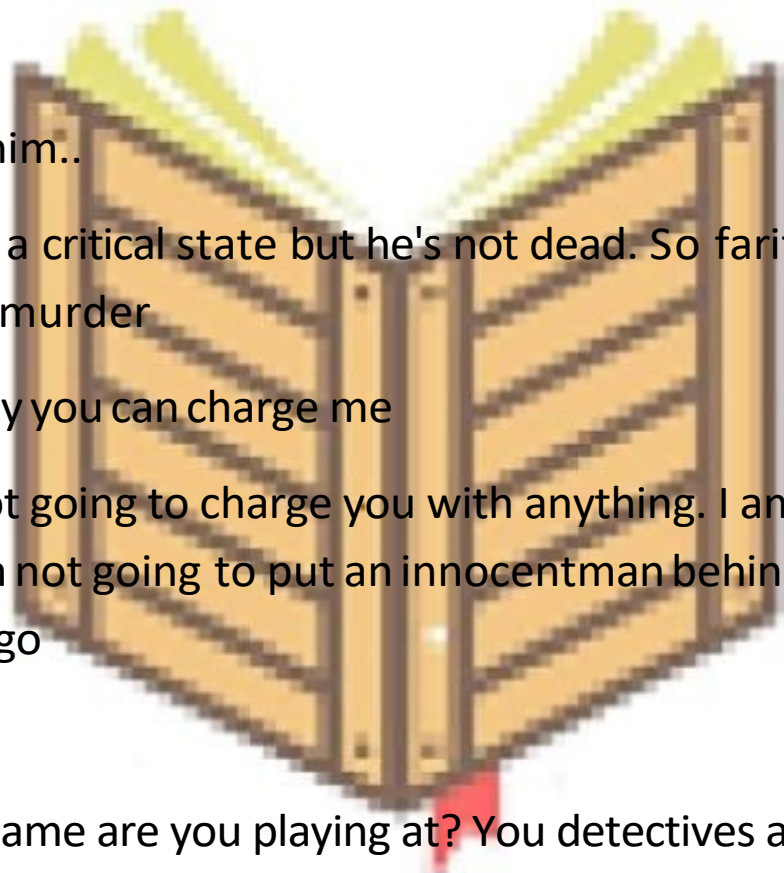
Me: It's okay you can charge me

Him: We not going to charge you with anything. I am for the law, and I'm not going to put an innocent man behind bars so you free to go

I chuckled..

Me: What game are you playing at? You detectives are good with mind games and manipulating people

Him: I'm not playing any mind games. Like I said,



NOVELSGURU.COM

I'm not putting an innocent man behind bars. You free to go

He got up..

Him: Thank you for your time and cooperation

What is he playing at? This is not normal. He is definitely up to something, I don't think him letting me go is just an act of my being innocent. He is playing at something!

NONGCEBO

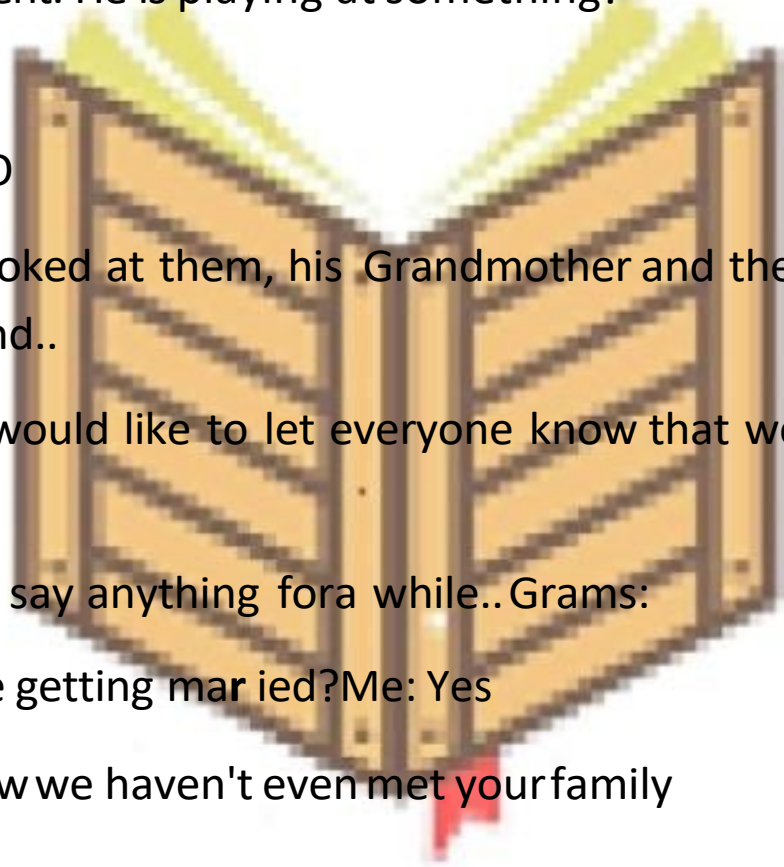
We both looked at them, his Grandmother and the kids. He held my hand..

Kelso: We would like to let everyone know that we getting married

They didn't say anything for a while.. Grams:

You two are getting married? Me: Yes

Grams: Wow we haven't even met your family



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I grew up in an orphanage, that was the only family I knew until I got adopted. The woman who gave me a home, when she passed on. Her husband made me his wife

Kelso squeezed my hand a little.. Grams:

I'm so sorry to hear that

Kelso: I just want Nongcebo and Bongeka to be apart of the family

Grams nodded..

Grams: Of course.. They already a part of the family Nessi: I am a bride's maid right?

Me: I don't think it's going to be a big wedding

Nessi: It should be a memorable event, one that you will look back at it and smile

Bongeka: That's very true.. I'm so happy

Grams: Well I guess we going to have a wedding soon

Kelso and I looked at each other and smiled

NOVELSGURU.COM

DETECTIVE KING

I looked at Banza as he walked out..

Captain: I can't believe we letting him walk just likethat?

Me: I know what I'm doing

Him: Exactly what are you doing?

Me: He is protecting someone.. There's a high chance that he wil contact her, that's why I'm goingto have him tailed. That guy is innocent

Him: He confessed I'm sure we wil find hisfingerprints on the bottle

Me: We wil because he incriminated himself, but believe me. I've been in this game fora long time. Iknow when someone is innocent

Him: It's fine King, just find that us the damn culprit!Me: I wil do so chief

NOVELSGURU.COM

Another officerwalked up to us..

Him: He didn't make itMe:

Who?

Him: The victim who was poisoned, he passed on atthe hospital about an hour ago

He handed us the report..

Cap: Now we have a homicide on our hands, getthis man justice Detective. Bring forth the real culprit

Me: I wil do so

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by the admin of "Beautyand a Beat"

Please support

<https://m.facebook.com/Beauty-And-A-Beat-108687477325340/>

[08/24, 13:00] : 35



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Makhathini's passing still felt unreal. Sometimes I could just sit and think that he would rock up, or worse call me and ask where I am. I can't believe that I killed him.

After learning that he passed on, I had no strength to go back to the house and mourn him, I wasn't married to him. I was not his wife I don't owe him anything. I was shocked to find out that Banza took the fall for me, what if he went to jail for this? That was the most craziest thing that he's ever done...

Minki: Please put these ones there Me:

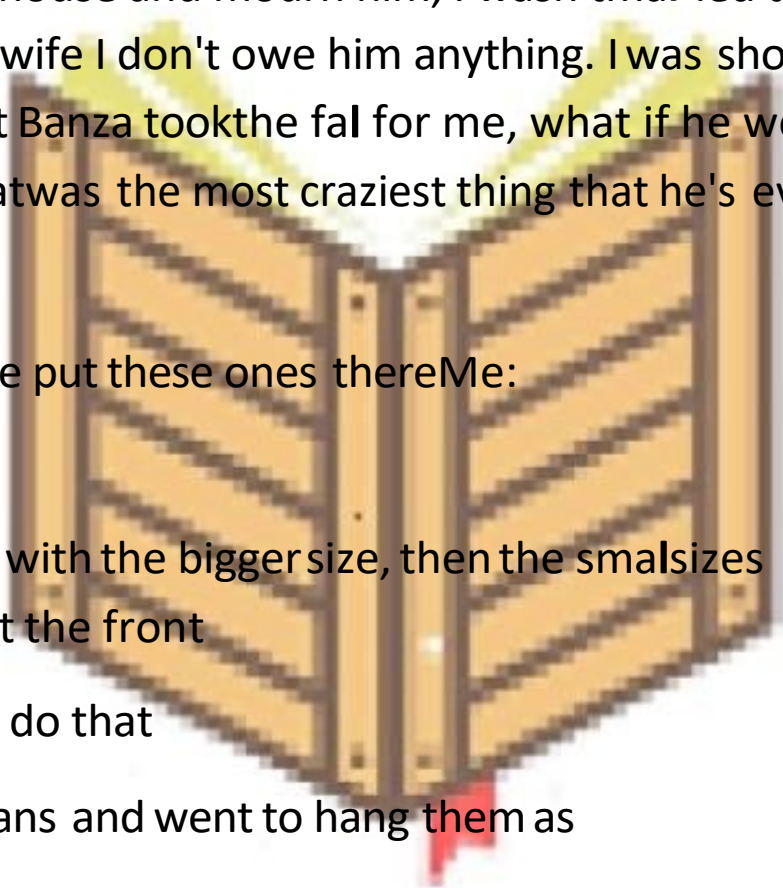
Okay

Minki: Start with the bigger size, then the small sizes should be at the front

Me: Okay I'll do that

I took the jeans and went to hang them as instructed..

Kelso knew someone who knew someone, who



knew someone that got me a job at some clothing store at the mall. I am still a temp working reasonable hours for R1800 a month. Many people would say that's little but trust me I am happy. This is my very first job, I'll be getting money that I've worked for.

Minki: So you getting married in 2 weeks?

Me: It's not going to be a big ceremony, just something small

Minki: Are you going to be wearing a white dress? Me: I don't think so

Minki: Kanti how small is it?

Me: Home affairs small type of situation then lunch afterwards

Minki: Most women dream of a big wedding

Me: I'm just happy that I'm getting married. Big or small I don't really care. Honestly speaking I never thought that I was ever going to get married to someone that I truly love, so this is a big deal for me

Minki: Customer alert

Me: I've got it

I looked at the guy, Only saw his side view as he was busy checking some hoodies..

Me: What is Kelso doing here?

I made my way to him as he turned and concentrated on the hoodies, he had his back against me. I looked around, Minki was busy with some file at the counter. I walked up to him and snuck my arms around his waist, hugging him from behind..

Me: What are you doing here? Thought you w-He turned around slowly..

Him: Excuse me?!

quickly let go..

Me: I'm.. Wow.. I'm so sor yHe smiled..

Him: That was awkward

He had dimples just like Kelso. They looked very much alike, not identical twins alike but 80% alike..



Me: I'm really sorry you just look like my boyfriend
Him: Is it?

Me: Uhm yes.. I'm so sorry

I walked away and realized that I am the only one who can help him as everyone else was busy..I took a deep breath and walked up to him..

Me: This is very awkward again but.. I am Nongcebo and I work here, can I help you with something?

Him: Yes please

He was still smiling..

Him: I'm looking for a hoodie

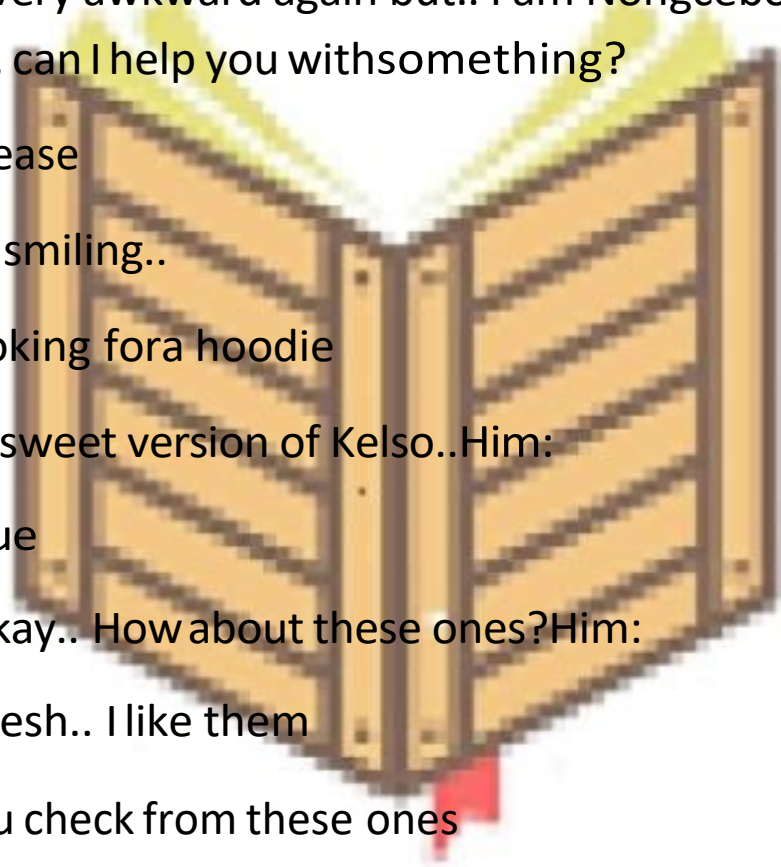
He was the sweet version of Kelso..Him:

White or blue

Me: Uhm okay.. How about these ones?Him:

They look fresh.. I like them

Me: Yes you check from these ones



SANDISIWE

I was so nervous. The last time I saw him, he was a mess. A great mess..

I looked around, a mental institution is not as bad as I thought it would be. The door opened, and they walked him in. I stood up.

He was surprised to see me, think he didn't expect to have me as a visitor..

Nurse: 30min snowflake

He walked up to me, I noticed he had a fresh scar under his right eye. So funny that he looked good in that white outfit, the t-shirt was a bit tight. His hair was growing and so was his facial hair. I didn't expect him to look this good, thought he would be a mess considering the given history of mental institutions. Sole has a good body, very muscular and broad shoulders.. Even in this hell hole he didn't disappoint..

Him: Hey

Me: Hey

NOVELSGURU.COM

He came closer and hugged me..Him:

Wasn't expecting you

Me: I know

We broke the hug..

Me: Snowflake?

He laughed..

Him: It gets crazy hereMe: I

can see that

He put his hand on my cheek..Him:

I've missed you

Me: I've missed you tooHim:

You look good Me: You look

good too We sat down..

Him: Who brought you here?

Me: My cousin.. She's waiting outside, Kelso was the one
who gave me the name of the institution



Him: I'm going to kill him

Me: Don't do that.. I wanted to see you

Him: I'm sorry for everything that I've put you through

Me: Don't apologize

Him: I didn't mean to scare you I held

his hand..

Me: I know

He kissed my hand..

Me: I have something to tell you Him:

Yeah?

Me: Or rather show you Him:

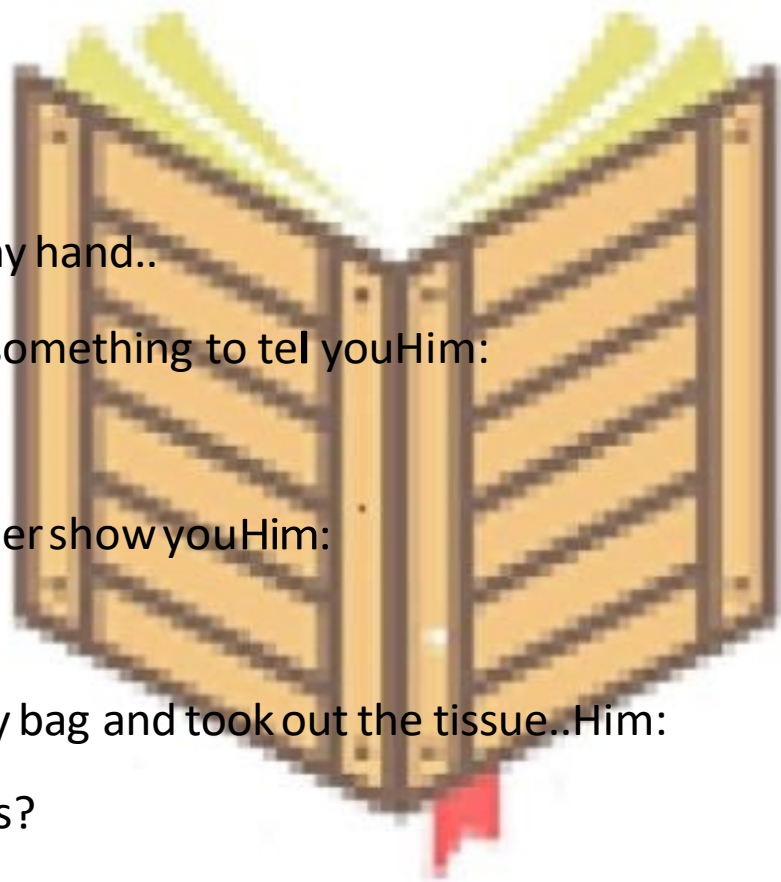
What is it?

I opened my bag and took out the tissue.. Him:

What is this?

Me: unwrap it

He unwrapped it and then held the pregnancy test..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm pregnant

He looked at the pregnancy test..Him:

You pregnant?

Me: We going to have a baby

He looked at it for a long time until I saw tears in his eyes..

Me: Sole

Him: I'm sorry.. I just need a moment

He got up and walked away to stand by the window.I got up and went to him..

Me: Hey are you okay?

He turned and looked at me.. Him: I

don't know what to say

Me: I was like that when I first found outHe

wiped his tears..

Me: You are going to make me cry

He pulled me closer to him and hugged me.



Him: Thank you.. Thank you so much
I thought about when I wanted to abort..

KELSO

Dad: Did you go and see the Traditional healer?Me: Not
yet

Him: Exactly what are you waiting for?

Me: Lately I've been having dreams about TakieHe laid
back on his chair..

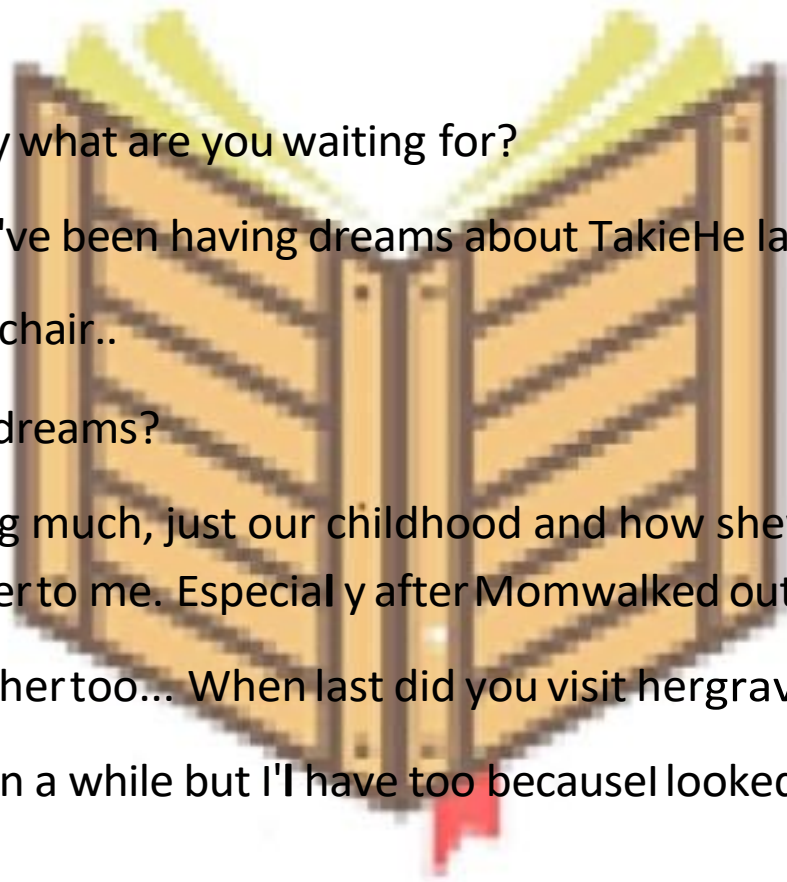
Him: What dreams?

Me: Nothing much, just our childhood and how shewas more
like a mother to me. Especial y after Momwalked out on us

Him: I miss her too... When last did you visit hergrave?

Me: It's been a while but I'll have too becauseI looked at
him..

Me: In 2 weeks time I'll be getting mar ied



NOVELSGURU.COM

He closed his eyes and shook his head..Him: You can't get married Kelso

Me: I'm getting married

Him: This life is not for marriage, do you wanna end up here?

Me: Nongcebo is not like mom

Him: When the going gets tough she won't think twice about turning you in. Right now you still very much in love wait until after the marriage. Wait until your going in and coming out is questioned, having to constantly lie to her and not being able to live a double life. Then you end up just telling her the truth because you can't keep on lying. Then when she finds someone else, she will use that against you to be rid of you.. What does she do?

Me: She's working but she'll be going back to school next year

Him: This won't end well

Me: We not like you and Mom

Him: You making a very big mistake. This life and

marriage, they don't mix.. It's oil and water!

BANZA

Aunt: Vele umbulele! (she killed him) Aunt 2:

Kukumanje uphi? (where is she)

Aunt: Soloko safika, akakezi (Since we've been here, she hasn't come)

Aunt 2: Akakezi? Bekumele ngabe simthole la (She is not here? We were supposed to find her here)

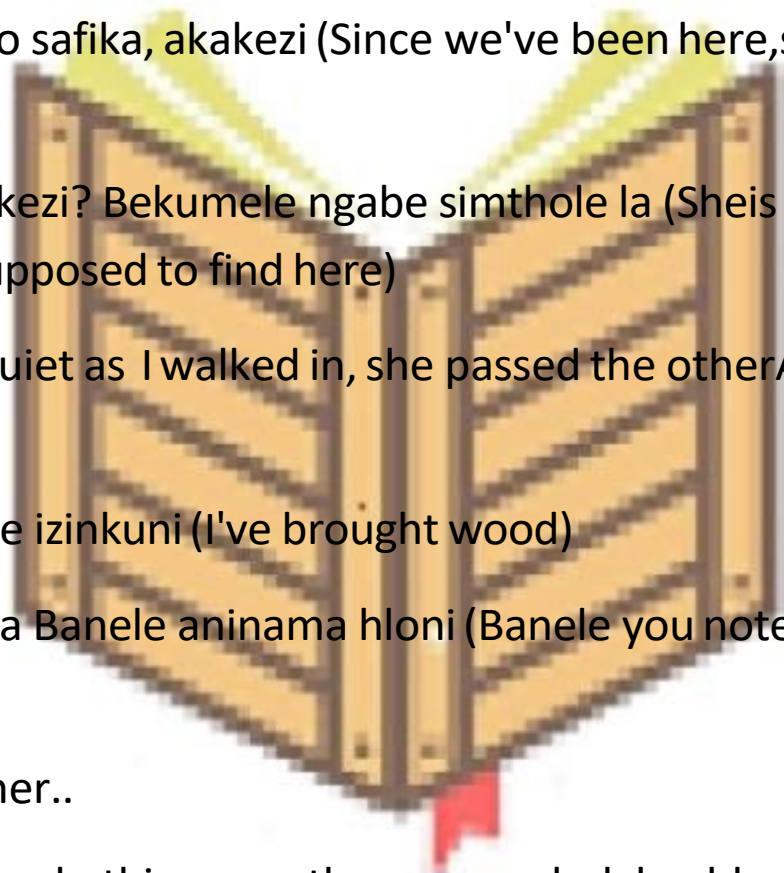
They kept quiet as I walked in, she passed the other Auntie the snuff..

Me: Ngilethe izinkuni (I've brought wood)

Aunt: Kodwa Banele aninama hloni (Banele you are not even ashamed)

I looked at her..

Aunt: Sizwile ukuthi wena uthethe nguwe obulale ubhuti (We heard that you confessed to killing our Brother)



Aunt 2: Uvikela loya nondindwa uNongcebo (Are you protecting that harlot Nongcebo)

I didn't know what to say to them...

Aunt: Umtshele ke ukuthi alimbambe lingashoni (tell her that her day is coming)

.

To be continued

This inserted was sponsored by a Beloved who is asking for votes as she entered MissSA century ambassador. To vote please Sms "MSA45" to 35180

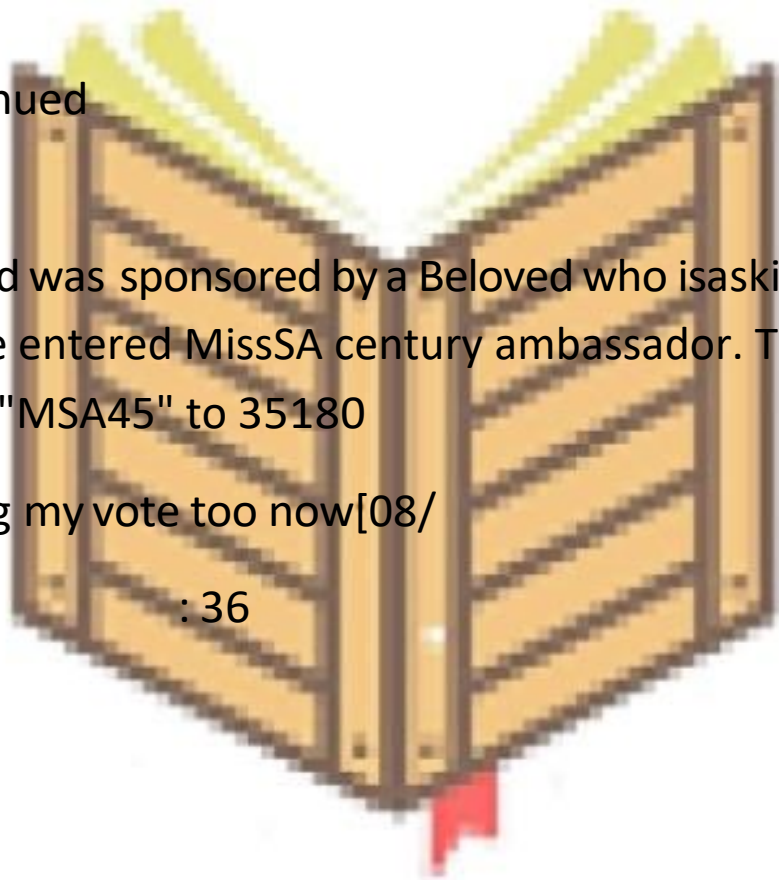
I'll be casting my vote too now [08/

24, 13:01] : 36

SOLE

I knocked at the psychiatrist's office...

NOVELSGURU.COM



Him: Come in!

made my in..

Him: We don't have a session today do we? Me: No

I sat down..

Him: Can I help you with something? Me: I

would like to be out of here

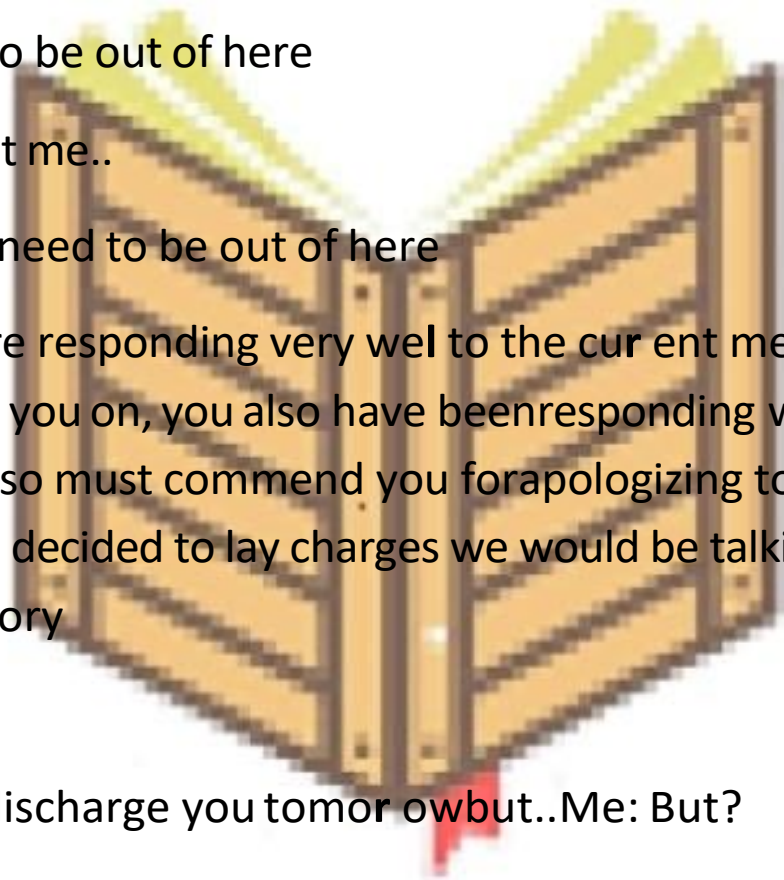
He looked at me..

Me: I really need to be out of here

Him: You are responding very well to the current medication that we put you on, you also have been responding well to the therapy. I also must commend you for apologizing to the Nurse, if he decided to lay charges we would be talking a different story

Me: So?

Him: I will discharge you tomorrow but.. Me: But?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You will continue with your medication and therapy

That was a relief...Me:

Thank you

Him: I don't wanna feel like I'm making a big mistake

Sole

Me: You not.. Thank you

Him: Off record.. Why do you wanna get out of here so bad

Me: My girlfriend is pregnant Him:

Ohw congratulations That "ohw" was

questionable..Me: Ohw?

Him: Are you aware that your baby might have your condition too?

Me: Ya.. I'm well aware of that He

nodded..

Him: We will find out what's wrong with you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Can't you let it go?

Him: We have to find out what's wrong with you
nodded..

Me: I see

Him: Tomorrow I'll come in late, I have an appointment at the hospital first... So let me get your release forms.. You can sign them today then tomorrow you will be released

Me: Thank you

He went to get the forms..

NONGCEBO

Kelso stopped by to take me out for lunch..Him:

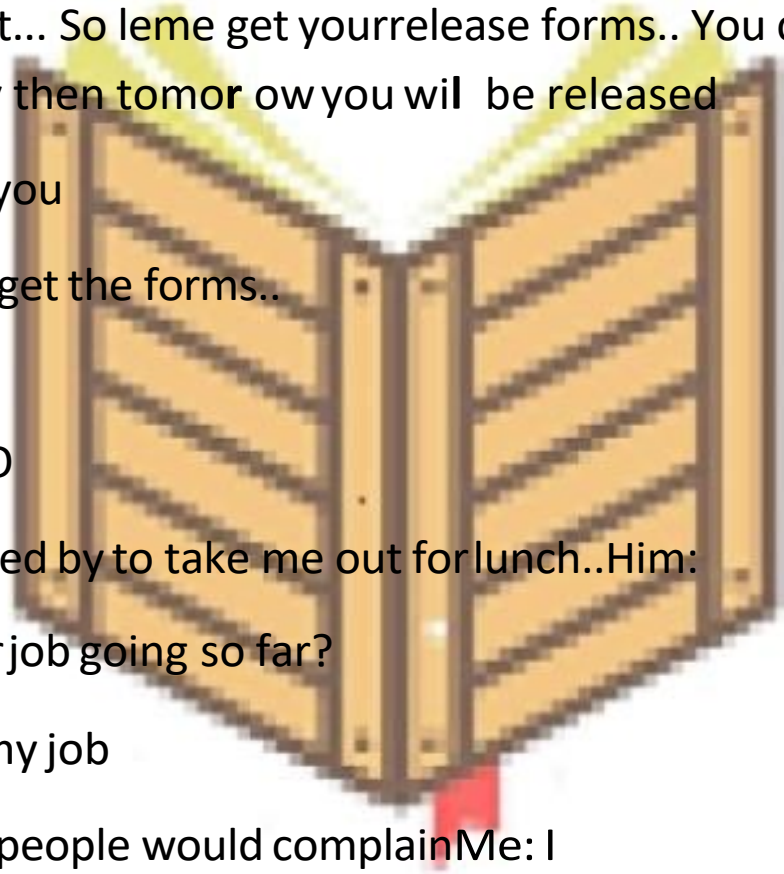
How is your job going so far?

Me: I love my job

Him: Many people would complain Me: I

really like it.. It's fun

Him: I'm glad you enjoying



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Before I forget... I saw someone who looks very much like you earlier on, it's like you have a twin somewhere out there
He chuckled..

Him: If I had a twin, I would know

Me: Well you guys look very much alike I don't wanna lie to you

Him: Skat I need to talk to you about something
Me: What is it?

Him: Are you working tomorrow?
Me: Yes

Him: When you not working, when you free My father would like to meet you

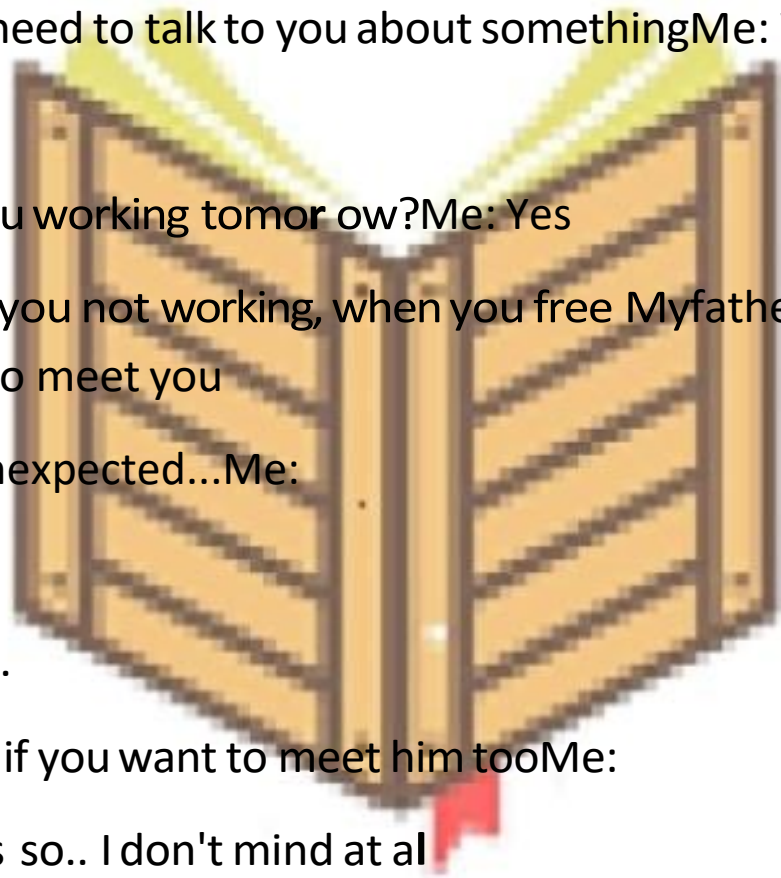
That was unexpected...
Me:

He does?

He nodded..

Him: That's if you want to meet him too
Me:

Uhm I guess so.. I don't mind at all



He smiled and kissed my hand..Him:

Thank you

SANDISIWE

Ma: What do you mean that you are pregnant?Me: I am pregnant Ma

Ma: Sandisiwe! !!

kept quiet..

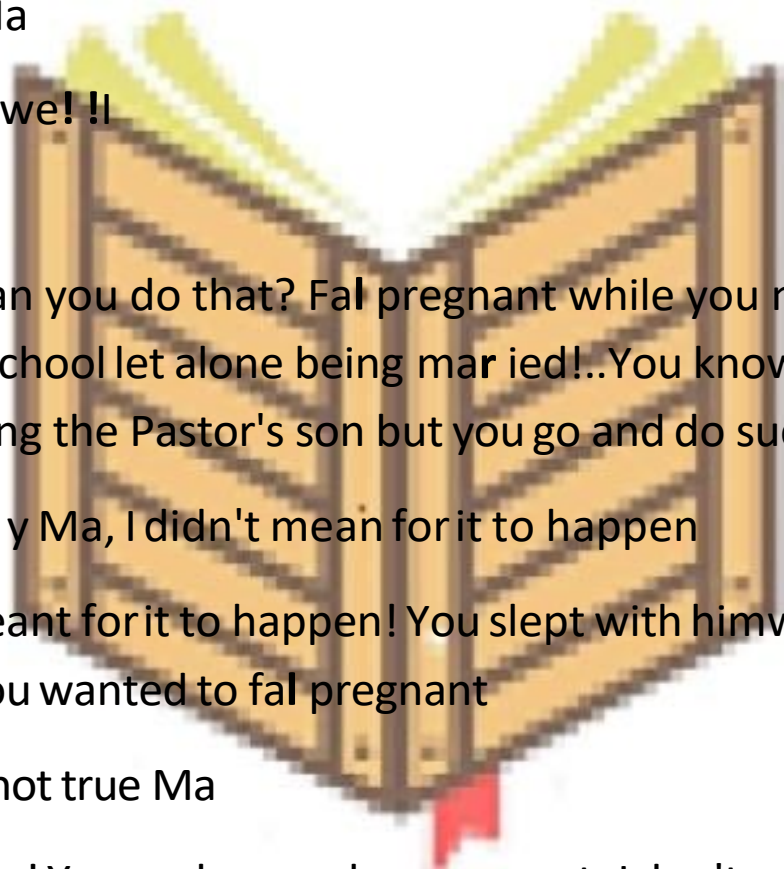
Ma: How can you do that? Fal pregnant while you not even done with school let alone being mar ied!..You know the plan with mar ying the Pastor's son but you go and do such?

Me: I'm sor y Ma, I didn't mean for it to happen

Ma: You meant for it to happen! You slept with himwithout a condom! You wanted to fal pregnant

Me: That's not true Ma

Ma: It is true! You such an embar assment. I don'teven know what to say to you. Your Father is not



going to be happyShe

hung up...

Her reaction was very expected..

NONGCEBO

After our lunch he walked me back into the store, he didn't come in. He stood at the door.

Me: Thank you for taking me out

Him: I'm just practicing being a good husband I chuckled..

Me: See you later

Him: I'll come back and get you laterHe

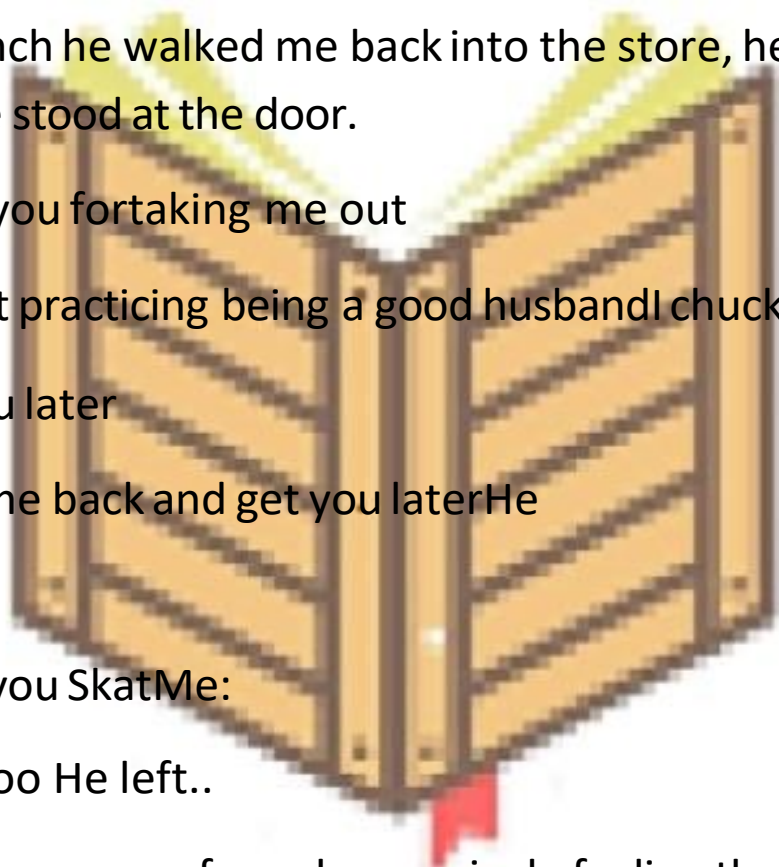
kissed me..

Him: I love you SkatMe:

I love you too He left..

Minki: Hmm some of us who are single feeling the

NOVELSGURU.COM



heat, does he have a brother maybe?

Me: Not that I know of, but if you want him you can have him

Minki: Serious?

Me: Yes because I know after 5min you going to bring him back

She laughed..

Minki: He is that bad? Me:

He is the headache

Minki: And the sex? How is it?

Me: At first it wasn't good, our first sexual encounter

Minki: Why?

Me: I had pissed him off so Minki:

Tension sex is the best

Me: I hated it because of my past experience with my previous relationship, but now..

Minki: Now?

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: With Kelso it's different. His moan makes me very horny, when he bites his lower lip and his dimples come out, there way he handles my body, the way he goes down on me. I mostly like when he comes inside of me, there way he loses his mind and when his cum drips down from my hole and he takes it back in with his dick

Minki: Shuuuu I just got hot down there, when I masturbate with your boyfriend soon to be husband don't blame me

I laughed..

Me: Sex is nice when you do it with someone that you truly love

Minki: I know Babe (Silence)

Minki: And you said he doesn't have a brother My morning customer came in..

Me: Funny enough this guy looks like my boyfriend Him: Good afternoon ladies



NOVELSGURU.COM

He greeted us with a smile..Minki:

And those dimples We greeted

him back..

Him: I'm sor y I wanna make an exchange, thishoodie is too big

Minki: I'm sor y are you single?Him:

Pardon me?

Minki: Are you single?

Him: Is that somehow a requirement to exchange my hoodie?

Minki: Hai ke!

She walked away..

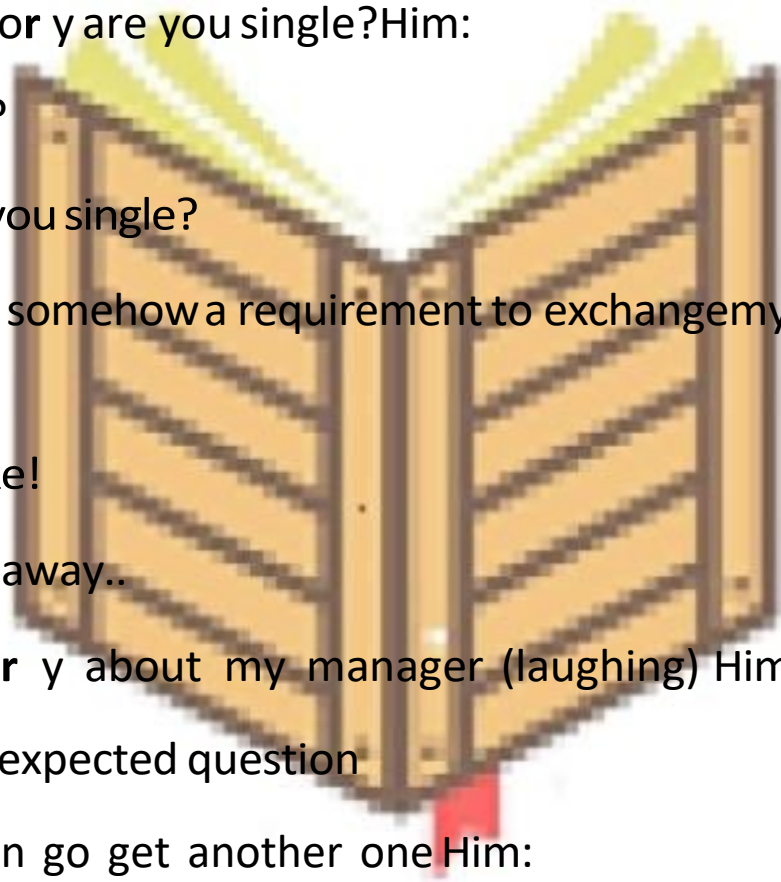
Me: I'm sor y about my manager (laughing) Him:

What an unexpected question

Me: You can go get another one Him:

You not going to help me? He bit his

lowerlip..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Okay let's go

We walked to the Men department..Me:

Get another one

He looked at them..

Him: Actual y there's nothing wrong with my hoodie,just wanted a reason to see you again

Me: Ohw

Him: Can I have your number?Me: I

have a boyfriend

Him: You wanna give me his numberto?I

laughed..

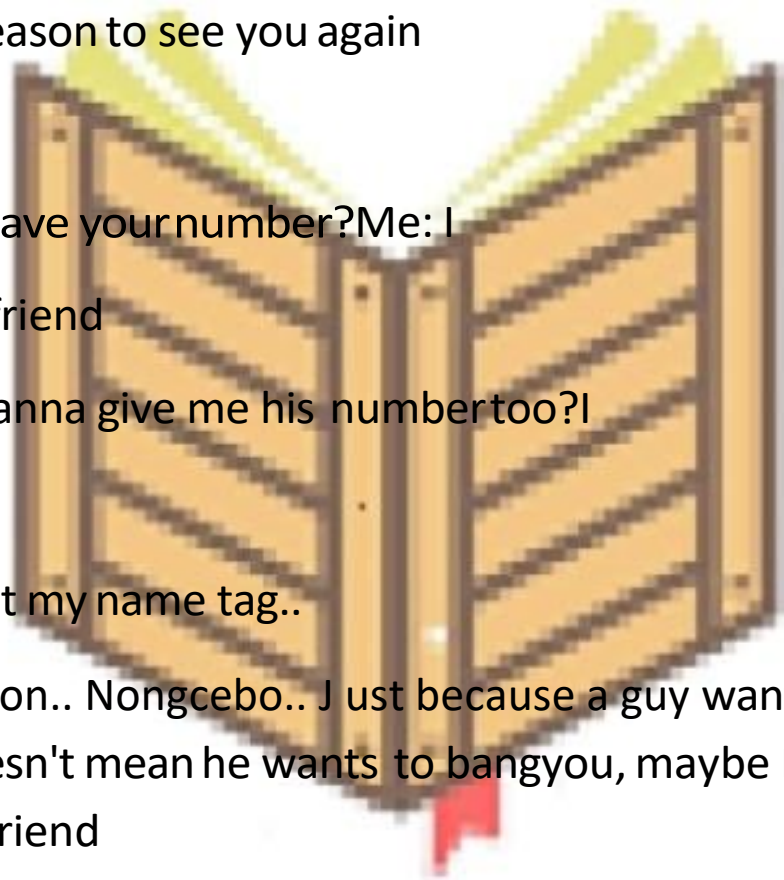
He looked at my name tag..

Him: Come on.. Nongcebo.. J ust because a guy wants your number doesn't mean he wants to bangyou, maybe I just want to be your friend

He took out his phone..Me: J ust

a friend?

Him: Yeap



NOVELSGURU.COM

I gave him number.. Him:

Kelo is my nameMe:

Fascinating nameHim: Yeah

I know rightI nodded..

Him: Let me go.. I don't wanna get you firedMe: Okay

bye

He walked away and then came back again...

Him: Though if you wanna bang know I'm total yfine with that

Me: Bye Kelo (laughing)Him:

Bye Ngcebo

SANDISIWE

I was on the phone with Sole..Me:

Snowflake

He chuckled..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Missing me already?

Him: They releasing me tomor ow?Me:

Are you serious?

Him: Very seriousMe:

That's good

Him: very good.. Where are you?Me:

At the house

Him: Definitely not my houseMe:

How do you know that?

Him: I have an IQ of 228 Babe, there's no way youwere going to stay after what happened. I'm very sure you were also planning to break up with me and abort

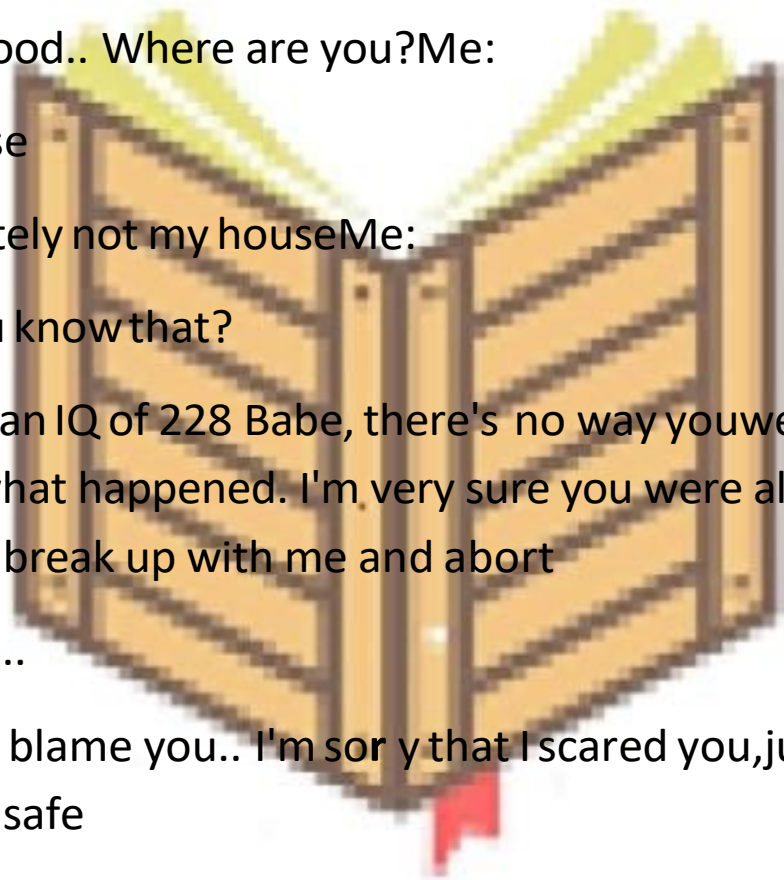
I kept quiet...

Him: I don't blame you.. I'm sor y that I scared you,just wanna know if you safe

Me: I'm safe

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: That's good.. I'm going to see you tomor ow



Me: Can you do me a favour?Him:

Yes?

Me: Please keep your IQ to yourself, makes me feel kinda stupid that I can't outsmart you

He laughed..

Him: I'll keep it to myselfMe:

Thank you

Him: I love you soo much.. Both of youMe: We

love you too

Him: Bye

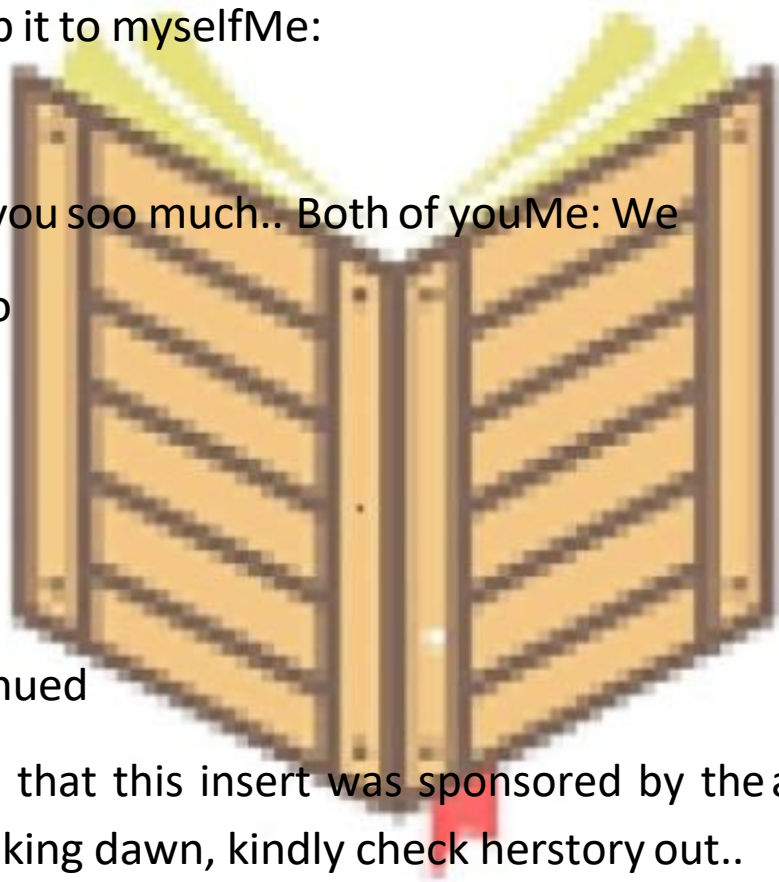
Me: Bye

.

To be continued

Please note that this insert was sponsored by the admin of before breaking dawn, kindly check herstory out..

<https://m.facebook.com/www.aquateller.dawn/?refid=12>



NOVELSGURU.COM

[08/24, 13:02] : 37

NONGCEBO

Kelso fetched me from work later on. My feet were killing me from all that standing. He unlocked the door and blocked me from entering...

Me: Babe stop (laughing)

He picked me up and rushed to the bed then he threw me on the bed..

Him: And he scored.. Touch down! Yeeeeee!! I threw a pillow at him..

Me: You are such a child! (laughing)

Him: Kodwa nihleka kabi Ngcebo I guess that's what they call being comfortable in a relationship

Me: My laugh is not horrible

Him: Have you heard yourself laugh? Me:

Mxm

NOVELSGURU.COM

He picked up the pillow and started hitting me with

it..

Me: Stop it (laughing)

Him: Ai ned ukususa iDust He

gently hit me on my face...Me: Kelso

stop (Laughed)

He stopped..

Him: How was your day?

Me: It was nice, I actual y made a friendHe sat
on the dressing table...

Him: Yeah?

Me: His name is Kelo

He looked at the ceiling.. Him: So

it's a he (whispering)Me: Don't do

that babe

Him: I'm wondering how on earth I should acceptthat

Me: I'm not al owed to have male friends?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You can be a friend to a guy, but he'll never be a friend to you

Me: You don't trust me?

Him: I trust you, I just don't trust them

Me: If I was going to get to up no good, I wouldn't have told you about this

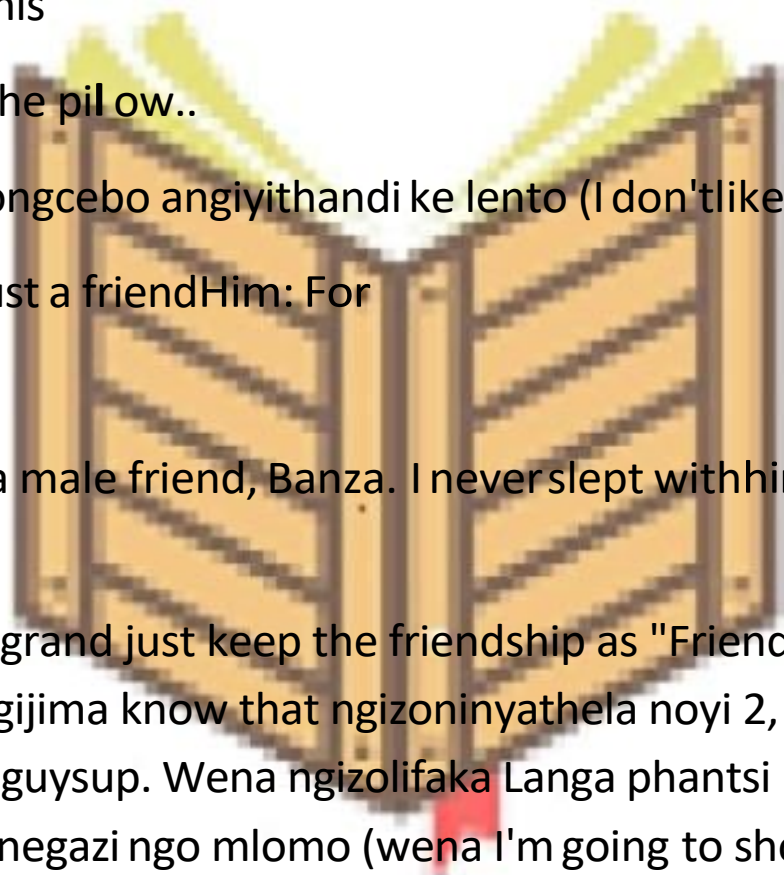
He dusted the pillow..

Him: Eyy Nongcebo angiyithandi ke lento (I don't like this)

Me: He is just a friend
Him: For now

Me: I have a male friend, Banza. I never slept with him, I never dated him

Him: No ku grand just keep the friendship as "Friends" because nagijima know that ngizoninyathela noyi 2, I'm going to fuck you guys up. Wena ngizolifaka Langa phantsi uyilogabha negazi ngo mlomo (wena I'm going to shoot you in your vagina and you going to vomit the bullet out with blood through your mouth)



Me: Are you threatening me?

Him: I'm promising you, so before you even think of kissing him nge mistake eyy ngiyodala ezikadaliweyo, I'm going to cause enye iVurvai that you have never seen before

He threw the pillow at me..

Him: Think about that for a moment because I'm not going to marry a hoe!.. Uyishaye le bhari nyana yakho ukuthi I have a boyfriend with his name already...The Kelo, Kalo, Keni whoever he is! This is it for me, you are it for me! Before you take that drastic step in two weeks time to say "I do" know exactly what you're getting yourself into! This is a die situation!

He walked out..

SANDISIWE

Me: Help me with the plates
He ignored me..

Me: Kelo

NOVELSGURU.COM

He looked at me..

Him: Sor y I was thinking about someoneMe:

Who?

Him: I met this beautiful lovely girl todayMe: Oh

yeah?

Him: She has a boyfriendMe: So

she's off limits Him: Not to me

Me: Haibo Kelo!

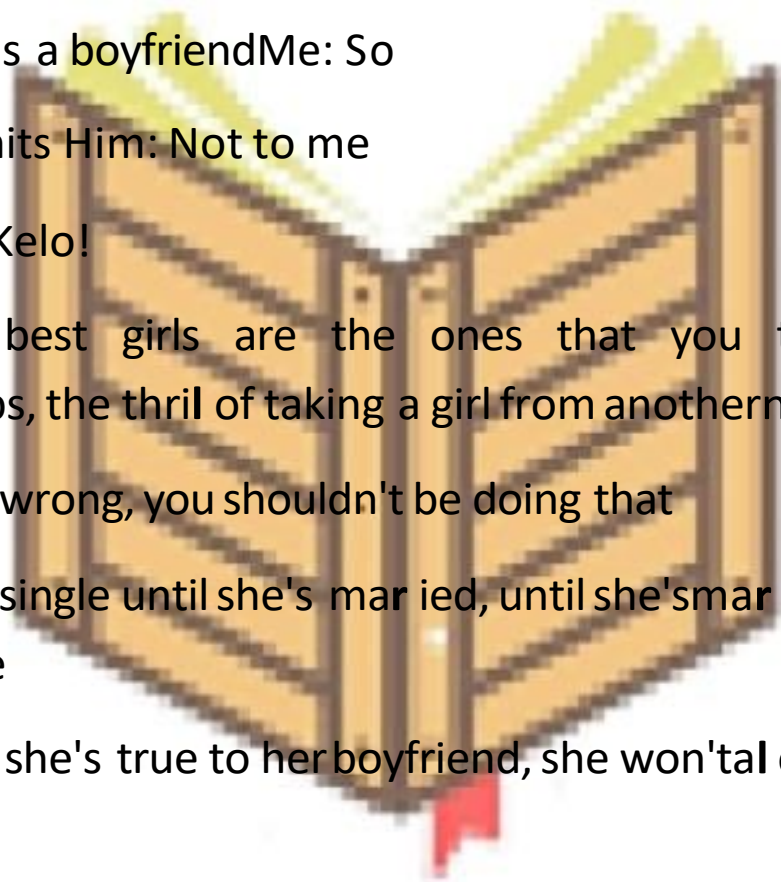
Him: The best girls are the ones that you take from relationships, the thril of taking a girl from another nigga

Me: That is wrong, you shouldn't be doing that

Him: She is single until she's mar ied, until she's smar ied she's single

Me: Naye if she's true to her boyfriend, she won'tal ow to be "Stolen"

Him: She gave me her number, it shows that her



relationship is Teka teking. If she was serious about him, she wouldn't have given me her number

Me: Sometimes girls just wanna have male friends that's all, maybe she gave you her number because she just wants to be friends have you thought about that?

Him: Do you have male friends? Me:

No..

Him: Why?

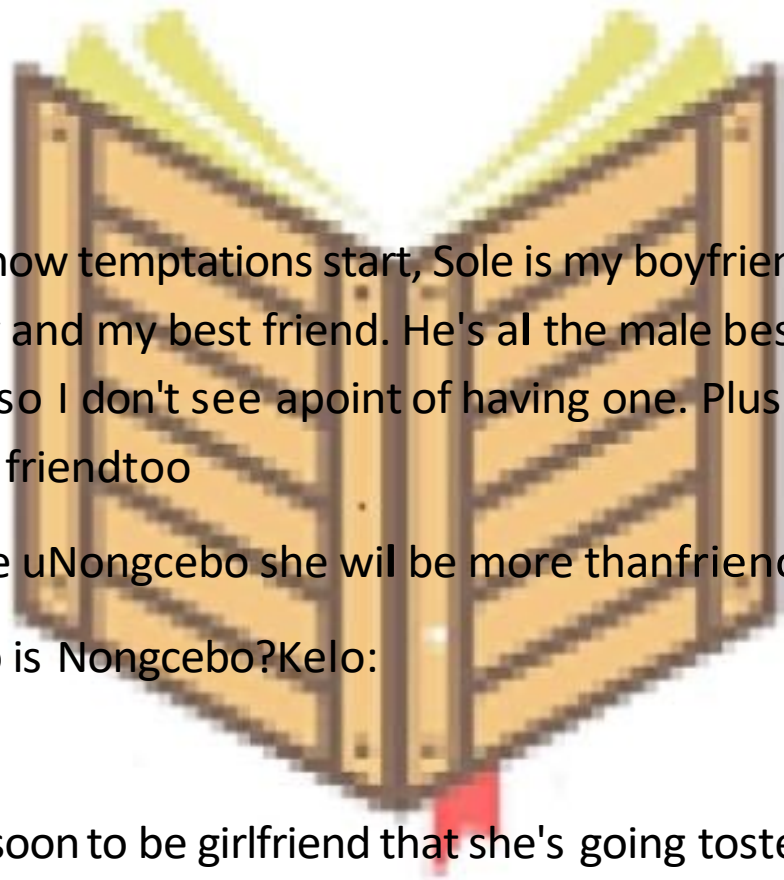
Me: That's how temptations start, Sole is my boyfriend, my baby daddy and my best friend. He's all the male best friends that I need so I don't see a point of having one. Plus you my Cuz and my friend too

Him: Well ke uNongcebo she will be more than friends soon

Aunty: Who is Nongcebo? Kelo:

No one

Me: Kelo's soon to be girlfriend that she's going to steal from another guy



NOVELSGURU.COM

Aunty: I thought you said you wanted to focus on your studies now, no more relationships since your last one didn't last

Kelo: I'm focusing on my studies uSandi uyaphaphashe's too forward

Aunty: I don't want drama some other guys are dangerous and crazy. You will want to steal her and end up in a coffin

Kelo: Speaking from experience?

Aunty: I've just been around so be careful!

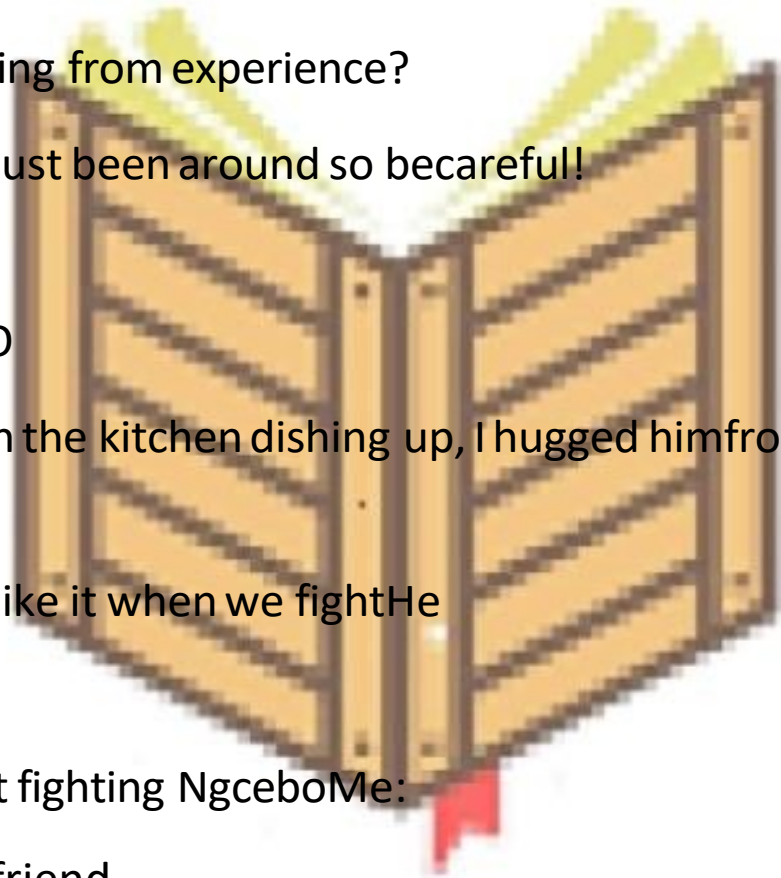
NONGCEBO

Kelso was in the kitchen dishing up, I hugged him from behind..

Me: I don't like it when we fight He exhaled..

Him: I'm not fighting Ngcebo Me:

He's just a friend



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: And what did I say? I let
go of him..

Me: You are being unnecessary, I'm with you aren't I? I love you
and not him

Me: Whatever Nongcebo He
opened the cupboard.. Him: I'll
dish up for you

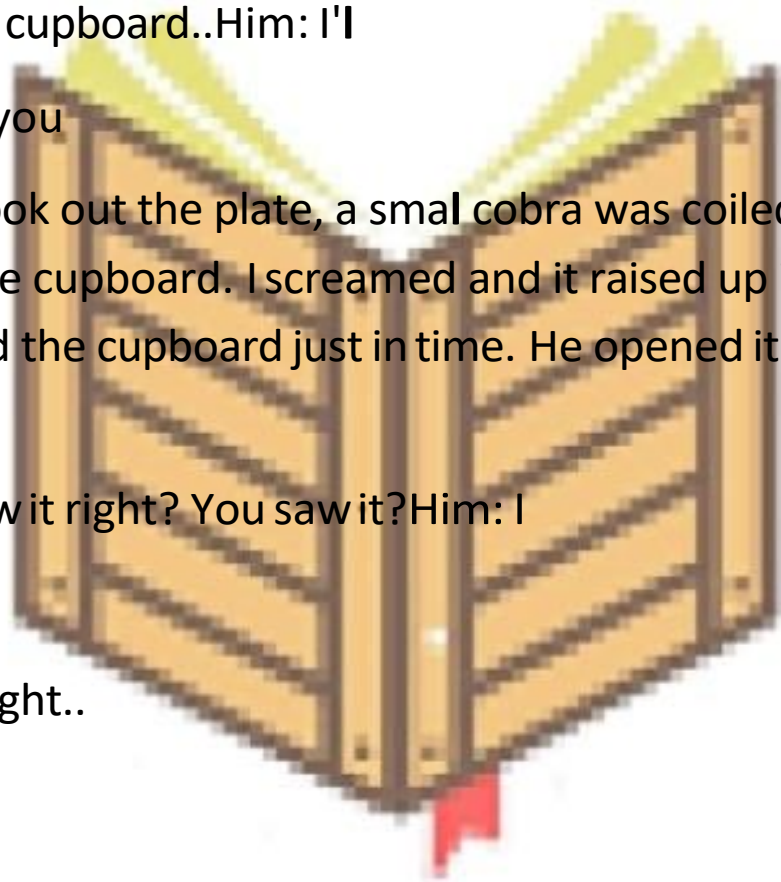
When he took out the plate, a small cobra was coiled up at the
corner of the cupboard. I screamed and it raised up its head.
Kelso closed the cupboard just in time. He opened it again and it
was gone..

Me: You saw it right? You saw it? Him: I
did!

I held him tight..

SOLE

I was sleeping when I suddenly had a dream. In that



NOVELSGURU.COM

dream, a cobra was biting me. It came out from nowhere and it bit me, I opened my eyes and stared at the ceiling. I got out of bed and went to the window..

Roomy: Bad dream? Me:

Something like that(Silence)

Me: A cobra was biting me

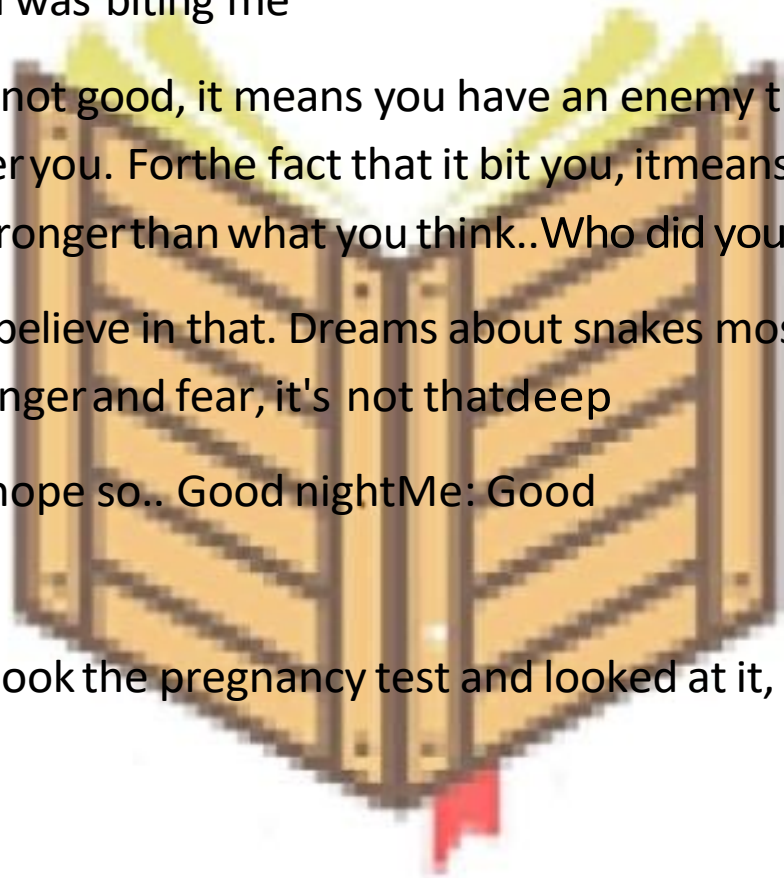
Him: That's not good, it means you have an enemy that's coming after you. For the fact that it bit you, it means your enemy is stronger than what you think..Who did you wrong?

Me: I don't believe in that. Dreams about snakes mostly signify suppressed anger and fear, it's not that deep

Him: Well I hope so.. Good night Me: Good

night

I went and took the pregnancy test and looked at it, I smiled..



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Grams: You guys saw the snake? Me: Yes

Grams: This is not good at all, worse a cobra Kelso:

What does it mean?

Grams: I'm not sure but snakes it's diabolos, I'll have to contact my Pastor so he can come and pray

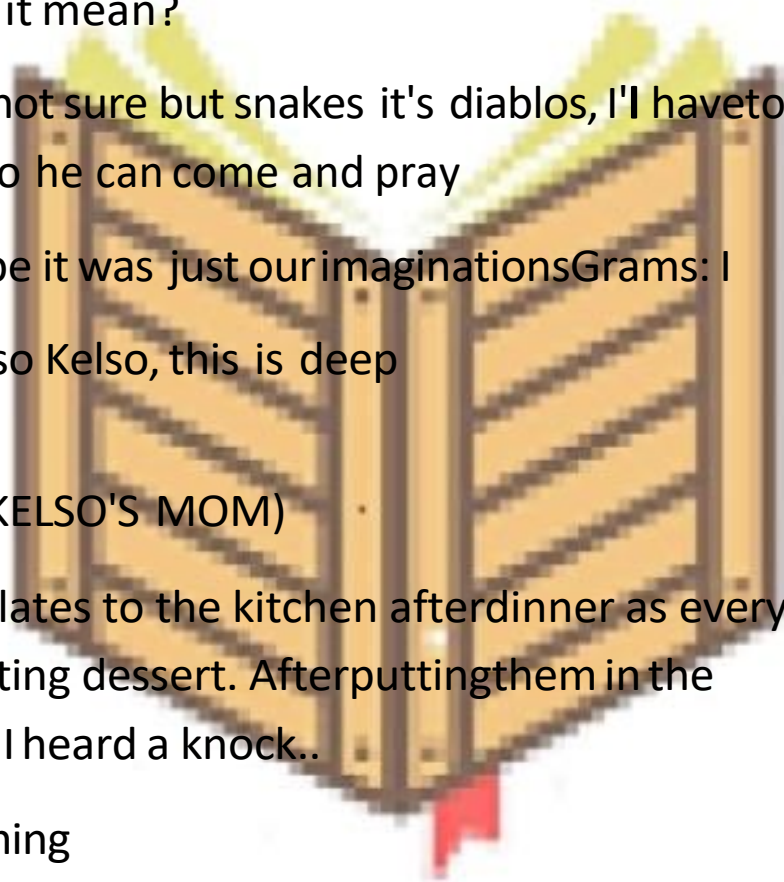
Kelso: Maybe it was just our imaginations Grams: I don't think so Kelso, this is deep

GETRUDE (KELSO'S MOM)

I took the plates to the kitchen after dinner as everyone else was eating dessert. After putting them in the dishwasher I heard a knock..

Me: I'm coming

I went to open, when I opened there was no one. I saw an envelope on the doorstep. I took it and



NOVELSGURU.COM

looked at it. I closed the door and opened it. It was a picture of me with Kelso and Takie. I turned the picture and at the back it was written "28". I panicked and dropped it on the floor.

There's only one person who also has this picture, and that's my Ex..

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by the admin of "Deeplyobsessions" please support by checking out her page

https://m.facebook.com/AmandaBlackRose/?v=feed&ref=dbl&_rdr

[08/24, 13:02] : 38

SANDISIWE

I woke up in the early hours of the morning, I was woken up by the rain and thunder. My cousin Takie was sleeping peacefully next to me, I got up and went to the kitchen to get a glass of water when I

NOVELSGURU.COM

found my Aunt sitting in the living room. The light in the sitting room was off and the one in the passage provided a bit of light that's when I saw her.

She was sitting at the table with a bottle of wine and sobbing..

Me: Aunty?

Her: Sor y Sandi did I wake you up? Me:

Actual y the thunder did

I sat down on the other chair.. Me: Are

you okay?

She wiped her tears..

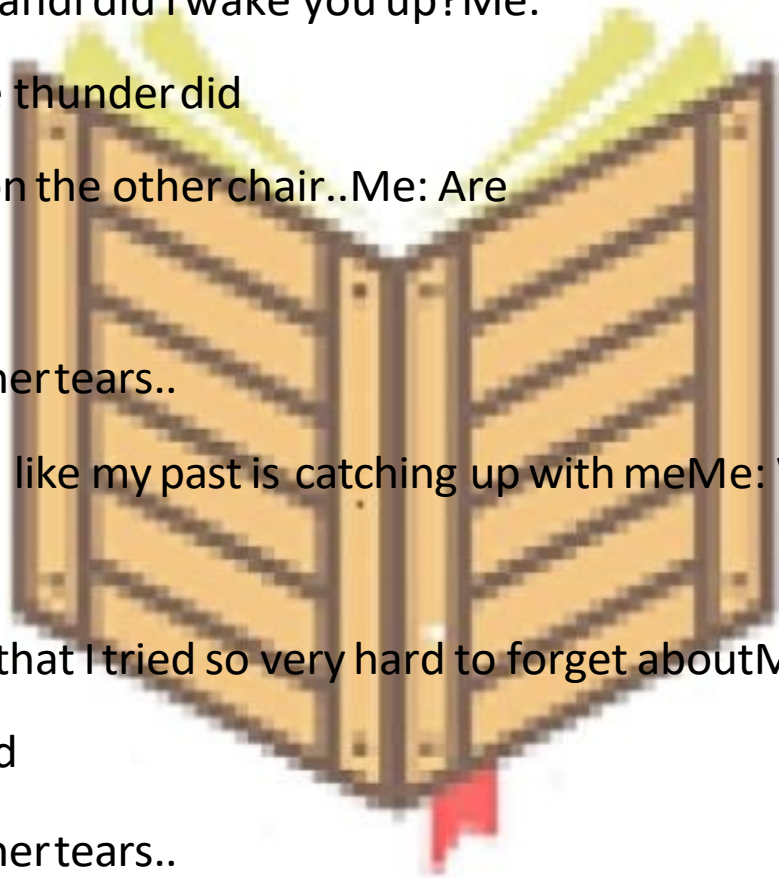
Her: It looks like my past is catching up with me Me: What past?

Her: A past that I tried so very hard to forget about Me: I'm sure it wasn't bad

She wiped her tears..

Her: I am not actual y a saint Me:

Wanna talk about it?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Maybe some other day

She got up and balanced on the table with her hands..

Her: You should try and get some sleep Me: I will

She walked out to her bedroom..

NONGCEBO

Kelso was on top of me, his finger on my clit rubbing it as he sucked one of my titties at the same time. In my whole years of having sex this is one experience where I can say that sex is not really bad, it depends on the person you decide to share such a moment with. I never knew that a woman even comes during such, my sexual experience with Makhathini was always one sided. Yes I did get a bit wet here and there maybe that's the nature of the vagina to moisten itself but I never really enjoyed sex with him..

Apart from him hitting it good, his moans next to my ear are always the ones that really turn me on more.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Knowing that he's real y enjoying it makes my body to relax and my mind to trust him even more..

[REMOVED]

BANZA

At around 5am we made our way to the mogue. Makhathini's Aunt wanted me to tag along for some reason. She had on her traditional healer attire, and though she did say she is one but I could sense that she wasn't a genuine one. I don't blame Makhathini for consulting with Bhubesi, it seems like he is used to consulting with traditional healers. Once that also practice black Magic. It me, his Aunt, his two sisters and his brother. There's more of his siblings, they quite a big family..

Funny enough at the mogue they didn't give us a tough time, they allowed us to perform the ritual ceremony. I glanced down at him on that table, I

NOVELSGURU.COM

can't believe his gone. I can't believe this actual yworked. I don't know what real y resorted to his death. Either the pil oworthe poison. His family didn't even bother asking forthe postmoterm report..

His aunt had put on a red cloth on him, and his face was swollen. Not from a beating though..

His brother started burning the incense and the black candle together with the red one next to the incense. His Aunt knelt down in front of the candles and the burning incense.

Aunt: Hai!!!

Al: Makhosi!

Aunt: Hai Makhosi! !Aunt:

"Magheba!

Zulu kaMalandela ngoku Landelana inzinkomozama Doda!

Zulu omnyama!

Ondlela zimhlophe!

NOVELSGURU.COM

Wena kaPhunga NoMageba! Wena

kaMjokwane ka Ndaba!Wena

kaPhunga noMageba!

Wena wenkayishana kaMenzi!

Eyaphuza umlazi ngameva!

Sthuli sika Ndaba! Sthuli

sika Nkombane!

Wena ka Nongojwa Omuhle ngomlenze!Wena

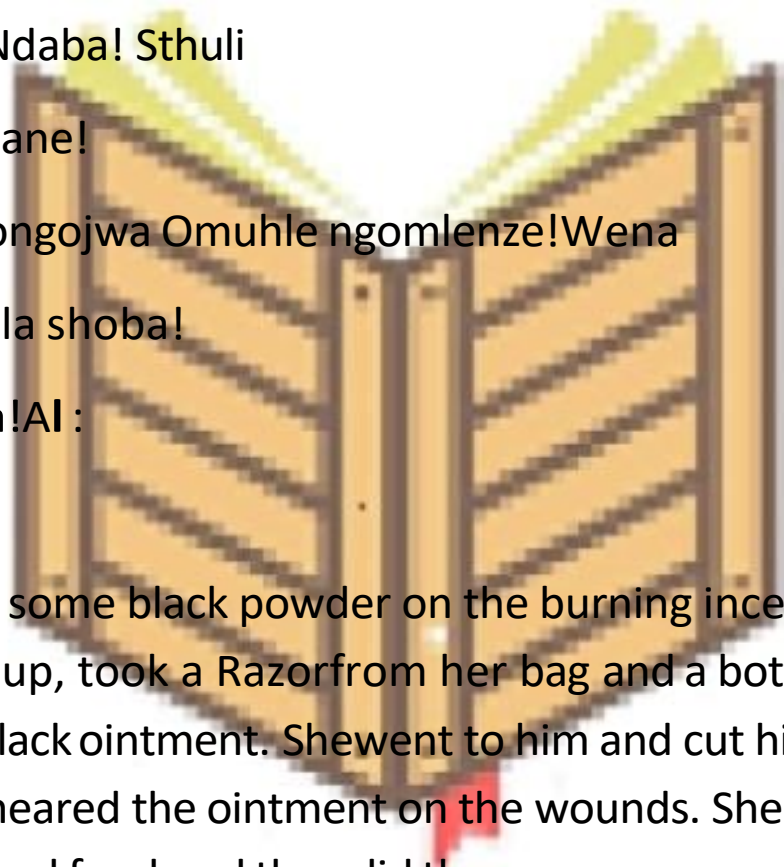
kambabela shoba!

Ndabezitha!Al :

Makhosi!

She poured some black powder on the burning incense. She then stoop up, took a Razor from her bag and a bottle that had some black ointment. She went to him and cut his wrists then she smeared the ointment on the wounds. She cut him on his cheeks and forehead then did the same..

The other Aunt gave her Nongcebo's picture.



They probably got it from the house, a Picture of Nongcebo and Makhathini together. She tired it to some bottle that had a red liquid inside, then she looked at me and smiled...

I had no idea what was happening, but whatever it was. It wasn't good..

NONGCEBO

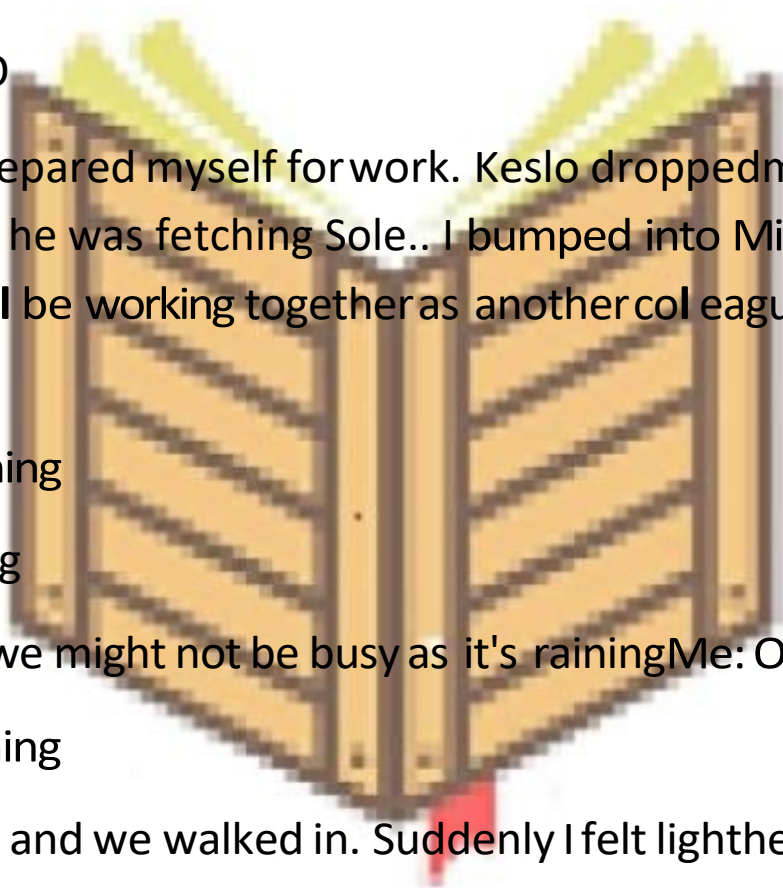
Later on I prepared myself for work. Keslo dropped me off as he said that he was fetching Sole.. I bumped into Minki at the door, we will be working together as another colleague is taking leave..

Minki: Morning

Me: Morning

Her: Today we might not be busy as it's raining
Me: On a Friday morning

She opened and we walked in. Suddenly I felt lightheaded. The room started spinning, my legs got weak and my heart started beating way too fast. It felt like I was about to die, this feeling was very



unusual. I struggled to breath..Me:

Mi..Minki

She looked at me.. Her:

What's wrong? Me: I

don't feel goodHer:

Ngcebo

I col apsed as the room appeared faint in my eyes..Minki: Ohh my word Nongcebo!

.

To be continuedNo

edits

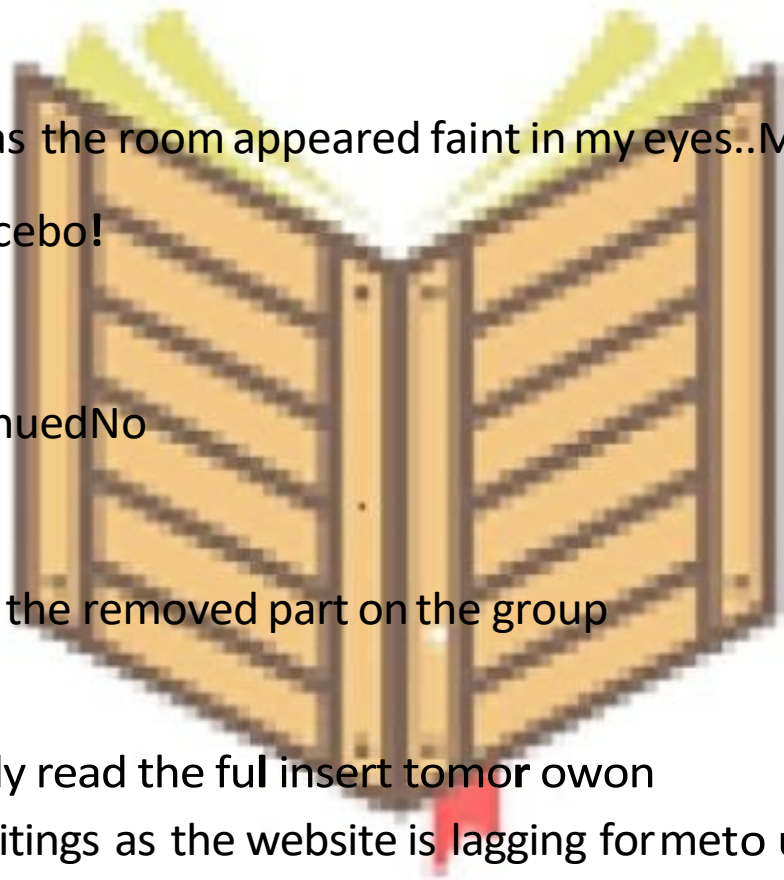
Please read the removed part on the group
"TTEOPM"

Alternatively read the ful insert tomor owon

Visionarywritings as the website is lagging formeto upload

NOVELSGURU.COM

Please note that Siba and The Trophy Wife wil be



uploaded tomorrow. Apologies for the inconvenience

[08/24, 13:02] : 39

KELSO

Sole walked out, I was waiting for him at the gate. Leaning against my car...

Me: Look at you Him:

How do you do?

We shoulderbumped.. Him:

I'm good Man Me: You do

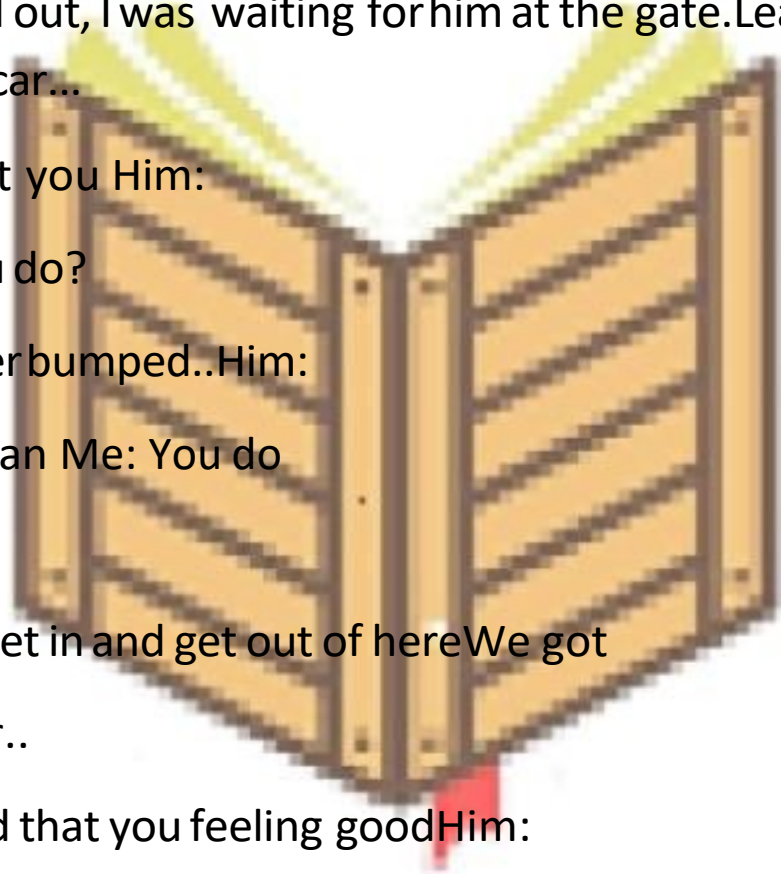
look good

Him: Let's get in and get out of here We got into the car..

Me: I'm glad that you're feeling good Him:

Me too

Me: So what now?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Take meds and see a therapist
Me: You up for that?

Him: I have no choice
Me:

That's true (SILENCE)

Me: My Dad gave me numbers of a traditional healer,
tomorrow morning we should go before things get out of
hand.

Him: You actually believe in that stuff? That he's going to come
after us?

Me: I'm black, such things aren't to be taken lightly
Him: Cool we'll go

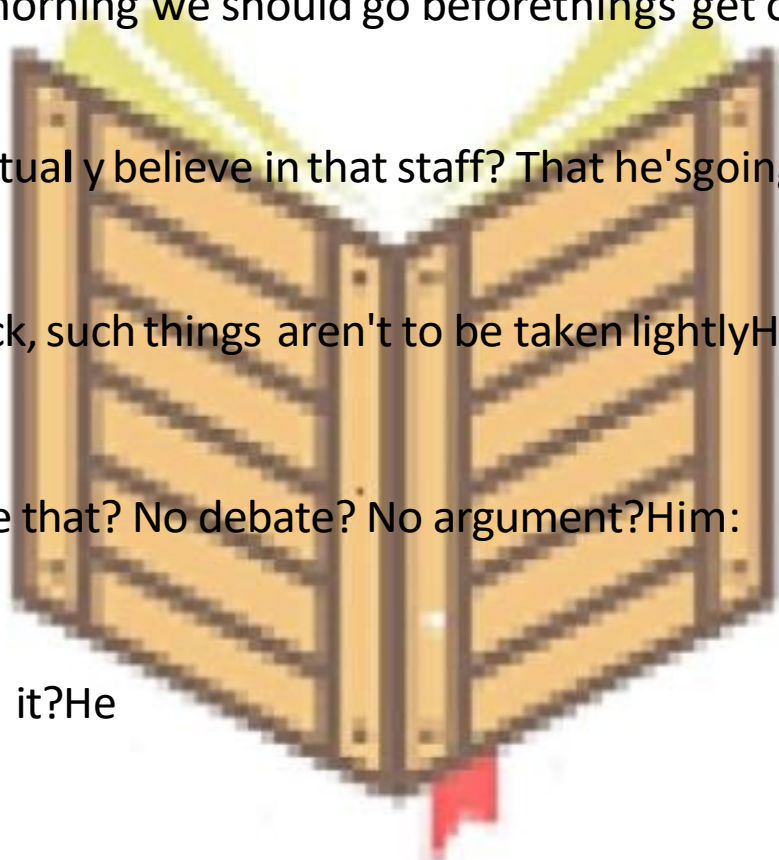
Me: Just like that? No debate? No argument?
Him:

None at all

Me: What is it?
He

sighed..

Him: I'm going to have a little family of my own, my girlfriend is
pregnant



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Get out of here! Are you serious?Him:

Very serious

Me: Sandisiwe?

Him: Yes

Me: That was quick, you couldn't wait?Him: It

was actual y heridea

Me: You for real?

Him: Yeah I am

Me: Wel then.. I have news of my ownHim: Talk to

me

Me: I'm getting mar ied in two weeks timeHim:

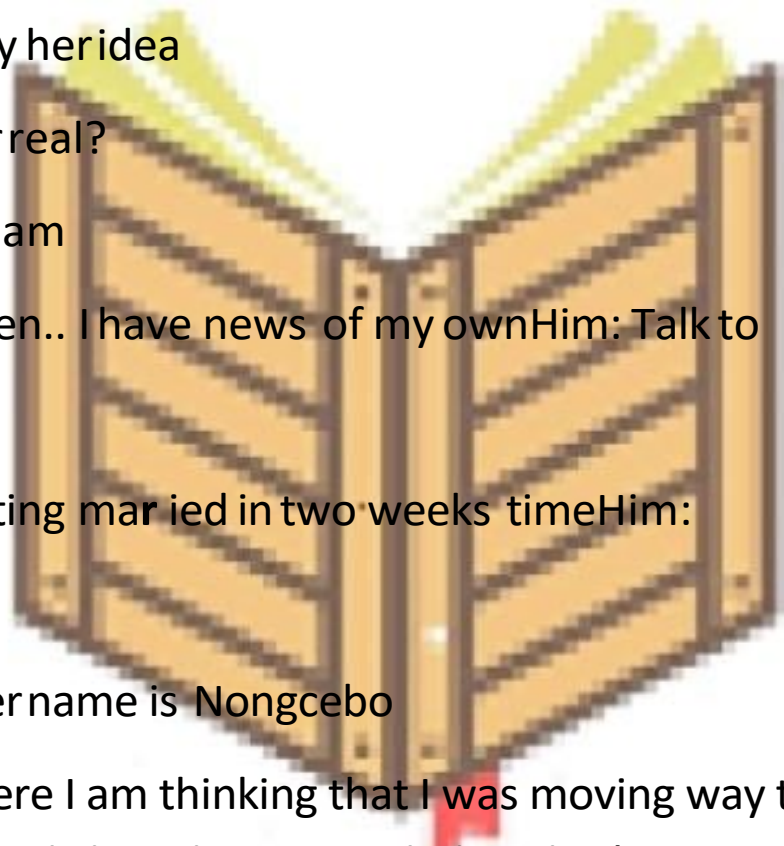
Power?

Me: No.. Hername is Nongcebo

Him: And here I am thinking that I was moving way too fast..

What's special about her so much that shedeserves a ring?

Me: A lot.. Forthe first time I think I can say that Iam in love



(Silence)

Him: Look at us al hung up on love

I chuckled.. My phone rang, it was Stal ion.Me: It's

Stal ion

Him: What does he want?Me:

Let's find out

I answered..Me:

Yeah?

Him: Is Sole with you?Me:

Yeah why?

Him: Put me on loud speaker I put

him on loud speaker..

Me: You on

Stal ion: I apologize forthat last time when we had that
unsettling encounter, I just wanna be a part ofthe team that's
al

I looked at Sole...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yeah we will meet up later

Stal: Cool

I hung up..

Sole: I don't trust him

Me: Me too

NONGCEBO

Minki: Are you feeling okay? Me:

Yes I'm okay.. Thank you

Minki: You really scared me

Me: I don't know what happened, just started feeling weirdly sick

The Dr walked in..

Minki: I have to go and open the store, I'll call the Regional manager and let her know. I think you need a few days off, especially if it's something serious

Me: Okay.. Thank you

NOVELSGURU.COM

She walked out..

Dr: How are you feeling now?

Me: A bit better.. The IV is also helpingHe put
on his glasses..

Me: What's wrong with me?

Dr: Yoursymptoms mimic that of an anxiety attackMe: anxiety
attack?

Him: when you have an episode of sudden fearordanger. Your
brain then alerts your body immediately to react. Your body
immediately goeson a fight orflight mode, but it usual y
subsides when the fearis eliminated

Me: Wil it happen again?

Him: It depends. If it happens again without any stimuli then
we wil be on the road to diagnose youwith an anxiety
disorder. Before you had the episode, did something perhaps
scare you or something like that?

Me: No.. I was perfectly fine

Him: We would like to keep you overnight just to be sure, the IV will help with dehydration since your symptoms range from an anxiety attack to dehydration

I nodded..

Me: Thank you Dr

Him: I'll come and check up on you later Me:

Thank you

He walked out.. I took my cell phone and called Kelso...

Kelso: Skat Me:

Hey Babe

Him: Are you okay?

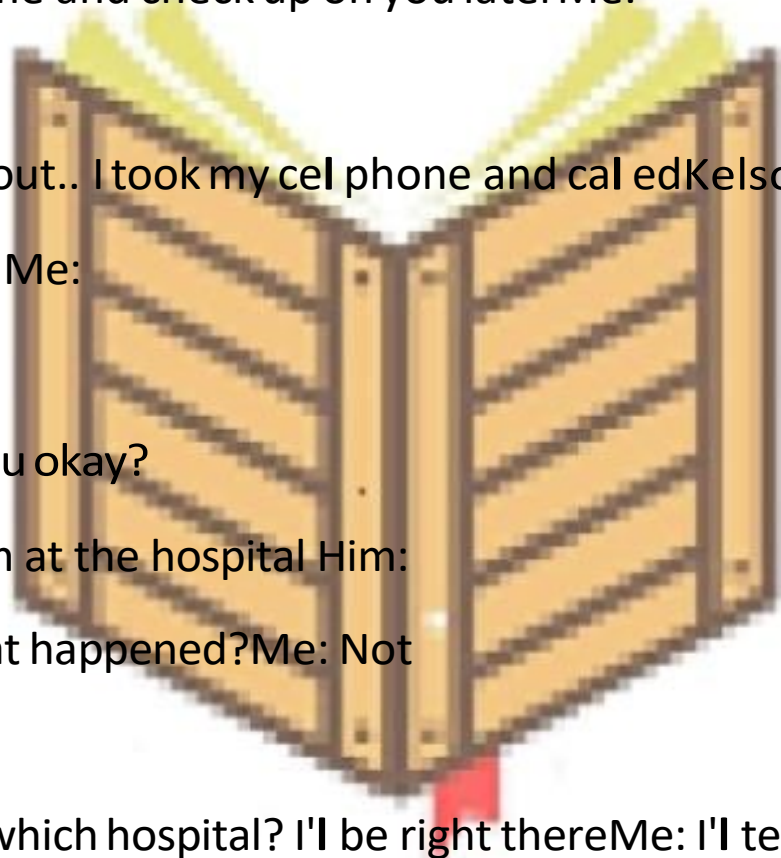
Me: No.. I'm at the hospital Him:

What? What happened? Me: Not

really sure

Him: Okay which hospital? I'll be right there Me: I'll text

you so you don't forget



Him: Okay.. I love you Me: I

love you too

BANZA

Makhathini will be brought home later on, since tomorrow it's his funeral. I haven't spoken to Nongcebo in a long time, I figured that I will communicate with her after this whole burial situation. She needs some space and some time to deal with everything

I passed Makhathini's Aunt in the tent, she was talking to some guests. She held my arm and pulled me to the side..

Her: Ungacabangi ukuthi angazi wenzeni (Don't think I don't know what you did)

Me: Unenzeni uNongcebo? (what did you do to Nongcebo)

Her: Uzokukuthola okumfanele (she will get what's coming to her)

Me: Uyazi ukuthi uMakhathini ebemuhlukumeza

NOVELSGURU.COM

uNgcebo (Do you know that Makhathini used to abuse Nongcebo)

Her: Engikwaziyo ukuthi umbulele kanye nawe (All I know is that she killed him together with you)

I looked at her..

Her: Uma ebemuhlukumeza yindaba engayanga emaphoyiseni? (If he was abusing her, why didn't she go to the police)

Me: UMakhathini ebekhohlakele bekazophuma ambulale (He was ruthless, he was going to get out and kill you)

Her: Bekungaqali ngaye ukhlukunyezwa yindonda, futhi bekungeke kugcine ngaye. Noma ememubi kangakanani kodwa ebemuthanda (She wasn't the first nor the last woman to be abused by a man. No matter how ruthless he was, he loved her)

I chuckled..

Her: Uphi manje? Uthathe umntwana wahamba njewayohlala Neny e indoda! Usihlazile (Where is she now? She took Bongeka and moved in with another

man, she embarrassed us and disrespected us)Me:

Ebengamushadanga (He didn't marry her)

Her: Noma kunjalo kodwa bekumele asibonise inhlonipho!

(Even so she was supposed to show us respect)

Someone called her..

Her: Angikaqedingawe! (I'm not done with you)She walked away..

NONGCEBO

I was on Facebook when I randomly bumped into a post that said:

"Unisa has space in teaching, those who are interested please inbox me I will give you my whatsapp number and I'll tell you how to apply. Hurry!"

I went and inboxed the person my whatsapp number..

I put my phone away and took a deep breath.

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

[08/24, 13:05] : 40

NONGCEBO

The Person replied by sending me a whatsappmessage so that we could talk more..

*****WHATSAPP*****

Me: So how does one apply?

Her: I wil Email you the forms, then you can printthem out fil them in and send

Me: I'm cur ently in hospital

Her: I can do it for you, just send me your details. I'lgo to the post office and send you pictures of me sending your application

Me: Thank you very much

Her: It's costly though the application must be accompanied by R2500

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That's a lot of money

Her: My Aunt is one of the Admins there, she told me first before they could put it out there so doing it now will guarantee you space, if you can't it's okay I already have people waiting

Me: No it's okay I'll try to get you the money Her: I'll hear from you

Me: Thank you

Kelso walked in.. Him:

What happened?

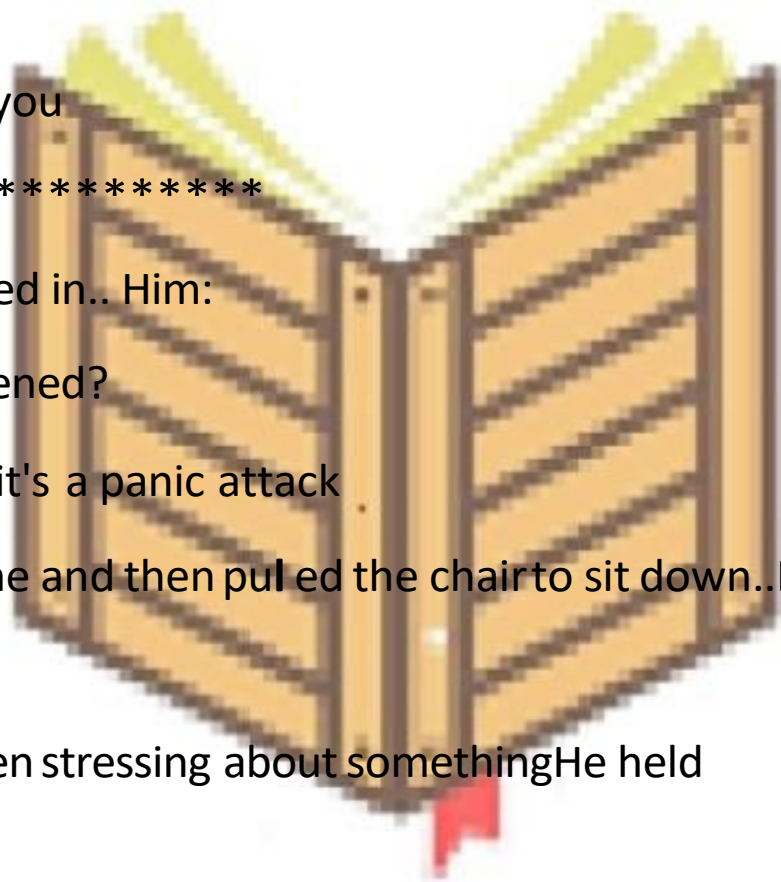
Me: Dr said it's a panic attack

He kissed me and then pulled the chair to sit down.. Him: What caused it?

Me: I've been stressing about something He held my hand..

Him: What's wrong? Me: I

need R2500



Him: For?

Me: Something

Him: Are you pregnant and trying to abort?Me: I'm
on contraception

Him: What's the R2500?

Me: I owe someone, I was going to pay when I get paid but...
The person needs the money right away

He took out his phone..

Him: Give me your account detailsMe: I'll
pay you back

Him: It's coming out from your girlfriend allowanceMe: Huh?

Him: I was going to give you 5k every monthMe: For?

Him: Girlfriend allowanceMe:
What's that?

Him: You don't know it?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: No

Him: Now you do

I gave him my account details..Him: I'll

do pay and clear now

So he is going to pay me for being his girlfriend? That's a first

SANDISIWE

I took a deep breath with my eyes closed, then I opened them. I opened the door and he was standing there on the doorstep..

Me: Snowflake!

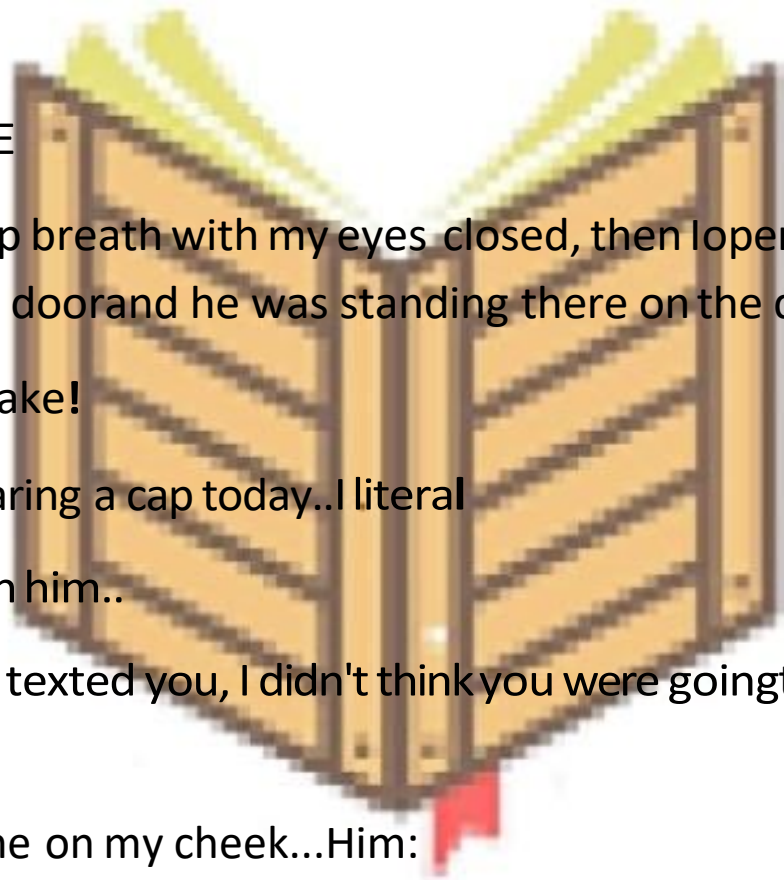
He was wearing a cap today.. I literally jumped on him..

Me: When I texted you, I didn't think you were going to come right away!

He kissed me on my cheek...Him:

How I've missed you

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: I've missed you tooHim:

Ready to go?

Me: My Uncle wants to talk to you firstHe put me down..

Him: Uhm... Okay

I held his hand as he took off his cap..Me:

Come

We walked to the living room..

NONGCEBO

Kelso had gone out to get me something to eat when I received a call from Kelo... Immediately when he introduced himself I hung up and put him on reject list. I'm getting married in two weeks time,I really don't want to give Kelso a reason to think I'mgoing to cheat on him, rather be safe than sorry.

The girl sent me a whatsapp text..Her:

Got it

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Okay

Her: I'm on my way to the post office now

Me: I'll send you my details

Her: No problem

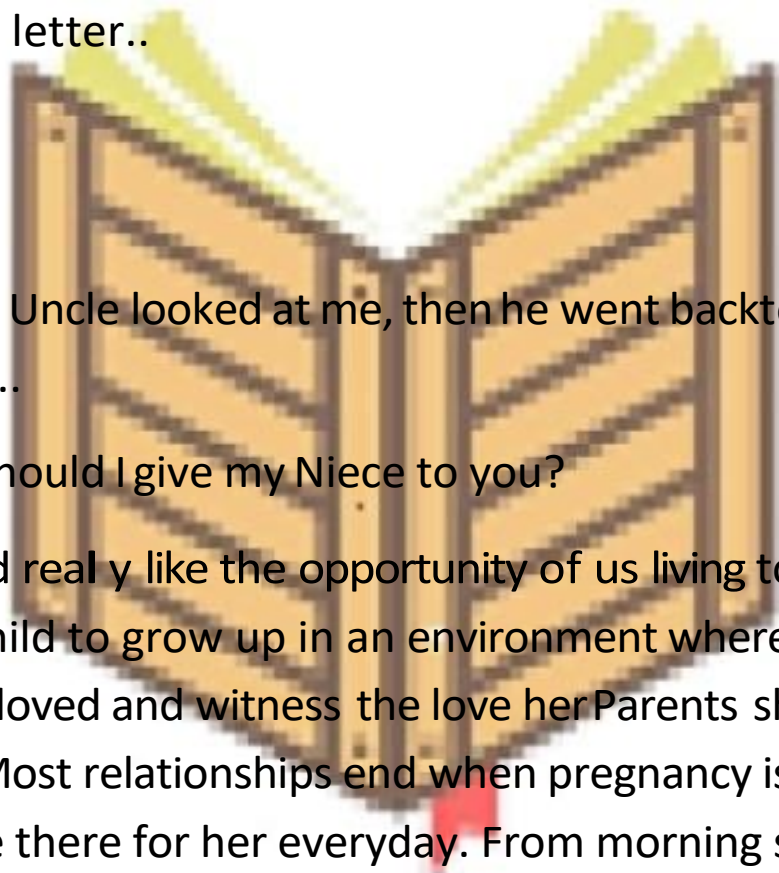
This was good. I don't wanna tel anyone yet until I get the acceptance letter..

SOLE

Sandisiwe's Uncle looked at me, then he went back to his newspaper..

Him: Why should I give my Niece to you?

Me: I would real y like the opportunity of us living together. I want our child to grow up in an environment where she's going to be loved and witness the love her Parents share everyday. Most relationships end when pregnancy is involved, I want to be there for her everyday. From morning sicknesses, check ups, weird food cravings, weightgain, everything. Pregnancy is difficult I don't wanther to go through it alone



NOVELSGURU.COM

She smiled at me and held my hand..

Him: You are very well spoken, if I didn't know better I'd think that I'm speaking to one of my clients trying to convince me that they are not guilty

Sandi: Uncle

Me: You a lawyer Sir?

Him: Yes and I can see through bull shit

Me: What happened to innocent until proven guilty? He folded his newspaper and looked at me...

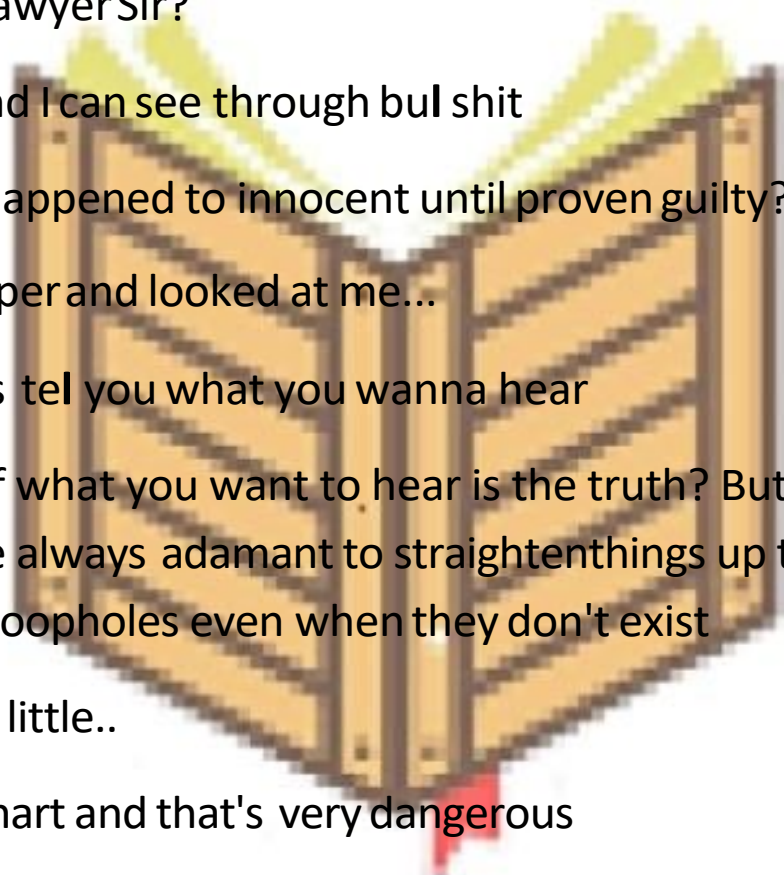
Him: Clients tell you what you want to hear

Me: What if what you want to hear is the truth? But because lawyers are always adamant to straighten things up they always looking for loopholes even when they don't exist

He smiled a little..

Him: You smart and that's very dangerous

Me: I shall apologize for being smart, it's not my intention and I didn't mean to be born this way



He chuckled and shook his head.. Him: I'll be watching you very closely
Me: Yes Sir

He looked at Sandy..

Him: You can go get your things

Sandi smiled as she got up to go and fetch her things..

Him: Whiskey?

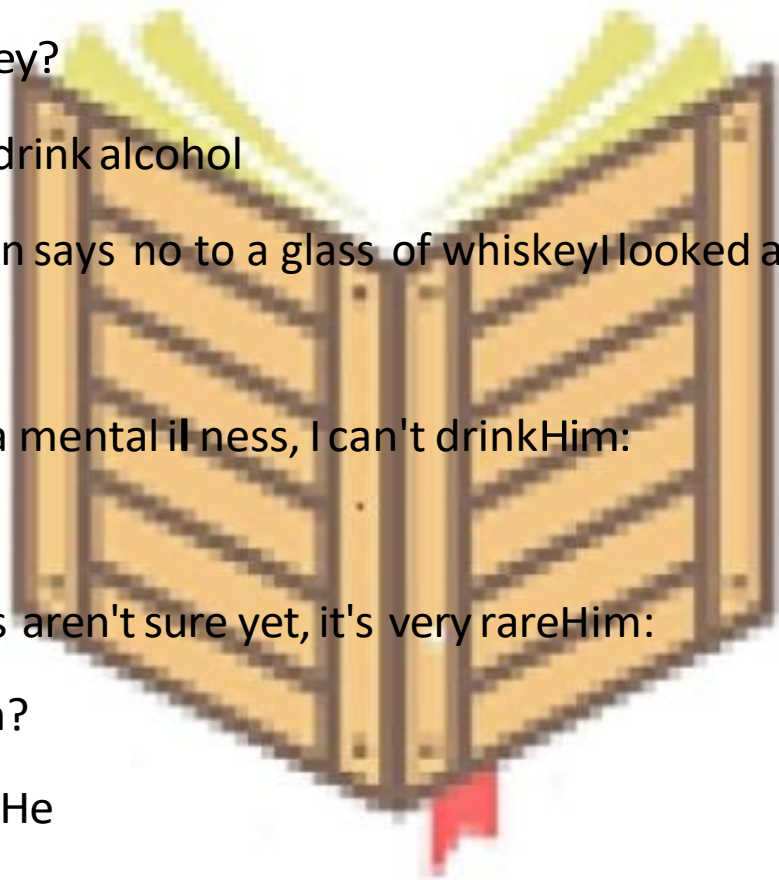
Me: I don't drink alcohol

Him: No man says no to a glass of whiskey
I looked at him..

Me: I have a mental illness, I can't drink
Him: What kind?

Me: Doctors aren't sure yet, it's very rare
Him: Psychopath?

Me: Genius
He nodded..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Tell me something smart Me:

What do you want to hear? Him:

Anything

Me: I don't know what to tell you Him:

That's a disappointment (Silence)

Me: Nice watch He

looked at it..

Him: Yes and very expensive Me:

Where did you get it?

Him: Excuse me?

Me: The model, we don't have that in SA Him: I

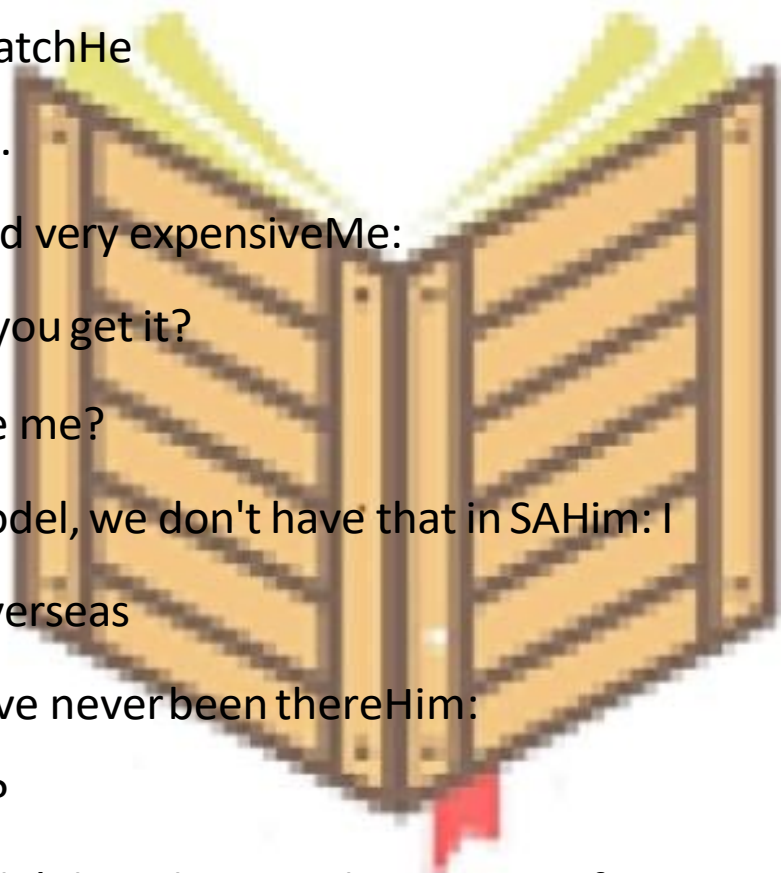
bought it overseas

Me: You have never been there Him:

Excuse me?

Me: You didn't buy that watch, you got it from someone..

A foreign prisoner to be more exact in



exchange of being a lapdog to the prisoner.. You cut deals for the prisoner, and unfortunately he has made you his bitch. My assumption is that the prisoner is either Russian or Italian. Lapdog for protection, that watch was given to you as a sign of good friendship. You do the dirty work they provide you with protection. From where I'm sitting it seems like you pissed off a very dangerous gang leader, one that required you to get protection from a foreign prisoner

He bit his lower lip..

Him: What are you trying to get at?

Me: You said I should tell you something smart, now I believe Sandi will be more safer with me than you

He kept quiet..

Him: I would never let any harm come to my Niece
Me: Not intentional y

Him: I will be watching you very closely
Me: Give him what he wants

He looked at me..

Me: Whoever is threatening you, give him what he wants because he won't stop until he gets what he wants and unfortunately your foreign protection will backfire

Sandisiwe walked in.. Sandi: Okay

I'm ready to go I stood up..

Sandi: Uncle thank you for everything He

looked at me..

Him: Always know that you will have a home here, you can come back anytime that you want

Sandi: I know She

hugged him..

Him: I love so much Me: I

love you too

STALLION

NOVELSGURU.COM



Nastro looked at me..

Me: Sole is the dangerous one, if you want to intercept it, it'll be difficult

Nastro: It won't be difficult if you will be my insider

Him: He always has a plan that backs up his initial plan and he hardly shares his back up plan

Him: Sole is a man, isn't he? Me:

Yes

Him: He cares about someone, doesn't he?

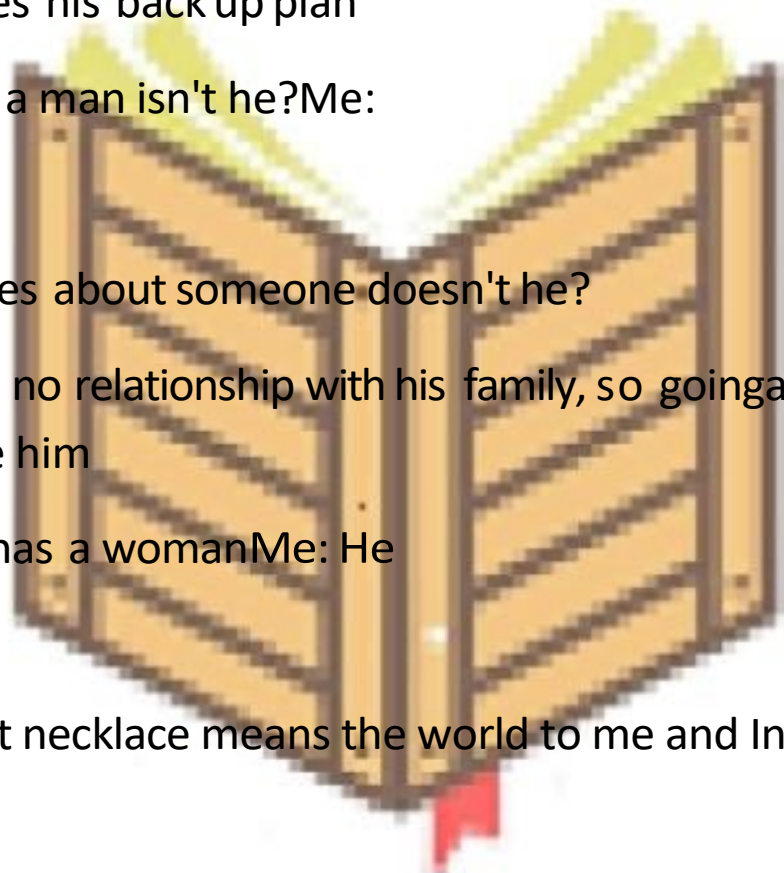
Me: He has no relationship with his family, so going after his family won't move him

Nastro: He has a woman Me: He

kill ed her

Nastro: That necklace means the world to me and I need it back

Me: I understand.. I'll do as much as I can Nastro: You better do it quick, I'm running out of



time

Me: I understand

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by the admin of "Thebride"
please do support

<https://m.facebook.com/booksbyS.N.Mdlongwa/>[08/24,
13:05] : 41

SOLE

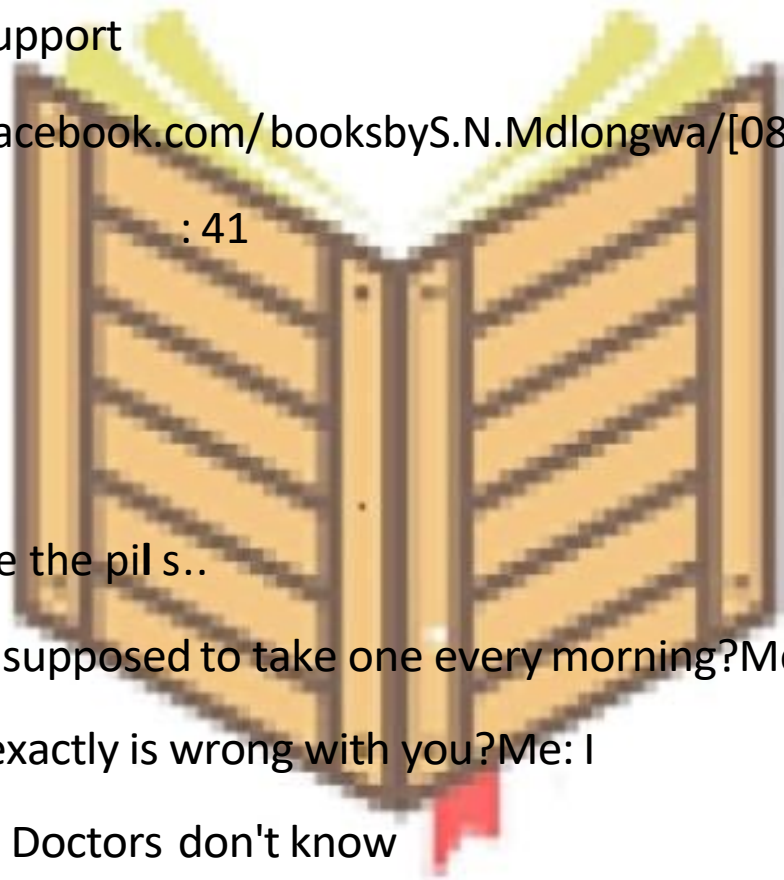
She gave me the pills..

Her: So you supposed to take one every morning?Me: Yes

Her: What exactly is wrong with you?Me: I

don't know, Doctors don't know

Her: They Doctors aren't they supposed to know?



NOVELSBORO.COM

Me: They did tests but...She
sighed..

Me: I'm fine, so long I take my medication I'll be okay you have
nothing to worry about

Her: I'll order something for us Me:

Keep my dinner I'll eat later Her: Okay

I walked to the bathroom and locked the door

I took the chair and climbed it, I removed that part of the
ceiling I had cut out. I took the bottle of pills that I hid in there
and took one pill.

I put it back and closed. I put the chair where it's supposed to
be and drank the pill. Then I put the ones I was given by my
psychiatrist in the cupboard. I took a deep breath..

NONGCEBO

When Kelso left I received a message from the girl Sethu
saying the post office is closed so she will

give her Aunt to go with them on Monday since tomorrow it's Saturday. She took pictures of the forms and showed me, I smiled.. I then received a call from a number that I wasn't familiar with..

Me: Hello? Him:

It's Kelo

Me: Hey please stop calling me Him:

Ouch

Me: I'm getting married in two weeks time so this friendship of ours is not going to work, I'm sorry

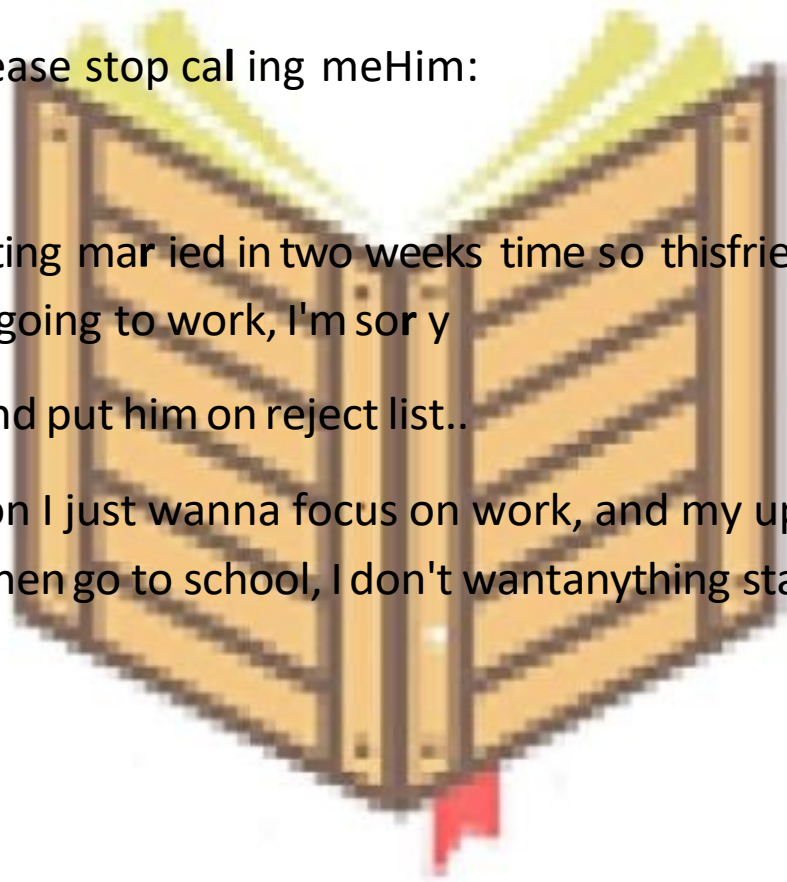
I hung up and put him on reject list..

From here on I just wanna focus on work, and my upcoming marriage. Then go to school, I don't want anything standing in between..

KELSO

Stal ion showed up first for our meeting then Sole showed up later..

Stal ion: Sole I would like to apologize, shouldn't



NOVELSGURU.COM

have attacked you. Londi was your girlfriend and I fucked up, shouldn't have slept with her

Sole: It's cool

Stal ion: I just wanna be a part of the team, and to show my apology I'm presenting a heist that's going to make us 3 millions rich. 1mil each

Me: We are running out of money so let's hear it

Stal ion: Another fertility truck, especially now since social grants are going to be sorted it's a good idea we're going to get a lot of money

I nodded..

Stal ion: I'll check a few maybe if we can hit 2 Sole: I see

Stal ion: I have to go but I'll be in touch He got up and left..

Sole: Since when has Stal ion proposed a plan?

Me: It's all bull shit, we might do this then he will fuck us up probably shoot us and then take the cash

Sole: No

Me: No?

Sole: There's moreMe:

I'm listening

Sole: He was way too confident for someone who would later fuck us up, he knows he won't be able to go against us alone

Me: He has someone?

Sole: Even with someone he knows that I can still outsmart them with a plan... Unless

Me: Unless?

Sole: He has leverage, put us in a situation that will make us surrender

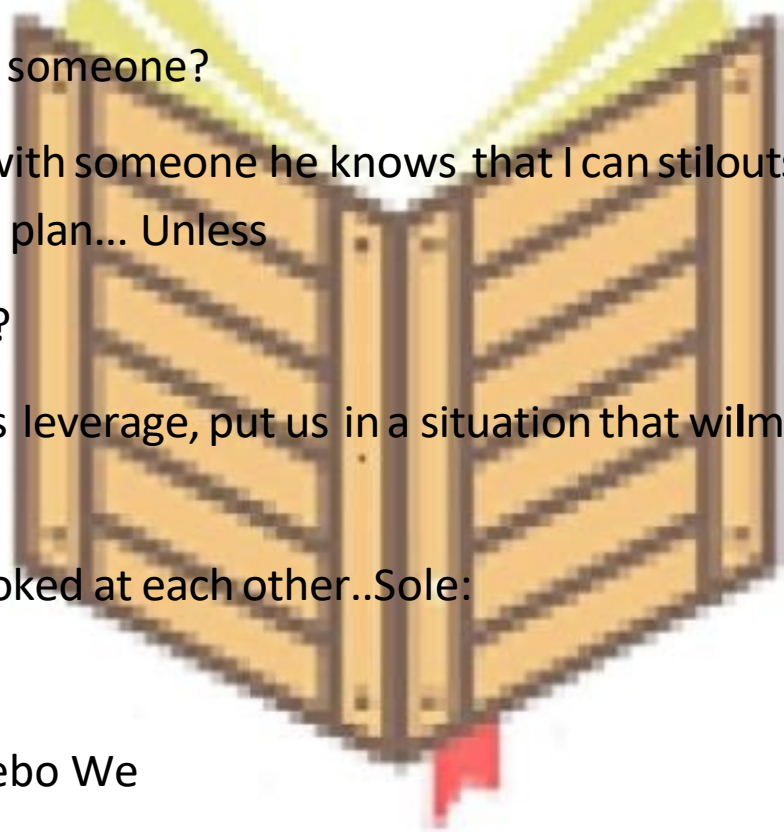
We both looked at each other..Sole:

Sandi

Me: Nongcebo We

both got up..

Me: The next time I see Stalion I'm putting a bullet



NOVELSGURU.COM

in him, don't stop me! Him: I

won't

NONGCEBO

I was on a video call with Bongeka..

Me: How do you feel about the funeral tomorrow? Her: I

don't wanna attend

Me: I understand

Her: I'm glad he's gone, never felt so free!

chuckled..

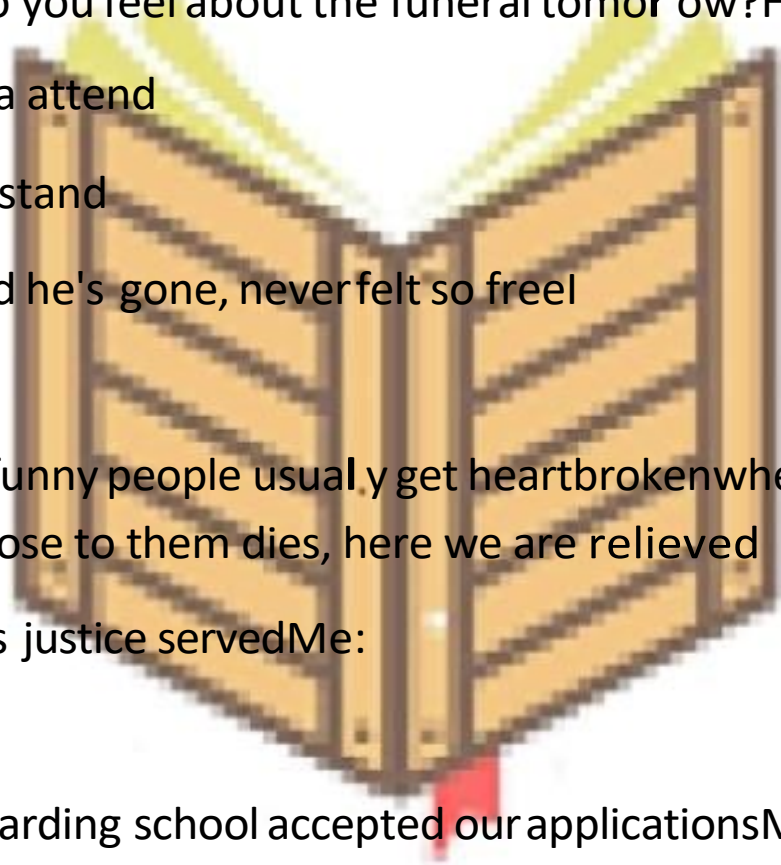
Me: It's so funny people usually get heartbroken when someone close to them dies, here we are relieved

Her: It's what justice served Me:

True

Her: The boarding school accepted our applications Me:

Thought they were going to wait



Her: They need the money, when there's space they will accept

Me: Will you guys be able to catch up?

Her: We haven't been out of school for that long, we will catch up

Me: I can't believe Kelso is paying so much money for you guys..
Especially you

Her: Underneath it all he's a good human being, he loves you
and God just blessed you for all the times that your previous
relationship brought you pain.

I'm glad you took me with, I don't imagine myself being
raised by his family they are evil

Me: We are a team remember?

Her: You are a very good person, your kids are going to be lucky

Me: Let me rest a bit.. See you tomorrow Her:

Okay

Me: I love you bye Her:

I love you too



NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso walked in followed by a Nurse..Nurse:

Visiting hours are over Sir

He looked at me..

Kelso: Get your things and get dressed we leaving

Nurse: She can't leave the Dr has to be the one to discharge her

Kelso: He said there's nothing wrong with her just a panic attack, she'll be fine

He went and stood by the window.Me:

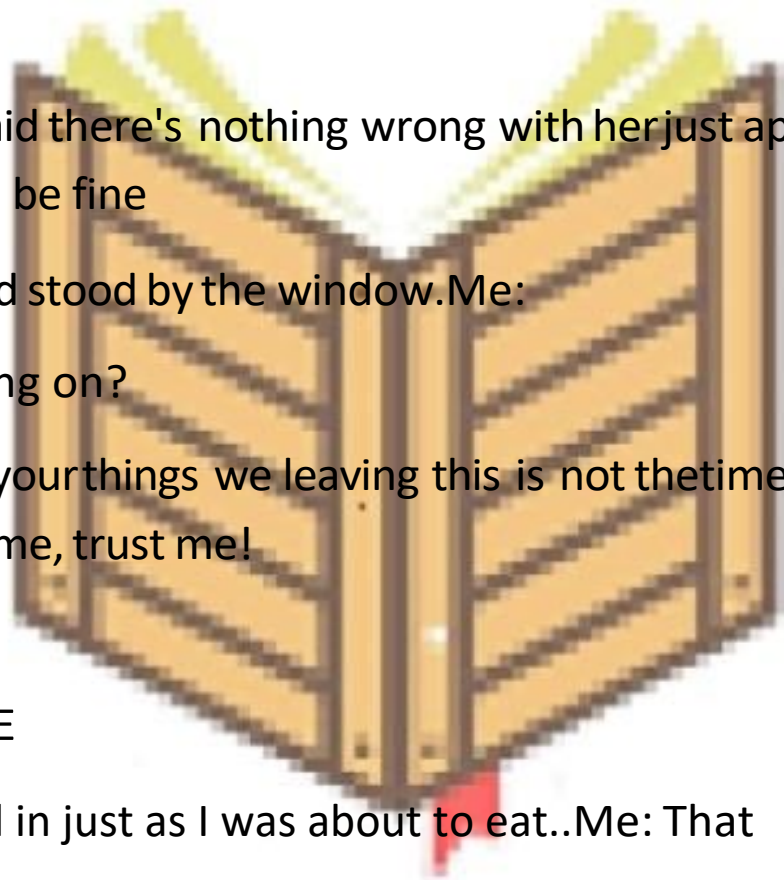
What's going on?

Kelso: take your things we leaving this is not the time to argue with me, trust me!

SANDISIWE

Sole walked in just as I was about to eat..Me: That was quick

He walked up to me.. He put his hand on my cheek and the one on my stomach..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Are you guys okay?!

looked at him..

Him: No one showed up?Me:

No.. Why?

He moved and checked the bedroom and the bathroom...

Me: Snowflake what's going on?Him:

Give me your phone

Me: What's wrong?Him:

Trust me

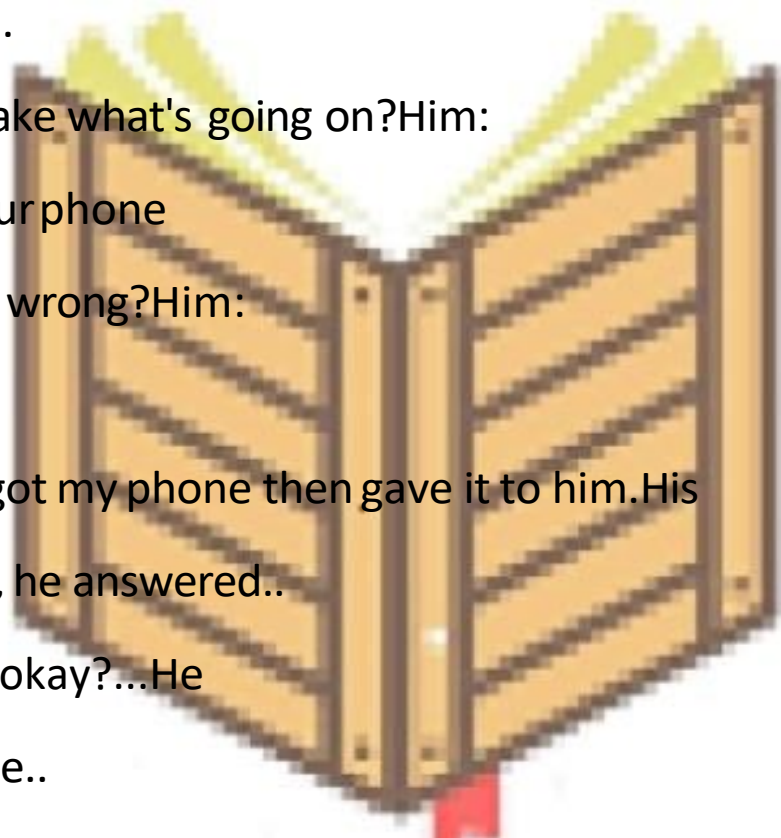
I went and got my phone then gave it to him.His phone rang, he answered..

Sole: Is she okay?...He

looked at me..

Sole: Yeah she is... You guys are coming here?.. We will prepare the guest room.. Cool.. See you guys when you get here

He hung up..



Me: Sole what is going on?

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:08] : 42

We drove into this beautiful place. It was a gated community so Kelso said. The houses looked small but they were beautiful, I'm sure people here pay a lot of rent since you can't buy the house. Kelso briefed me on that but didn't tell me what we were doing here..

We drove into this house where a white guy stood by the garage door. We got out and made our way to him..

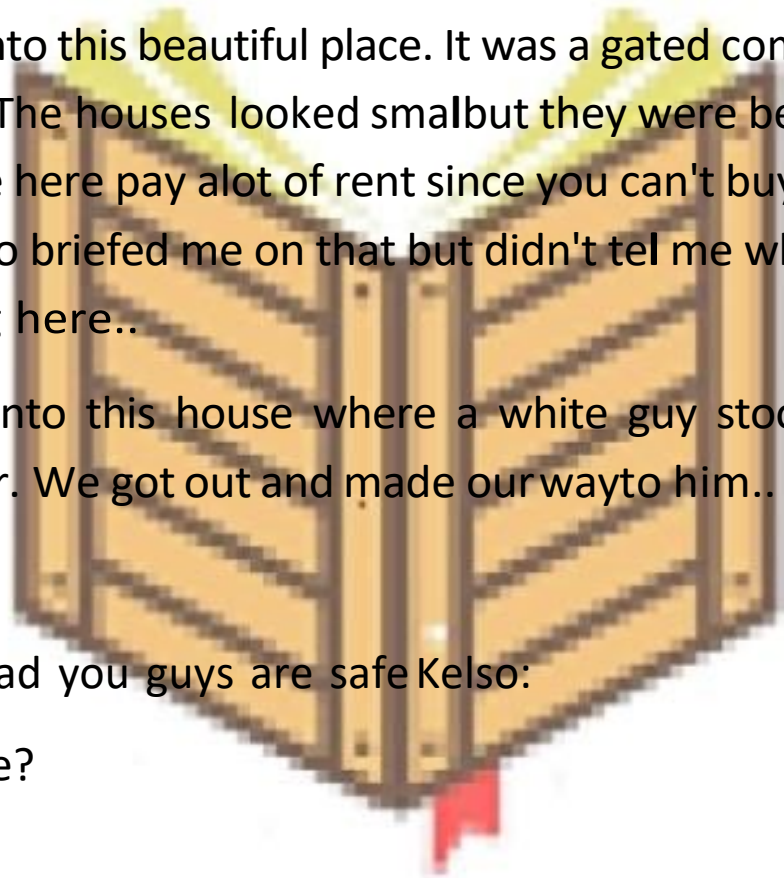
Kelso: Sole

Sole: I'm glad you guys are safe Kelso:

Is Sandi safe?

Sole: She is

Kelso: I want you to meet my best friend Sole, Sole



NOVELSGURU.COM

this is NongceboSo

this is Sole..

He gave me a handshake..Him:

Nice meeting you Sole: Me too

Me: Sole?

Him: It's Spanish was named after my FatherMe: Ohw

so you mixed race

Him: We really don't have that in SA, so I fall under coloureds

Me: Ohw I see

Sole: This way please

We followed him into his house..

The house was very beautiful inside, we followed him to the lounge where a familiar lady was laying on the couch..

Sole: Sweetie you remember Kelso?Her:

How can I forget him



She got up..

Sole: This is his girlfriend Nongcebo soon to be wife in two weeks

Her: Wow some ladies end up with a ring and some of us end up with a bun in the oven

Sole: You wanna get married? She put her hand in her stomach..

Her: No this is all the marriage I need right now
Me: And a 5000 girlfriend allowance

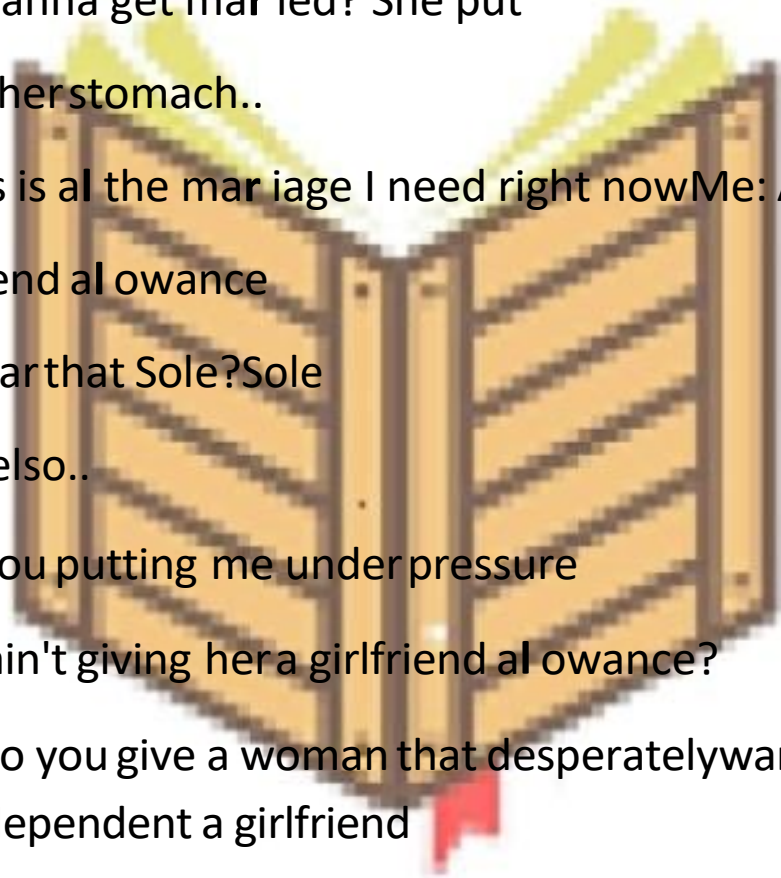
Her: You hear that Sole?
Sole looked at Kelso..

Sole: Now you putting me under pressure

Kelso: You ain't giving her a girlfriend allowance?

Sole: How do you give a woman that desperately wants to be financial independent a girlfriend allowance?

Her: Snowflake we talked about that, don't read me
Sole raised up his hands..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: Snowflake?

Sole: Let's go outside and talk

Her: I'm going to need that girlfriend allowance
Sole: I'll double what he's giving her

Her: Are you undermining me? Do you want financial
I own me? No I'll get my damn paper

Sole: See what I mean? Kelso

held my hands..

Kelso: We going to stay here for the night is that fine?

I nodded.. He kissed me on my forehead.. Kelso: I'll

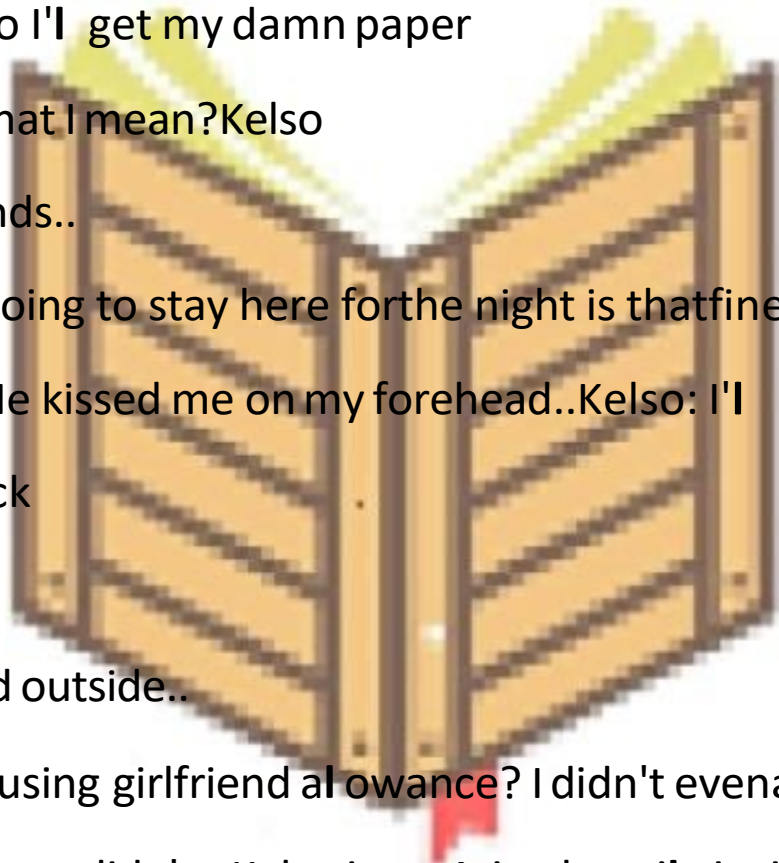
be right back

Me: Okay

They walked outside..

Me: You refusing girlfriend allowance? I didn't even ask for it

Her: Even if you didn't.. Kelso is an Aries he will give it to you
whether you want it or not



Me: Huh? Her:

Sit down We sat

down..

Her: You don't even know the man you dating She

looked at me..

Her: I checked his birthday on Facebook he's an Aries. 10

April

Me: So?

Her: So he likes being dominant.. Tel me have you ever done a woman on top with him?

Me: Woman on top?

Her: Being on top of him? Me: I

have

Her: And?

Me: He ends up taking the lead Her:

Has he beat you yet?

Me: No



NOVELSGURU.COM

She looked at me..

Her: He wil

Me: Ohw.. What about your man?

Her: He's going to kil me one day, he's a sociopath..He's a Gemini

Me: Sole doesn't look like a guy that can hurt anyone

Her: He is the most dangerous one trust meMe: How do you know al of this?

Her: I'm a writerit's my job to research and analyzeMe: That's how I know you! Sandisiwe Gxaba?

Her: Yes

Me: I did think that you looked familiar, you write on Facebook and Visionarywritings?

Her: Yes

Me: I read a lot of Facebook stories, wow I'm a bigfan

Her: Thank you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: We have a lot to talk about, with regards to your stories

Her: Will I need wine?

Me: You can't drink, you pregnant

Her: Then you'll drink for both of us.. I'll get wine She got up..

Her: But I heard wine is good when you pregnant Me: Don't take chances

She laughed..

SOLE

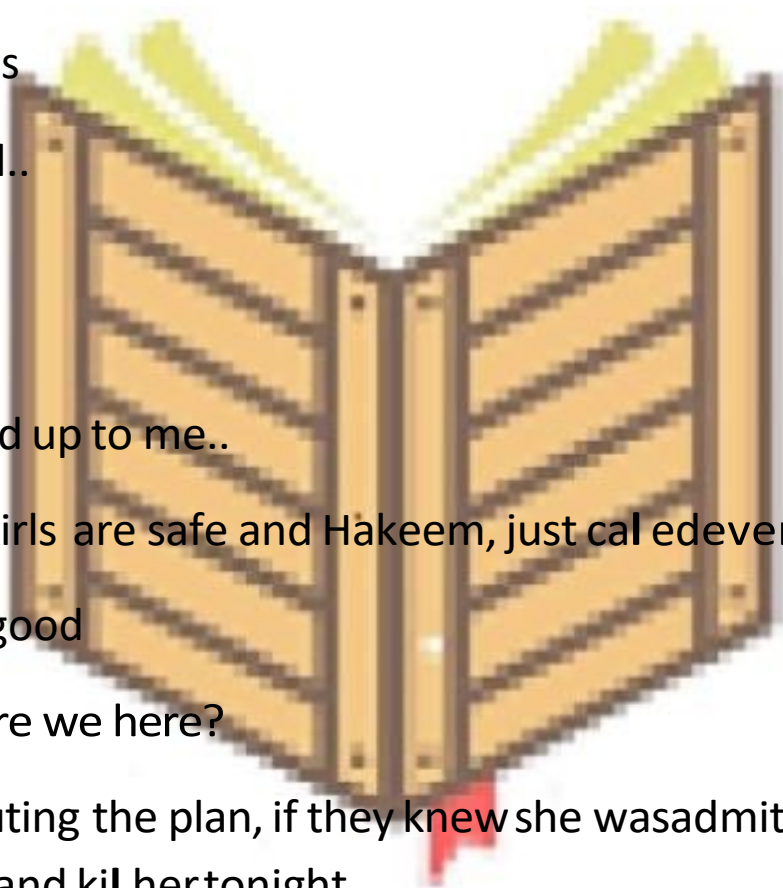
Kelso walked up to me..

Kelso: The girls are safe and Hakeem, just call everyone

Me: That's good

Him: Why are we here?

Me: We diluting the plan, if they knew she was admitted they will go and kill her tonight



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I can't believe that Stalion is doing this to us
Me: Don't worry.. We will get Stalion

I closed my eyes as the headache started to get worse..

Kelso: So what's the plan? Me:

The plan is..

Everything started to appear blurry.. I
looked at his car and I saw it twice. Me: The
plan is..

Him: Are you okay? Me: I'm
fine

Him: The headaches are back? Me:

Yeah

Him: Shit Sole!

Me: I'm not consulting Him: You
have to

Me: If they cut me open, you know what's going to



NOVELSGURU.COM

happen

Him: You have a family now, you don't need to do this anymore

Me: This is all I know

Him: We don't even know who Stalion is working with, we can't beat him if you die!

Me: If they remove the tumor I'm going to lose my memory and my IQ is going to be that of a normal human being, I won't be Sole anymore

Him: You don't know if you will lose your IQ

Me: I know trust me. I've lived with it for most of my life Kelso, remember they said if I don't remove it I'll die after 5 years of the diagnosis? But here I am 7 years later. I added 2 years into my life span and I will add more

Him: And I've watched you getting sick, what if it's growing? Sole you even lucky that you have lived this long. You need to have it removed

Me: Don't worry about me, I know what I'm dealing with. If I didn't know, I would be dead by now.. I'll

find a way to add more years to my life span Him:

There's no other way

I sighed..

Me: Just don't tell Sandi Him:

Then stop being selfish

Me: I'll be fine.. So the plan is, we need to know who Stallion is working with

STALLION

Me: Thank you so much for this Nurse, you really helped

Her: Be quick! I'll stand here and keep watch Me: Okay

I slowly opened the door, and the ward was dark. It seemed like she was sleeping. I moved closer to the bed and took out my gun, thank goodness it has a silencer. This will be a quick job. I aimed it on the bed and started shooting. No scream, no movement, no nothing. I switched on the light and checked the

NOVELSGURU.COM

bed, it was pillows..Me:

Fuck!

I walked out..

Kel y: Hey put that away this is a hospital for heaven's sake

Me: She's not hereKel

y: What?

Me: Did you change your shift with anyone?

Kel y: No.. I went to the maternity ward for a few hours since they were short staffed, she was here

Me: Well she's not here now! Go change the pillowsI took out my phone and sent Nastro a text:

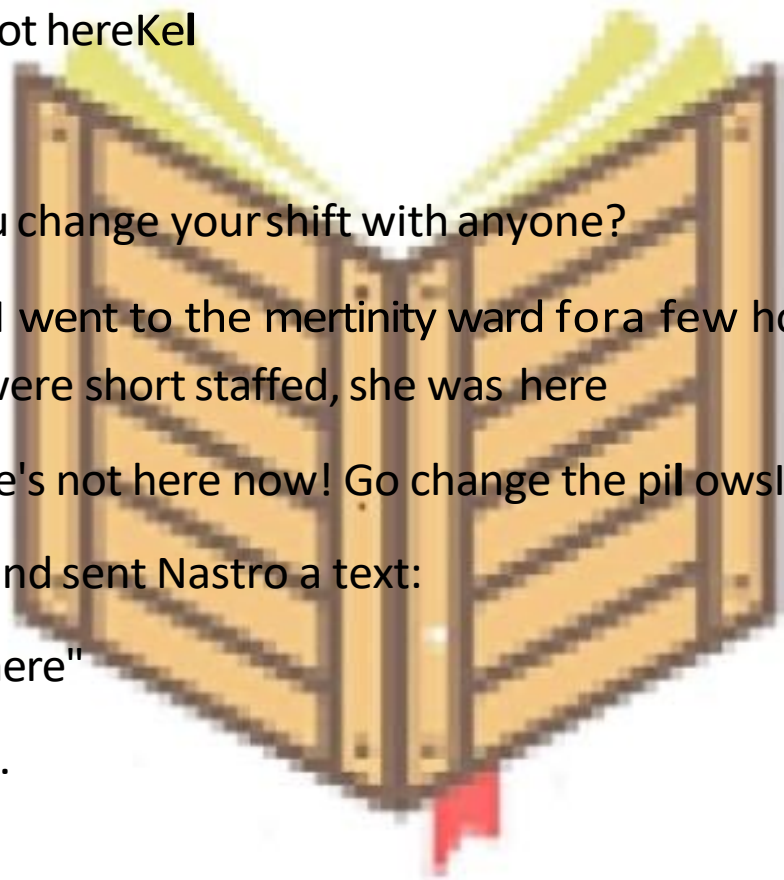
"She's not here"

This is bad..

.

To be continued

NOVELSGURU.COM



This insert was sponsored by Zizipho. She has entered Miss SA 2020 and asking for our votes and support.

Please find the attached link to view and help

https://pageantvote.es/pageants/2741/contestants/18181?fbclid=IwAR3EMSE6tyslHWgFzQig-Irk7Ca8rvPwju3yFzkk_bEbl4fOr4b_MRMaKm0

[08/24, 13:08] : 43

SOLE

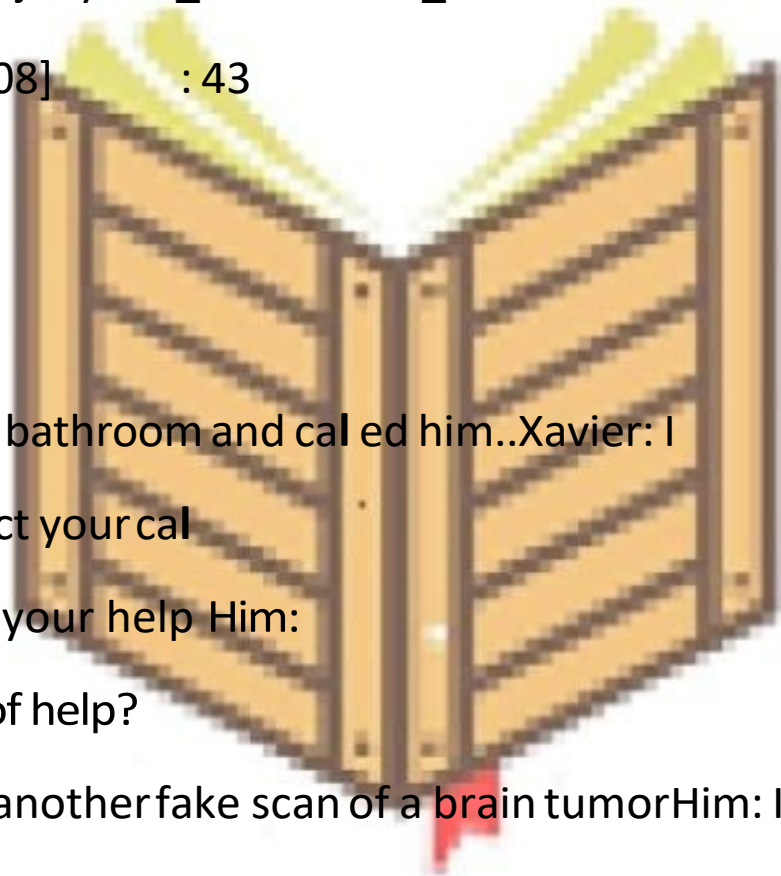
I locked the bathroom and called him..Xavier: I didn't expect your call

Me: I need your help Him:

What kind of help?

Me: I need another fake scan of a brain tumor Him: I can't keep on doing this with you

Me: What do you have to lose?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: My dignity, I'll get jail time. My license to practice has already been taken away, doing this will land me in jail

Me: You down and out, we have been doing this for years why are you pulling out now?

Him: Why don't you just tell them the truth? Tell them what's really wrong with you

Me: We going with the brain tumor thing Him:

You not dying Sole

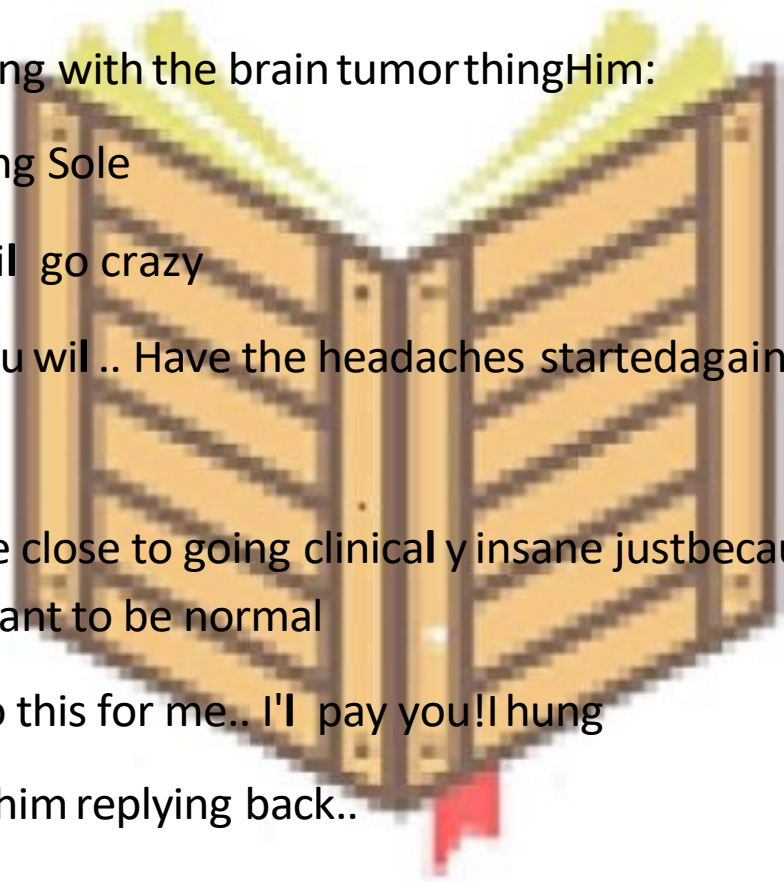
Me: But I will go crazy

Him: Yes you will.. Have the headaches started again?

Me: Yes

Her: You are close to going clinically insane just because you don't want to be normal

Me: I just do this for me.. I'll pay you! I hung up without him replying back..



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Kelso walked in and got in bed. I've since been hooked up on what Sandisiwe told me earlier, I've been reading about the qualities that an Aries man has. Yes 50% was true so far, or the 50% that I know about him. The one that he has shown me..

Me: Kelso

He looked at me..

Me: If you hit me even once I'm going to leave you or have you arrested

Him: I'm not going to hit you

Me: You short tempered, you impulsive. You act without thinking

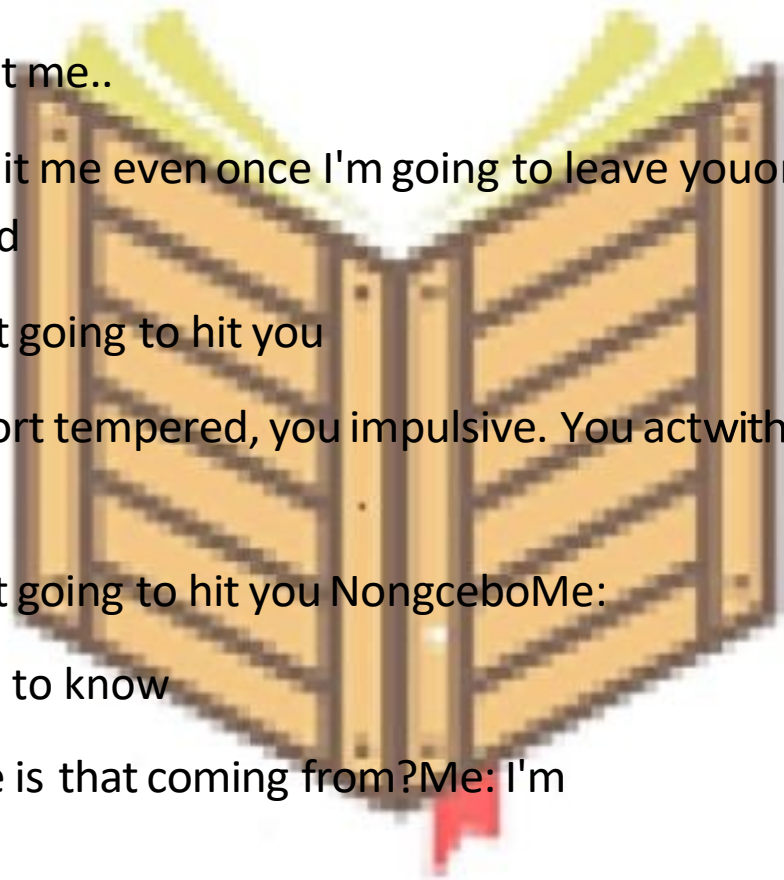
Him: I'm not going to hit you Nongcebo Me:

That's good to know

Him: Where is that coming from? Me: I'm

just saying

Him: If I wanted to hit you, I would've done it long time ago



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Why are we here?

Him: Needed to talk to Sole about something

Me: Couldn't do it over the phone?

Him: No

Me: What is it that you do?

Him: Nongcebo where is all of this coming from?

Me: You have money but you don't work, I haven't heard you saying you have a business

Him: I make things work

Me: illegal things?

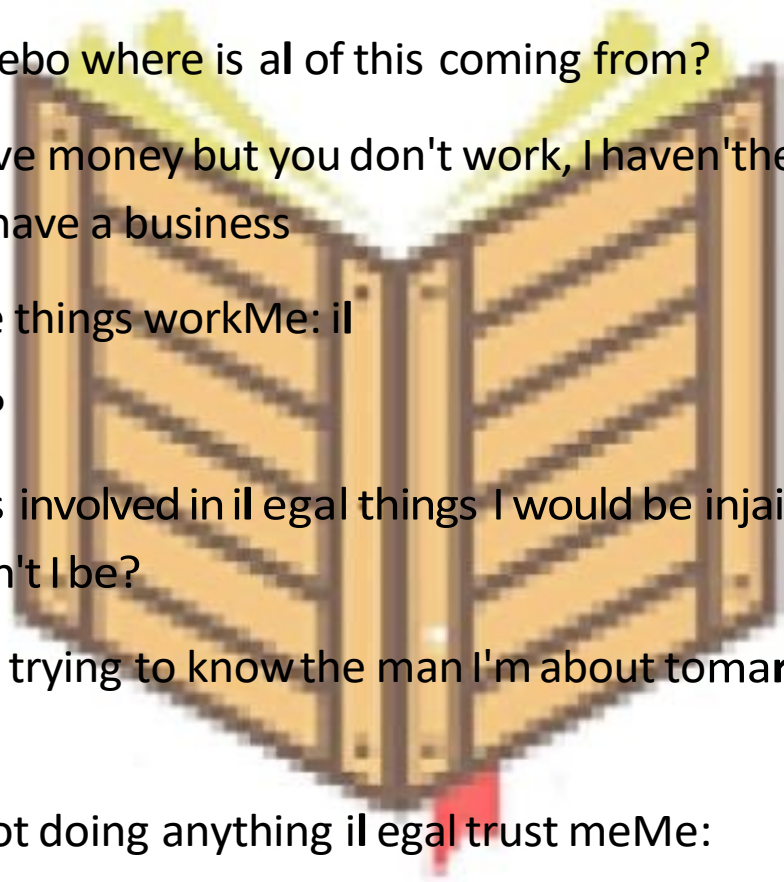
Him: If I was involved in illegal things I would be in jail right now wouldn't I be?

Me: I'm just trying to know the man I'm about to marry better

Him: I am not doing anything illegal trust me

Me: Okay.. Good night

Him: Good night



STALLION

He got out of the car, we met at an alley..Cosa:

You only had one job

Me: It's not as easy as you think it is, they not stupidCosa: We then move to phase 2

Me: I'm still going to get my money right?Cosa: Of course you are my new Carlos Me: What is phase 2?

Cosa: Andre Martinez he has something that I need, something that belongs to me

Me: What is that?

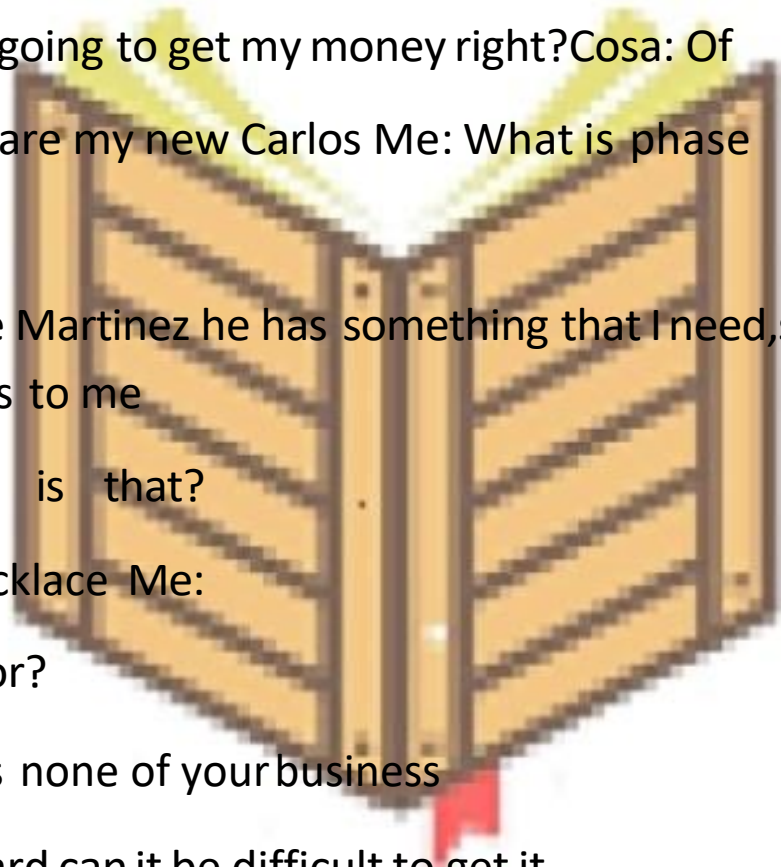
Cosa: A necklace Me:

What is it for?

Cosa: That's none of your business

Me: How hard can it be difficult to get it

Cosa: He keeps it very secure, to get it you will have to take him out. Andre is a ruthless bastard it won't be easy taking him out, that's why you can't do it



alone

Me: I doubt Sole and Kelso will be down for that

Cosa: That's why we don't have to give them a choice

I nodded..

Cosa: Tell me if you can't pull this off

Me: I can.. I will.. I'm tired of living in their shadows, I'm tired of being despised by them. Most of all I'm still mad for what Kelso did, killing Londi

Cosa: Give it time.. Give them time, go back to them. Earn their trust then when the time is right, we will creep in

Me: Understood

Cosa: You will hear from me when it's time

Me: Yes

Sir

KELSO

Very early in the morning we made that drive to see

NOVELSGURU.COM

the traditional healer. We traveled all the way to Mpumalanga..
We left at 3am exactly.. It was still dark..

Sole: I can't believe we actually doing this
Me: We just being safe

Sole: Yeah I know

Me: How is your brother taking the Nessi situation?
Sole: He hasn't said anything

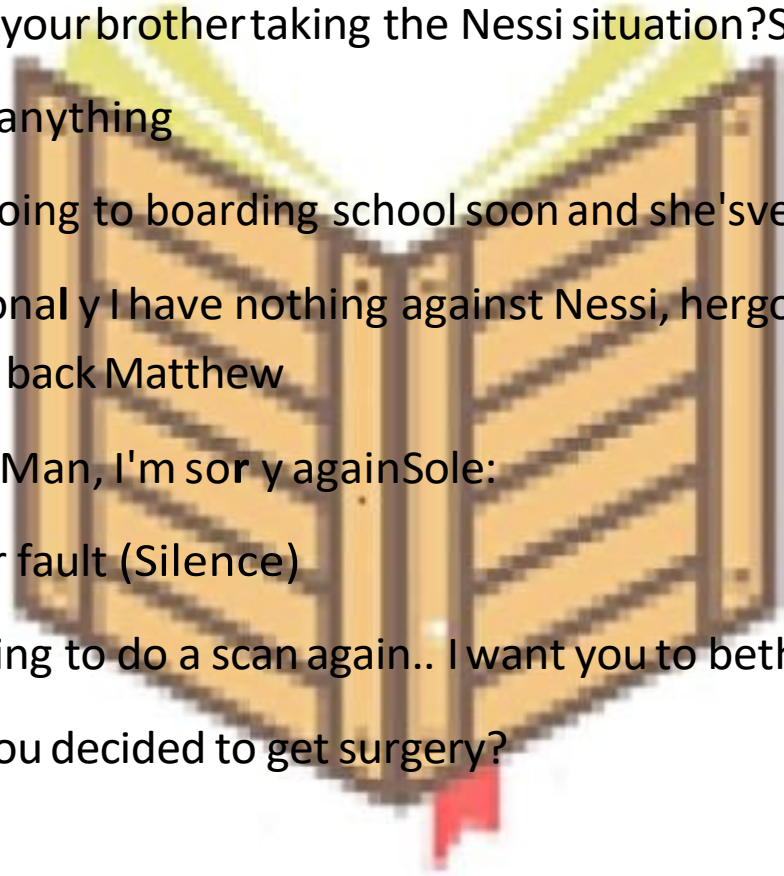
Me: She's going to boarding school soon and she's very excited

Sole: I personally I have nothing against Nessi, her going to jail
won't bring back Matthew

Me: I know Man, I'm sorry again
Sole: It's not your fault (Silence)

Sole: I'm going to do a scan again.. I want you to be there

Me: Have you decided to get surgery?



Sole: The scan will show how the tumor is now

Me: You still have to do the surgery, it's better being safe than sorry

Sole: I will do the surgery when I'm ready
Me: I see

Sole: Don't even tell Nongcebo about this, I don't know her closeness with Nongcebo but..

Me: I won't tell her

Sole: Thank you

SANDIWE

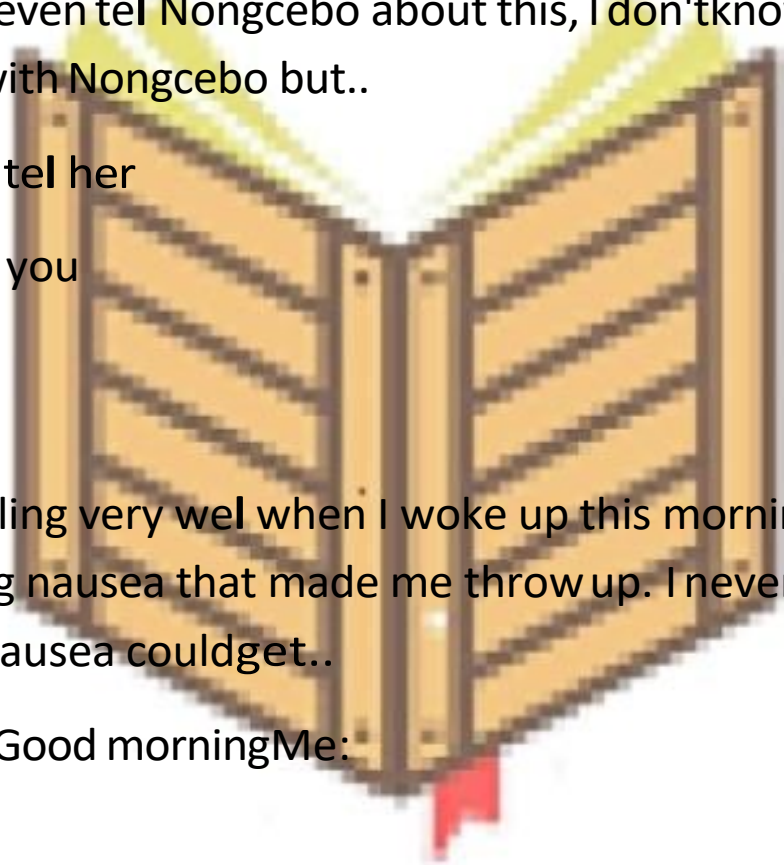
I wasn't feeling very well when I woke up this morning, I had this irritating nausea that made me throw up. I never knew how annoying Nausea could get..

Nongcebo: Good morning
Me:

Morning

Her: Are you okay?

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Not really.. Nausea, vomiting. I just feel like hell
Her: Why don't you lie down for a bit?

Me: I will do so when the Nausea has gone down a bit
I went and sat on the couch..

Me: Pregnancy is going to be hell, if I'm feeling like this now..
What about later on in my pregnancy

Her: I'm sure you will adapt

Me: Are you going to have kids after getting married?

Her: Not anytime soon.. Maybe when I have a degree of
a qualification of some sort first

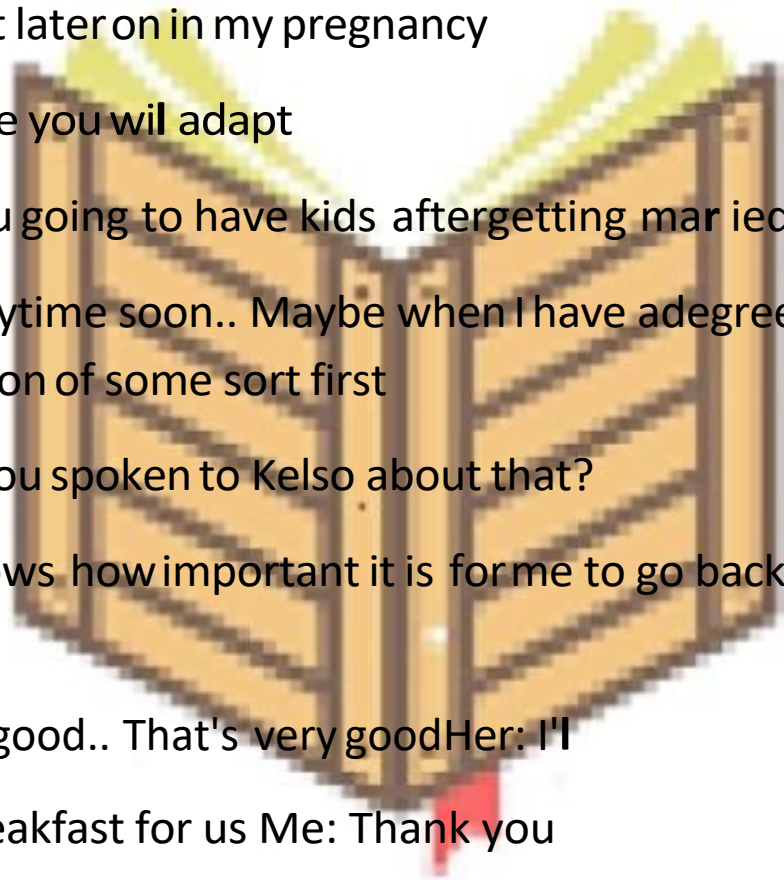
Me: Have you spoken to Kelso about that?

Her: He knows how important it is for me to go back to school
first

Me: That's good.. That's very good
Her: I'll

prepare breakfast for us
Me: Thank you

but I'll eat later
Her: Okay



KELSO

We finally arrived at the place, after that long drive. It was quiet as we made our way in and went to knock at the door..

We knocked for a while and the door was opened by some lady..

Her: Sanibonani

Me: Sawubona.. Besicela ukubona ubab'Wisani?(May we please see Mr Wisani)

She folded her arms..

Her: uWisani okhulumayo (I am Wisani) So it's a woman, I thought it was a man..

Me: Ngiyaxolisa, bengicabanga ukuthi.. (I'm sorry, I thought that it was..)

Her: Akusiwuwe wokuqala (You not the first one) She looked at us..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Nilandelwa yifu elimnyama kakhulu, nenze

kahle neza kuse early (A black cloud is following you boys,
you did well by coming here)

Me: Ungasanceda? (Will you be able to help us)

Her: Yebo kodwa ke kuzomele siye ethuneni lakhe (I can help
you but we will have to go to his grave)

That's going to be a bit difficult..

Her: Uma nivuma ngingagoqa amasakana wami Kelso
sihambeni (If you agree I will get my bag and we will leave
Kelso)

Me: Ulazi njani igama lami? (How did you know my name)

Her: Kudala nginilindele (I've been waiting for you guys)

I looked at Sole...

Me: She wants to come with us, so we go to his grave

Sole: Today?

Her: Cha mhlambe ksasa, kodwa ngoba ke nisukakude
kuzomele ngihambe nani (Not today, maybe

NOVELSGURU.COM

tomorrow. But since you boys have traveled far, I will have to leave you)

Me: Akunankinga (There's no problem) Her:

Ngiyeza (I'm coming)

Sole: Where is she going to sleep? At your house? With your so Christian Grandmother

Me: This won't go well

NONGCEBO

I was eating when I received a call from Banza, it's been a while..

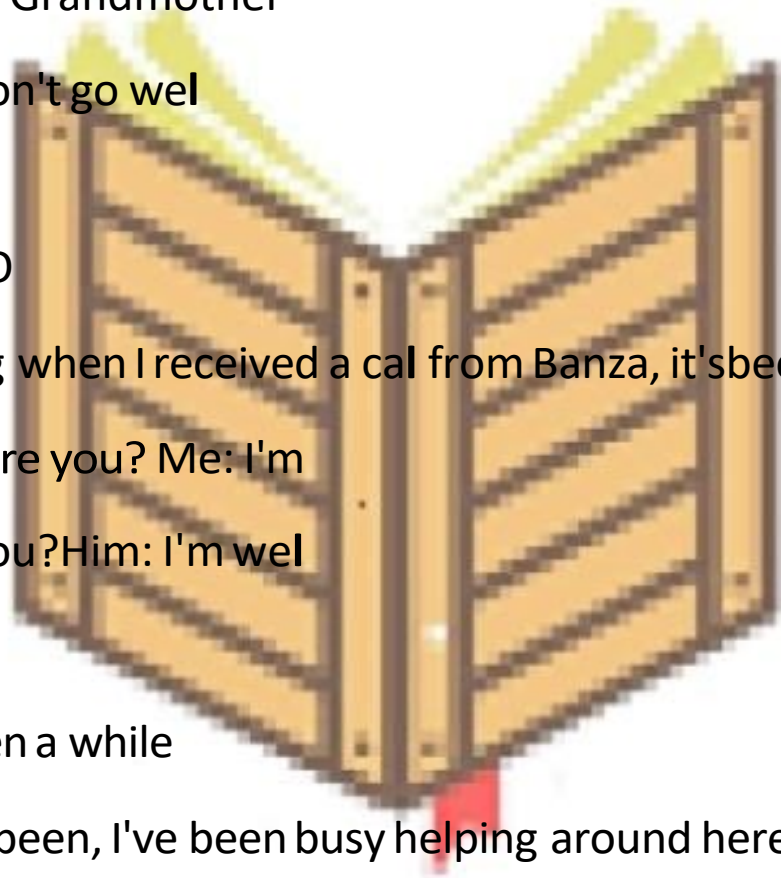
Him: How are you? Me: I'm good and you? Him: I'm well

...

Me: It's been a while

Him: It has been, I've been busy helping around here Me: How is it going?

Him: They seeing him in the coffin now, then later



NOVELSGURU.COM

we will go to the community hall

Me: I

see

Him: I'm truly sorry

Me: It's okay.. I'm just glad that I won't be dealing with him anymore

Him: He's family is very angry..

Me: I expected that from them

Him: They going to be more angry when you and Bongeka don't show up

Me: We won't come they should make peace with that

Him: I understand that

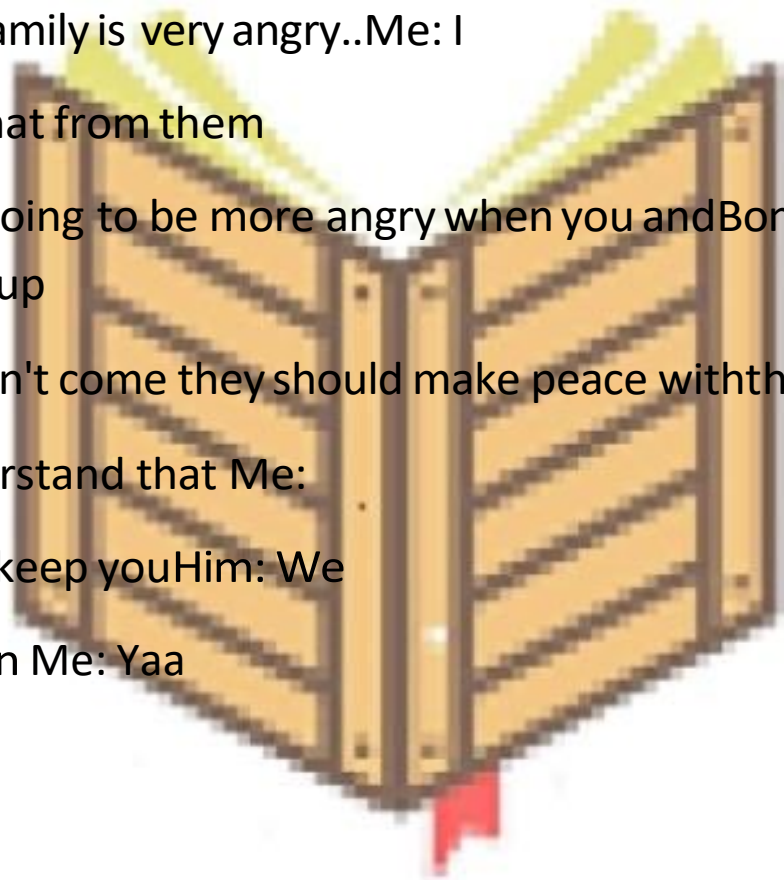
Me: Let me not keep you

Him: We will talk soon

Me: Yaa

Him: Bye

Me: Bye



NOVELSGURU.COM

KELSO

We waited for her to even finish bathing before we could leave.. When she was done, she walked out with her bag. I helped her with it and put it in the car at the back..

She sat at the back, next to her bag..

This is going to be difficult especially with my Grandmother who doesn't believe in traditional healers anymore, I don't know what I'm going to say to her..

Wisani: "Uyamazi u(W).. Uyamazi u(I).. Yamazi (S)no (A),
uqhamuka ezantsi uphephela uphephela, asiyothenga
amayeza sibulale Izinja!

She started clapping her hands and singing..Sole

looked at me and shook his head..

Sole: It's going to be a long drive

.

To be continuedNo

edits

NOVELSGURU.COM

[08/24, 13:09] : 44

NONGCEBO

Kelso is a very mysterious person, but nothing could've prepared me for this. He showed up with a woman of whom I clearly saw that she's a traditional healer. She stood outside next to the car singing and dancing.

I was beyond shocked, especially with my experience when coming to traditional healers. They do a lot of harm, Bhubesi gave Makhathini strength to do all the evil in this world. How can they live with themselves knowing very well that they are causing harm to others. It's not right at all, they should use their gifts to do good by others..

I hugged Sandi and bid her farewell, we have exchanged numbers and promised each other that we are going to keep in contact as much as possible..

We got into the car and she got in the back. She burped and a deep voice surfaced from the pits of her stomach. The whole car started to smell like a brewery, I had to open the window. I looked back and saw bottles of beers, and snuff next to the beers..

I wanted to say something to Kelso but this won't be the right time, I can't talk about someone whilst they're sitting at the back..

Her: Nongcebo unjani Sisi? (how are you) Me:

Ngiyaphila (I'm well)

I looked at Kelso she told her my name? Me: You told her my name?

Kelso: No

Her: Ihaba sisi (Don't exaggerate) I

ignored her..

Her: Ngiyazi ukuthi awusithembi, kodwa ke angikugxeki (I know you don't trust us, but I don't blame you)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Angihambelani nento eniyenzayo (I don't go with what you guys are doing)

Her: Awukaboni nex, Awukaboni ukuthi kunjani emhlabeni. Thula wena uzobona (You haven't seen nothing, you haven't seen how the world is like. One day you will see)

SANDISIWE

Me: I missed you
Sole: I missed you too

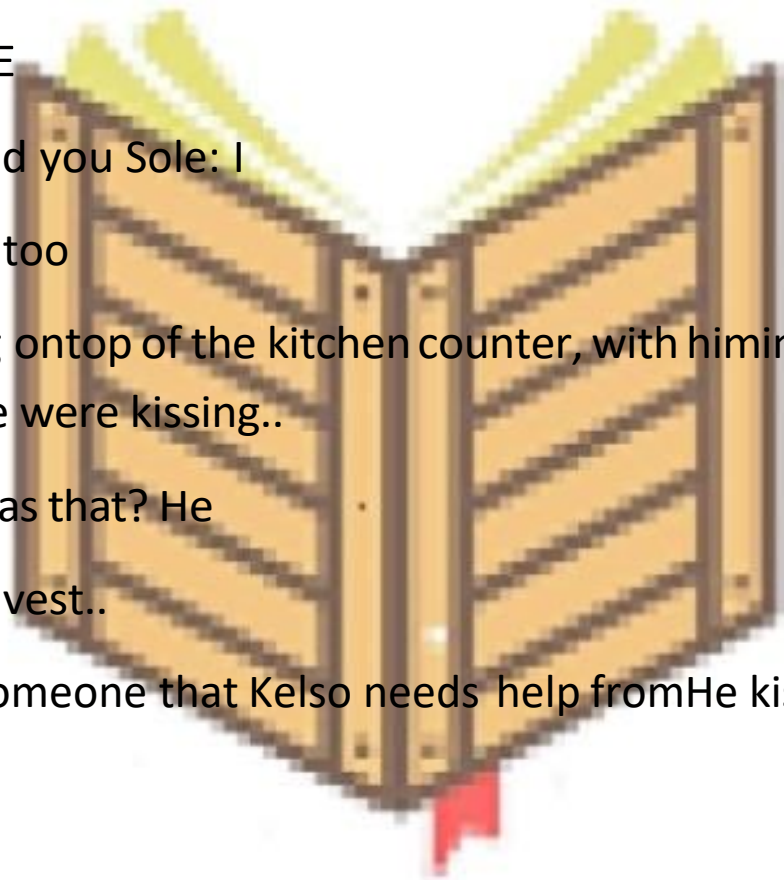
I was sitting on top of the kitchen counter, with him in between my legs. We were kissing..

Me: Who was that? He took off my vest..

Him: Just someone that Kelso needs help from
He kissed me again..

Me: For?

He started massaging my breasts..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I don't know sweets

We continued kissing and he moved down to my neck, then kissed me in between my breasts moving down to kissing my tummy then finally gently biting through my bumshort. It was a bit ticklish I closed my legs a bit..

Me: Stop (laughing)

He came back up and pushed my braids to the back..

Him: I love you so much Me: I

love you too

BANZA

I was happy to be finally done with Makhathini, after the funeral I went back home. The taxi that I was driving it's his, so I don't know if his family is going to let me continue driving it seeing how evil his Auntis

I need to make a plan, go to the taxi rank and see if I can't find another taxi owner that will be willing to

NOVELSGURU.COM

hire me..

Thinking of going back to school won't help, my Parents are no longer working. I was the only bread winner. Other than driving taxis I don't know anything else, never worked before.

Makhathini took me when I completed my grade 12 and put me in the taxi industry. I laid back on my bed Frustrated, I need to get a job soon..

SANDISIWE

How I've missed making love to this man, his strong hands being able to handle my body. His lips against mine, his body against mine, hearing him cussing under his breath when the feeling intensifies. Feeling the hardness of his cock deep inside of me, hitting that part that makes me lose my breath here and there. How my coochie gets more and more wet with each stroke, there's no best feeling than this. Even in my previous relationship this much satisfaction I didn't get. My ex wasn't bad

NOVELSGURU.COM

trust me, but Sole I really enjoy our sexual sessions or maybe it's because it comes with love. Love that I never thought would grow so quickly..

His phone vibrated next to me..Me:

Baa.. Baabe

He ignored it but it kept on vibrating. I turned and checked, it was a whatsapp video call from a girl named "Luvuyo". I glanced at it until the video call was canceled. He was still deep inside of me with my hands running on his back, my curiosity got a better of me. I took his phone and checked, I went straight to whatsapp and opened their messages.

Luvu: Good morning sunshine

Sole: It's still very early, why you up so early Luvu: bad dream I guess

Sole: I told you monsters don't exist Luvu: I know love

Sole: Go back to sleep, I'll hit you up later

NOVELSGURU.COM

That was around 4am in the morning.

I got this tight feeling in my chest, I struggled to breath a little. With the anger that was building up inside, I wanted him out of me with immediate effect. I slammed his phone against the counter..He looked at me..

Sole: Whats wrong?

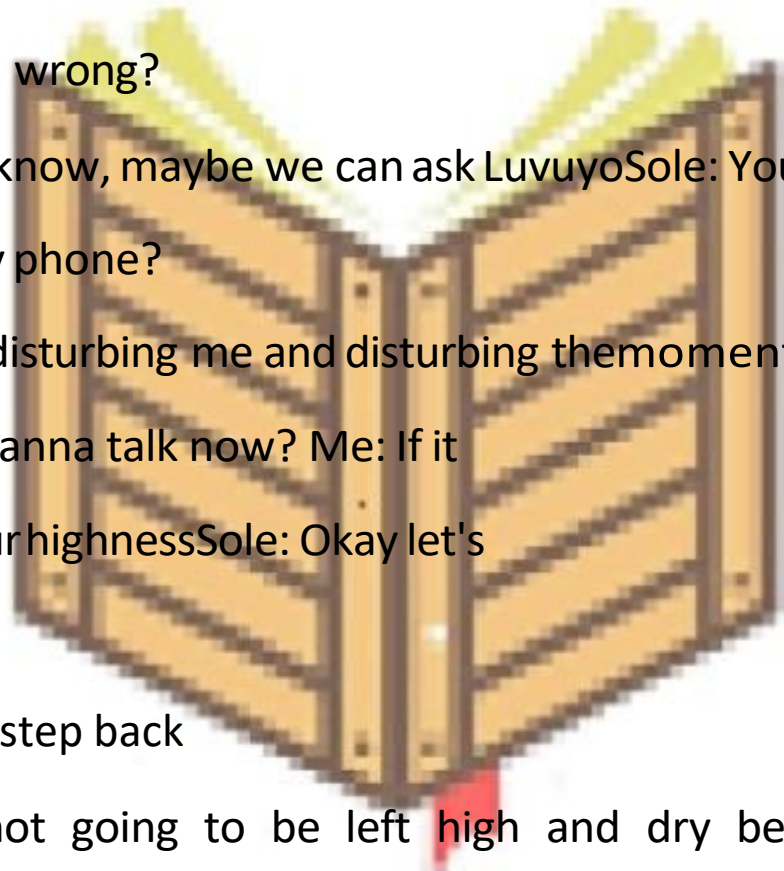
Me: I don't know, maybe we can ask Luvuyo
Sole: You checked my phone?

Me: It was disturbing me and disturbing themoment

Sole: You wanna talk now? Me: If it
pleases your highness
Sole: Okay let's
talk

Me: Please step back

Sole: I'm not going to be left high and dry because you decided to check my phone in the middle of usmaking love. If we going to talk about her, we going



NOVELSGURU.COM

to talk whilst I'm inside of you. If not then we notgoing to talk about her

Me: That's insane

Him: You the one who decided to check my phone,so what is it going to be?

Me: Who is she?

He started pumping..

Him. She's an old ex of mine

He started to pump hard forthe next question,confusing me on what I wanted to ask..

Me: Sole slow down

He leaned over and whispered in my ear..Sole:

Next question please

Me: Soleeee...

My nails dug through in his back, as much as I wasmad at him but my hormones weren't.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Talk to me sweets

Me: I hate you so much right now!

Him: I know.. I know

NONGCEBO

when we arrived at home, I was the first one to get out of the car and walked into the yard. Kelso followed me, he gently grabbed my arm..

Him: Askies kancane.. What's with the attitude? I turned and looked at him..

Me: What are you doing with her?

Kelso: Okay that's an insult, you think I'm fucking her?

Me: No Kelso don't get full of yourself, what are you doing with a traditional healer?

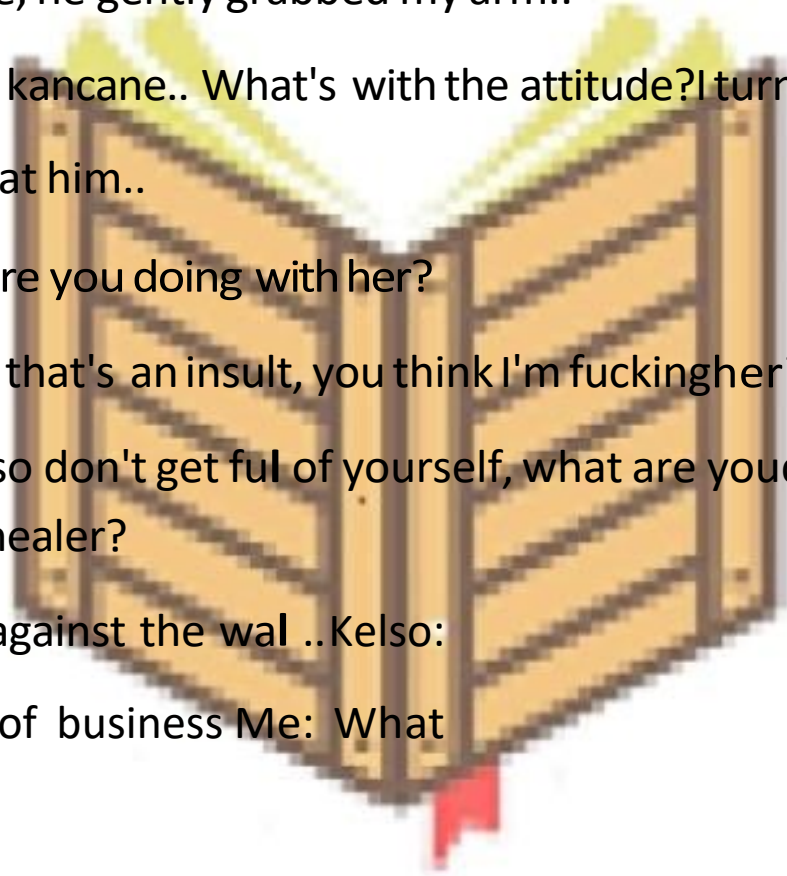
He leaned against the wall ..Kelso:

Just a bit of business Me: What

business?

Kelso: My business

I pointed at the door..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Open

Kelso: What's your deal with traditional healers? Me:

Unlock the door

He unlocked and we walked in.. Me: I

just don't trust them okay? He

squeezed my cheek..

Him: She's here for right reasons, trust me Me:

When is she leaving?

Him: Soon, she won't even be here for that long I exhaled..

Me: I wish you could let me in your world, we getting married in 2 weeks time

He pulled me closer to him..

Him: I love you a lot, that's what you need to know He kissed me...

I wrapped my arms around his waist.. Me: I

love you too

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: And that's all I need to know too

He poked my nose and kissed me on my nosebridge...

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Thandiwe, she is asking for help with votes. Kindly find the link attached below for voting

https://pageantvote.es/pageants/2741/contestants/18177?voted=true&fbclid=IwAR23AM31sPzVQYb_ck_duhgklS8zOksg5WyXXzGf4BfnbUBxh_jZn-6zmCY

[08/24, 13:09] : 45

KELSO

My Grandmother always tries her best to be selfless when it comes to us. She has always went out of her way to please us, even if it means compromising what she believes in.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I sat her down and talked to her about the Wisanithing, I didn't tel her what I did to Bhubesi though..

Grams: Hai Kelso lento yakho inzima (This thing of yours is difficult)

Me: I'm sor y if you feel disrespected in your house

Grams: So long she doesn't do anything in myhouse

Me: I promise

Sha looked at Wisani..

Grams: I'm going to check on the girlsShe walked out..

Wisani: Siyabonga salukwazi (Thank you Grams)Grams: Hai voetsek wena!

I laughed.. Me:

Grandma!

Wisani walked in and sat down, she burped..Me:

Wisani



Her: Shono ke Kelso kwentakalani phakathi kwakhono Nongcebo
(Tell me something what's going on between you and Nongcebo)

Me: Usho? (what do you mean)

Her: Loku kokuthandzana kuyakanjani? (How is your
relationship with her)

Me: We fine, I mean we do fight like every other couple

She nodded..

Me: Why?

Her: Myeni wakhe uceda kushona angithi? (Her husband
recently passed on)

Me: Nongcebo was never married to her

Her: Ngokuya ngomndeni wakhe, muntfu uyashadana efile
(According to his family, a dead person can still get married)

Me: Uyangilahla? (You losing me)

Her: Nongcebo bamshaye ngeschitho, uma engagezi mshado lo
wenu ngeke uhambe kahle.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Babe lo oshonile useshadisiwe no Ngcebo (they have put a curse on Nongcebo, if she doesn't get a cleansing your marriage with her won't work. This man of hers that passes on they married him off to her)

This was unexpected..

Her: Kodwa ke ngoba Nongcebo khanda lakhe liqinile ngeke avume, futhi waboniswa ububi ngathi akasithembi (Nongcebo is hard headed she won't agree, plus Bhubesi showed her the bitter side so she won't trust us)

Me: So what do I do?

Her: Myeke kukuye, kodwa ke ngithemba ukuthi uzofuna usizo izinto zingeka mosheki (It's up to her, but I hope she will get help before it's too late)

I exhaled..

NONGCEBO

When we got here Power had dropped off Hakeem. Nessi, Bongeka, and I were playing with her at the

NOVELSGURU.COM

back. Grandma joined us..

Grandma tried to kick the ball back to Hakeem but she fell on the ground, she fell on her bums. The girls laughed, I walked up to her and helped her up..

Her: Age is not on my side anymore Me: I'm

sorry

I helped her dust herself.. Nessi:

Are you okay Grams?

Grams: Shut up you even laughed

Hakeem pointed at her..

She sat on the stoep..

I went and sat next to her..

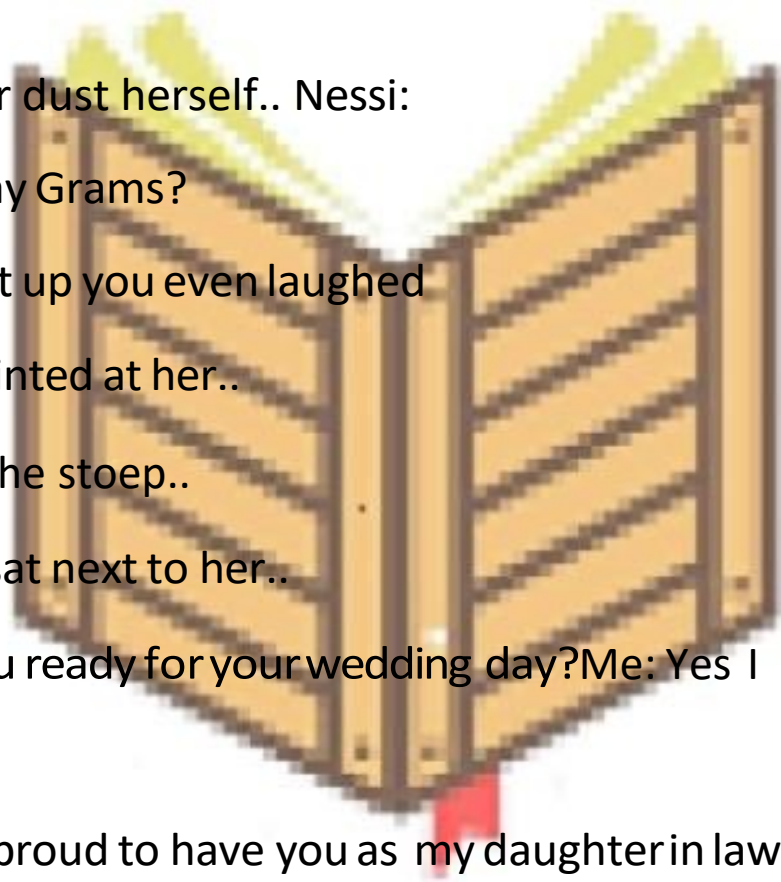
Her: Are you ready for your wedding day? Me: Yes I

am

Her: I'm so proud to have you as my daughter in law, I have never seen Kelso so happy

Me: Thank you

Her: You make him very happy



NOVELSGURU.COM

Wisani showed up..

Grams: That's my queue to leave She got up and walked away..

Wisani: Awuu sengenzi salukwazi (What did I do now)

Grams: Ayoi awungiyeke (leave me alone) Wisani came and sat next to me..

Wisani: Nongcebo intombi yakwa Khumalo lolol ed my eyes..

Wisani: Umelwe okuhle kodwa, uzofunda, uzosebenza (Good things are awaiting you, you will go to varsity, you will work)

Me: I see

Wisani: Kodwa indlela izoba Nzima (It will be difficult though)

Me: Wee Wisani I didn't ask you for your opinion

Wisani: Ukuhlakanipha kodwa ungafundile ukuyaphi (you smart for someone who didn't even make it)

that far with school)I

ignored her..

Wisani: Ubani uBanza? (Who is Banza)Me: A

friend

Wisani: Ukukhonzile (he is very fond of you)Me: I

know

Wisani: Aze abe negazi ezandleni zakhe (So much that he has bloods in his hands)

I looked at her..

Wisani: Ukwentele into enkulu awazi nokwazi (He did something for you but you don't even know)

Me: Wisani what are you trying to say?

Wisani: Kahle phela kancance ngelabe Lungu (Stop a little with English)

Me: If I remember correctly you came here for Kelson not me

She nodded..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso showed up, Hakeem ran up to him..

Wisani: Awww koshayiswana ngamakhandala (Alot is still yet to come)

He picked up Hakeem. Wisani got up and went to the girls...

Wisani: Weeee Ntombazana!

She fixed her cloth around her waist..

Kelso and Hakeem sat next to me, Hakeem stretched his hands out to me. I took him..

Kelso: That's a first

I made him stand on my thighs..Me: Hi

punki.. Munku Munku

I shook him a little and he started smiling..Me:

Aren't you so adorable?

He wrapped his little arms around my neck and gave me a hug...

Me: Ncooo aren't you sweet

Kelso: Eh Eh Eh I'm starting to get a bit jealous We

laughed..



Me: Give me a kiss

I kissed him, then he came back for more kisses..Kelso: Let me go out fora bit, I'm coming

Me: Okay

Kelso: Give me a kiss!

kissed him..

Kelso: Do you need anything?Me:

No I'm good

Kelso: Okay I'm comingMe:

Okay

He got up and walked away.. Wisani looked at me and shook her head. Bongeka hit her with the ball on her face..

Wisani: Awe Ma!!

Bongeka: Focus!! Ma Wiwi focus

Wisani: Uyabona manje ngiyolikhahlela ngilishoekhanda (I will kick it and make sure it hits your head)



They laughed..

Wisani put the ball down..

Wisani: Yamanzi u (W).. Yamanzi u (I).. Yamanzi u (S) no (A)..
Uqhamuka ezantsi uphephela uphephela,asiyothenga amayeza
sibulale Izinja (Singing)

Sha kicked the ball and continued singing, Nessi and Bongeka started clapping their hands as Wisani continued..

SOLE

I looked at her as she peacefully slept. We were laying on the bed and she had passed out whilst we were busy talking..

I put her braids back, she was deep in her sleep..Me: I love you so much

I put my hand on her tummy..

Me: And I love you too.. I promise that I'll always do good by you, no matter what. I wish you a girl, because I'm going to literally break any guy's neck

NOVELSGURU.COM

that's going to break your heart. I promise to give you the world, I promise to love you as if like it's going to be my last day on earth. Most of all I promise to be good to your mother, so that you will grow up and see how a man should treat you. I will never put her through any pain that's going to make you question my love for her or be traumatized, you going to have the best childhood ever that I promise you. Just survive in there, and I'll survive in the world for you

I moved down a bit and kissed her tummy.. I put my hand on her tummy again..

Me: Let me talk to you for a second as mommy is still sleeping

I looked at Sandi and she was still sleeping.. I started singing, softly so as to not wake her up..

Me: "Some days I sit, starin' out the window Watchin' this world pass me by

Sometimes I think there's nothin' to live for I almost break down and cry

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sometimes I think I'm crazy I'm

crazy, oh so crazy

Why am I here, am I just wastin' my time? But then

I heard you were coming soon Suddenly I'm not
crazy

It all makes sense when I think about it "I smiled
and continued..

Me: "People think I'm weird 'cause they don't understand me,
they just don't see my real side.. I act like shit don't phase me
but

Inside it drives me crazy, My insanity could eat me alive..

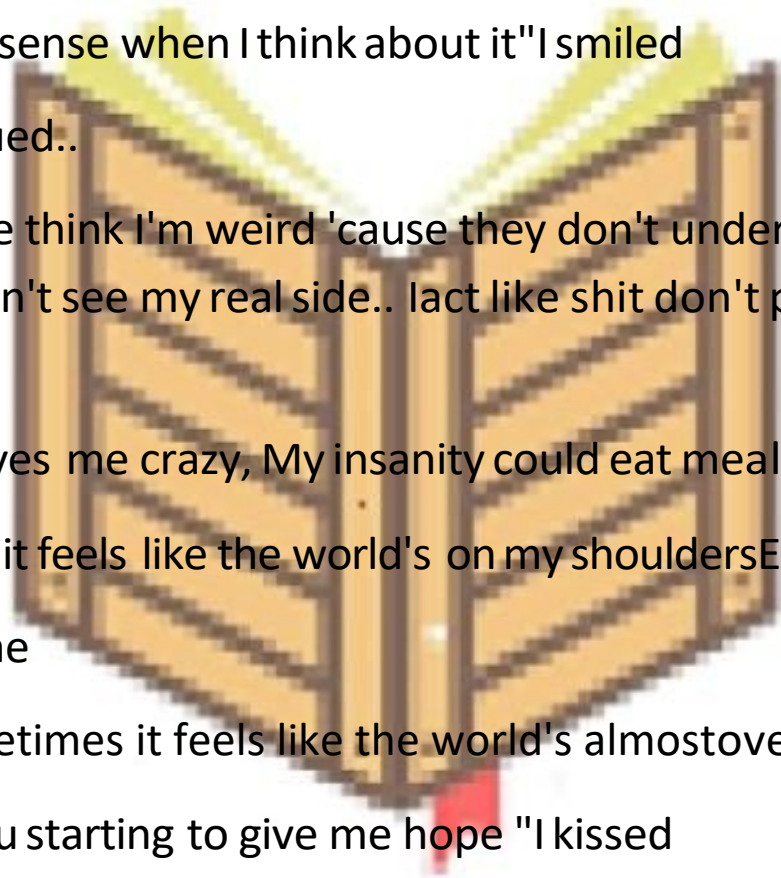
Sometimes it feels like the world's on my shoulders Everyone's
leanin' on me

'Cause sometimes it feels like the world's almost over

But then you starting to give me hope "I kissed

her tummy again..

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: I'm happy your Mother didn't abort you, grow up in there knowing that your Daddy is a soldier no one will ever hurt you

I looked at Sandi.. Me:

Oryour Mama

NONGCEBO

I received a call from Banza.. Me:

Hey

Him: Hey

Me: How was the funeral?

Him: It was a funeral, what can I say?!

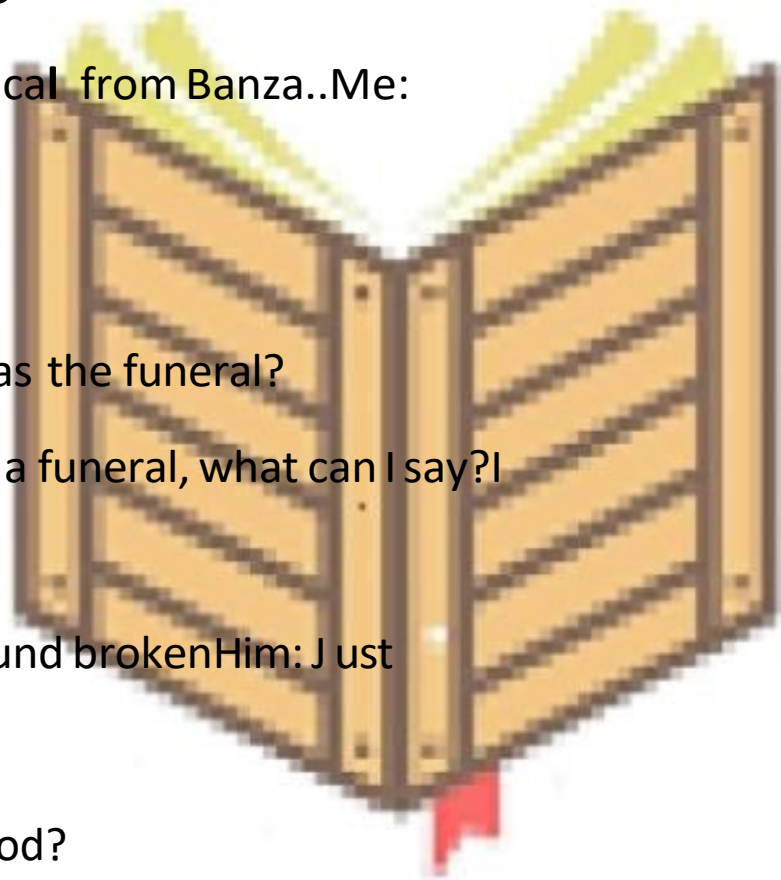
laughed..

Me: You sound broken Him: Just

tired

Me: You good?

Him: No.. Are you good?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm good

Him: Is he treating you well? Me: Yes

Him: Are you happy? Really happy? Me: Yes

I'm happy

Him: I'm happy too then to hear you that happy

Me: Thank you for everything, for being there especially when I needed you the most

Him: Don't sweat it

Me: When you do get a girlfriend she's going to be blessed

Him: The same way that he's blessed to have you Me: I guess

so

He chuckled.. Me:

What?

Him: I just remembered something Me:

What is it?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: It's stupid forget itMe: Tel

me hau

Him: " Aww putsununu" (Singing)I

laughed..

Me: "Thada dadada"(Singing)We

both laughed..

Me: Kodwa uyicabangiswa yini? (What made you think of that)

Him: J ust reminiscing about the old daysMe: I see

(Laughing)

(Silence)

Me: You reminded me of something tooHim:

What?

Me: "Sidl'ukotini Sidl'ukotini eyyy"

He laughed.. I joined him and we laughed together..

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

This insert was inspired by Inganathi again, she's still asking for your votes. If you have voted previously, you are allowed to vote again just visit the link below

<https://pageantvote.es/pageants/2741/contestants/18101>

[08/24, 13:13] : 46

NONGCEBO

[2 WEEKS LATER]

I stood in front of the mirror and looked at myself, the dress was beautiful no lie. I never imagined myself in a wedding dress, not in a million years. I liked the fact that it was not big, just a simple beautiful white dress. When Kelso and I were discussing this wedding thing, at first it felt like a dream. Now, it's settling in that I'm actually getting married this coming weekend..

Sandi: You look beautiful

NOVELSGURU.COM

I turned and looked at her..Me: It al

feels like a dream

Sandi: I'm sure it does, you look very beautifulMe: Thank

you for helping me with everythingSandi: It's not like I

had anything to do Assistant: It's time to fit yours

Sandi: I hope it's my size

Me: Come on it's not like you big Sandi: Let

me finish this chocolate Me: Maybe lay off

on the chocolates

Sandi: I'm the bride's maid, I don't need to lose weight

I laughed..

Me: I'm ready to take off mine

Assistant: Okay

I went to undress, right when I was only in my
underwear and bra. The smell started.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I closed my eyes. This has been going on for a week now, I've been having this unusual smell arising from my vagina. At times in the morning, I wake up very wet..

KELSO

The cleansing went well with Wisani, it wasn't something drastic and I am very amused by her gift. She found Bhubesi's grave without us having to go and enquire from his family. She's truly gifted and I respect her gift. If I had any doubts about traditional healers being scams, she proved that there are traditional healers that are actually gifted out there. Who knows exactly what they are doing..

Sole: Damn you look sophisticated Soni
chuckled..

Sole: We must rock with suits more often Me:

Yeah

Sole: What's wrong? I

sighed..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I think Nongcebo is cheating on me

Sole: What? Nongcebo and cheating?

Me: She's been spending a lot of time with Banzalately

Sole: You caught them? I thought they were friends

Me: No I haven't caught them.. Each time when we have to do the deed it's like.. It's like someone has been there already, like someone is done been eating my cookie

Sole: Did you confront her with that?

Me: I need more proof, I don't know why she would do this.. She knows what's at stake should she cheat on me

Sole: This is difficult

Me: She has this unusual smell, like an STI or something

Sole: That's deep Kelso, are you sure you want to go ahead with this? The wedding?

Me: Yeah.. We going ahead with it

NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

When we were done, Sandi drove back home. She was driving Sole's car. We came together here at the bridal shop but Banza called and told me that he will come and get me, and he did. So that we could go out for lunch..

Banza: You got scammed?

Me: I'm telling you.. Like when I whatsapp her she had blocked me, I think her Facebook account was fake too

He laughed.. Him:

I'm so sorry

Me: I guess we all learn the hard way Him: True

that

Me: I want you to attend the wedding

Him: Wouldn't miss my best friend's wedding for the world

Me: I could feel that my vagina was starting to get a



burn and it was itching

Banza: Are you okay?

Me: I think I need to lay off on the contraceptive injection

Banza: Why?

Me: I'm not sure, think it's starting to give me this bad effect

Banza: Did you talk to the Nurse about that?

Me: No I need to go for the injection after the wedding, the following Monday.. I'll talk to her

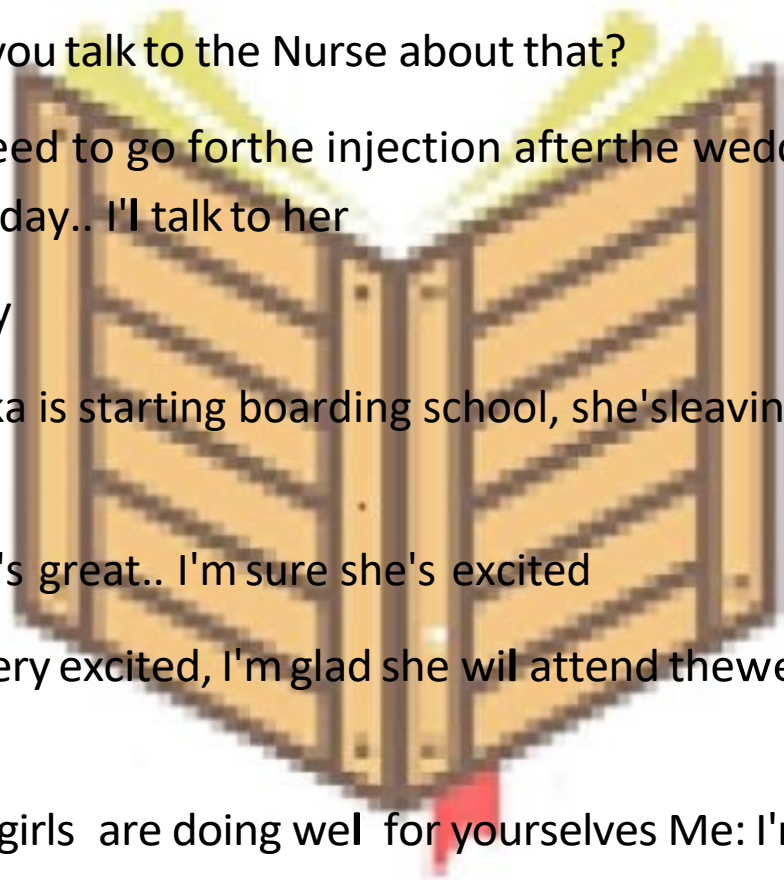
Banza: Okay

Me: Bongeka is starting boarding school, she's leaving on Sunday

Banza: That's great.. I'm sure she's excited

Me: She's very excited, I'm glad she will attend the wedding though

Banza: You girls are doing well for yourselves Me: I'm really happy I don't wanna lie plus work is



promising to make me permanent soonBanza:

That's good

Me: I enjoy working, I like my job.. The ladies are nice

He extended his hand to mine..Banza: I'm

proud of you

I smiled..

Me: Thank you

GETRUDE (KELSO'S MOM)

I heard a knock in my office..Me:

Come in

It was my PI J eff..J eff:

Mrs Gxaba Me: Hel o J

eff

J eff: Hope I didn't catch you at a bad time?

Me: Not at al , I have a few minutes until my next



NOVELSGURU.COM

meeting

Jeff: That's good

Me: So what do you have for me? He gave me the envelope..

Jeff: Her name is Nongcebo

I opened the envelope and looked at the pictures.. Me: She's beautiful

Jeff: She actually works at the mall closer to your firm

Me: Is it?

Jeff: Palette clothing shop

Me: Very nice, is she at work today? Jeff:

She was at a bridal shop

Me: Bridal shop?

Jeff: Fitting a wedding dress, think she's getting married she was with your Niece Sandi

I nodded..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: My Son is getting married, wow! Jeff:

Anything else?

Me: No that's all.. Thank you Jeff!

Anytime.. Enjoy your day Me: You too

KELSO

Sandi showed up, she was alone..Sandi:

Boys

She walked up to us.. Sole: Are

you guys done?

Sandi: Yes.. Our dresses are good, and you guys?Sole: We

done too

Me: Where is Nongcebo?

Sandi: Her friend came to fetch herMe:

What friend?

Sandi: Some guy

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Banza

Sandi: Yes I think that's his name

Sole looked at me..

Sole: Easy Man

Sandi: What's going on? Me:

Where are they?

Sandi: I don't know, I'm not sure they just left in a taxi

Me: It's cool

I gave Sole our coded handshake.. Me: I'll

see you Man

Sole: Don't do anything stupid!

Sole walked to my car..

NONGCEBO

Banza: I got a new job, this other taxi owner came through for me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That's good

Banza: Yeah matter of fact I have to be at the taxirank

Me: Alright I'll take a taxi home

Banza: Don't you wanna come? Rank with me forawhile

Me: I don't think so

Banza: Come on it'll be funMe: Okay

wait

I took out my phone and texted Kelso:"Out ranking with Banza"

Me: Let's go

We got up and left.

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by the admin of "Beautyin her brokenness"

Please check out her page..



NOVELSGURU.COM

<https://m.facebook.com/Zizoph-Ntlangulas-short-stories-109151177372360/>

[08/24, 13:13] : 47

NONGCEBO

I had hope to spend the day with Banza as planned, but the embarrassing smell arising from my vagina made me to cut our friendship time spending short, later on during the day I took a taxi back home. The first thing I did was to bath thoroughly, after bathing it got a bit better. I took my phone and called Sandisiwe..

Sandi: Galza

Me: Galza did you arrive home safe? Her:

Yes I did.. Are you home?

Me: Yes

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Is Kelso there?

Me: No

Her: I don't wanna be nosey but he didn't look happy when I told him you went with your friend, kanti he doesn't know that you have a male best friend?

Me: He does know Banza Her:

He seemed jealous

Me: I don't know why he would be

Her: Men get jealous very easily and I don't trust friends of the opposite sex

Me: Banza and I we haven't done anything wrong, we good friends. He was there when I needed someone

Her: Have you ever asked him how he feels about you? Does he have a girlfriend?

Me: He doesn't

Her: From where I'm seeing this, it will come to a point where you will have to choose between them

I exhaled..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: This is bad, once upon a time my life was just

simple. Not good simple but never caught in such a mess

Her: You getting married soon, Kelso is supposed to be your best friend and your husband

Me: Growing up without a mother figure is difficult, I don't know life experiences because no one was there to teach me these things

Her: I'm sorry Babes Me:

Thank you

Her: Anytime

Me: I need to talk to you about something Her:

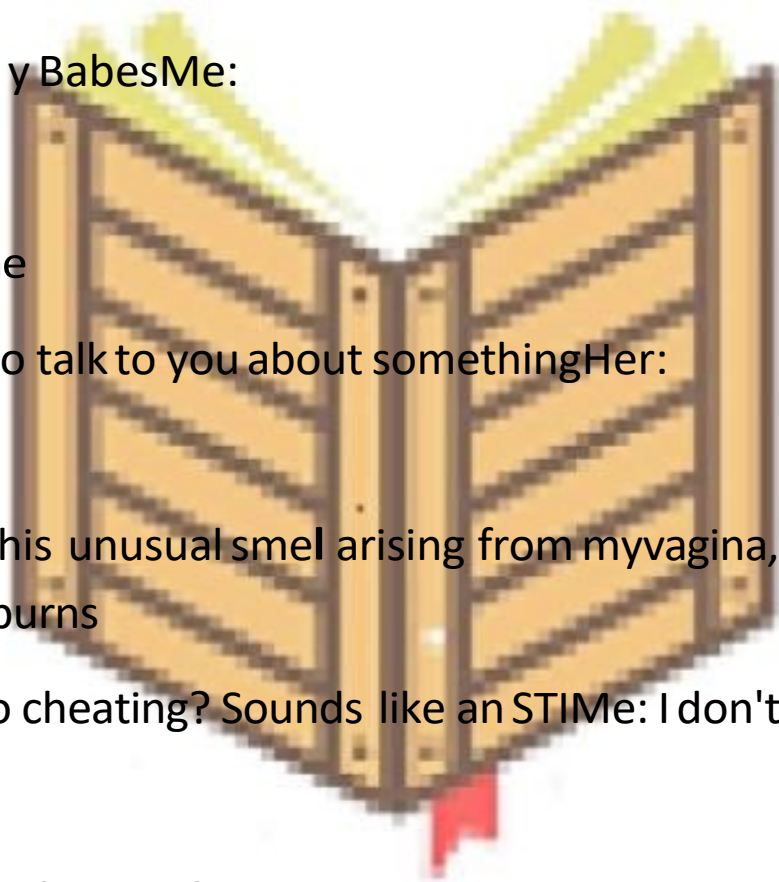
Okay

Me: I have this unusual smell arising from my vagina, it's also itchy and it burns

Her: Is Kelso cheating? Sounds like an STI Me: I don't think so

Her: are you cheating?

Me: Kelso is currently the only person I'm sleeping



NOVELSGURU.COM

with

Her: Are you on birth control?Me:

Yes the injection

Her: Could be that.. Get a pure soap from the pharmacy and canex v cream, I'm sure the infection will clear soon. It's probably the imbalance of hormones also talk to the nurse about it when you go again for another dose

Me: I'll do that.. It's so embarrassing I am even embarrassed to talk to Kelso about it

Her: I understand

Me: Thank you very much girlHer:

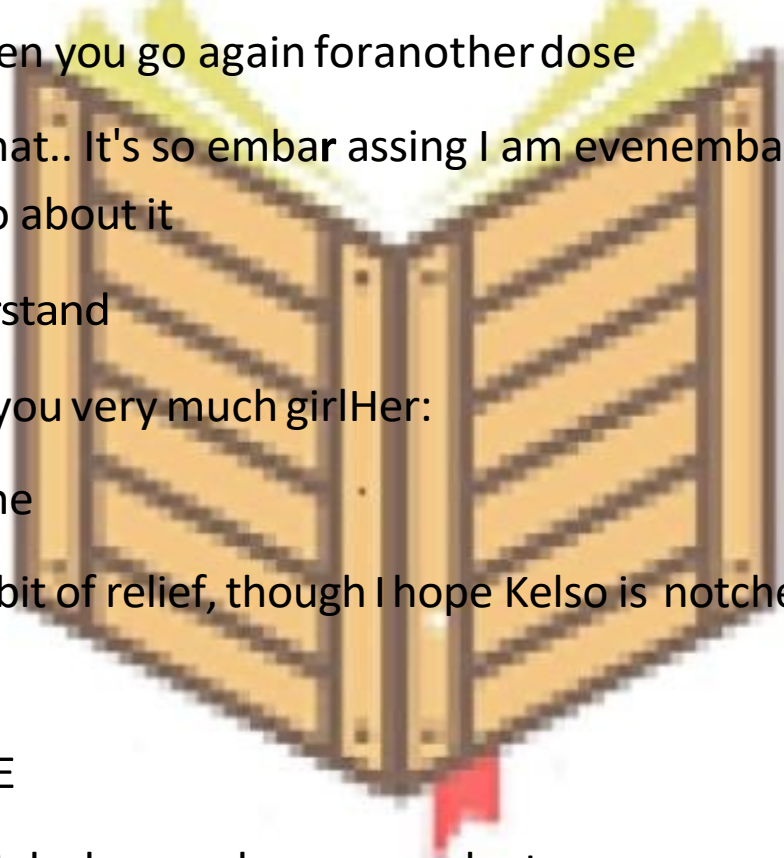
You welcome

That was a bit of relief, though I hope Kelso is not cheating on me..

SANDISIWE

I looked at Sole, he was busy on my laptop.

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Snowflake He

looked at me..

Me: Is Kelso cheating on Nongcebo?Him:

No.. Why?

Me: I think she has an STI

Him: I don't think Kelso is cheatingMe: If

he was would you tel me?

Him: Huh?

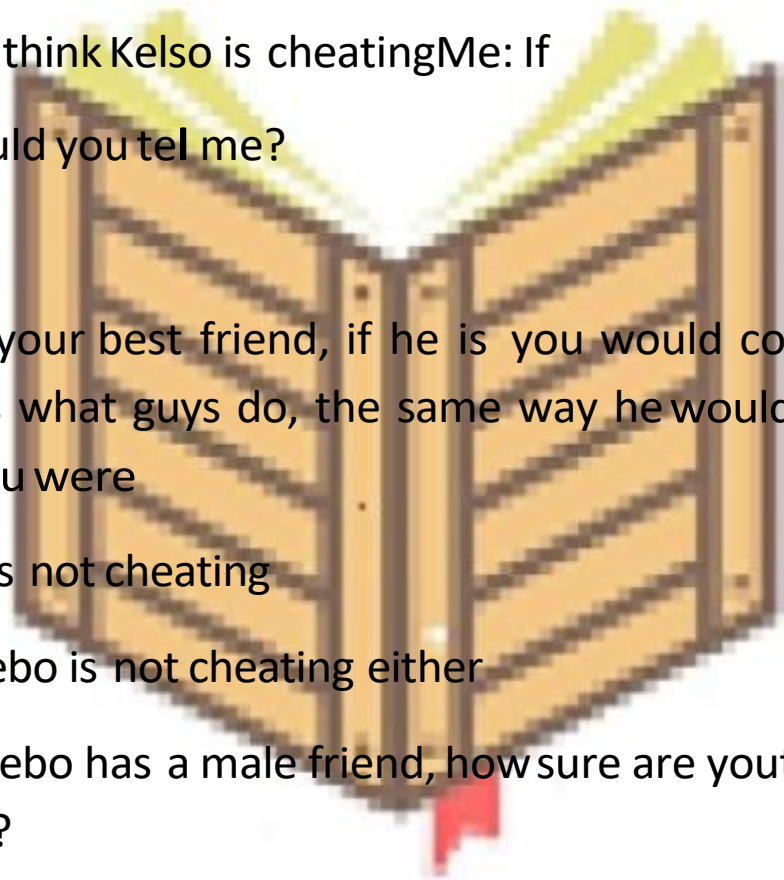
Me: He is your best friend, if he is you would cover up for him.. That's what guys do, the same way he would cover up for you if you were

Him: Kelso is not cheating

Me: Nongcebo is not cheating either

Him: Nongcebo has a male friend, how sure are you that they not fucking?

Me: Nongcebo knows how Kelso is like, plus she's too naïve. She has never experienced the real world, it's like she's been living in a bottle for years.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Cheating would dribble her, she wouldn't be smart enough to pull it. She's just way too friendly

Sole: I'll talk to Kelso.. Happy? Me:

Very

Sole: You care a lot about Nongcebo

Me: She's a very good person, doesn't have much friends. I'm probably the realest and first female friend she has

Sole: I see

Me: So if Kelso still wants to fuck around he should say so and leave her alone, Kona why didn't he initiate marriage so early? Marriage is not a game

Sole: Same way you initiated pregnancy so early in our relationship

Me: Wow

Sole: I didn't mean that

Me: If you weren't happy about the pregnancy you could've said so

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: Trust me I am happy, I don't know why this

Kelso and Nongcebo situation is making us fight. Let them work things on their own

Me: Yeah whatever

Sole: Now you see why kungathethwa ngabantu? (You see why we shouldn't talk about people)

My eyes widened..

He went back to my laptop..

Me: Say something again in vernacular Him: No

Me: Come on, I never knew that you could speak vernacular

Him: I've lived with Kelso and his family for years in the hood, to survive I had to learn a bit of vernacular

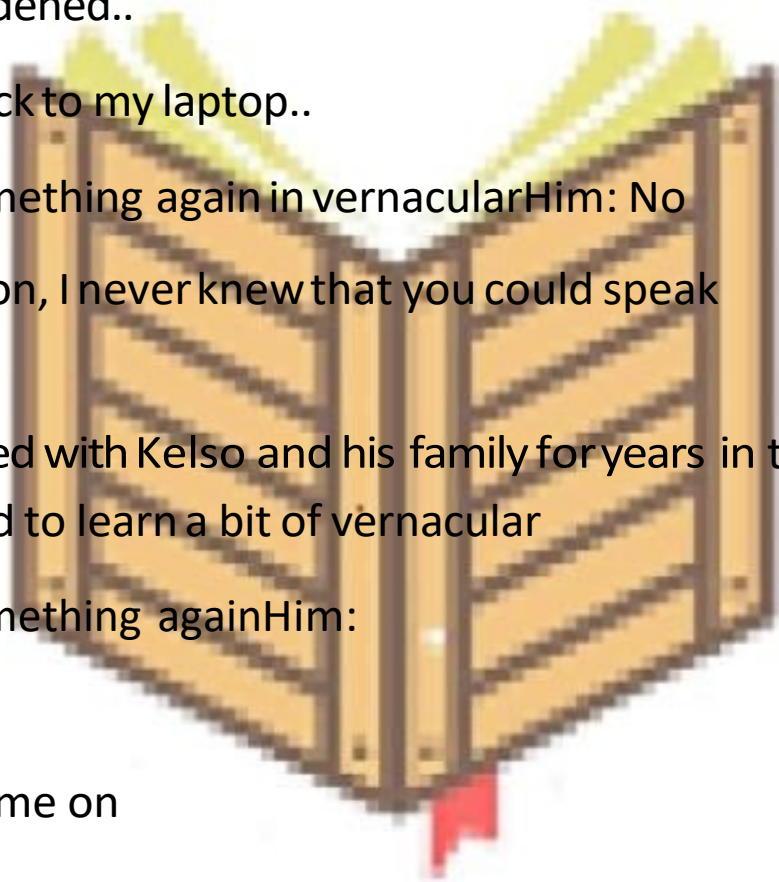
Me: Say something again Him:

No

Me: Ahh come on

Him: No

Me: Ayy ke Ndlebe zakho



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Nawe

We looked at each other and smiled..

NONGCEBO

I was in the kitchen cooking, everyone else was in the lounge watching TV..

My phone rang, I answered..Me:

Hel o?

Voice: Hel o is this Nongcebo? Nongcebo Khumalo?Me: Yes..

Who is this?

Voice: I am Makhathini Zulu's lawyerMe:

Ohw

Voice: I need to discuss something with you Me:

Something like?

Voice: His family came to claim his things but unfortunately he left everything to you and his daughter Bongeka Zulu

I closed the pot..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Voice: The house, his taxis, and moneyl didn't know what to say..

Voice: Hello are you still there?Me:

Yes I am

Voice: Would it possible for you to come and see me tomorrow? Together with Bongeka?

Me: Uhm yes.. At what time?

Voice: Say 8am?

Me: Okay

Voice: Do you know the Gxaba law firm? Me: Yes just next to the mall where I work Voice: Perfect... I just ask for Gertrude Gxaba Me: I'll do so.. Thank you

Voice: Have a lovely day Mam' Me:

Thank you

Voice: Bye

Me: Bye



NOVELSGURU.COM

Wow.. That was unexpected..

BANZA

I had one passenger left in the taxi, some old woman. All the other passengers had got off except for her..

I cleared my throat.. She looked at me..

Me: Ngicela ukubuza Ma, usala kuphi? (If I may ask, where are you getting off)

She pointed through the window..

Her: Emathuneni.. Brakpan old location cemetery
Me: Ohw
ngiyabona

She had beaded bracelets around her wrists, she was wearing a red & white cloth. One that traditional healers usually wear..

Me: Akukho late mhlambe ukuya Emathuneni? (Isn't it late to go to the cemetery)

She shook her head no..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Uyovakashela umyeni wakho mhlambe okudalawakushiya?
(Are you going to visit your husband's grave)

She shook her head no..

I continued driving and then I fixed the rear view mirror so that I could steal glances at her. What I saw shocked me. When I looked at her through the mirror, she appeared as a skeleton. A fully clothed skeleton like how she was wearing. I turned and looked at her, she looked normal. I looked at the mirror again and I still saw the same thing. My heart started to beat fast, I started to feel a bit hot.. Am I losing my mind?

I pulled over..

Me: Ngiyaxolisa Ma, kodwa ngeke ngifike emathuneni uzokhona mhlambe ukuzambela? (I apologize Ma, I won't make it to the cemetery, will you be able to walk on your own)

Her: Ngizozama.. Ngiyabonga (I will try... Thank you)

She got off.. Before she closed the door she looked at me..

Her: Ungakhona mhlambe naksasa ukungiletha?(Wil you be able to bring me back here again tomorrow)

Me: Cha (no)

She looked at me for a long time, until her eyes welled up..

Her: Ngiyabonga uhambe kahle (Thank you, goodbye)She closed the door and walked away..

I parked there and looked at her old self as she walked down the street..

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by the writer of "Breakfree"

Please do check out her page and support:

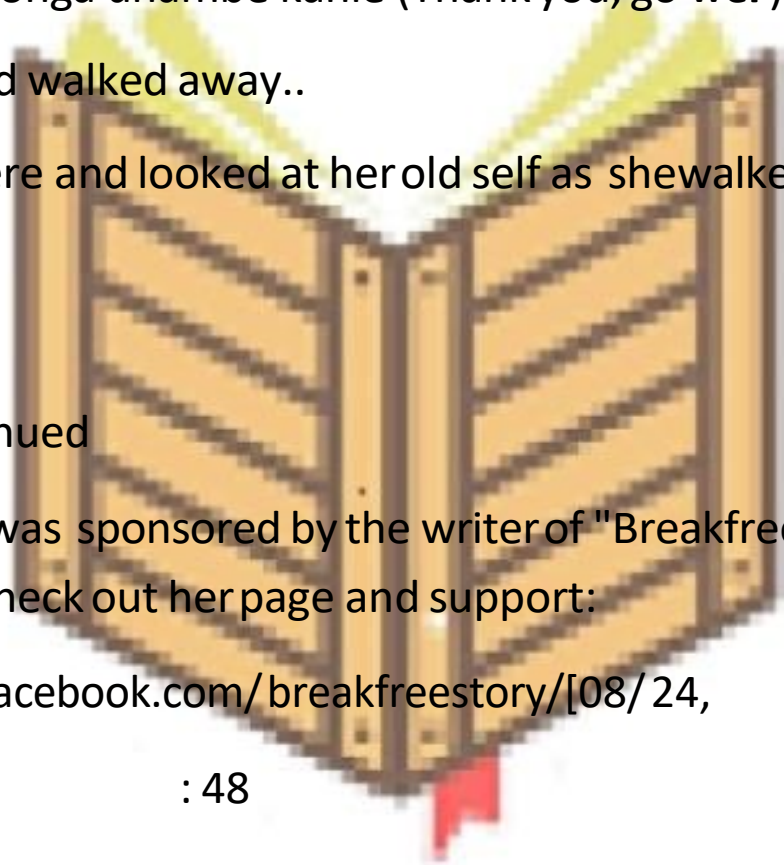
<https://m.facebook.com/breakfreestory/>[08/24,

13:14]

: 48

SANDISIWE

NOVELSGURU.COM



I stayed up that night busy typing chapters for my books, and brainstorming for my next book. The bookstore did give me my share of the profit that they got from Sole buying all my books. I wanna use it to help publish hard copies of my next book and for marketing purposes too...

I received a call from my cousin Kelo, was surprised that he was still up at this time..

Me: Cuz Him:

Cuz

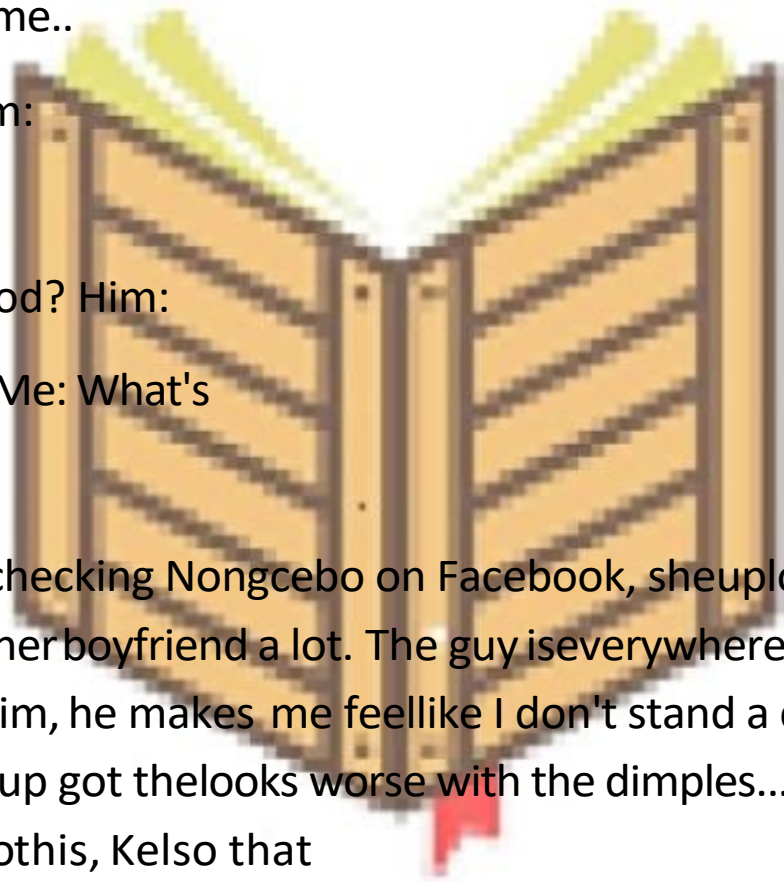
Me: You good? Him:

No I'm not Me: What's wrong?

Him: I was checking Nongcebo on Facebook, she uploads pictures of her boyfriend a lot. The guy is everywhere and looking at him, he makes me feel like I don't stand a chance. He straight up got the looks worse with the dimples... It's always Kelso this, Kelso that

I laughed..

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: So you were talking about that Nongcebo,
Nongcebo ka Kelso?

Him: You know her?

Me: She's a good friend of mine Him:

How did you two meet?

Me: Kelso and Sole are best friends Him: It

makes sense

I laughed again..

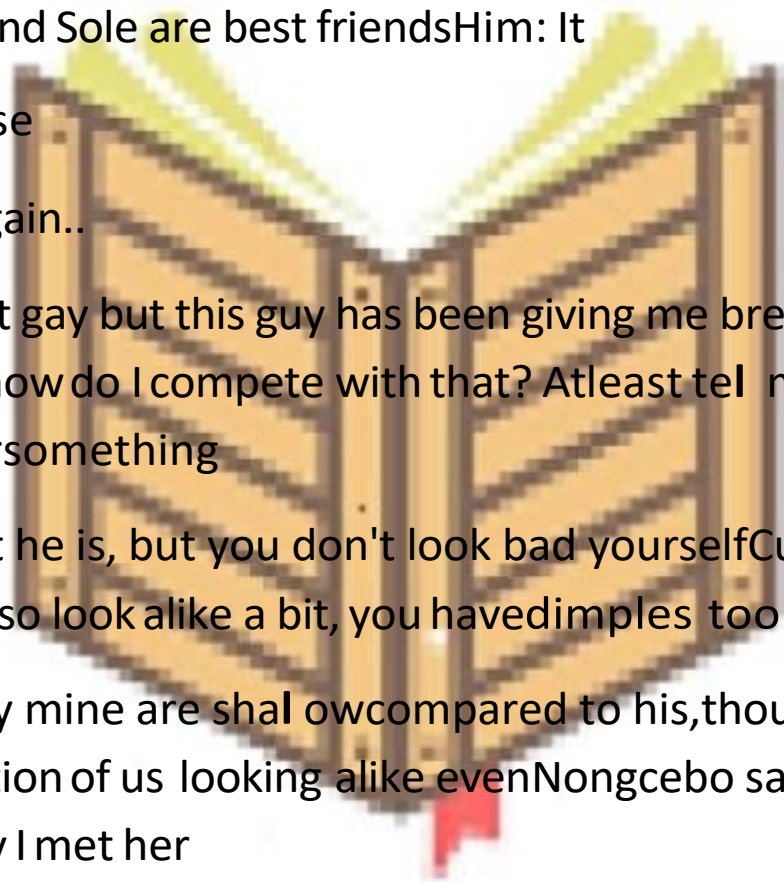
Him: I'm not gay but this guy has been giving me breathing
problems, how do I compete with that? At least tel me he's
cheating or something

Me: I doubt he is, but you don't look bad yourself Cuz. Plus
You and Kelso look alike a bit, you have dimples too

Him: Clearly mine are shall ow compared to his, though I
see no relation of us looking alike even Nongcebo said that
the first day I met her

Me: You can't see it, but we can

Him: So their relationship is stable? He's not fooling



NOVELSGURU.COM

around with girls? Girls are not throwing themselves at him and shaking his relationship?

Me: I don't know, don't know their relationship that well. All I'm going to say is, stay away from Ngcebo cuz. Kelso is mad crazy he will hurt you

Him: I hear you

Me: Why you up so late?

Him: Was catching up on studying

Me: Okay cuz, let me retire to bed and stop stalking Nongcebo on Facebook and causing yourself unnecessary chest pains

Him: Naaa Fam that guy is going to fuck up you can just tell

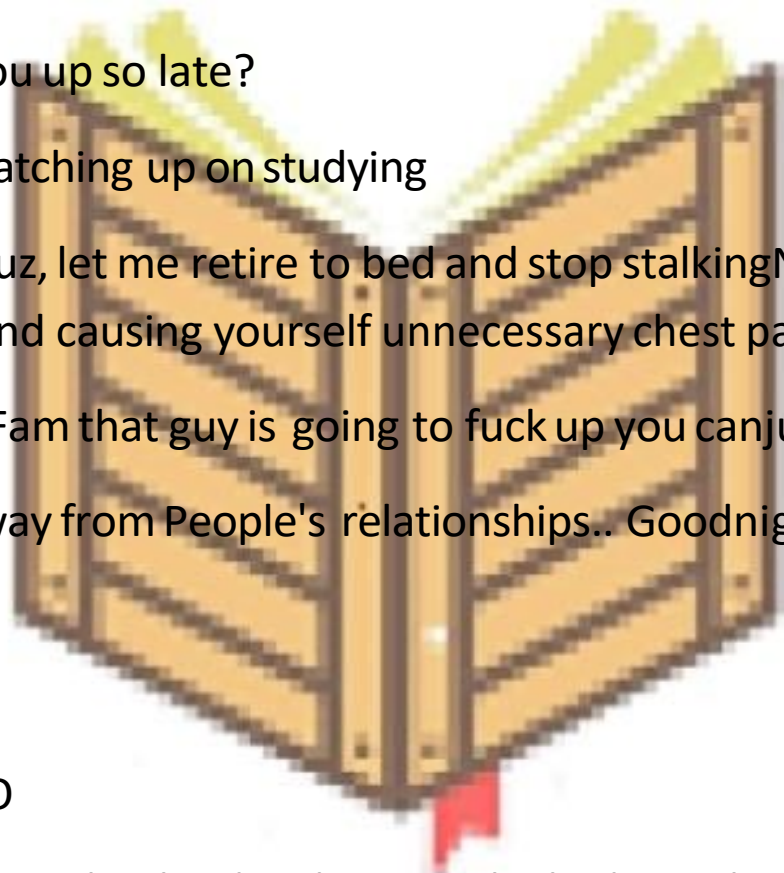
Me: Stay away from People's relationships.. Goodnight

Him: Night

NONGCEBO

I was woken up by the door being unlocked, I took

NOVELSGURU.COM



my phone and checked the time. It was 00:15am. Yes I was worried about him, he didn't even bother to call me and tell me where he was and if he is okay or not. I sat up straight when he switched on the light..

Him: Hi

Me: Hi

He took off his jacket..Me:

Where were you? Him: I

was out

Me: Where?

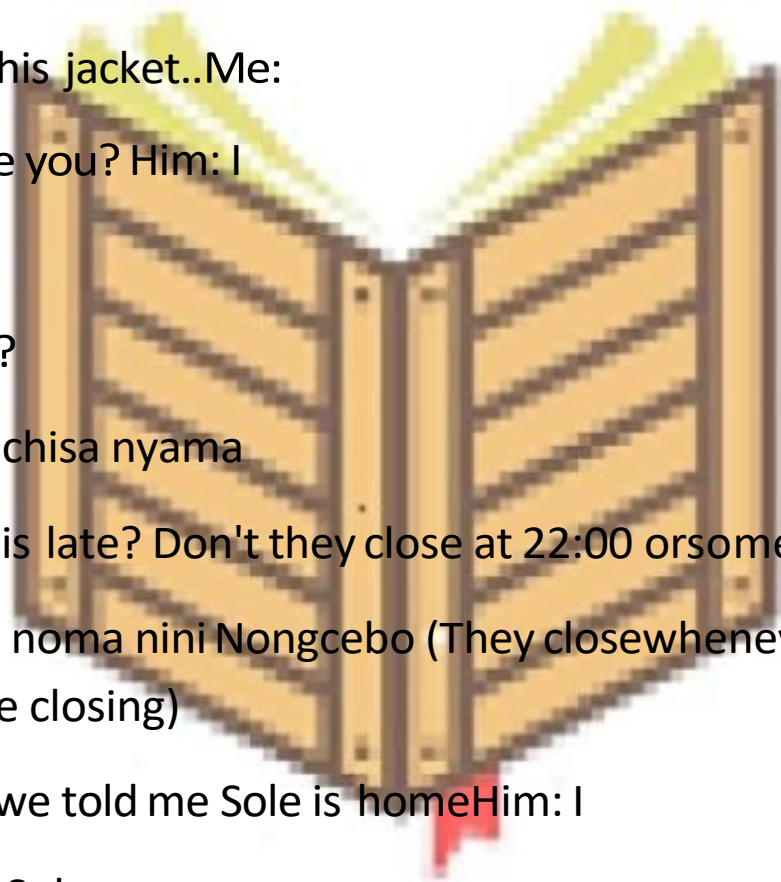
Him: At the chisa nyama

Me: Until this late? Don't they close at 22:00 or something?

Him: Bavala noma nini Nongcebo (They close whenever they feel like closing)

Me: Sandisiwe told me Sole is home Him: I

wasn't with Sole



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Who were you with?

Him: Some female friend of mine

Me: Female friend?

Him: Yeah

He looked at me as he took off his wrist watch..

Me: I don't think I'm comfortable with that

He chuckled..

Him: Really? Wena who has a male best friend

Me: I don't stay out late with Banza and I always text you when I'm going out

He shrugged his shoulders..

Him: I

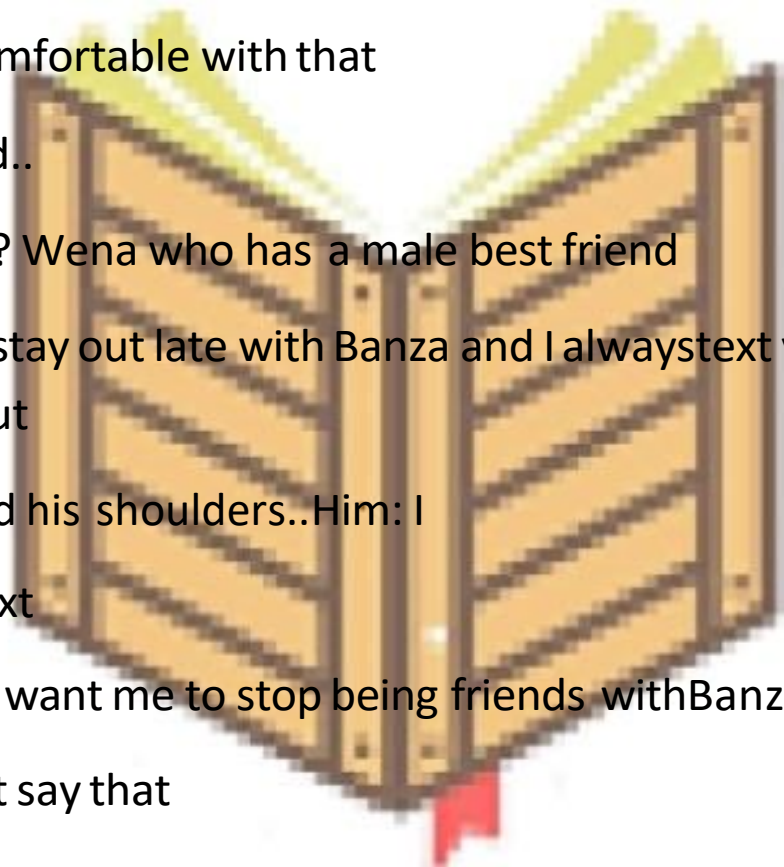
forgot to text

Me: Do you want me to stop being friends with Banza?

Him: I didn't say that

Me: if you want me to stop being friends with him I will, there's no reason for you to do this

Him: I'm going to take a shower



He walked to the bedroom. I texted Sandi:

"I think he's cheating on me, he just got home. Said he was with a female friend"

GETRUDE (KELSO'S MOTHER)

I took the other file and checked it, went through everything that was written in it.

I am meant to defend two Men in a few days, they were both arrested for brutally killing some guy with his girlfriend. They friends and they hijack cars, so why they resorted to killing this couple instead of just taking the car and letting them go, I will never know. I yawned while rubbing my eyes. I checked my mug and it was empty, I'm going to need more coffee..

My phone rang and I answered without even checking the caller ID..

Me: Hello

Voice: You looked really good today It was my ex, Kelso's father..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Voice: White shirt, not buttoned all the way up showing a bit of cleavage

I got up and went to check out of the window, to see if he hasn't sent anyone watching my house..

Me: Are you having me followed? Him:

Why would I do that?

Me: What do you want Ken. His name is Kenny but we call him Ken, or used to call him that

Him: I don't know.. How about my freedom? And raising my daughter back to life?

Me: would you also like me to change water into wine while I'm at it?

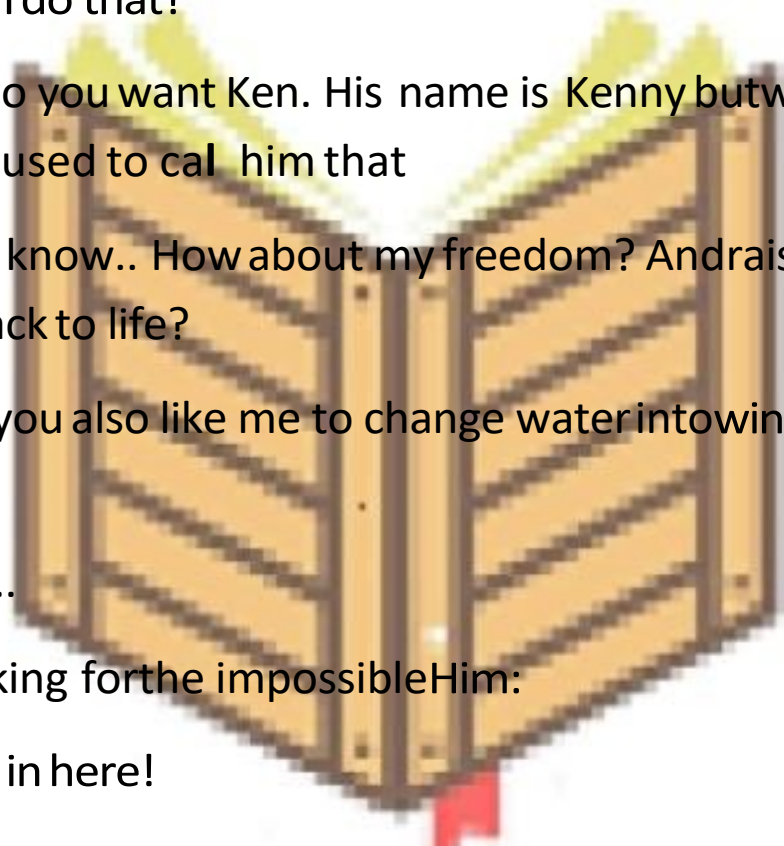
He laughed..

Me: You asking for the impossible Him:

You put me in here!

Me: No you put yourself in there! You have no one to blame but yourself! Your actions put you in there

Him: One day Getrude, one day!



KELSO

After taking a shower I went outside for a smoke or two, then I stayed outside for a while busy staring at the moon and the stars. When I was starting to feel a bit cold, I went back inside. I don't really have a female friend that I was hanging out with, just said that to see how it would feel like if she was in my shoes.

I stood at the doorway and looked at her, she was laying on her back with her legs raised up and slightly open. The duvet was covering her though. Just when I was about to switch off the light, I heard her moaning as if like she was having the best sex of her life. She moaned again and then turned her head to the side.

Her: Ohh Banza...She

smiled a little

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Inganathi, please find the link below to vote for her again. She's truly working hard towards the competition, please help in making her dream come true..

<https://pageantvote.es/pageants/2741/contestants/18101>

[08/24, 13:15] : 49

SANDISIWE

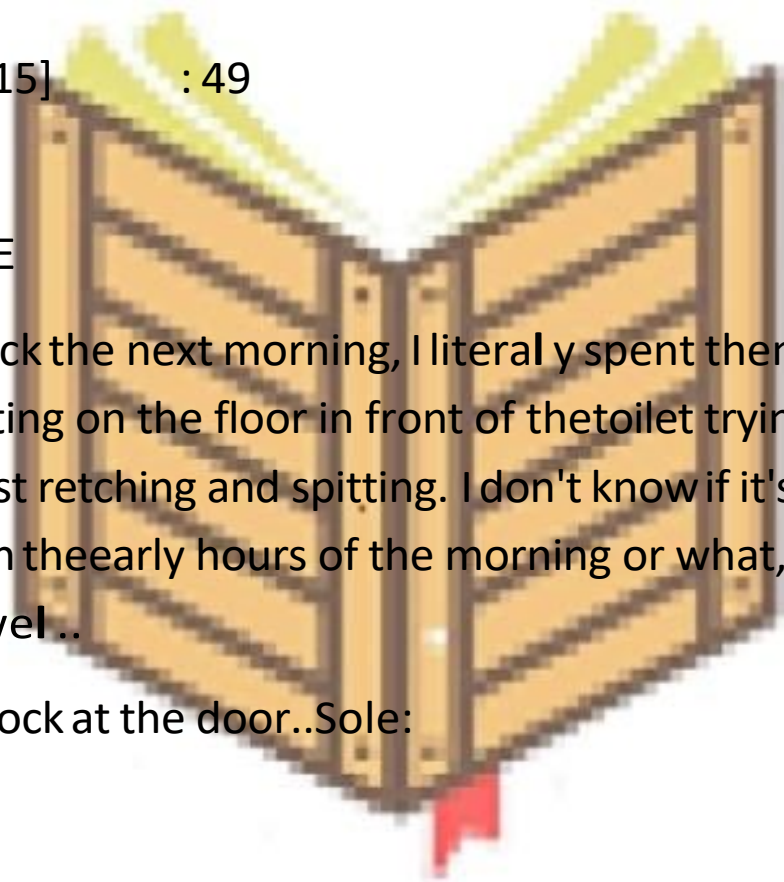
I woke up sick the next morning, I literally spent the next few minutes sitting on the floor in front of the toilet trying to vomit but I was just retching and spitting. I don't know if it's the late meal I had in the early hours of the morning or what, but I didn't feel well..

I heard a knock at the door..Sole:

Sweets?

Me: Don't come in

NOVELSGURU.COM



He tried opening the door but it was locked..Him:

Sweets open

Me: No please don't come in (crying)Him:

Sandi open

I got up and flushed. I opened the door and he walked in..

I went back and sat on the floor..Him:

Are you okay?

I shook my head whilst wiping my tears..

He sat next to me and pulled my braids back

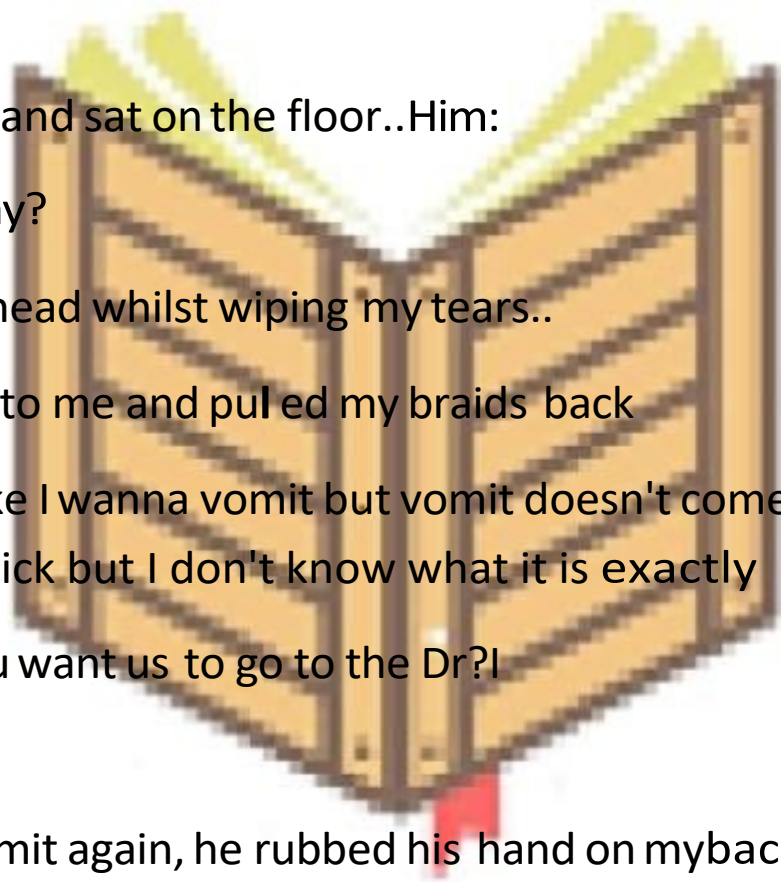
Me: I feel like I wanna vomit but vomit doesn't come, I feel like shit! I feel sick but I don't know what it is exactly

Him: Do you want us to go to the Dr? I

nodded..

I tried to vomit again, he rubbed his hand on my back..

Him: I'm sorry, we going to get through this together



okay?

I nodded again..

Him: I'll go prepare a bath for you Me:

Okay

He kissed me on my shoulder and got up to go and prepare me the bath..

NONGCEBO

I was woken up by a song playing, it wasn't loud. Just playing softly..

"I love it when she's near I hate

when she's away

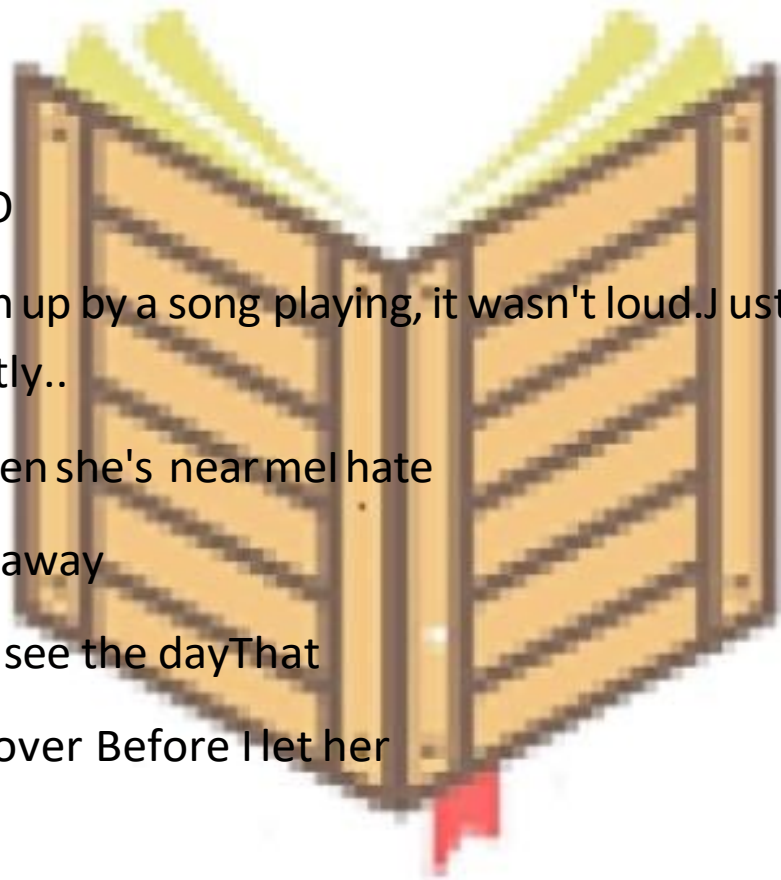
And Satan I see the day That

He'll freeze over Before I let her

go

And let one of you bitch niggas get her No, no,

no



NOVELSGURU.COM

You don't know how to treat her
You don't know that I need her
Hey, do you know that I need ya?

'Cause baby, right now it feels like the whole world's against me"

When I pushed the duvet to the side to get out of bed, the smell started again. I glanced down and I felt my thighs a bit wet because I had slept without an underwear. I looked beside me and Kelso's side of the bed was empty. I exhaled and got out of bed, I walked to the lounge. He was passed out on the couch with a bottle of Hennessy on the small table and a few cigarette buds. I looked at him and somehow I thought to myself that maybe the smell put him off so much that he decided to sleep on the couch.

This is really bad, Kelso and I are breaking apart. Our relationship is not as nice and exciting as how it was when we first met.

We getting married this weekend, we should be

happy and not this miserable. I wiped my tears and went back to the bedroom to call Bongeka..

Bongeka: Hello (sleepy voice)

Me: Wake up and bath, we going somewhere Her:

Now?

Me: Yes

Her: Where are we going?

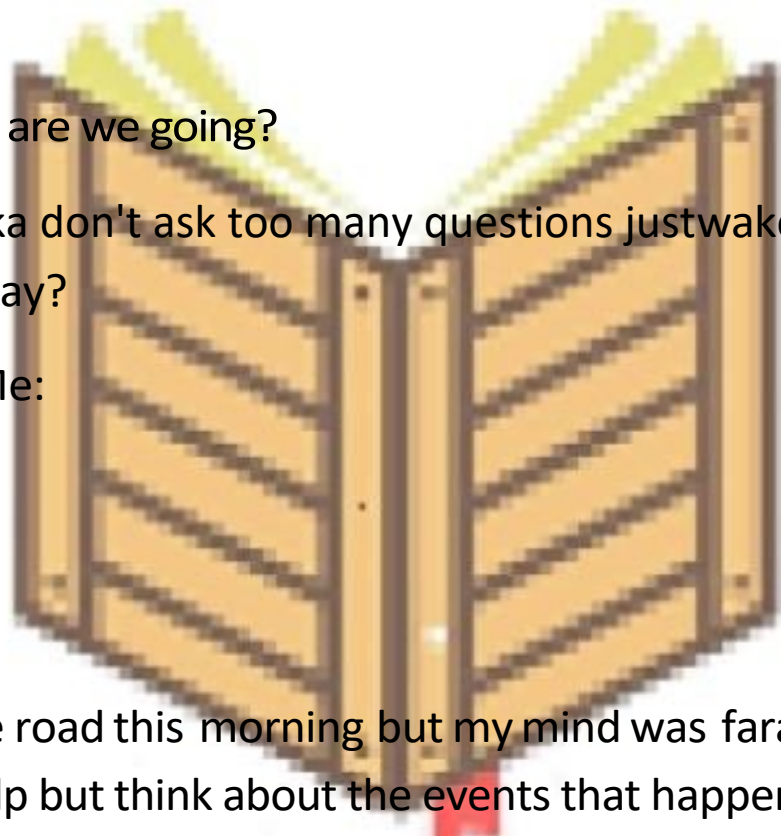
Me: Bongeka don't ask too many questions just wake up and bath okay?

Her: Okay Me:

Good!

BANZA

I was on the road this morning but my mind was faraway. Couldn't help but think about the events that happened yesterday with that old woman. So my curiosity had me drive pass the cemetery after dropping off my first load and driving back to the taxi rank. Shockingly enough the old woman was



NOVELSGURU.COM

sitting at the gate of the cemetery, I stopped and got out. I walked up to her. She was sitting and facing her front, she didn't have any shoes on..

Me: Sawubona (Greetings) She looked at me..

Her: Sawubona (greetings)

Me: Khona omumele (are you waiting for someone) Her: Cha (no)

Me: Wenzani la ekuseni so? (What are you doing here so early in the morning)

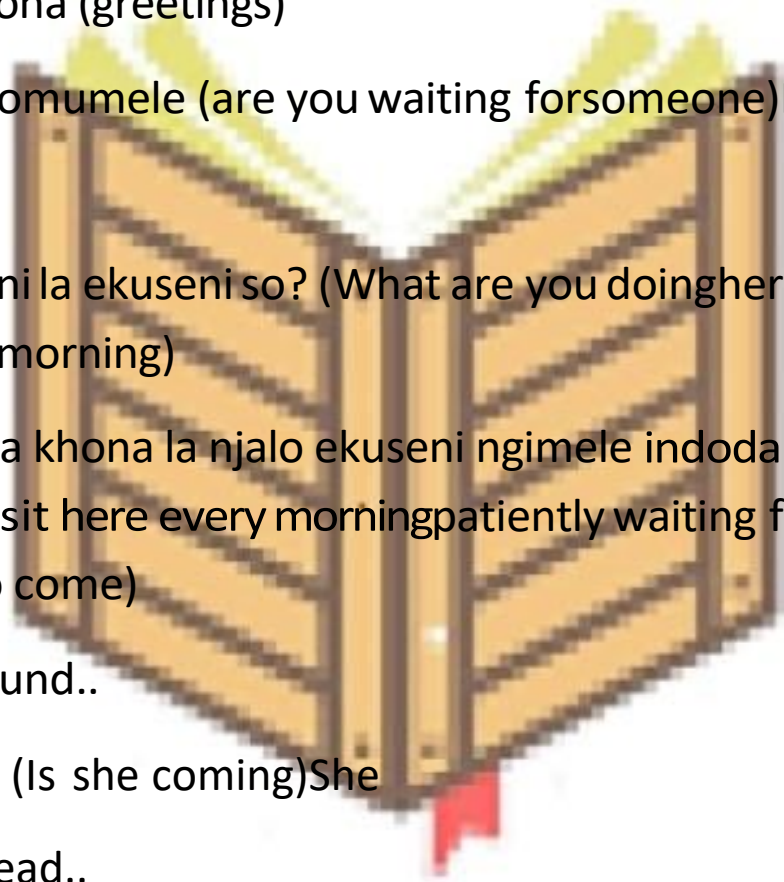
Her: Ngihlala khona la njalo ekuseni ngimele indodakazi yami ukuthi ize (I sit here every morning patiently waiting for my Daughter to come)

I looked around..

Me: Uyeza? (Is she coming) She shook her head..

Her: Uneminyaka engezi (It's been years) Me:

Uhlalaphi yena? (Where does she live)



Her: Akasahlali ekhaya (She's not staying at home anymore)

Me: Kahle kahle awazi ukuthi uhlala kuphi? (You don't know where she lives)

Her: Cha (no)

sighed..

Me: Ngeke ngikuyeke uhlale la uwedwa, yiza sambesomfuna (I won't let you sit here alone, come I'll help you look for her)

Her: Ngiyabonga (thank you)

She got up and we went to my taxi..

KELSO

I opened my eyes to a quiet room..

I got up from the couch and walked to the bedroom. The bed was made and I could smell her perfume. I leaned against the wall whilst biting my lower lip in frustration. I recalled what happened last night, and my chest immediately closed up. I formed a fist

NOVELSGURU.COM

with my hand at the idea of Nongcebo sleeping with Banza, so much that she gets wet dreams about him. I thought about how he could be in there, just drilling her and unleashing that soft moan deep inside of her

How he would be running his hands all over her body and kissing her.. The thought of all that made me turn around and punched the wall a few times!..I love Nongcebo and I don't see myself raising my hand on her, it would hurt me more than it would hurt her. Love is something fucked up, if it was another chick she probably wouldn't even be able to get out of bed this morning. Nongcebo got me fucked up for real!.. I'm not going to cancel the wedding, If she truly loves me she will be straight with me instead of marrying me with all the lies that she has accumulated for herself. If she goes ahead with the wedding then she doesn't love me, she can't be fucking someone else and then stand in front of me and promise me that she's going to be faithful to me. I only stopped punching the wall when my knuckles started bleeding.

NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

As much as I wanted to meet the lawyer at the time that we agreed on I couldn't. I needed to start at Clicks first and sort out this mess. Clicks opened at 9am, and I did find the pure soap and the Canex V cream.

I was relieved, I hope they will help me with my problem..

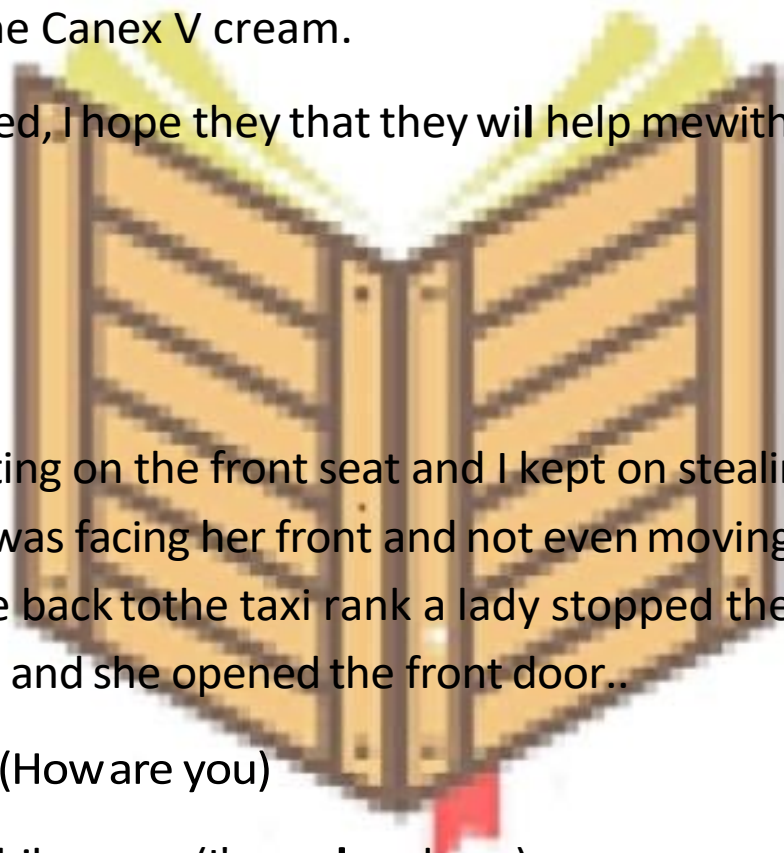
BANZA

She was sitting on the front seat and I kept on stealing glances at her. She was facing her front and not even moving an inch.. On our drive back to the taxi rank a lady stopped the taxi, I pulled over and she opened the front door..

Her: Njani? (How are you)

Me: Ngiyaphila wena (I'm well and you)

Her: Ngiyaphila.. Uya eRank (I'm well.. Are you going to the taxi rank)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: YeboHer:

Okay

She tried to get in but I stopped her..

Me: Khona umuntu ohleli ngeke ukhona ukungena emuva?
(Someone is sitting here can't you go to the back)

Her: Askies?

I looked at the seat and she wasn't there anymore. I looked at the back still she wasn't there.. I looked around and saw her sitting at the gate again facing her front..

Lady: uRight Bhuti? (Are you okay)Me: Ya

sor y ngi right

She got in and I took off looking at the old woman sitting there..

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by the admin of "The Power of Love by N.K Gumede" please check her



NOVELSGURU.COM

page and support

<https://m.facebook.com/Nompilo11227/?refid=12>[08/24,

13:15] : 50

NONGCEBO

The Lawyer's assistant was able to let us in even though we were 1hour30min late. The lawyer wasn't in her office, she had another meeting to attend but she was on her way back so the assistant said..

This building I pass it all the time when I'm going to work, Makhathini never and not even once did he ever tell me that he had a lawyer in here.. Her office was small and very neat. We were even offered tea and biscuits as we waited. Bongeka was on her phone, the waiting was boring her.

Minutes later we heard the sound of heels walking in, then we heard the door softly closing. She

walked up to her chair, pulled it back and sat down. She looked at us..

I don't know if my mind was playing tricks on me but this woman looked so much like Kelso. You know the saying that women always say when the baby looks like their Daddy? They say "You would swear that he was denying the baby". That's exactly what was happening here. Her faint smile showed her dimples very well, I couldn't help but keep on staring at her..

Her: Thank you for coming, I had to tell you over the phone so that you could come

Words failed me as her looks stunned me.

Her: I'm Gertrude Gxaba, Mr Zulu's lawyer. I've been his lawyer for a very long time now

A moment of silence crept in..

Me: I'm Nongcebo.. This is.. This is Bongeka, Zulu's Daughter

She nodded with a smile..

Her: First and foremost I am so sorry for your loss

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Thank you

Her: Let's get started

She got up and went to the cabinet to take out a file..

Bongeka: Wow she looks soo much like Uncle Kelso
(Whispering)

Me: Shhh

She turned back and looked at us..Her:

What was that?

Me: Nothing.. Sor y

KELSO

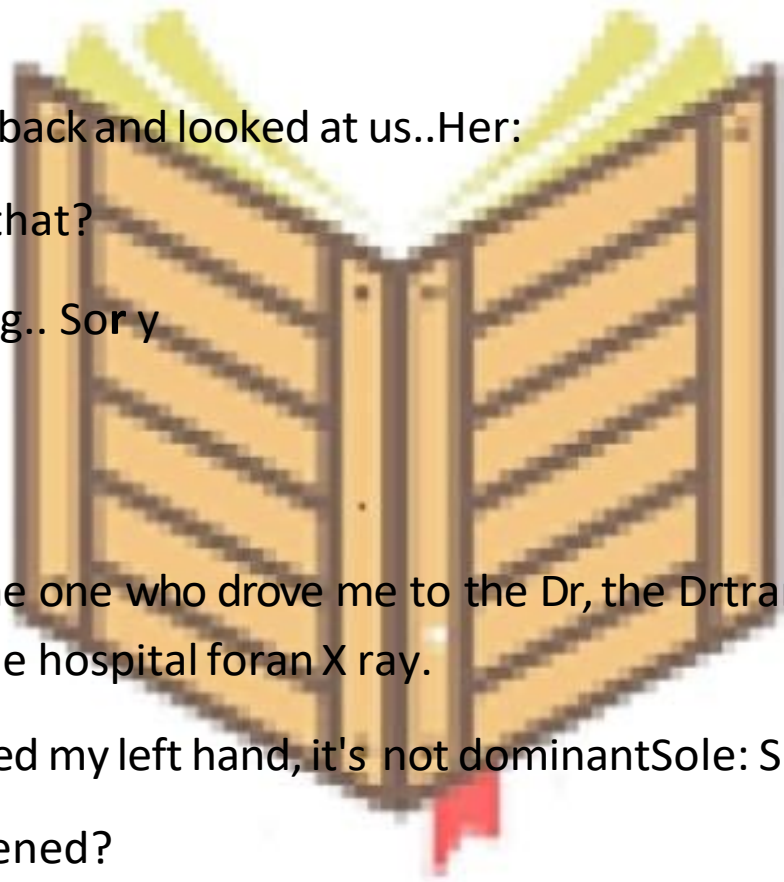
Sole was the one who drove me to the Dr, the Dr transfered me to the hospital for an X ray.

At least I used my left hand, it's not dominant
Sole: So what happened?

Me: Nothing

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: People don't punch walls for nothing



Me: It's Nongcebo

Sole: You still think she's cheating?

Me: Now I'm no longer thinking, something is definitely happening between her and that fool

Sole: What did you do see? Me:

What I needed to see (Silence)

Sole: You still continuing with the wedding?

Me: If Nongcebo truly loves me, she will either tell me the truth or call off the wedding

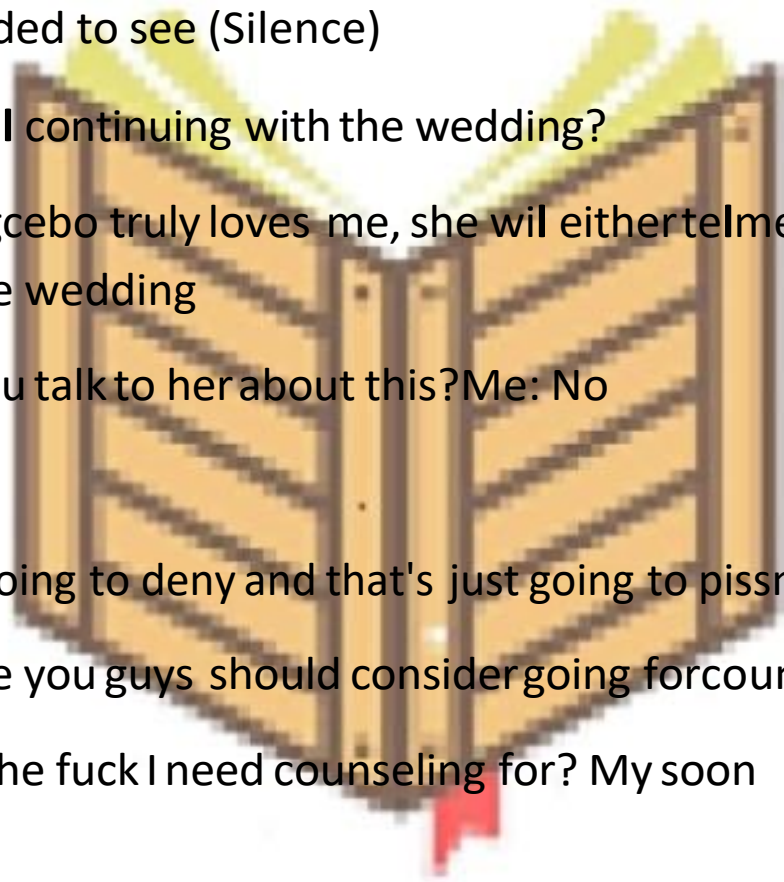
Sole: Did you talk to her about this? Me: No

Sole: Why?

Me: She's going to deny and that's just going to piss me off!

Sole: Maybe you guys should consider going for counseling

Me: What the fuck I need counseling for? My soon



NOVELSGURU.COM

to be wife is cheating on me and I am the one who needs counseling? Fuck that!

Sole: This is getting out of hand!

showed him my hand..

Me: It has already gotten out of hand

NONGCEBO

Her: Please sign here!

signed..

Her: Great

Me: So what happens now?

Her: I will sort everything out once I get his death certificate and a copy of your ID and her birth certificate. I will give you a letter that you will take to the bank then we will work on you getting ownership of his other assets. The money he left is R300 000, 50/ 50 for both of you. Then the house and his taxes

Me: We don't want the house

Her: You can sell it or rent it out, whatever suits you
Me: I can't believe this.. Thank you very much

Her: Please I'm just doing my job.. Know we will keep in touch

Me: Can it be after the weekend? I'm getting married this weekend

Her: Congratulations
Me:

Thank you

Her: Uhm I don't mean to jump the gun but.. Isn't it too early to get married seeing that your husband recently passed on?

Me: I wasn't married to him
Her: I

see... I'm sorry

Me: Are we done?

Her: Yes we are done.. Thank you for coming
Me:

Thank you

I looked at Bongeka..
Me:

Let's go



NOVELSGURU.COM

We got up and left..

On our way to getting something to eat, I recieved a cal from Sandisiwe..

Me: GalzaHer:

Galza

Me: Are you good?

Her: Not real y.. Feeling a bit sickMe:

I'm sor y to hear that

Her: I'll be fine, I went to the DrMe:

Okay

Her: So he's cheating?Me:

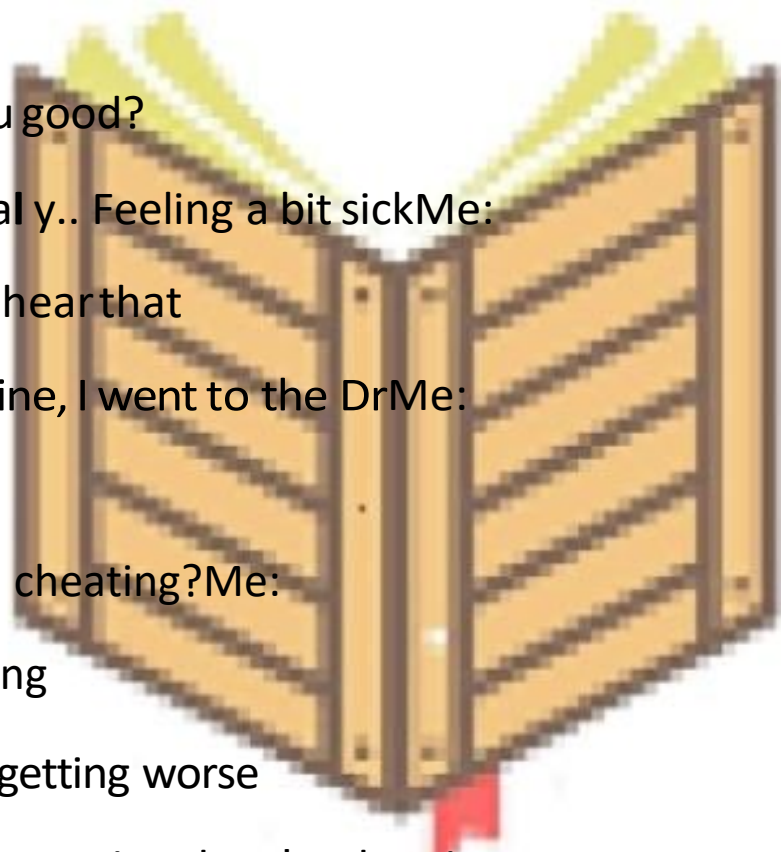
I'm suspecting

Her: This is getting worse

Me: He is suspecting that I'm cheatingHer:

Why don't you talk to him?

Me: Do you know how embar assing this situation



NOVELSGURU.COM

is, I really don't wanna talk to him about it. How do I tell my soon to be husband that my coochie has a bad smell? Kelso being Kelso.. What if he finds me disgusting?

Her: I hear you.. Did you get the things? Me: Yes

I did

Her: Okay try them out

Me: I will then I'll tell you how it goes Her:

Okay Babe

Me: Bye Her:

Bye

KELSO

As we were sitting waiting for my turn I received a call from Power..

Me: Yeah?

Her: Hi

Me: What do you want?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Hakeem is sickMe:

Whats wrong?

Her: He didn't sleep last night, he had a fever and hewas crying the whole night

Me: And you only tel ing me now?

Her: I thought he was going to be betterafter I gavehim Panado but..

Me: Okay I'm comingHer:

Okay

I looked at Sole..

Me: You have to drive me back homeSole:

We not done here

Me: I'll come back some other time, Hakeem is sickSole: Okay let's go

BANZA

NOVELSGURU.COM

I was sitting with the othertaxi drivers as I waswaiting for my taxi to get ful ..

Bra Bobbi, was playing his guitar and singing

Bobbi: "Nangu uJ esu uzobuya bo, abangenakholo.. Nangu uJ esu uzobuya bo, abangenakholo. IColonaiphelileee..

Basop iVilas, Basop iVilas" I

laughed as he continued..

Me: Ngeke wacula nge corona ingasekho, uyo sibangela yona futhi (You can't sing about Corona, you will invite it back)

Cheese: Kuhle ngoba phela iseyafana ne flu, khona amakhambi (It's better now because there's treatment, it's no different from flu)

Sasa came through with her friends, they were holding their bags. They take my taxi everyday to school, today they were late though.. They greeted and got in the taxi, she takes the front seat most of the time..

She's a nice girl, lives one street away from mine.. We not that tight, but we cool..

The last passenger got in..

Me: Bo Mnaks ngizonibona (I'll see you guys later)I went and got in..

She has a 3 year old daughter, baby daddy is not in the picture. From what I heard he promised that he was going to be there for her but halfway through the pregnancy he got another girl pregnant too.

They started having problems with Sasa, eventually they parted ways. She's doing her last year at some college in Johannesburg, she will be getting off halfway to catch taxis that go to Johannesburg at another taxi rank. The ones in our taxi rank take forever to get full ..

Sasa: Hi

Me: Hey

I started the car...

Me: Ngathi ushiywe yiskhathi vandag (You late today)

Sasa: I'm just going to submit some assignment Me: Alright

Sasa: Ng'cela isgqoko (can I please have your

NOVELSGURU.COM

bucket hat)I

chuckled..

Me: Ngizok'thengela esakho (I'll buy you one)Her: Okay

People started paying..(Silence)

Sasa: Nayi eyakho (here is your money)Me: How much?

Sasa: R180

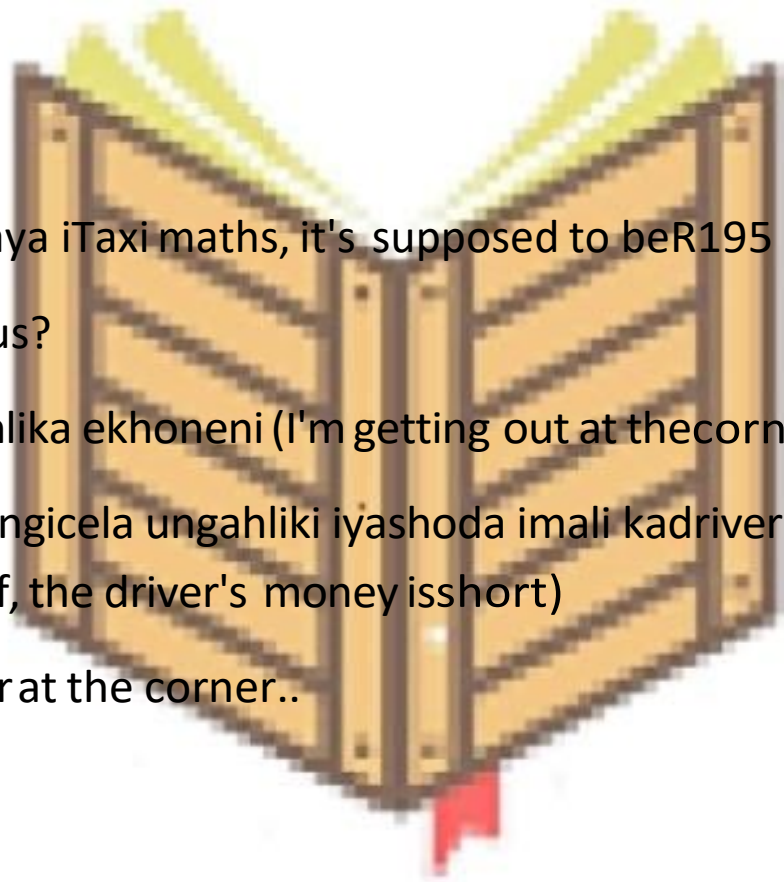
Me: Yak'shaya iTaxi maths, it's supposed to beR195

Sasa: Serious?

Guy: Ngiyahlika ekhoneni (I'm getting out at the corner)

Sasa: Bhuti ngicela unгахliki iyashoda imali ka driver (Please don't get off, the driver's money is short)

I pulled over at the corner..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Guy: Mina ngibhadalile (I paid)Sasa

looked back...

Sasa: Ukhona othele iExtra change noma ongabhadalanga (Did anyone get extra change or maybe someone didn't pay)

Everyone kept quiet..

The guy opened the door..

Sasa: Bhuti yima kancance (Wait a minute)Guy:

Ngibhadalile mina (I paid)

Sasa: Imali iyashoda (the money is short)

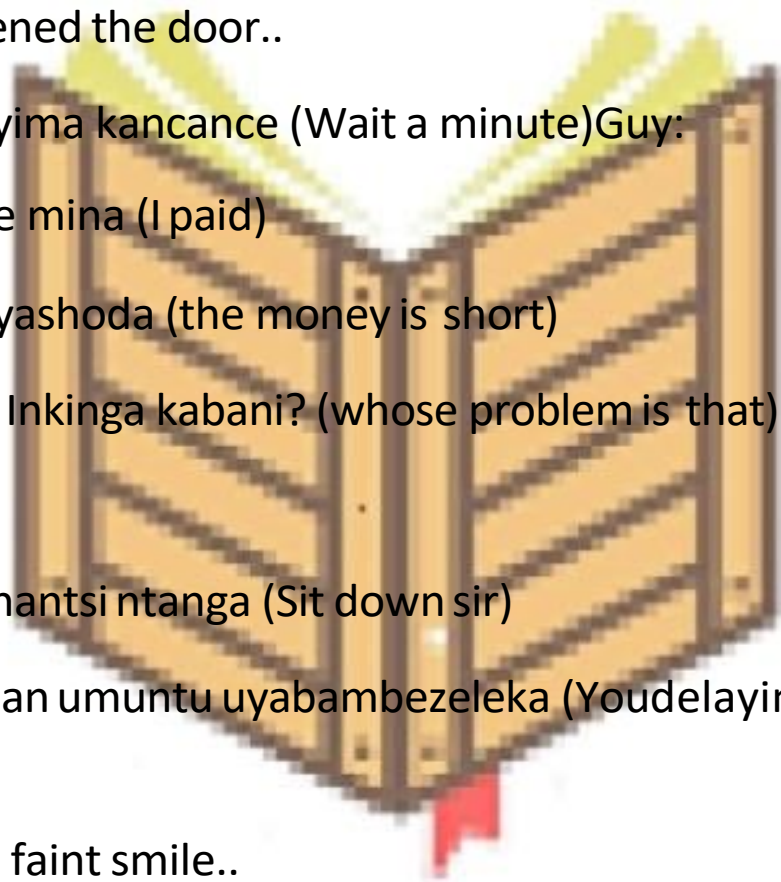
Guy: Manje Inkinga kabani? (whose problem is that)I looked at him..

Me: hlala phantsi ntanga (Sit down sir)

Guy: No maan umuntu uyabambezeleka (Youdelaying me)

I gave him a faint smile..

Me: Hlala phantsi ntanga, ungafuni ngik' mosheleilanga (Sit down, don't make me ruin your day)



He went and sat down cussing under his breath..Me:

Askies?

Guy: Fok maan!

Me: eTaxini kabani? (In my taxi?)

Guy: Into abayaziyo ukuhlala eFront seat, ukubalanex (All that they know is the front seat, they don't even know how to count)

Me: Angeke ngibusy ng'khuluma nawe into eningi (I won't argue with you)

Guy: Or what?

I laughed while shaking my head...Me:

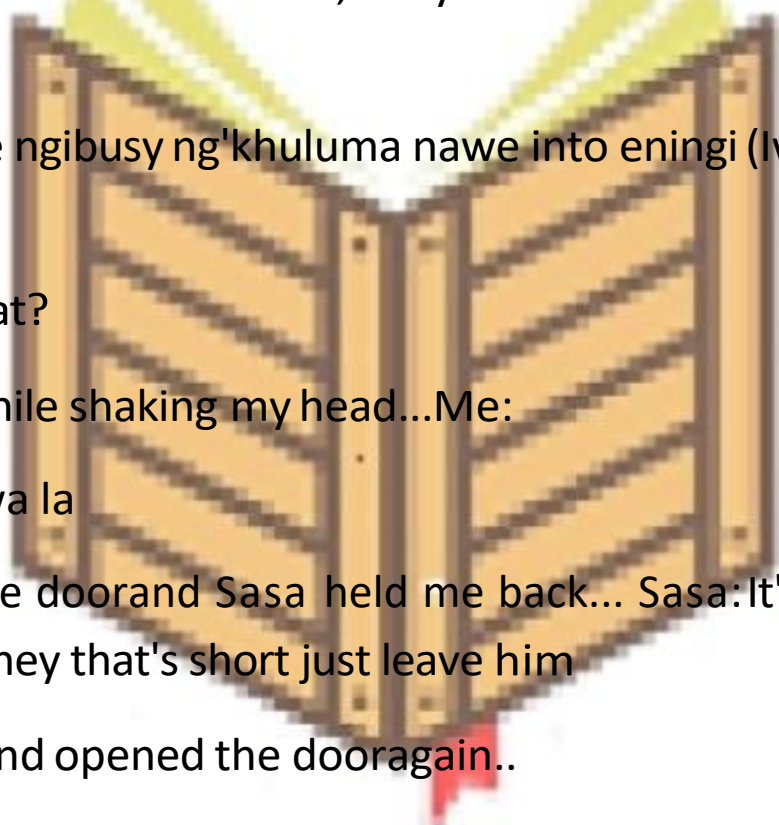
Ngiyanyelwa la

I opened the door and Sasa held me back... Sasa: It's okay I'll pay the money that's short just leave him

He got up and opened the door again..

Me: Sizohlangana Nja yami (We will meet again) Sasa's

friend: Akashushu uBrothers (Laughing)



He looked at Sasa's friend... Guy:

Voetsek wena nonkroyi!

He banged the door, that's when I lost my cool and reversed, my intentions were to literally bump him and then run him over..

People in the taxi started talking, the women were screaming..

Sasa: Banza hayi myeke! (Banza leave him)

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:16] :51

POWER

I was happy that my Parents were **not** at home when Kelso arrived. They don't like him that much..Honestly speaking I hate Kelso's relationship with Nongcebo, and a part of me can see that he has fallen deeply in love with her. They getting married



NOVELSBURO.COM

this weekend, They don't even know each other that well but here she is she has turned him. Kelso and Marriage? That's water and oil. He never spoke about marriage back when we were going out, he has never treated me the same way that he's treating her. She even lives with him, she has completely taken over..

Kelso has never put any woman above me, ever since Nongcebo came she has been a pain in the ass. Hakeem is not sick, I just made up a lie to get him here. The only thing I did was to give him Panado to knock him out. He is slowly drifting away from me, he doesn't even want me coming to his house anymore. He has totally shrunk my budget, he now only gives me money for Hakeem. No more extra money from him..

Him: Where is he?

Me: I finally put him to sleep Him:

How is he?

Me: He's still bad

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Should we take him to the Dr?

Me: I think we should wait a bit and see how he will be when he wakes up

I looked at his hand, it was swollen..Me:

What happened to your hand?

Him: I had a bit of an accidentMe:

Did you beat Nongcebo?

He gave me a serious look.. Him: Why

would you think that?Me: I'm just-

Him: I'd never lay my hand on her, not now.. Not ever

Me: That's hard to believe considering who you are

Him: I didn't hit her, I'd never hit her. She's that special to me and that's how much I love her. I love her enough to not raise my hand on her

I swallowed..

Me: Okay I don't know if you wanna wait but..

Him: You can call me when he wakes up

Me: Kelso we don't have to be enemies, I'm not your enemy.. Can we at least try to get along with each other for the sake of Hakeem?

Me: Call me when he wakes up

With that, he made his way out.. I closed the door..

NONGCEBO

Grams: Where are you coming from?

Me: We had to meet up with the lawyer for something

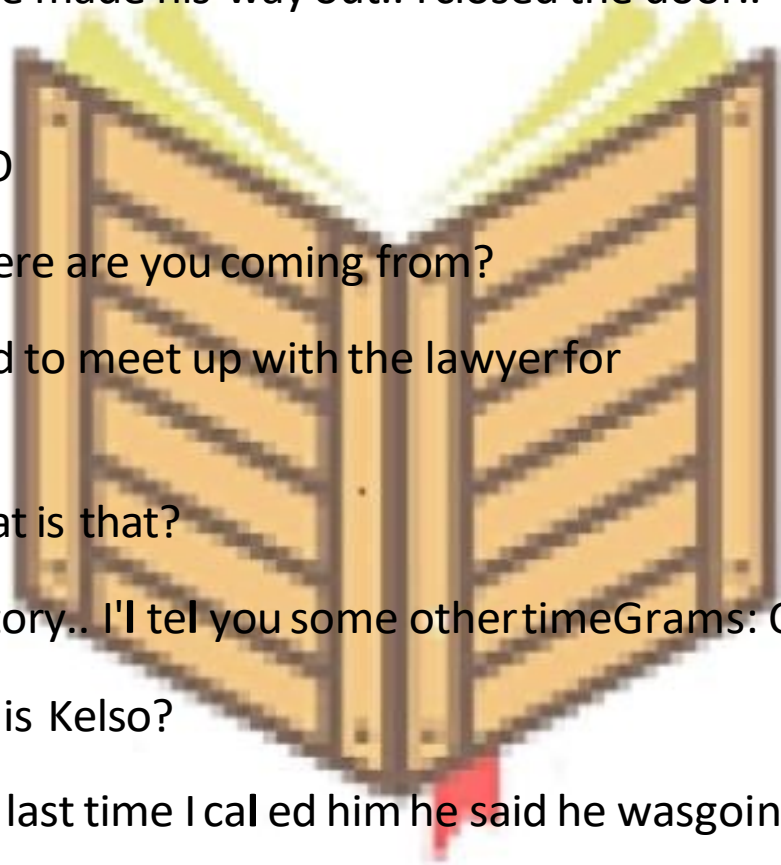
Grams: What is that?

Me: Long story.. I'll tell you some other time Grams: Okay

Me: Where is Kelso?

Grams: The last time I called him he said he was going to Power's house

Me: Ohw



NOVELSGURU.COM

Grams: Nongcebo is everything okay between you and Kelso?

I faked a smile..Me:

We fine

Grams: Do you pray? Have you ever gone to church before?

Me: I am not much of a believer

Grams: Maybe you can come to church with me some other time

Me: I'd like that... Let me go and lie down a bit Grams:

Okay Sisi

SOLE

I was back at the house and I had my back against the wall. The room was spinning and I had a terrible headache, so much that I couldn't see clearly..

Sandi: Snowflake?

I couldn't tell exactly where she was standing so I

NOVELSGURU.COM



had to follow the sound of her voice..Her: Are you okay?

I rubbed my eyes..Me:

I'm good

Her: Why are you standing there?Me: I

was just thinking

I went down with my back still against the wall so that I could sit down on the floor..

Me: Sit next to me

Her: This is very weird but okay

She sat down and laid her head on my shoulder..

Me: If we ever think of getting married, do you think we would turn out like Kelso and Nongcebo?

I ran my hand around her until I found her hand then I held it..

Me: That could never be us

Her: That's why we should always communicate about everything, lack of communication will put a



strain on our relationship Me:

That's very true

Guilt came over me..

Me: How are you feeling now? Her:

I'm feeling better

Me: Glad to hear that I

closed my eyes..

Her: We going to sit here until when? Me: J

ust for a couple of minutes

Her: Are you having one of your episodes again? I sighed..

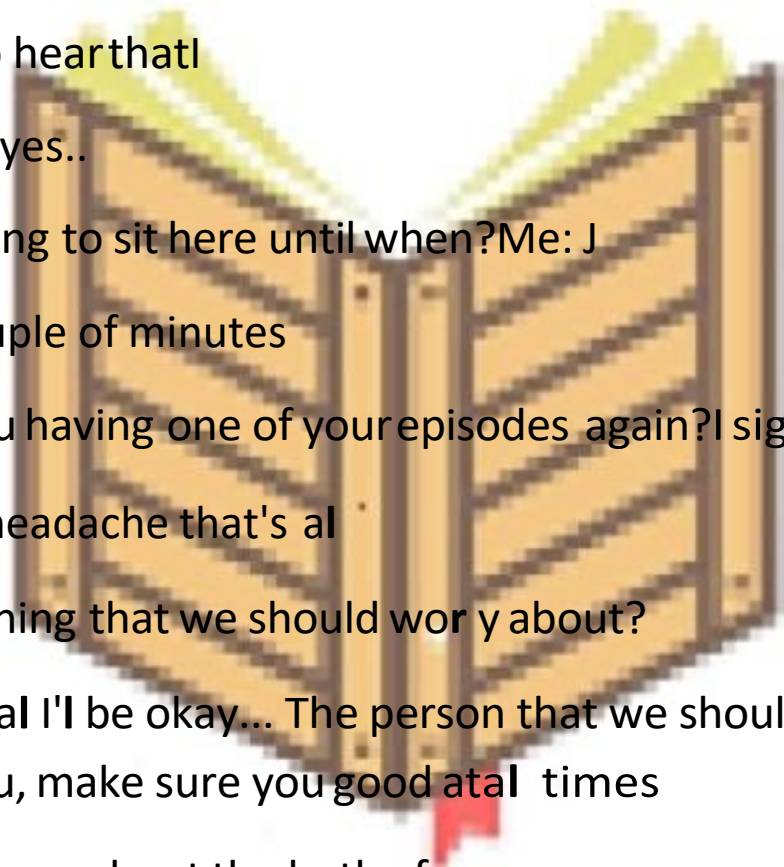
Me: Just a headache that's all

Her: Something that we should worry about?

Me: Not at all I'll be okay... The person that we should worry about is you, make sure you good at all times

Her: Let's worry about the both of us

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: I'll do all the worrying for both of us and you can do all the relaxing for the 3 of us

Her: Maybe I can get us some snacks whilst we sit here, probably drag the TV too close

We both laughed..

Her: I love you so much Me: I

love you too

BANZA

Though my anger was really encouraging me to cause a scene but reality kicked in. I can't risk acting impulsive, I might just lose my job or get into serious trouble..

Sasa: Thank you

Me: No thank you for making me see reason Sasa:

Have a nice day ke

Me: Wait

She looked at me.. **NOVELSGURU.COM**



Me: Maybe I can get your number so I can call you when I have bought you the hat

She smiled and took out her phone...Her:

Okay

NONGCEBO

Kelso walked in...

I had just put the canex v cream and the soap on the bed. I was reading the instructions.. Was too late to put them away

Me: Hi

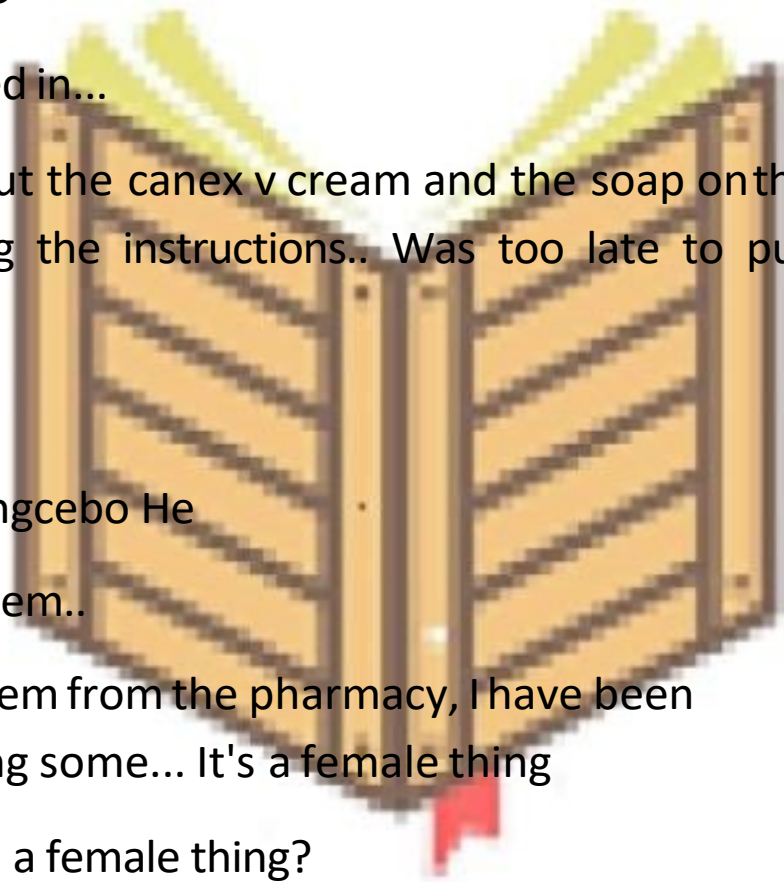
Him: Hi Nongcebo He

looked at them..

Me: I got them from the pharmacy, I have been experiencing some... It's a female thing

Him: Whats a female thing?

Me: I have some irritation I think it's caused by the injection



Him: Did you consult?Me:

No I didn't

Him: For how long have you had it?Me: It's

been a while

Him: And you never bothered to tel me because? Me: I didn't

know how to tel you, I felt embar assed

Him: It's not my first time having a girlfriend, I knowwomen go through a lot of things. Discussing such things with me is very important. So I know what's going on with you and understand that we can't have sex

Me: I'm sor y

Him: Tomor ow we should consult, it's betterto consult so you know exactly what the root of the problem is than to just get things overthe counter

I nodded..

Me: I understand

I looked at his hand..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What happened to it? Him: I

had an accident

Me: And you never bothered to tel me because? He

laughed and I laughed too...

Me: Let me see

I walked up to him and checked it..Me: It

looks badly hurt, is it painful?

Him: No Skat it's not painful, with my fingers possibly broken I
feel no pain at al (Sarcasm)

I chuckled..

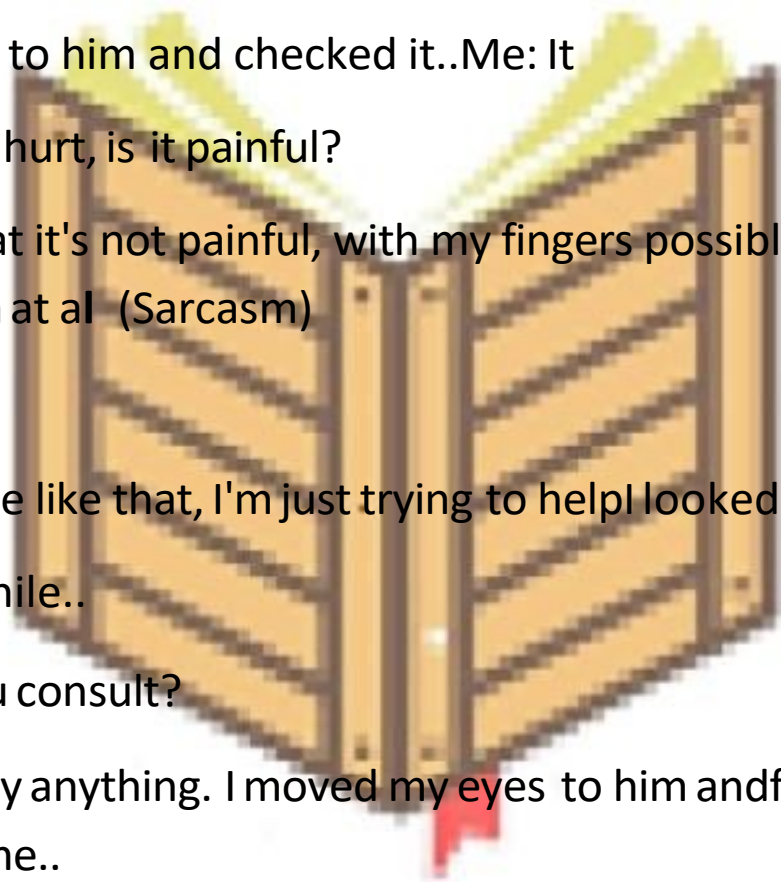
Me: Don't be like that, I'm just trying to helpI looked
at it fora while..

Me: Did you consult?

He didn't say anything. I moved my eyes to him andfound him
looking at me..

Him: You very beautiful do you know that? He put

his other hand on my chin..



Me: Now I know

Him: And I love you very much

Me: That's sad because I don't love you at all
Him: You don't have a choice

Me: I'm just marrying you for the sake of marrying you because I don't see any other girl agreeing to marry you

He gently pulled my hair.. Him:

What was that?

Me: It was nothing don't get too personal (laughing)
He walked over and held the small tube..

Him: So how are you supposed to use this?

Me: I was just reading the instructions, I think I insert it deep inside to transfer the cream

Him: What a day to be alive.. I wanna do it

Me: No.. I don't trust you, you shove it far up my coochie

Him: I'm just trying to help

I took the tube..

Me: Thank you but I'll do it myself I took the cream and the soap..

Me: Let me go bath

Him: Okay.. We should go out later on? Me: You asking me on a date?

Him: I'm just taking you out for the sake of taking you out, I don't see anyone else taking you out

Me: Yeah whatever (laughing)

It felt better telling Kelso about this, He actually handled it better than I thought..

.

To be continued

Please note that inserts for Siba and The Trophy Wife will be uploaded tomorrow. Apologies for the inconvenience and thank you for your patience

NOVELSGURU.COM

[08/24, 13:16] : 52

KELSO

FRIDAY

The wedding expenses really hit my pocket hard, harder than I thought. We were meant to have a small wedding but my Grandmother decided to call our relatives and invite them. We were sitting on a guest list of 30 people now.. Worse most places told us that it was short notice, so I had to pay extra just for them to help us. The venue was the most expensive one, Sole shared in the expenses by paying the catering company, transportation and the cake. The extra payments done were the ones that hit the most..

Me: You shouldn't have man

Sole: Take it as a wedding gift from me

Nongcebo told me about the things that Makhathini left for them. At least Bongeka will be able to pay

her own school fees, whilst Nongcebo is keeping her money for next year when she goes to school.. I didn't know how to feel about that, I really wanted to cover her tuition. An independent woman turns to be disrespectful at times..

Sole: Has Stal ion hit you up?Me:

Not at al

Sole: We going to need him for our next heistMe: We can replace him

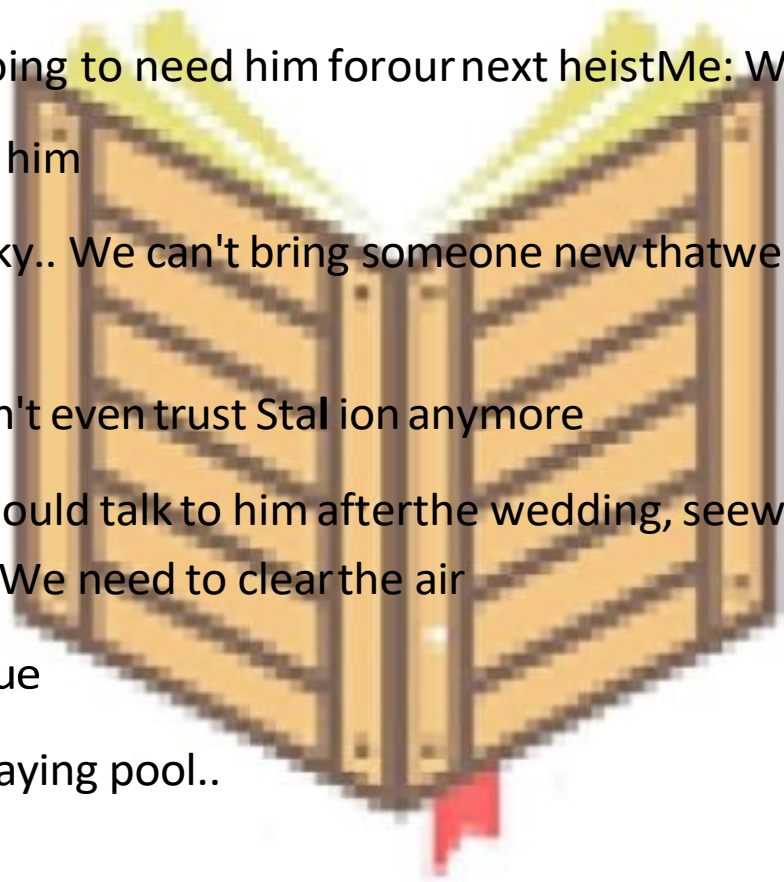
Sole: It's risky.. We can't bring someone new that we can't trust

Me: We don't even trust Stal ion anymore

Sole: We should talk to him after the wedding, see where his loyalty lies. We need to clear the air

Me: Very true

We were playing pool..



NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM

The cream and the soap seemed to be working. Since I started using them, the irritation and the bad odour were gone. I didn't even have to consult, but Kelso has restrained from intercourse. He wanted to make sure that I was completely fine before we start to be sexual again..

We were outside, at the backyard around the fire. It was Me, Sandisiwe, and Kelso's close cousin Mandisa. His elders literally made me cook outside..I still can't believe that tomorrow is the big day, the first time when we talked about this. It seemed like we were just playing, and I can't believe we pulled it off at such short notice. This whole week Kelso had temporarily moved in with Sole, at first I wanted to be the one temporarily moving out but his elders said otherwise. They wanted me here, so I spend more time with them so that they can get to know me better. His uncle wasn't happy with how things were playing out. No lobola, the right protocol wasn't followed. Not forgetting that no family member of mine was going to show up. Said our

NOVELSGURU.COM

wedding is destined for doom, things weren't carried out the right way. On the other hand I liked his Aunties. They very sweet and fun, especially after they have had a few to drink. They the ones who have been helping me the whole week and also teaching me how a wife is meant to carry herself.

Kelso is very blessed to have such a loving family..

Sandi: I'm glad Sole is coloured, because wow I can't do all of this. Imagine my nails, a wedding ceremony is a temporal thing but the drip is forever

Mandisa and I laughed.. Me: My nails are fine

Mandisa: I can't believe Kelso is getting married, it still feels like a dream

Sandi: Such things happen

Mandisa is at UJ and she has agreed to help me apply next year to avoid being scammed again.. One of Kelso's Aunties came to us, with a glass of beer in her hand..

Auntie: Kuyakanjani? (How is it going)

Mandisa: Umlilo uthatha kancance (The fire is very slow)

Auntie: Izandla zenu zithambile (Your hands are soft)

We were instructed to cook tripe (Mogodu) She walked over and opened the pot..

Auntie: Weeeee siyohanjiswa yisisu la (we going together a running stomach)

Another one showed up singing, she has a bit of a deep voice and she's the one that brings fun in everything..

Auntie 2: "eBrakpan emadikareni, kdala besibuza..Dali Uyeyeni, Uyeyeni, Uyeyeni" (Singing)

Auntie 1: Eyy awubambe la Ntombela (hold this Ntombela)

She gave her the glass of beer, Ntombela gulped it down..

Auntie: Kodwa manje yini? (what are you doing now) Ntombela:

Ngeke wabambisa umuntu utshwala

(You can't ask a person to hold alcohol for you)

Auntie 1: Ayy lento yenu Nongcebo (This thing of yours Nongcebo)

Ntombela: Umbethe ingubo emanzi uNongcebo, wanyafa kangaka umlilo ngathi izolo ububheke phezulu (You are wearing a wet blanket Nongcebo, this fire is disappointing as if like you had sex last night)

Mandisa: Kodwa Mamkhulu

Ntombela: Mhlambe usishaya shayile nje wanyonyoba izolo ebsuku (Maybe you even snuck out last night)

Me: Mara azange (I didn't)

Auntie 1: Landa iBeer Ntombela ubuyile (Go fetch the beer and then come back)

Auntie Ntombela walked away..Me:

Can I please be excused

Auntie 1: Yiso lesingisi Nongcebo esinenza so (English is the reason why you can't prepare fire)

I walked away and went to the bathroom. For some reason this morning I woke up with cramps in my womb, more like period pains. It was so funny because I haven't had my periods in a very long time because of the injection. I took a pad and went to the bathroom to change the one I had on. The blood was mixed with discharge though which was a bit confusing. I changed the pad and then disposed it in the small bin. I washed my hands and drank painkillers, then I wrapped a towel around my waist to keep warm. It was a bit cold..

SASA

Banza asked me out for breakfast, he also wanted to give me my hat that he bought for me..

Me: You not ranking today?

Him: I am I'll go back to the taxi rank after this Me: Okay

Him: Can I ask you something?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yes

Him: Tomorrow I'm going to my best friend's wedding, I would like you to be my date

Me: Wow uhm.. I don't even have an outfit
Him: I know it's short notice I'm sorry

He took out his wallet..

Me: No it's okay, I will ask my Sister to borrow one of her dresses

Him: Are you sure? Me:

Yes

My biggest problem when it comes to dating is asking money or accepting money from my boyfriend. I know Banza and I were not really dating but still accepting money from him doesn't sit well with Me.. I know it's weird but my Baby daddy is the reason why I find this gesture awkward. He used to throw sly comments that women are gold diggers and what not. He was really a jerk that made me to be scared of being in a relationship again...

NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Ntombela: Bamba Nongcebo ithi one two threenyana
(take this and drink)

She handed me the glass of beer.. Me: Cha
ngiyabonga (No thank you)

Ntombela: Haibo! Wena uyo sincisha utshwala (You going to
decline us alcohol)

My phone started ringing, it was Gertrude..

Gertrude has been calling me a lot asking how I am and all that.
Very unusual I must say.. I moved away from everyone to answer
the call..

Me: Hello

Her: Hi.. How are you? Me:

I'm well and you?

Her: I'm good just wanted to see how you holding up since
it's your big day tomorrow

Me: I'm a bit nervous but.. Her:

It's understandable



Me: You should come to the wedding tomorrow, if you want

Her: I'd love to

Me: I'll text you the details

Her: No problem

I saw two women approaching..

Me: I have to go.. Bye

Her: Bye

I waited for them to get to the gate, one had a cloth that traditional healers wear over their shoulders most of the time..

Me: Sanibonani (Greetings)

They looked at me, the one with the cloth replied..

Her: Nongcebo

Me: Yebo Ma

Her: Saze sahangana (we meet at last)

Me: Ingabe uMa ubani? (Who are you) She gave me

a side smile..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Ngingu Mamncane ka Makhathini (I am Makhathini's Aunt)

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Inganathi, she's still asking for your votes. If you have voted previously please do so again, let's support one of our own

<https://pageantvote.es/pageants/2741/contestants/18101>

[08/24, 13:17] : 53

NONGCEBO

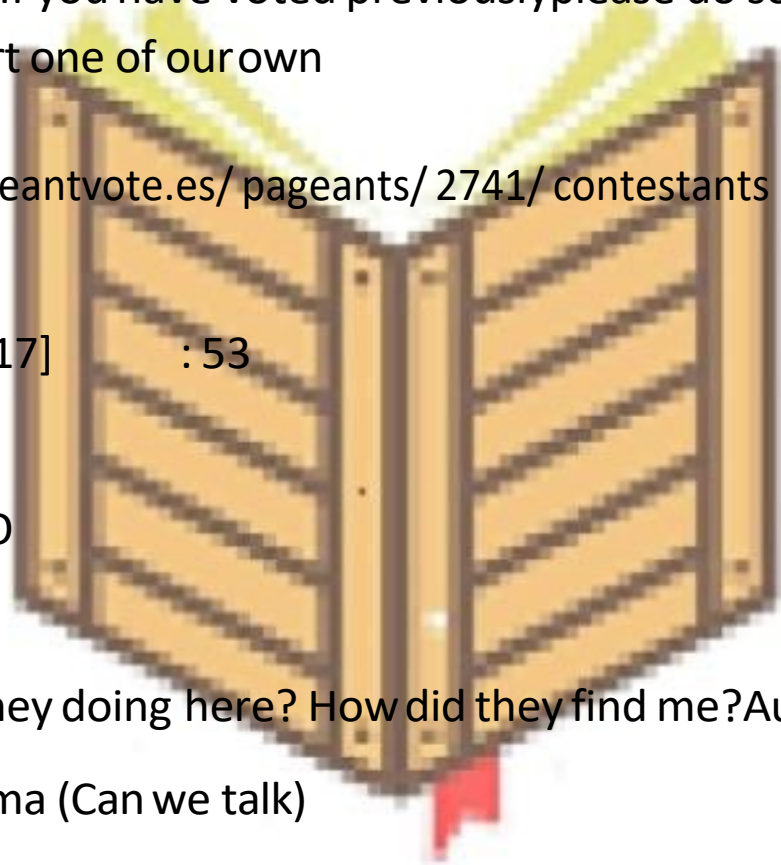
What are they doing here? How did they find me?Aunty:

Singakhuluma (Can we talk)

Me: Yebo (Yes)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Aunty: Singangena sikhulume (We can go in and



talk)

Me: Cha.. Singakhuluma khona la (No.. We can talk here)

The other Aunty that was with her laughed and clapped her hands..

Aunty: Asizelanga okuningi.. Sizocela usinike zonke izinto zakaZulu (We not here to discuss a lot of things.. We want Zulu's things)

Me: Angizwa kahle (I don't understand)

Her: Siyazi ukuthi ushiyele wena konke, manje sizocela wena ukhulume ne loya, ushinsthe konke ukulethe ngakithi (We know he left everything for you, we want you to speak to the lawyer and have everything signed over to us)

Me: Ngiyaxolisa kodwa ngeke ngikhone ukukwenzalokho (I'm sorry but I can't do that)

Aunty: Uthini? (What are you saying)

Me: uZulu uninke mina no Bongeka konke okwakhe (Zulu left everything to me and Bongeka)

Aunty 2: Ubulale umfowethu, mowuceda

engakabandi nokubanda wuwe loya wehla wenyukauzohlala nesoka lakho! Yiso isizathu sakho sokuthiUbulale ubafo ukuzothola izinto zakhe ozozidla nesoka lakho? (You killed my brother, after that you moved in with your boyfriend! Is that the reason why you killed him? To have his money and everything else so that you can spend everything with your boyfriend?)

Me: Uma ngabe yimi engimubulalile kube ngisejele manje (If I had killed him, I would be in jail right now)

Aunty 1: Ungalinge Nongcebo! Awazi ukuthi udelelaabobani (Don't you dare!, you know who you disrespecting)

Aunty 2: Mhlambe nalo mshado owenzakalayo ksasa, ubhadalalwe nge mali ka bhuti (This wedding must've been paid for with Makhathini's money)

Me: Uma kungekho okunye, ngiyabonga (If there's nothing else, thank you)

Makhathani's Aunt gave me a conniving smile..

Her: Unyathele inyoka emsileni (You have just provoked a snake)

They turned back and walked away...

KELSO

I drove to the Prison to see my Father, Sole stayed behind in the car..

Me: Would've been good to have you at the wedding tomorrow

Him: Don't sweat it... Although I still haven't met my daughter in law, I'm starting to think that you are ashamed of me

I laughed..

Me: You'll meet her

Him: You seem off.. What's wrong? Me: Sole

and I we are one man short Him: What

happened to the other guy?

Me: I don't think he wants to roll with us anymore, was checking if you don't have anyone on the outside that we can trust

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: So that's why you came here.. I should've known

Me: Come on Pops

Him: If I give you one of my guys I want a cut
Me: We will give and him something

Him: I'll make a few calls
Me:

Thank you

Him: What are you guys looking at?
Me:

Fidelity truck

He whistled.. Him:

Careful
Me: At all

times

I looked around and I saw some Prisoner sitting not far from us with what seemed like a lawyer..

Me: Who is the new guy?

My father turned and looked at him..

Dad: Modrid Martinez he was transferred here about 2 weeks ago



His legs and his hands were both cuffed..Me: He's dangerous?

Dad: They don't trust him yetMe:

What's he in for?

Dad: I don't know.. He doesn't speak that muchMe: I see

Modrid looked at me, and I looked at him..

Dad: I'll make a few calls then I'll get back to youMe: Okay

thank you

I saw the lawyer giving him something under the table..

I looked at the guard who didn't see anything, I looked at Modrid again... He gave me a nod, I gave him a nod too..

NONGCEBO

After that whole talk with Makhathini's Aunties, Irang Getrude to tell her what happened..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Zulu has a will , he signed everything to you and his Daughter. There's nothing they can do

I sat down on the bed..

Her: If you want we can get a restraining order against them so that they stay away from you

Me: Yes please let's do that, because I don't think they will stop

Her: Okay we will do it after the wedding Me:

Thank you

Her: You welcome.. Just block them out, try to focus on your wedding.. You getting married tomorrow

Me: Thank you very much Getrude Her:

You welcome my Dear

I hung up...

If they were able to get here, that means they are staying at Makhathini's house. I don't want the house, Bongeka doesn't want it too. Maybe I can give it off to them, maybe they will back off...



I called Kelso..Him:

Skat

Me: Hey Babe

Him: Changed your mind?I

chuckled..

Me: No.. Of course not, I just miss youHim: I

miss you too

Me: Can you pass by at the pharmacy and get me pain killers for period pains, strong pain killers

Him: I'll do that.. You on your periods?Me: Yes

Him: That's bad... Is the white dress going to work?Me: I'll be

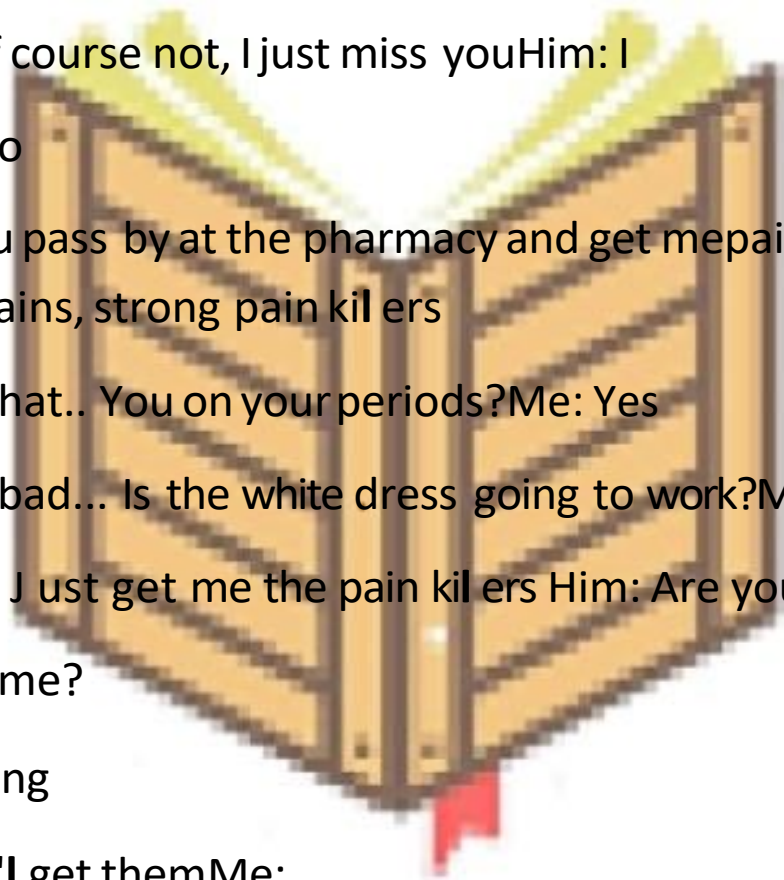
okay Babe.. Just get me the pain killers Him: Are you asking or ordering me?

Me: I'm asking

Him: Okay I'll get themMe:

Thank you

NOVELSGURU.COM



Him: I love you Me: I

love you too

BANZA

I was eating lunch at the taxi rank with the other drivers..

There's a woman who sells takeaways at the taxi rank..

Bobby: Haike Madoda ithi umuntu anishiye ayolalakanance

(Let me leave you and go and rest a bit)

Cheese: Sobuye sikubone mnaks (we will see you later)

He got up and went to wash his hands then he went to his taxi..

Cheese: Aww Mbhemi soke sikukhumule ksasa (We are going to miss you tomorrow)

Me: Kahle lhaba (don't exaggerate)

Cheese: Bafaka ubani ksasa? (who's going to relieve you tomorrow)

Me: Bafake uMaphayi (Maphayi)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Cheese: Aweeeh isithithizeli esingaka (Maphayi is a fool)

I laughed.. I ran my eyes around as we continued eating and talking, then just by the toilets I saw the old woman again. She was standing there and looking at us, what was different about her today is that she was holding a small bag. That bag of bones that traditional healers have. Same outfit and she had no shoes on..

Cheese: Mbhemi kungena wena manje (It's your turn)

I looked at him..

Cheese: Hamba phela uyongena Mbhemi (It's your turn)

I looked at the toilets again and she wasn't there...

NONGCEBO

The cramps were starting to be unbearable, I was literally rolling in bed..

Sandi: Nongcebo I think we should go to the

NOVELSGURU.COM

hospital

I shook my head..

Me: I can't be admitted, I am getting married tomorrow

Sandi: But you in pain and you burning up really bad

Me: Kelso is coming with pain killers, I just need something strong

Sandi: Let me call Sole again and ask where they are

She walked out as Mandisa made her way in Mandisa:

Here

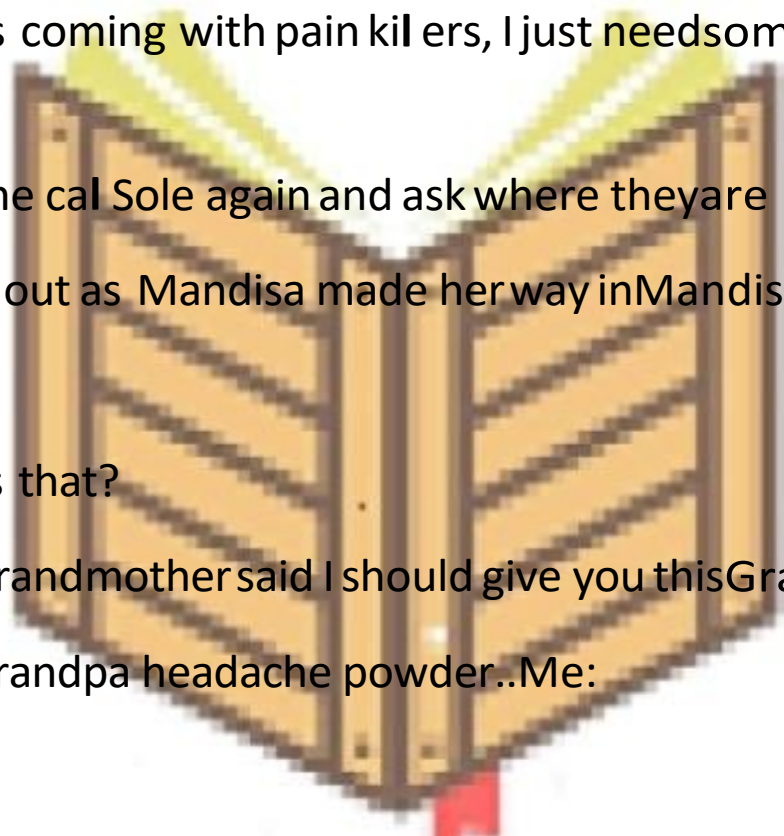
Me: What is that?

Mandisa: Grandmother said I should give you this Grandpa

I took the Grandpa headache powder..Me:

Thank you

Mandisa: Plus it's cold I think that's why the cramps are bad



I drank it..

Me: Thank you

Her: Try to get some rest okay? I'll get you a hot bottle for the cramps okay?

Me: Okay.. Thank you very much Her:

Okay

She walked out. Just when I was about to lay my head down again on the pillow, I had this intense urge to vomit. I quickly got out of bed and ran to the bathroom to vomit..

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Cheryl Z. She has a closed group where she writes stories, please find attached link to the closed group to read her story. The name of the closed group is "Stories by Cheryl Z"

<https://m.facebook.com/groups/1313991698991829>

NOVELSGURU.COM

[08/24, 13:18] : 54

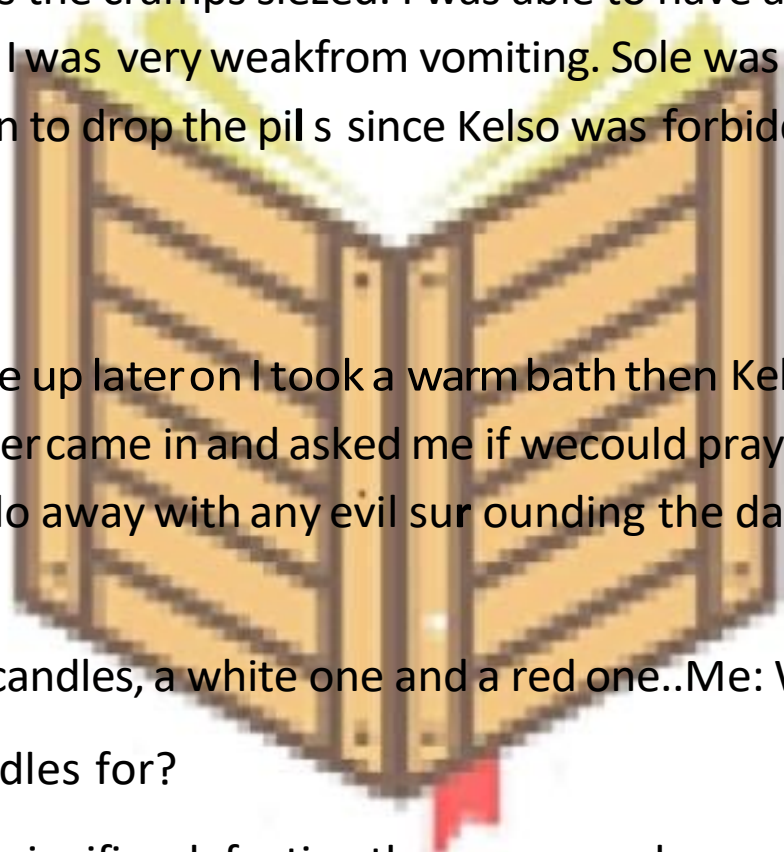
NONGCEBO

When Kelso delivered the pills and I took two of them, after a few minutes the cramps seized. I was able to have a peaceful rest though I was very weak from vomiting. Sole was the one who came in to drop the pills since Kelso was forbidden to see me..

When I woke up later on I took a warm bath then Kelso's Grandmother came in and asked me if we could pray. Pray for God to do away with any evil surrounding the day tomorrow.

She lit two candles, a white one and a red one..Me: What are the candles for?

Grams: Red signifies defeating the enemy and any evil that might be surrounding the event for tomorrow. White signifies light, for light to



overpower and shine bright more than the darkness that is set forth for tomorrow

Me: I see

Her: Do you know how to pray? Me: I

don't, it's been years

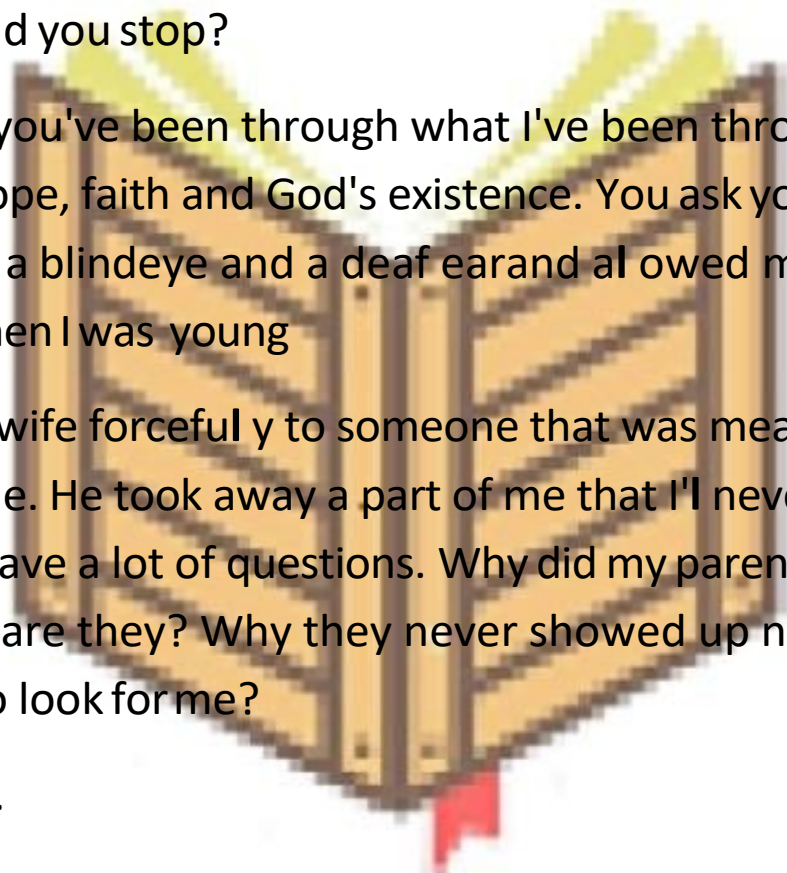
Her: Why did you stop?

Me: When you've been through what I've been through, you end up losing hope, faith and God's existence. You ask yourself why God turned a blind eye and allowed me to be violated when I was young

I became a wife forcefully to someone that was meant to be a parent to me. He took away a part of me that I'll never get back. Made me have a lot of questions. Why did my parents abandon me? Where are they? Why they never showed up nor even bothered to look for me?

She sighed..

Her: I am sorry that you went through all of that, it wasn't your fault. You feel victim to the hands of a



cruel Man, but now you have a lot to be grateful for Me: I don't think so

Her: You getting married tomorrow did you even think that was going to happen? You left that man and look now your life is starting to make sense.

Sometimes we concentrate more on the negative and forget to appreciate even the little positive things that are happening around us. You think that you don't have much to be thankful for because of the pain you still feel deep down, but you have a lot to be grateful for. My hard headed Grandson that used to play women left and right chose you to be his wife, he loved and chose you to spend the rest of his life with
I chuckled..

Her: You have to familiarize yourself with praying, you need to believe in something. Believing in something gives you hope, it makes you get through life obstacles even when they seem hard to get over

Me: I don't even know what to say

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: You say whatever it is that is in your heart. It's no different from talking to someone

I nodded..

Her: Would you like me to leave you so you can pray alone?

Me: No it's fine

She held my hand as we both closed our eyes..

Me: "God I know that I'm not perfect, there's things that I have done that I'm not proud of. Wrong as it was, but it felt like the only way out of the situation. I ask for your forgiveness, as I forgive you too for everything I've went through and you did not come to my rescue. I am about to embark on a journey that I believe it's beautiful and I deserve it. I deserve to be happy.. Amen"

Grams: "We pray for the whole of heaven to shine the light tomorrow as we believe that this union was founded in your love. We pray Lord, that whoever is against what's meant to take place tomorrow may they feel the wrath of the warrior angels. You know them Lord, you know what they have purposed, you

NOVELSGURU.COM

know where Nongcebo's name was said, you know when they said it and you know why they said it. We are human beings, we only see what's in front of us, we don't see beyond what you have allowed us to see. Therefore I pray in Jesus' name that no human in this world shall win, I pray for the blood of Jesus to go before us and wipe away every evil in our path. I pray that-

We heard the sound of the thunder..

Grams: "Just like how you dealt with the Egyptians as they persecuted the Israelites may you do so with the enemies set forth in our path"

She continued praying as the thunder had no mercy, it was like it was hitting next to our ears in the room...

BANZA

All of a sudden it just wanted to rain. There was lightning and thunder, clouds gathered and there was

NOVELSGURU.COM

this disturbing wind. I will never understand how the weather can just change like that...

I got home to my Mother in bed, she didn't look good.. My Dad was not around..

Me: Whats wrong?

She seemed like she was in pain..Her: My legs

Me: Whats wrong with them?

Her: Today they were very heavy when I woke up, it was even hard to walk. Now they are burning again so much I had to take off my socks. The burning sensation usually comes very late at night but today it visited me very early

I checked her legs, they seemed to be a bit swollen and touching them they were hard..

Me: When did this start?Her:

It's been a while

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Why didn't you say anything?

Her: I thought it was something that was going to pass but..

Me: Where is Dad?

Her: He went out to get us takeaways since I won't be able to cook tonight

She touched her legs and then closed her eyes..

Me: I'm calling him so we can take you to the hospital

I walked out to call my Dad..

NONGCEBO

I don't wanna lie, I felt a bit lighter after praying. Like I had just poured out everything that I had been bottling deep inside. I felt like a bit of the burden that I had on my shoulders was slightly lifted.. After our prayer session she told me not to blow out the candles, I should let them burn and die out on their own. I just have to keep an eye on them so they don't burn down the place. She told me I have to

NOVELSGURU.COM

pray before I go to sleep and also at around 00:00am/ 3:00am in the morning...

Sandi handed me my plate..Me:

Thank you

Her: How are you feeling now?Me:

Much better I won't lie Her: That's good

She didn't look that much happy..Me:

Are you okay?

Her: I'm okay, I just miss Sole that's all Me: Only a few hours to go until tomorrow

Her: Tomorrow after the wedding I'm going back to my place

Me: Thank you again for being here Her:

It's okay

Me: I just want everything to go well tomorrow..Her:

Everything is going to go well don't worry



(Silence)

Her: My Aunt called me, says she's coming to the wedding tomorrow she knows you

Me: Your Aunt? Her:

Gertrude

Me: Oh yes Makhathini's lawyer.. She's a very nice woman I like her

Her: I was shocked

Me: This might sound weird but.. She looks like Kelso a lot

Her: I'm glad someone said it!

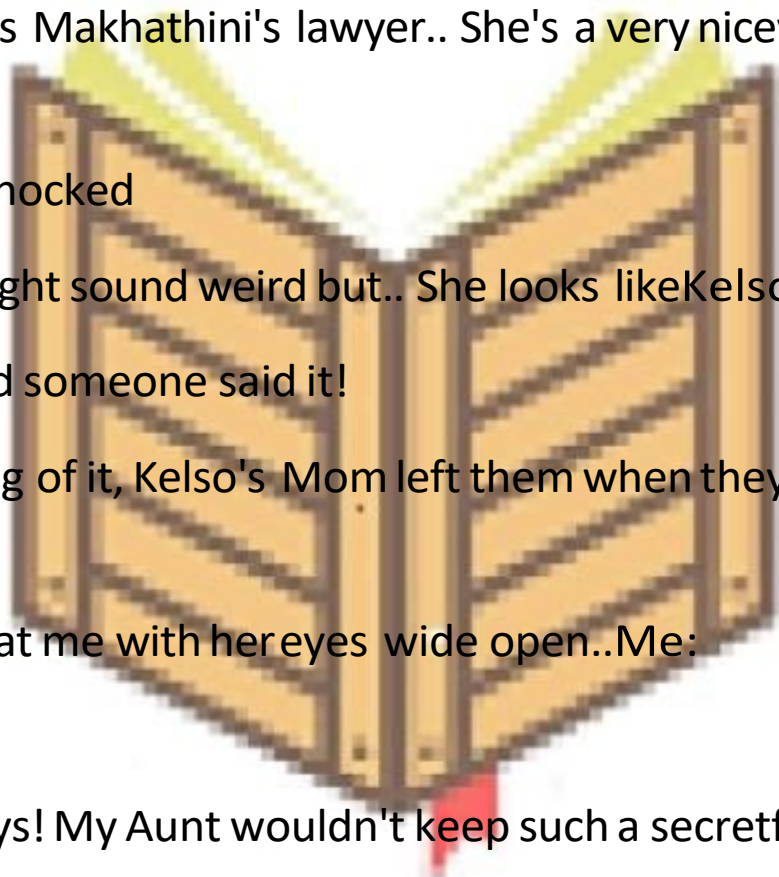
Me: Thinking of it, Kelso's Mom left them when they were very young

She looked at me with her eyes wide open.. Me:

What if??

Her: No ways! My Aunt wouldn't keep such a secret from us..

She would never abandon her kids, she's not that kind of a person. She's a very loving Mother



Me: Well maybe I'm just reading too much into the situation

Her: Yes maybe you are

BANZA

My Dad came back and he carried my Mother to the taxi..

Me: Why didn't you tell me that she wasn't feeling well?

Dad: You know how stubborn your Mother is
Ma: We forgot my toilet bag

Dad: I'll go and get it

He walked back into the house to get it..
Me: Are you feeling comfortable?

Ma: I'm okay thank you
Me:

Okay

My Dad was taking long, so I decided to walk back

NOVELSGURU.COM

into the house and see what was keeping him..

When I was at the gate, about two houses away from mine the old woman was standing there. She was looking at me and she stretched her hand out to me, the hand that was holding the bag of bones..

I looked at her for a very long time until my Father poked me on the shoulder..

Him: Let's go

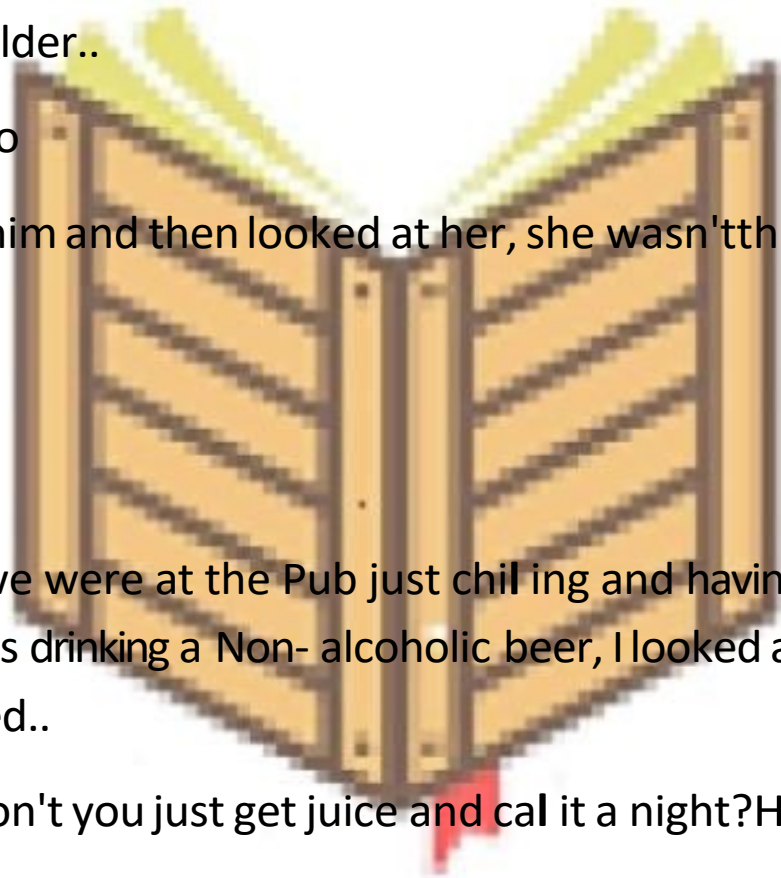
I looked at him and then looked at her, she wasn't there anymore..

KELSO

Sole and I we were at the Pub just chilling and having a good time. He was drinking a Non-alcoholic beer, I looked at his glass and chuckled..

Me: Why don't you just get juice and call it a night? Him: I'm trying to fit in

Me: Yeah whatever



NOVELSGURU.COM

I got up..

Me: I'm coming.. Wanna call Nongcebo and see how she's holding up

Him: Cool

I walked out to call Nongcebo when I accidentally bumped into this other lady at the door. Her bottle of Ice Tropez that he was holding fell ..

Her: Whooooo mara ke

I glanced down at it and then my eyes moved up to her. A beautiful yellow bone that was very frustrated with me right now...

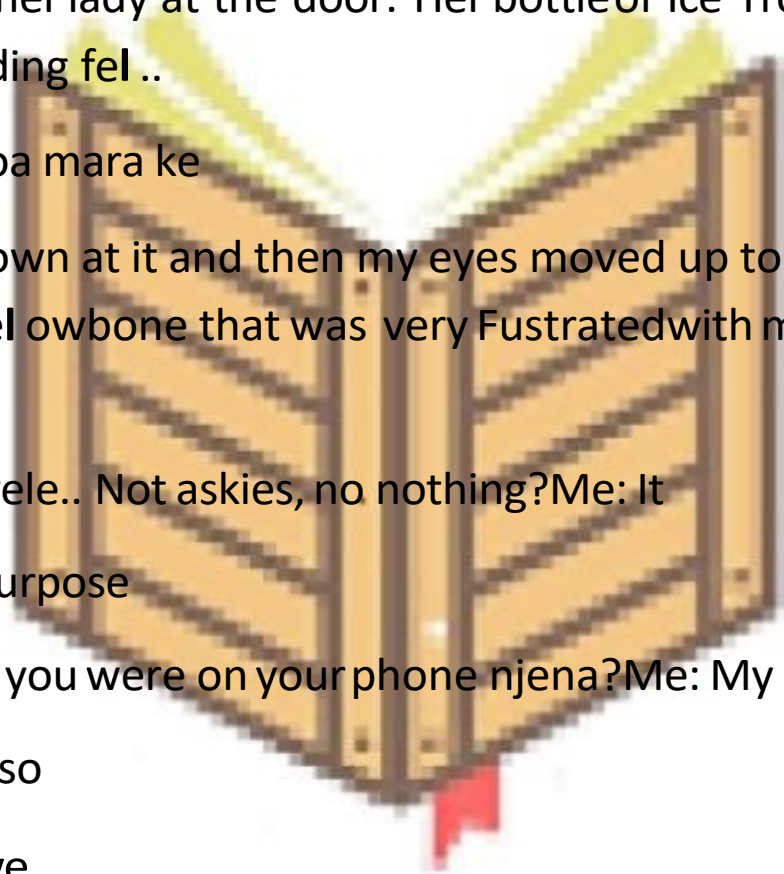
Her: Mara vele.. Not asking, no nothing? Me: It wasn't on purpose

Her: Ngoba you were on your phone njena? Me: My name is Kelso

Her: Nelisiwe

Me: Can I buy you another one? Her:

Vele you have no choice!



I laughed and shook my head.. Me:
Okay let's get another oneWe walked
back inside..

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:18] : 55

BANZA

Public hospitals tend to be a mess at times, especially when an ambulance didn't bring you. Even though we got a wheelchair for my Mother but they still gave us runarounds..

It was really stressful, I don't wanna be here the whole night, I wanna make sure she's settled before I go home so tomorrow morning I can wake up and go to Nongcebo's wedding.. When they finally attended to her I walked outside to call Sasa..

Sasa: Hi

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Are you already sleeping? She
laughed...

Sasa: We watching the Queen Me:
Hope I'm not disturbing you

Sasa: Not at all .. Is everything okay?

Sasa is a very humble person. Always calm and well
spoken..

Me: Everything is okay.. I'm at the hospital

Sasa: What happened? How is everything okay okay when you at
the hospital?

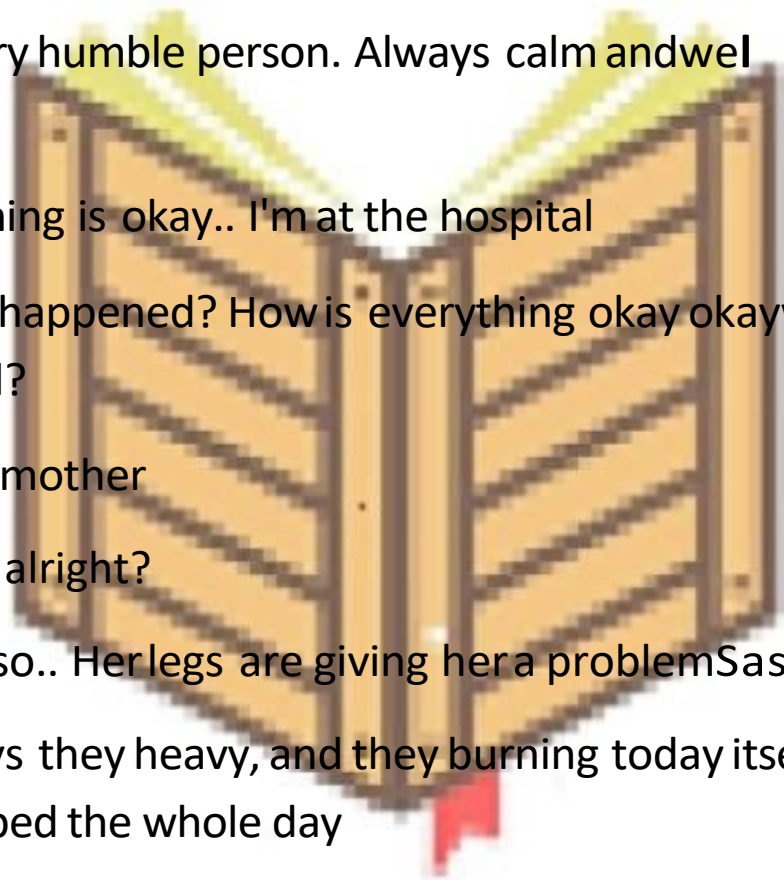
Me: It's my mother

Sasa: Is she alright?

Me: I hope so.. Her legs are giving her a problem Sasa: How so?

Me: She says they heavy, and they burning today it seems like
she was in bed the whole day

Sasa: Have you guys thought about consulting a traditional
healer or something? Sounds more



ancestral

Me: You think?

Her: Yes but hear what the Doctor says first
Me: I'll do that, thank you so much

Her: You welcome
Me:

Good night
Her: Good night

NONGCEBO

Kelso's phone was off, so unlike him to not call me and say good night..

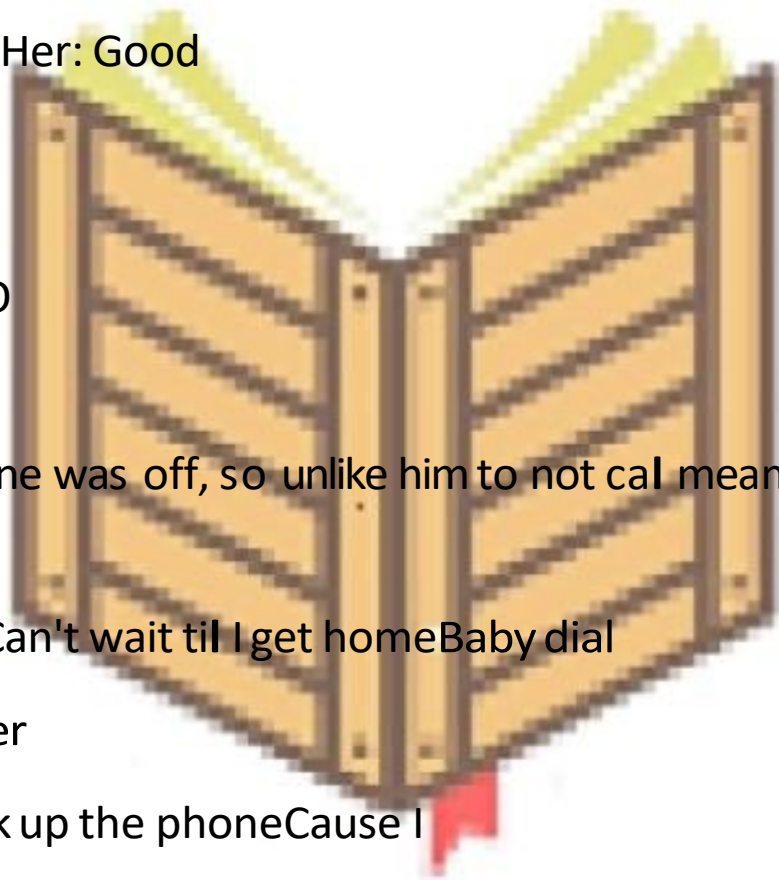
Mandisa: "Can't wait til I get home
Baby dial your number

Can you pick up the phone
Cause I

wanna hold a

NOVELSGURU.COM

Daydreamin' about you all day in school cant



concentrate

Wanna have your voice in my ear till mama come and say its too late"

Sandi and Mandisa were singing their lungs out, Mandisa was drinking and Sandi mixed cranberry juice with dry red wine. Told her alcohol is not good for the baby she told me she mixed it and it's not like she's going to drink the whole bottle just one glass. I think the stress of missing Sole was getting to her, I mean they seem like they always together..

Sandi: Nongcebo voetsek come on! I rolled my eyes..

Sandi: This is your Bachelorette party we can't drink and have you laying on the bed looking all stressed

Mandisa: She has a point though

Me: I'm sick guys.. Not really in the mood to drink

Sandi: Ungazositshela umnqundu wakho yezwa?(Don't tell us your arse)

Mandisa laughed..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How many glasses did she have?

Mandisa: Not really sure

Me: Hide the bottle, this is not good

Mandisa: Okay I'll do so

Sandi continued drinking and singing, her phone vibrated on the bed. It was Sole, I took it without her seeing..

Me: Nongcebo Hi

Sole: Hey

Me: Hi.. I can't hear you clearly hold on I got up and walked out..

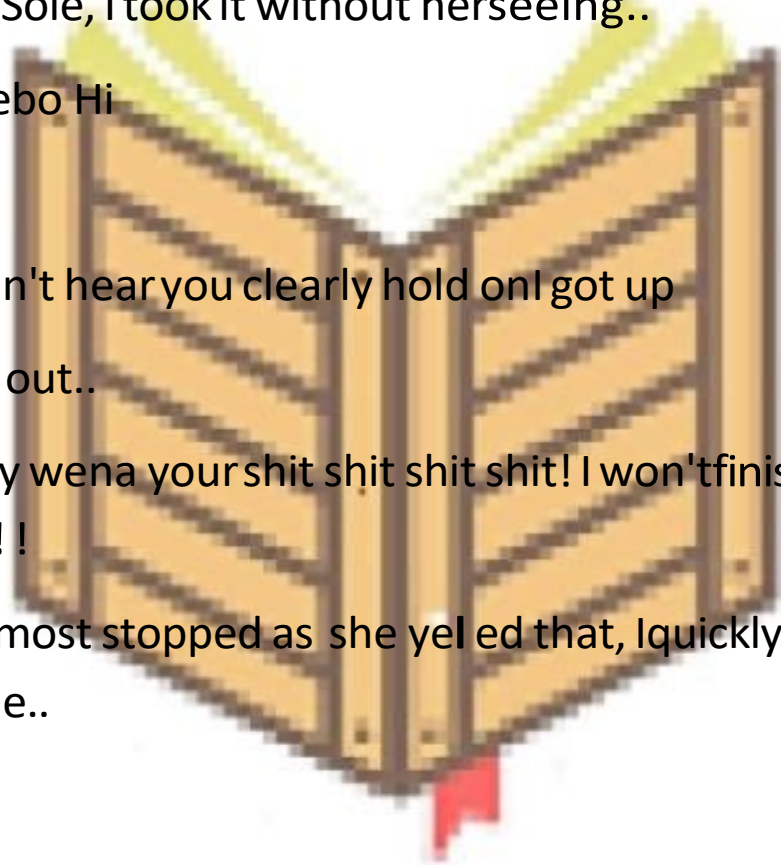
Sandi: Yeeey wena your shit shit shit shit! I won't finish this wine alone! !

My heart almost stopped as she yelled that, I quickly went outside..

Me: Hey

He kept quiet..

Me: Sole?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Is Sandi drinking? Me: No

she's not drinking

Him: So why are you answering her phone?

Me: Sandi and Kelso's cousin are just singing an- Him: Why are

you answering her phone? Put her on? Me: Sole where is

Kelso?

Him: Kelso has a phone

Me: I've been trying to call him but his phone is off Him: Put Sandi

on the phone

Me: Okay she had maybe one glass or tw-He hung

up..

Shit!

I walked back in..

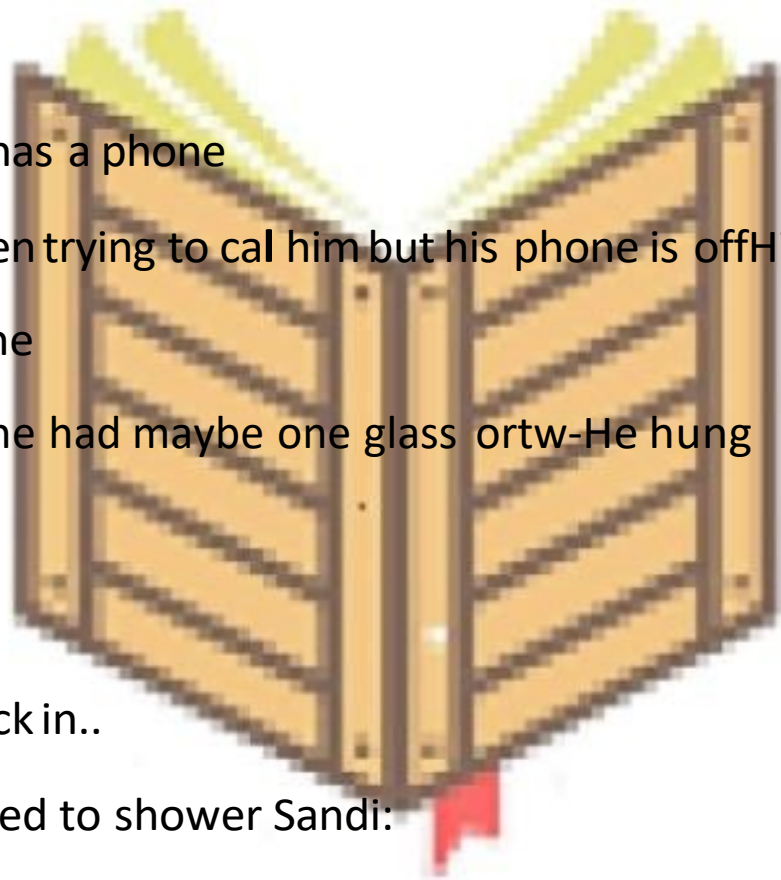
Me: You need to shower Sandi:

Why? I did shower

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I know but you need to take something that's going to

help you snap out of it



Sandi: Why?

Me: Sole cal ed and I.. I answeredHer
eyes widened..

Me: He heard you

Her: Why are you answering my phone cal s in thefirst
place?

Me: I just wanted to find out where Kelso is becausehe's n-
She slapped me across the face..

Her: You don't answer my phone! You don't answermy boyfriend's
cal s

Mandisa: Okay Sandi let's calm downSandi:

No you calm down!

Me: I'm going to blame that on the alcoholMandisa:

There's no need to be ghetto Sandi: You want me to
showyou ghetto?

Me: We don't have time forthis So-
NOVELSGURU.COM

She literal y attacked me and we both fel on the

floor, she crawled up to me and sat on my tummy..

Sandi: I will drop you down like a bad habit, I will make a beauty sandwich out of you! I will give you a makeover for tomorrow that no one is going to forget!

Me: Get her off me! Mandisa pulled her off me..

I slowly got up and looked at her..

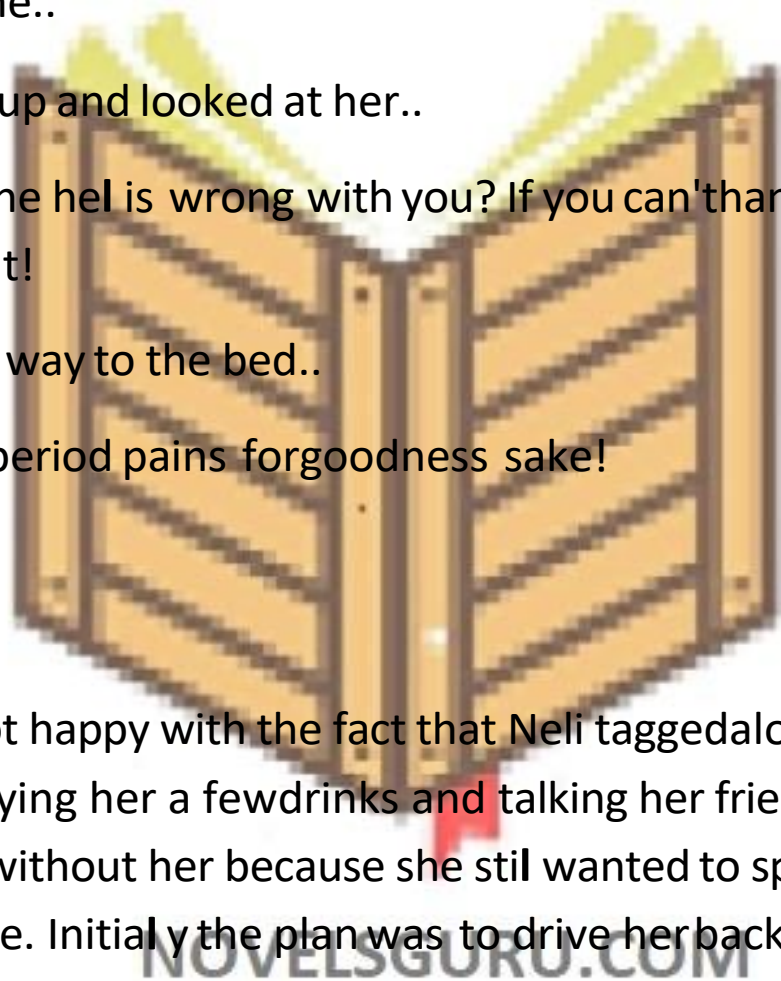
Me: What the hell is wrong with you? If you can't handle alcohol don't drink it!

I limped my way to the bed..

Me: I have period pains for goodness sake!

KELSO

Sole was not happy with the fact that Neli tagged along with us. After buying her a few drinks and talking her friends ended up leaving without her because she still wanted to spend more time with me. Initially the plan was to drive her back to her



place but she agreed to come here with me..

Sole walked back in..

Sole: I'm going out for a while
Me:

Where are you going?

He looked at Neli..

Sole: To see Sandi and Ngcebo, remember Ngcebo who is sick?

I looked at Neli and faked a smile..
Me:

Excuse me

I got up from the couch and grabbed Sole's arm, then I dragged him to the kitchen..

Me: Wtf?

Him: No! What the fuck are you doing? Have you forgotten that tomorrow you're getting married?

Me: It's not like I'm going to ask Neli to walk down the aisle with Ngcebo tomorrow, I'm just trying to smash that's all

Him: We got her here over a few bottles of Bernin blush, has it ever occurred to you that maybe she's been fucked countless times over Bernin?

Me: Again I'm not asking her to walk down the aisle with Nongcebo tomorrow!

Him: Do you! and I'm pissed that you're going to do this at my house!

Me: What are you going to see the girls for?

Him: I care about my girlfriend and I want to see her before she goes to sleep

Me: Call or something, that's what cell phones are made for you don't have to drive all the way

Him: Fuck you Kelso!

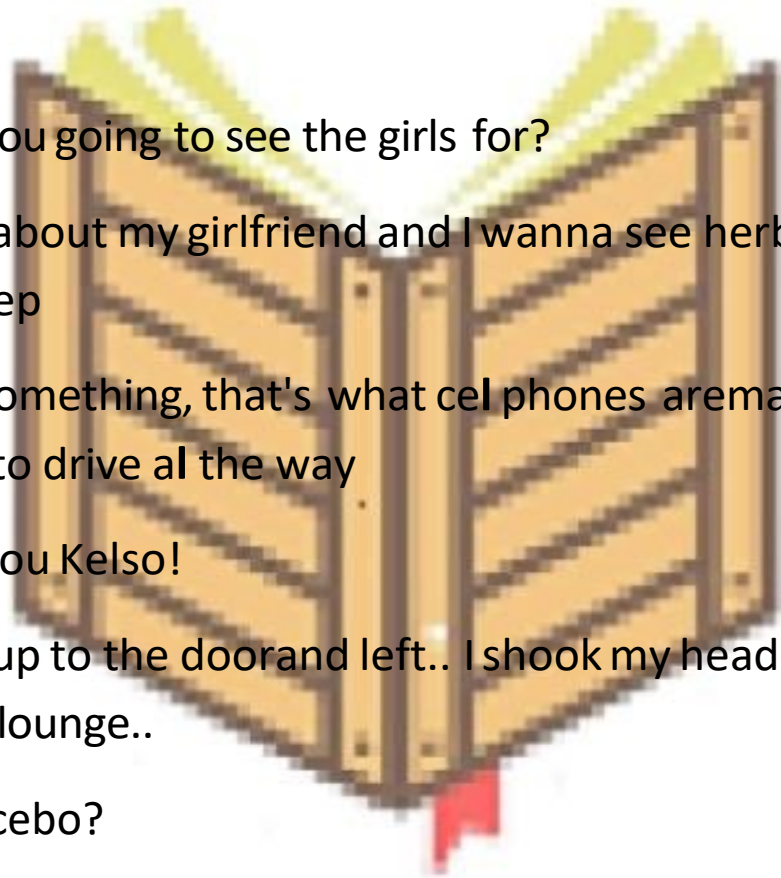
He walked up to the door and left.. I shook my head and went back to the lounge..

Neli: So Nongcebo?

I sat down next to her.. Me:

She is a.. Uhm..

Her: I didn't expect a guy like you to be single, I



NOVELSGURU.COM

understand that this is just a hook up and nothing more

Me: You do this more often? Her:

Now you insulting me

I laid back on the couch..

She took my cigarettes on the table.. Her:

Let's go out for a smoke

We both stood up and walked out, with me following her...

NONGCEBO

Sandi made my cramps to come back again, I was also frustrated at the fact that Kelso's phone was off. My emotions were a mess..

Sandi: She had no business ans-

Mandisa: J ust drink uyeke ukukhuluma kakhulu(J ust drink and stop talking a lot)

She drank the glass of water...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandi went on and on talking too much, she was annoying that I got up and walked out. I went and sat on the stoep at the front..

I tried Kelso again but his phone was off..Me:

Kelso answer your phone!

He was making me more frustrated, I just want to talk to him...

I went through my contact list until I bumped into Gertrude's number, I rang her..

She answered..

Her: Hello Dear

Me: Hi.. I'm sorry to ring you this late
Her: No it's okay...

I broke down..

Her: What's wrong? Talk to me

Me: Nothing much I'm just frustrated, things are a bit overwhelming for me at the moment

Her: Are you having second thoughts?



Me: Not entirely but morning is approaching soon and... I called Kelso he's phone is off, would've been nice to talk to him before I go to bed

Her: Sounds like you missing him Me: I do a

lot

Her: He's probably having a bachelor party or something, getting drunk and all that.. Just boys being boys

Me: I guess so

Her: Just try to get your beauty sleep, wouldn't want you falling asleep tomorrow

I chuckled.. Me:

Thank you

Her: You welcome baby... Good night Me:

Night

KELSO

Neli was coming down heavy on me with the Blow



NOVELSOURU.COM

Job, literally when we got back from smoking it didn't take much for us to end up in this situation. I was sitting on the couch and she was down on her knees, good thing I keep myself some condoms in the car..

It's no secret that my sex life with Nongcebo hasn't been good lately, and sex is a basic need in a relationship, to stop things like this from happening... I really don't remember the last time I actually had a woman give me a blow job this good, it ended with Power. Nongcebo is not that much skilled in this, she's not bad but also she's not the best..

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Inganathi, please let's continue voting for her winning this competition would mean a lot to her

<https://pageantvote.es/pageants/2741/contestants/18101?fbclid=IwAR2Z7KAQiTdoSTBxiV60sgzrNwMLqY1K7aJHMf6F5W93KyjHDHbF0ZdB26U>

NOVELSGURU.COM

[08/24, 13:18] : 56

KELSO

My frustrations went all out on Neli, the frustrations of Nongcebo possibly cheating. Literally I looked at Neli and pictured my soon to be wife, being fucked by another man. I saw red, something deep inside of me moved. Something sinister blinded me and all my senses went out. I removed my hand from her neck when I saw that she was ready to pass out, with tears in her eyes. I was fucking her on the couch, and she had dug through my arms with her long nails. I removed my dick from her and rolled out the condom that had my semen inside of it..

She put her hands over her face and started crying, that made me feel bad a little..

Me: Nel..

She got up and picked up her clothes from the floor and limped her way to the bathroom

She locked the door. I sat on the couch with my

NOVELSGURU.COM

hands on my head..Me:

Fuck!

SANDISIWE

Sole did show up he asked if we could go out for a drive and we did. The streets were quiet, I looked at the time and it was 01:00am. He was way too calm I don't even know if he was mad or not, the best way was to just keep quiet because I had tried talking to him but he didn't reply.. To my surprise we drove out to the cemetery, didn't even know what we were doing here. He drove in deep and parked on the side. It was dark and very quiet

Me: Snowflake what are we doing here?

He exhaled and then got out of the car, he walked around to my side and opened the door..

Him: Get out

Me: What are we doing here?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I don't wanna use force I got

out...

He held my hand and then we started walking to God knows where. It was very chilly, and the atmosphere was unsettling.

I was scared, I was very scared I don't wanna lie. We walked to a row of what looked like freshly dug holes..

Me: What are we doing here?

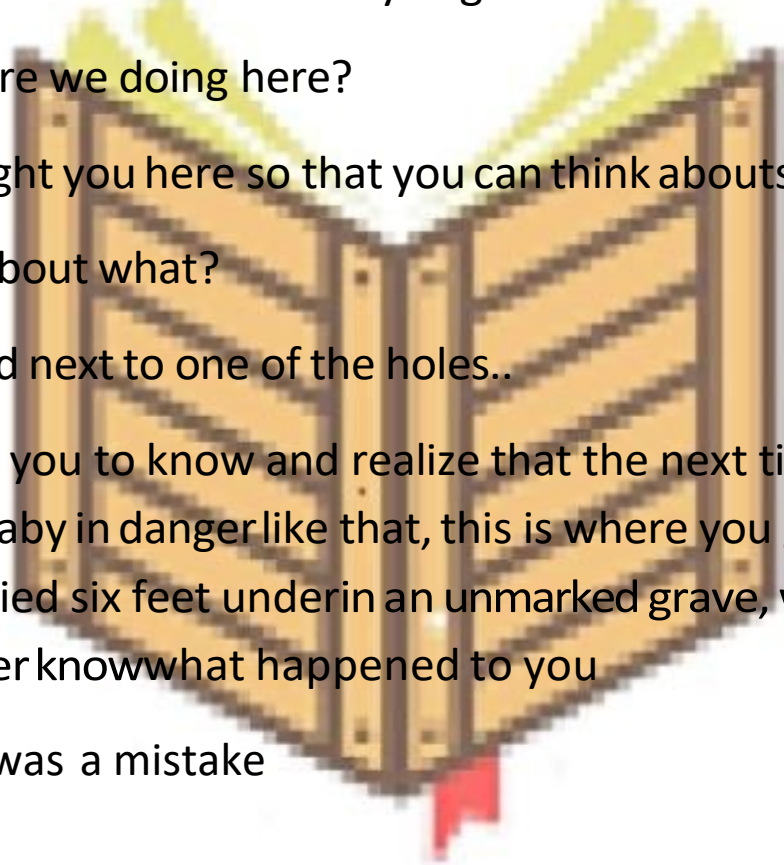
Sole: I brought you here so that you can think about something

Me: Think about what?

He crouched next to one of the holes..

Him: I want you to know and realize that the next time you try to put my baby in danger like that, this is where you going to end up. Buried six feet under in an unmarked grave, where no one will ever know what happened to you

Me: Sole it was a mistake



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: It was anything but a mistake. You a writer and I am very sure that you do research, I don't understand why you wouldn't research on alcohol fetal syndrome. How alcohol can harm the unborn baby

I swallowed..

Me: I don't know what happened, I'm sorry He got up..

Him: Jump in Me:

What?

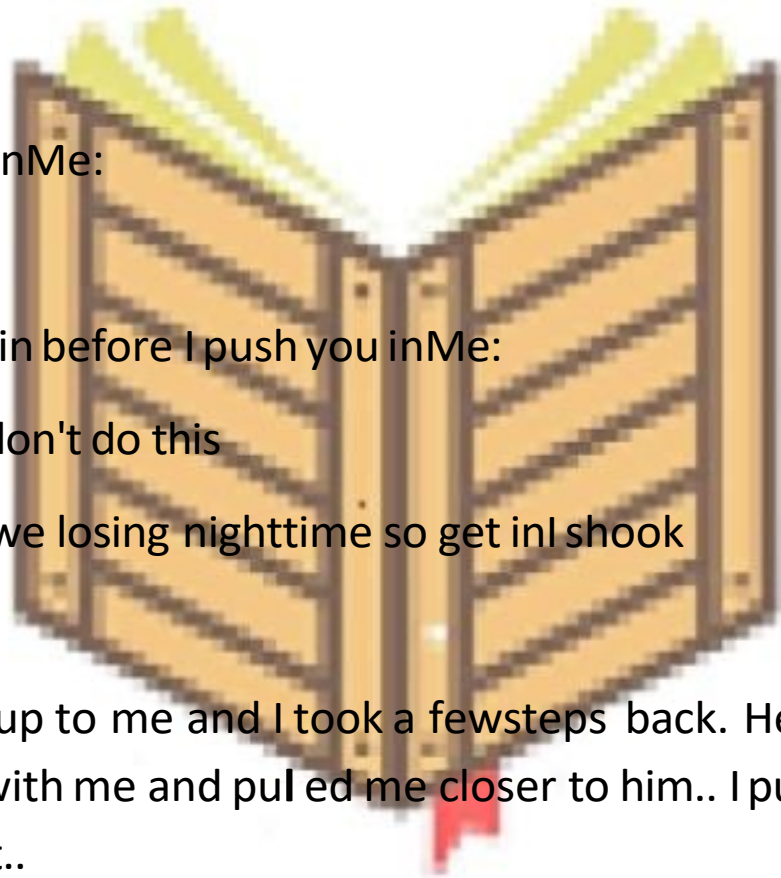
Him: Jump in before I push you in Me:

Snowflake don't do this

Him: Sandi we losing nighttime so get in I shook my head..

He walked up to me and I took a few steps back. He eventually caught up with me and pulled me closer to him.. I put my hands on his chest..

Me: Sole I'm sorry okay? It's never going to happen again



Him: If I push you in, you might fall and hit your head hard then pass out.. It's best if you jump in on your own

Me: Sole please don't do this

He dragged me closer to the hole..Me:

Sole Please! (crying)

He stood behind me..

Him: No.. No.. No.. Shhhh crying and screaming won't help because no one is going to hear you

Me: Please (crying)Him:

Jump in

Me: But I don't want to jump in (crying)

Him: I know, but you don't have a choice right now..I'm going to count to 3, if you not inside by then.. I will push you in

Me: Sole please (crying)Him:

1....2...

He put his hand on my shoulder..

Him: 3..

I jumped him before he could even push me inside. When I landed inside I think I must've sprained my ankle or something, I ended up sitting down..

He crouched again and looked at me.. Me: Sole

please

Him: I want you to think about what you have done, because this will be your reality if you continue keeping my baby in danger on purpose

He got up and then walked away..

Me: Sole please don't leave me here (crying)

NONGCEBO

My phone was the one that woke me up when it started ringing. It rang so loud that I couldn't ignore it. I checked and it was Kelso. I answered..

Me: Hel o (Sleepy voice)

Him: Sorry for waking you up

Me: What is it?

Him: I was about to sleep, but wanted to hear your voice first

Me: I've tried calling you but your phone was off

Him: I know Skat, I was sleeping. Had a lot to drink that I passed out

Me: Oh

Him: I'm truly sorry

Me: What are you doing?

Him: I'm watching TV, just woke up

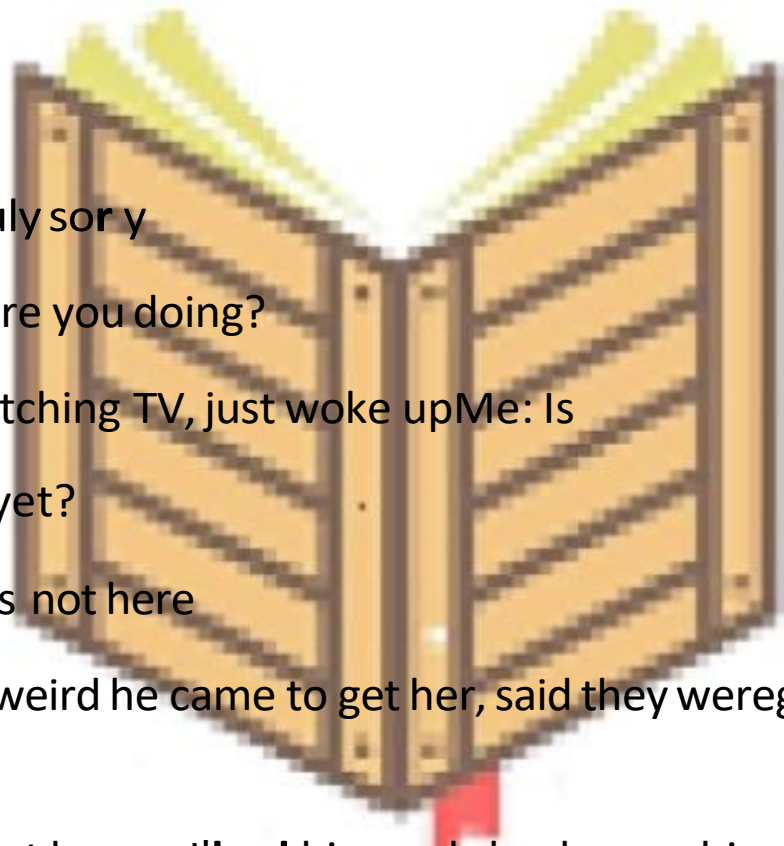
Me: Is he there yet?

Him: No he's not here

Me: That's weird he came to get her, said they were going out for a drive

Him: He's not here... I'll call him and check up on him

Me: Okay



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I love you so much, can't wait to see you walk down the aisle tomorrow

Me: I love you too

Him: Get some sleep then Me:

You too

He hung up.. At least he called, that was better..

SANDISIWE

I don't even know for how long Sole left me in here. I had left my phone in the car for me to check the time or even call someone. Though I was wearing a hoodie, his favorite hoodie that I took when I went to Nongcebo's place just to have it with me in case I got separation anxiety. It didn't warm me enough. Something about this place that is very cold and unsettling. I couldn't even feel my fingers nor my toes. They were freezing, the sounds I heard sent a shiver down my spine. My ankle was aching, and my tears had dried up from all the crying. I was

hugging my legs, as fear took over. My heart was beating so fast I thought I was going to have a heart attack. I sang this other song that my Mother and I used to sing..

Me: "Hail Mary.. (Ohh Mary don't you weep)

Tel Martha not to mourn (Martha don't you moan)

Pharaoh's army....

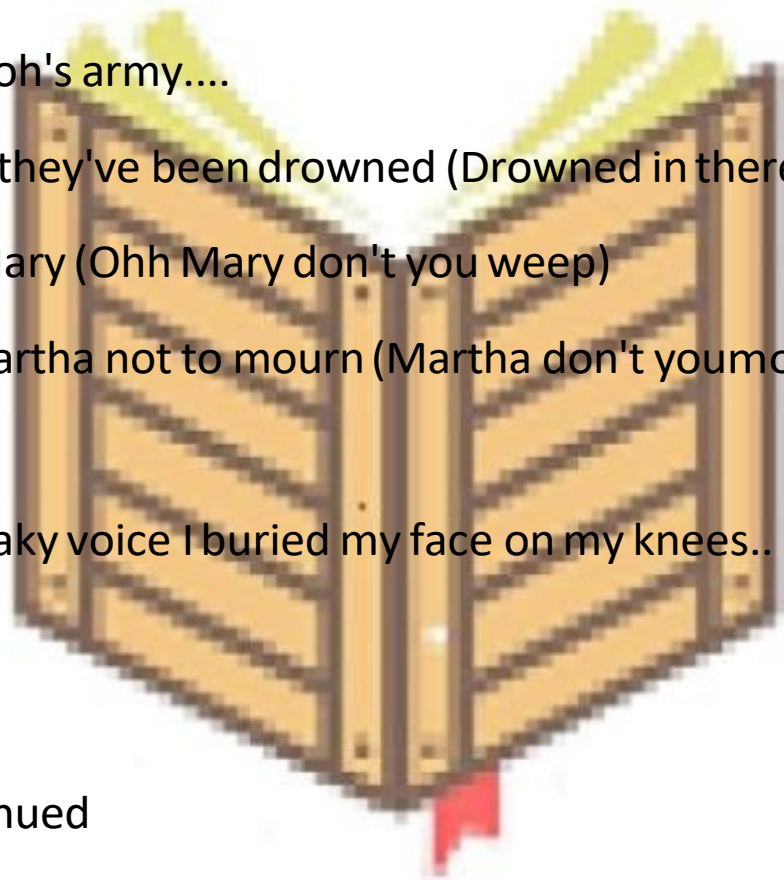
Know they've been drowned (Drowned in the red sea)

Hail Mary (Ohh Mary don't you weep)

Tel Martha not to mourn (Martha don't you mourn)

With my shaky voice I buried my face on my knees..

To be continued



NOVELSGURU.COM

Follow up insert coming later on [08/

24, 13:19] : 57

SATURDAY MORNING

KELSO

Neli woke up early and bathe, then she asked me to drive her to her place. It's my wedding day and I could easily refuse but it's the least that I could do, especially after what happened last night.. She was dead quiet in the car, I also didn't know what to say. I had taken it too far, I still don't know what really happened...

Me: I would like to take you out sometime, just to fix what happened last night

Neli: Please stay away from me, don't call me. In fact delete my number! I've had rough sex before and how you fucked me really doesn't get to me but

NOVELSGURU.COM

what gets to me is that you choked me until I almost passed out. I could've died!

Me: I know.. I'm sorry

Neli: You really got some issues that you need to fix, I feel sorry for your girlfriend. You sick!

Me: Excuse you?

She kept quiet. I pulled over..

Me: I think you can walk to your place from here
Her: I'm still far

Me: Yeah I don't care! She laughed..

Her: This is why I fuck with Men, I really have to stay away from boys with tantrums

I pulled her by her weave..

Me: This can turn very messy for you right now

I could see that she had a lot to say but for whatever reason, she kept it to herself..

I let go of her weave, she took her bag and then got



out. She banged the door and stood at the other side probably about to hike..

SANDISIWE

The sharp pain and burning sensation that arose from my ankle was the reason why I opened my eyes. Though everything appeared blurry at first but I saw some woman sitting on a chair with her legs crossed. I closed my eyes again and opened them trying to make sense of everything..

Her: Good morning

I didn't say anything..

Her: If you wondering where you are, you at the hospital

I searched deep within my brain to come back with memories of what happened last night, I immediately freaked out. I rose my head up from the pillow, my body was aching

Her: Slowly my Dearest

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Who.. Who..

I cleared my throat..Me:

Who are you?

Her: My name is WilsoniaMe:

How did I get here?

Her: Let's be thankful you hereMy
throat was painful..

Me: Nongcebo's wedding

Her: Unfortunately you won't be able to attend the wedding, not
in your state

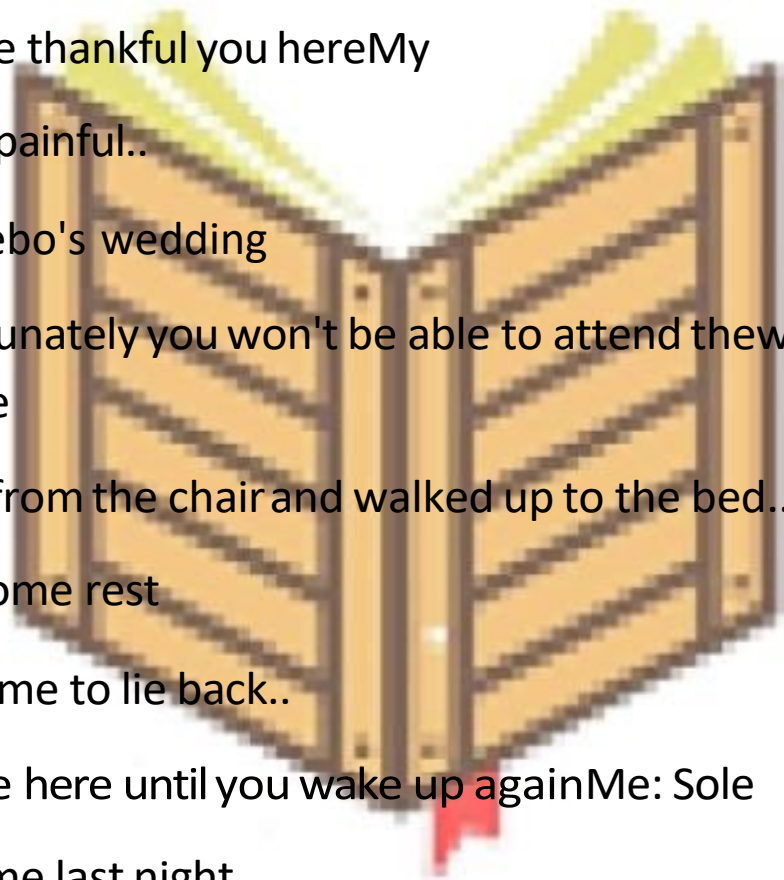
She got up from the chair and walked up to the bed..Her: Now..
Try to get some rest

She helped me to lie back..

Her: I will be here until you wake up againMe: Sole
tried to kill me last night

Her: That's not true

Me: He took me to the cemetery



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: That's not possible, it's all in your head
Me: He made me jump in a grave hole

She shook her head..

Her: That's not true Dearest. You drank yourself too much that you passed out, these are the effects of a terrible hangover

I shook my head..

Her: If you keep on with that statement I will have to declare you mentally unfit

She put her hand on my tummy..

Her: You won't be eligible to take care of the baby, pre natal stress that's why you constantly putting the baby in harm's way. You have a drinking problem

Me: I don't have a drinking problem

Her: The toxicology report will confirm that you had ethanol in your system, your friends will confirm that you were drinking last night. So I told me that you even attacked one of your friends

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It's not like that

Her: That's not what she told him She put her hand on my forehead..

Her: You got drunk last night, Sole fetched you to take you home and you got into an argument with him which resulted to you getting out of a fast moving car. Hence why you here and the reason why you have a sprained ankle. You put yourself indanger and the baby in danger

Me: What are you?

Her: I'm a clinical psychologist and you have prenatal stress but don't worry we will get through this.. All in good time

NONGCEBO

"K'dala Ndilindile, to say How much i Love you, I got this message for you ndithi "I Do Ng'yavuma I"

K'dala Ndilindile, Nhliziyo yami yonke

NOVELSGURU.COM

I got this message for you ndithi " I Do Ng'yavuma i" I Do
Ng'yavuma I Do, I Do Ng'yavuma I"

The song was playing as Kelso's Aunties sang outside. I
looked at myself in the mirror, tears streamed down.
This was happening, this long anticipated day was finally
here.

Mandisa put her hands on my shoulders..Her: Are
you okay?

I nodded with a smile whilst wiping my tears.Me: I'm
fine

Her: Heard from Sandisiwe?Me:

No.. Not yet

Her: The makeup artist will be here in a few minutesMe: Okay
thank you

We heard a knock at the door..Mandisa I'll get
it..

Me: Thank you



NOVELSGURU.COM

I had a good feeling that this day might actually go well, Ever since I drank pain killers in the early hours of this morning. I haven't felt any cramps and my flow wasn't heavy. I looked at the candles, they were almost burning out. I smiled. I am really fortunate to have Kelso's Grandmother. I woke up at 4am to pray again and I've been awake ever since..

Mandisa: Sole is here

I got up and tied my gown, I went to the door..Him:

Good morning

Me: Hey

Him: How are you feeling?Me:

Nervous and excited He nodded with a smile..

Me: Where is Sandi?

Him: At the hospitalMe:

What?

Him: Ya as we went out for the drive, we got into an argument about drinking then she opened the door



NOVELSGURU.COM

and got out

Me: My word! I hope she's not badly hurt

Him: just a sprained ankle, she'll be fine

Me: This is why I don't like alcohol

Him: I'm sorry that she attacked you

Me: It's okay.. So long she's fine

Him: Oh well I'm actually here to drop this off, it's from Kelso

I took the small box..

Me: Thank you

Him: See you later

Me: Thank you

Sole Him: Bye
I walked over and opened the box, it was a wedding gutter and a card. I smiled and took the card and read it:

"Remember that song I sent you on whatsapp last night and said don't play it as yet, if you reading this

then I would like you to play it. I need that assurance before you decide to walk down the aisle"

I went and got my phone, I sat down and started playing the song:

"Girl...It's easy to love me now

Would you love me if I was down and out? Would you still have love for me?

Girl...It's easy to love me now

Would you love me if I was down and out? Would you still have love for me? Girl..."

Mandisa: We have to get ready

Me: Give me a moment

I continued listening to the song:

" Now would you leave me if you're father found out I was thuggin'?

Do you believe me when I tell you, you the one I'm loving?



Are you mad 'cause I'm asking you 21 questions?
Are you my soulmate? 'Cause if so, girl you ablessing
Do you trust me enough, to tel me your dreams?
I'm staring at ya' trying to figure how you got inthem jeans
If I was down would you say things to make mesmile?
I treat you how you want to be treated just teach mehow
If I was with some other chick and someonehappened
to see
And when you asked me about it I said it wasn't meWould you
believe me? Orup and leave me?
How deep is ourlove if that's al it takes foryou tobe gone?
We only human girls we make mistakes,To make
it up I do whatever it take



NOVELSGURU.COM

I love you like a fat kid love cake

You know my style I say anything to make you smile"

I found myself laughing uncontrollably, I listened to it until it finished. Then I texted him:

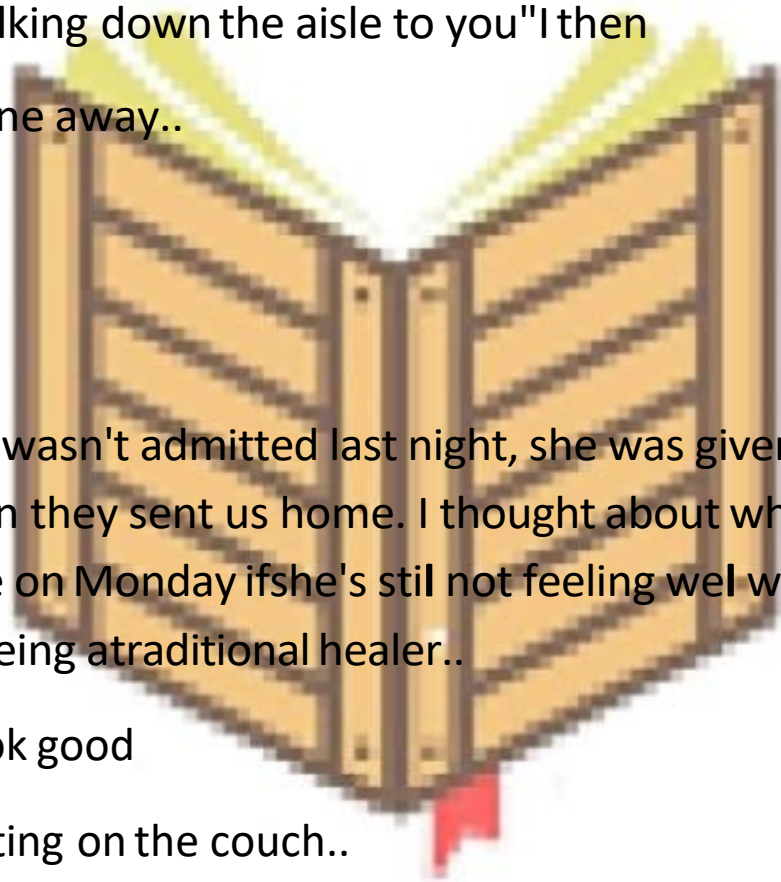
"I will be walking down the aisle to you" I then put my phone away..

BANZA

My mother wasn't admitted last night, she was given pain killers and then they sent us home. I thought about what Sasa said, maybe on Monday if she's still not feeling well we will consider seeing a traditional healer..

Ma: You look good

She was sitting on the couch..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Thank you

Her: Yazi at some point I thought that you and Nongcebo were going to date

Me: We just good friends, she's happy with Kelso and I'm happy with my life

She nodded..

Me: How are you feeling? Her:

Hai what can I say?

Me: I'll see you later on, I won't stay for that long

Her: Go and enjoy yourself, your father is here.. I'll be fine

I went and kissed her on her cheek.. Me: I'll

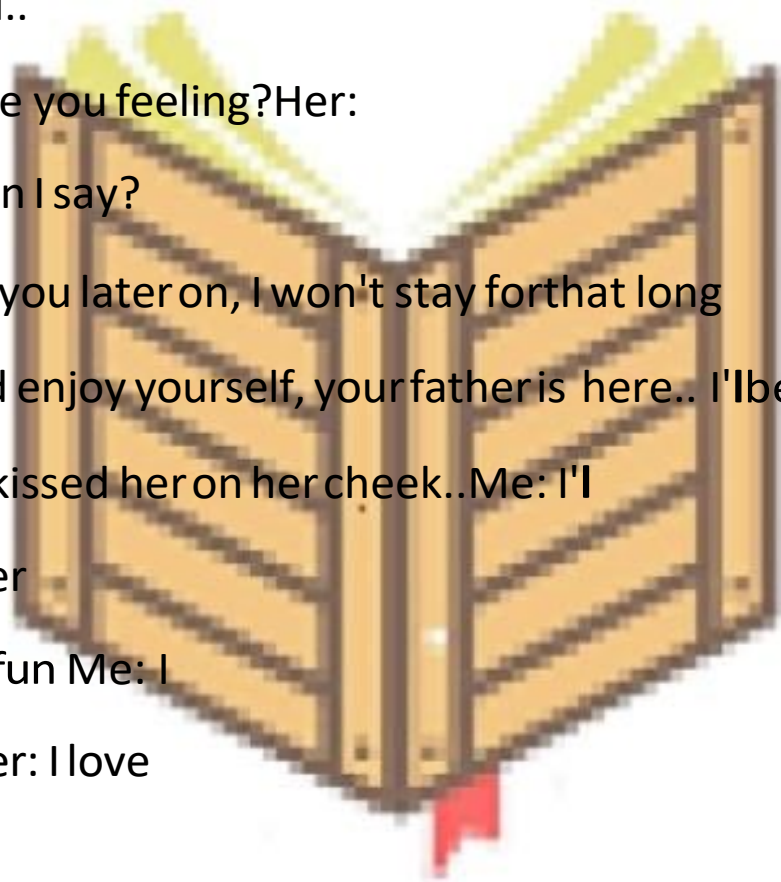
see you later

Her: Have fun Me: I

love you Her: I love

you too

I left the house to go and fetch Sasa..



KELSO

I went and opened the door, Siya walked in with the suits..

Him: Good morning Me:

Morning

Him: I think I am right on time Me:

Yes you are

Him: Shall we? Me:

Uhm Yes

We walked into the lounge.. Him:

Where is your friend? Me: He's

on his way

He put everything on the couch..

Him: I forgot my makeup kit, let me go get it in my car

Me: Is makeup necessary?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Makeup is very necessary Love, don't want you sweating since it's promising to be hot

I sat on the armrest of the couch..

Me: I don't know how to feel about that

Him: I'm not putting mascara on you so relax Me: Fine

do what you have to do

He smiled and walked out.. Him:

I'll be right back

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Dj Phila Mosia, please click the link below to download his song. Your support will greatly be appreciated

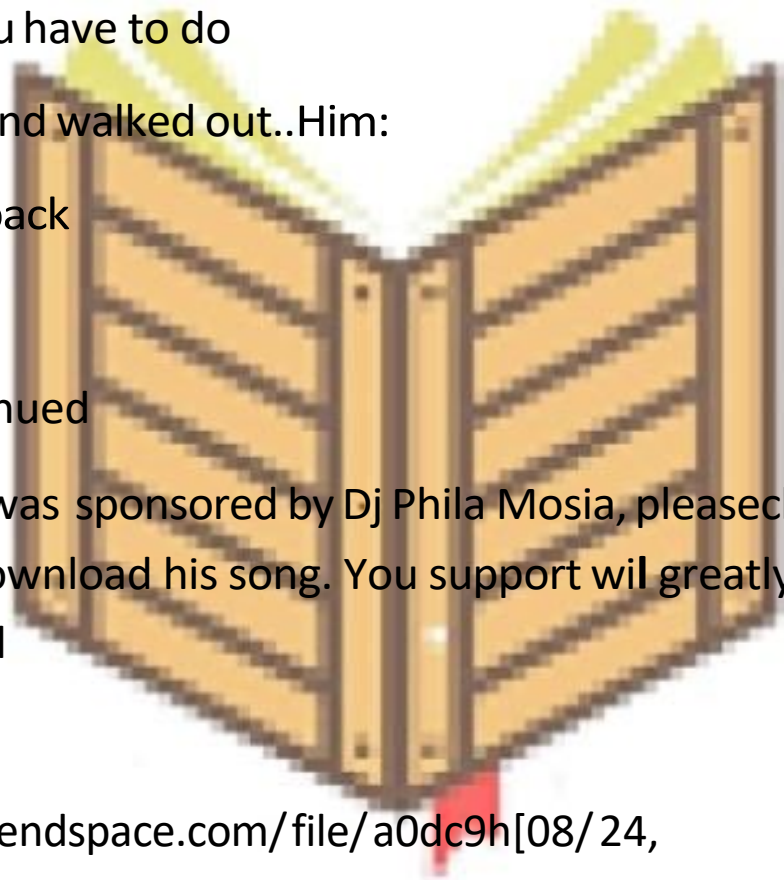
[https://m.sendspace.com/file/a0dc9h\[08/24,](https://m.sendspace.com/file/a0dc9h[08/24,)

13:19]

:58

NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO



I have never been this nervous in my whole entire life before. Walking out of the house in my white wedding dress with a bouquet of flowers in my hands, having Nessi, Bongeka, and Mandisa behind me validated my reality. I was about to be certified a wife, someone's wife which was out of my free will. No gun pointed at me, no threats, just coming out deep from my heart. I was stunned at the neighbours crowding the gate as I was ushered to the hired white G-Wagon that was going to drive me and my bride's maids to the destination. About 7 Mercedes Benz Marco Polos were parked behind the G-Wagon to drive the family and close friends with me to the church. We strictly sticking to the guest list. Kelso really went out to making sure that this day becomes the best day for me, and very memorable. I tried to fight back my tears, these people didn't even know me but they seemed joyful to witness such. I haven't lived here long enough for them to know me that well, but they seemed happy for me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

A while back I was in an abusive relationship, one that I never thought I was going to get out of.

Everyday I thought about my death, I saw myself walking out in a coffin but God changed my situation around. He came through for me when I least expected and gave me a partner that was worth my love.

Seeing Kelso's Grandmother tearing up, gave me all the blessings I needed for our union.

The door was opened for me and I got in, my Bride's maids got in too. Bongeka and Nessi were sitting with me at the back whilst Mandisa sat at the front. The singing got to me too.. They were singing "Ntante Nthekele Saenamarela", Aunt Ntombela even had a broom and was busy sweeping on the street with another Aunt saying she's chasing witches away. She's a character that one..

She stayed behind because they were preparing for the traditional part of the wedding tomorrow. I won't be coming back here today, everything of mine that

I would need for tomorrow was taken to a guest house. My bride's maids and I are going to spend the night there, then tomorrow Kelso's family will be welcoming me into their home.

A tent will be erected later on, I think the traditional part of it is going to be big I feel everyone in the hood is going to come out to witness the most notorious guy in their hood getting married..

Bongeka wiped my tears, thank God for the water proof mascara or I'll be looking a mess. So sad that Sandisiwe won't be around, I hope she's recovering well ...

KELSO

We were at the garden of the guest house where the wedding was going to take place. We won't be moving around as one of the dining halls will be our reception and the garden was beautiful enough to take pictures. There was even a damn not far ahead. Sole was standing behind me, Stal ion is

NOVELSGURU.COM

definitely going to miss the wedding. I didn't care though, I don't need his bitch ass here. Two of my old time friends stood behind me too, just next to Sole..

Not a lot of guests were here, we were waiting for them as they were coming with Nongcebo. Only those with cars were here.

I looked around and Banza made his way in with Sasa, he was holding her hand. My mood instantly changed. I clenched my jaw

Sole put his hand on my shoulder to calm me down...

SANDISIWE

Dr: Drinking whilst pregnant is not good, it can result to a lot of things. One being a miscarriage

Me: Is my baby going to be fine?

Dr: Only time will tell but so far, you only spotting which is not unusual since you are in your first

NOVELSGURU.COM

trimester. He pulled the chair and sat down..

Dr: Did you really get off from a fast moving car? I swallowed..

Dr: I would expect serious injuries if that was the case

I looked at Wilsonia, she was standing at the corner of the room. She put her finger against her lips instructing me to keep quiet.

Dr: You can talk to me

Me: I was drunk last night and yes I did get out of the car following an argument between me and my boyfriend

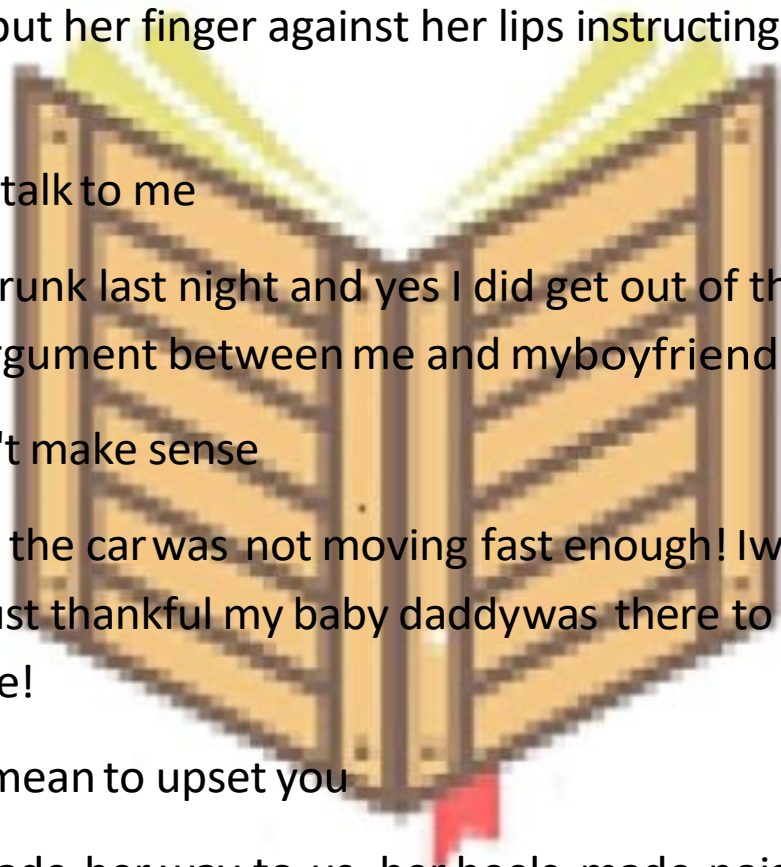
Dr: It doesn't make sense

Me: Maybe the car was not moving fast enough! I was drunk okay? I'm just thankful my baby daddy was there to drive me here on time!

Dr: I didn't mean to upset you

Wilsonia made her way to us, her heels made noise.. Wilsonia:

It's not your fault Dr, but please know that



my patient is going to prenatal stress. She doesn't need all of this right now

Dr: I understand.. I'll have to keep her here for a while just to monitor the pregnancy. The first trimester is really critical

Wilsonia: I understand and I'll be here everyday, she will have sessions everyday

The Dr smiled..

Dr: Wilsonia comes highly recommended, you in good hands

Wilsonia: Ohh Doc please no need to praise me I'm just doing my job

Dr: I will leave you to rest, I'll come and check up on you later

He got up and walked out. Wilsonia walked up to me and put her hand on my shoulder. She leaned over and whispered in my ear..

Wilsonia: Good girl

NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

At least the guest house was not that far, it was a 45min drive orso. The guests walked in first as we remained in the car. I kept on praying silently, I don'twant anything ruining this day.. I heard someone knocking at my window, it was Gertrude.. She opened the door

Me: You made it!

Her: Of course I made it

She helped me get out of the car.. Her: Look at you.. You look beautifulMe: Thank you..

I'm glad you here Her: I'm glad too

Me: Can I ask you fora favour?Her:

Yes of course

Me: Please walk me down the Aisle?Her eyes widened..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I know it's awkward but..

Her: I'd love to walk you down the aisle!

smiled..

Her: Let's go

We walked in and waited first for my bride's maids to go in first. Mandisa and Nessi walked in, Bongeka is going to walk in with us and throw white roses on the carpet.

We waited for everyone to settle down after the bride's maids have walked in. I waited for the song that was supposed to play as I walk down the aisle, not the old traditional "Here comes the bride). I had requested a different song..

The song started playing, I looked at Gertrude.. Me: That's the song

Her: Are you ready?!

noded..

She smiled and I put my hand under her arm, then we walked as the song played..

NOVELSGURU.COM

"Candy Star, Silver Moon, Cherry Rain, Summer
June, Chocolate me, Caramel you, My lucky charms
what you are

Caramel, Candycane, Sweeter than Sugar canelove it
when you call my name

Lucky Charm is what you are"

Everyone stood up as we made our way in, at first Kelso smiled at me but suddenly the smile disappeared. He looked like he was seeing a ghost or something, on the other hand Gertrude seemed stiff too. She was really faking her smile as she looked at Kelso

As we approached Kelso, some of her family members called out "Haibo! Yisimanga!"

Grams looked like she was ready to have a heart attack

Gertrude handed me to Kelso as they looked at each other, then her and Bongeka went and took

their seats. Kelso was still focused on her, I put my hand on his chin and made him to look at me. He did, but kept on going back to Gertrude. The Pastor instructed everyone to sit down and the music stopped playing, I saw Nessi and Mandisa walking Grams out. She didn't look good..

Pastor: I would like to greet everyone in the name of our Lord and saviour Jesus Christ. Please let's bow our heads and say a short prayer

We bowed our heads as he prayed.. Pastor:

Amen

Al : Amen

Pastor: We are here to witness the holy matrimony of Ms Nongcebo Khumalo, and Mr Kelso Bhembe. We invite our Lord to strengthen and bind this union. What the Lord has binded together, let no Man break.

Kelso looked really handsome..

Pastor: Do you Kelso Bhembe take Nongcebo Khumalo to be your wedded wife?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: I do

Pastor: Do you Nongcebo Khumalo take KelsoBhembe to be yourwedded husband?

Me: I do

Pastor: The rings pleaseSole

brought the rings..

He instructed Kelso to take the ring.Pastor:

Repeat after me

They handed him the mic..

Pastor: With this ring Kelso:

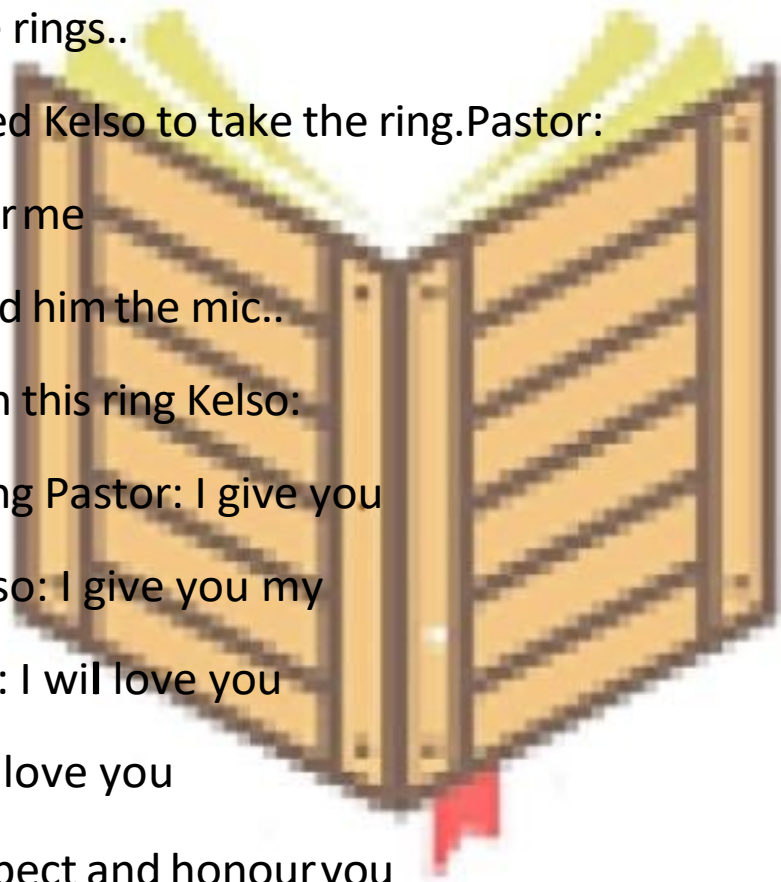
With this ring Pastor: I give you
my loveKelso: I give you my

love Pastor: I wil love you

Kelso: I wil love you

Pastor: Respect and honour you

Kelso: Respect and honour you



Pastor: Love you in sickness and in health Kelso:

Love you in sickness and in health Pastor:

For better for worse

Kelso: For better for worse Pastor:

Until death do us apart Kelso: Until

death do us apart Kelso slid in the

ring..

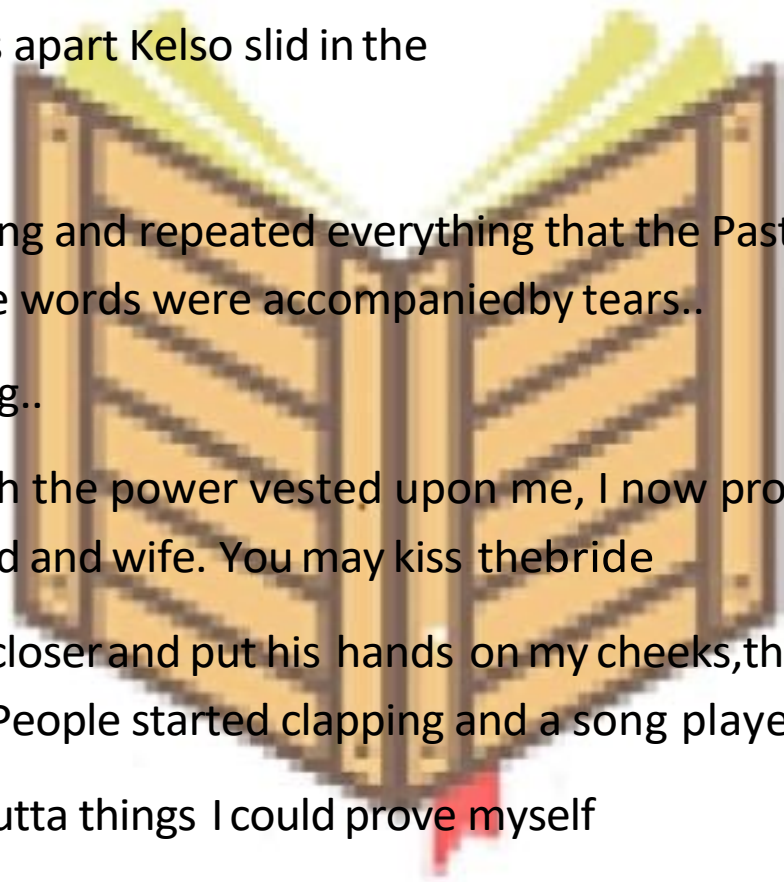
I took the ring and repeated everything that the Pastor said, with me the words were accompanied by tears..

I slid the ring..

Pastor: With the power vested upon me, I now pronounce you husband and wife. You may kiss the bride

He walked closer and put his hands on my cheeks, then he kissed me. People started clapping and a song played..

"Running outta things I could prove myself



NOVELSGURU.COM

Way too busy winning I'ma lose myself Everyday

they gon' hate on us

Mama said she gon' pray for us 'Cause I

can't do it on my own

You're that girlie, special somebody I know You

beside me turn this house into a home Give me one

good reason why ungenza so Yoh yoh yoh yoh"

He smiled at me whilst wiping my tears.. Kelso: I

love you soo much Mrs KB

Me: I love you too (smiling)

.

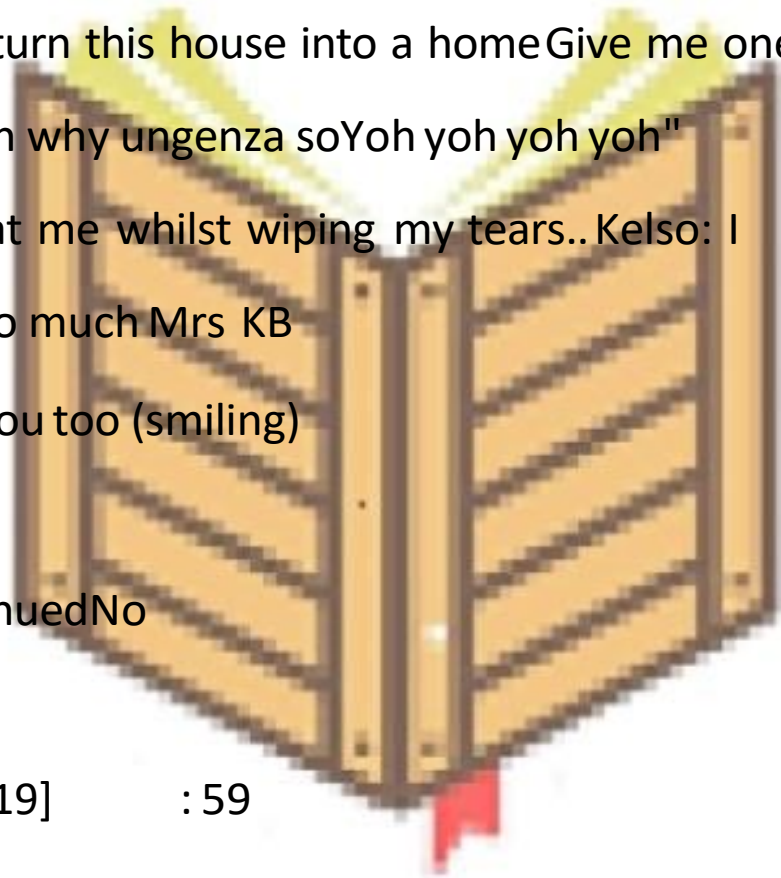
To be continued No

edits

[08/24, 13:19] : 59

SOLE

NOVELSGURU.COM



I didn't attend the reception, had to dash out to see how Sandi was doing. I stopped by at Wilsonia's office first. The door was open, I leaned against the doorframe carefully looking at her. She was sitting at the table with her legs crossed. Her skirt was high up revealing her thick thighs, she didn't button her shirt all the way up. She fixed her glasses and continued with what she was doing. Her hair neatly tied back, not even a single strand on her face..

Her: You can come in Sole

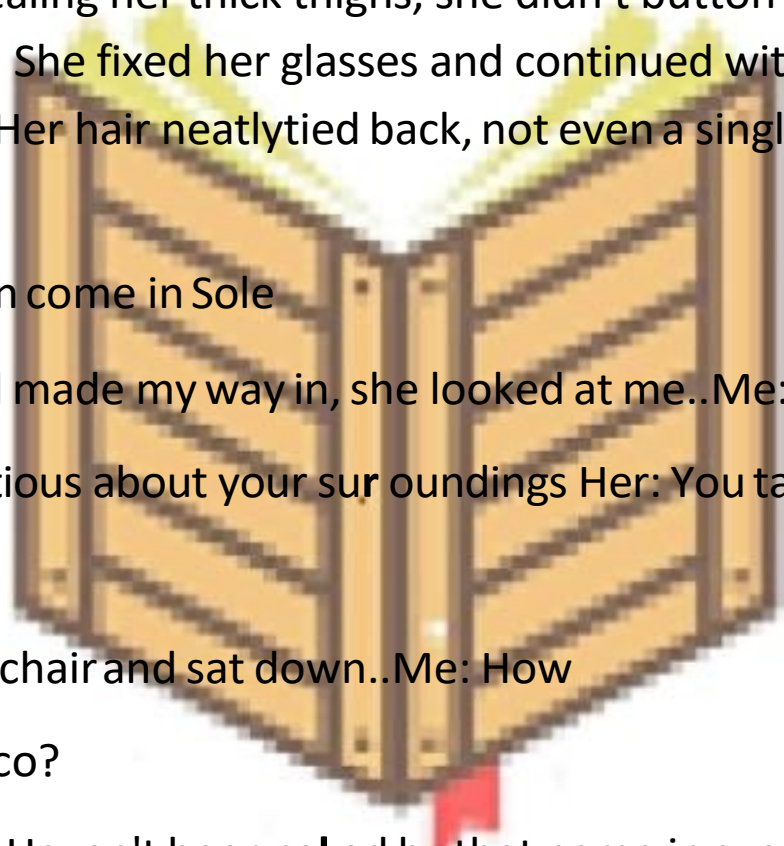
I smiled and made my way in, she looked at me..Me:

Always cautious about your surroundings Her: You taught me well

I pulled the chair and sat down..Me: How did it go Coco?

Her: Wow.. Haven't been called by that name in a very long time

Me: How did it go?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Went well but the car story almost fucked you over.. You could've bruised here and there

Me: I don't put my hands on a woman Her: I

know... I'm just saying

I took the picture and looked at him..

(Silence)

Her: He turned 5 last week I put

the picture back..

Her: He's starting to ask questions about his Father Me: What do you tell him?

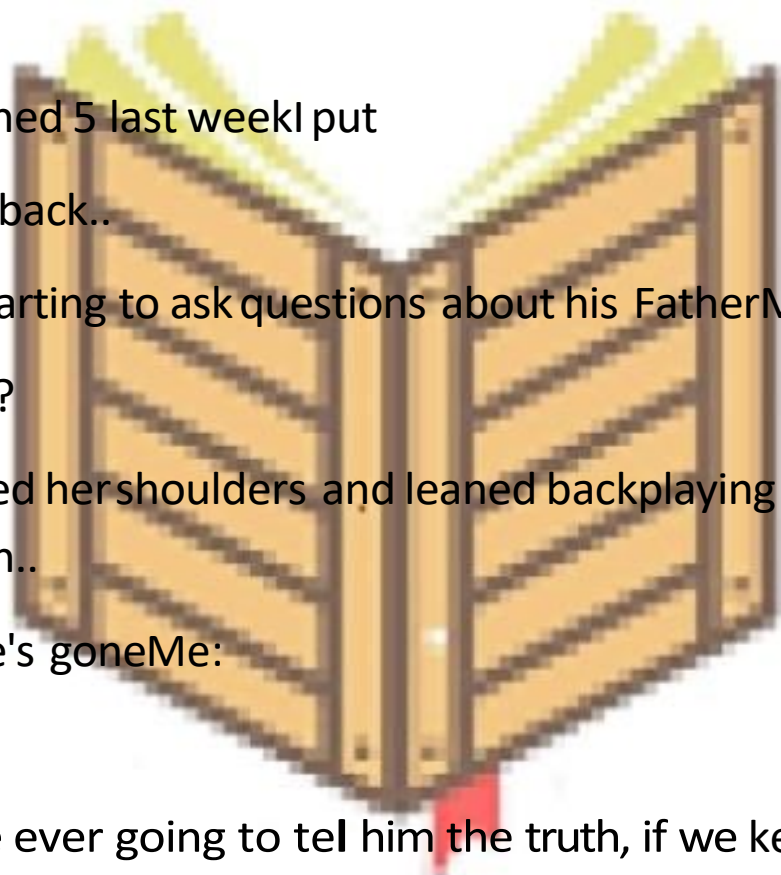
She shrugged her shoulders and leaned back playing with the pen..

Her: That he's gone Me:

I see

Her: Are we ever going to tell him the truth, if we keep the "Your father ran away" story he's going to grow up resenting you

Me: How about you tell him that I'm dead?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I'm not going to do that.. Are you insane?She
leaned over biting her lower lip..

Her: I don't understand why you can't be there for him, don't
give me excuses that you have a lot of enemies and you trying
to keep him safe whilst it looks like Sandi, you going to be
there for her Baby

Me: With Sandi it's differentHer:

How?

Me: I fel in love

She bit her lower lip more whilst nodding..Her:

Ward 5A

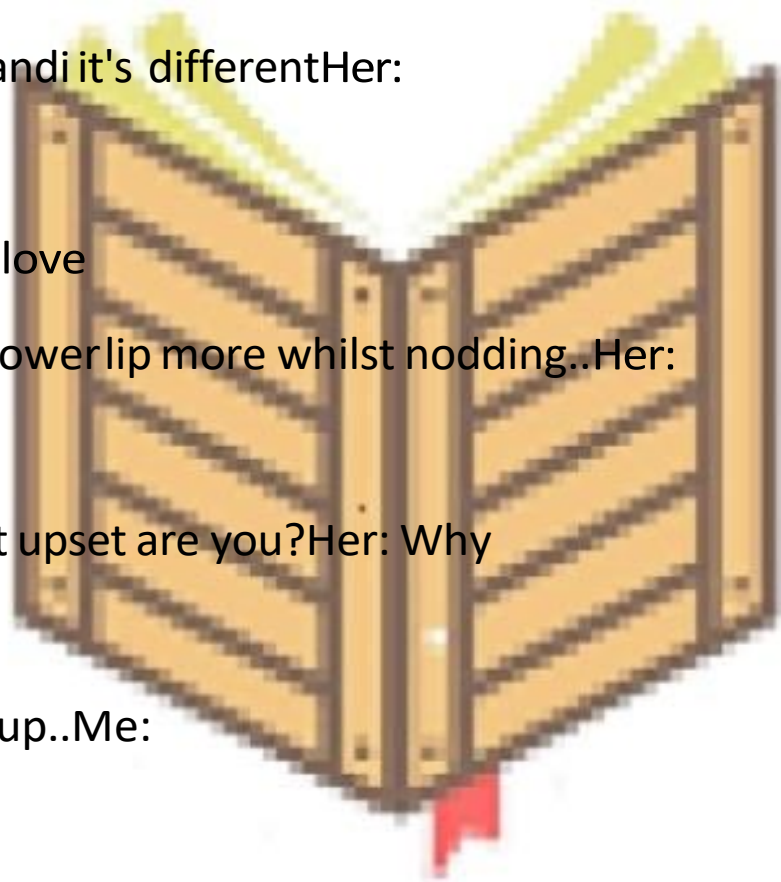
Me: You not upset are you?Her: Why
should I?

I slowly got up..Me:

Good!

Her: I just don't know why I'm doing you this favour,when I'm
getting nothing in return!

Me: Coco come on don't do this! It's been years, I'm



not going to fuck you

She licked the corner of her mouth and wiped it with her thumb..

Her: I'm going to say this as calmly as I can.. Get.Over. Yourself... I don't want your dick!

Me: What do you want?

Her: I want you to have a relationship with your Son
Me: I'll think about it

Her: Yeah you think about it!
Me: Is that a threat?

Her: I know better than to threaten you
Me: I hope so

Her: Close the door on your way out
She put her leg on the table..

She opened the drawer and took out a vibrator..
Her: Self service

I shook my head and walked out closing the door..



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Kelso and I decided to get married out of community of property. You leave with what's yours should you consider a divorce. I think it's fair for both of us, we only in it for love..

After taking pictures we joined everyone else at the reception. Drinks and appetizers were served first as people took turns with speeches, it was sad that Grams had to be rushed to the hospital. Gertrude stood up and took the mic, that drained the life out of Kelso's eyes..

Gertrude: I am not going to be long but.. She looked at us..

Her: Nongcebo and I we've known each other for a short period of time but I've grown to love her like a Daughter. She's a wonderful person, always smiling and very calm. Kelso you blessed to have a woman like her in your life, I hope you always remember

that.

She raised her glass..

Her: To my Son and my Daughter in law

Those who didn't know what was happening raised their glasses, I was shocked. I'm sure a fly could've easily made it into my mouth because my jaw dropped down to the floor

Her: Yes Kelso is my Son, he is my second born and though I've missed a lot in his life. I wouldn't have missed this memorable day.

She looked at him.. Her: I

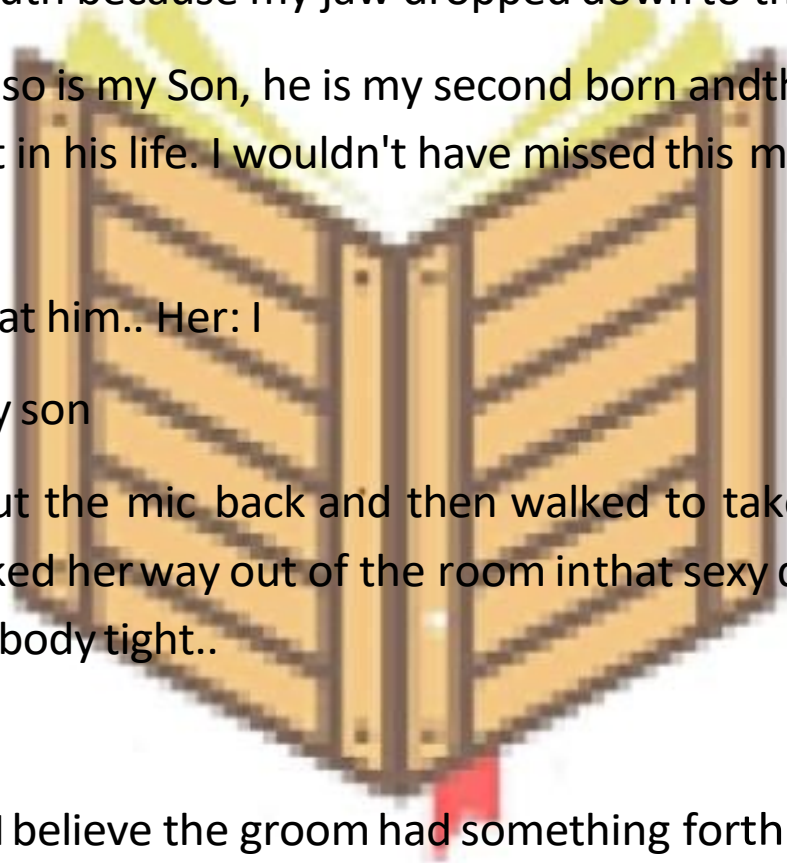
love you my son

She then put the mic back and then walked to take her bag, she catwalked her way out of the room in that sexy dress that hugged her body tight..

(Silence)

MC: Uhm.. I believe the groom had something for the bride

Kelso slowly got up, took off his suit jacket and



NOVELSGURU.COM

walked down to the MC. He took the Mic and looked at the guitarist..

He cleared his throat and started singing as the guitarist started playing..

Kelso: Mrs Me

He cleared his throat..

Kelso: "I'll say I dig you when it's deep enough to bury me
Still, then it be deep enough for you, but you still married me

Kill, anybody that takes away your happiness still, real,
if that is me then I am hanging me

Coz you deserve to smile, not a frown should stay on your face

I haven't made it if I haven't made your day

I'm not a rider till I've learned to drive your pain away

Now get us to heaven alive with your angel Waze"

NOVELSGURU.COM

I literally put my hands on my face as he continued with everyone cheering him..

Him: Sometimes you'll scream that you hate me when I know you don't, it's okay

I fucked up so much I'm still surprised you don't. What's your plan?

To love me forever like you promised in, and never break that promise even though I didn't hesitate..

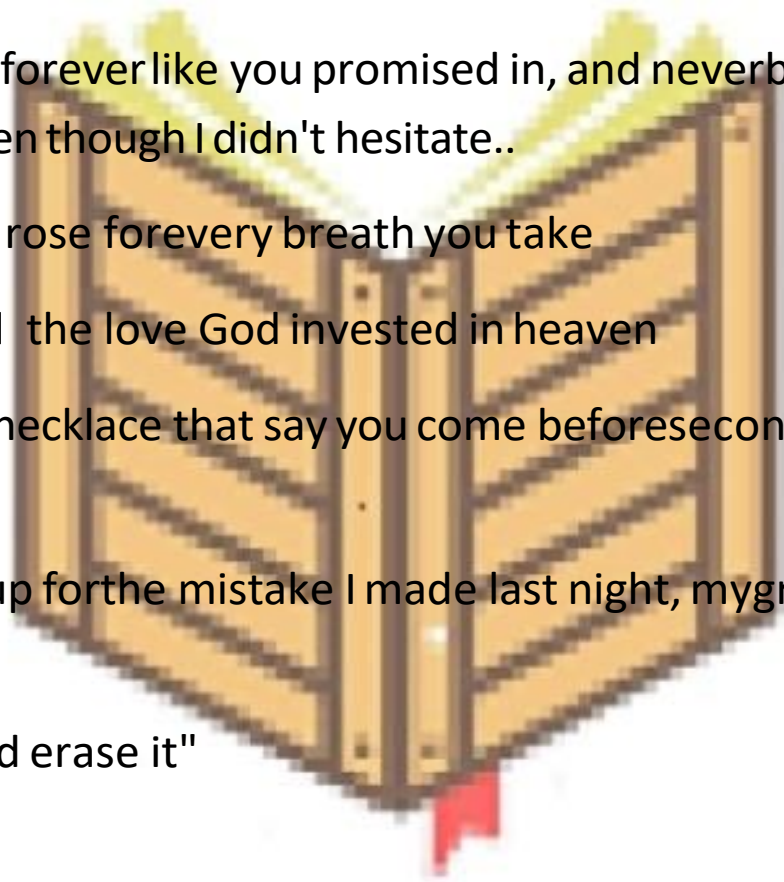
I owe you a rose for every breath you take

I owe you all the love God invested in heaven

And then a necklace that says you come before second place

And make up for the mistake I made last night, my greatest mistake

I wish I could erase it"



SANDISIWE

NOVELSGURU.COM

The last thing I remember was crying, think I cried myself to sleep. I know I fucked up, and all that I was looking for was for God to protect my baby, that's all .. I woke up to Sole sitting on the chair. His elbows were balancing on his knees as his body leaned forward. He was calm as always and looking at me..

Him: How are you feeling?

I got up and sat up straight..

Him: I left the wedding early to see how you were doing

Me: You took me to the cemetery He

shook his head..

Me: You made me jump into that dark hole..Sole:

No..

Me: You left me there for hours and didn't care if I lived or die!! You did that, you did that to me!!

Him: You jumped out of a moving car Me: I

didn't.. You know it and I know it!

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Sweetheart you jumped out of a moving car I shook my head with tears in my eyes..

Him: You were drunk, and we had an argument, you became aggressive and you opened the door.. I tried to stop you but I couldn't keep steady on the wheel and pulling you back inside

Me: You lying! .. You lying (crying)

Him: I'm not lying... That's what happened

He got up from the chair and walked up to me.. Me: You did that to me.. You did that (crying)

He tried holding me and I started hitting him on his chest..

Him: I did nothing like that

He held my hands tight and rested my head on him..

Him: I did nothing like that, when did I ever hurt you? Why would I start now?

Me: You did it Sole.. You know you did it (crying) Him: I'd

never put you or our child in that kind of

danger... That never happened sweetheart, it's all in your head

NONGCEBO

We were now on the dance floor dancing..Kelso:

"Heaven must be missin' an angel Missin' one
angel, child

'Cause you're here with me right now Your
love is heavenly, baby Heavenly to me,
baby"

He had his arm tight around my waist..

Me: You come with a lot of surprises Mr KBHe
looked at me..

Him: You have no ideaHe
kissed me..

Banza walked up to us..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Banza: May I?

Kelso looked at him, then he looked at me..

I nodded. Kelso let go then he bumped into Banza as he went to dance with Banza's date, Banza laughed..

Banza: Typical

Banza held me..

Banza: He still doesn't like me
Me: You

know how he is
Kelso: Eita.. Askies?

Banza looked at him..

Kelso: Your grip is too tight and very low keep your hand where I can see it

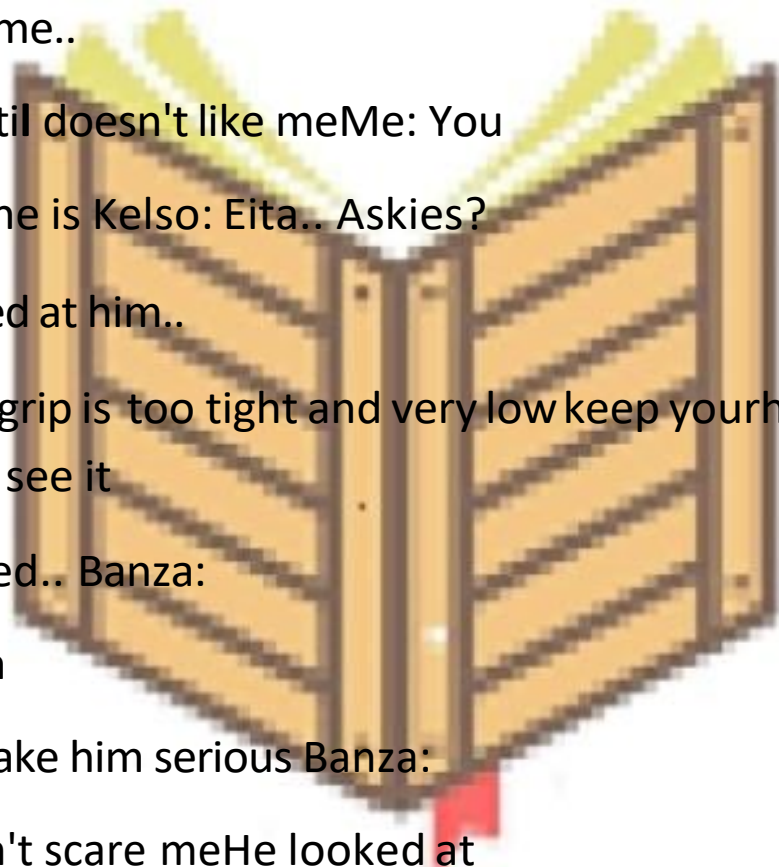
Banza smiled.. Banza:

No problem

Me: Don't take him serious
Banza:

Kelso doesn't scare me
He looked at

me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Banza: You look beautiful

Me: Thank you.. I'm glad you came Banza:

Wouldn't miss it for the world Me: So I see

you came with someone Banza: She's a very

nice person

Me: So long she treats you well I'm good Kelso

walked up to us..

Kelso: Alright.. Tsek kancance nje

He pushed Banza away from me, Banza walked back to his partner..

Me: That was uncalled for though Kelso:

That was very called for

He kissed me on my forehead as I rested my head on his chest..

Him: I love you Me: I

love you too

NOVELSGURU.COM

.

To be true

This insert was sponsored by Olwethu. She is asking for support in her business. Please click on the link below to find out more and inbox if you are interested

<https://m.facebook.com/groups/182175863176458/permalink/191384352255609/?app=fbl&refid=12>

[08/24, 13:20] : 60

WILSONIA (COCO)

Dating back on my history with Sole, he was one of my patients. He had been transferred to me by his psychiatrist with a "rare mental disorder", one that is very dangerous but advantageous to him. Sole is good with Manipulation, I've always pride myself to be a good psychologist until I met him. Made me question my knowledge and my degree, It's hard breaking through to him. He sat on my chair every week and knew exactly what the session was going

NOVELSGURU.COM

to be about and what I was going to say before Leven said it..

Insane as it, I was very taken by him. How smart he is, charming, handsome, his cunning smile, the calmness in his voice, how he walks into the room and actually owns it. I wondered how the sex would be and it was exactly as how I imagined it. The fact that I was older than him didn't intimidate him sexually. How he would fuck me on my desk as I was on the phone, or on the couch as we went through the session. I knew what orgasm is with him, he made my husband look sexually weak. Sole was loving, warm, he is a good listener and knows the right things to say. Unfortunately when I was falling deep he didn't catch me. See he is very focused, he would string you along but if he doesn't love you he doesn't love you. He won't force it, and he won't wake tomorrow and change his mind..

For the life of me I don't know how this Sandisiwe little girl was able to make him fall in love with her, what did she do? It's hard to make Sole fall in love

with you. I kept the pregnancy on purpose, filed for divorce and thought that we would give us a chance but he never budged. Years later I get a call from him asking me for help, here I am in this office compromising my career that I worked hard for to please him. That phone call changed everything, it brought back memories and the chemistry from my side.

I wonder if he fucks her exactly as how he fucked me, the thought of it made me to sink my vibrator deeper and deeper. The sad part is that it will never come close to how his dick felt deep inside of me.. Damn you Sole, you a virus that one can never find a cure for.

I squeezed that stress ball for dear life with my other hand as I sailed through those sexual memories, and an intense pleasure built up deep from within. His breath hitting my ear, his lips pressed on to mine, running my hand on his body and his hand caressing me all over. My eyes rolled back to the back of my head, it was more pleasurable when he came deep inside of me. That

part left a tattoo in my heart that I can't seem to erase.

He left a big part of him with him, and I can't kill it. I carry it everyday with me..

NONGCEBO

He removed the wedding gutter with his teeth and I couldn't help it but blush. Thank goodness the bad adour left me, or this would've been the embarrassing moment of my life. He kissed my thigh and I covered my face with my hands then he got up. I removed my hands and watched him as he threw it, Banza was the one who caught it. Funny because the bouquet of flowers was caught by his date, of which she was introduced to me as "Sasa". We all clapped our hands as they walked to each other and kissed each other. I stopped clapping and felt a bit sad or jealous rather. After kissing Banza looked at me and I looked at him.

My best friend is gone, now he's probably going to

NOVELSGURU.COM

make her his world. He smiled a little and then kissed her again, now he was just overdoing it. I rolled my eyes and turned to Kelso, he was folding his arms and looking at me. He then looked at Banza who was now looking at me, I got up from the chair and walked up to Kelso. He put his arm around my shoulders..

Kelso: Looks like Banza is in love after all faked a smile..

Me: He's a good guy, he deserves it

Kelso: You know that this is going to affect your friendship with him, his attention is going to someone else

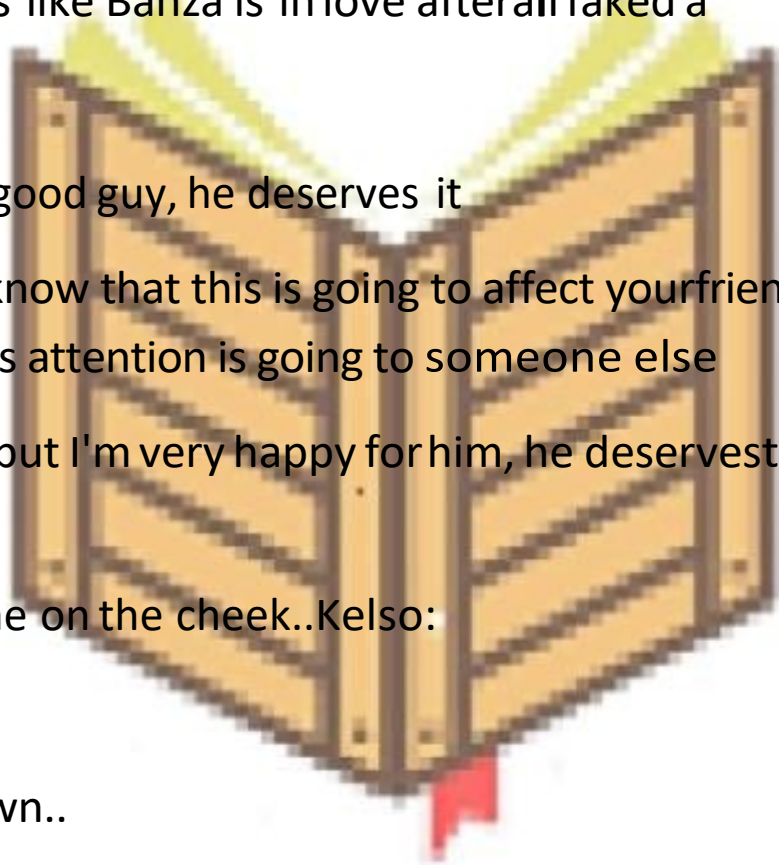
Me: I know but I'm very happy for him, he deserves to be happy

He kissed me on the cheek..Kelso:

That's true

I looked down..

Kelso: Let me go and see my Grandmother at the hospital, I'll send your love



Me: Okay

He kissed me and grabbed my ass a little..Kelso: See you later

Me: Okay

He walked away..

SANDISIWE

He was sitting on the chair again.. Sole:
I'm glad both of you are okayMe: You are
sick you need help!

Sole: Sweetheart I did not do what you accusing meof, if it was true.. How did you get out? A grave hole is very deep. If I go in I'm trapped too, we can't get out. There's no way we could climb out of that.. I didn't do it Sands, maybe you just had a nightmare orsomething

I closed my eyes.. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sole: I would never harm you like that, I would never put my baby in harm's way like that. I might be a lot of things but I'm not that heartless, especially not to a woman that I truly love

I was so confused, I didn't know what to think anymore..

Sole: Just get better and come home. Whatever it is, try to snap out of it and come back to me. I miss you so much, I miss sleeping next to you. I miss your craziness, your so not good singing every morning. Walking around in a sexy bumshort everyday or wearing one of my t-shirts

I looked at him..

Sole: I miss making love to you as if like you are the only woman in the world, I miss touching you, holding you in my eyes or listening to your heartbeat when we lay on the couch. I miss how you pout your lips when you're irritated, how you pull your weight around and how you argue with me on unnecessary issues. I miss watching you shake your booty when you're cleaning or acting crazy when

NOVELSGURU.COM

you think no one is watching. I miss your cooking, miss how you bully me into watching your boring series

I chuckled..

Him: And I miss that too... I don't know what I did and I'm hurt that you would think I would do something like that to you, but for all it's worth. I'm sorry that your nightmare created a monstrous reality for you. I don't want you to see me that way because I'm not a monster, I have never hurt or harmed anyone it's not me and it's not in my nature. I could sit here and talk all day but.. I'm sorry and I hope you will come to your senses again I'll keep my distance so that I don't make you uncomfortable. For your sanity if you want to move back to your Uncle's place it's okay with me

He sighed and he looked so sad. He got up from the chair and took his jacket..

Him: Get well

He walked away.. Me:

Wait

NOVELSGURU.COM

He stopped then turned back and looked at me..

Me: Maybe I had a lot to drink, maybe it was all effects of alcohol. Maybe it only happened in my mind, I'm sorry.. Please don't leave

He smiled at me and walked back.. Him:

Alcohol is not good sweetheart Me: I know

that now.. I'm sorry

Him: We all make mistakes, it's all forgiven, I'm just glad that both of you are okay

Me: Me too

He took off his shoes and got into the bed, I got on top of him. He ran his hands around my butt....

Me: How was the wedding?

Him: It was okay, but I didn't enjoy it. Was thinking about you the whole time

Me: It's okay, Wilsonia is going to help me. She says that it's Prenatal stress

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: She's a very good psychologist, comes highly recommended and expensive but I don't mind

paying. So long you going to get help that's all I want

GERTRUDE

The house was empty. The kids and my husband had their own family outing, I was supposed to be with them but I decided to go to the wedding. It was good seeing my Son again, he has grown. He's no longer that little boy I once knew, he's now a grown man.

I heard a knock at the door, I put my wine glass on the counter..

Me: I swear if you guys forgot your keys..

I opened the door and it was Kelso, his eyes moved from the "Welcome" mat to mine, his hands were buried deep in his pockets..

Me: How did you get in? How did you find my house? Him: May I?

NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at him..

Him: You showed up at my wedding confidently so, can I vouch for that same confidence again.. Ma?

I stepped back and let him in. He walked in and looked around, I closed the door..

Me: How did you get in?

He turned around and extended his hand to my neck. He pinned me against the door..

Kelso: How the fuck did you find my wife? What was all that?

I tried to get his hand off but he was strong. Kelso:

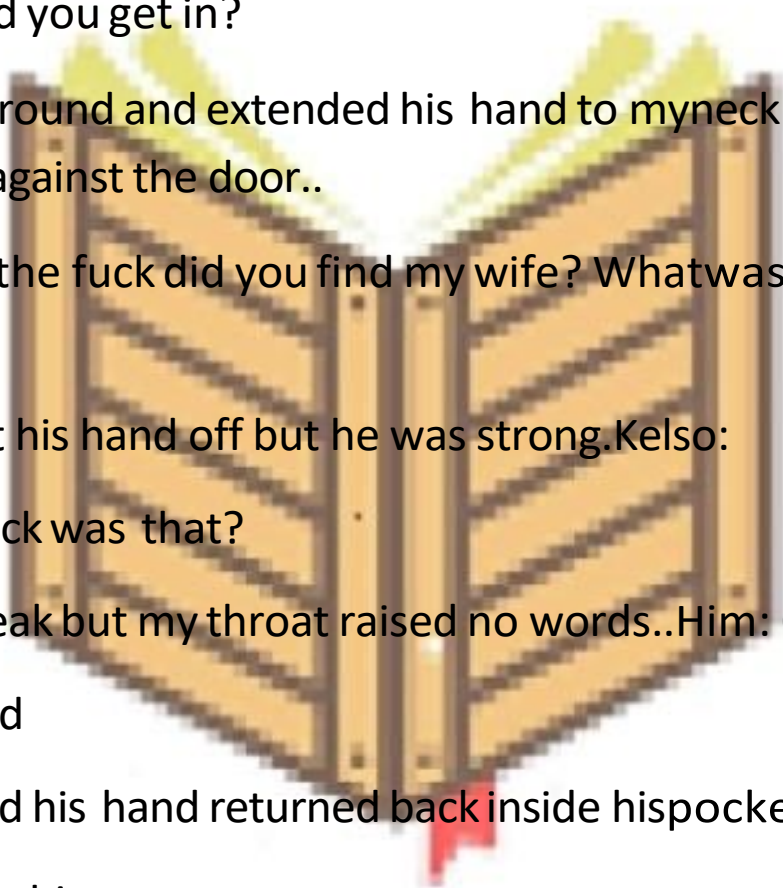
What the fuck was that?

I tried to speak but my throat raised no words.. Him: Ohw
sor y my bad

He let go and his hand returned back inside his pocket..

I started coughing..

Kelso: I gave you peace, never bothered you so why



are you bothering me?

I closed my eyes and opened them..

Me: Nongcebo invited me to the weddingHim:

Bul shit!

Me: I promise you!

He moved back and grabbed the wine bottle from the counter, he didn't think twice. He tried to smash my head with it but I ducked just in time and it hit the door then broke. The wine that was left in there poured down to my head and so did the broken pieces, I looked at him shocked..

Him: Stay away from wife, stay away from me!

He threw the broken piece that he was holding on the floor. With his hand he instructed me to move away from the door..

I stepped to the side. He opened the door and it hit me on my arm..

Me: Ouch!

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Yeey voetsek Gertrude

I swallowed...

He clicked his tongue and then walked out..I closed the door and then locked it..

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Busisekile-Khumalo, author of Nomaswazi and the Harvard wife. Her books are running at a reasonable price if you pre-order. The books will be available in August but if you pre-order now, you'll get them at a reasonable price. The special is running up until July for the pre-orders. Please contact her here for more information:

nicholkhumalo@gmail.com

Contact number: 0620931434

[08/24, 13:21] : 61

NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM

The day went well and everything was more than I expected, I truly enjoyed my wedding day. I was now seeing all the guests out, standing at the door bidding them farewell. Kelso was not back yet..

Banza: We had a good time, thank you for inviting us

Me: Don't be like that, you my best friend and you had to be here even forcefully so

He laughed..

Sasa: You looked really beautiful, your wedding dress was beautiful

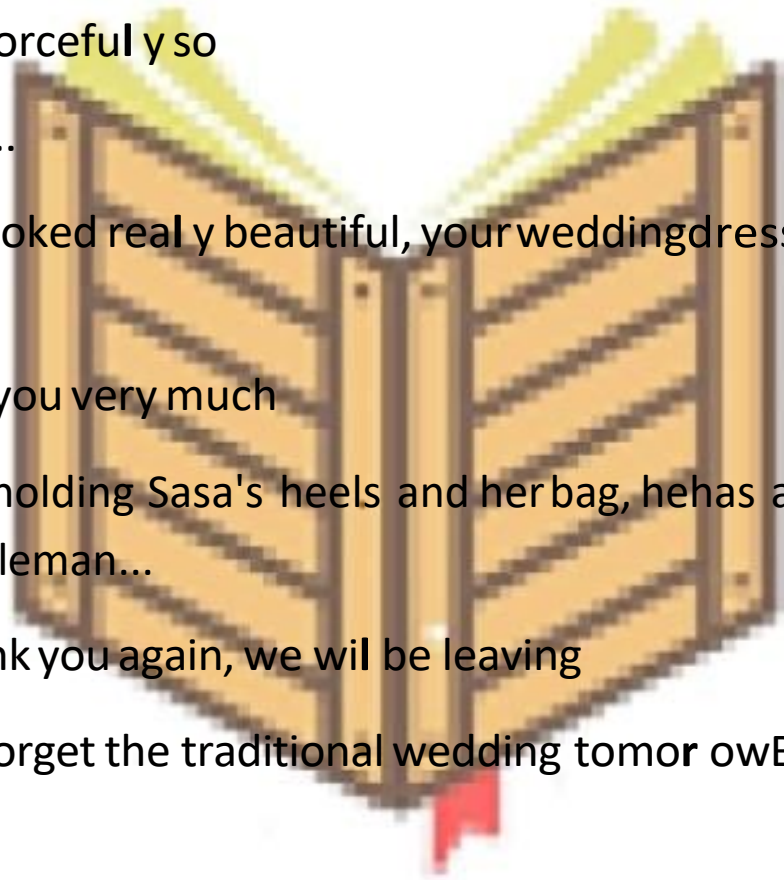
Me: Thank you very much

Banza was holding Sasa's heels and her bag, he has always been a gentleman...

Banza: Thank you again, we will be leaving

Me: Don't forget the traditional wedding tomorrow
Banza: I won't

Sasa: Let's go I'm sure your Mother is wondering where you are, seeing that she's sick



I looked at Banza

Me: Your Mother is sick? Banza: Yes

it's been days now Me: And you

never told me?

Banza: You were busy planning the wedding, I didn't think it was that important

Me: Ohw

He wrapped his arm around her waist... Banza:

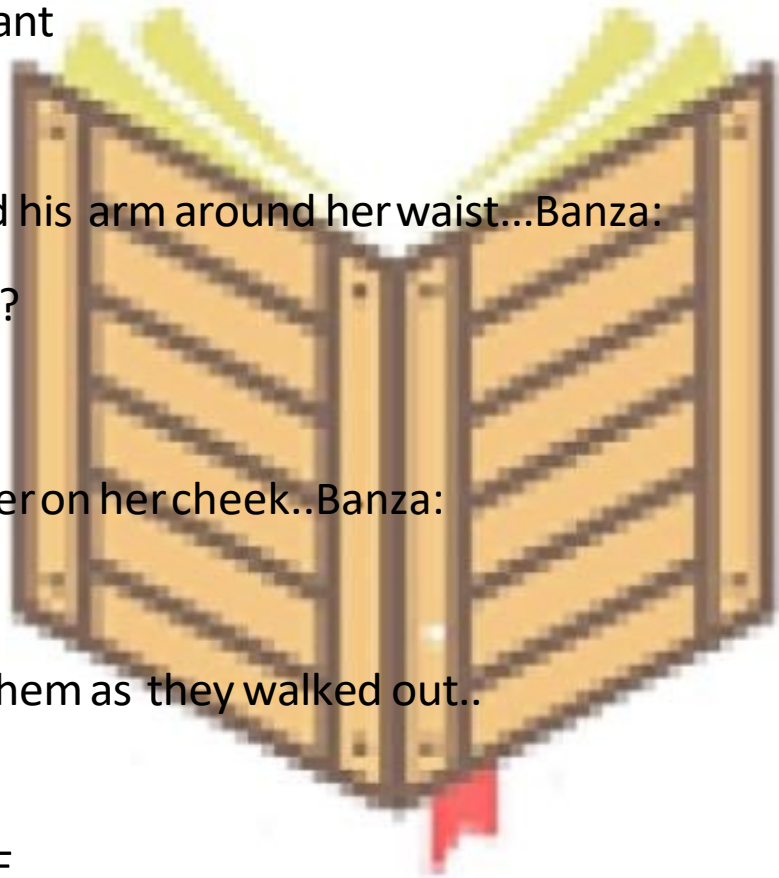
Ready to go?

Sasa: Yes

He kissed her on her cheek.. Banza:

Let's go

I looked at them as they walked out..



SANDISIWE

NOVELSGURU.COM

The occasional kissing on the bed led to a more

intimate situation. We were laying side by side on the small bed and Sole's hand moved from squeezing my breasts and under the hospital gown. All the way to my coochie. I do miss us being intimate, I miss that a lot. I parted my legs a little to give him more room, his finger landed on my clit. He started rubbing and pressing gently as we continued kissing. With my pleasure kicking in I grabbed tightly onto his shirt as the moment continued...

When I had thought that the moment would possibly lead somewhere, we heard a knock at the door. We stopped kissing, he retracted his hand back. The person opened the door instead of knocking again, it was Wilsonia.

Her: Ohw.. Ohw.. I hope I didn't disturb anything

Sole got out of bed, he had a boner.. He went and sat on the chair..

Wilsonia: I should've known with the door closed that something was going on

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It's okay

Her: I wanted to see how you were holding up before I drive home

Me: I am holding up well thank you very much

Her: We going to have a session Monday morning, we going to have a session 3 times a week

Me: Okay

Sole: I would like to be there in all the sessions
Wilsonia: You don't trust me?

Sole: No.. I promised her that I'm going to support her throughout the whole pregnancy

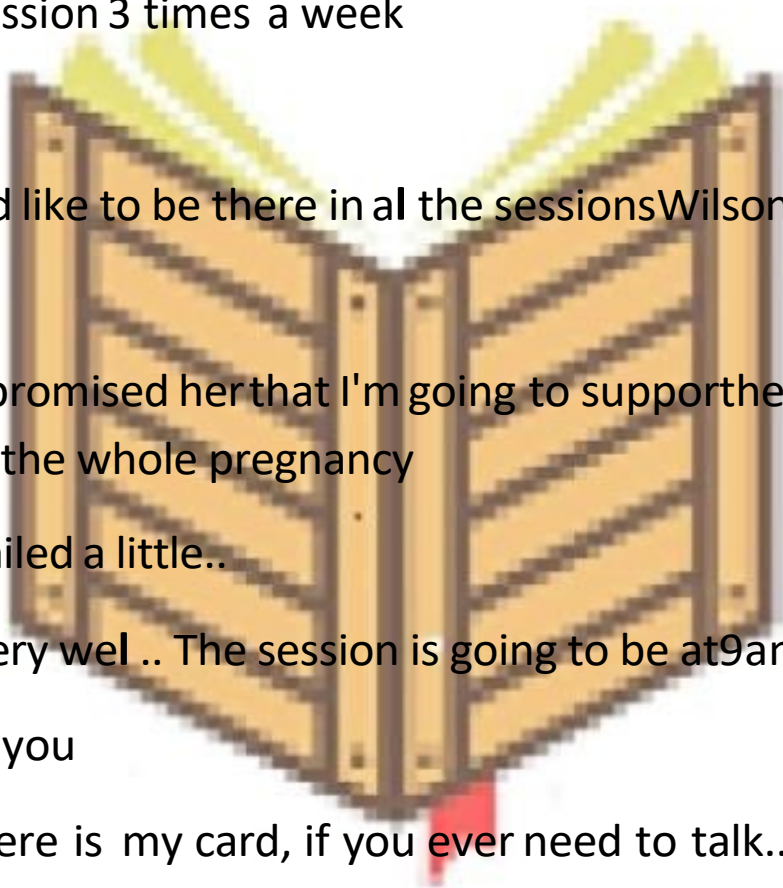
Wilsonia smiled a little..

Wilsonia: Very well .. The session is going to be at 9am

Sole: Thank you

Wilsonia: Here is my card, if you ever need to talk.. Maybe if you not feeling well , I have my office and my cell phone number there

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Ohw thank you very much

Wilsonia: I should leave.. See you Monday morning
Me: Thank you

She walked to the door..

Sole: How are you finding her?

Me: Creepy.. But the Drsaid she's good

Sole: Yeah, she used to be my psychologist back inthe day
she's real y good

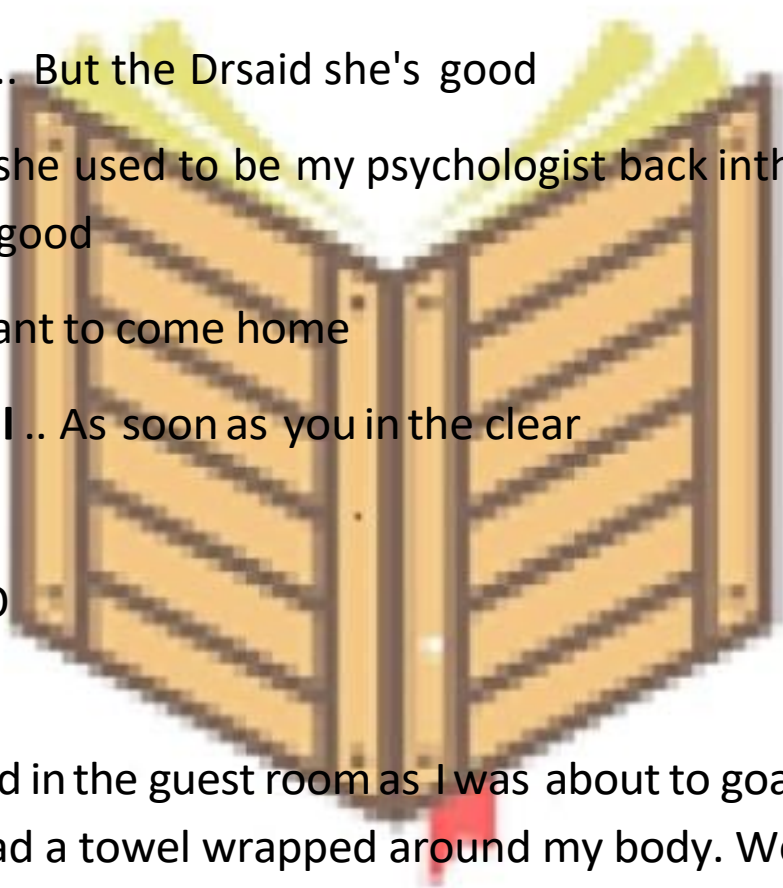
Me: I just want to come home

Sole: You wil .. As soon as you in the clear

NONGCEBO

Kelso walked in the guest room as I was about to go and take a shower, I had a towel wrapped around my body. We were going to stay over here with my bride's maids, but they have a separate room..

Me: How is Grandma?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: She will be fine, she'll be discharged sometime next week

Me: It's sad that she attend the whole wedding
Him: Very sad

He put his wallet and his car keys on the bed..
Him: You looked beautiful today

Me: Thank you

He walked up to me..

Him: I'm so proud to call you my wife
I smiled at him..

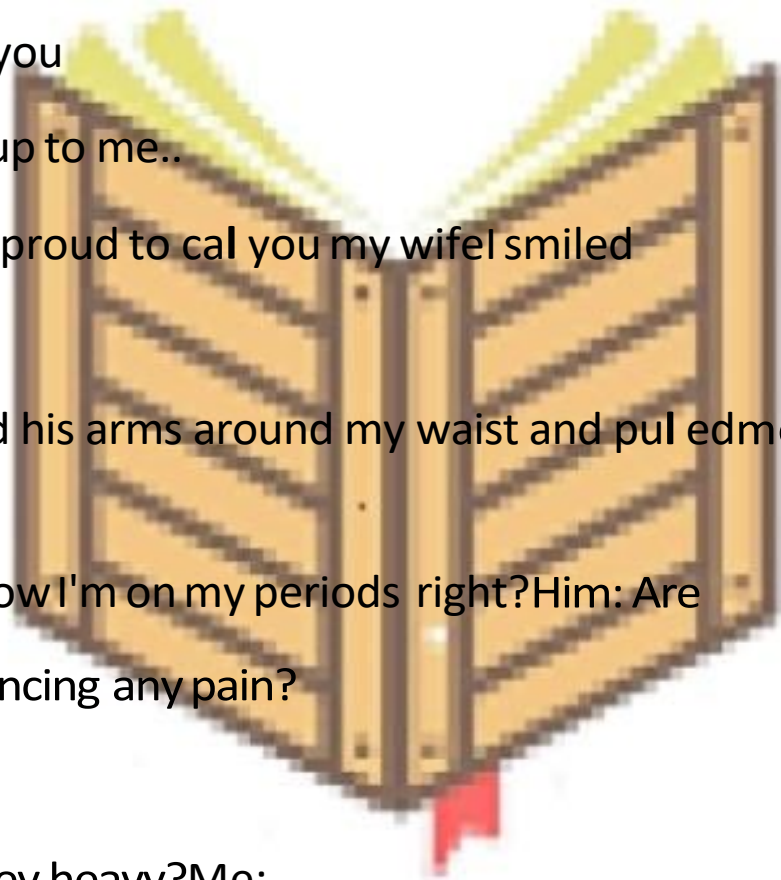
He wrapped his arms around my waist and pulled me to him..

Me: You know I'm on my periods right?
Him: Are you experiencing any pain?

Me: No

Him: Are they heavy?
Me:

Not at all



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Then we'll be fine

He picked me up and we walked to the bathroom..

GERTRUDE

Hubby: How did this person come in again? Me: I really have no idea

Take: How did they come through the gate?

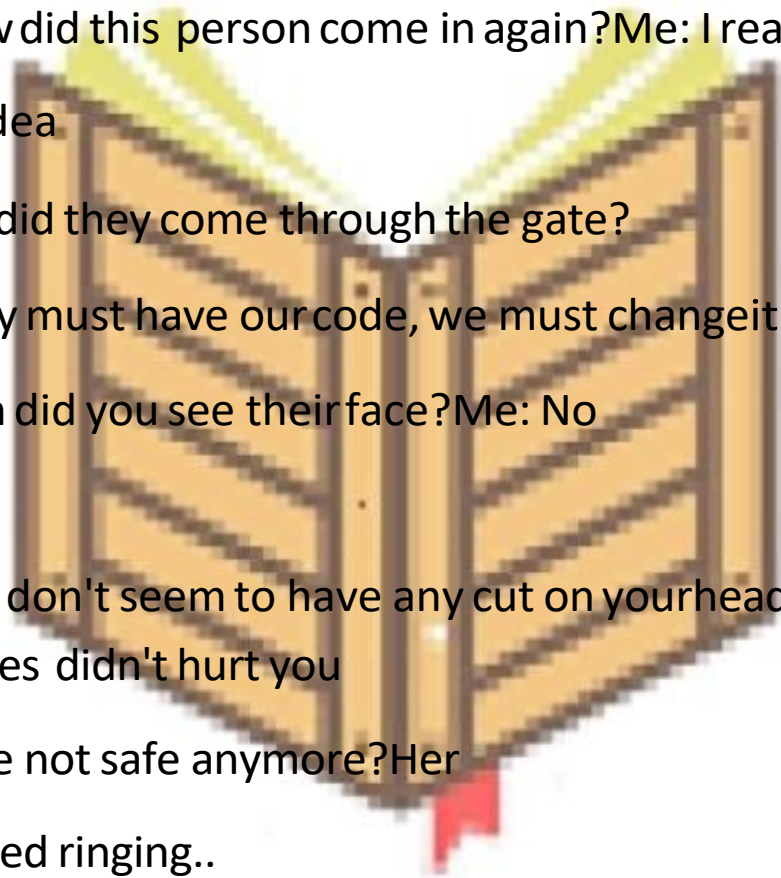
Hubby: They must have our code, we must change it

Take: Mom did you see their face? Me: No I didn't

Hubby: You don't seem to have any cut on your head, the broken pieces didn't hurt you

Take: So we not safe anymore? Her phone started ringing..

Take: Excuse me **NOVELSGURU.COM**



She got up and walked out..

Me: I think it was one of Ken's lap dogsHe
looked at me..

Me: I think he was just trying to scare usHim: Did
you see the Person's face?

Me: No.. He was wearing a balaclava

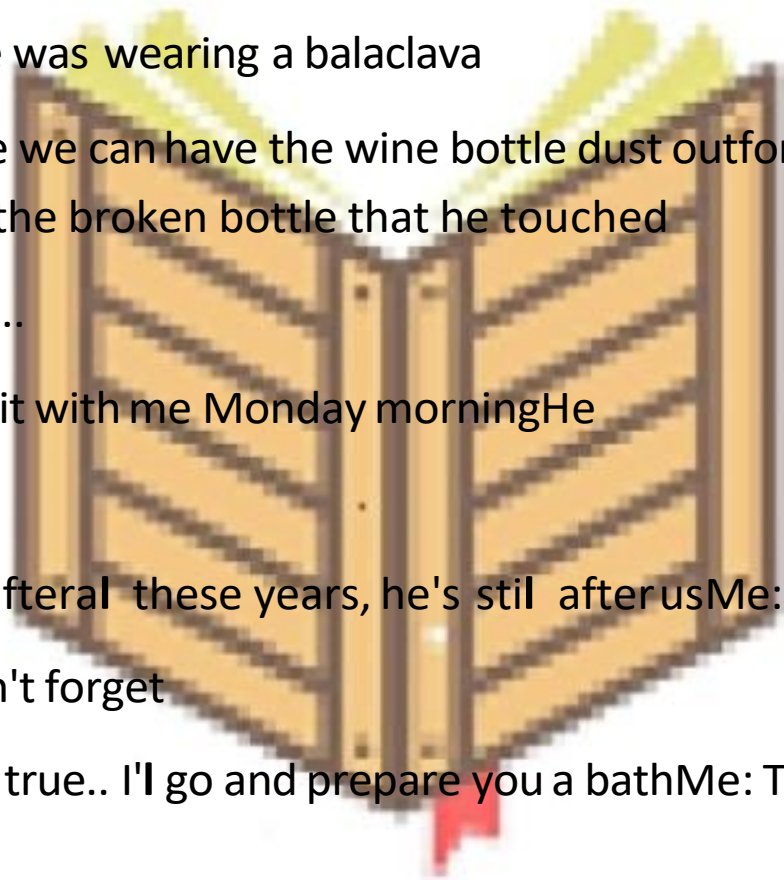
Him: Maybe we can have the wine bottle dust outforprints
the part of the broken bottle that he touched
I swal owed..

Me: I'll take it with me Monday morningHe
nodded..

Him: Even afteral these years, he's stil afterusMe: People
like Ken don't forget

Him: That's true.. I'll go and prepare you a bathMe: Thank
you

He kissed me and walked away..



I got up and took the wine bottle that part that Kelsowas holding, I went out to bury it at the bottom of trash can. Monday morning the trash will be taken out. I closed my eyes and let out a sigh..

NONGCEBO

His hands had foam, we were using my foam bath. Satisfying it was pH balanced. Won't be causing me any unnecessary irritation..

He ran his hands around my naked body, as he leaned over to kiss me on the cheek, my mouth then my neck. He continued running his hands on my thighs, then he brought them up to my breasts. He massaged them with the foam bath still in his hands with water running down our bodies. I ran my hands on his chest all the way down to his already hard cock. He bit his lower lip and closed his eyes as I played around with it, revealing his ever so mesmerizing dimples

NOVELSGURU.COM

He got pulled me closer again and ran his hands on my butt as we shared a deep kiss.

I had a shower cap on to protect my weave. He pulled my lower lip as he broke the kiss

He slowly pushed me back against the wall, just next to the tap. He picked up my leg and wrapped it around his waist, then he gently pushed himself in with my hands around his neck..

Him: I love you so much (whispering) Me: I love you too

He kissed me and pushed himself fully in and I gasped, I picked up my other leg and I wrapped them around his waist with my hands around his neck....

BANZA

Sasa: I had a great time at the wedding, thank you Me: So sad that you won't be able to attend the

traditional part of it tomorrow

Her: Ya my Mother is going to church, I don't have anyone to babysit

Me: Why don't you bring her along

Her: Please don't take this the wrong way but.. Me: But..

Her: I have promised myself not to expose my Daughter to my boyfriends until the relationship is serious.. It's not you and I don't mean to offend you

I smiled at her..

Me: You a good mother do you know that? She smiled at me too..

Her: So you not offended? Me:

Not at all.. I understand

Her: Let's see where this is going first then you will meet my Daughter as time goes on

Me: I understand

Her: I have to go, thank you for bringing me home



safe

Me: Thank you for being my date!

leaned over and kissed her..

Me: Good night Her:

Good night

NONGCEBO

The sex moved from the shower right on the bed, I thought that my periods were going to embarrass me but they didn't. I was laying on the edge of the bed with him in between my legs. I was rubbing my clit as he continued.

He has mastered the art of satisfying us both, pumping in hard and then gently too.

I never knew that sex could be this amazing

Love making with Kelso is always amazing, this day couldn't get any better..

NOVELSGURU.COM

He pulled out and asked me to move up a bit and put a pillow underneath, with my ass on display. He squeezed a few times before taking it at the back, spreading my buttocks it was the first time attempting this position and it was uncomfortable at first, but a few seconds to it and hearing moaning turned me on more. He put his hand around my neck, gently doing so as to not suffocate me before banging me like there's no tomorrow. It wasn't painful though, well not too painful. It was pain and pleasure mixed together, a beautiful combination that had my eyes roll back to my head. He leaned over and whispered in my ear.. With his voice soft and enticing..

Him: If you ever give my pussy away to anyone, it'll be the day you will feel my wrath! It's mine, I own this shit.. Say it!

Me: You own this shit.. He
pumped more harder.. Him: I
can't hear you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ohh my word you own this shit! !He ran his tongue around my ear..

Him: Good girl!

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Pontsho she's asking you guys to click on the link below and vote for her daughter by liking her picture

https://m.facebook.com/story.php?story_fbid=2644635592520087&id=2259658807684436

[08/24, 13:21] : 62

NONGCEBO

I was woken up by the rain in the early hours of the morning, with Kelso also who buried himself deep inside of me. He was laying behind me, and he was fondling my breasts and moaning at the back of my neck. Last night our evening came with a lot of sex



NOVELSGURU.COM

and an amazing dinner, to be quite honest I was dead tired and my coochie was burning. I needed to get my rest but then "He owns this shit" and he was making sure that I don't forget.

Despite how burning it was, but the pleasure didn't shy away from coming into play. Since my legs were closed I could feel the wetness extending to my thighs a bit. For some reason I even thought that my periods visited me, it's a good thing that I drank pain killers before retiring to bed. I extended my hand to his neck as he softly kissed me on my cheek, leaving a bit of wetness. My level of horniness, I really wanted him to bang me hard and it's like he heard my silent prayer.

With every stroke, it was like he was adding more love into my heart, I've come to realize that I am starting to love him more than I have ever loved someone before...

Him: Shit you very wet!

Me: You owning it aren't you?

He moved his hand to my waist and squeezed me

NOVELSGURU.COM

more tighterto him whilst kissing me on my neck...

BANZA

I found myself standing at the cemetery the same one where I sawthat old woman. It was quiet and there was smoke al around, not forgetting how darkit was. I looked around..

Me: Hel o??

My voice echoed..

Through the smoke, the old woman came out shewas holding the bag of bones..

Me: Kanti ungubani? Ungifunani? (Who are you?What do you want from me)

She wasn't alone, she was with company. Two otherwomen, and a man. The man had a python around his neck. It looked heavy... Her: Banele mzikulu (Banele my Grandson)

Fora moment I was confused..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Uzalelwe emndenini onezinyanga eziqinile(You were born into a family that has powerful traditional healers)

I let her continue..

Her: Uma wakho indodakazi yami uMimi, wuye ekumele aqhubeke nalesipho (Your mother, my Daughter Mimi. She is the one who has to continue the gift)

Me: Uyangilahla (You losing me)

Her: Abaphantsi balwa naye (The ancestors are fighting with her)

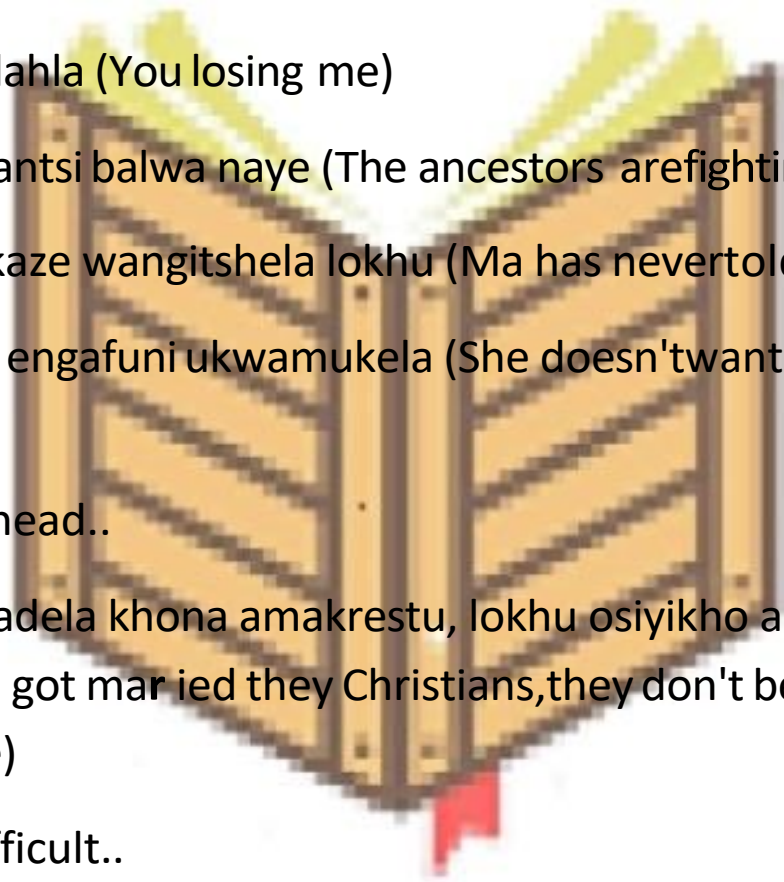
Me: uMa akaze wangitshela lokhu (Ma has never told me this)

Her: Ingoba engafuni ukwamukela (She doesn't want to accept)

I shook my head..

Her: La Ashadela khona amakrestu, lokhu osiyikho abakuthandi (Where she got married they Christians, they don't believe in who we are)

This was difficult..



Her: Kithi akunandaba noma angamukela ngesintunoma ngesprofethi, kodwa kumele ayeke ukuqinisaikhanda (It doesn't matter to us whether she accepts it traditional y or she becomes a Prophet, she just needs to stop being stubborn)

Me: Mina ngingenaphi konje (Where do I fit in this)

Her: Uzolalela wena kuphela, nguwe ongamenza ukuthi ashintshe ingqondo (She can only listen to you, you the only one who can help her change her mind)

Me: Uma ehluleka ukulalela wena uMa wakhe, minangiyini? (if she doesn't listen to you her own Mother, who am I)

Her: Uyindodana yakhe (You are her Son)I sighed..

Her: Yikho izinto zenu zingalungi, Yikho ehlala egulafuthi wayeka nomsebenzi ngokugula. Nawe bekumele ube kude nge mpilo. Buka manje ulahlekelwe umuntu omthandayo (That's why your things aren't going wel . That's why she's always sick, that's why she stopped working because of

health reasons. Look at you, you lost a girl that you love)

This was difficult..

Her: Uma engenzi kahle nayo lento mbazana oyitholile izothola omunye, uyoba Buka bonke beshada ndondana (If she doesn't do well, even this girl you are going to lose her. You will watch all of them getting married)

Me: Uma ufuna uMa khuluma naye (If you want my mother talk to her)

Her: Ungasayenzeli thina ke, yenzela uNgcebo (don't do it for us, do it for Ngcebo)

Me: Uthini ngo Ngcebo? (What did you say about Ngcebo)

Her: uMimi uyomsiza (Mimi is the one that's going to help her)

Me: Umsiza ngani? Kuphi? (What is she going to help her with)

They started vanishing..

Her: Isikhathi asisekho (There's no time anymore)

Me: Gogo? Gogo Yima! (Grandma wait)

I opened my eyes and rose up from my pillow. I looked around and it was dark with the rain pouring hard. I took a deep breath and laid back on the pillow again, I let out a deep sigh..

NONGCEBO

I was woken up by my phone ringing, and there was banging at the door..

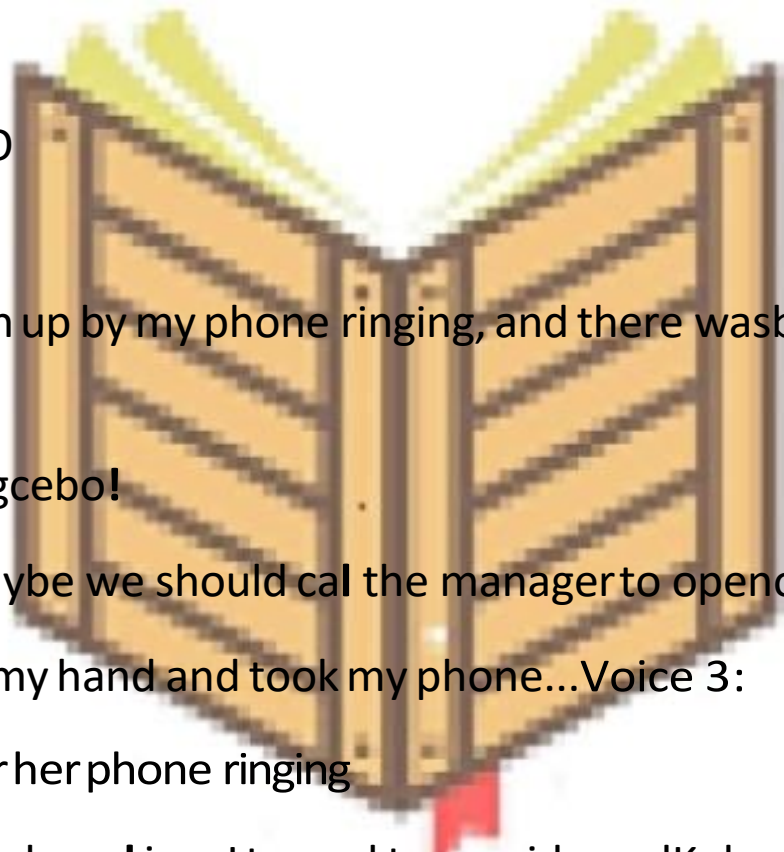
Voice: Nongcebo!

Voice 2: Maybe we should call the manager to open something

I stretched my hand and took my phone...Voice 3:

I think I hear her phone ringing

It was Bongeka calling. I turned to my side and Kelso wasn't sleeping next to me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

The banging continued..Me:

I'm coming!

I remembered he left very early at around 5am, I locked when he left and went back to sleep.. I slowly got out of bed in pain and walked to open, a3 girls were standing at the door.

Bongeka, Nessi, and Mandisa..

Mandisa: Thank goodness you okay?

Bongeka: Wtf Nongcebo?

Me: Mind your language Nessi:

You real y scared us

Mandisa: There's no time we have to get readyI leaned against the door..

Me: Can't I sleep?

Nessi: No!

Mandisa: Nessi get the makeup artist at the reception, Bongeka go back to our room and get ourclothes

NOVELSGURU.COM



She pushed me in..

Mandisa: Go and bath we don't have time anymore!

KELSO

Siya looked at me..

Siya: Late night?

Me: Something like thatSiya:

We almost done

I yawned..

Sole walked in..

Sole: Morning Me:

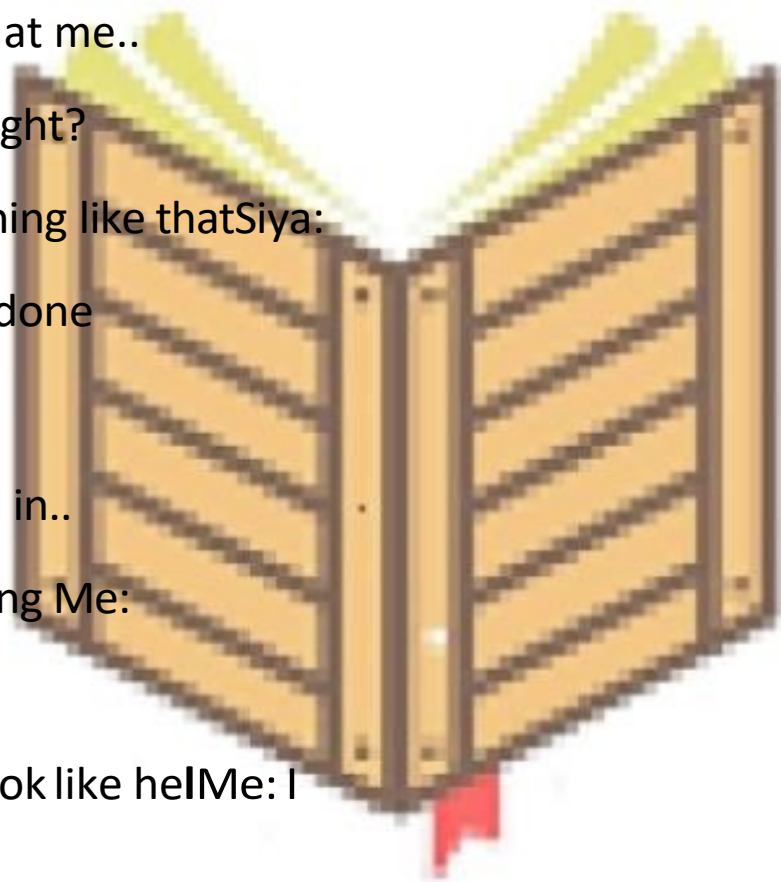
Morning

Sole: You look like helMe: I

feel like hel

Sole: You and Nongcebo?Me:

Yeah



NOVELSGURU.COM

He chuckled..

Me: My whole body is aching and I'm tired
Sole: You hit that the whole night?

Me: She was just mad horny, best sex of my life
Siya: Hebanna!

Me: I've had sex before but I've never been this dead tired

Sole: She really worked you
Siya: Give that woman diamonds

Me: I just wanna sleep, it's like I've been drained of all my energy

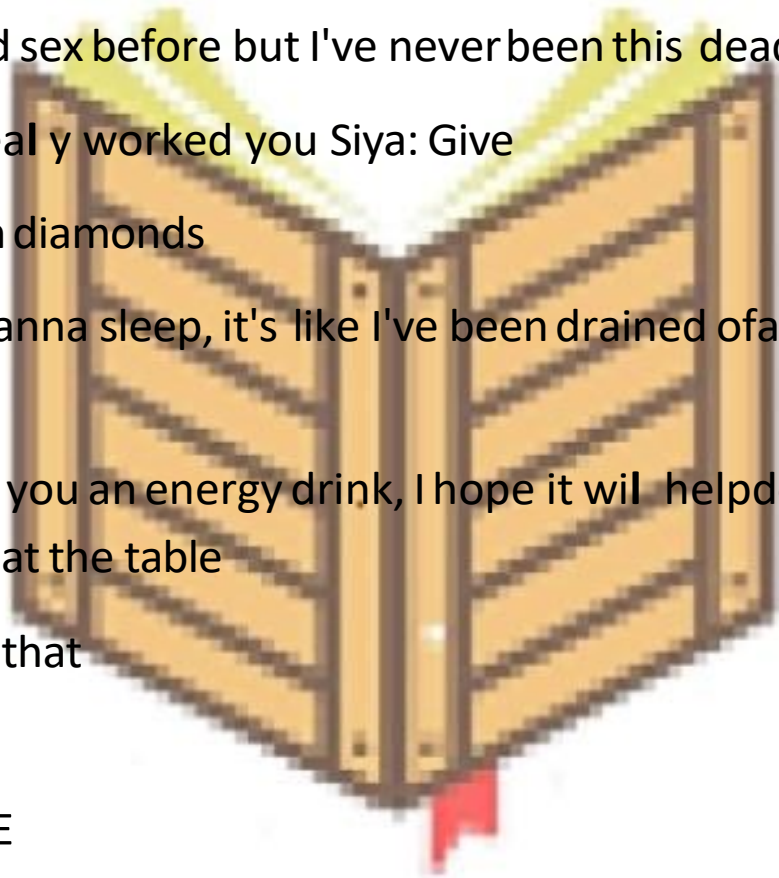
Sole: I'll get you an energy drink, I hope it will help
don't want you passing out at the table

Me: You do that

SANDISIWE

NOVELSGURU.COM

I woke up to an unusual woman sitting on the chair..



Reading a book..

Me: Hello?

She closed the book and looked at me..Her:

Good morning

Me: Uhm are you my new doctor or something?Her: No

She got up and fixed herself, then she walked up to me.. She fixed the duvet and aligned it..

Me: If you a Nurse why are you not wearing your uniform?

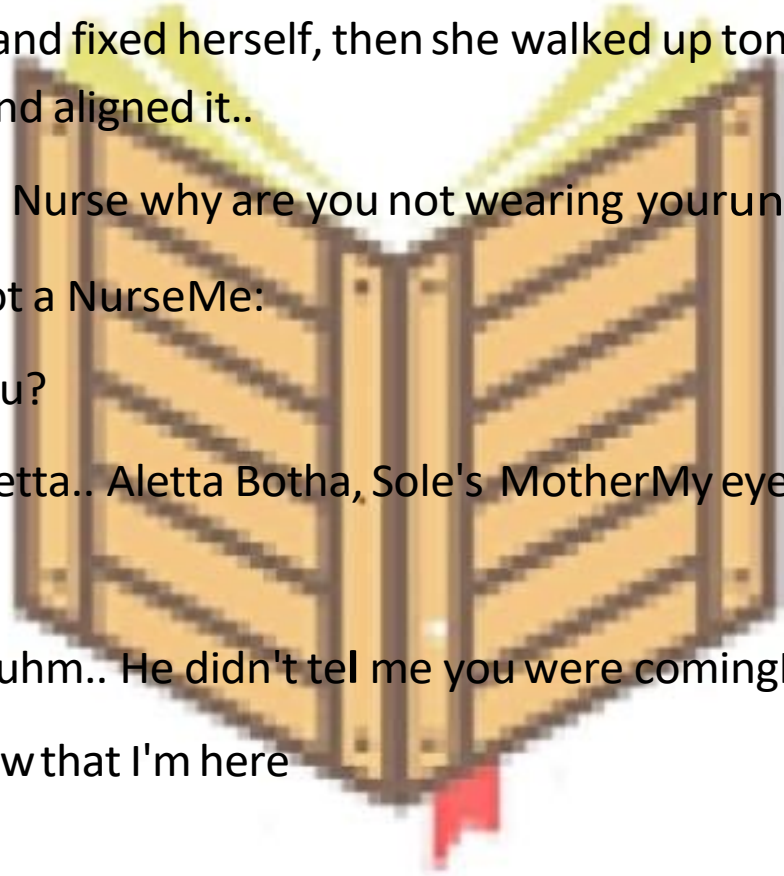
Her: I am not a NurseMe:

Who are you?

Her: I am Aletta.. Aletta Botha, Sole's MotherMy eyes widened..

Me: Woow uhm.. He didn't tel me you were comingHer: He doesn't know that I'm here

Me: Ohw



She walked and fixed the glass and the water jug..Me: I am Sandisiwe, his girlfriend

Her: I know

She looked around the room and went to fix theblinds..

Me: Nice meeting you I guessHer:

It's a pleasure

She seemed weird. She came back and fixed my sleepers, putting them next to each other perfectly..

Me: How did you know I was here?

Her: Sole told his Brother Brian, then Brian told meMe: Ohw I see

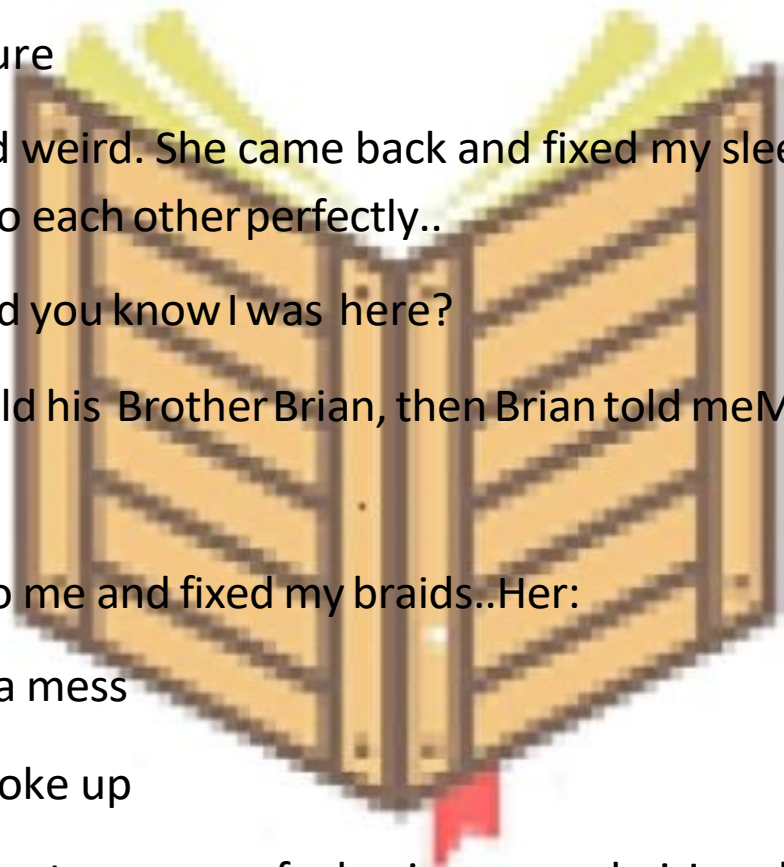
She came to me and fixed my braids..Her:

Yourhairis a mess

Me: I just woke up

Her: That's not an excuse forhaving messy hairI nodded..

NOVELSGURU.COM



Her: There you go, now go ahead and bath I will make your bed

Me: I think the Nurse can do that

Her: I don't see any Nurse here my Dearest

Does she also have the same mental illness as Sole? It looks like the lights are on but there's no one at home..

BANZA

The dream I heard disturbed me a lot, quite frankly I didn't even go back to sleep..

Dad: I have good news

That's better because it was getting awkward around the table..

Dad: They going to make me a junior pastor at church

Mom: That's very lovely



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: It's next week Sunday so Banza I need you there

I nodded..Me:

Ma

She looked at me..

Me: How are you feeling?

Ma: A bit better that's why I'm even going to church
Me: Can we go and see a traditional healer tomorrow?

My father dropped his spoon in his bowl..Ma:

Why?

Me: Maybe what's happening to you it's spiritual or traditional

Dad: If that's the case, I'm sure they will see it at church and the Senior pastor will pray for her

Me: What harm can seeing a traditional healer do?

Ma: Banza we don't believe in that, we believe in God

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How are they different?

Dad: Traditional healers are not sincere, they work with evil spirits

Me: How so? Ma:

Banza!

Dad: They harm and hurt people

Ma: You of all people should know that

Me: don't they work with ancestors? Aren't ancestors our guardian angels too?

Dad: Guardian angels that exist are the ones from heaven and not ancestors! Ancestors are dead people, you can't praise a dead person that once existed like you, where do they get all the power to protect and bless you all of a sudden from the grave?

Me: So what makes Christians say the God of our ancestors? The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob? Why can't the God of Abraham be the same God of our ancestors that passed on? I thought we serve God and acknowledge our ancestors I doubt God can send Abraham to help you, won't he use a

NOVELSGURU.COM

guardian angel that you know perhaps a relative that passed on?

Dad: That's different?

Me: How? Weren't they human too? Didn't they die too?

He snapped.. Dad:

That's it!!

He got up and walked out, my Mother looked at me and shook her head..

Ma: I'm very disappointed in you Banza, I raised you better than this! We Christians in this house, that's what we are!

She slowly got up and left the table..

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Nolusiba She's asking for help in winning a reading competition. Please go to like her video on Twitter and retweet too

NOVELSGURU.COM

https://twitter.com/BrownBabe15/status/1275091839587139589?s=20&fbclid=IwAR1RzoeViY5dn-x_QpoucxtG8QNb2YM_bBiqQyjKrc2CBUruC58iSu5 W1NM

[08/24, 13:22] : 63

SANDISIWE

I was failing to understand Sole's Mom. It's like she's living in her own world or something, so I texted Sole and told him that he's Mom is here. He texted me that he's coming.. She looked at the time again..

Aletta: She's late

I checked the time..It was 14:05 Me:

I'm sure she's on her way

Aletta: She said that lunch will be served at 14:00, it's now 14:05

Me: I'm sure the Nurse is on her way with my Lunch Aletta: But it's 14:05, She's late

NOVELSGURU.COM

I sighed. Since she's been here she hasn't said much, just sat on the chair and read her novel..

Me: Aletta you never told me what you do Aletta:

You have to be more specific

Me: Do you have a job?

Aletta: I have a PhD Me:

That's nice

Aletta: I work at the University

Me: That's good.. So you a Professor? She

looked at me..

Me: Did you expect me to be a kindergarten teacher with a PhD?

I kept quiet..

Aletta: What is it that you do? Me:

I'm actually a writer

Aletta: What is it that you have written? NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I have written novels, fiction to be exact. I publish them online



Aletta: Online?

Me: Facebook and an online publication

Aletta: What a shame

Me: Sor y?

Aletta: That you don't have any qualification

Me: I dropped out of tertiary

Aletta: I noticed, basical y you don't finish anything that you start?

This was getting awkward..

Aletta:
14:07

Me: She wil be here

Aletta: How do you know that? She said she wil be here at 14:00.

It's now 14:07 and she's stil not here. How exactly do we know that she's coming?

I took my phone and texted Sole: "How

far are you?"



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

The traditional wedding was meant to be also small but a lot of people showed up.

Some people didn't have anywhere to sit, they were just standing around in the tent. Mostly young people, probably people who also wanted to be sure that Kelso was really getting married.. Gertrude didn't show up, I wasn't disappointed though. I mean she did come yesterday.. I was still very tired and I wanted nothing more but to rest, I'm glad that now we are eating. After this, I'm sure a lot of people will be going back home..

Me: I can't believe that everything went well Kelso:

Were you expecting a disappointment? I chuckled..

Me: Don't be like that, we planned this wedding in a short space of time didn't think we were going to pull it off

He kissed me on my cheek..

Kelso: We planned it and it went well

Me: I didn't see Power

Kelso: She won't come Me:

Why?

Kelso: She texted me that she's not happy about the whole thing

Me: Ohw

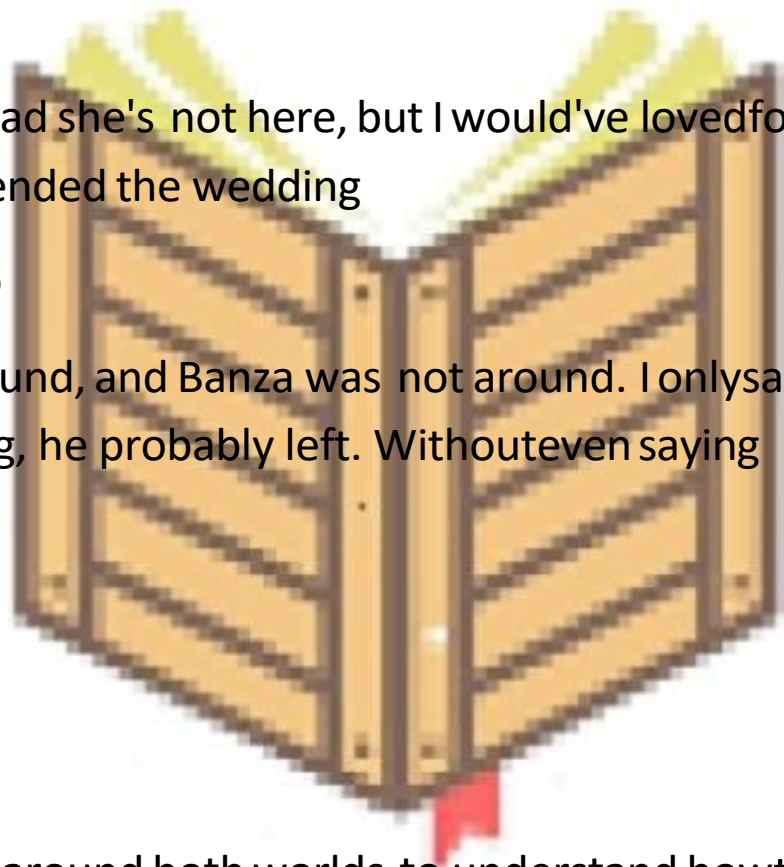
Kelso: I'm glad she's not here, but I would've loved for Hakeem to have attended the wedding

Me: Me too

I looked around, and Banza was not around. I only saw him in the morning, he probably left. Without even saying Goodbye..

BANZA

I have been around both worlds to understand how tradition and religion works. Being a taxi driver for so long has exposed me to people who believe more into ancestors and traditional healers. Just



NOVELSGURO.COM

like in religion, not everyone is sincere. There are Pastors who are doing more harm than good, Pastors who are using religion to extort and harm their congregation. Just as there's traditional healers that aren't very sincere too

My Mother walked in alone, My Father must've remained behind at church. She put her bag on the table and her Bible, she didn't say anything to me. She walked away.

Me: Your Mother, my Grandmother was a traditional healer wasn't she?

She stopped and then she turned and looked at me..Ma: How did you know?

Me: Because she came to me in my dream

Ma: Banza what you said this morning was uncal edfor, and to answer your question. Yes my Mother was a traditional healer

Me: How was she like?

Ma: She was a very good person, very humble and

very much loved

Me: Then what happened?

Ma: Then she passed on and I got married
Me: And you were brainwashed?

Ma: There's only one true God

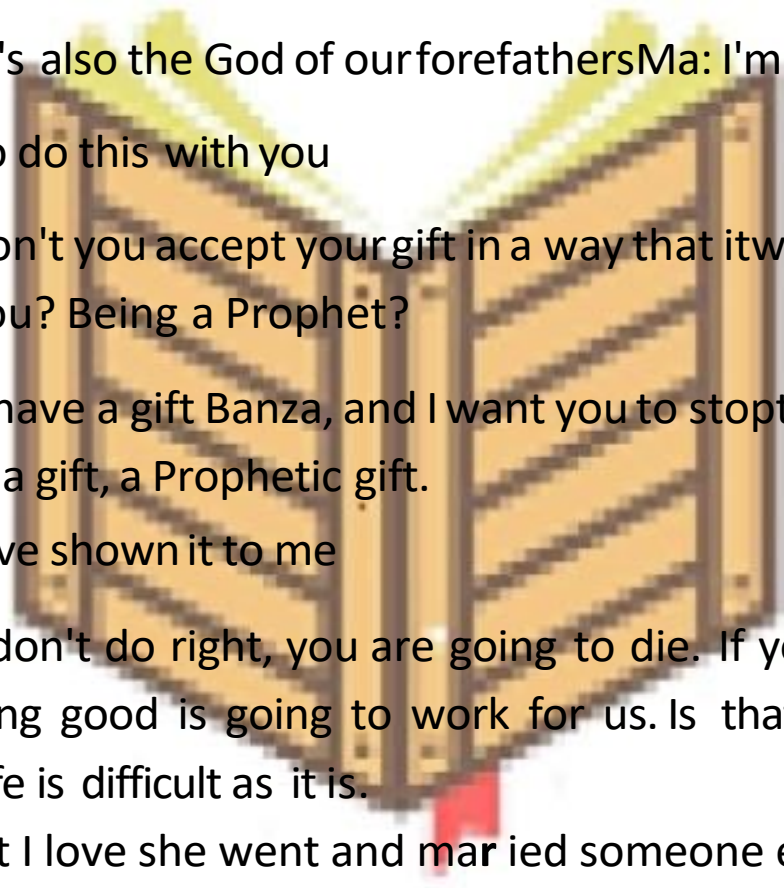
Me: And he's also the God of our forefathers
Ma: I'm not going to do this with you

Me: Why don't you accept your gift in a way that it will work better for you? Being a Prophet?

Ma: I don't have a gift Banza, and I want you to stop talking about this. If I had a gift, a Prophetic gift. God would've shown it to me

Me: If you don't do right, you are going to die. If you don't do right, nothing good is going to work for us. Is that what you want? My life is difficult as it is.

The girl that I love she went and married someone else, if you don't do this.. You are putting a stamp on my suffering. You are my Mother, I thought your love for me surpassed religion and your husband



Her: Banza

I got up from the couch..

Me: I'm going out for fresh air

SANDISIWE

I was relieved when Sole walked in, the Nurse had just brought in my lunch and Aletta gave her a difficult time.. Sole looked surprised to see his Mother..

Sole: Mom? Aletta

stood up..

Sole: What are you doing here? Aletta: I am

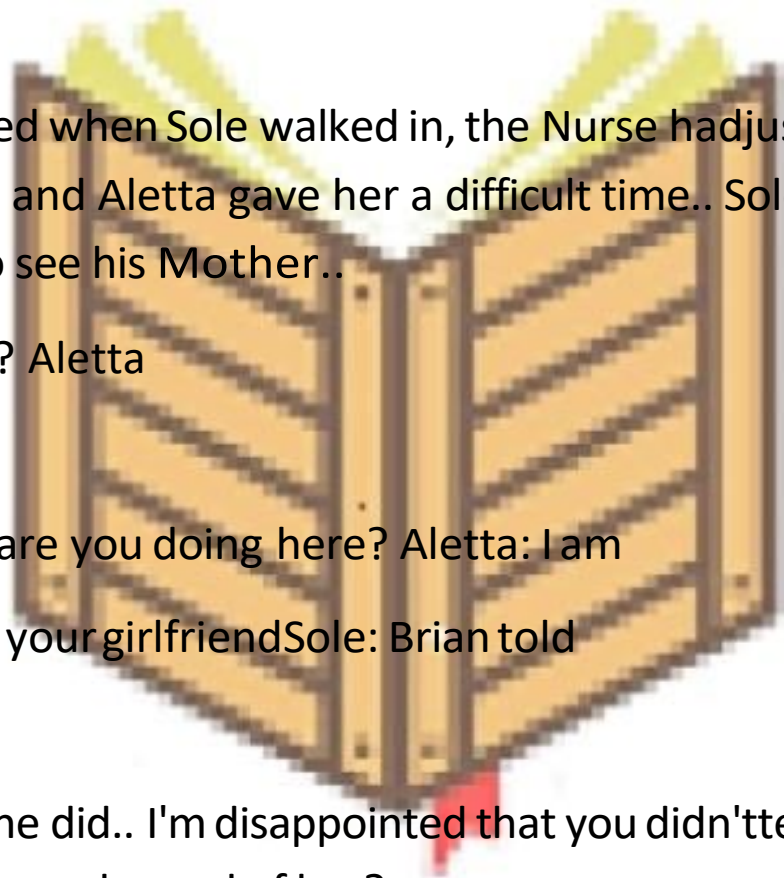
here to see your girlfriend Sole: Brian told

you?

Aletta: Yes he did.. I'm disappointed that you didn't tell me..

Why? Are you ashamed of her?

Sole: I'm not ashamed of her



NOVELSGURU.COM

Aletta: Brian's wife used to work at a bar before he married her, he was never ashamed of her

Sole: I am not ashamed of her

She walked up to him and fixed his collar.. Aletta:

Then it means you are ashamed of me Sole held her hands...

Sole: Please stop what you are doing He

looked at her in her eye..

Sole: I'm not ashamed of you He put

his hand on her cheek..

Sole: I have never been ashamed of you

Aletta: Is that why I haven't seen you for years?

Sole: We had family issues and I had to leave for the sake of peace.. Remember?

Aletta: Don't insult me, of course I remember. I haven't forgotten anything about that day

She looked at the time..

Aletta: Now I have to go



NOVELSGURU.COM

She looked at me...

Aletta: I hope you will take care of this poor girl, seeing that she doesn't have any form of education..Must be difficult for her

Me: I am trying

Aletta: Maybe that's the problem Me: I

have written good books

Aletta: I'm sure you did, and none of them are bestsellers

Sole: Mom...

She looked at Sole..

Aletta: I hope you will visit home.. One day, someday

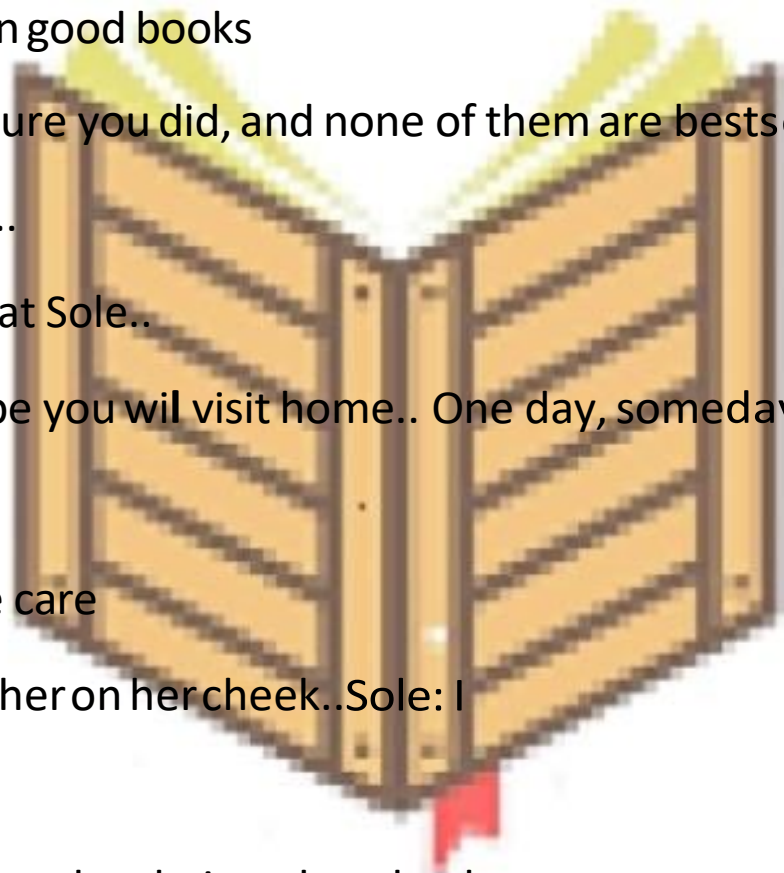
Sole: I will

Aletta: Take care

Sole kissed her on her cheek..Sole: I

will

She walked to the chair and got her bag..



NOVELSGURU.COM

She looked at me..

Aletta: Good bye Me:

Goodbye

She left the room... I couldn't be more shocked, she hasn't seen her Son for years. I would've expected her to be emotional, but she wasn't. She wasn't emotional at all .

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by "Precious fashions and Homeware". She's selling pots, clothes etc at a very affordable price. Please click on the link below to find out more on her page

<https://m.facebook.com/Precious-Fashions-and-Homeware-101531298282568/?refid=12>

13:23]

: 64

NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM



[2 MONTH LATER]

Life as a married woman was not that much difficult as people make it seem, it was actually the best and I enjoyed it. It seemed like yesterday when we had the wedding, at times I look at my ring and the pictures to convince myself over and over that this was not a dream. It was my reality..

Around the house it was only Me, Kelso, and Grams. The girls finally went to boarding school and it seemed like they were enjoying it. They call every now and then to let us know that they okay. I hope we won't run into some bullying accusations in the near future, I pray they have learned their lesson..

Not everything is glitz and glamour though. Lately I have been bothered by this unsettling sexual dream. A dream that I can't really wrap my head around it.

In the dream I find myself and Banza making love, so much that I would wake up in the middle of the night panting, wet and very horny. At first it seemed

harmless, but now it's starting to mess up my life. The horniness that comes with it is very extreme, so much that I have even started avoiding Banza because I'm starting to see him in another way. If I date back to the events of the dream during the day, I would get turned on and imagine us actually doing it. It's so funny because I have never really seen him that way, I don't know what changed. I crave him sexually, I crave the dream to be a reality. Even when Kelso and I are doing it, I'll imagine Banza actually being the one sharing the moment with me.

It has turned me into a filthy sex addict, my sexual hunger seems not to be satisfied at all. No matter how much Kelso and I do it.

SANDISIWE

Sole ended up being honest with me about his Mother. She has obsessive compulsive disorder (OCD). I took my time once to research on it so that I could understand her more. I could say that Aletta

and I, we starting to have a relationship. We keep incontact a lot, and we meet up every now and then.

Afteral , she's the closest thing that I'll ever have toa Mother, despite how messed up she is. She hasn'tvisited our home though and I haven't visited hers too, we meet up in restaurants most the time..

Today I was starting a new job. Al thanks to Aletta she made a fewcal s and I found myself being a columnist forsome newspaper. Not real y something that I have done before but hey, we al have to start somewhere at some point. One thing forsure I don't wanna be ful y dependent on Sole, people change. I wanna be my own woman, I wannabreak out into the writing industry and live my dream. This is my starting point..

It doesn't pay much though but it's something, I getpaid R60 an hour and I work 4 hours a day.

Excluding on weekends.

I have my own column in the newspaper where I ammeant to write about something, anything that wil

get people to read. From current affairs that are happening in our country, any topic that is eye catching.

BANZA

Since things between Sasa and I are picking up. I've moved out from the house to an outside room. I needed my privacy seeing that my Dad and I weren't seeing eye to eye and it was putting a strain on mother, who is still sick by the way. No matter how much I have tried to convince her, she was not caving in. She still stood by what she believed in with my Father still brainwashing her a lot. She was running out of time, we were running out of time.

She needs to accept the gift so it can be passed on from her to me at some point, then the next generation to follow. She was not budging, and time was no longer on her side. Funny enough she's in and out of the hospital, Doctors can't find anything wrong with her. Her Pastor has been praying for her

NOVELSGURU.COM

but still . She's not getting better. Dad would say "God works at his own time, and not on our time". He's adamant that my Mother will get better, so long they keep on praying and fasting..

I fail to understand him, he says he loves my Mother so why is he letting her suffer like this? Marriage has convinced her into believing that she has no say. That her word is useless, and her husband's word is final.

Now things are worse since my Father has been made a junior pastor. Anything wrongfully done, will "taint" his image. Ever since he became a Pastor he has changed for the worst. Told me that he's not going to have my Mother embarrass him by seeing a traditional healer let alone becoming one, what will the church say? The church will start doubting God and turn to traditional healers and ancestors for help. My hands are tied, I don't know what else to do..



NOVELSGURU.COM

KELSO

Sole: The truck passes this road every week at the same time with no hiccups. They trust this road because they believe that it's the safest, why wouldn't they believe so if no one has tried to rob them?

Scorpion: It's a one way road? Sole:

Yes

Scorpion: There's no turning back

Sole: Not so much, the road is very narrow for a U-turn and if the truck tries it will go off the ledge to the bottom pit

Scorpion whistled..

Sole: Kelso what do you think? My mind was very far away..

Scorpion tapped me on the shoulder, I looked at them...

Scorp: We are about to rob the Italians and you

NOVELSGURU.COM

seriously day dreaming? Awukahle Ndonda Musaukudlala

He is the guy that my Father brought in..I looked
at the plan...

Sole: How did we lose you? Me: I just
have a lot in my mind

Scorp: Musa ukuganga (don't play like that)

Me: Eyy awume kancance ngescefe (Stop annoying me)

Things between Me and Nongcebo are okay, or she believes that they okay. Our sex life has picked up, Nongcebo is starting to act weird. She moans a lot during the night, moaning Banza's name. At one point I witnessed her hand down on her coochie just having her fingers play around down there as she moaned Banza's name and squeezing her breasts. I don't think she's fully aware of what's going on because she would be fast asleep at that time. When we do have sex, she gets too wet and hot down there. She has turned into some sex freak

and it pisses me off and also scares me at the same time that I might be losing my wife to that fool. For her to act like this, he must've hit it and it seems like he has hit it good. At times I just stare at her and feel like strangling her to death in her sleep.

Why did she marry me knowing very well that she won't stay true to her wedding vows? Why did she marry me if she is eyeing someone else? That shit pisses me off more than anything. Sometimes I think to myself that if I don't act now, I'm going to lose her to him. Bloody Banza! How can that fool be more sexual satisfying to my wife than me? He is an open book and I have never heard of him being in a relationship before other than his current one with Sasa. He has a girlfriend but here he is messing up my marriage! I knew there was a lot to their friendship than what Nongcebo told me. I want her to be honest with me, tell me that she's cheating but she is not. She is living her life everyday as if like she's innocent and perfect..

SANDISIWE

NOVELSGURU.COM

Voice: Good morning

I looked up and it was Anele. I've met the team earlier on..

Him: How are you?

Me: I'm good and how are you?

Him: I'm well ... Welcome to the team

Me: Thank you very much

Him: How are you settling in?

Me: Well it's uhm.. I'm still trying to get a hand of it

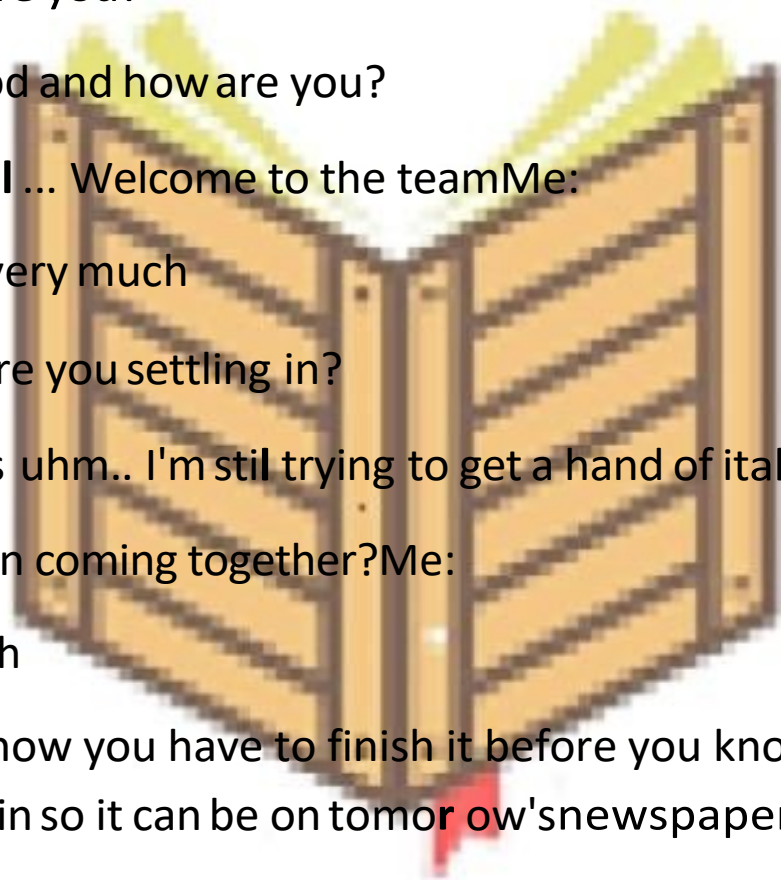
Him: Column coming together?

Me: Not so much

Him: You know you have to finish it before you knock off and send it in so it can be on tomorrow's newspaper?

Me: I know that very well

Him: If you need any help don't be afraid to ask me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'll keep that in mind, thank you
He smiled and walked away..

NONGCEBO

I opened the door and stuck my head in..Me:

Minky

She looked at me..

Me: There's no one at the floor, I need to go to the bathroom

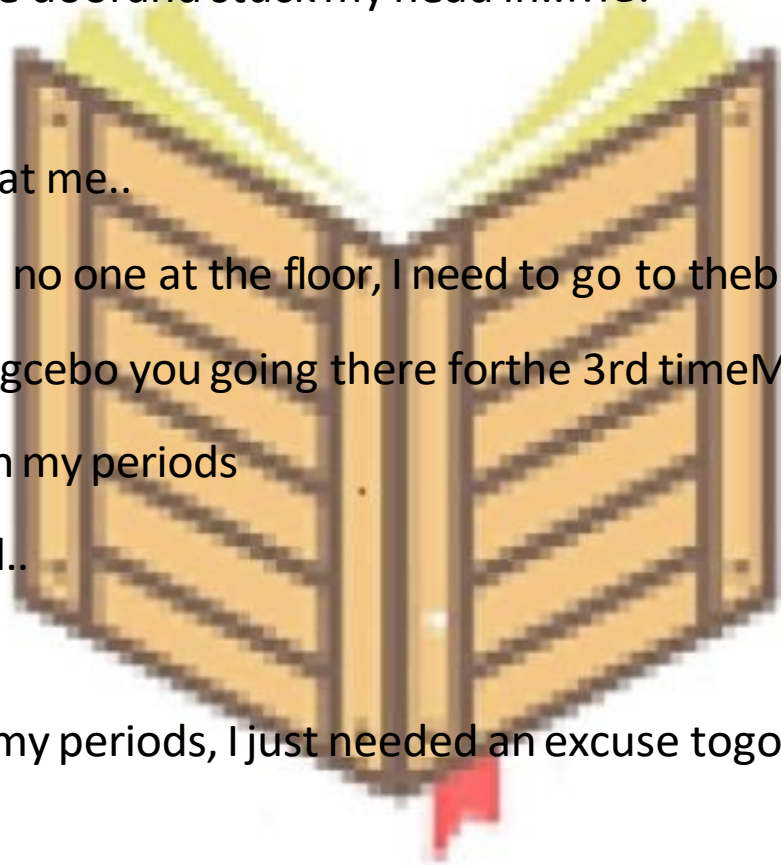
Minky: Nongcebo you going there for the 3rd time
Me: Told you I was on my periods

She exhaled..

Her: Fine

I wasn't on my periods, I just needed an excuse to go to the ladies..

Me: Thank you



NOVELSGURU.COM

She walked out and I went in. I took a pantyliner, the key to the ladies and walked out. The staff has it's own toilets, separate from the public toilets. They always locked and every store has a key except for the stores that have their own toilets. I quickly made my way to the bathroom and locked the door. I got into one of the toilets and locked the door. I was very horny, couldn't hold myself that I needed to have a moment of self service. I put down the toilet seat and raised my skirt a bit high. I lowered my underwear and put one leg on the seat. I closed my eyes and inserted two fingers in my already wet coochie. I dated back to the sexual dream, how intense the moment was and how he paralyzed me with pleasure. The thought of us always making love in my dream made me more wet. My fingers made a sound because of the wetness as they went in and out of me. I used my other hand to rub my clit and I swear, it was almost as if like I was going to explode right there and then.. Why am I suddenly feeling this way about Banza?

To be continued

[08/24, 13:24] : 65

SANDISIWE

Challenging as it was, I managed to do the column with extra hours added to my normal hours of which I won't get paid for them. I didn't go for something drastic, I went for a topic that is not so much foreign hoping that people will be taken by my column. I was sharing my input on why men shouldn't feel obliged to financially take care of their partners in a relationship. Quite a sensitive topic, some will find it offensive and some will share the same sentiments..

Later on when I left the office, Sole's mom called and invited me for dinner at their house. I texted Sole, and he told me that I can go. He won't be able to come, he is very busy with something important..

NOVELSGURU.COM

I took an Uber that dropped me off at their gate, Aletta had texted me the address..I am very grateful that Sole's family want to be a part of us and the baby, especially since I have issues with my own family. It's really nice that they opening up to me and actually want me to be a part of their family...

It was good to see that Sole's father was sane, would've been difficult being in the company of 2 people who are not together mentally.. We sat in the living room as Aletta prepared dinner, she didn't want any help. When I had offered to help her, she said I will make a mess. Her house was very clean, there was nothing that was out of place. Everything was in its correct place...

Mr Botha: It's very nice to meet you, I've had a bit about you
He was drinking whiskey and I was drinking juice..Me: It's nice to meet you too

Sole looked like his father more..

Me: I'm sorry that Sole couldn't make it, he really wanted to be here

Him: It's okay, you don't have to make excuses for him

I nodded..

Him: How is he by the way? Tried reaching out to him but..

Me: He's good, he's very good

Him: One child I have that has an evil heart

Me: Evil heart? I beg to differ.. He is a very good person and very humble

Him: Sole doesn't forgive, and when he hates you. He will hate you until he goes to his grave. What happened between us was a long time ago, even today. He hasn't forgiven

Me: Maybe it's just his mental illness He looked at me..

Him: What mental illness?

Me: Sole has a mental illness, a rare mental illness

NOVELSGURU.COM

that makes him very smart

Him: No he doesn't.. Sole never had a mental illness nor is he smart. Actually he even struggled at school, hence what led to our fight. He was getting bad grades

Me: That's unusual, Sole is very smart Him:

Aletta! .. Aletta!

Aletta walked in..

Him: Sweetheart do you know anything about Sole's mental illness?

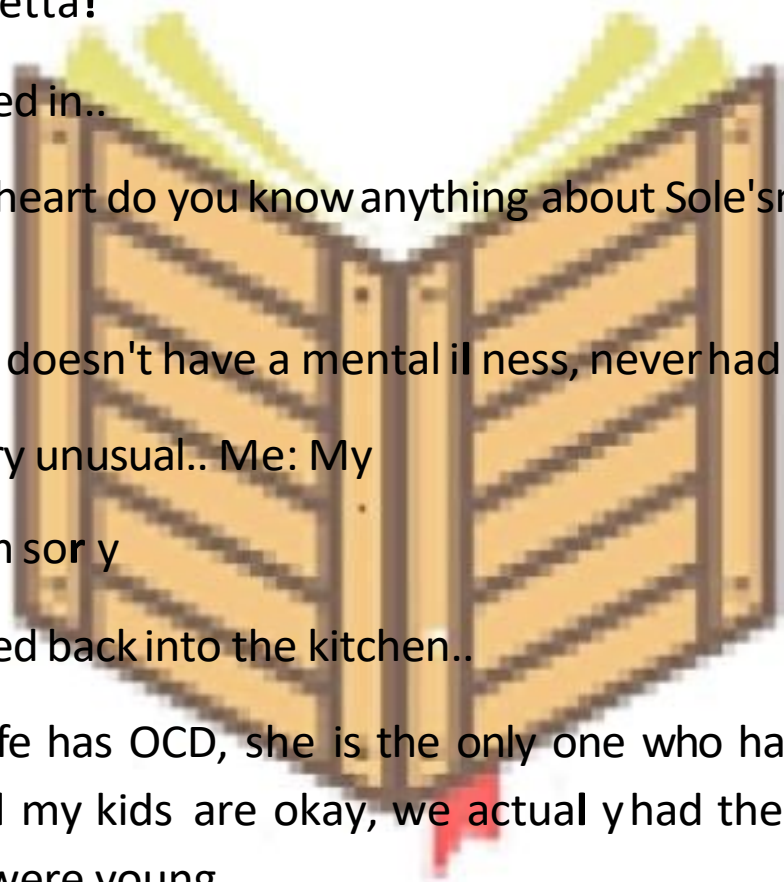
Aletta: Sole doesn't have a mental illness, never had one

This was very unusual.. Me: My mistake, I'm sorry

Aletta walked back into the kitchen..

Him: My wife has OCD, she is the only one who has a mental disorder. All my kids are okay, we actually had them checked when they were young

This was indeed very weird..



SOLE

Scorpion is a 28, he abides by the rules of the general. Basically I trust him more than I trust Stallion. He is a soldier at work and he knows very well how much loyalty means.

Scorp: The plan is perfect, good job man
Me: In 2 days time.. We will be doing this
He looked at Kelso..

Scorp: I don't know if home boy over there is game, we can't afford any slip ups

Me: I'll have a word with him

Kelso and being quiet that's not a good combination. If something bothers him, he would even throw things around like a kid throwing a tantrum. He has never been quiet, it's not him.. I walked up to him..

Me: You good?

NOVELSGURU.COM

He took time to respond..

Kelso: Yeah.. The plan is good too

Me: If you not okay and you want us to cancel everything, we can

Kelso: No we going ahead with everything

Me: We going against the Italians, one mistake.They will kill us

Kelso: I know

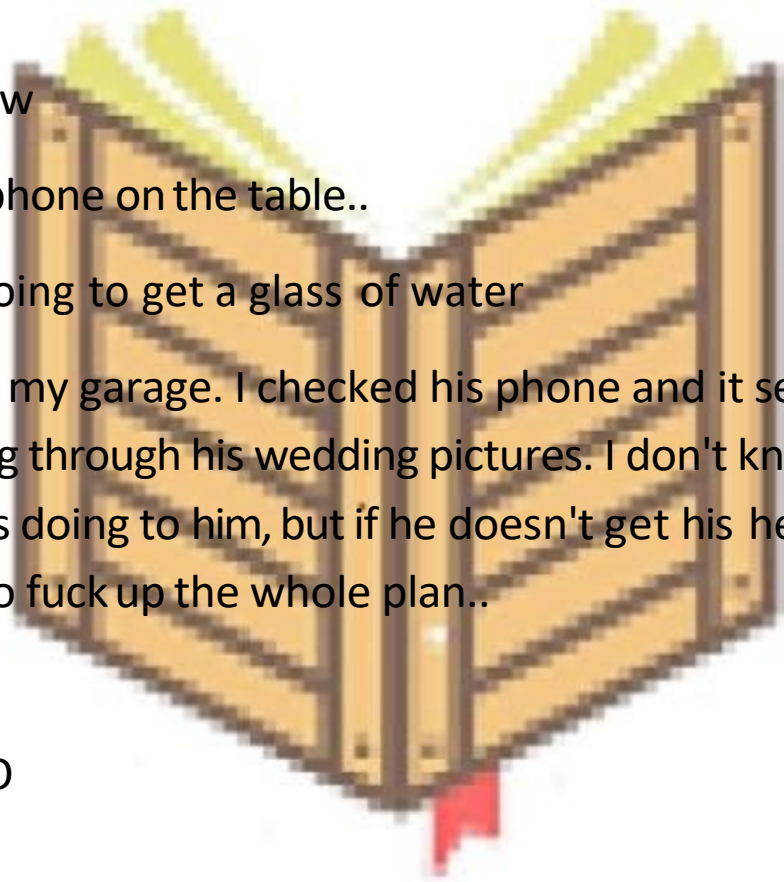
He put his phone on the table..

Kelso: I'm going to get a glass of water

We were in my garage. I checked his phone and it seems like he was going through his wedding pictures. I don't know what Nongcebo is doing to him, but if he doesn't get his head right. He's going to fuck up the whole plan..

NONGCEBO

I was now at home and cooking. I had one crazy day. I couldn't even walk properly, not because of



NOVELSGURU.COM

mastubating but because of the itchiness and irritation I was experiencing down there. I even bathe when I came back, spent those minutes of my bathing busy scratching myself with the face cloth. So much that when I checked myself through the mirror, it seemed like I had rash and I also saw some redness at the entrance..

I was wearing one of Kelso's t-shirts without any underwear. At least the t-shirt was a bit long.. I was on the phone with Gertrude as Grams watched TV..

Gertrude: Tomorrow please go and consult, it sounds like a trush

Me: I was going to stop the injection but, Kelso doesn't want to use a condom. I don't want a baby anytime soon, not when I still have a lot to achieve

Her: How is your discharge? Me: It's foul and a bit brownish

Her: Sounds a bit serious, please consult tomorrow Me: I'll do so

Her: I have to go, I'm a bit busy



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Okay we talk

Her: Bye baby, please take care of that stubbornSon of mine

Me: I'll do so Her: I

love you

Me: I love you tooHer:

Bye

Me: Bye

Despite her issues with Kelso, I've really grown fond of Gertrude. She's like a mother that I never had. I don't understand why she did what she did, but I'm sure she had her reasons. I'm not even going to judge her, I'm not so perfect either..

SASA

My relationship with Banza was starting to get serious, and I was falling hard. I still can't believe that after my shitty relationship, a good guy came



NOVELSGURU.COM

along. He's a very loving person and I'm glad I got him.. He dropped off the last passenger, I was on the front seat. I'll be spending a night at his place, so he had fetched him.. I looked at him as he was driving, he had his hat on and we were playing music..

"Thandi mthande ke Thandi

mthande ke Thandi

mthande ke Thandi

mthande ke Darli

ungphul'inhliziyi Darli

ungphul'inhliziyi Darli

ungphul'inhliziyi Darli

ungphul'inhliziyi"

He was singing along to the song as he moved his head a bit... He would whistle in between.. He noticed that I was looking at him, he smiled at me and I smiled at him too

I took a video as he concentrated on the road, I

uploaded on Facebook with the caption:"my heart, my king "

I tagged him..

Him: What should we get? Me: I

don't know.. Anything

Him: Ayikho into ebathi yi "Anything"Me:

Anything is fine by me

Him: Uzohlala ungadli ke (You won't eat)He drove into the mal..

NONGCEBO

I leaned against the fridge as my pots were on the stove. As I was busy keeping myself busy on Facebook I noticed that Sasa had tagged Banza. I played the video and bit my lower lip.. I commented:

"Ohh Dali seng'mbona ngendlela engakaze ngambona.. Bheka mina ngendwa "

NOVELSGURU.COM

I downloaded the video and uploaded it on mywhatsapp status:

"Ngiyak'khuza njalo ngathi usung'fakele iNtando "

I put my phone on the counter and checked thepots..

KELSO

Sole: I'll see you tomor ow

Me: Yeah Man.. I'll see you tomor ow

He stepped away from my car, I rolled up my window. My phone beeped, It was a whatsapp text from Power. Telling me that Hakeem needed nappies. I texted her that I'll transfer her some money. I checked whatsapp statuses that my contacts uploaded bumped into Nongcebo's status. She had uploaded a video of Banza, I clenched my

Jaws and threw my phone on the passanger's seat..

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

[08/24, 13:24] : 66

NONGCEBO

Kelso was awful y quiet tonight as we ate dinner, it was so unlike him. He would usual y be teasing meright now, eating from my plate just to annoy me.

He would just be his usual crazy self, but tonight hefocused his attention more on the TV..

Me: Love

Him: Ya?

He didn't even look at me..

Me: Tomor ow I'm going to see a DoctorHim:

What's wrong?

Me: The ir itation is back, think I should consult tosee what the matter is

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I'll take you to the Drtomor ow morning

Me: Thank you

His phone rang, he looked at it for a long time..Him: I

have to take this, it's Sole

He stood up and walked out. That was new, since when doesn't he answer calls in front of me?

SANDISIWE

Sole didn't come in, he called and waited at the gate. A lot was happening that it was confusing me, I didn't know what to think anymore. All I know is that someone is lying, and I'm afraid that it might be Sole. How on earth would his Parents not know about his mental condition? Or maybe it started late when he had moved out? His father showed me his report cards, he wasn't very good with academics, but how is he so smart? I don't get it. Do I even know this man that I'm with? The man I'm about to have a baby with?

NOVELSGURU.COM

I got into the car..He

kissed me..

Him: How was dinner?

Me: It was good, your Parents are very lovely people
Him: Yes they are

He started the car..

Me: Why aren't you giving them a chance?

Sole: A lot happened between us, especially between me and my Father

Me: Oh I see

He held my hand as we drove back home..

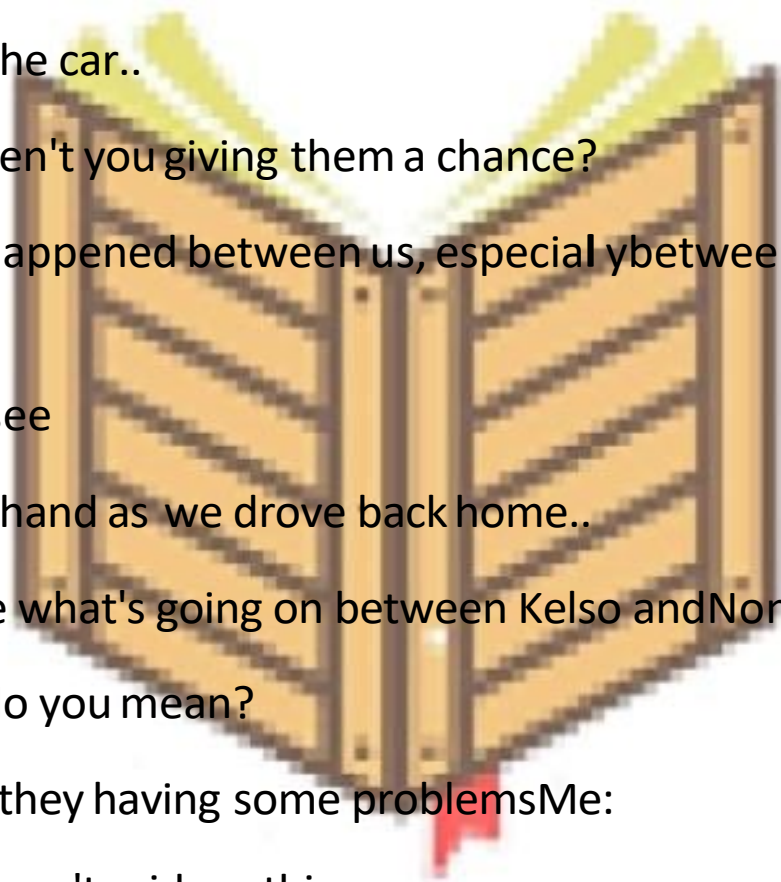
Him: Tell me what's going on between Kelso and Nongcebo?

Me: What do you mean?

Him: I think they are having some problems
Me:

Nongcebo hasn't said anything

Him: Kelso is shutting down, which is not good



Me: What do you mean?

Him: There's Kelso when he's angry, then there's Kelso when he's silently Angry which is not good

Me: I'll talk to Nongcebo and see Him:

Thank you

(Silence)

Me: Ohh my.. Think I forgot my Doctor's appointment. Think it was today

Sole: That's bad.. Good thing you told me about the date, you going next week

I sighed..

Me: Thank God

He kissed my hand..

Sole: We a team remember? Me:

Yes I remember

KELSO

NOVELSGURU.COM



The call was from Neli, thought she wanted nothing to do with me..

Me: I thought you wanted nothing to do with me? I heard her sniffing..

Me: Yini? (What is it)

Her: I didn't know who else to call Me:

What's wrong?

Her: I'm in trouble Me:

What trouble?

Her: I am at the club and this guy and his friends bought me and my friend some alcohol. We were going to dodge them but.. We in the bathroom and we scared (crying)

Me: You got to be kidding me!

Her: Please Kelso you owe me for what you did last time

Me: Fine stay in there, I'll come.. Just text me the name of the club

Her: Channel M

Me: Are you serious right now?

Her: Please Kelso, I didn't know who else to call Me: Fine I'm coming... It's going to take a while but Her: Thank you

I hung up and called Scorpion..

SASA

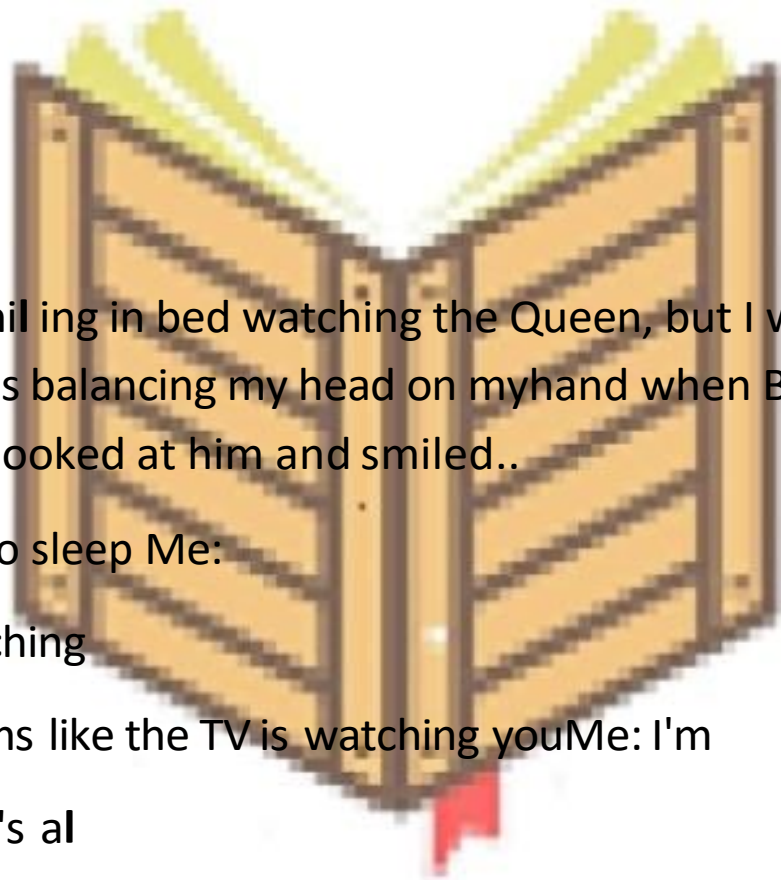
We were chilling in bed watching the Queen, but I was already dozing. I was balancing my head on my hand when Banza pulled my hand. I looked at him and smiled..

Banza: Go to sleep Me:

I'm still watching

Banza: Seems like the TV is watching you Me: I'm just full that's all

Banza: Then get some rest



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Maybe after the Queen

He leaned over and kissed me...Banza:

Get some rest

Me: I will

We continued kissing and I laid back on the bed, I put my hand at the back of his neck as his hand went down from my breasts all the way down to squeezing my cookie. I haven't had action in a very long time. Ever since I broke up with my baby daddy I haven't gotten some action because I have been single. I parted my legs a bit as his hand rubbed my coochie whilst I still had my PJ shorts on. I put my other hand on his cheek. He moved from my lips and kissed my neck, then he went down to my chest and brought his hand up. He snuck it under my PJ top, and got a hold of my breast. That forced me to take off my PJ top, I wasn't wearing any bra and he was chilling with his boxers only.

He cupped my breast and sucked it, with his other hand gently running through my hair.

NOVELSGURU.COM

It was a moment worth taking in, and I could swear that my hormones were starting to betray me. He moved his hand down and snuck it inside my PJ shorts, then he went inside my underwear and tapped my coochie a bit. [Removed]

NONGCEBO

Kelso wasn't around, I checked him outside and his car was also gone. I thought about calling Sandi to ask if Sole was with Kelso but I remembered our last encounter and stopped. I texted Kelso

"Where are you?"

I threw my phone on the bed and started pacing up and down in the bedroom..

Lately I haven't been regular when it comes to praying let alone going to church. Unfortunately I work on weekends since I'm a temp, making it difficult for me to go to church on Sunday. When it comes to praying, it has gotten a bit boring. I just

NOVELSGURU.COM

close my eyes and my mind will go blank, I would have nothing to say..

.

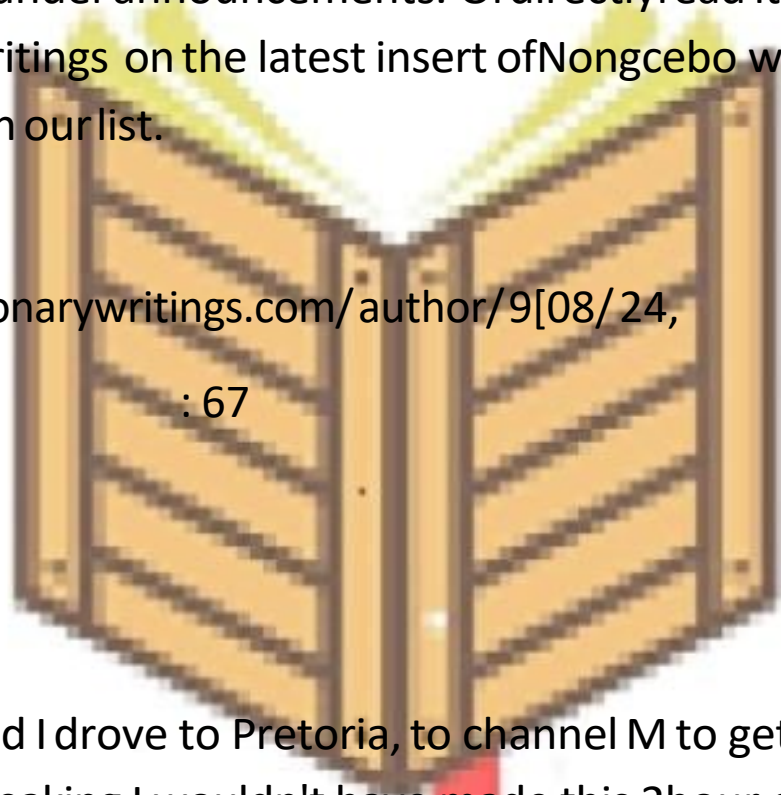
To be continued

Please read the full explicit content on our closed group "TTEOPM" under announcements. Or directly read it from Visionarywritings on the latest insert of Nongcebo which is the first story on our list.

<https://visionarywritings.com/author/9>[08/24,
13:24] : 67

KELSO

Scorpion and I drove to Pretoria, to channel M to get Neli. Honestly speaking I wouldn't have made this 2 hour drive had it not been for the fact that I "owed her". I don't know what Neli was thinking, you don't just accept drinks, they come at a price and not for



NOVELSGURU.COM

free.

The club was full of young people, how are they here? It's not even the weekend but here they are partying their lives away.. I searched the bathrooms instructed whilst Scorp stood at the main entrance. I texted her that she can come out, I'm waiting at the door.

She did come out after a few seconds holding her bag and heels. She walked up to me and hugged me very tight..

Neli: I'm so glad to see you Me:

Yeah let's get out of here

We walked out without even looking back, we met up with Scorp outside. He was having a smoke..

Scorp: Are we good?

Me: It's full they probably got tired of waiting or lost them

Scorp: Damn I was hoping to crack a skull, but I guess not tonight

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Let's just get them home and get the fuck out of here

SASA

After coming he laid on me for a while to catch his breath. This was the 3rd round and I was done. I wanted nothing more but to rest. He looked at me..

Him: Are you good?

Me: Yes.. I just want to rest

He got off me and rolled out the condom. I closed my legs and let out a breath.

After disposing the condom, he checked if the door was properly locked then he switched off the light and got in bed. He pulled me closer to him and I laid my head on his chest. He kissed me on my forehead with his arms wrapped around me...

Him: Good night Nana

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Good night

NELISIWE

I moved out of my sister's place and moved in with my friend not so long ago who also happens to be in my class. My sister's place made it hard for me to travel to school, so my friend and I found a flat that we're renting closer to school. I'm doing my second year, enrolled at Tut..

I usually do this a lot, get guys to buy me free drinks at the club. What happened tonight, has never happened before. I was really scared no lie, it was 4 of them and only two of us. It could've turned out really bad..

Kelso followed me to my bedroom, he was yelling at me as if like I was stupid..

Me: Stop yelling at me as if like I'm stupid!

Him: You are stupid! What did you expect was going

to happen after those guys bought you drinks do you think they were going to let you get away free?

Me: You did it! And you let me walk the following day!

Him: Because I had no intentions of hurting you! Women get raped and brutally killed almost everyday, and here you are handing yourself to get killed on a silver platter. What's wrong with just drinking indoors? Why go to a club if you don't have money? How stupid can you be?

Me: Why do you care? You were just doing me this favour because you owed me!

Him: I don't owe you shit! Me:

Then why did you come?

Him: You know what fuck you bitch! He walked to the door..

Me: Right back at you! You punk! He turned and looked at me..

Him: What did you say?

He walked up to me and hopped on the bed to make it to the other side, but he grabbed my leg and pulled me to the edge of the bed.

With my other leg, I kicked him on his tummy a few times before he staggered back and let go. I dropped to the other side and got up, I ran out of the bedroom to the bathroom and locked the door..

Scorpion: Wtf is going on?

My friend Asive was passed out on the couch, she threw herself on the couch when we got in..

Scorp: Kelso what's going on?

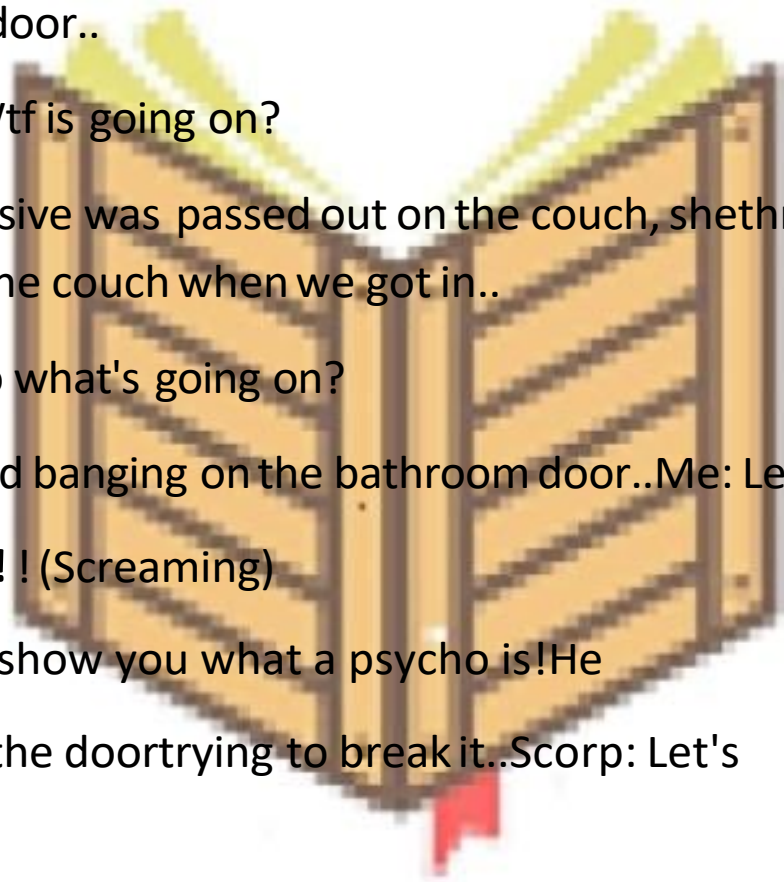
Kelso started banging on the bathroom door.. Me: Leave you psycho!! (Screaming)

Kelso: I will show you what a psycho is! He

banged on the door trying to break it.. Scorp: Let's go

Kelso: Just give me a few minutes

Scorp: I didn't come here to watch you beat up a woman, it's not my thing. If you wanna do it, you will



NOVELSGURU.COM

come back and do it on your own. Not in my presence

Me: He is weak! Only a weak man can beat up a woman!

Kelso: Open the fucken door and I'll show you how a weak man is!

Scorp: Kelso let's go

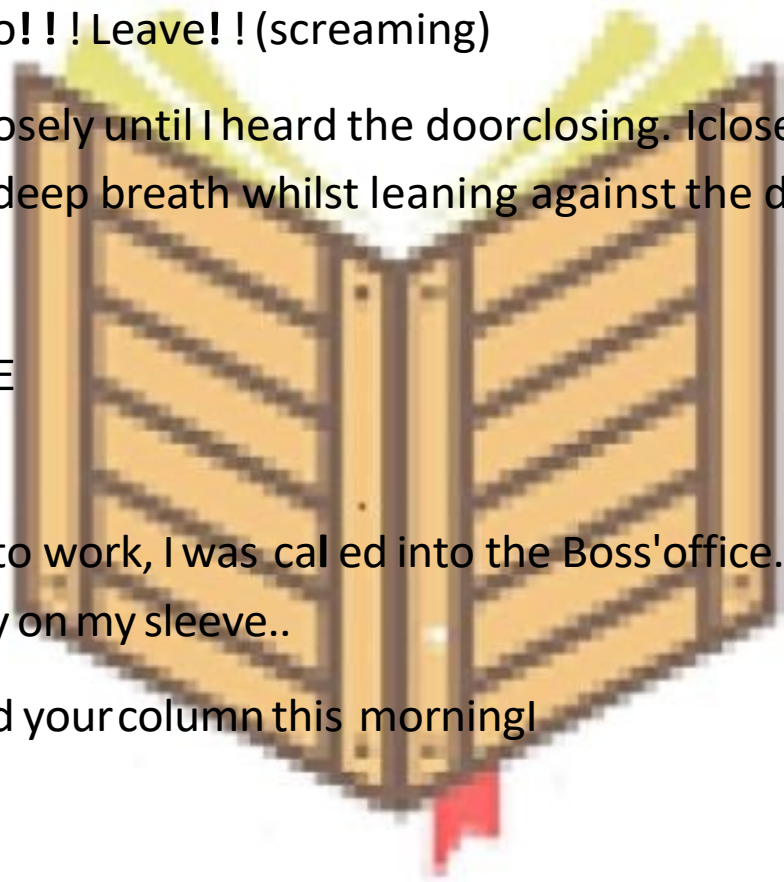
Me: Yeah go!!! Leave!! (screaming)

I listened closely until I heard the door closing. I closed my eyes and took a deep breath whilst leaning against the door..

SANDISIWE

When I got to work, I was called into the Boss's office. My heart was already on my sleeve..

Bruce: I read your column this morning I nodded..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Okay

Bruce: It's not the best but it's not bad either I didn't know how to respond..

Bruce: It will be included on our Facebook page and Twitter account, so watch out for the comments and people's comments

Me: Yes Sir... Thank you

Bruce: You can get back to work

I got up and walked out, bumping into Anele.. Him:

And?

Me: Well I'm confused, he didn't hate it and he didn't like it either

Anele: Bruce doesn't necessarily compliment anyone, he thinks that if he gives you a compliment you will start fucking up

I chuckled.. Anele:

Coffee?

Me: Uhm.. I need to start typing for my next column



Anele: Come on..

Me: I have a boyfriend and I'm pregnant

He buried his hands deep inside his pockets. Anele: I wasn't hitting on you

Me: I don't want male friends either

Anele: Understood.. We were just going to have coffee as colleagues

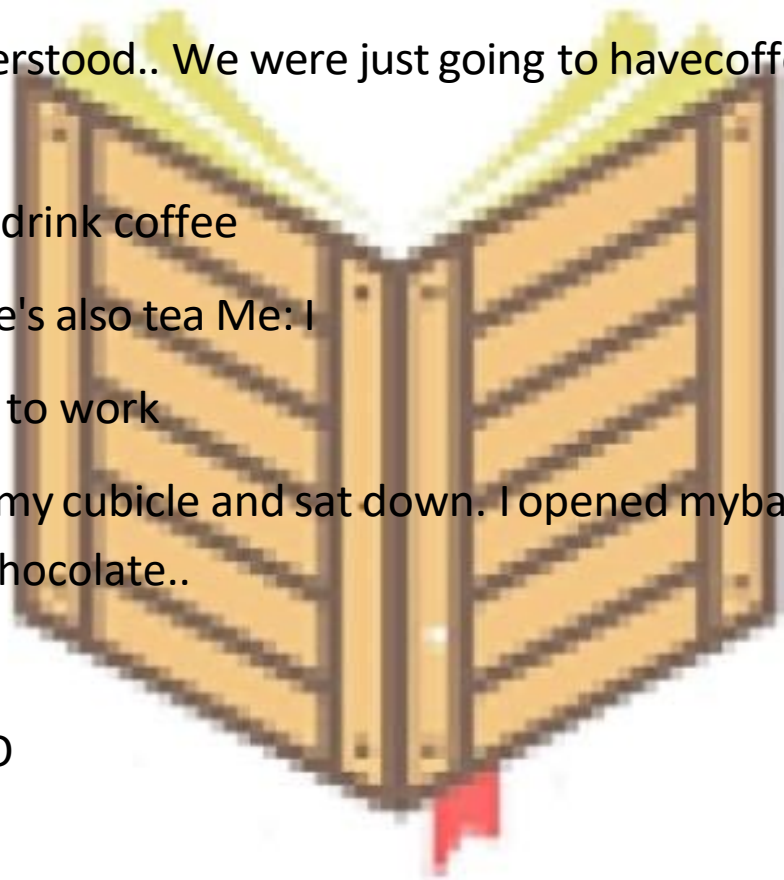
Me: I don't drink coffee

Anele: There's also tea Me: I need to get to work

I walked to my cubicle and sat down. I opened my bag and took out a chocolate..

NONGCEBO

Kelso came back very late last night, I wasn't able to ask him where he comes from. Even this morning when I left, I left him a note. I was surprised to get a



NOVELSGURU.COM

text from him saying that he's outside, I told him to come in because I was already consulting.. I explained my symptoms to the Dr, and he checked me. Checked my coochie I was so embarrassed by the smell but he seemed to not be bothered.. After checking me, I went and sat down again. Kelso was busy with his phone..

Dr: Is it painful when you urinate?

Me: Yes last night and this morning it was a bit painful

Dr: I noticed the redness and swelling in your vagina, also your discharge is yellowish and has an unpleasant odour

Me: I've been struggling with the smelly discharge, it's been a while now

Dr: Your symptoms are no different from that of chlamydia. I'm afraid you might have chlamydia

Kelso dropped his phone on the floor..Me:

What is chlamydia?

Dr: It's a sexually transmitted infection, get it mostly

NOVELSGURU.COM

when you have unprotected sex with different people. Or if you have slept with someone who has it

I laughed..

Me: I have never slept with anyone other than my husband, I think you made a mistake

The Dr looked at Kelso..

Kelso: I don't have an STI, so don't look in my direction

Me: There has to be a mistake Dr, I have never slept with anyone else

Kelso: Lento ngathi seyicala ukungicika (This thing is now irritating me)

He got up and walked outside, I looked at the Dr..

Dr: Is your husband faithful? Because I have to treat both of you. Just because he's not showing symptoms it doesn't mean he's not infected especially if both of you have been sexually active at the time when you started experiencing the symptoms

I was getting confused, this was not making any sense at all .
I haven't cheated on Kelso, how is it that I got an STI?

[08/24, 13:25] : 68

SASA

The first thing I did when I woke up was to clean and tidy around his room. Banza left at 4am, I was still sleeping when he left. He left me a note with R200, I found it on the TV stand.. When I was done cleaning, I bathe..

After bathing and dressing up, when I went out to pour out the water Banza's Mother was now sitting outside in the sun. I greeted her and she called me, I put the basin back inside then went to her. I took a bucket turned it upside down and sat on it..

Me: Sawubona Ma (Greetings) Her:

Unjani Sasa? (how are you)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ngiyaphila wena? (I'm well and you?) Her: I would be lying if I said I'm well

Me: Whats wrong?

Her: Ngihlushwa yizinyawo (my legs are giving me a problem) I remember Banza telling me that his mom is not well ..

Me: Did you go to the hospital?

Her: Ai they don't see anything wrong, they just give me pills She was even struggling to breath..

Her: I've been praying but.. I don't know what's wrong

Me: I don't mean to speak out of turn but have you considered seeing someone? Problem with your legs sometimes could mean you are bewitched or it might be ancestors trying to get through to you

Her: Hai Sasa mina ang'sazi (I don't know) She wiped her tears with her shirt..

Her: Why would my ancestors make me suffer like this? Aren't they suppose to love and protect me if they love me? Why are they being evil to me?

Me: Sometimes they get angry especially if they've been trying to get through to you but you being stubborn

Her: I really don't know.. Now this is affecting my marriage, my relationship with my Son. I've been praying? Why has God forsaken me? I haven't had good health, why was I being chosen to do something that I don't know

It was painful seeing her crying like that. I got up and put my arm around her shoulders, she held it..

Her: Noma ke bangithathe akusenandaba (they should take me I don't care anymore)

NONGCEBO

Kelso was quiet as we drove back home, I was lost in my thoughts. Confused at what the Dr said to me.

When we got home, I followed him. We walked in and I went to the bed to put my pills and my bag. I heard Kelso locking the door, he showed up and sat on the dressing table..

Him: Sit down

I sat on the bed. I have never seen him so defeated.. Him: Ulele naye Nongcebo? (Did you sleep with him) I looked at him..

Him: uBanza uk'shayile? (Did Banza hit it)

I shook my head no.. He took off his beanie hat and wiped his face..

Him: I'm trying here, but if you keep on lying to me you only going to make me mad

Me: I didn't sleep with him

Him: I've heard you moan his name at night, I've seen your status messages and it messes me up right now that you lying to me. Baby you stood in front of everyone and promised that you were going to stay faithful to me, all along I kept quiet thinking that if you loved me, you weren't going to go

NOVELSGURU.COM

through with the wedding whilst knowing very well that you
unfaithful

My eyes wel ed up..

Him: Did you sleep with him? I shook
my head slowly..

He pul ed the little chair and put his foot on it..

Him: I love you so much and it pisses me off that you sitting
there and lying to me. What did I do for you to do this to me?

Tears streamed down... Him:

Nongcebo! !

He looked at me until his eyes wel ed up too..

Him: You breaking my heart, uyang'bulala
Nongcebo (you killing me)

Me: I didn't sleep with him I swear

He chuckled as tears fel from his side. He shook his head and
wiped them..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: "Thixo somandla sul' intliziyo yam" (God

cleanse my heart)

Me: Kelso please.. I love you (crying)Him:

Take off your clothes

Me: Huh?

Him: Take off your clothes before I do it for you! stood up and undressed as he started singing..

Him: "Nkosi baxolele.. Nkosi baxolele, bafun' ukung'dida, bazama ukung'gqiba kanti sathane ungenzani" (Lord forgive em.. Lord forgive em.. They trying to fool me, they trying to kill me.. Devil what are you doing to me)

He got up and went to his drawer, he took out his gun. A breath escaped my lips..

He aimed it at me..

Him: Asizame futhi skat (let's try again)I started shaking..

Him: Was he in my pussy?I put

my hands together..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Kelso please

Him: Was he?

Me: No.. I..

He pulled the trigger but nothing happened..

Me: Ohh my God please save me, you know I'm innocent
(crying)

He clicked his tongue then opened the drawer again and took out bullets, he loaded them. I went down on my knees..

Me: God please.. You know I didn't do anything, please.. If there's ever a time I needed you, it's now

Kelso: Let's try again

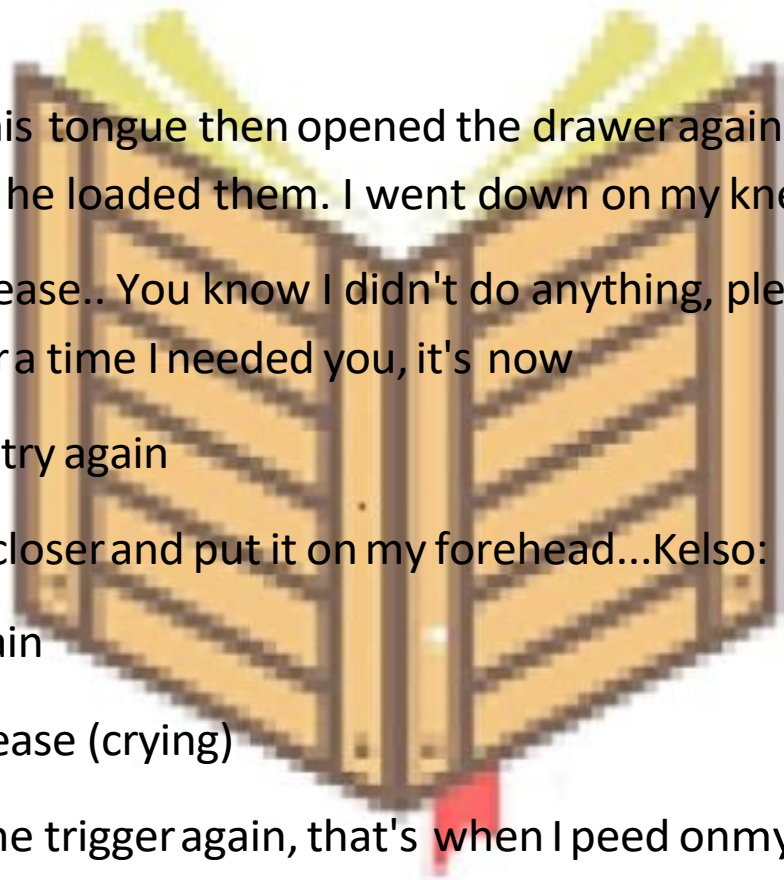
He walked closer and put it on my forehead...Kelso:

Let's try again

Me: God please (crying)

He pulled the trigger again, that's when I peed on myself..

He sighed then cocked it against his boot..



Him: One last time... Did you sleep with him? There was no escaping this..

Him: 1.. 2...3

Me: Yes!.. Yes I did.. He lowered the gun..

Me: I'm sor y.. I'm sor y (crying) He nodded whilst wiping his face.. Me: I'm sor y Kelso

He grabbed me by my weave and dragged me across the floor..

Me: Kelso please..

He stopped and kicked me on my back.. Him: You making noise! !

He dragged me al the way to the bathroom and then threw me in the shower. He turned on the tap and cold water hit against my skin

NOVELSGURU.COM

He turned the tap for hot water..

Him: We going to play a game Ngcebo... It's cal ed

"The game of love" and we going to play it my way. If you thinking of running away, I wil find you... If you think of going to the police, my Father is the general prison wil be home to me. My father has contacts and his people wil visit Bongeka and you don't wanna know what's going to happen. They wilbring her in jail fora conjugal visit, you don't wanna know what grown and sexual hungry men who havebeen in jail for years can do to her. Then your casewon't go anywhere, I'l be out and then I'l kil you, and kil him.. His mother, his father, everyone he cares about

The waterwas starting to get extremely hot..

Me: God please.. Why do you always forsake me?(crying)

He took the scrubbing brush and dettol. He turned off the tap and emptied the whole bottle on me. He started scrubbing me mercilessly. The scrubbing brush was hard, so much I sawblood on the showertiles..

Him: You disgust me! You smel ! You slept with him

only to go get an STI!

He spat on me.. He walked over and took the bottle of domestos. He splashed it all over my body and scrubbed me again, it was the most painful thing I've ever experienced. He turned on the water again and then threw the scrubbing brush at me..

Him: I love you Skat.. I fucken love you!

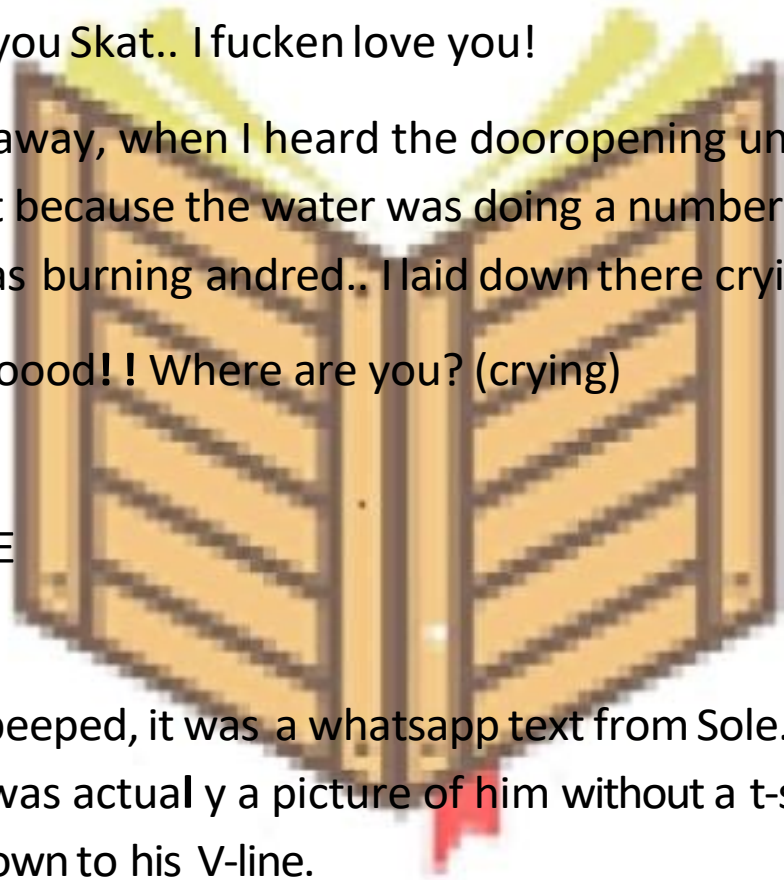
He walked away, when I heard the door opening unlocking. I crawled out because the water was doing a number on me. My body was burning and red.. I laid down there crying..

Me: Gooooood!! Where are you? (crying)

SANDISIWE

My phone beeped, it was a whatsapp text from Sole. When I checked it was actually a picture of him without a t-shirt on, it extended down to his V-line.

He had on that serious look and biting his lower lip. I crossed my legs right away, this was just torture at



NOVELSGURU.COM

work..

I cal ed him..Him:

Sweets

Me: What's with the torture?

Him: Was just showing you what you missing out on

Me: Ohw then when I get home and take advantage of you, you'll be screaming rape

He chuckled..

Him: This phone cal is recorded, it wil serve asevidence

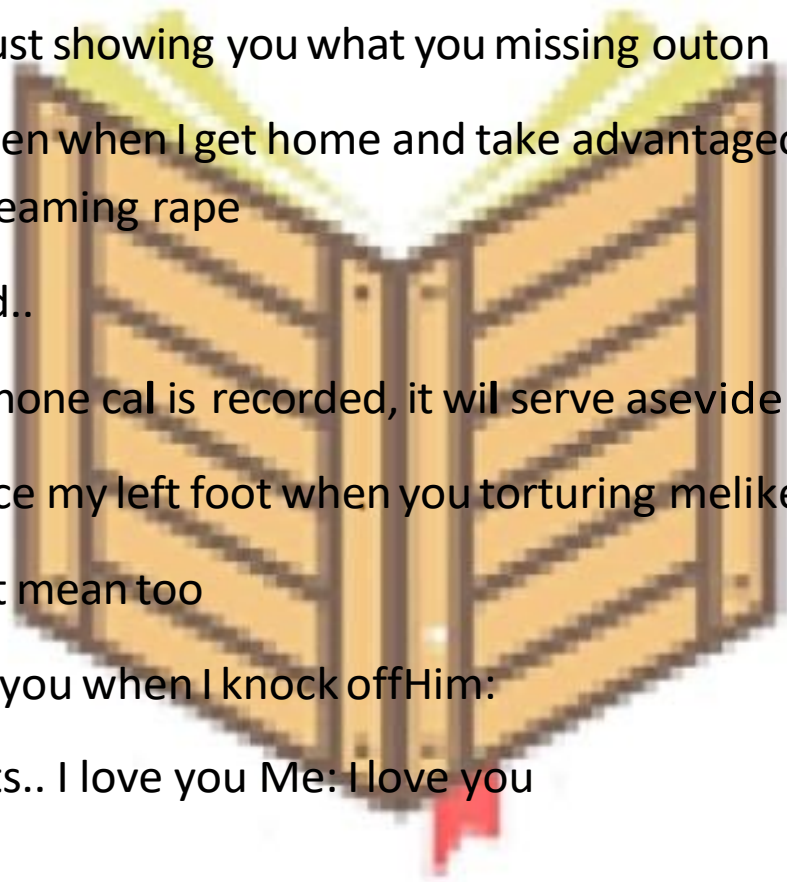
Me: Evidence my left foot when you torturing melike this

Him: I didn't mean too

Me: I'll see you when I knock offHim:

Okay sweets.. I love you Me: I love you

too



NOVELSGURU.COM

SASA

I looked at her as she peacefully slept. I closed my eyes and walked out of her bedroom. I looked at the time, I needed to get home..

I walked out and went to the bedroom to take my things, when I walked out to lock. Kelso showed up..I locked the door..

Kelso: Sasa

I looked at him..

Me: Kelso Kelso:

uGrand? I nodded..

Him: Cava ng'funa uBanza Skat (I'm looking forBanza)

Me: He is ranking

He kicked the small stones..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Numberplate?Me:

Why?

Him: He's probably on the road

Me: Why don't you wait for him to come back?Him: He
will take time, I don't have that time

Me: I don't feel comfortable giving you his numberplate

Him: My Grandmother is going to this camping what what
church thing with her home cel ladies, I wanna book Banza's
taxi

Me: Ohw.. Okay

I gave him the number plates..Him:

Ta Skat (thank you)

He walked up to me.. He squeezed my cheek..Him:

Umuhle san yezwa? (You beautiful)

That made me blush a little, a guy like Kelso giving me a
compliment..

Me: Dankie

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I hope les'lima sakho siyazi (I hope your fool knows that)

His hand was smelling of chemicals.. He whistled and then walked away.. I was still taken by his compliment, phela Kelso fucks with girls who are beyond me. The likes of Powershe's very beautiful, not forgetting his beautiful wife Nongcebo. So I'm taking this compliment and locking it in my bag..

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Nonhle Dlamini, please check the page "The setup" It's a good story

<https://m.facebook.com/thesetupbook/>[08/24,
13:25] : 69

SANDISIWE

When I was done with my column I packed all my

NOVELSGURU.COM



things to go home, when Anele showed up with a chocolate..

Anele: I got you this.. Noticed you eat them a lot, figured maybe it's your cravings

I looked at it..

Anele: It's just a chocolate from a colleague nothing major, I'm not asking you out on a date or asking to marry you

I took it...

Me: Thank you

Anele: Your boyfriend is lucky, I hope he knows that
Me: He does

Anele: Respecting him to the point of not wanting a harmless friendship, I wonder if your kind still exists

I laughed..

Me: I think we are a dying breed

Anele: That is very true, I sure hope to find your breed too

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: You single?

Anele: Sort off

Me: Sort off?

Anele: It's an on and off thing, we having problemsMe: Ohw I see

Anele: Yes.. Anyway let me not keep you, enjoy the rest of the day. Looking forward to reading your column tomor ow morning. Real y liked the one forthis morning

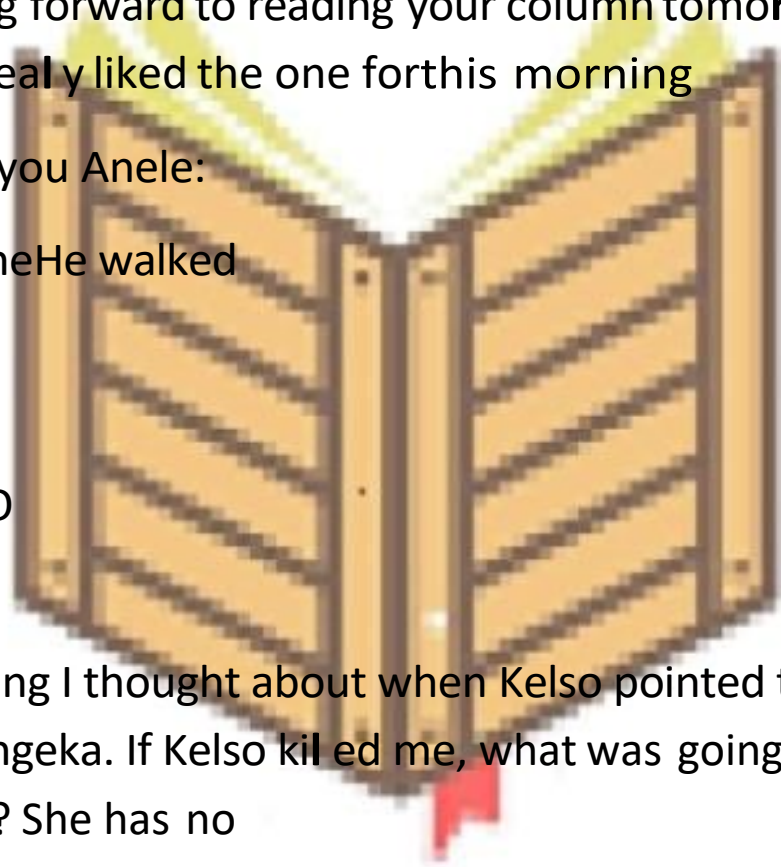
Me: Thank you Anele:

You welcomeHe walked

away...

NONGCEBO

The only thing I thought about when Kelso pointed that gun at me was Bongeka. If Kelso kil ed me, what was going to become of Bongeka? She has no



NOVELSGURU.COM

one else but me.. Now I can't even trust her with Kelso anymore so that's the main reason why I lied and said I slept with Banza when I didn't.

I really don't care what he does to me, it's not like this is my first time going through this, the only difference is that Kelso is more brutal than how Zulu was. Zulu was the devil, and Kelso is the whole hell. The devil, demons, and the burning fire combined together.. I was in so much pain that my whole body started shivering, my mind was all over the place. Thinking about his statement and actually imagining Bongeka going through that being sexually violated by ruthless men, became the reason why I needed to be strong. I don't want her to die, she's still young. I don't want her ending up in a foster home where she will be taken advantage of. I don't want her to go through what I went through, she has been through hell already. She deserves a break, she doesn't deserve more torture. The floor was bloody, pieces of my skin were on the floor.

The more I tried to crawl, the more I left pieces of my flesh on the floor. A bloody gruesome horror

movie was nothing compared to what was happening to me at this moment. With Zulu I knew how to cool him down, but Kelso. I haven't been with him long enough to know how to tame him...

One thing that I have practiced to master, was to program my brain to take in pain without leading me to insanity. I have a high tolerance for pain and what I know right now is that Kelso is not God. I will find that one thing that's going to break me from him, forever! Then when I leave, I'm not going to look back. All I have to do is to make sure that I don't leave in a coffin..

I heard a few knocks at the door before it opened, then I heard Grams voice...

Her: Ngcebo?

I tried to keep calm but my emotions were getting a better of me. I think my cries led her straight to the bathroom..

Her: Aww Nkosi yami yini (My God what's wrong)

NOVELSGURU.COM

She slowly knelt down before me..

Her: Nkosi yami kodwa yini, ngivelelwa yini? (God what's happening)

I didn't hold back my cries, I cried for dear life..

BANZA

Lady: iChange yi R15!

gave it to her...

Her: Thank you

She closed the door. Right when I was about to join the road, A golf pulled up and blocked me. I had about 5 passengers in the car, and I wasn't in a busy road. When I looked closely, it was Kelso. He got out whilst holding a gun and approached the taxi. The ladies started panicking... He drank what was left in the bottle of Corona beer that he was holding, then opened the door..

He burped and looked at the passengers..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: Zonke izinja out! Manje! (all the dogs get out now)

The ladies got off without saying a word, they feared for their lives. It was bad because most of them were far from their destination, but how do you protest with someone who is holding a gun. He closed the door in a rough manner and came to my side, he opened the door and pointed the gun at me..

Kelso: Nawe mgodoyi out! (you too get out) He looked at the ladies..

Kelso: Bo nunuza, bo nunuber y milani impiko angifuni ukunibona la (Ladies please vanish, I don't wanna see you here)

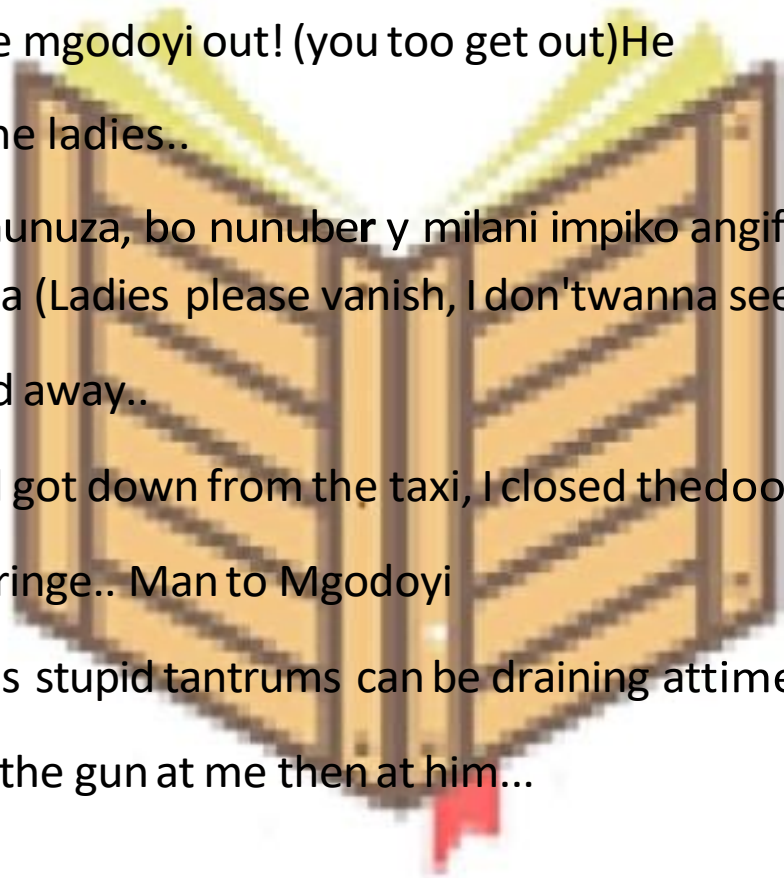
They walked away..

I sighed and got down from the taxi, I closed the door..

Kelso: Masiringe.. Man to Mgodoyi

Kelso and his stupid tantrums can be draining at times...

He pointed the gun at me then at him...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: Mina nawe, bengithi siyi skeem van die one (I thought you and I were cool)

I waited for him to say something that actually was of interest to me...

Kelso: Wena udla ukudla kwami (you sleeping with my wife)

Me: Makube ngathi uyashesha nyana eyy ngoba nale langa liyashisa (Speed it up, because it's hot)

He punched me in my stomach..

Kelso: Wena you sleeping with my wife!

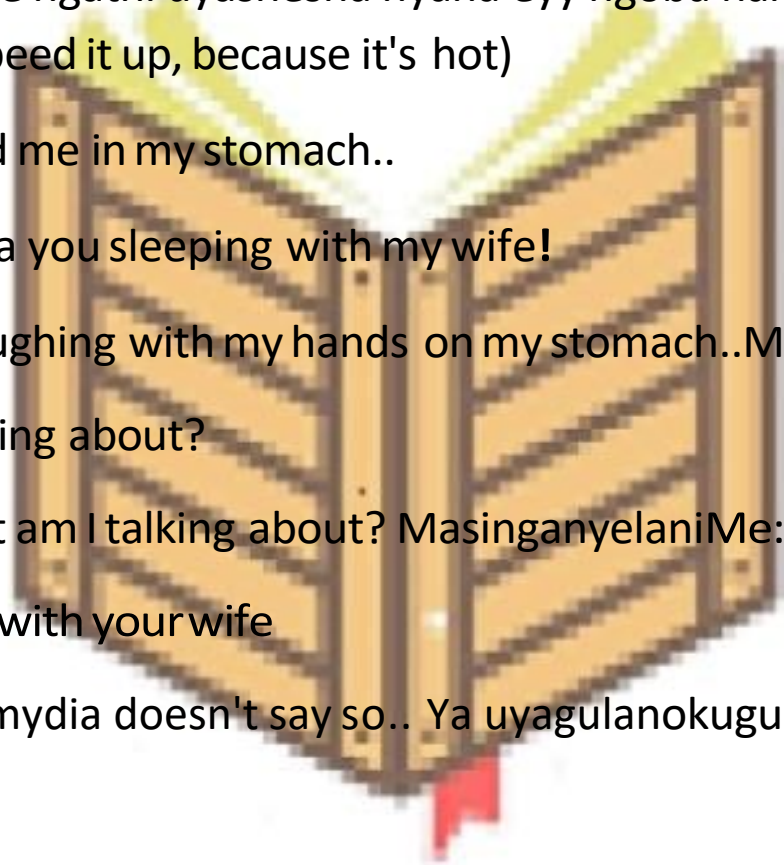
I started coughing with my hands on my stomach.. Me: What are you talking about?

Kelso: What am I talking about? Masinganyelani Me: I have never slept with your wife

Kelso: Chlamydia doesn't say so.. Ya uyagulanokugula (You even sick)

Me: Kelso..

Kelso: Eyy maan she told me, she confessed!



Me: Uyang'hlanyela uNongcebo (Your wife is crazy)He hit me with the back of his gun on my head..

Kelso: I was thinking of killing you but that's way too easy
By now I was sitting on the ground.. He crouched and spat on the ground..

Kelso: Ngiyikhiphile inombolo la kuwe, yabona nja yami ngeke kunyiwe.. Kuyonyiwa times 14 (I have abulet with your name, things are going to go down times 14)

He got up and put his gun at the back. He turned around and lifted his t-shirt just so I can see it.. He walked away and turned around pointing his fingers at me..

Kelso: Phaaa! Eyy kuzonyiwa poi!, la ngidla khonaakungenwa (It's going to go down, where I fuck noone enters)

He continued walking away to his cardoing that victory walk of him and displaying his gun. He raised his hands up...

Him: Nguwu KB kayi one, mawukhohliwe ubuzeabangaziyo bazok'sikela I story!

A song was playing in his car, he started dancing to it when he got closer to his car..

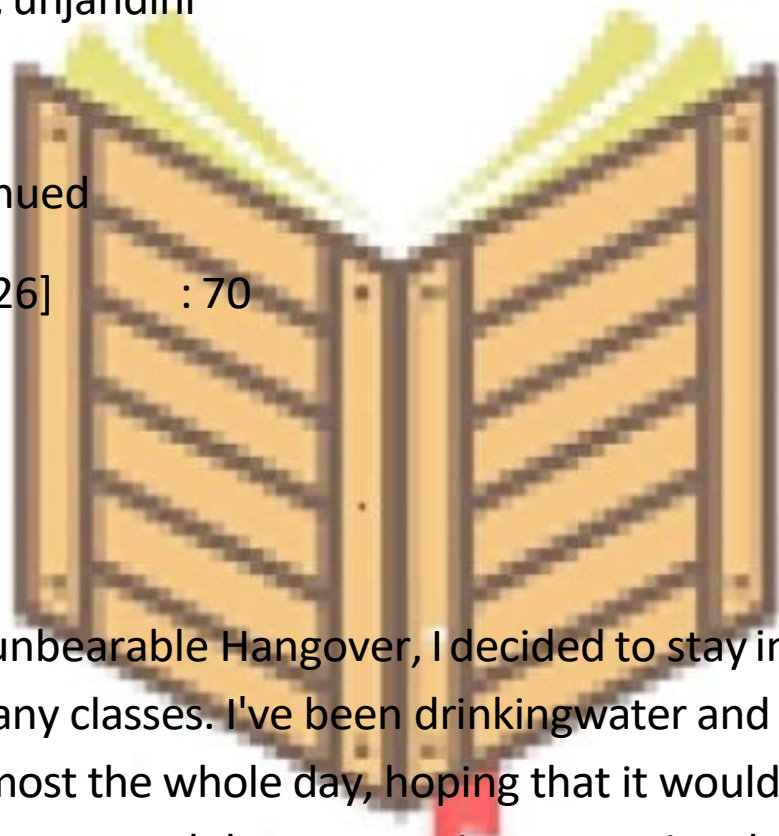
Kelso: "Ha e duma e a tsamaya Buza kush' ubani, unjandini"

To be continued

[08/24, 13:26] : 70

NELISIWE

Due to my unbearable Hangover, I decided to stay in today and not attend any classes. I've been drinking water and eating bananas almost the whole day, hoping that it would go. If I try to eat food, I was scared that I was going to vomit.. I heard a knock at the door, I had just finished bathing. I had my night gown covering my naked body. I went to open, it



NOVELSGURU.COM

was Kelso. How the hell did he bypass security at the gate?

Me: How the hell did you get in? He

walked in and closed the door..Me: What

do you want?

Him: I need a favour from youMe:

What favour?

Him: I want to fuck youI

chuckled..

Me: Please leave

I walked away and he gently grabbed my arm

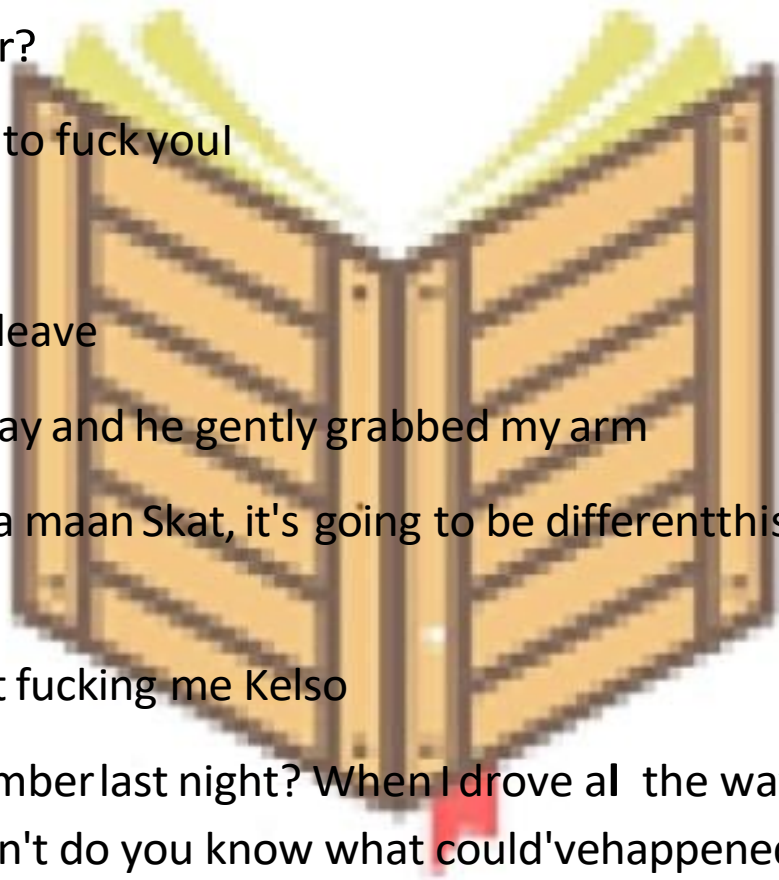
Kelso: Bheka maan Skat, it's going to be different this time around

Me: You not fucking me Kelso

Him: Remember last night? When I drove all the way to rescue you? If I didn't do you know what could've happened to you?

You owe me!

Me: I don't owe you anything



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Yeka izinto ezi snax (Stop with the drama) He pulled me close to him..

Him: I need this favour and I want to take a video, I won't show your face

He poked my nose..

Him: In return, I'll owe you two favours I rolled my eyes..

Him: Two favours, in this world you won't know when you going to need me again

I sighed...

He kissed me on my cheek and my neck... Him:

Come on

Me: Fine

I held his hand and we walked to the bedroom...

Surprisingly he came prepared, he took out a pack of condoms..

Him: We going to make it very believable



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Why do you want a video?Him:

Don't worry about that

NONGCEBO

Grams forced me to take a warm bath. She had prepared a bath for me, poured in rough salt and an antiseptic. Was the worst bath of my life, but I had to pull through. The water wasn't too hot as my body was burning, I had noticed that the area where he scrubbed me was the one injured the most. My skin had peeled off in that area, so she put on betadine and a bandage then she helped me get in bed. She had even called Power to come over, I had expected her to throw her weight as always. But she broke down when she saw me in that state. She wasn't faking her emotions, she literally broke down sincerely..

Grams was feeding me soft porridge before I could

NOVELSGURU.COM

take pain killers, Power was cleaning the bloody floor in the bathroom. Hakeem was playing around in the bedroom..

Me: Thank you

Grams: Drink pain killers!

drank the pain killers..

Grams: I love Kelso with all my heart, but this.. I don't know why you don't want us to call the police

Me: Involving the Police is going to complicate everything, I don't wanna involve the Police

Grams: This behavior is unacceptable, I don't care what happened but he had no right to do this and accuse you without any proof. We don't spend much time together but I know you wouldn't do that, it's not like you

Tears streamed down..

Me: I only agreed because he was at the verge of killing me, and I only thought about Bongeka

Grams: I know you didn't

My phone started ringing.. It was Banza..

Grams: I'm going to do what I do best, I'm going to pray

Me: Thank you Grandma

She got up and walked out.. I answered the call ..

Banza: What is wrong with you? Why would you say such lies?

I closed my eyes..

Banza: I never slept with you Nongcebo why would you say something like that?

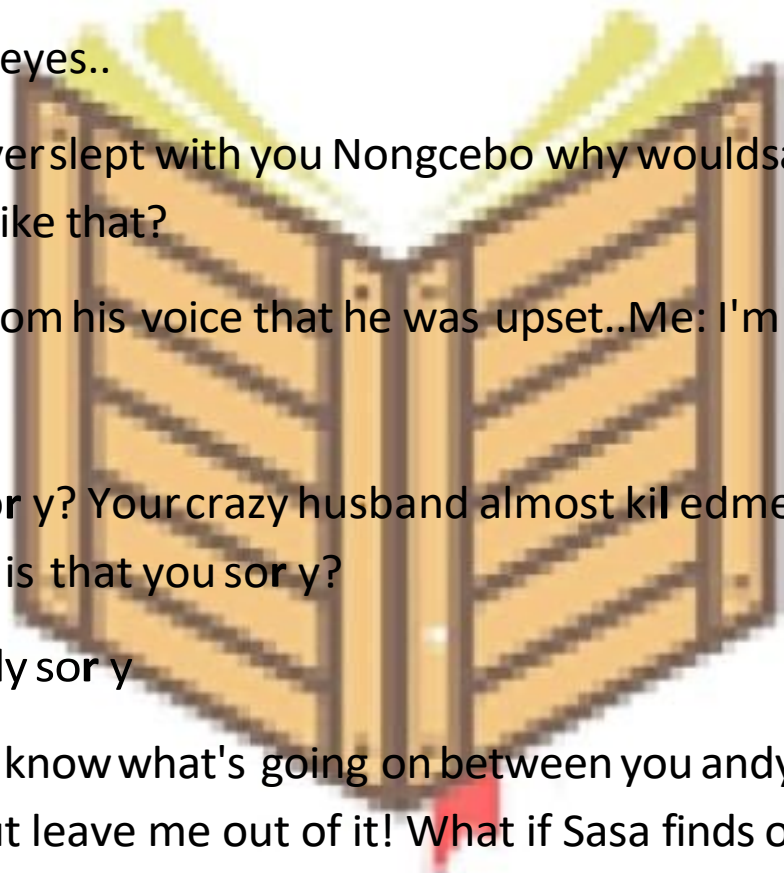
I could tell from his voice that he was upset.. Me: I'm sorry

Banza

Him: You sorry? Your crazy husband almost killed me and all you can say is that you sorry?

Me: I'm truly sorry

Him: I don't know what's going on between you and your husband but leave me out of it! What if Sasa finds out? Did you think about that? What is wrong with you? What kind of a friend are you? Ungcolile



Nongcebo after everything I've done for you this is how you do me? Huh? You know what, I never wanna see you ever again! I might have cared about you at some point but not to an extent of risking my life for you! Don't ever call me, don't text me, and don't ever talk to me again? I'm going to block you on everything of mine.. You and I we done! You not a good person! I hate you for this

He hung up, I let the phone slip out of my hand..

KELSO

I was sitting on the floor with my back against the couch. Neli was on top of me leaning forward. Her hands on my knees and her back against me, with her beautiful round ass wobbling as she pumped me and slowly moving her waist. My phone was taking a video of what we were doing, mostly focusing on her ass and showing my dick going in and out of her..

Me: Ohhh shit you killing me baby

NOVELSGURU.COM

I squeezed her ass as she continued, whilst moaning...

Neli: Ohh my word your dick feels good

I continued squeezing her ass and she went up and down harder than she initially started.

Me: Yes baby just like that... Ooh fuck you killing me!!

Neli: Ohh baby... Yes! Mhmmmm

Me: Best pussy I've ever had

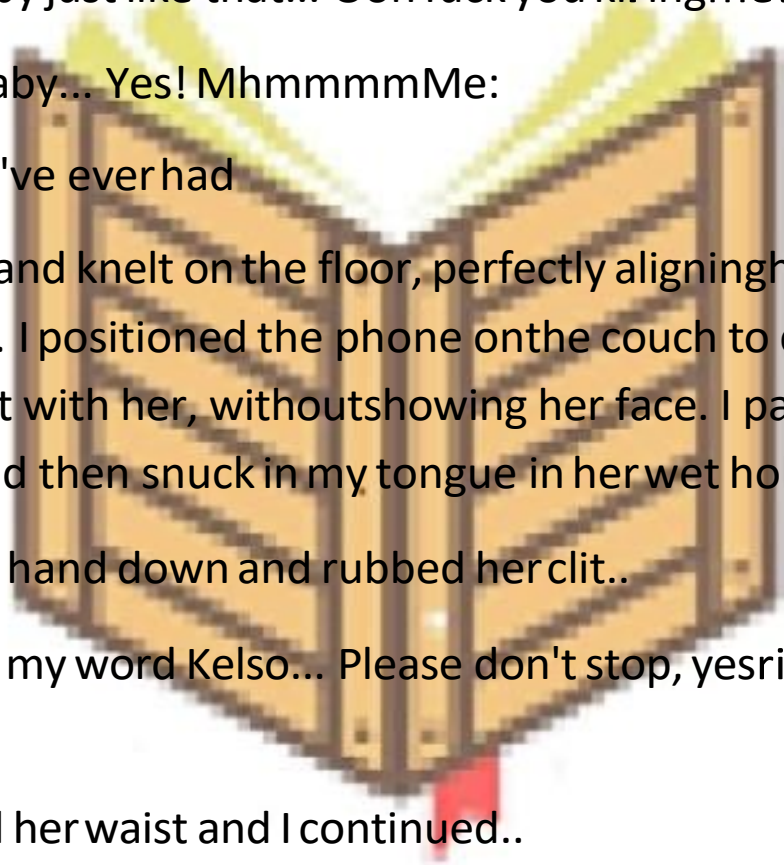
She got off and knelt on the floor, perfectly aligning herself for a doggy style. I positioned the phone on the couch to capture my moment with her, without showing her face. I parted her buttocks and then snuck in my tongue in her wet hole..

I moved my hand down and rubbed her clit..

Her: Ohhhh my word Kelso... Please don't stop, yes right there baby

She swayed her waist and I continued..

Her: Fuck yeah that's good!.. Fuck me harder



please!

She had the sweetest enticing voice, perfect for the moment..

I stopped muffing her and knelt behind her, I pushed in as she moaned..

Me: Ohhhh shit

I put my hands around her waste and started fucking her..

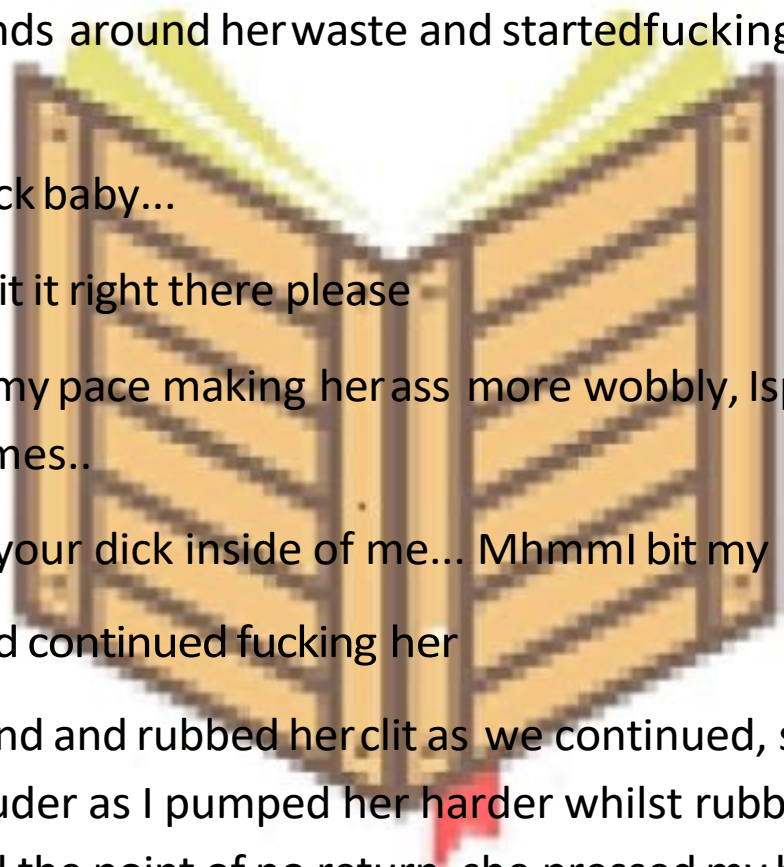
Me: Ohh fuck baby...

Neli: Yes hit it right there please

I increased my pace making her ass more wobbly, I spanked her a few times..

Neli: I love your dick inside of me... Mhmm I bit my lower lip and continued fucking her

I wet my hand and rubbed her clit as we continued, she moaned louder as I pumped her harder whilst rubbing her. As she reached the point of no return, she pressed my hand harder against her and a loud moan escaped her lips.. We needed to keep this



video a bit short.. So after she came she got back up and pressed her back against me. I kissed her on her neck with my hand cupping her breast..

Her: That was very nice

I turned her face to me as we shared a deep kiss, then she went back to the position and fucked her again for a few minutes until I was ready to shoot. I slipped it out and rolled off the condom..

Me: Come here baby

She turned to me and gave me a blow job, whilst I gave myself a hand job against her warm moist mouth..

Me: Oh yeah baby... Oh yeah..

When I felt that I was coming, I grabbed her weave and pushed splashed my cum on her face some of it went into her mouth. She slowly spat it out to my dick..

Me: Fuck that was good

She got up and wrapped her arms around my neck and we kissed. I fixed her weave..

Me: You very beautifulShe
smiled at me..

Him: I'm very lucky

Her: No I'm the one who is luckyHim: I
love you

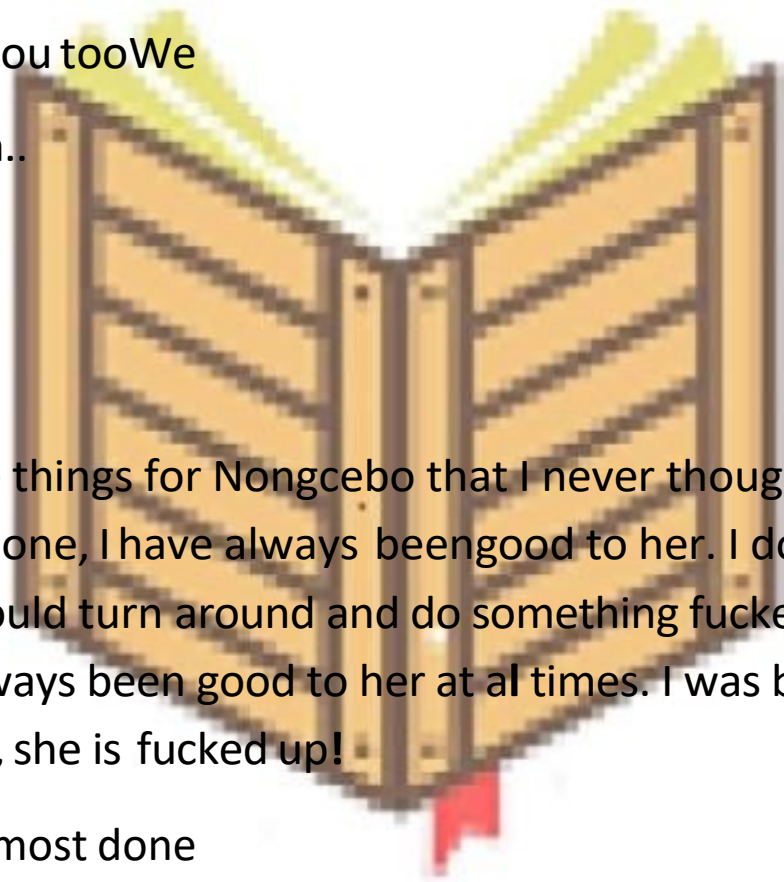
Her: I love you tooWe
kissed again..

BANZA

I have done things for Nongcebo that I never thought I would do for someone, I have always been good to her. I don't know why she would turn around and do something fucked up like this, I've always been good to her at all times. I was beyond the word angry, she is fucked up!

Sasa: I'm almost done

After the incident I drove back home, Sasa had



NOVELSGURU.COM

come back with her Daughter. She was cleaning my wound that was on my forehead, she put a band aid. I had a terrible headache..

Sasa: Are you sure that you don't wanna turn him in?

Me: He will be out tomorrow, his Father owns the prison and I'm sure he has a few cops on his payroll

Sasa: Why would he do this though? I know Kelso is crazy but I'm confused

I exhaled..

Me: Nongcebo lied to him and said we slept together

Sasa: What?

Me: It's messed up

Sasa: Did you sleep with her? Me:

No!!

Sasa: Why would she lie like that? Me: I have no idea, I'm also confused

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sasa: Banza why is she lying on you like that?

Me: I don't know Sasa but I never slept with her I swear

Sasa: That's it!

She got off the bed and put on her shoes..Me: Sasa

I got off the bed and held her arm..

Me: Hey it's me.. I would never do that to you, I love you.. I swear on my ancestors I didn't sleep with her.I've never slept with her

I pulled her closer for her hug..

Me: I love you and I would never hurt you like that.. I swear

NONGCEBO

I watched the video that Kelso sent to me on whatsapp, a video of him fucking some girl. I don't

know why but I watched it until the end, though I only saw her from her side view but I could tell that she was beautiful. Tears burned my eyes, my chest started closing in on me. My hand was trembling..

Power: Ngcebo!

ignored her..

Power: What's wrong?

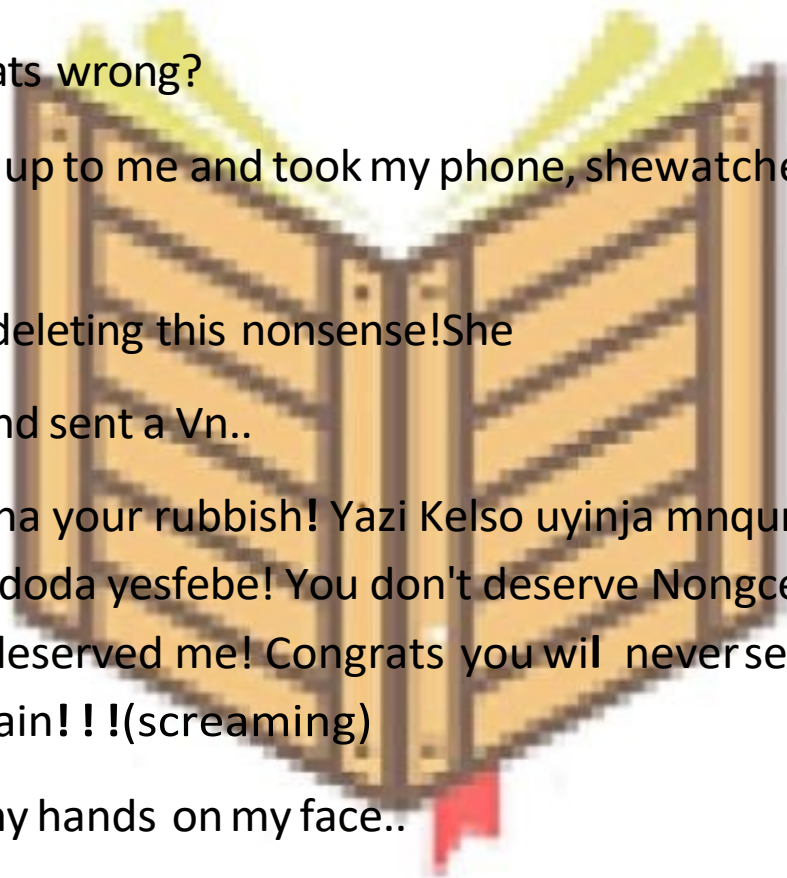
She walked up to me and took my phone, she watched the video..

Power: I'm deleting this nonsense! She deleted it and sent a Vn..

Power: Wena your rubbish! Yazi Kelso uyinja mnqundu wakho wendoda yesfebe! You don't deserve Nongcebo, and you never deserved me! Congrats you will never see your son ever again!!! (screaming)

I put both my hands on my face..

Me: What did I do? Why is this happening to me? God why don't you just take me? This is too much. Just take me and make sure that Bongeka has a



good home, and please protect Banza... Am I suffering for my sin? Why don't you just take me already, this is too much now... Please this is toomuch (crying)

Power got in bed and laid her head on my thighs..

Power: God please (crying) God we come to you, please rid Nongcebo off this pain.. Kelso can't keep on destroying people and get away with it, he's not a God.. God please (crying)

Me: Please take me.. I'm giving up, I can't anymore..This pain is too much now (crying)

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:27] : 71

NONGCEBO

Gertrude had been calling me and I haven't been picking up her calls. She ended up sending me a

NOVELSGURU.COM

text asking if I'm okay. I didn't return the text. Power had left, Grams was in the house said she would bring my dinner to me. She had suggested that I come chill with her in the house but I wanted to be alone for now, I was going through emotional turmoil and I needed to be alone.. I needed to find away out of this but I couldn't, I was alone especially now that Banza has turned his back on me. I was totally alone. I could think of running away but he will find me, if he doesn't find me he will go straight to Bongeka. Now that I have seen how he is like, I feared for Bongeka. The only way out of this could be death. I've messed up so much I don't even know how to fix everything I've been praying, crying to God that if he can't help me out. Can he at least take my life, that would be a better way out. Free from this pain and heartache, death has to be peaceful.. I even had unexplainable chest pains, I've always took pride on the fact that I was emotionally and mentally strong but I'm scared. Scared that Kelso is breaking me apart to the nearest hell.. I heard him talking outside, my heart

NOVELSGURU.COM

started to beat fast. Fear took over and my head started spinning..

I heard the door opening, and he was singing. I closed my eyes as I was laying in bed..

Kelso: "I do, I do my darliTwo

by two s'bambane Ha e duma

e a tsamaya

Buza kush' ubani, unjandini"

He stood at the doorway holding a bottle of beer, his aura was unsettling and uneasy. He put the bottle on the dressing table...

Kelso: Aww bhek'isfebe sam' madoda (Look at my bitch)

I didn't say anything...

Kelso: Muhle noma sekafeba (she's stil beautiful even though she's a bitch)

I could notice that he was a bit drunk, he made his way to me and my heartbeat increased. He crouched on my side and brushed my hair. He



leaned over and kissed me...

Kelso: Mrs KB, ngiyak'thanda yezwa Skat (Mrs KB I love you)

I slowly nodded without saying anything...Kelso:

Udlile mara (Did you eat)

I nodded again...

His touch, his kiss, he disgusted me. Knowing very well what he did, he disgusted me right now.. He took out his phone as it rang, he looked at it and smiled then answered...

Kelso: Neli... Ya I'm home... Okay... Ya I had a goodtime too..

He leaned over and kissed me...

Kelso: No problem baby I'll see you tomorrow..Yeah..
love you too

I swallowed..

He put his phone on the side board..

Kelso: I'm going to take a shower I'll be back

He kissed me again..Him:

I love you

He walked away and then stopped, he turned and looked at me..

Him: I said I love you Me: I

love you too

I said that with tears streaming down..

SANDISIWE

Sole was leaning against the kitchen counter, I was standing before him and he was holding my leg up to his waist, whilst my other leg was on the floor. I had my arms wrapped around his neck and his other hand was squeezing my ass against him. Hewas deep inside of me and I didn't know how he did it, being able to fuck me well in this position.

It was nicer than all the times we've had sex before, the more he pumped he was also rubbing himself

against my clit and that turned me on more. He kissed me and then moved down to my neck, leaving endless love bites. I was very wet, so wet that I thought he was going to slip out but he didn't. He stopped with the love bites and buried his head against my neck squeezing and spanking my ass hard, and struggling to maintain his breath. I put my hand at the back of his bald head and kissed his neck..

I didn't want him to stop, the pleasure paralyzed me so much that my other leg started shaking. My horniness increased more, my moan turned into a slight cry from all the pleasure that I was getting from him.

I didn't want him to stop, it was too nice for me to let him slip up even a little...

POWER

My mother gave me the cup of chamomile tea..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Thank you

Ma: Yabona ukuthi why bengikukhuza ngo Kelso?(You see why I have always warned you against Kelso)

I nodded..

Me: This could've been me

I wiped my face with my hands.. Me:

Mama if you could've seen her I shook my head...

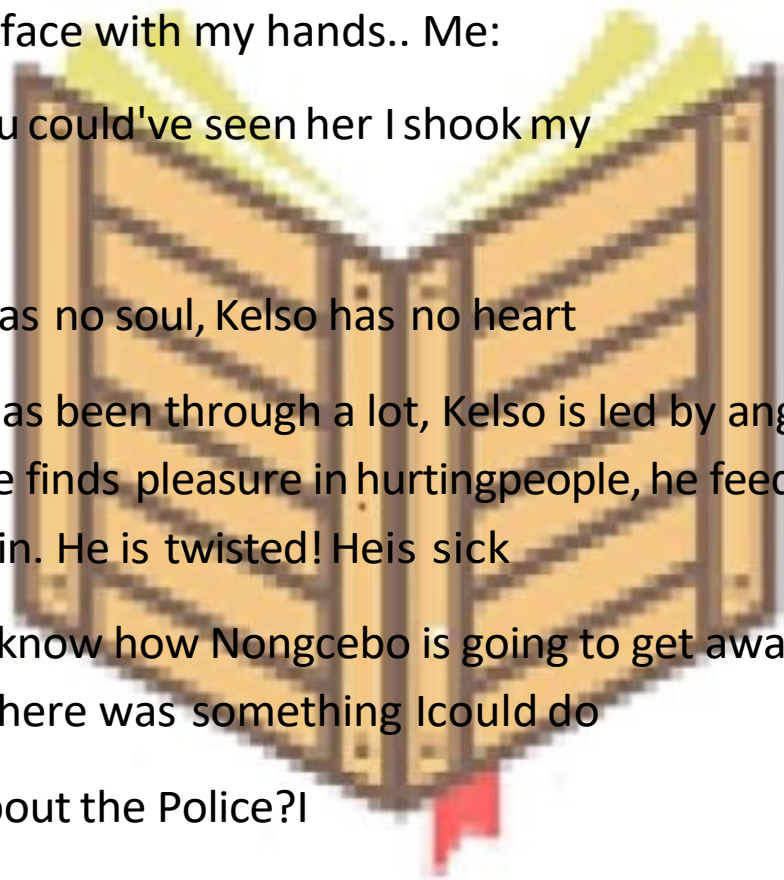
Me: Kelso has no soul, Kelso has no heart

Me: Kelso has been through a lot, Kelso is led by anger most of the time. He finds pleasure in hurting people, he feeds off people's pain. He is twisted! He is sick

Me: I don't know how Nongcebo is going to get away from all of this, I wish there was something I could do

Ma: How about the Police?!

shook my head..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Kelso is not a fool.. He would've have done this if he knew that she was going to turn her in, he has a good way of instilling fear plus it's always his father this and his father that

Ma: Hai naye uKen I blame him, he was never a good role model to Kelso. His Son is following in his footsteps

I exhaled..

Me: This is a mess

GERTRUDE

Kelo walked in.. Kelo:

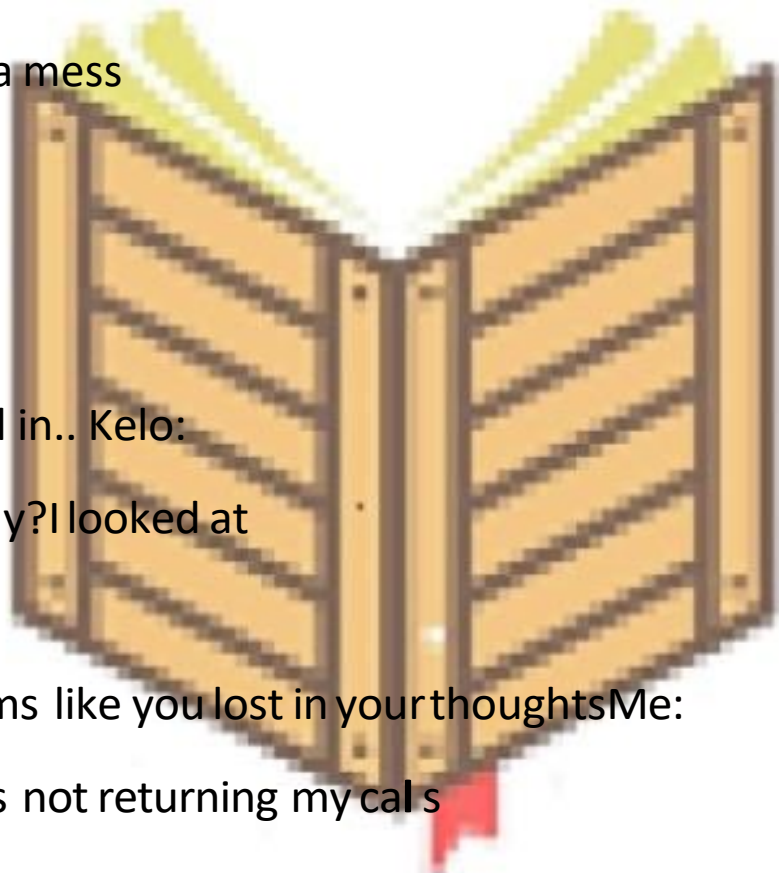
Are you okay? I looked at him..

Kelo: It seems like you lost in your thoughts Me:

Nongcebo is not returning my calls

Kelo: Nongcebo got married a while back, she's

NOVELSGURU.COM



probably enjoying her honeymoon

Me: Could be.. Maybe Kelso doesn't want her talking to me

Kelo: Why wouldn't he?!

looked at him..

Me: He doesn't like me that much

Kelo: Why? He doesn't know you to dislike you

Me: I said something at the wedding, something upsetting

Kelo: Why would you do that though?!

shrugged my shoulders..

Kelo: You amaze me sometimes

Me: I know.. I amaze myself too at times(Silence)

Me: Maybe I should go check up on her tomorrow

Kelo: If she wanted to talk to you, she would've picked up your calls

Me: I just wanna know if she's okay

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelo: Leave Nongcebo alone, she's enjoying her honeymoon. Wait for her to return your calls

Me: You probably right Kelo:

I'm always right

NONGCEBO

When he was done showering I heard him locking the door. He came back into the bedroom with a towel wrapped around his lower body. He took it off and laid behind me. He put his hand around my waist and I flinched. He roughly pulled me closer to him, really close.. He kissed me on my neck whispered in my ear..

Kelso: We going to talk, talk about the time or times when you slept with him

I didn't wanna talk, I didn't wanna do this..

Kelso: But since we playing with my rules, we going to do this my way

NOVELSGURU.COM

I felt his dick poking my ass, I closed my eyes and bit my lower lip. He put it in between my ass..

Kelso: We only going to stop when you have told me everything that I need to know

He parted my buttocks, and I felt a sharp pain arising from my anus. That's when I realized that he was forcing himself in..

It was very painful, he literally tore his way in pushing himself by force. I literally screamed, he put his hand on my waist on that area where I had the bandage wrapped..

Kelso: Uyarasa Nongcebo (You making noise) I closed my eyes as tears welled up..

Me: Kelso please (crying)

He pushed in deeper and I tried to push him off, he held my hand tight and twisted it..

Me: Just kill me already please (Crying)

Kelso: You are going to tell me everything, that's the only way out from this situation

How is he doing it? Still rock hard whilst I'm crying and begging him. Can't he feel my pain? My cries? How sick can one be?

Kelso: Fuck! You bleeding! He pulled out..

Kelso: You disgusting Nongcebo! You disgust me! He spat on me as he got out of bed..

Kelso: Clean yourself up, you disgusting! Uyanyanyisa straight (You disgust me)

He picked the towel and walked to the bathroom.. I swear that it was just more than blood that was expelled from my anal area, I couldn't hold myself. I couldn't hold back..

BANZA

I tossed and turned on the bed. I was trying to sleep but sleep wasn't coming. I was still very much upset at what Nongcebo did, but also thinking about it.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nongcebo wouldn't just say this, there must be a reason why she said this. I took my phone and checked my contact list, I stopped when I reached her name. I thought about calling her, but I thought otherwise... I put my phone away and closed my eyes again..

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Inganathi. She's currently standing on 7000 votes which was able to keep her in the top 10. She is number 8 on the list, let's keep on voting more to keep her in the competition and bring her more closer to the title.

Voting is free, just click on the link below, you can vote everyday.

<https://pageantvote.es/pageants/2741/contestants/18101?fbclid=IwAR36Em4xtYBAUTBcHnll3b-2i0TDQFwKUiQzrQIN7j3Iym2VXhbFZ20tcvg>

[08/24, 13:27] : 72

NOVELSGURU.COM

SOLE

Later on Scorpion and I parked next to the scrapyard. Kelso was supposed to have been here an hour ago. We needed a car for the plan tomorrow. Since the truck that transports money for the Italians passes through at exactly 7am, we had to put the car in the middle of the road camp there for the night and set it alight in the early hours of the morning...

Scorp: What is wrong with your home boy? Me: It's not like Kelso to be this unprofessional

Scorp: Now he's giving my Father another reason to hate me more

Me: What do you mean?

Scorp: I'm going to miss out on the family dinner Me: Let me try and call him again

His phone was off..Me:

Dammit!

NOVELSGURU.COM

Scorp: That's it, I'm going home

Me: Wait, let's wait for him for another hour

Scorp took out a picture of a baby..

Me: Who is that? Scorp:

My baby sister

Me: What's

her name? Scorp: I don't know, never met her

Me: I don't understand

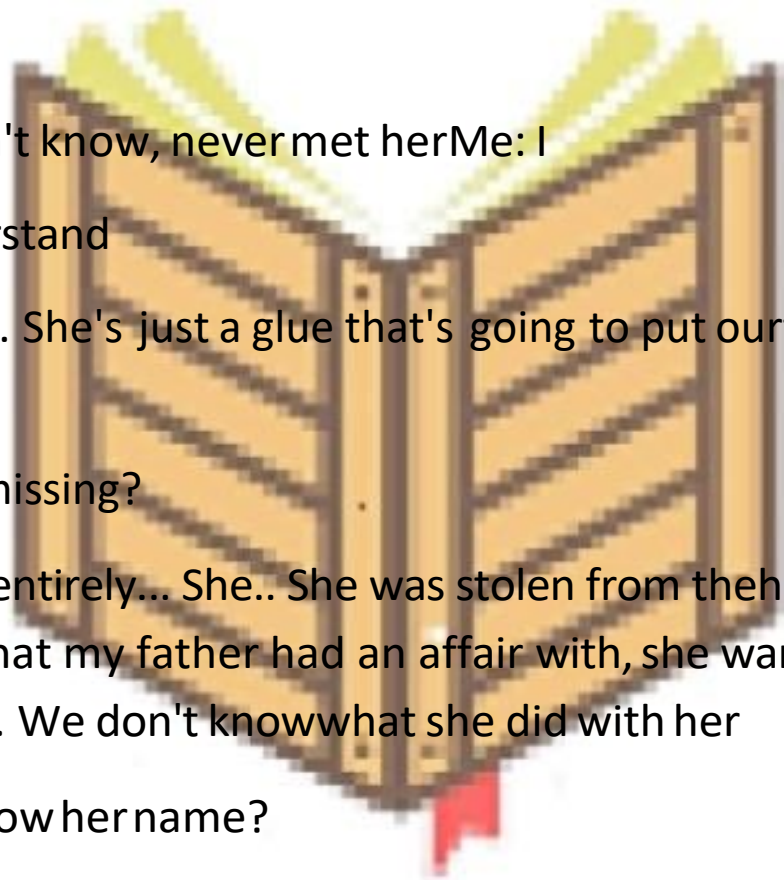
Scorp: She... She's just a glue that's going to put our family back together

Me: She's missing?

Scorp: Not entirely... She.. She was stolen from the hospital by a woman that my father had an affair with, she wanted to get back at him. We don't know what she did with her

Me: You know her name?

Scorp: All I know is her surname. Khumalo, we don't know her name... After she was stolen my Mother



suffered a stroke, couldn't talk and couldn't do anything. Until she eventually passed on. My father started blaming himself ever since

Me: Is it possible that she's still alive?

shrugged my shoulders..

Me: The woman who stole her, is she still alive?

Scorp: No.. She died before telling us what she did with my baby sister.. This is the reason why I hate married men who cheat, they don't know how much it breaks the family. My father and I we've had issues ever since. He is the reason my mother died, and the reason why I never met my baby sister.

(Silence)

Scorp: The world is cruel Bro, I've seen a lot. Sometimes I lie awake at night asking myself where she is, is she safe, did she end up with a good family? Did she encounter any hardships whilst growing up. What is she saying about us where she is, is she safe? Is someone hurting her? Life for a girl child is difficult when she doesn't have a family

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: If you guys could find her, what's the first thing you going to say to her?

Scorp: I'm sor y.. I'm sor y I wasn't there as a big brother when you needed me the most, I'm sure there's a lot of fuckers that broke her heart

Me: I'll help you find her, and if there were any fuckers who broke her heart. We will break their necks

He chuckled..

Scorp: I just wanna know where she is, dead or alive I just wanna know where she is. I owe it to my Mother, she's not resting in peace wherever she is

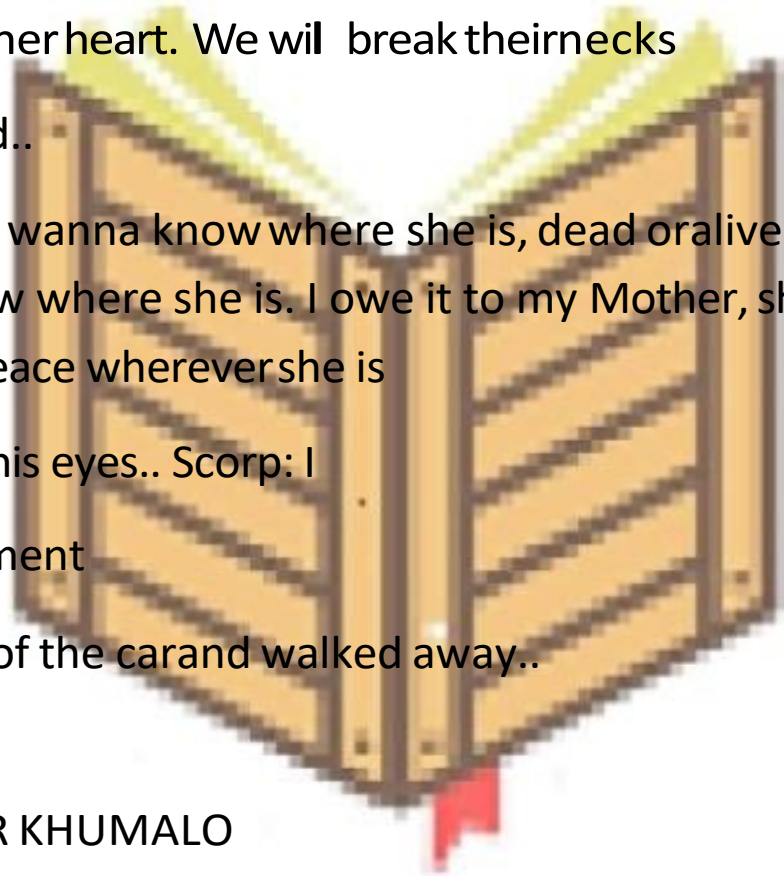
He rubbed his eyes.. Scorp: I need a moment

He got out of the car and walked away..

GOVERNOR KHUMALO

NOVELSGURU.COM

I passed by my Daughter's room, I stood at her door



and listened to her praying..

Slindile: "God I will never stop praying until you help us find our baby sister. Nawe Ma lapho ukhona give us a sign, show us where she is"

She was holding her baby sister's picture..Sli:

"Awuhluleki Nkosi.."

She stopped and cleared her throat..

Sli: "It's been long God, show us where she is" My heart broke into a million pieces..

Back when we were living in Kzn, I had an affair with some sinister woman. When my wife was pregnant with our last born, I decided to end the affair. It was hard on her, she struggled throughout the whole pregnancy, and when my Daughter was born. The mistress stole her from the hospital. My mistress was a Nurse, she stole my Daughter to spite me and until today. We don't know what she did with her. She killed herself without telling me about my Daughter, and where to find her. Ever

since from then, my family broke apart. My Son became a rebel just to spite me, we have been butting heads ever since. If we could find my babygirl, she could heal our broken family..

I know for a fact that my wife is not resting in Peace where she is, My Daughter Sli has been having dreams about her mother. In her dreams my wife appears to her crying and holding the baby's blanket. Even when we used to visit her grave, we would find a tombstone torn apart. I don't know how many tombstones we have erected. At times we will find bees circling her grave preventing us from getting closer. When we consulted, the Person told us that my wife will never be at peace until we find my other Daughter...

We have just moved to Gauteng, I relocated here to be the Gavenor of some prison. A prison that shelters a man that I hate with all my heart. Kenneth Bhembe, the fucker who made my Son join the "28s". I am looking for nothing more but to make his life difficult, I wanna show him who is the boss and

NOVELSGURU.COM

who runs the prison.. I got to my study and poured myself a glass of whiskey. I went and sat on the chair then closed my eyes. All I want is to find my baby girl, whether she's dead or alive. So far the trails are cold..

NONGCEBO

Seeing Kelso's Grandmother doing our bedding at this time of the night hurt me more. I thought Kelso would respect her, but umbonisa amanyala. He doesn't respect her at all!.. From when she loaded the washing machine to cleaning the mattress she was crying, and she would put her hand on her chest. She was very broken at what was happening in her yard.. She had prepared a bath for me, she bathed me, changed the bandage and dressed me up in warm PJs then put me in her warm bed. She even took my clothes from the room and moved them into the house, on strict orders that I'll be staying with her from here on. I was in pain, my body was

aching, my anus was painful that I couldn't even sit down. I just had lie on my side through and through..

What was running in my mind was him swearing at me, telling me how disgusting I am. Pouring me with cold water after he had showered. Told me that he did the biggest mistake by marrying me, I'm useless. I am a Filthy hoe and a play toy hence why Makhathini abused me. Told me that I'm just going to be something that's going to be abused by different men because of my stupidity. Told me about this Neli chick. He even uploaded her pictures, praising her on how beautiful she is and that I'll never be half the woman that she is. Told me she's at varsity making her dreams come true, and that's the type of woman that he should've married in the first place. I pulled the duvet up to my face to wipe my tears, tears seem to be falling without even me trying hard..

I hate my Mother, why did she give me up? How could she move on and live life without even thinking about me or trying to look for me? She's the

NOVELSGURU.COM

reason why my life turned out this way. She's doing this to me

KELSO

Neli: Come on try it

I looked at the cocaine..

Me: So this is where all your money is going?

Neli: And since you are asking me for favours, I want you to buy me coke

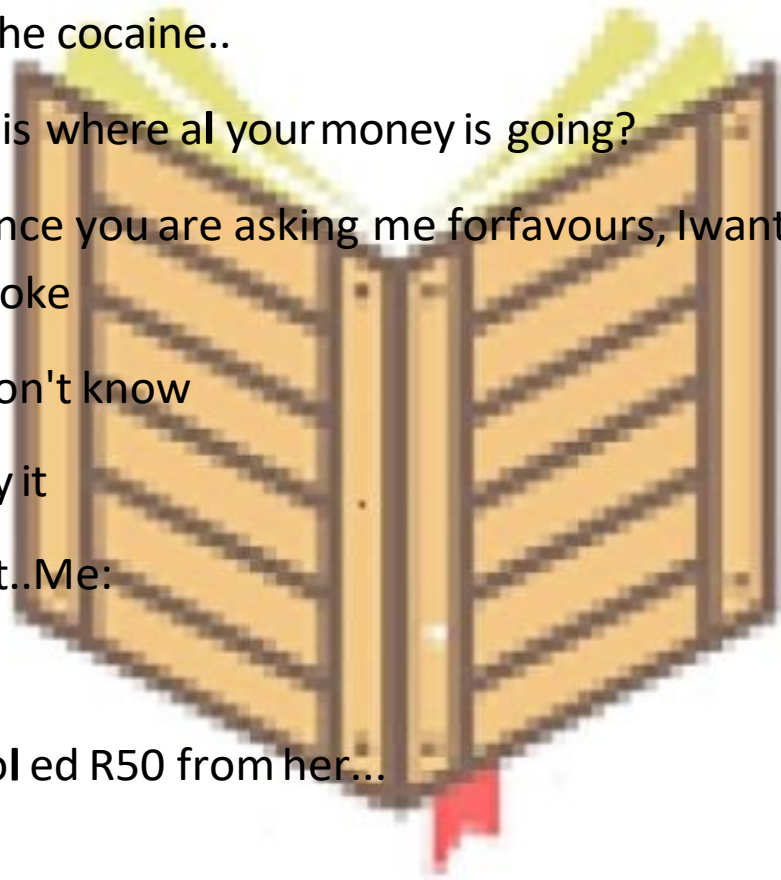
Me: Neli I don't know

Neli: Just try it

I looked at it..Me:

Fuck it!

I took the rolled R50 from her...



SOLE

NOVELSGURU.COM

I got out of the car and walked up to him..Me: You good?

He had his back against me, with his hands in his pockets..

Him: Yeah

I walked closer and put my hand on his shoulder..

Me: You agreed to help us with the heist, no questions asked. What you don't know about me is that I am very smart and I promise you. I will find your sister, I give you my word

He didn't say anything..Me: I will find her (Silence)

Him: Sole Me:

Yeah?

Him: Get your motherfucking hand off my shoulder before I turn around and punch you. Shit is starting

NOVELSGURU.COM

to get homo

I chuckled whilst shaking my head..I took my handoff from his shoulder..

Me: Come on... I'll drive you home!

walked back to the car..

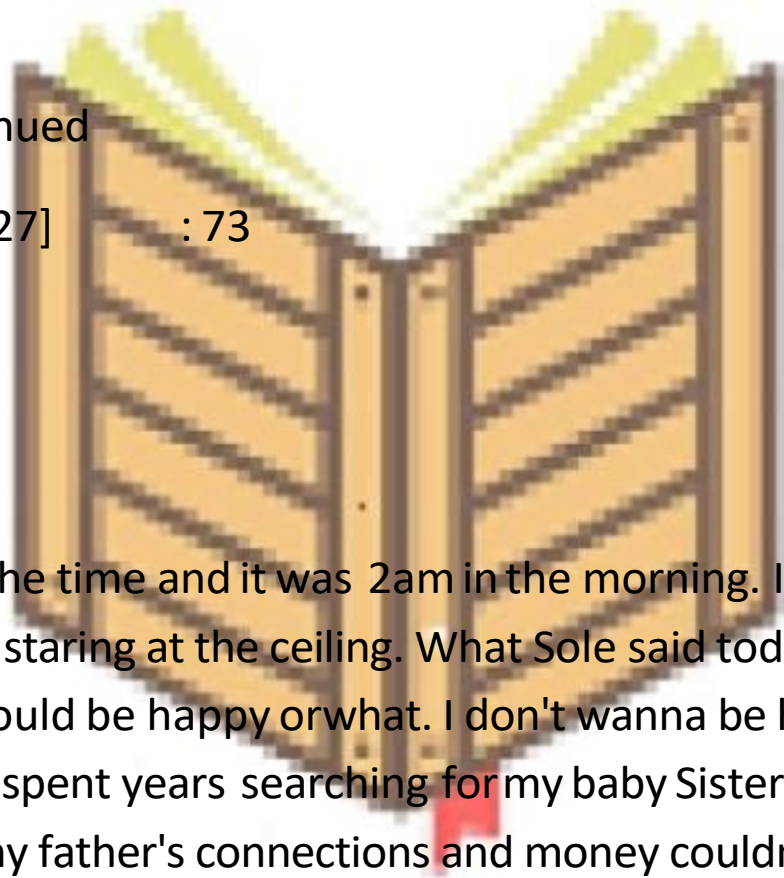
.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:27] : 73

SCORPION

I looked at the time and it was 2am in the morning. I was laying on my back staring at the ceiling. What Sole said today, I didn't know if I should be happy or what. I don't wanna be happy, we've have spent years searching for my baby Sister without any luck. Even my father's connections and money couldn't help. I wondered how it would be like if we could actual y find her, I don't even know how I'm going to



NOVELSGURU.COM

react..

As I was laying on the bed, I heard my sister Sli crying. Sli is the first born and ever since she started dreaming about our Mother, it ruined her life. She's a facial Maxillo-oral surgeon, that married an Orthodontist. They actually met when they were still at varsity, got married but focused on their careers and never had kids. Since this thing started with my Mother, she separated from her husband and now they are in the process of getting a divorce. The lady that we consulted with, clearly stated that my Sister won't have peace until we find our baby sister. That's when my whole family will be at peace, and my Mother will finally rest in peace. She had to close down her practice, and moved down here. I moved here first, then my Father and Sli followed.. I got out of my room and went to hers, she was sitting on the floor at the corner of her bedroom crying and hugging her legs. I walked up to her and sat next to her..

Her: I saw Mom again

I pulled her closer to me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It's okay, we going to find her.. I promise

Her: Wherevershe is she's not okay, there way thatMom is crying it tore deep inside

Me: It's okay.. We wil find her

I hope Sole real y comes through for me..

NONGCEBO

I was woken up by my phone ringing none stop. Grams was sleeping next to me. I checked, and it was Kelso cal ing. I looked at it until it stopped ringing. When it stopped I sawthat he had left me alot of messages.

"Where the fuck are you?"

"You betterpray that you not with him, because I'mgoing to kil you both"

"I am going to his place and for yoursake I hopeyou not there"

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ohh my God Banza

If Kelso goes there, he's going to kill him. I can't do that..

Kelso: Are you testing me? Me:

I'm in the house Kelso: Doing what?

Me: Grams wanted me to move in with her

Kelso: Are you married to my Grandmother?

Ungazong'nyela Nongcebo!

He hung up and I took a deep breath. Why does he care where I am? Earlier on before leaving he said a mouthful, why isn't he with her if she's so much better than me?

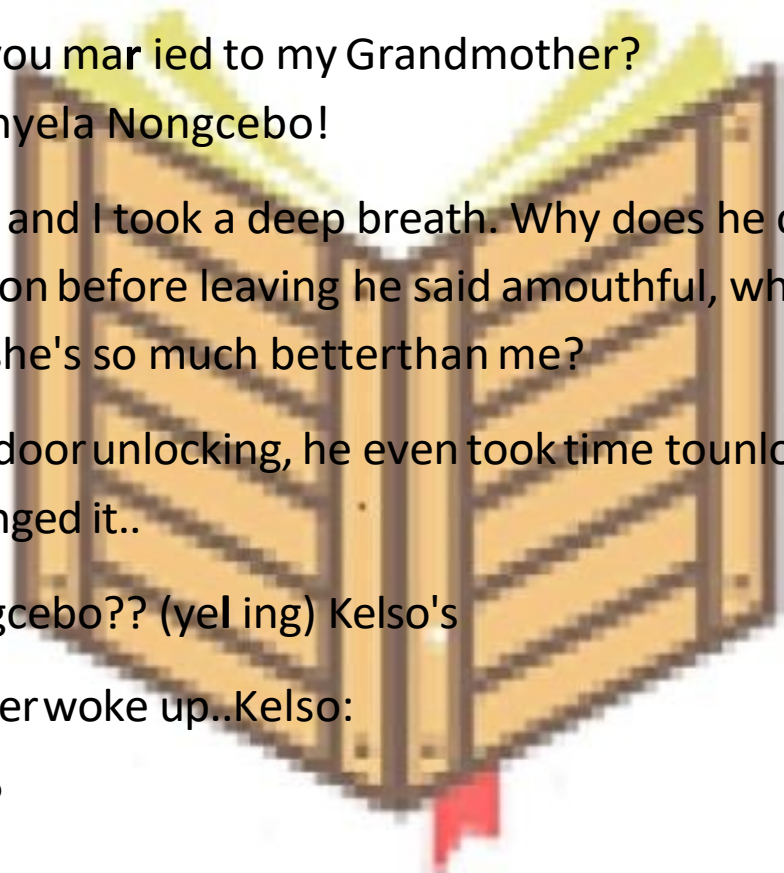
I heard the door unlocking, he even took time to unlock. Then he banged it..

Kelso: Nongcebo?? (yelling) Kelso's

Grandmother woke up..Kelso:

Nongcebo?

It was only a matter of time before he walks in through that door, and he did. He switched on the



light and looked at us..Grams:

Kelso!

He looked at her..

Grams: You are disrespecting me, coming into my bedroom like this at this time of the night?

Grams got out of bed.. Grams:

Phuma! (Get out)

Kelso rubbed his nose and sniffed..

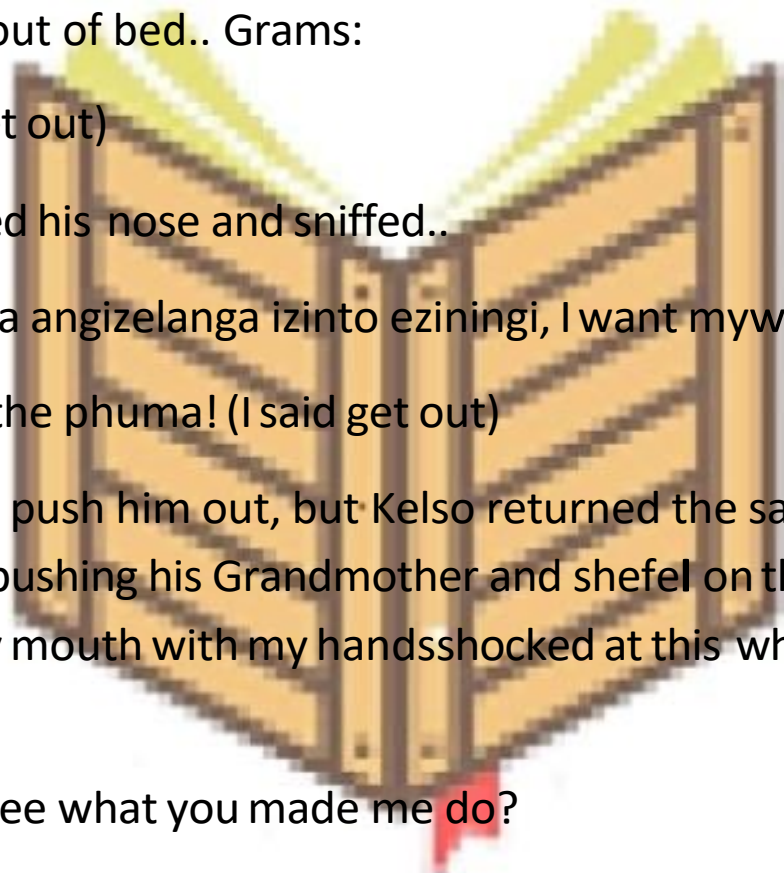
Kelso: Ya Ma angizelanga izinto eziningi, I want my wife

Grams: Ngithe phuma! (I said get out)

She tried to push him out, but Kelso returned the same gesture by pushing his Grandmother and shefel on the floor. I covered my mouth with my handsshocked at this whole incident..

Kelso: You see what you made me do?

He walked up to me and dragged me out of bed, heheld my arm tight as he dragged me out of the bedroom..



Me: Kelso wait... I wanna see if uMa is okayIt was like my plea was fal ing on deaf ears.

BANZA

I was sitting with my Grandmother at his grave, itwas dark and quiet at the cemetery.

Me: Yazi angithukanga (I'm not scared)

Grams: Ufanele angizanga ngodlambe (I came herepeaceful y)

Me: uMa uyala Gogo (Ma is stubborn)Her:

Ngiyazi (I know)

Me: Manje kuzo kwenzakalani? (What's going to happen now)

Her: Konke kukuye (It's al up to her)Me:

Uzofa? (Is she going to die) She nodded...

Me: Koyenzakalani ngami? (What's going to

NOVELSGURU.COM

become of me)

Her: Umdala Banza, uzokhona ukuzenzela izinqumozakhe (You are old Banza, you will make decisions for yourself)

(Silence)

Me: Uye wakhuluma ngo Nongcebo (You spoke about Nongcebo)

Her: Yebo.. Njengoba uMa wakho eqinisa ikhanda, uNongcebo uzoncedwa UManto (Yes.. Since your mother is stubborn, Nongcebo will be helped by Manto)

Me: Umnceda ngani? (Help her with what)

Her: Iskhathi masifika uzokwazi konke, uzomthatha umyise kwa Manto (When the time is right, you will take her to Manto)

Me: Gogo ukhuluma ngani? (What are you talking about)

Her: Kuzoba ngcono Uma uzwa ngaye, uzozwa futhi Ubone ubuhlungu bakhe (it will be better if she tells you, so you can see her pain)

This was confusing..

Her: Ungidumazile Kodwa Banza, njengo muntu ozoba nalesipho kungekudala udumazile makuza ku Nongcebo (You have disappointed me Banza, for someone who is gifted and will take charge soon you have disappointed me when it comes to Nongcebo)

I was confused..Me:

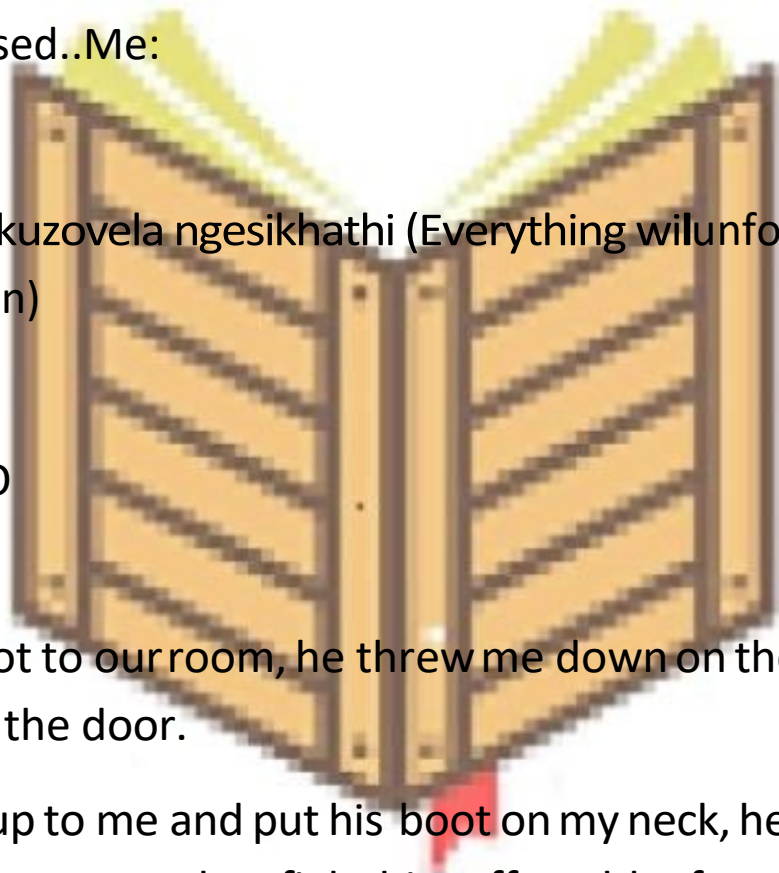
Gogo

Her: Konke kuzovela ngesikhathi (Everything will unfold as time goes on)

NONGCEBO

When we got to our room, he threw me down on the floor and then closed the door.

He walked up to me and put his boot on my neck, he pressed down hard. I was weak to fight him off, and the force he exerted against my throat made it difficult for me to breathe. I looked at him, and he



NOVELSGURU.COM

looked at me. This was not my husband, I could see it in his eyes. Kelso would never manhandle his Grandmother like that, let alone do this to me. I don't know what came over him, I don't know what was going on. All I know is that, I don't want anything to do with him. I don't think I'll ever forgive him for this. When he saw tears clouding my eyes, he removed his foot. I tried to catch my breath when he kicked me, he kicked me hard..

Kelso: One of these days I'm going to kill you, I promise you!

All I could do was cry, I didn't have anything to say to him..

He walked up to the door and locked it, he remained standing like that facing the door.

Kelso: I love you Nongcebo, Ngik'thanda ngentliziyo yami yonke (I love you Nongcebo, I love you with all my heart)

What a way to show me that he loves me..

Kelso: There's nothing that I wouldn't have done for you, I would've given you the world

Me: I'm sorry... (crying) He hit
the door..

Kelso: Why? Why would you hurt me like this? Me: It
was a mistake (crying)

He turned and looked at me.. Kelso:

Cheating is never a mistake

I slowly got up to sit up straight, my back leaning against the
couch..

I looked at him..

Me: I was drunk He
kept quiet..

Me: I was drunk and it meant nothing... It was Friday night, the
night before our wedding. Banza showed up because I had
been drunk calling him. He didn't know where I was and he
wanted to know that I was safe, I went out to meet him in his
taxi and that's how it happened. I was drunk and threw myself
on him, he tried to stop me but..

I wiped my tears..



Me: It happened once, it happened that night and ever since from then.. He even stopped calling me because he felt guilty, he went as far as blocking me from his everything. He hates me and wants nothing to do with me. Think about it, if I loved him and if he loved me we would be seeing each other now but he has a girlfriend and I haven't seen him in a long time. I'm sorry Kelso, it was nothing. It was a stupid mistake, you can even ask Sole. He came over to fetch Sandisiwe that night, she was drunk too. We were all drinking, hence she also ended up at the hospital. It really meant nothing... I didn't say anything because I was scared, scared of this and mostly scared of losing you. I thought I was going to take that secret to the grave but unfortunately you found out, I'm truly sorry.. Honestly speaking I don't deserve you, you are a victim in all of this. I don't even blame you, that's why I didn't even report you because it's all my fault

I saw the ice breaking from him. I didn't think this was going to work with him, I mostly used to use it with Zulu to escape a beating.

Me: I love you baby and I'm sor y

He slowly walked to me and I got scared. He crouched in front of me and raised my knees up. He parted my legs and knelt before me in between my legs. He put both his hands on my cheeks, then looked at me..

Him: Say that again Me: Say

what?

He cleared his throat as his eyes wel ed up.. Him: Say it again.. Say that you love me

It took a lot from deep inside of me to actual y say that..

Me: I love you Him:

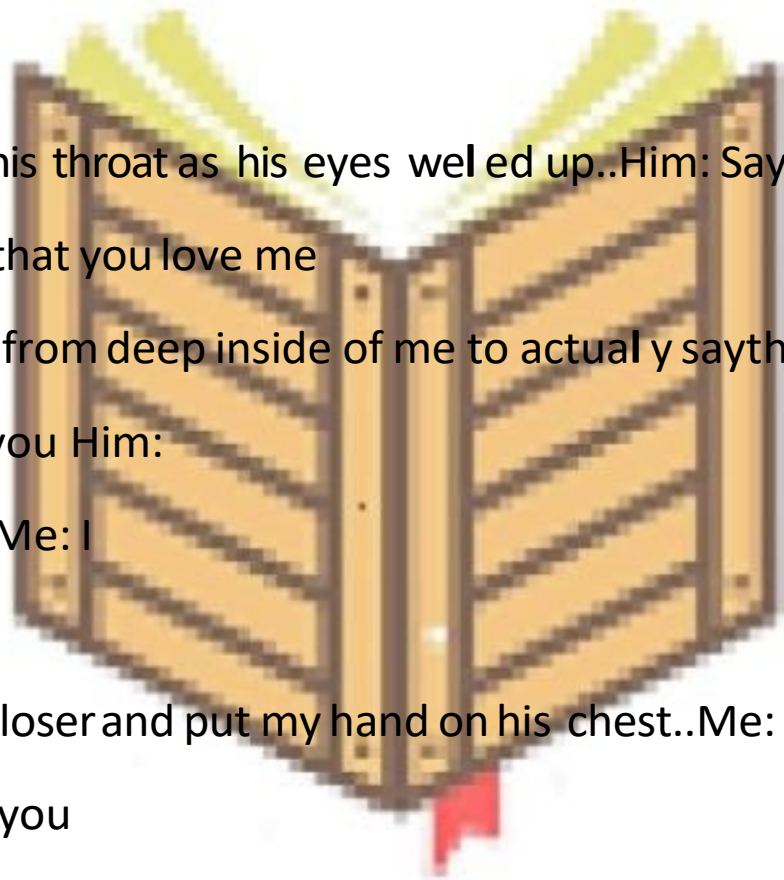
Say it again Me: I

love you

He leaned closer and put my hand on his chest.. Me: I love

you.. I love you

He kissed me, his heart was beating fast I could feel



his heartbeat with my hand..Me: I

love you

He pinned his forehead against mine and wiped my tears..

Kelso: We going to be okay right?I

nodded..

Me: We going to be okay

He kissed me again and pulled me closer for a hug, my damn acting probably saved me from death..

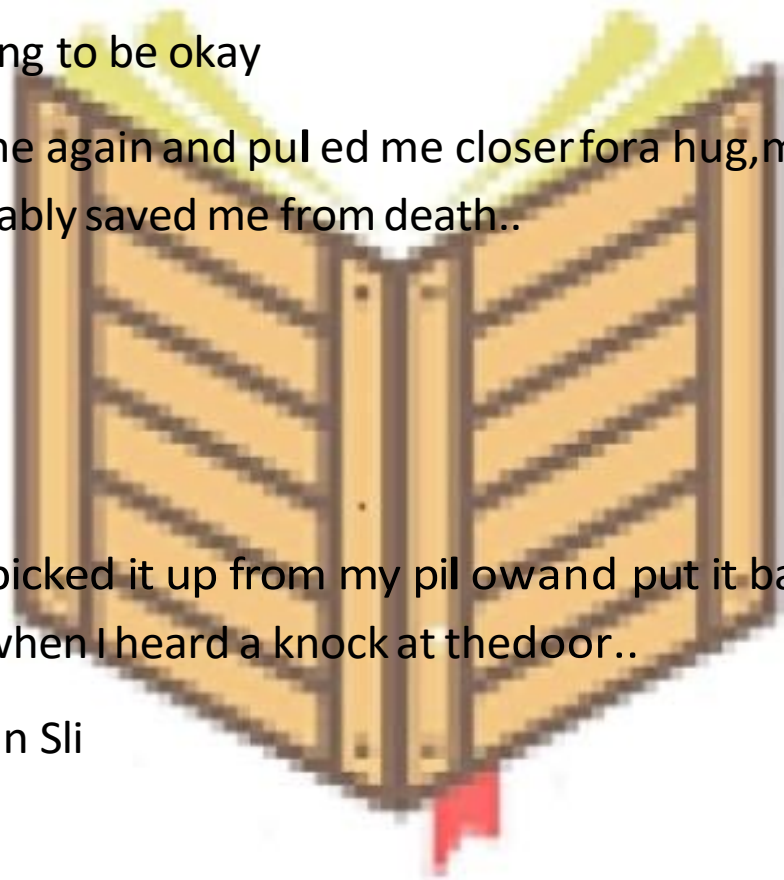
SCORPION

I carefully picked it up from my pillow and put it back in its small cage when I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in Sli

walked in..

She came and sat on my bed, she jumped and



stood on her feet when she saw the scorpion in its cage. She actually sat next to the cage without realizing it. She hit me on my shoulder..

Her: Maan Lindokuhle Khumalo! !Me:

Ouch!

She started scratching herself..

Her: You know how I feel about this thing Me: It's safely in its cage

Her: How did you even get a scorpion? Let alone keep it without it turning against you?

Me: I'm a scorpion remember?

Her: Normal people get a puppy or a cat, not a damn scorpion as a pet

I picked the cage up...

Me: It's actually friendly yazi Her:

Hai maan

Me: I'm telling you, touch it

I opened the cage and she stepped back..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Lindo I'm warning you

I walked up to her.. She ran out of my room and I closed the cage following her..

She got to the kitchen and grabbed the can of Doom..

Her: Step away from me with your little friend or else I won't be held responsible for my actions

I looked at her and the can of doom..Me:

Serious?

Her: I'm warning you

I put it down on the kitchen counter..

She put the spray down. I quickly grabbed her..Sli: Lindo

I'm warning you!! (screaming)

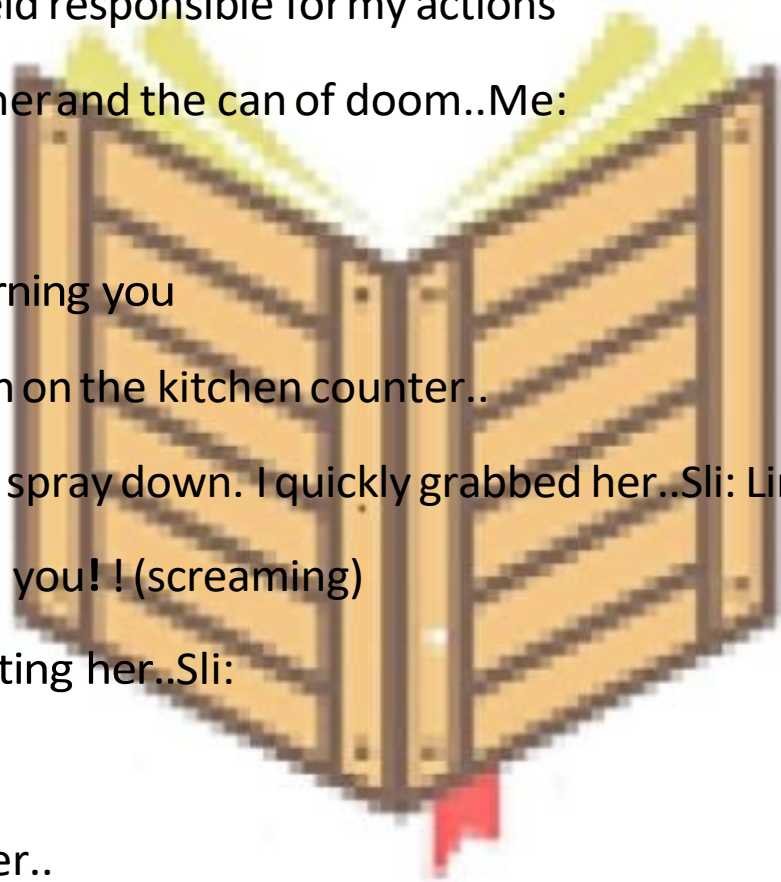
I enjoy irritating her..Sli:

Baba!!

I let go of her..

Me: Nawe uyatefa maan (You are a cry baby) Her: If you

bored get a girlfriend I'm not your toy!



I looked at her..

Me: Nywe Nywe Nywe I'm not your toy

She narrowed her eyes, my Dad walked in addressed up in his new Gavenor's uniform..

Dad: Whats going on?

Me: Nothing.. We were just playing

Sli: He was trying to get me stung by his scorpion

Dad: I told you not to play with Sli like that, she's older than you. You should respect her, and put on a damn shirt I don't wanna see that "28" tattoo!

Me: Maybe if my baby sister was here then Sli would be off the hook

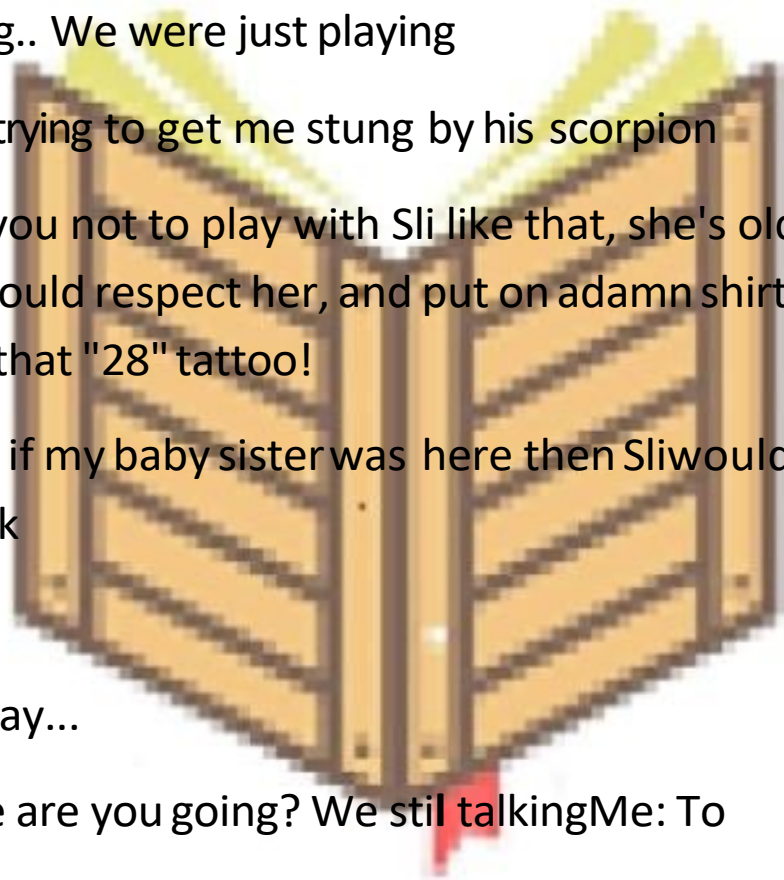
Sli: Lindo

I walked away...

Dad: Where are you going? We still talking
Me: To put on a damn shirt!

Dad: Lindo!!

I raised up my two fingers at him..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Peace!

Sli: Don't forget your friend! Me: He's
not bothering anyone Sli: You such a
child, grow up!

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:28] : 74

[no edits]

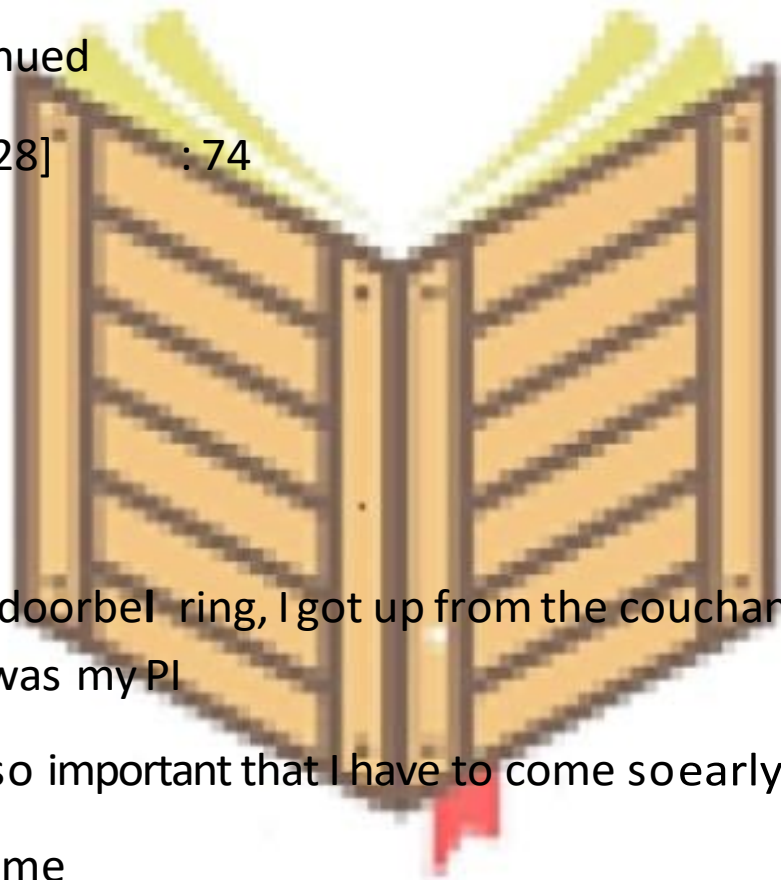
SOLE

I heard the doorbell ring, I got up from the couch and went
to open. It was my PI

PI: What is so important that I have to come so early?

Me: Follow me

He followed me to the living room. I took the picture of the
baby and gave it to him..



NOVELSCURIU.COM

Me: I need you to find me this person

Him: A baby? You have a baby that I don't know off
Me: I'm doing this for someone

Him: Very well

He put his backpack on the couch and sat down..Him:
Provide me with what I need to know

Me: That's all I got
Him:

Huh?

Me: She's not a baby anymore. Her date of birth at the back of the picture says that she might be 20, 21, 22, 23.. If it's correct

Him: I still need a name, surname, anything
Me: I don't have but her surname is "Khumalo"

Him: Do you know how many girls have that surname? It's like finding a needle in a haystack. You asking for a miracle, should I perhaps walk on water whilst I'm at it?

Me: Look at the hospital sheet where the baby is

laying on.. It has the name of the hospital, I searched and it's a hospital in Kzn

Him: They might have the records dating back to her birth

Me: Unfortunately not.. Her brother told me that they tried that route and her file was stolen on the same day that she was stolen. There's no record of the baby at that hospital the person who stole her was a Nurse, a Nurse that was present during her birth she had access to everything

Him: So why are we chasing a cold trail at the hospital?

Me: If I am correct.. No health professional can carry out labour on her own. There had to be other professionals with her, ones who might know something about the Nurse and the baby

Him: I doubt a Nurse who stole a baby can later on inform her colleagues about such

Me: I was hoping you could say that... We not going to ask them about the baby, we going to ask about the Nurse. We find out about her family we find out

NOVELSGURU.COM

what she did about the baby before she killed herself. She might have not told her colleagues about this but you can't bring a baby home without explaining

Him: What if she had her own place?

Me: You know what's the problem with good people who do bad things?

Him: School me

Him: Their conscience betrays them, it eats them up. She might have told someone close to her about this before she killed herself, someone that she trusted

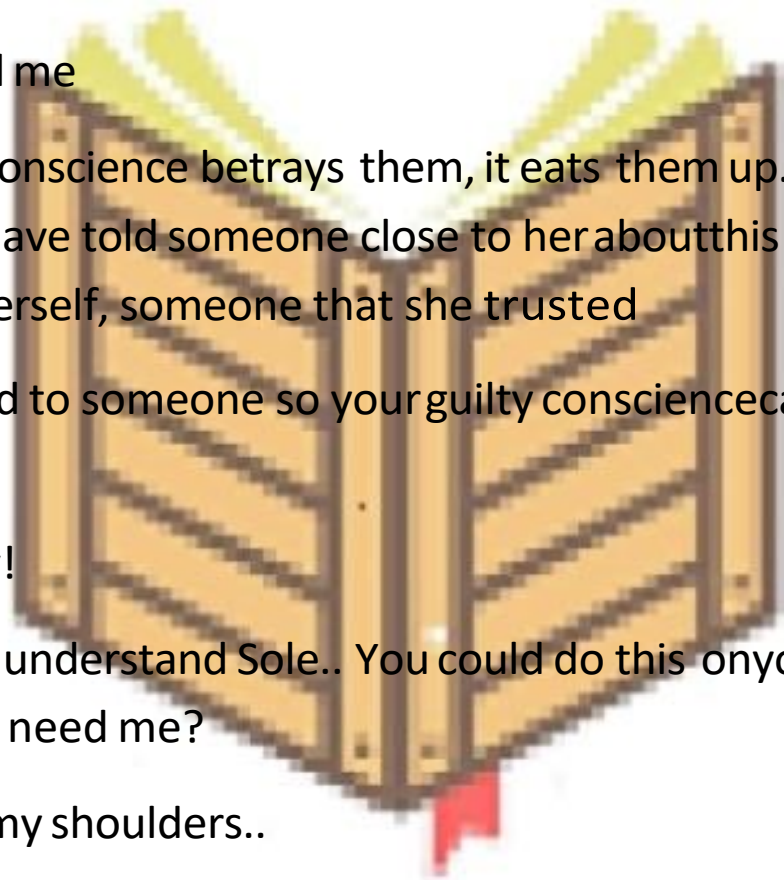
Him: Offload to someone so your guilty conscience cannot eat you up

Me: Exactly!

Him: I don't understand Sole.. You could do this on your own, why do you need me?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I just like having people do things for me



He looked at the picture.. Him: I'm flying to Kzn aren't I?

Me: On the next available flight, I'll transfer you some money for the tickets, accommodation and everything else you going to need. I need that information as soon as possible

Him: Heard!

NONGCEBO

I was in a very bad state, so much that Kelso had a little heart and drove me to the hospital. Last night I didn't even get any sleep, my body was aching, I was shivering and I had blisters on some parts of my body. I was weak, dizzy, and my heart beat was very faint.. If I didn't go to the hospital right away, I fear that I wasn't going to make it to see another day..

They attended to me quickly, they gave me an IV.

NOVELSGURU.COM

When it was finished, they put another one and I was able to regain a bit of strength. Enough strength for the Dr to proceed.. Kelso was standing next to the open doors as we waited for the Dr, he didn't say anything. He was mostly on his phone.

The Dr walked in and made her way to me, she was white.. At least he was kind enough to drive me to a private hospital..

Dr: How are you feeling now? Me: I

still feel like death

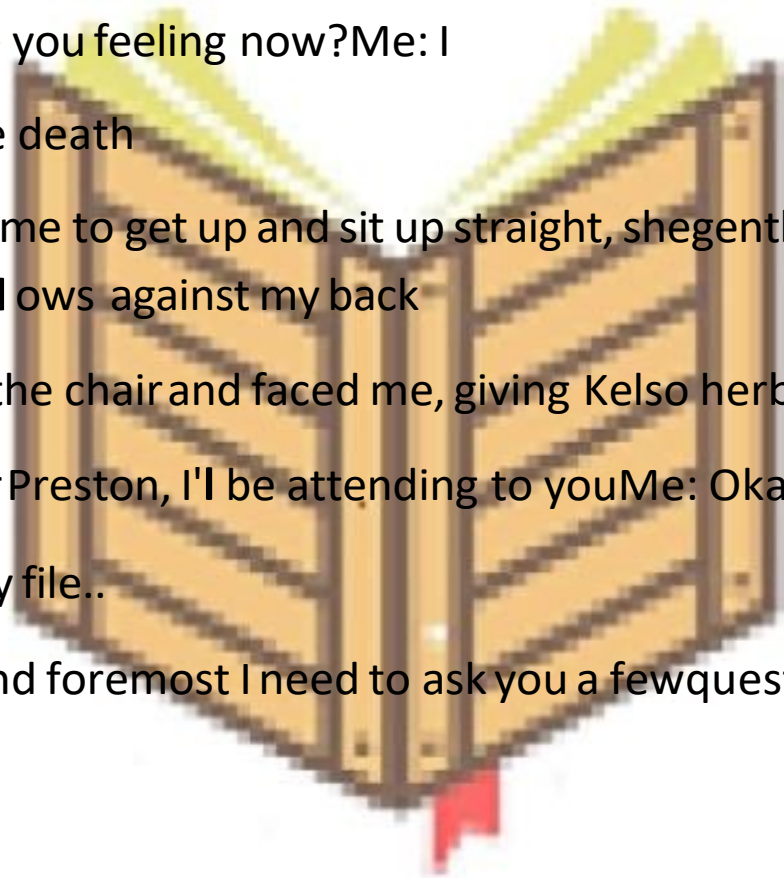
She helped me to get up and sit up straight, she gently balanced pillows against my back

She pulled the chair and faced me, giving Kelso her back..

Her: I am Dr Preston, I'll be attending to you Me: Okay

She took my file..

Her: First and foremost I need to ask you a few questions



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Okay

Her: As a Dr I am binded by law to report any signsof abuse that I see from a patient

I did not like where this was going..

Her: What happened? Who did this to you

I looked at Kelso and he gave me a serious look..Me: I was abducted

Her: By who? Me: I don't know

Her: Did you see their faces?

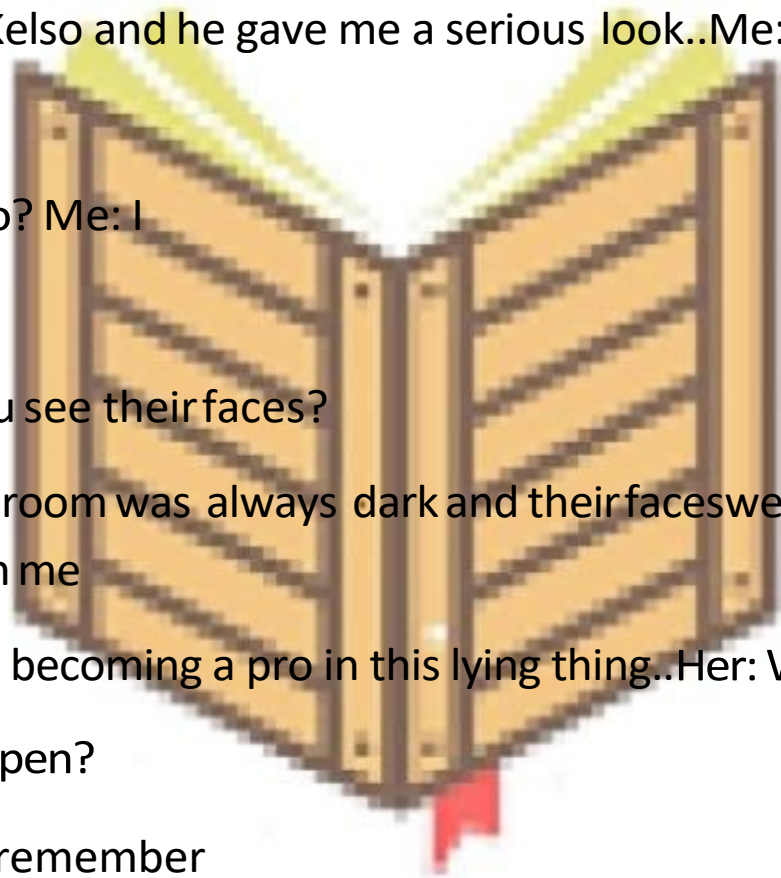
Me: No the room was always dark and their faceswere always hidden from me

I think I was becoming a pro in this lying thing..Her: When did this happen?

Me: I don't remember

Her: When the authorities get here, wil you be able to tel them exactly what happened?

Me: I am not sure, everything happened so fast



Her: Is there anything you remember? Their voices? Me: Not entirely

Her: You are safe here, I need you to tell me the truth

Me: I am telling you the truth Her: I

don't believe your "truth" My phone

beeped..

Me: Sorry

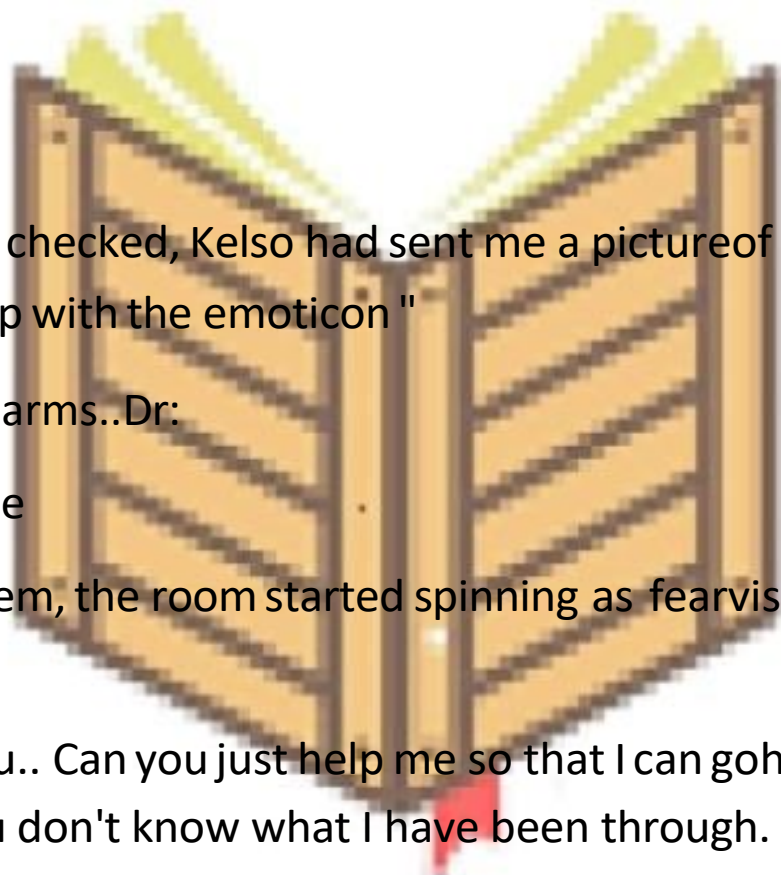
I took it and checked, Kelso had sent me a picture of Bongeka on whatsapp with the emoticon " " "

I closed my arms.. Dr:

Mrs Bhembe

I opened them, the room started spinning as fear visited me again..

Me: Can you.. Can you just help me so that I can go home please? You don't know what I have been through. I don't need this interrogation, I don't want to relive my nightmare. Please... Just help me, that's all I'm asking from you



She nodded and stood up, she walked up to Kelso...Dr: Could you please excuse us?

Kelso: Why?

Dr: Because I said so

Kelso: I'm not leaving my wifeDr:

Should I call security?

Kelso: Why do you want me to leave? Dr: This

is between me and my patientKelso: Your

patient is my Wife

Dr: When she's here she's my patient.. You want me to help her right?

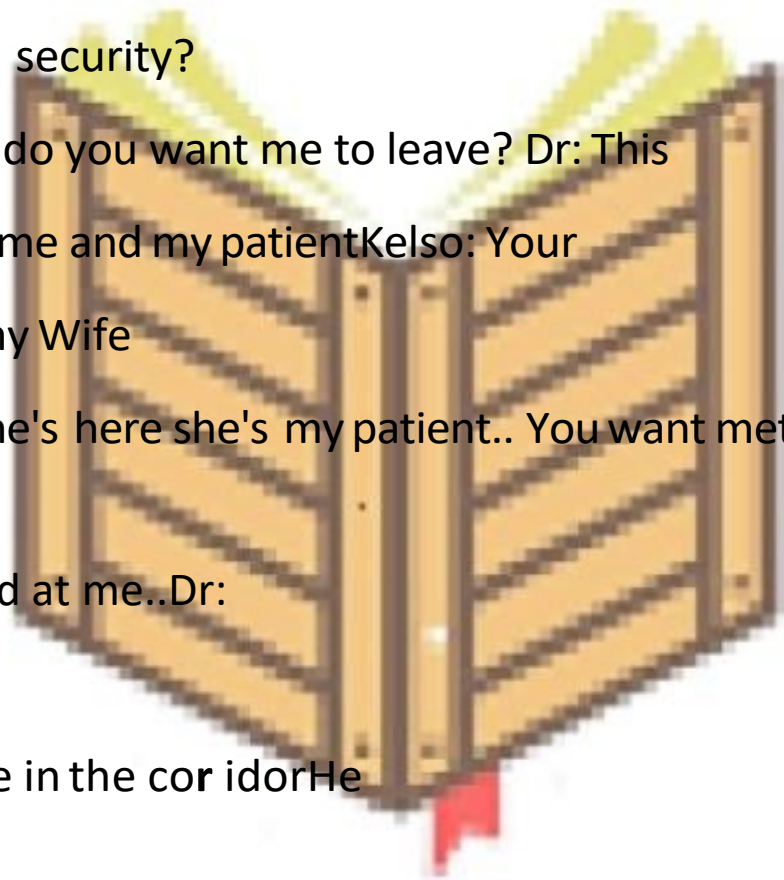
Kelso looked at me..Dr:

So please

Kelso: I'll be in the corridorHe

walked out

The Nurse took out her pager and she was on it for a while whilst standing at the door. I could see Kelso sitting on one of the chairs facing the glass



wal and looking at me..

After a few minutes I saw a lot of female Nurses walking into my ward. The Doctor closed the Door and looked at them..

Dr: I know that you guys are busy but thank you so much for this, this is code 9

The Nurses looked at me..

The Nurses went and stood against the glass wall blocking Kelso from seeing me and I, him. The Doctor looked at me..

Dr: You see these ladies?!

looked at them..

Dr: Right now they are not Nurses, they are women just like you standing right there to show you that they understand. They standing there to give you emotional support, to give you strength because what happened to you could happen to any of them. We don't know the monsters that we are married too or dating until their true colours show. I speak

NOVELSGURU.COM

for all the ladies in this room when I say, we will be damned to let you walk out of here and go back to him.

She looked at the Nurses..

Nurse 1: Love doesn't have to hurt, it is pure and effortless

Nurse 2: It's okay to fear for your life, the key is to pass through that fear and put on the garment of courage

Nurse 3: If one abuser has to be locked away, it makes a huge difference and saves the next victim

Nurse 4: If it doesn't start with you then it will end with someone else

Nurse 5: You can speak up
The Doctor looked at me..

Dr: You are brave, and you are very strong. You survived until you got here, you can survive even when you walk out but you don't have to fight for survival under his hand

This was very emotional.. I felt tears streaming

down..

Dr: It's okay, you are safe

I pulled the sheet and covered my face as I cried for dear life..

Dr: You will never realize how strong you are until you fight your abuser. From the moment I walked in, I could see the fear that he was bringing to you. I was talking to you but you were looking at him, trying to find validation if the lies you were telling were believable enough. We can help you, all we want is for you to tell us what happened, how is he threatening you. We cannot help if you don't allow us to help you... It should end today, and it should end now.. So now I'm asking, how can we help?

GAVENOR KHUMALO

I looked at all the Wardens..

Me: As you have already been briefed, I am the new chief of this prison. I put my hands on the table and

NOVELSGURU.COM

leaned forward still looking at them...

Me: Gentlemen I run a tight ship, it's either you cruise with me or you drown. I took my time to learn about this prison and I'm going to change it, change how everything works around here. I need to know if you are with me, or you are against me

They all kept quiet..

Me: Think about that, I'll be right back

I made my way out and walked to the changing room. All prisoners were locked up in their cells, there was no prisoner walking around free..

I got to the changing rooms with the keys that I was going to need to open their lockers. I needed to know which wardens I can trust, and which ones are pussies to the 28s. I needed to find something, anything that is out of place in their lockers that can lead me to seeing who can and cannot be trusted.

One thing for sure, they never expected this. They never expected me to search their lockers so no one got time to prepare and hide out anything..

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Ondela, she's asking for Instagram followers.

Please click on the link below and follow her

<https://www.instagram.com/ondela.buyana?r=nametag>

[08/24, 13:28] : 75

KELSO

I walked around the parking lot as I waited for my father to pick up..

Him: Kelso?

Me: Pops I need help

Him: How did the heist go? I totally

forgot about that...

Me: Slight hiccups, nothing we can't fix

Him: Scorpion is the best I have in the crew, there



NOVELSGURU.COM

shouldn't be "hiccups"Me:

We fixing it

Him: I don't have time, what do you want?Me: I

need a certain Doctorthreatened Him: Why?

Me: Long story.. It's a uhm... DrPreston, I was able to locate her car in the parking lot. The number plates are her surname and the parking spot is marked. She drives a Hyundai tuscon, white in colour. I want it to be a tonight thing

Him: I'll see what I can doMe:

Thank you

Him: Fucken get that moneyMe: I

wil !

I hung up...

I would never cause any harm to Bongeka, but Nongcebo doesn't know that. Bongeka is very important to Nessi, I can't harm her without breaking Nessi's heart. Nessi wil never forgive me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nongcebo is very confused right now, and this Preston is pressing her. I'm worried she might break. I am not scared of going to prison, but the case might drag no matter how much money I can spend on it and if I do get charged I'll lose Nongcebo. She will make a run for it and never come back.. That would be me losing her...

SOLE

Kelso's Grandmother was very distraught. I can't believe everything that she was telling me right now, I know Kelso is a shit head but he wouldn't harm his Grandmother. Let alone Nongcebo, this isn't making any sense..

Me: This is not making any sense

Her: Kelso is very impulsive, he has anger issues but what he has become lately. I can't even recognize him anymore there way that he tortures this girl. I'm afraid he's going to kill her

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: They just got married, I thought he was happy
Her: I thought so too

Me: I am not making excuses for him but as much as he is impulsive but Kelso doesn't do anything without a reason..
What happened?

Her: He has been accusing Nongcebo of cheating I sighed..

Me: He is still at that?

Her: I really don't know what to do

Me: I doubt she is cheating. If she was, Sandisiwe would know. Women talk

Her: Exactly!

Me: I'll talk to him, and see what's going on
Her: Thank you very much

(Silence) Her:

Sole

I looked at her..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: You the only person that he is scared of and

you the only person that can get through to him, I'm putting this girl's fate in your hands

I nodded..

Me: I'll see what I can do

GAVENOR KHUMALO

They opened, and I walked in. The light bulb provided a bit of light... He was sitting on the bed leaning against the wall with a book in his hands..

Me: Modrid Martinez

He didn't even look at me.. I walked up to him and the wardens walked behind me..

Me: I am the new Gavenor, Khumalo He still didn't say anything..

Me: You were transferred from a maximum prison, to this prison. You must have done something right, considering that the judge who sentenced you hates you. How did he suddenly develop a heart?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Modrid: Can I help you Gavenor?

He stil kept his eyes focused on the book..

Me: Since you got here, you have been in solitary confinement. I think now it's time you get treated like a normal prisoner. Chains off, and a new cel

Modrid: Trust me.. My being here saves a lot of Prisoners out there

Me: What does that mean? Should we be wor ied?

Modrid: No.. I just don't have any interest inengaging with fel ow inmates

Me: Can I ask you something? Modrid:

You going to ask anyway

Me: Your brother is a very wel connected person, why hasn't he tried getting you out? Andre Martinezcan breakthrough that J udge as if like he's breaking a piece of bread

Modrid: What a stupid question, and to answer it. Iam al forjustice being served. I wil do my sentence fully

He looked at me..

Me: You are here because you want to be here, not because you don't have a choice

Modrid: Now you getting the hang of it Me:

Well then enjoy your book Modrid: Thank you

I walked to the door..

Me: Keep a close eye on him

Warden: Yes Sir

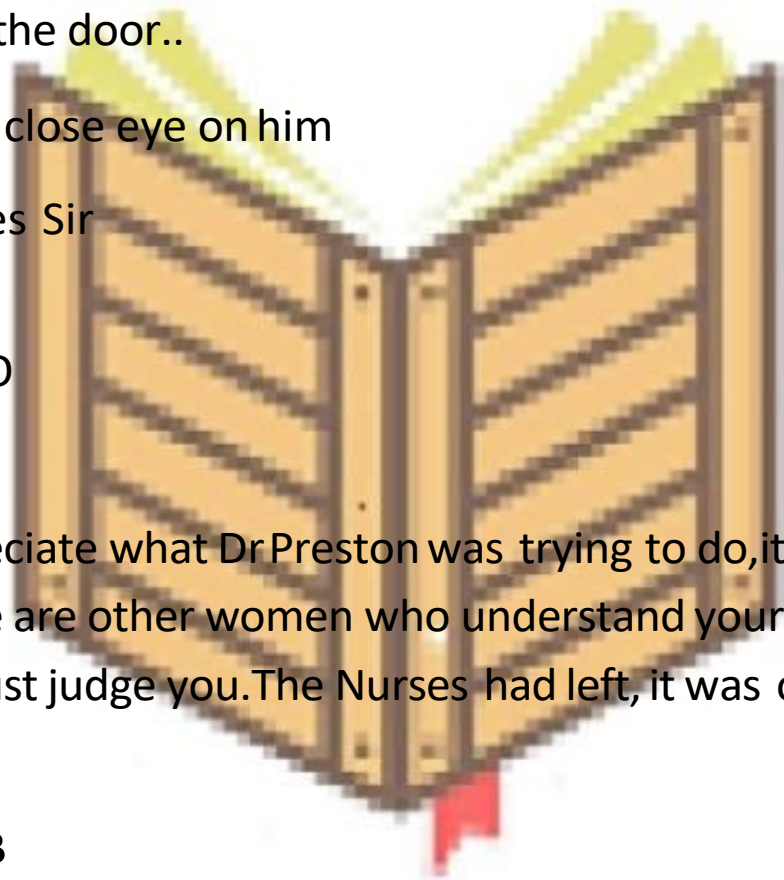
NONGCEBO

I truly appreciate what Dr Preston was trying to do, it's good to see that there are other women who understand your situation and don't just judge you. The Nurses had left, it was only me and her..

Her: Mrs KB

Me: Please call me Nongcebo

NOVELSGURU.COM



Her: That's what they do, they use fear to keep you in the relationship

Me: Kelso is a different breed, this is not just a typical abuser. I appreciate you trying to help but this is bigger than you, the more you sink in deeper there more you'll get in trouble

Her: I am not scared.. When I look at him, I see another typical abuser

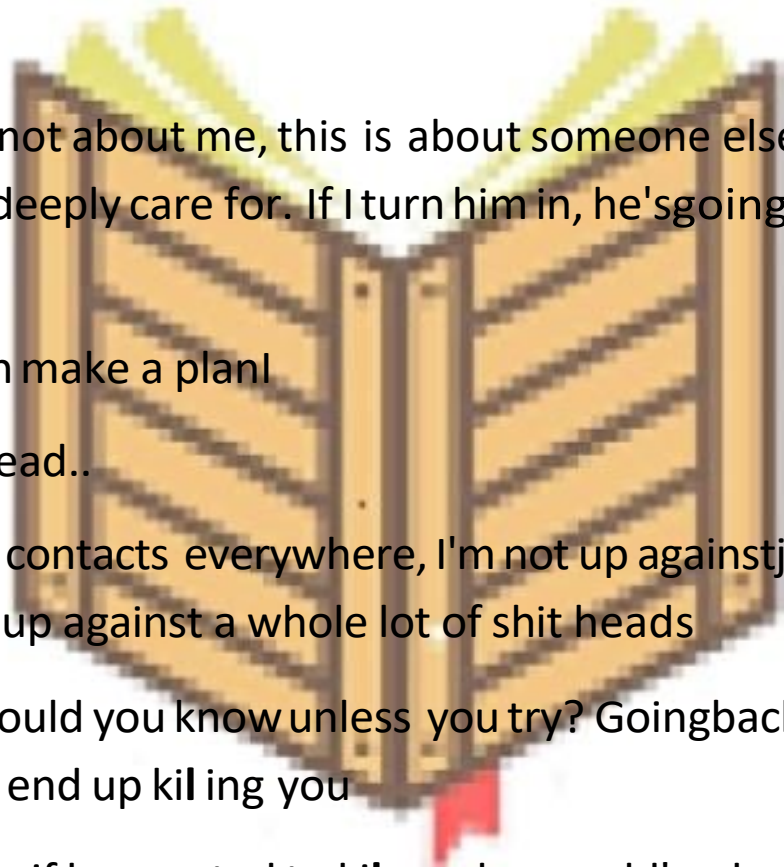
Me: This is not about me, this is about someone else. Someone I deeply care for. If I turn him in, he's going to get to her

Her: We can make a plan
shook my head..

Me: He has contacts everywhere, I'm not up against just one person. I'm up against a whole lot of shit heads

Her: How would you know unless you try? Going back to him. He will end up killing you

Me: I believe if he wanted to kill me, he would've done that already. Look you can't let the



evidence and keep it, one day I'm going to need it. One day when I know that she's safe

Her: I don't want you going back

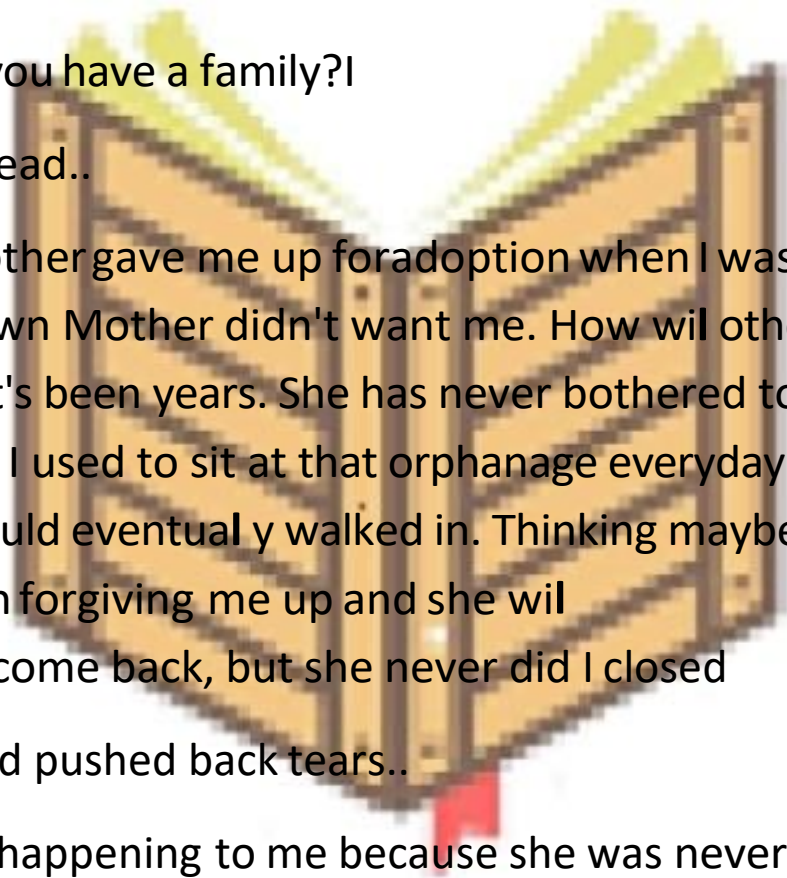
Me: I've lived this life for years, Kelso is not the first abuser. I've lived this so much that I'm beginning to think I was destined for it

Her: Don't you have a family?!

I shook my head..

Me: My Mother gave me up for adoption when I was still a baby, my own Mother didn't want me. How will other people want me? It's been years. She has never bothered to even come back, I used to sit at that orphanage everyday thinking that she would eventually walk in. Thinking maybe she had a valid reason for giving me up and she will eventually come back, but she never did I closed my eyes and pushed back tears..

Me: This is happening to me because she was never there. Never there to groom me, and tell me about life. I ended up marrying a man that I barely



knew because I believed in love so much. I didn't think about all the bad things that can happen in a marriage, I only viewed the beautiful side of it

Her: What do you want?

Me: To be free.. To live my life without fear, to live for me. To get to know me, go through life alone and be emotionally dependent on myself. I want to know who Nongcebo is, Nongcebo without a man next to her. Be selfish for once and live for me, work towards bettering myself. Be the woman that I want to be, go to school, get a good job. Possibly travel the world.. I yearn for that kind of independency

She nodded..

Her: We can preach until Kingdom comes, but only you can give yourself that. Only you can stop this, we can't help you if you don't want to be helped.

Someone once said to me that when it comes to helping someone don't try harder than them, I do hope that one day you will leave. Leave without a coffin. There's only much that I can do for you, and everything else is up to you. I am not going to judge

you, I am not going to call you a fool. I don't know what you are going through and I don't know your reasons. All I know is that for you to deny help, then you have a good reason for it. No one and I mean no one will choose hurt and pain, only you understand your life and you know him better than I do... I will keep the evidence for you, I hope one day you will come back and have the courage to turn him in, you don't know whom you are going to encourage too

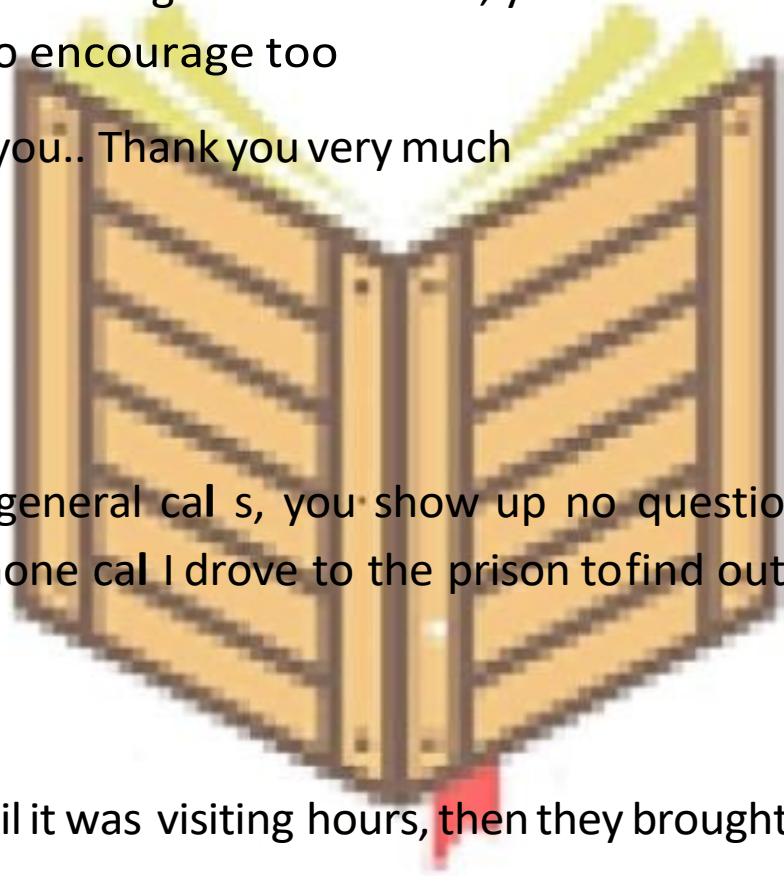
Me: Thank you.. Thank you very much

SCORPION

When the general called, you showed up no questions asked. After his phone call I drove to the prison to find out what he wanted..

I waited until it was visiting hours, then they brought him in..

NOVELSGURU.COM



Him: Scorpion.. Thank you for coming Me: It sounded important on the phone

Him: I want you to threaten someone. Dr Preston, she works at St Hope hospital. She has her own parking spot, and her surname is on her numberplate. She drives a Hyundai tuscon

Me: What did she do?

Him: I just tell her that what she did today was unacceptable, tell her that if she's not careful a lot can happen

I nodded..

Him: There's a new sheriff in town Me: Oh yeah?

Him: He seems like he doesn't take shit Me: Are we safe?

Him: I don't know but he's got Wardens scared and shaking, we will be affected in the process

Ken doesn't know that I am the Gavenor's Son, I would like to keep it that way..



Me: I'll go to this Preston

Him: Good... Now tell me, what happened with the heist?

Me: Your son stood is up, he never showed up Him:

What do you mean?

Me: We waited and waited

Him: That doesn't sound like Kelso Me:

You'll have to talk to him

Him: Maybe something important happened, maybe something happened to the wife

Me: I really don't care, just tell him to keep to his end of the deal... I can't work like this

Him: I understand

I saw my Father looking at us..

Me: I have to go.. I'll sort out this Preston situation Him: Thank you

[08/24, 13:29] : 76

BANZA

The queue was long and depressing, it was full today at shoprite. I'm not surprised, it's month end. This is the only free time I'll get to come and buy toiletries, after an hour I'll be on the road since we busy. I glanced down at my shopping basket, I realized that I forgot a body lotion. I turned back to a beautiful lady standing behind me, she was busy on her phone..

Me: Sorry

She looked at me, she was really beautiful no lie. She had on a beautifully wrapped head scarf, her makeup wasn't a put off and I liked that red lipstick. She was leaning forward against her trolley, she's short. Chubby cheeks, and has a thick body. She was wearing a long sleeve black dress, black stockings and boots..

Me: I forgot something, do you mind keeping my spot for me?

She smiled at me.. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: No problem

I put my shopping basket on the floor and went to get the body lotion. I then came back..

Me: Thank you Her:

You welcome (Silence)

Me: Kugcwele namhlanje (It's full today) Her:

Kakhulu (Too much)

I noticed the Ford key on her hand.. She had on red & white beaded bracelets around her wrists..

Me: I'm sorry to be forward.. Are you a traditional healer?

She laughed..

Her: Spiritual healer Me:

Huh?

Her: I accepted my gift and became a Prophet and my spiritual guides they work with me too..

Ancestors as you call them

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How does it work? Her:

How does what work?

Me: Working both with God and ancestors?

Her: I thought that accepting my gift the prophetic way, I was only going to be God's servant but my Ancestors stuck around too. If I need to help someone considering what the person believes in, I will help them accordingly to what they believe in

Me: Ohw I see

Her: Spiritual guides work well in terms of generational curses, say if in your family there's a generational curse. Your ancestors who understand the curse might step in to help

Me: So how did they accept you at church?

Her: I'm not evil. I don't harm people nor hurt people and my church accepts people with both gifts. I am right with God

Me: Wow.. This is mind blowing, so in a situation of witchcraft how do you help? Especially if the person wants revenge

Her: Well in that situation I help you to be rid of that witchcraft only and how to protect yourself. I don't send back whatever they did to you back to that person, but if your ancestors want it like that or if God wants it that way they the ones who take the lead after all "vengeance is all mine" saith the Lord, if God wants to punish your enemies. He will.

Deuteronomy 28:7.. "The Lord will grant that the enemies who rise up against you will be defeated before you. They will come at you in one direction"

Me: "but flee from you in seven" She smiled..

Her: You know your Bible

Me: My father is a junior pastor

Her: That's nice... Many people when they come for help and they find out who is behind their suffering they tend to want revenge against that person, a tooth for a tooth. And I always tell them if God wants to revenge your enemies he will, leave it all unto God and when God revenges they end up coming to you kneeling down and ask which

witchcraft you are using or which God you serving because he is powerful

I was very impressed, mad impressed..I took out my phone..

Me: Forgive me for jumping the gun here, but uhm..Maybe I would want to consult. Can I please have your number?

Her: Of course

She put in her number..

Me: Thank you.. I'm Banza by the way Her:

Manto

That name sounded familiar, I remembered my dream last night..

Me: Manto Her:

You next

Me: What a beautiful name Her:

Banza you next Cashier: Abuti

hle please! !



Me: Ohw yaa I'm next

She laughed and shook her head..

NONGCEBO

Sandisiwe walked in with Sole. She looked at me and made her way to me..

Sandi: Ohh my word I swear to God I'm going to kill him!

She put her bag on the bed and hugged me, for a moment I even forgot that I was in pain. Despite what happened between us, I was glad that she was here..

Sandi: What the hell is wrong with that guy? What the hell is wrong with him?

She looked at me..

Me: I'm okay... I'm okay

Tears streamed down. Sole looked at me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: How are you?Me:

I'll be okay

Sole: I can't believe this! what has gotten into Kelso?I have been trying to get a hold of him but..

Sandi: You are not going back thereMe:

Sandi you don't understand She looked at

Sole..

Sandi: She can't go back there

Sole: You can move in with us, you always welcomeMe: I

appreciate the gesture guys but..

Sandi: Nongcebo he is going to kil youMe: Did

he tel you that I was here?

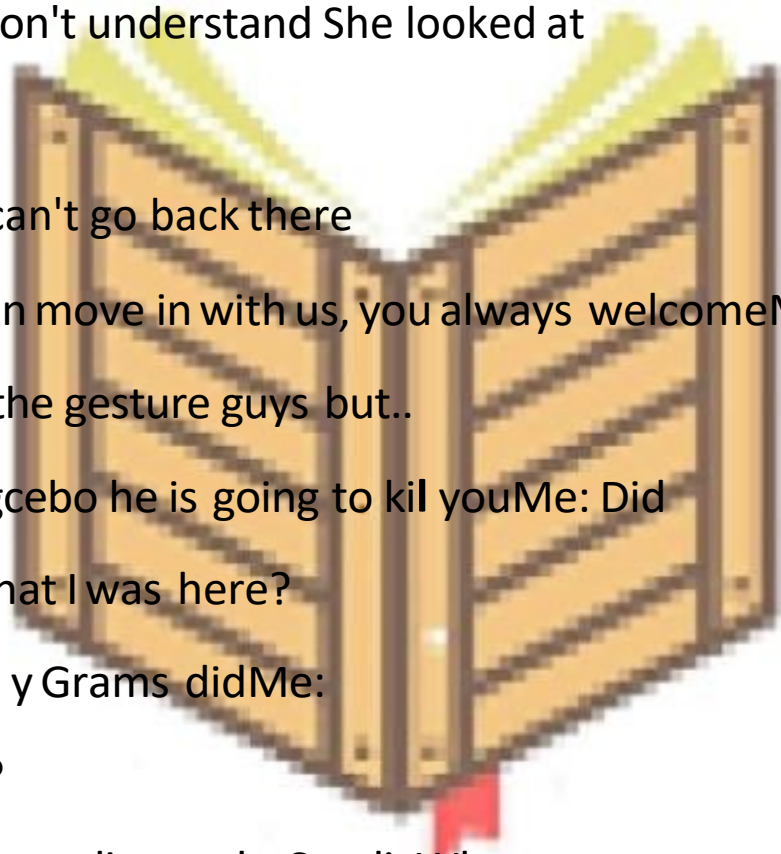
Sole: Actual y Grams didMe:

How is she?

Sole: She's very distraught Sandi: Why

would he do this? **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: He is suspecting that I'm cheating



Sandi: What the hell ? Sole:

This is messed up Sandi looked
at Sole..

Sandi: If you don't do anything about this, I'll never forgive you

Sole: Where is he? Me:

I'm not sure Sandi:

Call him

Sole: He's not picking up my calls.. I'll be right back He walked
out...

Sandi sat down and looked at me..

Sandi: How is this happening? Why is this happening? You guys
just got married not so long ago.. You supposed to be happy
and enjoying your marriage Nongcebo! not this

Me: I would lie to you if I said I knew what happened, he just
changed.. Changed into someone I don't know. If you could see
my body, I'll never feel comfortable undressing in front of
anyone from

NOVELSGURU.COM

hereon

She shook her head..I

chuckled..

Me: I should be happy that he hasn't touched my face, at least not yet

Sandi: This is so wrong in so many levels, I don't know what I'd do if Sole could raise his hand on me. I'd probably stab him in his sleep

I laughed..

Me: You'll always be crazy
She held my hand..

Me: I'll never forgive him, he took that big part of me that loved him dearly... I will never forgive him

I took a deep breath.. Me:

And I'll never forget

KELSO

NOVELSGURU.COM



I drove to Neli's place to go and see her, even today she didn't attend her classes..

Neli: This is the last stash I have

Me: Where can we get more? I need more Neli: It's

R600

Me: affordable

Neli: Wait until you run out of money Me:

Don't worry about me, I'm a hustler

Neli: So what is wifey dearest saying about this? Me: About what?

Neli: You and I, the drugs, everything

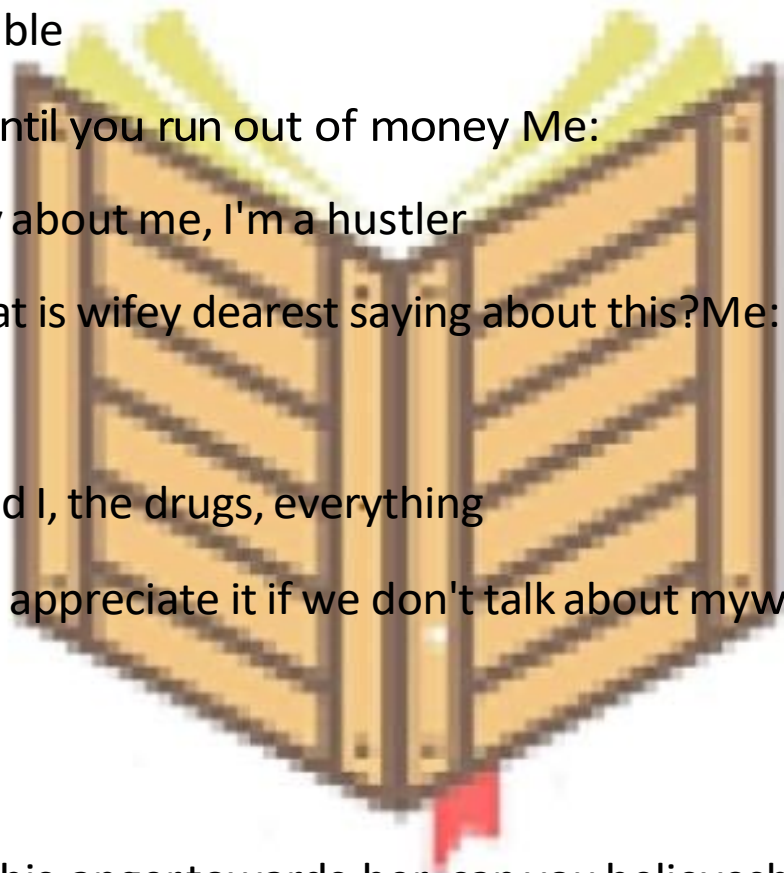
Me: I would appreciate it if we don't talk about my wife

Neli: Okay

(Silence)

Me: I have this anger towards her, can you believe she cheated and caught an STI? **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Neli: What?



Me: Entlek uyanginyanyisa (she disgusts me) I tried to spice up our sex life but... That bitch literally messed herself up when we were trying Anal, I don't think I'll ever try that again

She laughed and clapped her hands..

Neli: I don't believe it! She's not good for your image

Me:. Even the guy she cheated on me with, he's way below me.. A bloody taxi driver! On the road all day with his balls sweating, then she allowed him to hit that... Yerrrr

Neli: When you cheat or replace someone at least go for someone who is at the same level or better... A taxi driver, ayi akakuzwanga

Me: I wanna break that bitch so bad that she will hate Men for the rest of her life.. Her previous relationship she was involved with an old man, he was also in the taxi business

Neli: She has a thing for abo mageza shame

Me: I spent a lot of money on this bloody wedding, spent money on a cheap hoe I'm even starting to

NOVELSGURU.COM

believe that she has been sleeping around.. Yisifebeesingcolile
leyanto

Neli: Ya neh.. Thatha Kelso with your cheap
whatever.. Hai maan you can do better

I leaned over and kissed her..Me:

Way better

My phone started ringing, it was Sole. I switched it off..

GERTRUDE

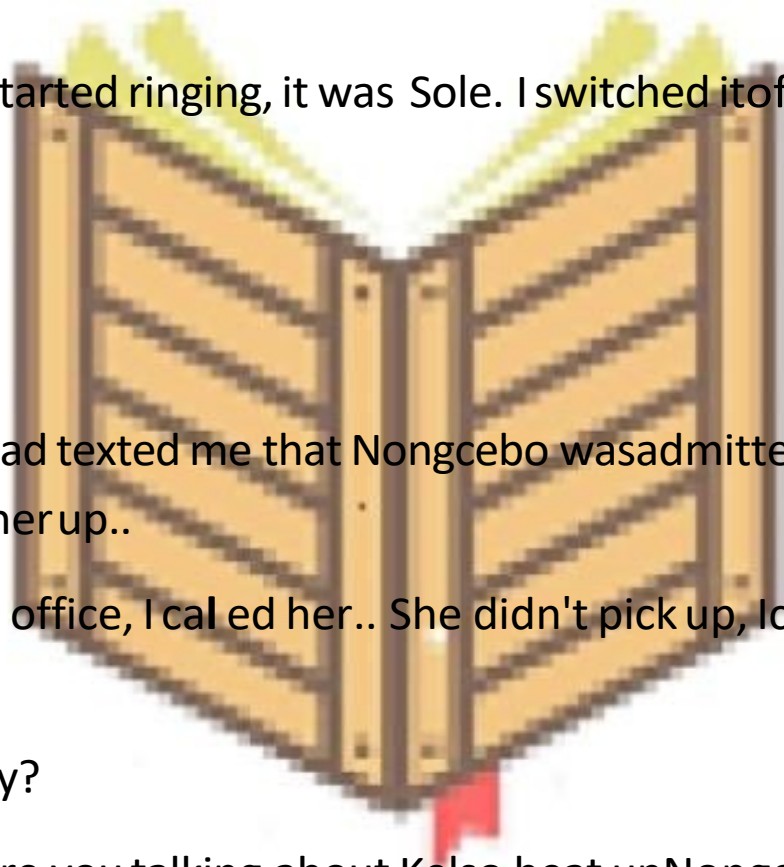
Sandisiwe had texted me that Nongcebo was admitted,
Kelso beat her up..

I was at the office, I called her.. She didn't pick up, I called her
again..

Sandi: Aunty?

Me: What are you talking about Kelso beat up Nongcebo?

NOVELSGURU.COM



Sandi: It's bad Aunty, she looks so drained like there's no life in her left anymore. I don't know what he did to her exactly but..
He broke her

I started breathing fast..

Me: Is she going to be okay?

Sandi: I don't think so.. I was telling her that she should move in with us

Me: No!

Sandi: Why not?

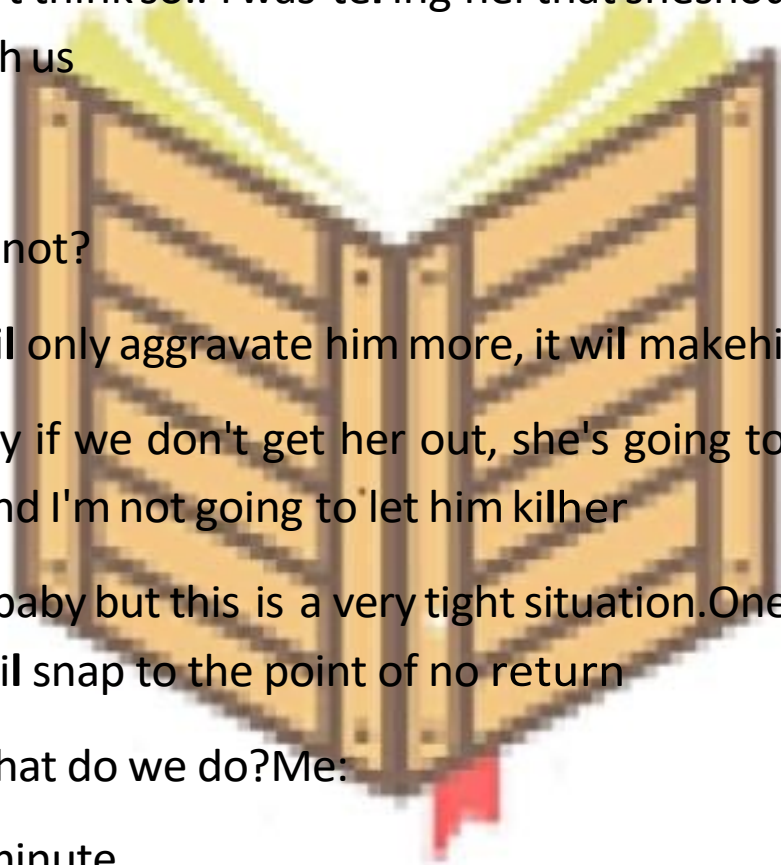
Me: That will only aggravate him more, it will make him worse

Sandi: Aunty if we don't get her out, she's going to die! She's my friend and I'm not going to let him kill her

Me: I know baby but this is a very tight situation. One wrong move, he will snap to the point of no return

Sandi: So what do we do? Me:

Give me a minute



NOVELSGURU.COM

I hung up and put my phone on the table. I closed my eyes and started breathing in and out. I unbuttoned my shirt..

Me: Breath Gert

*****FLASHBACK*****

I was on the floor naked and bleeding, he had a sjambok and he was whooping me. The floor was cold, when he was seeing that he was getting tired he would change his hand.

I glanced at the door way and I saw my Daughter standing there scared and shaking. She even urinated on herself, That's when tears started to stream down..

Ken: If you ever try to leave again, I'm going to kill you! Worse you left and took my kids with!

Me: Takie

Ken stopped and looked at her..Ken:

Takie go back to your room

Takie looked at him..Ken:

Now!!!

Takie ran back to her room..

I quickly made my way to the bathroom as I struggled to breath. I opened the tap and splashed the water on my face, then I looked at myself in the mirror. I unbuttoned my shirt all the way down, I closed my eyes as tears continued to stream down my cheeks. I took off the shirt and looked at the scars, they were very faint now but to me they were as clear as daylight. Taking me back to that horrible night..

NONGCEBO

I was on whatsapp and Banza's profile picture didn't show anymore. I forgot that he had blocked me. I viewed status updates.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I went to view Kelso's status updates..

He had uploaded videos of himself and the girl, one video in particular she was making cute faces and he was standing behind her. With his arm around her neck and kissing her on her neck. She was only in her bra and her lower body wasn't showing. I could see from his side that he wasn't wearing any t-shirt... Her: Babe

He raised his head and looked at the camera.

Her: We should try anal sex, I wanna experience that chocolate cum

They both laughed...

Kelso: You just fucked up my day He walked away and she followed..

Her: Babe come on I was just joking hey Him: I hope so

She kissed him..

Her: I love you

NOVELSGURU.COM

She wiped his lower lip..

Him: I love you too nunuber yThe

video ended...

I put my phone away, I can't believe he actual y toldher what happened that night. Judging from how she found it funny, he probably made a joke about it... My heart was torn..

.

To be continued

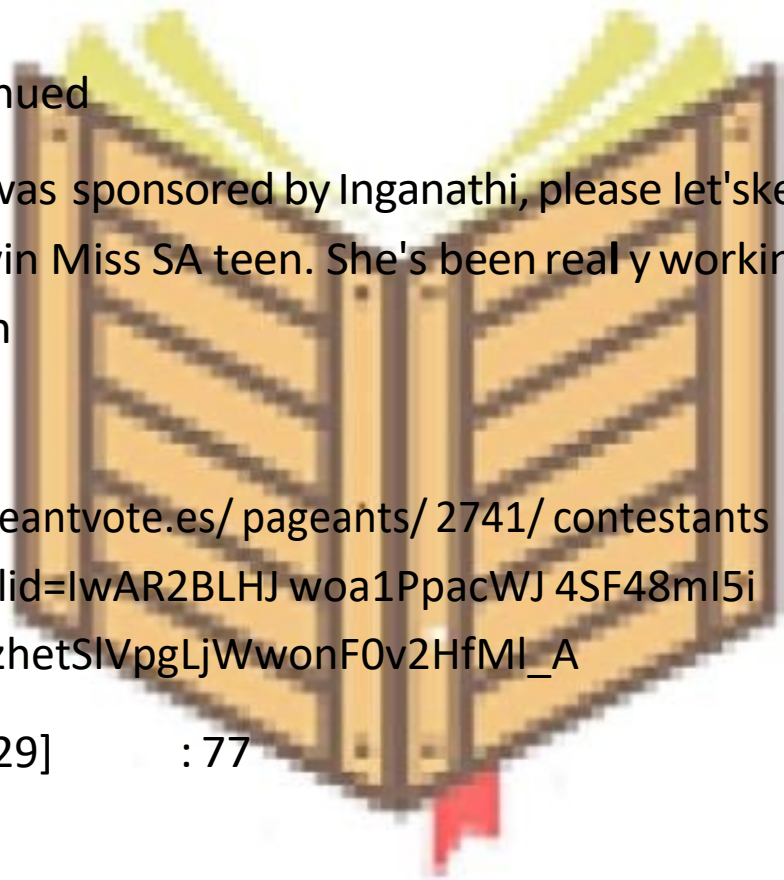
This insert was sponsored by Inganathi, please let'skeep on voting for her to win Miss SA teen. She's been real y working hard in this competition

https://pageantvote.es/pageants/2741/contestants/18101?fbclid=IwAR2BLHJwoa1PpacWJ4SF48mI5iVOE8NH5TzhetSIVpgLjWwonF0v2HfMI_A

[08/24, 13:29] : 77

NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM



Later on at night, Nessi and Bongeka video cal ed me..

Me: Tonight I am blessed

Bongeka: Wait.. Are you at the hospital?Me: Yes

Nessi: What happened?

Me: Nothing much, they just cleaning my wombNessi: Did you miscar y?

Me: Seems like the boarding school is very good, I didn't miscar y just been having problems with mywomb

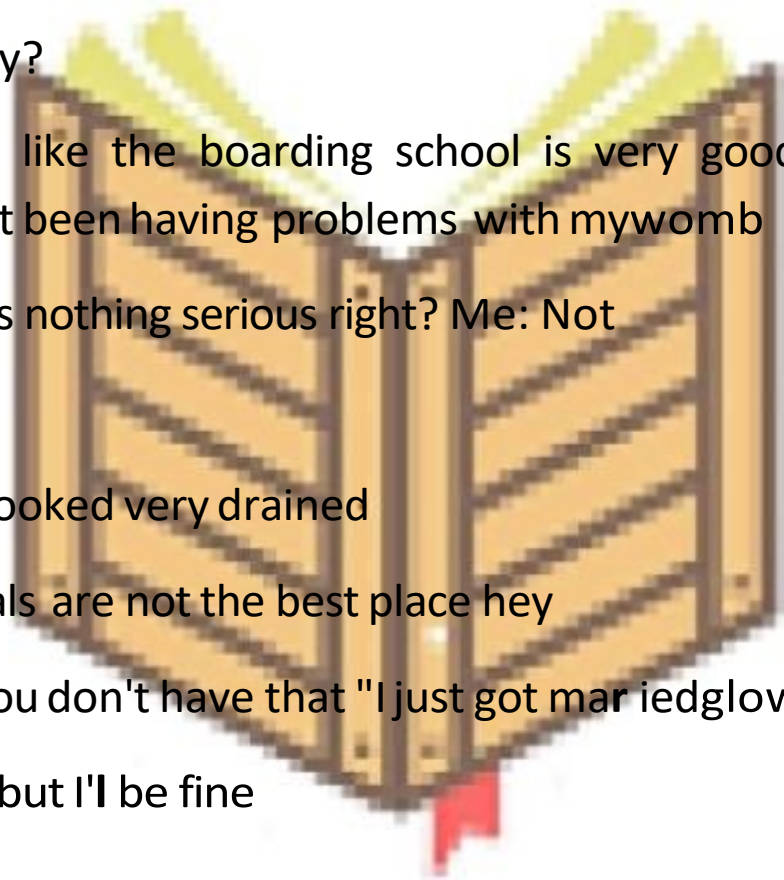
Bongeka: It's nothing serious right? Me: Not at al

Nessi: You looked very drained

Me: Hospitals are not the best place hey

Bongeka: You don't have that "I just got mar iedglow"

Me: I know but I'll be fine



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nessi: You and my Uncle are having problems right? I've seen his whatsapp updates

Bongeka: And who the hell is that yellow bone?

Nessi: She looks wild, party animal definitely a party and whore

Me: We don't talk like that about other people
Nessi: He is cheating on you!

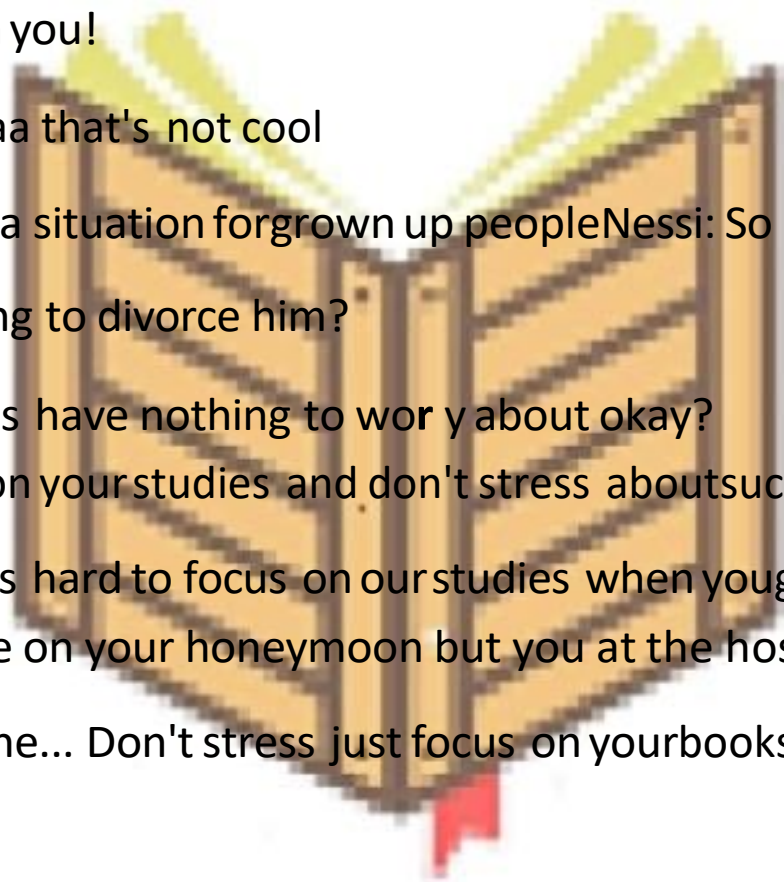
Bongeka: Yaa that's not cool

Me: This is a situation for grown up people
Nessi: So are you going to divorce him?

Me: You girls have nothing to worry about okay?
Just focus on your studies and don't stress about such

Bongeka: It's hard to focus on our studies when you guys are meant to be on your honeymoon but you at the hospital

Me: I'll be fine... Don't stress just focus on your books and stay out of this



NOVELSGURU.COM

SCORPION

I waited for her to drive in, I've tailed her from the hospital until to her place. I still don't understand why I was doing this, what did she do to one of us?

I drove in after her, before the gate closed. I made sure that it was a very quick thing, and I got out of the car first to make sure again that she doesn't get out of hers quicker than me or possibly call for help..

I knocked on her window..Me:

Open the door

Her: Who are you and what do you want?

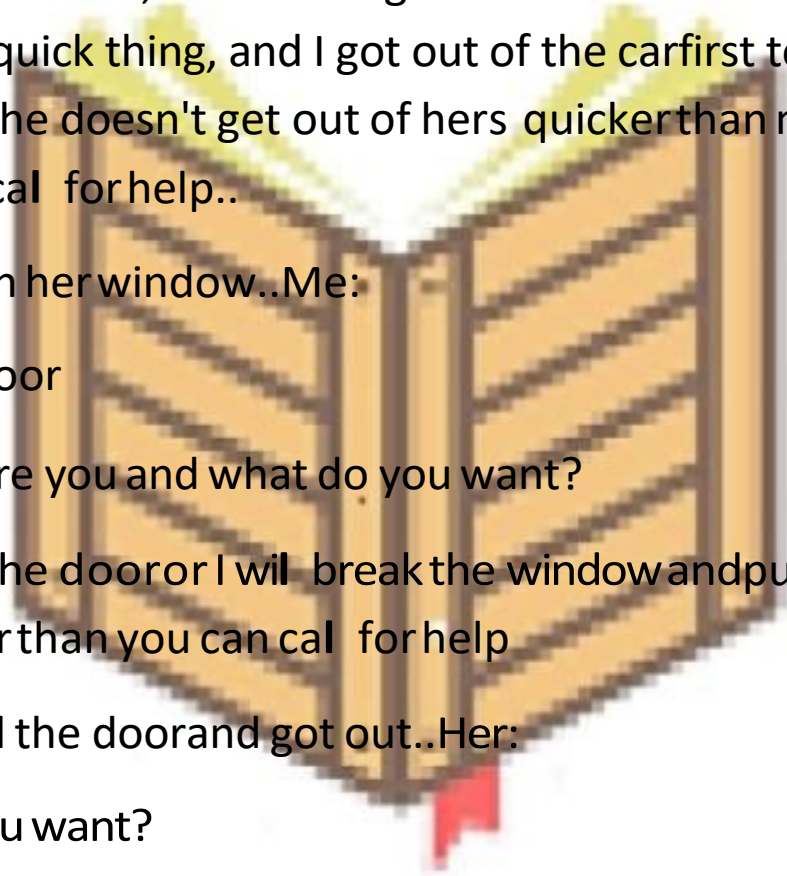
Me: Open the door or I will break the window and pull you out, quicker than you can call for help

She opened the door and got out..Her:

What do you want?

She looked at a bit scared..

Me: What you did today at the hospital, you have just put yourself in danger and we don't respond



NOVELSGURU.COM

wel to danger

Her: What are you talking about?Me: I

think you know

Sha thought fora moment..

Her: Where you sent by the husband? Can I get myphone and show you something?

Me: Get your phone, but don't try anything stupidSha opened the doorand got her phone.

Her: I want to show you somethingSha was on it fora while..

Her: Here.. Swipe to the left for me

She was showing me pictures of a woman that wasbadly hurt. The face wasn't showing, only the body..

Her: The man who did this to her, is the same man that you trying to kil me for. To protect him! You areprotecting an abuser

NOVELSGURU.COM

This was not on, Ken knows the rules. We don't touch women, we don't rape women, or don't beat

them. I can't believe I was standing here trying to protect his Son!

Her: I will go on to say that you are weak! You are standing here in front of me protecting an abuser! What's wrong with the Men in this world? If he's your friend then you doing a pretty bad job! What about that poor woman? He abused her. She's laying in the hospital bed fearing for her life, doesn't wanna press charges because she's scared. Scared of this situation that I am starting to get scared too. So what is it that you guys do? Violate women and protect each other? What a shame. Kill me if you want, and if you do decide to take care of her at least remember her name. Nongcebo Bhembe, may these pictures haunt you forever!

MANTO

I blew the match stick when the candle started burning. I exhaled and looked at it, then I looked at my phone..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Cal already

I knew that I was going to meet Banza at shoprite that's why I passed all those supermarkets close to my area and specifically went to that one. Banza is the only person who will lead me to the girl that I am meant to help.. I have also learnt that he is my future Husband. A husband that my ancestors chose for me. I haven't had any luck when it comes to relationships, my ancestors never approved because they have kept someone for me. That someone is Banza.. When we talked at the supermarket I felt the chemistry and the connection between us, we understood each other so well and he never even judged me. The best and realest conversation I've ever had with someone in a very long time...

This girl that I'm meant to help, I've been shown what happened to her. Her previous relationship, her in laws did her very dirty. They married her off to the person that she was involved with. Now, they couldn't use his real image because she was going

NOVELSGURU.COM

to notice that something was off. They disguised him with Banza's image to blind her. A spiritual husband tends to cause a lot of distraction especially if the woman is in a relationship. Due to the intimacy, they make the woman's partner to be less interested in her because of the effects that the intimacy brings. This woman who did this to this girl is a very powerful dark traditional healer.

Umlalisa nesilwane, basically she is sleeping with the creature disguised as Banza of which is standing strong in the spiritual realm standing strong for the lady's husband. As if like that's not bad enough, bamshaya ngesichitho (a curse)

Hence her husband is finding her disgusting and turns off..

It really breaks my heart knowing that she's destined for good things but such people are making it difficult for her to reach her destiny

I don't know why people have to be this evil in the world..

NOVELSGURU.COM

SOLE

Kelso was losing it. I had actually checked his whatsapp status updates and texted him, he then blocked me. I don't know why he's acting like this, but he needs to get his shit together. I received a call from my PI..

Me: And?

Him: I just landed

Me: Fuck it man, at what time did you leave?

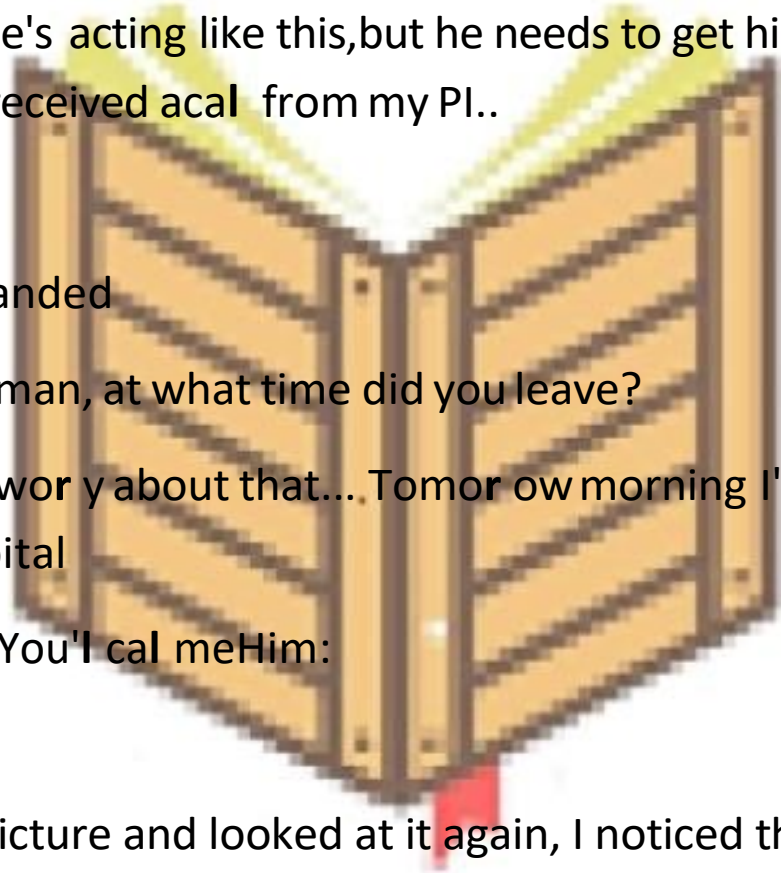
Him: Don't worry about that... Tomorrow morning I'll be going to the hospital

Me: Cool... You'll call me

Sharp

I took the picture and looked at it again, I noticed the hospital wrist band from the mother. She wasn't showing in the picture just her arm..

Me: Tho.. Thokozile Khumalo



NOVELSGURU.COM

I didn't ask Scorpion for his Mother's name..I exhaled and looked at the baby..

Me: Where are you?

NONGCEBO

I was trying to fall asleep but it was difficult, I kept on tossing and turning. I was lost in my thoughts.. As I was trying to sleep, I felt a warm touch. A feeling that I have never experienced before, more like a mother's touch. It was very warm I can't even describe it..

I turned to the side to see what was going on but it was quiet. I was alone in the ward. That was strange, I tried sleeping again..

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:30] : 78

NOVELSGURU.COM

SANDISIWE

[2 MONTHS LATER]

I was on the second trimester and I was enjoying it more than the first trimester. I enjoyed the baby moving, the kicks. The only thing that I struggled with was swollen feet, that part I didn't enjoy at all. I try to do home pregnancy exercises as much as I can, so I don't put on a lot of weight. Considering how obsessed I am with chocolates..

Work was still nice, I enjoy writing my column, checking our social media pages people were actually starting to like it..

As much as I didn't want any opposite sex friends, but Anele made it impossible for us not to be on a friendship level. He is a nice dude, understands and respects boundaries.

Anele: Don't you wanna go out? Me:

Where too?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Anele: I have a story that requires me to go and visit the family

Me: What is the story about? Anele:

They buried a wrong body
Me: Sounds interesting

Anele: It does

Me: You get interesting cases as a journalist
Anele: Some cases are just way too unbelievable
Me: Ya I know.. Well I'd like to go with you

Anele: That's great.. We will leave in 5

Me: Let me call my boyfriend and tell him to pick me up later

Anele: Sharp

I got up and went to my cubicle to call Sole..
Sole:

Sweets

Me: How are you Snowflake

Sole: I'm good actually was on my way to picking you up

Me: Ya about that... I'm accompanying a friend to some family, there's an interesting story of a family burying the wrong body

Sole: It's that part of the job?

Me: No I just wanna go there and see what's popping

Sole: I don't know how to feel about that, you should be coming home and resting

Sole is very annoying at times when it comes to my pregnancy. He treats me like I'm sick, doesn't want me to do anything. According to him I wouldn't even be working..

Me: I'm fine.. It's just a work trip

Sole: So long you promise that you going to be safe Me: I wil

Sole: Okay... I love you Me: I

love you too Anele walked

up to me..

Anele: It's his first baby?



Me: Yes

Anele: No wonder Me:

He's annoying

Anele: He's just being protective, I would be too Me: Ya should we go?

Anele: Yes let's go Me:

Okay

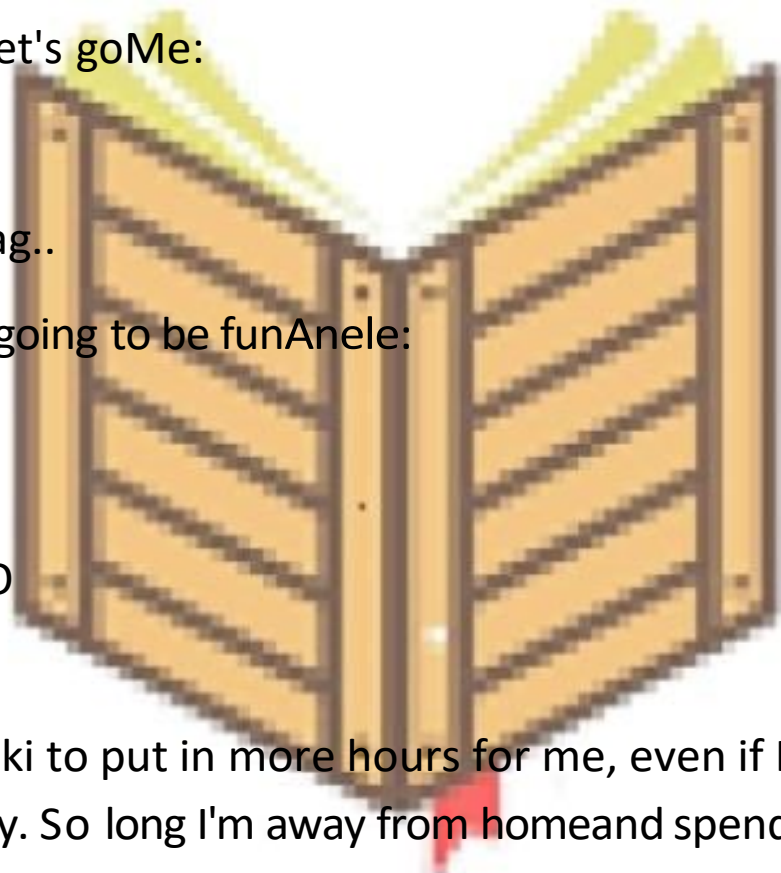
I took my bag..

Me: This is going to be fun Anele:

Very fun

NONGCEBO

I asked Minki to put in more hours for me, even if I don't get paid it's okay. So long I'm away from home and spend most of my time at work then I'm happy. Home is still a nightmare, though the last time he put his hands on me was before I went to the



NOVELSGURU.COM

hospital.. He's usually not that much around anymore, days can pass without him being at home.

I figured he is with that lady, which I don't mind at all. It hurts yes but at least I get peace. I don't know what's happening with him, Kelso is just spiraling out of control..

I saw Kelo walking in, he looked around and spotted me. He made his way to me..

From Gertrude's Instagram pictures, she posted one picture once of her Kelo and the other Daughter. I figured from seeing that picture that Kelo and Kelso are half brothers, but I doubt Kelo knows that. Now it makes sense why he looks so much like Kelso..

Kelo: Hi

Me: Hi

Kelo: How are you? Me:

I'm good and you? Kelo: I'm

wel

He looked at me without saying anything.. Me: Can I

help you with something?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelo: My mother told me about what you going through, she wasn't gossiping about you but since you and her are close she's very worried about you and so am I

Me: I'm fine Kelo... Thank you very much
Kelo: I'm glad to see you that you okay

Me: Is there something else that I can help you with?
Kelo: Yes how about lunch?

Me: I'm not going out with you

Kelo: No maan.. I'll buy and bring it here for you
Me: I am not hungry thank you

Kelo: Nongcebo..

Me: I don't mean to sound rude but... Please leave me alone, don't come here unless you wanna buy something, don't ask to bring me lunch, don't ask how I am just come buy or look around and then leave!

Minki: Hai Nongcebo you don't talk to people like that

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelo smiled, his dimples came out. How I hate dimples right now, how I hate him looking like Kelso. I just wanted him to leave already and leave me alone...

Kelo: It's okay... Have a nice day
He walked away..

Minki: I don't know what's wrong with you but always being rude to our male customers is not good

Me: I am not being rude they are annoying, they always want to flirt. They think every woman is available, they don't want to get it through their stick skulls that not all women want to be in a relationship

Minki: But you married

Me: Biggest mistake of my life

Minki: Sisi what is going on? You haven't been yourself lately, because you are even losing more weight.. Shouldn't you guys see a marriage counselor?

Me: I'll be okay

Minki: Please stop mistreating our male customers, you have 2 warnings already

Me: I know I'm sorry

Minki: We have new stock, keep yourself busy by unpacking

Me: I'll do so

BANZA

I called Manto a few days later after she gave me her number. I was even taking my chances with her and she agreed to the first date, then the second, then the 3rd. I didn't expect her to be single, and when she told me that she was single I couldn't believe it.

Manto is a very amazing woman, spending more time with her has put a strain on my relationship with Sasa. I am losing interest in Sasa, and we don't spend that much together anymore. I've known Manto for a short period of time now, but the



NOVELSGURU.COM

way that we have connected it's like we have know each other for a long time now. Not forgetting the fact that she's a good cook too..

Right now we were in what we call her "Prayer room" and she was telling me everything that was happening to Nongcebo. My heart was beyond the word "broken".

When Makhathini's Aunt did what she did at the mortuary, I never told Nongcebo because I didn't understand what she was doing. I could've told Nongcebo only to find that her witchcraft didn't work, but now I regret not telling her.. I took my hat from my knee and folded it, Manto came and knelt before me.

She put both her hands on my knees..

Her: Listen to me, even if you told her Nongcebo wasn't going to believe you. Nongcebo has had a bad experience with Traditional healers and telling her was going to make her hate them worse and she was possibly going to be mad at you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I should've known, Nongcebo wouldn't have lied like that.. I have to tell her what's going on

Her: No

Me: If this spiritual husband thing goes on Kelso is going to kill her especially now that he's convinced she's cheating.. At least she has to leave him

Me: If Nongcebo is forced to leave him, she's only going to go back to him when he comes back and apologizing and what not, Nongcebo has to be the one to walk away from this. If she walks out on her own, she's not going to go back. Plus since she's not much of a believer, we need to approach this with caution

Me: He's going to kill her

Me: Right now she's a bit safe from the spiritual husband. Her mother heard her daughter's cry she's fighting for her, she's greatly fighting the spiritual husband

Me: So what now?

Me: I may not clearly see her future but Nongcebo

her future looks bright. When she finally gives in, we go to break the marriage and cleanse her. God is allowing for this to happen so that Nongcebo can see his existence. So that when he finally saves her Nongcebo will believe in God. There's blessings that God is keeping for her, and God being God is going to give her tremendous healing. When she reunites with her family and they introduce her to her ancestors, there's blessings that her forefathers are keeping for her. Kuzolunga one day, ende Kuzolunga ngathi akwaze kwabheda... All you have to do is trust me

Me: I'm just worried about her safety

Me: 1 Corinthians 10:13 "But God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tested/tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation will also make the way of escape, that you may be able to bear it" God wouldn't have allowed for her to go through this if she wasn't strong enough

NELI

NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at my results and I had flunked so bad, so bad that I wasn't going to sit for my exams. It was an nightmare, now it seems like I might have to come back next year and repeat. I am a private paying student, I used Men in exchange for them to pay for my fees, rent and everything else that I'm going to need.. I was on the phone with Kelso

Kelso: How did it go? Me: I

flunked

Kelso: What do you mean you flunked?

Me: I did bad, I don't qualify to sit for my exams Kelso: That's shit Neli, why weren't you studying? Me: Please don't start with me

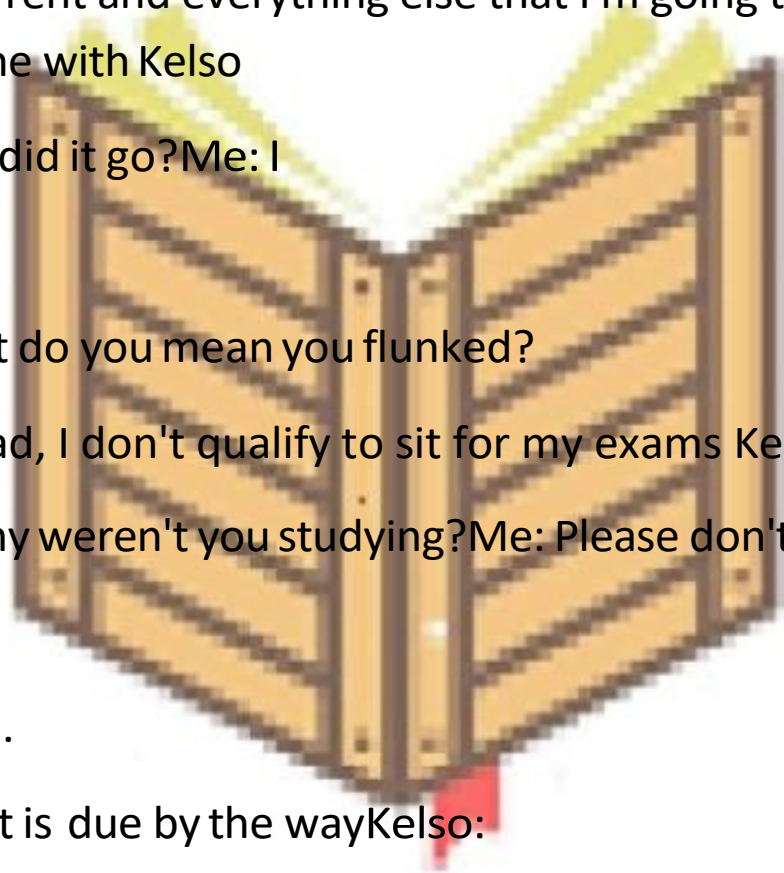
He exhaled..

Me: My rent is due by the way Kelso:

I will transfer

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Thank you.. Will I be seeing you tonight?



Kelso: I don't know, I have something to do tonight
Me: Like what?

Kelso: Just my business
Me:

Okay then I love you
Kelso:

Yeah me too

He hung up. That was cold, that was very cold..

SCORPION

Ken sat down in front of me..

Ken: I didn't know about this Kelso situation I don't wanna lie

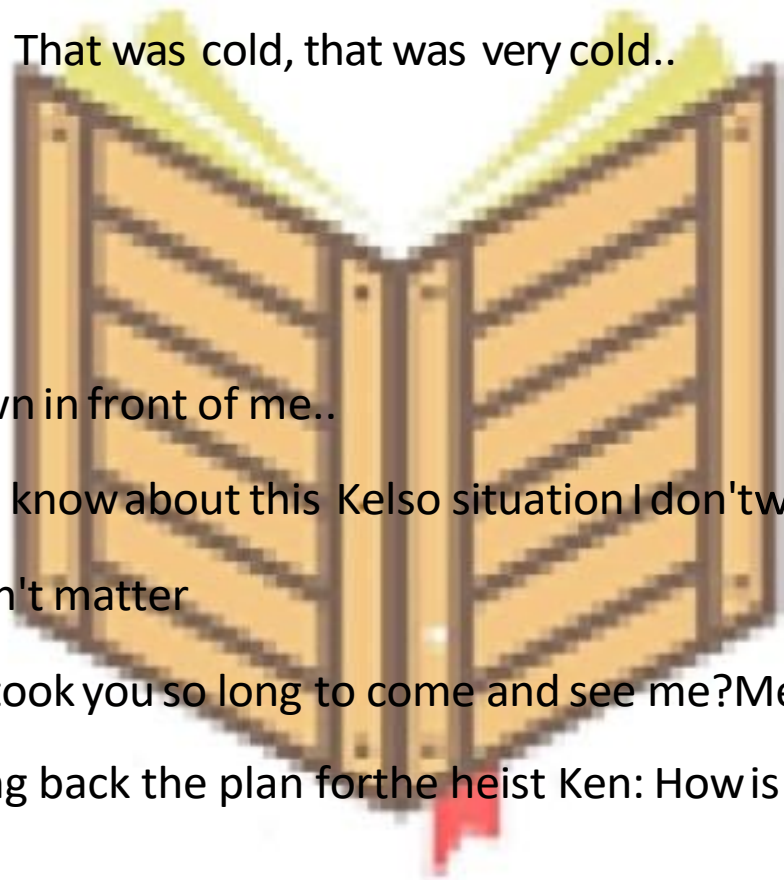
Me: It doesn't matter

Ken: What took you so long to come and see me?
Me: We

were putting back the plan for the heist
Ken: How is that

going?

Me: Kelso is out. It's me, Sole, and I'm bringing in



NOVELSGURU.COM

Socks

He shook his head..

Ken: You can't put Kelso out

Me: Your Son is spending his time beating up his wife, he is a weakling. I never respect Men who abuse women, actually I hate that with all my heart. Thinking about it, I feel like braking his neck, cutting off his balls and let his wife swag with them as earrings

Ken: Personal affairs shouldn't interfere with business

Me: You made it personal when you asked me to threaten that Dr

Ken: You don't call the shots, my Son is in

Me: Unfortunately this is not a heist for the 28s, and right now I'm free to help out my Friend Sole

He chuckled..

Ken: Your friend Sole? I got

up..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yeah my friend Sole.. Have a nice day

SOLE

My phone rang, it was my PI..

Me: Please tel me something, anything, if you wanna come back to Gauteng tel me something

PI: I might just not come back, I'm enjoying KznMe: How is it going?

PI: I have final y located a col eague of the Nursethat stole the baby

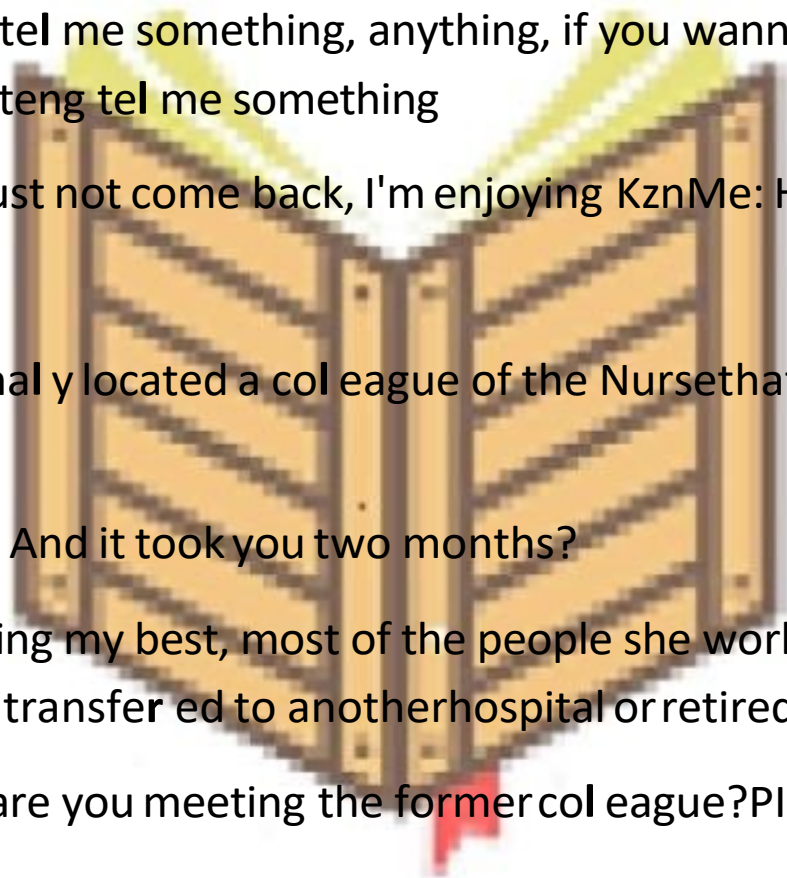
Me: Final y! And it took you two months?

PI: I was trying my best, most of the people she worked with had either been transfer ed to anotherhospital or retired

Me: When are you meeting the formercol eague?PI:

Tonight

Me: Okay.. Then cal me afterthe meeting



NOVELSGURU.COM

Pl: I'll do so

This was great news, at least I will be able to tell Scorpion something...

NONGCEBO

Kelso walked in as I was busy helping some customer, I got scared. This is how it is now, I am very scared of him.. He stood at a far distance and looked at us..

Me: This one is on sale Customer:

Yeey! That's good

I went from working at a fast pace to taking my time because I didn't wanna talk to him..

Customer: Could you please speed it up a bit? Me: I'm

sor y

I tried to be fast again... Me:

R700

NOVELSGURU.COM

Customer: The item on sale helped Me:

Too much

She paid and I put everything in the plastic..

Customer: Thank you very much No..

Me: Nongcebo

Customer: I like your friendliness when I come here, I wanna be helped by you only

I smiled..

Me: Thank you Mam' Customer:

Have a lovely day Me: You too

She took her things and walked away, Kelso moved closer to the counter..

Kelso: Mrs MeMe:

Hey

Kelso: Unjani sthandwa sam' (how are you my love) Me: I'm good

and how are you?

NOVELSGURU.COM



Kelso: I'm good

I was busy clearing everything from the counter trying to ignore eye contact..

Kelso: When is your lunch break? Me: I am from my lunch break

Kelso: How about I take you out tonight? Me:

Okay

He stretched his hand to hold mine, I froze.. Kelso: I miss you so much

I looked at my hand, my first thought was that he was going to break it or something..

I couldn't even hear what he was saying anymore, a lot of things were running through my head... I was only brought back from the world of my fear when I heard another familiar voice. It was Kelo..

Kelo looked at my hand joined together with Kelso's..

Kelo: Are you okay?

NOVELSGURU.COM

I nodded..

Me: This.. This is my husband

Kelo looked at Kelso, it was like I was looking at twins standing before me. That's how much they looked alike up in person standing next to each other. Yes there a little differences between here and there only if you take your time looking at them. Kelo also showed that he was younger than Kelso..

Kelo: Yeah I don't care

Kelso chuckled: Wtf?

Kelo: Listen I brought you these forms

I removed my hand from Kelso's grip.. Kelso looked at me..

Kelo: I remember going through your Facebook posts sometime back and you had posted about applying at any university for next year.. I brought you these forms of universities that are taking late applications

A lot has been happening I even forgot about that.. He put the forms on the counter...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelo: UJ , TUT, WITS, UP, UNISA.. I also compiled a list of all the courses that are accepting late applications

This just made my day..Me:

Wow!...

Kelo: I just say thank youMe:

Thank you

Kelo: With a smileMe:

Forget it

Kelo: I just once please.. You have a beautiful smileKelso: Young blood..

Kelo: Don't talk to me, don't say anything to me, I don't know you and you don't exist

Kelso laughed..

Kelso: You flirting with my wife in front of meKelo

looked at him..

Kelo: What are you going to do? Rough me up? You know it's men like you that give us a bad name out



there.. Thanks to you now all women hate us
Me: Kelo..

Kelso: Where did you learn that? From our mother
Gertrude?

Kelo looked at him..

Kelso: Oh why didn't you know? Sorry little Bro
Kelo:

What?

Kelso: Before you there was me and my big sister, but
mommy being a little hoe she ran off to the sunset with your
punk father leaving me and my baby sister. Then mommy
had other two kids, she named her daughter after my big
sister Takie, and named her son almost after me. Kelo? Kelo?

Me: Kelso

He gave me a serious look..
Kelso:

I'm not talking to you

Without thinking Kelo punched Kelso across his face, Kelso
took a step back. Kelo charged at him..

Me: Oh my word

NOVELSGURU.COM

I moved from the counter..

Unfortunately Kelo didn't give him a second chance, Kelso held his hand and turned him around pinning his hand against his back. With his other hand around Kelo's neck. He let go of the pinned hand and put it at the back of Kelo's head. He put him in a position where he could snap his neck..

Me: Kelso stopped!

Some people who were passing by stood at the door looking at the situation..

Me: Kelso!

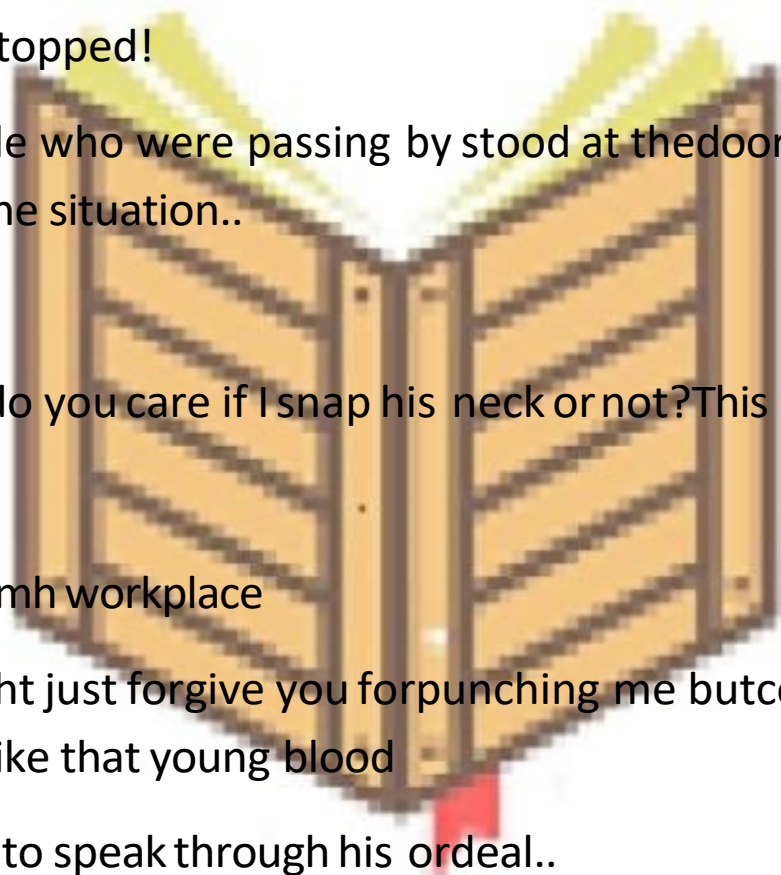
Kelo: Why do you care if I snap his neck or not? This is my workplace..

Me: This is my workplace

Kelso: I might just forgive you for punching me but coming on at my wife like that young blood

Kelo forced to speak through his ordeal..

Kelo: I will marry your wife, and I hope you live long enough to witness our wedding



Kelso: What the fuck did you say?

Kelso tightened his grip around Kelo's neck..Minki came out from the back office..

Minki: What the hell is going on?She moved closer..

Minki: Go get security I'll call the cops

Kelo was running out of breath, Kelso looked at me..Anger flashed through my eyes..

Me: I'll call the Police myself

Minki: I'll get security and clear people from away from the door

Minki walked to the door, I went back to the counter.I picked up the phone and called the Police, Kelso looked at me..

Me: Good afternoon my Name is Nongcebo I would like to report a man being strangled to death at a store that I work at

Kelso slowly let go of Kelo..

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continuedNo

edits

[08/24, 13:30] : 79

KELSO

The Police did arrive and we were taken down to the police station. No charges were laid since we both attacked each other, from my side they viewed it as self defense. All thanks for the fact that the 28s has most of the police on their payroll, being the Son of the General makes things a little bit easier.

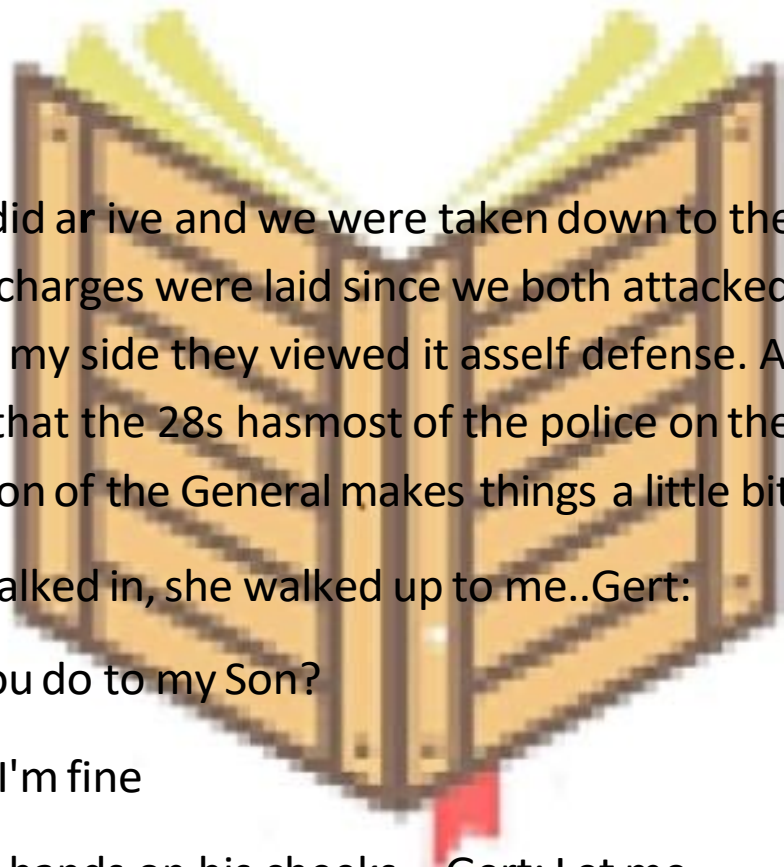
Gertrude walked in, she walked up to me..Gert:

What did you do to my Son?

Kelo: Mom I'm fine

She put her hands on his cheeks... Gert: Let me

look at you, are you okay?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelo: I'm fine

I could see the worry on her face, the love she had for her Son..

Gert: I hope that a case of assault has been opened against this hooligan

Officer: From the information I have gathered your Son attacked first, this gentleman was only trying to protect himself

Gert: Protect himself are you serious?

Officer: Quite frankly I should charge your Son with assault!

Gert: Do you know who I am? I can take down this whole entire police station

Kelo: Mom you embarrassing me!

Gert: When it comes to my children I don't play I bit my lower lip..

Kelo: Let's just go

Gert walked closer to me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Gert: Now you see why I left you? Look at me because I am not ashamed nor do I feel guilty for leaving you! Best decision I've ever made, you are indeed your father's son and you don't deserve me as your Mother! I regret ever carrying you, I should've aborted you! Most of all I can't wait for Nongcebo to do what I did to your father, leave you and go marry someone who is going to love her and respect her and I want you to be there to witness it all. You don't deserve that girl!

I got up and the officer held me back..

Gert: And you still won't charge him for anything? He doesn't deserve to live in a society with other people

Officer: I think you should leave Kelo:

Let's go Ma

Gert turned to her Son then they walked out...

Officer: You need to keep your temper under control, I can't keep on bailing you out like this

Me: Get this shit off me

NOVELSGURU.COM

He took out the small key and got the cuffs off..

ANELE (SANDISIWE'S COLLEAGUE)

I looked at Sandisiwe as she held a conversation with the family, I was attending to an important call ..

Me: I am working on it
Wilsonia: How far along is she?
Me: I don't know

Wilsonia: What do you mean you don't know?

Me: This type of thing needs patience, she has to trust me first

Wilsonia: I want that baby dead do you hear me? I'm not paying you to tell me to be patient!

Me: I am working on it... Just trust me
I hung up and walked back to them..

SOLE

NOVELSGURU.COM

Scorp: Where is your head at?!

looked at him..

Me: My girlfriend went out with a colleague Him:

So?

Me: I don't feel good not knowing where she is Him: You just being paranoid

Me: I need to know who this colleague is, need to know if it's someone I can trust around her

Him: You serious? She's making friends at work don't ruin her life

Me: Still ..

Him: You have trust issues don't you?

Me: I just don't trust human beings that easily and it frustrates me not knowing anything about this colleague

NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at my hand that was trembling..

Him: Just relax... I'm sure it's nothing serious, what

you need to tel me is why you not talking to yourhomeboy about being abusive

Me: Kelso doesn't listen to anyone

Him: What happened to punishing a woman sexual y?
Send her to a point of return and whenshe's about to come leave her like that

I chuckled..

Me: Best punishment, but what can you do if you could find out that your wife is cheating on you?

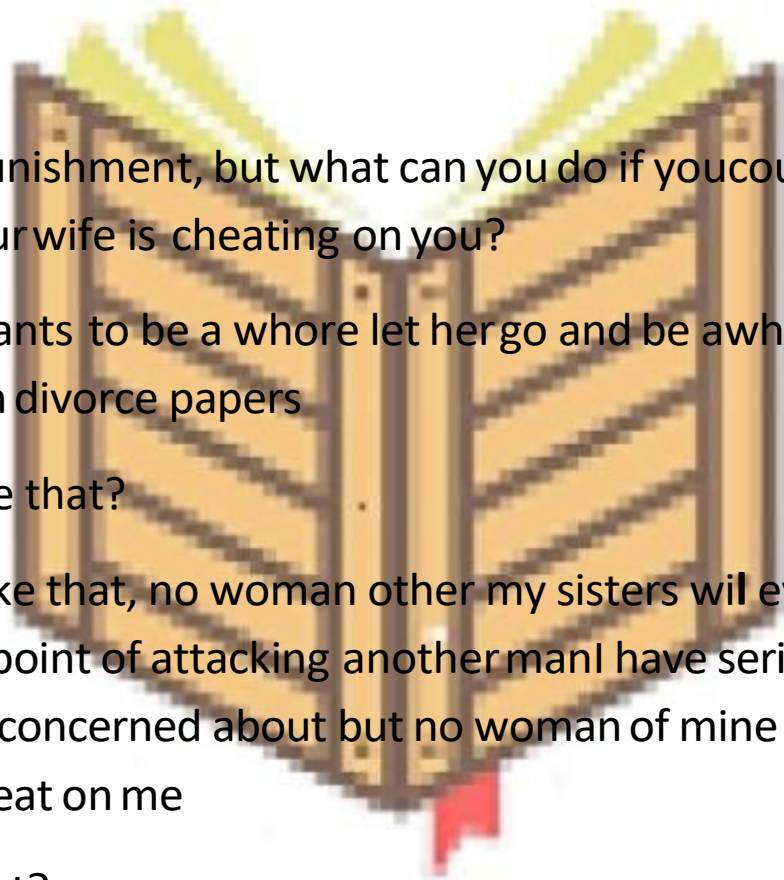
Him: She wants to be a whore let her go and be a whore, hit that up with divorce papers

Me: J ust like that?

Him: J ust like that, no woman other my sisters wil ever drive me to that point of attacking another man I have serious things to be more concerned about but no woman of mine is ever going to cheat on me

Me: Why not?

Him: My aura is intimidating she wil think twice before doing that probably think that I'm going to kill her should she cheat, meanwhile I'll just be relaxing



and just let her think that... I don't believe in attacking a woman especially someone you claim to love, how can you hurt someone that you love? It doesn't make sense.. When I punch a man you can see the disorientation that the punch causes, what more about a woman? No level of anger will let me hurt the woman I love. At least not physically. Would you do it?

Me: I don't hit women but I will definitely bury her alive

Him: You and Kelso are cut from the same cloth, hang with me homeboy I will teach you a thing or two... How is the case with my sister going?

Me: It's going, I'll give you something concrete probably tomorrow

Him: I look forward to it

NONGCEBO

What Kelso did today was shit. I don't mind him

NOVELSGURU.COM

being a jerk at home but coming to my workplace? Why does he even care if another man gets close to me? He is seeing someone else and he has made it clear that he loves her. He treated me like shit, he showed me that he doesn't love me he shouldn't care at all! He provoked Kelo, he had no business telling him that. I don't even want to mention how embarrassing this was, my manager witnessed all that... I'll be lucky if I still have my job after this..

Minki: I told the Regional manager what happened
Me: I'm so sorry Minki

Her: I didn't tell her that it was your husband, I only told her that two male customers had an altercation at our store and the police is handling the matter

I closed my eyes whilst exhaling..
Me:

Thank you

Her: I know this is not any of my business but.. Is he abusing you?

I kept quiet..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Nongcebo if you are being abused you have to

speaking out Me: I

know

Her: So why aren't you turning him in?

Me: It's very complicated and deeper than you think Her: Now he

is coming to your workplace to

embarrass you, what's next? He's going to beat you in public

Me: I know Minki

Her: I like having you around, you a very dedicated employee and I don't want to lose you but if you don't fix this you're going to be out of a job soon

Me: I'll fix it I promise and thank you very much Her: Go

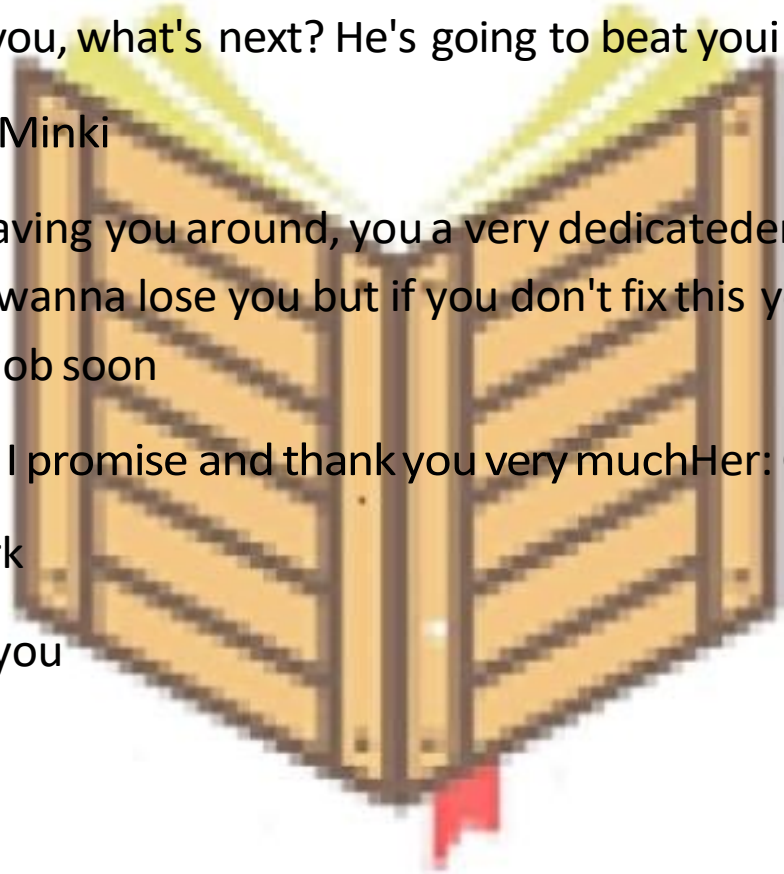
back to work

Me: Thank you

KELO

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: I can't believe he attacked you like that, and



the police aren't even going to do anything about it We were driving back home..

Me: He said that he is my brother She kept quiet..

Me: Is he?

She stil remained quiet..Me:

Does Dad know?

She nodded...

Me: Great! What's going to happen next? You going to abandon me and Takie?

Mom: Don't be sil y

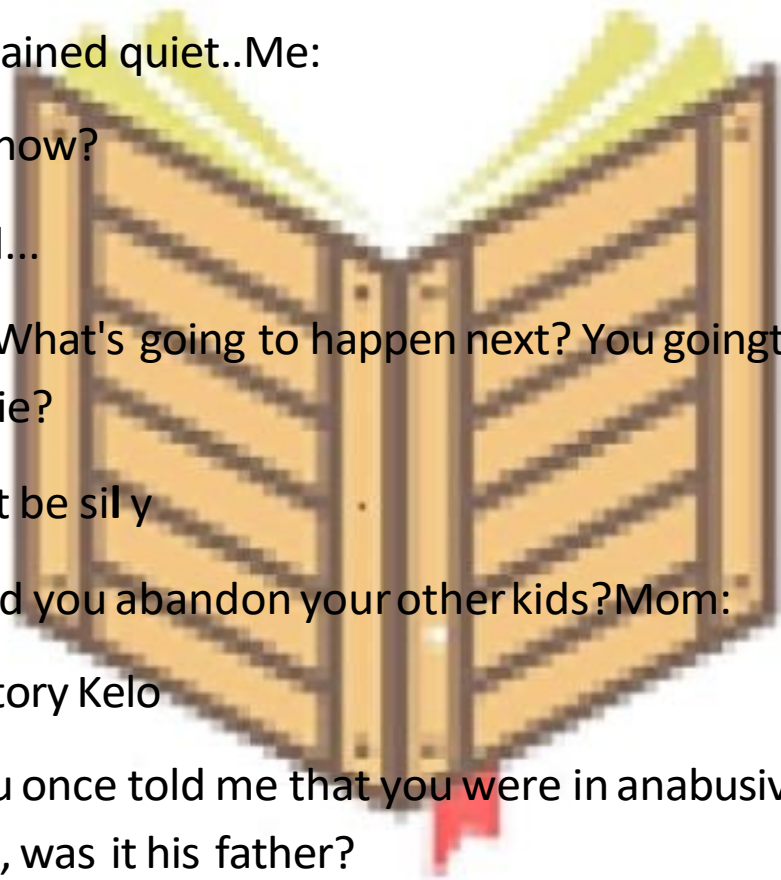
Me: Why did you abandon your other kids? Mom:

It's a long story Kelo

Me: Is... You once told me that you were in an abusive relationship, was it his father?

Mom: Yes

(Silence)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: I left them because I didn't have a choice

Mom: Don't.. Don't do that.. We al have a choice, you chose to walk out on them that's your choice.Maybe he is like this because of you look now aninnocent girl is suffering for your mistakes. You choosing to wal-

Mom: You think I don't regret that? It's a guilt that lhad to car y al my life. That if I had taken them, fought forthem then they would've turned out differently!

Me: You looked at him at that police station as if likehe wasn't your son, it doesn't matter how old he is but I believe he needs his mother

Mom: Kelso chose to be like his father, if we al became abusive because of our past hurts then theworld would be an evil place as you have said, we al have choices and Kelso chose to be what orwhohe is

(Silence)

Mom: Wait is this the same Nongcebo that you andSandi were talking about that time?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yes

She shook her head..

Me: I wonder why she doesn't walk away

Mom: You and Kelso are stubborn and you both take that from me

Me: I'm nothing like him

Mom: You are your mother's child the same way he is his mother's child, I know you will stop at nothing to get Nongcebo from him and let me tell you something you won't win, Nongcebo is not a fool..

Just because she's not walking away it doesn't mean she's a fool, there's something that he is threatening her with.

Something that's making her stay you find out what that is then you will get an upper hand but let me warn you. You were raised by a man with morals, Kelso was raised by a ruthless thug and I'm not ready to bury my son, he will kill you! There's a lot of good girls out there, get yourself **one** and leave Kelso's wife alone. If he can hurt the woman that he loves, what more about you? He won't feel anything by killing you. If Ken can

know that now we involved somehow he will have more reason to terrorize my family. I've worked hard have this family and it's best to stay away from Kelso to keep the peace between me and my ex husband. Trust me, this is a fight that we won't win

Me: So I must sit back and do nothing?

Mom: Didn't you just hear what I just said to you boy? This is a fight we won't win! I am not ready to bury you!

KELSO

He picked up..

Him: Kelso Me:

Long time

Him: Long time indeed

Me: How is life on the outside?

Him: It's different, people treat you differently when they know that you are an ex con. It's very boring,



you get to see how lonely it can be. Quite frankly sinister as it sounds I miss home

Me: Glad to hear that because I need a favour from you

Him: I'm listening

Me: I want you to torture and then kill someone Him: Who?

Me: Her name is Takie Gxaba I'll send you all her details

Him: Damn exorcist? Me:

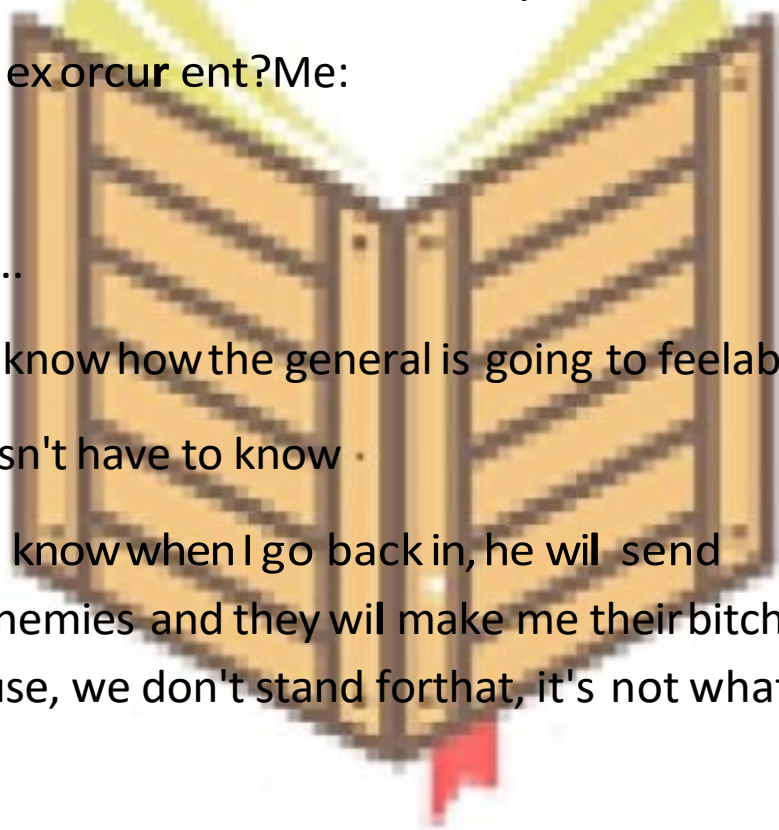
Step Sister

He whistled..

Him: I don't know how the general is going to feel about this

Me: He doesn't have to know

Him: He will know when I go back in, he will send me to our enemies and they will make me their bitch. The 28s hate women abuse, we don't stand for that, it's not what we do



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Before he does that remind him of how he used to abuse his ex wife, I'm sure it's a secret he doesn't want anyone knowing because the crew will turn on him so he won't send you to the dogs but keep it between us

Him: Very well but I will charge you Me:

How much?

Him: My baby girl just started high school, I want her to be moved to a good school then you must pay for her fees even tertiary fees

Me: Consider it done

Him: I'll be waiting for you Me: I'll

be in touch

Him: Sharp

Now let's see how that Gertrude's toughness is going to last..

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Ntando mncube,



NOVELSGURU.COM

she's looking for people who want to join her business and make extra money especially if you are currently unemployed.

This is her number you can contact her here: 067 368

1881

[08/24, 13:30] : 80

NONGCEBO

I arrived a bit tired at home today, my feet were killing me. I hope I will get used to the standing as time goes on. Grams was not around, she went to visit her sister due to everything that was happening around here.

She needed that fresh air, and Kelso hasn't even apologized. They've been avoiding each other ever since the incident. It was tiring, I've never felt this emotionally drained. Home is where you supposed to get peace, they say home is where the heart is, but this home. It's worse than jail..

NOVELSGURU.COM

I heard his voice and a female voice before the door was unlocked and opened, this is going to be a drag.. They walked into the bedroom just after locking the door again, he walked in with her. The lady that he has always been busy with. She was beautiful no lie, and she was dressed beautifully..

She looked at me as if like she was undermining me, like I was nothing compared to her. I got out of bed..

Kelso: Good evening I didn't say anything..

Kelso: This is my beautiful girlfriend He kissed her on her cheek..

Kelso: That's my wife, the one who slept with her friend and got chlamydia and now she's messing with my little Brother She chuckled..

I knew how shit, I didn't know up to this point Me: I'll give you some space



Kelso: Ohh no a dog doesn't leave it's owner, it stays on the floor right by the owner's side

He flashed the chain and dog collar at me..

Lady: You not actually going to chain her are you? Kelso:

Watch and learn

He walked up to me and looked at me.. He slapped me across the face..

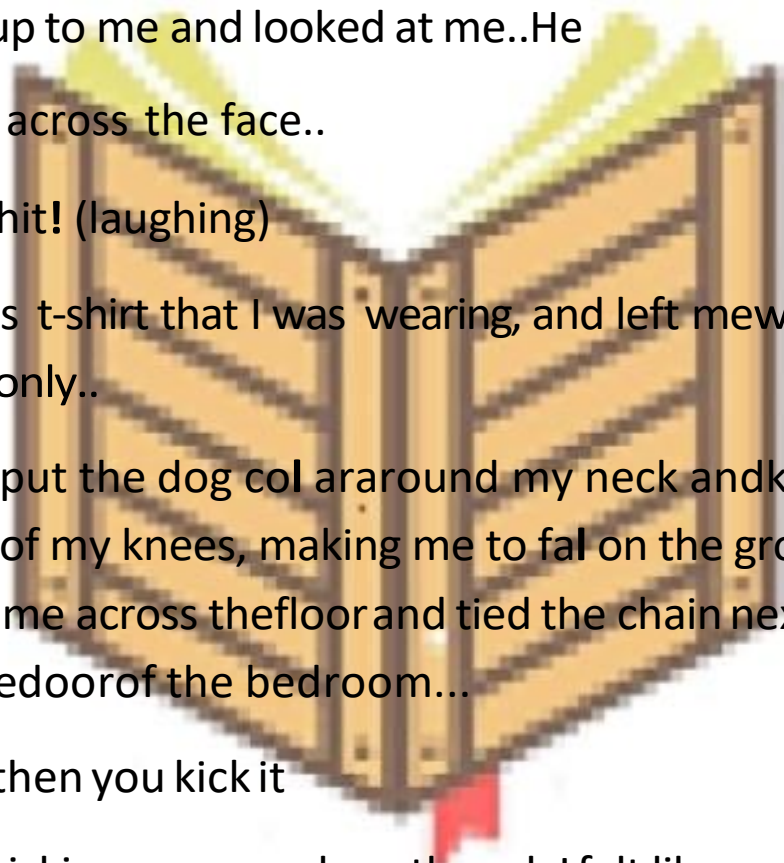
Lady: Ohh shit! (laughing)

He ripped his t-shirt that I was wearing, and left me with my underwear only..

He literally put the dog collar around my neck and kicked me at the back of my knees, making me to fall on the ground. Then he dragged me across the floor and tied the chain next to the TV stand, at the door of the bedroom...

Kelso: And then you kick it

He started kicking me senseless, though I felt like screaming but I didn't. I wasn't going to give him that satisfaction.. The lady was amused by the



whole situation, I don't understand how a woman would be this joyful at another woman's suffering..

Lady: Damn this dog is really one strong dog

Kelso walked up to her, I coughed out a bit of blood and closed my eyes..

Kelso picked up her legs and she fell back on the bed. He wrapped her legs around her waist and leaned over to kiss her..

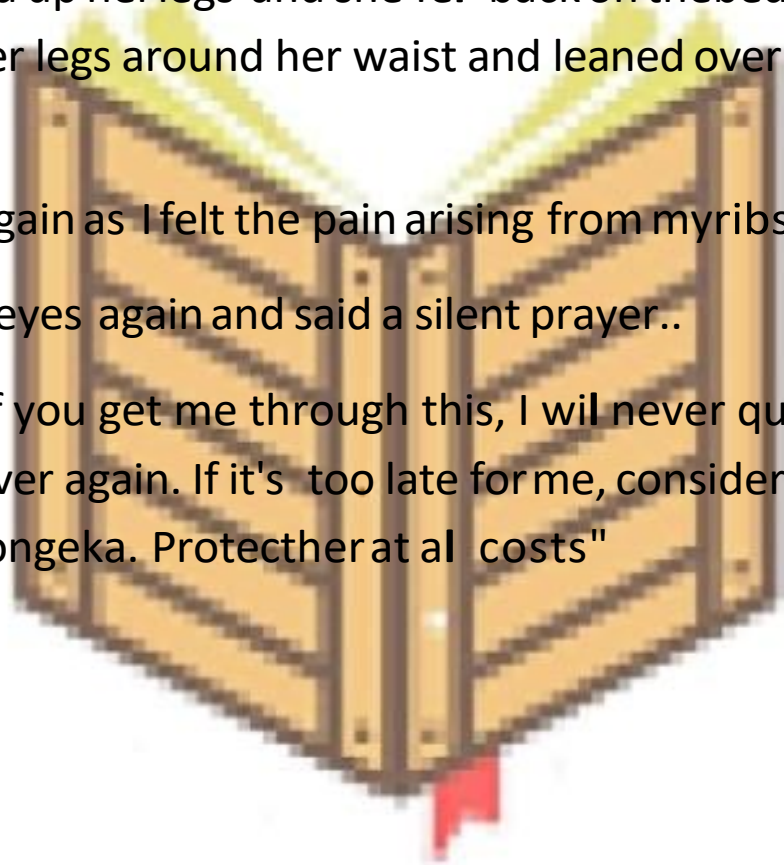
I coughed again as I felt the pain arising from my ribs..

I closed my eyes again and said a silent prayer..

Me: "God if you get me through this, I will never question your existence ever again. If it's too late for me, consider my pain and save Bongeka. Protect her at all costs"

SCORPION

It's very hard being a thug when it comes to dating.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Once she knows what you about, she makes a run for it in fear of her life. Thanks to all the fools who made us look bad in the eyes of women.. We are a different breed of thugs, we don't hurt women. In fact if you dating, you protect her with all your might. So because of that reason, I haven't found a woman that would want to be in a serious relationship with me so I just have a no strings attached hooks ups every now and then...

My Sister seemed to be in a good mood tonight, I was helping her sit up the table..

Me: What's with the mood today? She looked at me..

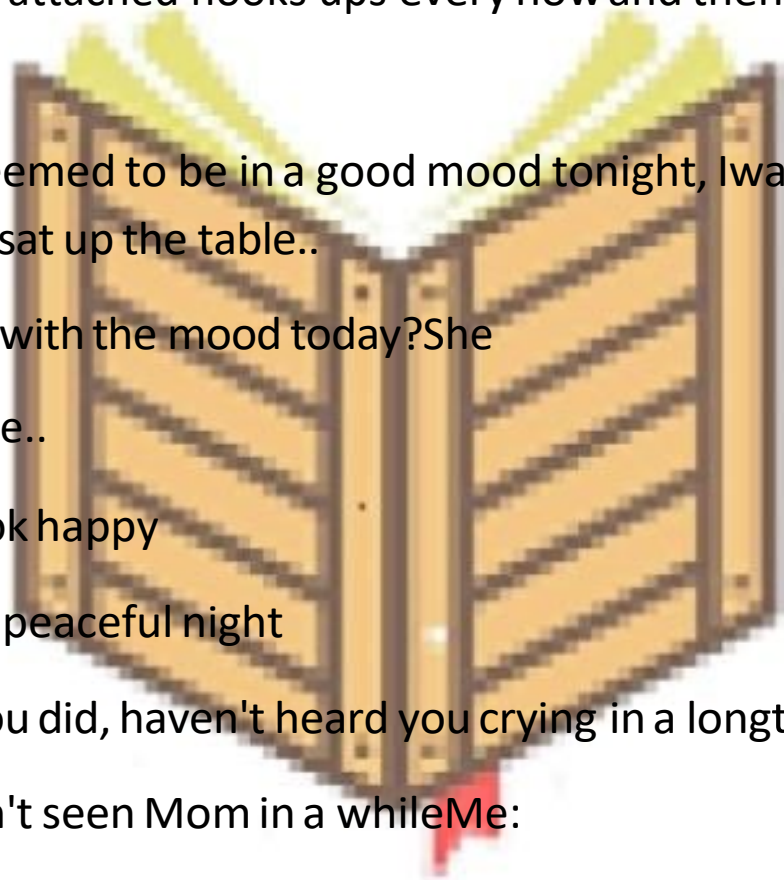
Me: You look happy

Her: I had a peaceful night

Me: That you did, haven't heard you crying in a long time

Her: I haven't seen Mom in a while Me:

That's good



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Maybe it's a sign
Me:

What sign?

Her: That we going to find our sister
Me: You think?

Her: Yes.. What you think she's like?
Me: I am not really sure.. You?

Her: Me too... I just hope she's going to forgive us for everything

Me: I'm just hoping that she's alive wherever she is
Her: Me too

NONGCEBO

I sat there on the cold floor shivering, watching them literally having sex in my presence. I was in pain physically but my emotional and mental pain was the one that cut more deeper. What I have noticed too was them taking a break to sniff on the

NOVELSGURU.COM

drugs, if Kelso passed by me he would either spit on me or kick me again and I will have to take it in.. She was bending over and he smeared the lubricant on his dick. He parted her buttocks and actually kissed her anus going all the way down..

Kelso: The most cleanest ass I've ever seen She laughed..

I've learned that her name is Neli..Neli: Please don't ruin the moment

He grabbed his dick, didn't even use a condom. He pushed it in slowly, and she moaned..

Her: Ohhh fuck

He continued pushing in her butthole, from how she seemed to be enjoying it. I had no doubt that she has done this before. She was in a doggy style position, bent exactly as how he wanted her too. He pumped in and out whilst continuing making his way in, she lowered her hand to her clit with her head against the big pillow. He held on to her buttocks and continued pumping her and she moaned, no slight indication of pain.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso closed his eyes and bit his lower lip as he continued. He started to increase his pace and moaned more loudly..

Tears welled up in my eyes, I felt my chest getting hot. After everything that he has put me through, I should be hating him with my last breath but it hurt. What he was doing cut deep, so much I thought my soul was going to leave my body...

MANTO

Me: Here you go

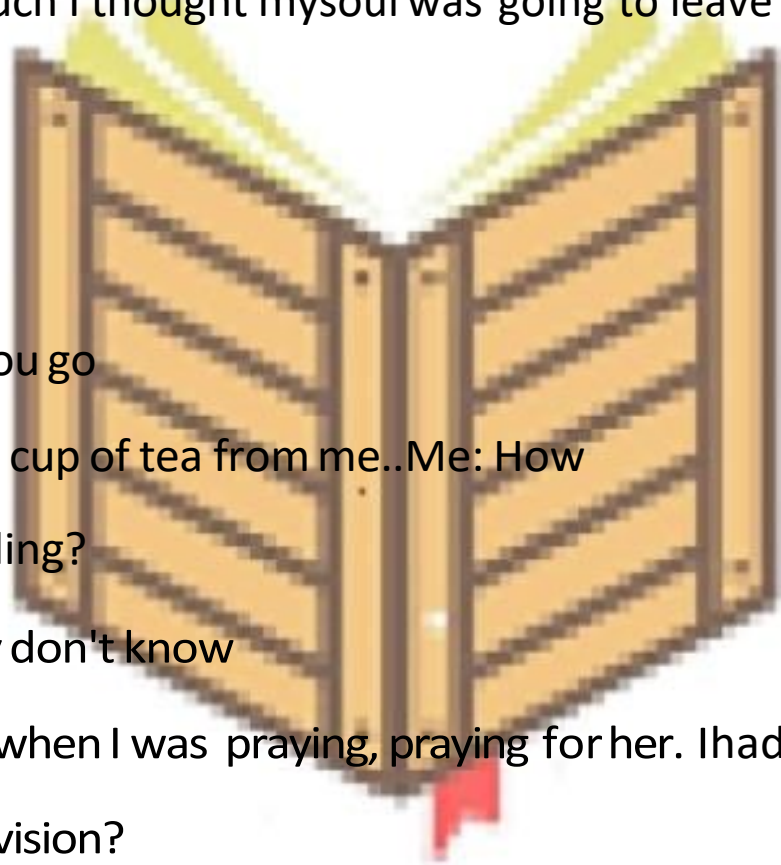
He took the cup of tea from me..Me: How are you feeling?

Him: I really don't know

Me: Earlier when I was praying, praying for her. I had a vision

Him: What vision?

Me: I saw white doves flying around in a clear



NOVELSGURU.COM

beautiful sky

Him: What does that mean?Me:

Peace, tranquility

Him: Related to Nongcebo?

Me: It could be, could signify the peace that God is going to bring to her, signifies freedom and a fresh new start. The sooner she walks out, it'll be easier to help her

Him: I hope so

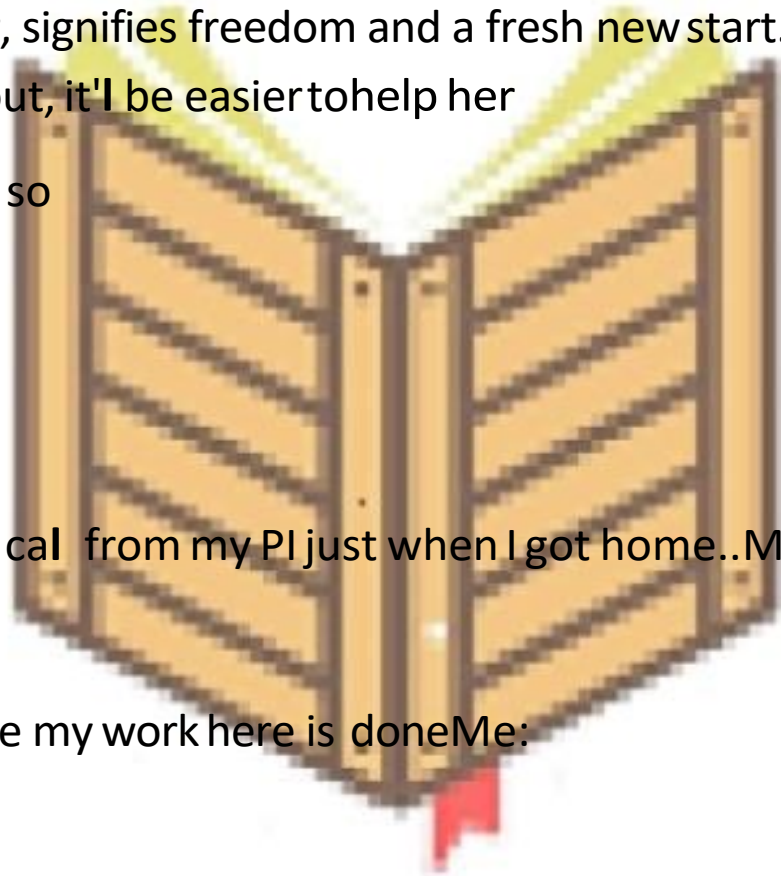
SOLE

I received a call from my PI just when I got home..Me: How did it go?

PI: Looks like my work here is doneMe:

Yeah?

PI: The former colleague told me that the Nurse regretted her decision of stealing the baby that day,



NOVELSGURU.COM

but her anger towards the baby's father couldn't allow her to return the baby

Me: And?

PI: She sent the baby to an orphanage and because her former colleague who happened to be her best friend too.. She asked her to keep an eye on the baby, visit the orphanage and check up on her until she was out, but those visits were short lived when the child was adopted

Me: Okay.. So do you have anything concrete?

PI: Her name is Nongcebo, Nongcebo Khumalo. She was adopted by a couple that later on moved to Johannesburg with her. The couple goes by the names Gladys and Makhathini Zulu, I will send you the picture of the girl that she has when she was 10 before getting adopted

Me: Do so

I waited for him to send the picture on whatsapp, and the 10 year old girl at the orphanage resembled Nongcebo..

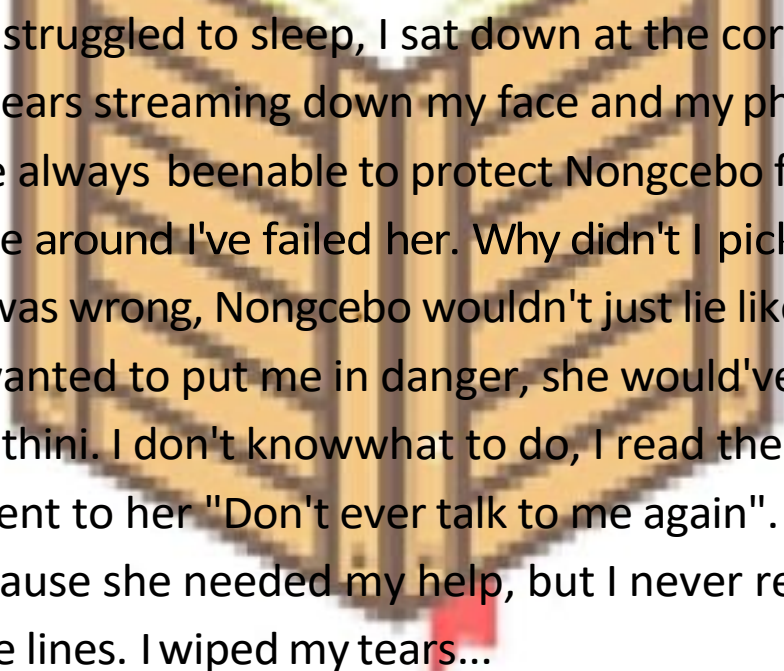
Me: You got to be kidding me!!

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:31] : 81

BANZA



That night I struggled to sleep, I sat down at the corner of my room with tears streaming down my face and my phone in my hand. I have always been able to protect Nongcebo from Zulu, and this time around I've failed her. Why didn't I pick it up that something was wrong, Nongcebo wouldn't just lie like that. If she really wanted to put me in danger, she would've started with Makhathini. I don't know what to do, I read the last message I sent to her "Don't ever talk to me again". Maybe she lied because she needed my help, but I never read between the lines. I wiped my tears...

NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

I was woken up from my ordeal by Kelso having his way with me. The light was on and I don't know what happened to Neli, it was very quiet in the room other than him breathing heavily. I am so disgusted by him and the sex was more disgusting, more disgusting than when Makhathini used to do it..

This act I couldn't help but cry, I could feel that he was using a condom. I looked at him, and he looked at me. No sign of mercy, let alone a conscience. He was cold, his eyes reflected coldness that I have never seen before.. The collar was still around my neck, he pulled the chain and wrapped it around my neck and strangled me, my soul and my physical being couldn't fight him off I was weak.. He would loosen the grip from the chain when he saw that I was struggling to breathe, then he leaned over and literally bit my tit to the point of bleeding. Pain that I have never experienced before, sexually..

Him: The next time you try to sleep with someone, anyone I want you to remember this night

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Pleaseeee (crying)

With a bit of blood in his mouth he tried to kiss me, forcing his tongue deep inside of me and I tried to push his head off. That's when he punched me across the face, he punched me again and again.. Then he lowered his hand down to twisting my clit, I laid there praying deep inside of me that can God take my soul already, may he save me from this ordeal by welcoming my soul into his hands. May he heal it on the other side, and may he please protect Bongeka for me. That is my last request for my pain and I pray Kelso kill me tonight because if he doesn't I will do it myself. I thought I was strong, but after this I won't be able to live. I won't be able to go through another day. I'm exhausted, I'm done, and I don't wanna take it anymore. He pulled out, and then turned me around, then he took it from the back. Forcefully inserting himself deep in my anus.

He pulled through the chain again and wrapped it around my neck pulling it for dear life again. With tears in my eyes and a bloody face Mam'Glady's song came through..

NOVELSGURU.COM

"Somandla uzuy'gcine impilo yam Futhi
uphinde uwukhusele umoya wam

Ngoba mina ngizohamba, ngijonge kuwe ngamaxesha
onke"

I softly sang the song as I felt my soul giving up...

SOLE

Sandisiwe was sleeping, I stood at the door and looked at her. I was lost deep in my thoughts, if something could happen to her and someone had information, I would want to know. I made a promise to Scorpion, I am not one person to go back to my word. On the other hand I thought about my nephew, how his father threatened me. Kelso's family has a tendency of thinking that they own the world because of his father, if I don't do this. I will never forgive myself, most of all Sandi will never forgive me... I gently closed the door and went to

NOVELSGURU.COM

take my phone, I called Scorpion..Scorp:

Yeah?

Me: You already sleeping?

Scorp: I am

Me: I found your sisterHe

kept quiet..

Me: Scorp?

Him: Don't play with me

Me: Her name is Nongcebo Khumalo, but goes by the surname Bhembe now that she's married

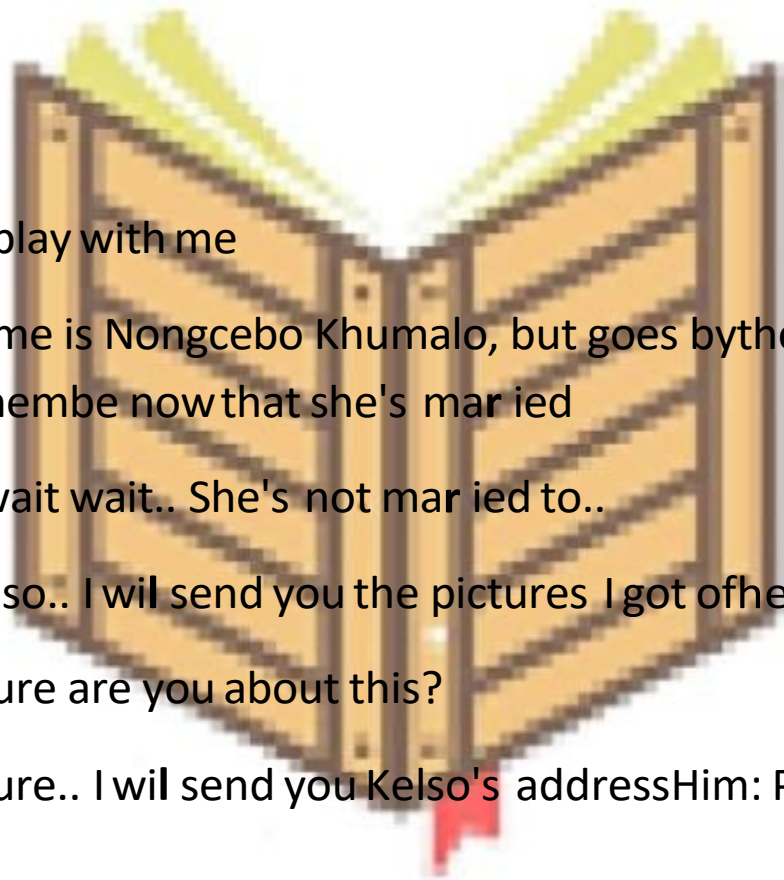
Him: Wait wait wait.. She's not married to..

Me: Yes Kelso.. I will send you the pictures I got of her

Him: How sure are you about this?

Me: 100% sure.. I will send you Kelso's address
Him: Please do so

I hung up and sent the pictures, I also sent pictures of Nongcebo that I got from her face even her



NOVELSGURU.COM

wedding pictures.. He called me back after a few minutes..

Him: She looks exactly like our Mother

Me: He is abusing her, this is the wife he's been abusing.. I said I would help you break his neck, and I didn't break his neck. I ruined him

Him: How much do you care for him? Me: Do what you gotta do

Him: I'll get back to you

hung up..

SCORPION

This girl her current pictures she looks exactly like my Mother, I had no doubt from deep within that she was my little sister. I paused for a moment trying to take it all in, it felt so unreal. I was even giving up hope..

Without procrastinating any further, I dressed up

NOVELSGURU.COM

and got out of my room. I knocked on Sli's door.. I opened and switched on the lights... Me: Sli wakeup

I clapped my hands.. Me:

Come on wake up

Sha woke up and looked at me..Sli:

What do you want now?

Me: We going to fetch out baby sister I took her night gown from the stand...Sli: What? I'm dreaming right?

Me: No wake up we have to go
walked out of her bedroom...Sli:

Wait... (yelling)

My dad walked out of his bedroom..Dad:

What's going on here?

Me: I found her Pops

Dad: What are you talking about?



Sli walked up to us..

Sli: He says he found our baby Sister Me:

Nongcebo.. Her name is NongceboDad: So she did give her that name

Sli: How sure are we that it's her?

I gave her my phone she looked at her pictures, she put her hand over her mouth..

Sli: She looks exactly like Mom

My Dad took my phone and looked at the pictures too. He staggered back..

Me: Dad this is not the time for a heart attack we have to go

I took my phone from them...Me:

Now!

KELSO

NOVELSGURU.COM

I Smoked the cigarette whilst leaning against the

wal . She was laying down there without moving an inch, today she didn't mess up herself but she did bleed. I walked to get 3 bucket of water, cold water and I poured the water on her. She moved just a little..

I threw the bucket down and looked at the time, it was 23:00. I'm sure she will wake up dead. It's very cold and she sustained a merciless beating. I walked over and turned her around, her face was swollen. Her left nipple was badly injured. I placed the burning cigarette on her injured nipple..

Me: Goodbye sfebe sam

I watched the cigarette as it burned her nipple..

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Candice, she's asking you to help vote for her nephew who has entered Mr and Miss East rand. Please find the link below to vote

His currently standing on 220 votes

NOVELSGURU.COM

[https:// pageantvote.net/ pageants/ 1132/ contestant s/ 4223?fbclid=IwAR1hL3TvdZ6u6dhV5zHjCdFVGN G5Wo2OAdj 7p_jscegrTKNtfdc32BdkrHQ](https://pageantvote.net/pageants/1132/contestants/4223?fbclid=IwAR1hL3TvdZ6u6dhV5zHjCdFVGN_G5Wo2OAdj7p_jscegrTKNtfdc32BdkrHQ)

[08/24, 13:32] : 82

SCORPION

It took us a while to actually locate Kelso's hood, considering the fact that it was at night. Sli wasn't doing well with the GPS either because of her nerves, my father was very quiet. Actually we were all overwhelmed by different emotions, we have been on this chase for years and Sole did it in a matter of what? 2 months? He wasn't playing when he said he was smart. I trust his judgment with the girl, she looks so much like our mother.

We parked next to the fence, and I did see his car parked at the garage door.. I took a deep breath, my heart was beating fast.

We all got out and made our way to the gate, it was

not locked. The house was pitch black, they could be sleeping. It's late after all .. We could've set this appropriately for another day, but the pictures that Dr Preston showed me kept playing in my head. We could postpone or set another day and it might be the end of her. The walk to the back seemed so long, Sli was holding on to me as she struggled to walk. I wasn't the only one who was nervous.

We didn't know where to knock, but as a guy I don't think Kelso lives in the house. I think the rooms outside are his, so we knocked there...

Sli: We should've come tomorrow or something, people are sleeping

Me: We did good by coming now She looked at our father..

Sli: Baba uRight? My father nodded..

After what seemed like forever, the lights were switched on. The door was unlocked, and a light



skinned girl appeared.. She looked at us through the security door..

Her: Hello?

Me: Hi... This is Kelso's place right? She

nodded whilst rubbing her eyes..Sli: It doesn't

look like her

Me: Is he in? Girl:

We sleeping

Me: We actually looking for someone, a girl by the name of Nongcebo?

Girl: We are sleeping

Me: Open the security door

Girl: There's no girl by that name here

Sli: Let's go, we probably have the wrong house

I wasn't going to go, Sole was very adamant about this. Kelso is his best friend he's been here before and I don't think Sole misled us..

Me: Open the security door



Girl: Please leave or I will call the Police

Dad: We are the police, when you call them please do tell them Governor Khumalo is standing at your doorstep. They will hurry and help us get in with or without you cooperating

She didn't say anything..

Dad: I'll get my phone in the car so I can call the police myself

Girl: Okay wait.. Please know that I had nothing to do with this

Me: Open!

She opened the security door and we made our way in..

Girl: I had nothing to do with this!

I looked around and we were in the lounge, the bathroom door was opened and another door was opened which I think it's the bedroom. We made our way to the bedroom and what I saw, is something that will shock me for the rest of my life. She was naked, laying on the floor with a chain around her

neck. Her body was wet. This kind of scenario I've only seen it on the internet, GBV cases. A girl laying on the floor dead after being tortured..

Sli: Ohh Nkosi yami

I moved back until I was against the door. Sli took off her night gown and knelt down covering her. Her face was badly hurt, what animal does this? I saw Kelso sleeping on the bed when I tried going to him my Dad held me back..

Dad: Son wait a minute! !

I tried to get away from his grip but he held me with the strength that he had...

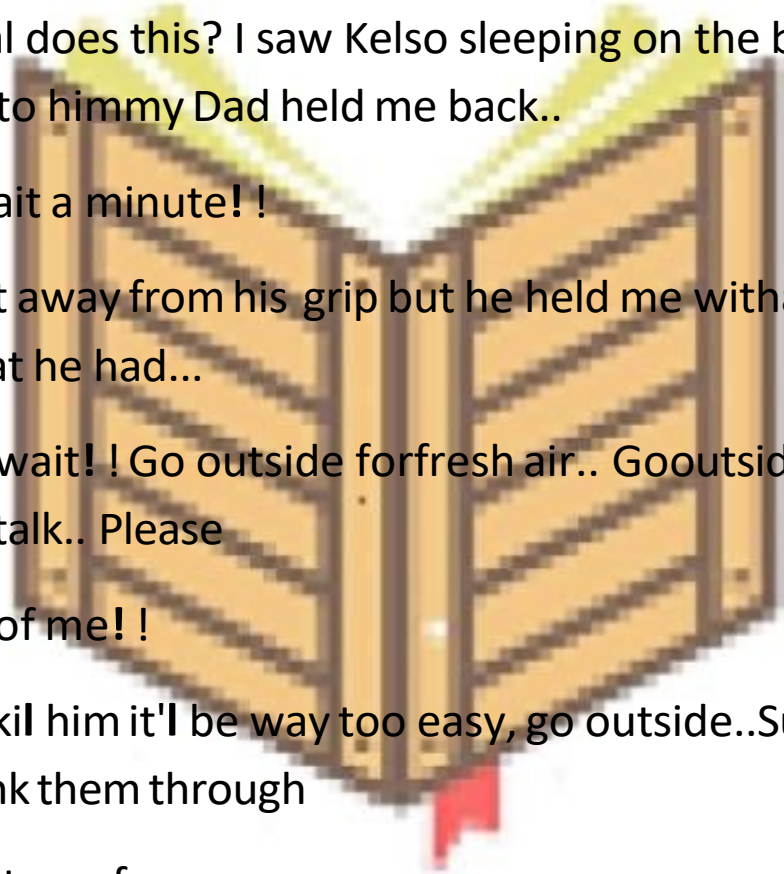
Dad: Lindo wait! ! Go outside for fresh air.. Go outside and we will talk.. Please

Me: Let go of me! !

Dad: If you kill him it'll be way too easy, go outside.. Such things we need to think them through

He slowly let go of me..

Sli: How do.. How do.. How we get the chain off her?(Crying)



Dad: Go outside Son

I made my way out pushing the girl out of the way. I have been angry before, but not this angry. I wanted to kill him right there, I was losing my shit. I didn't even see where I was going, I was just walking with my hand against the wall for balance..

I found myself sitting on the stoep and cries didn't shy away from coming out..

Me: Fuccccccckkkk (crying)

I looked around as I wiped my tears with my hoodie, but tears didn't want to leave me..

I got up and picked up the bricks that were placed against the wall and I started throwing them at his car until the alarm went off... I threw a few at the windows of his house..

I was so in my Zone that Sli held me..

Sli: Stop it! The neighbours will call the police! !My Dad showed up carrying her to the car..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sli: Ngiyazi kubuhlungu but this is not the way to go about it, at least not now. Right now she needs us

I sank down to the ground still crying with Sli holding me..

Sli: She's still alive, her pulse is weak but she's still alive

After putting her at the backseats my father came back to us..

Dad: We need to go.. We need to get her to the hospital

Sli: Lindo please (crying)

Dad: We found her, we found her.. We will deal with this later, right now we have to focus on her... I know you are angry and believe me, I'm angry too and we will deal with him just not now

Sli: Please let's go (crying)

Dad: Come on Son, let's go.. Sli masambeni (let's go)

Sli helped me up and we all went to the car as the neighbours came out..

MANTO

Deep down, to the deepest of my core I felt that Nongcebo was now safe. I couldn't sleep, I've been praying for her ever since I was woken up by uvalo (fear), praying for God to make her strong. Give her strength until she was located..

I blew out the candles and I couldn't hold back my tears..

Me: "Thank you God, thank you heavenly father. You did say that you will never leave us, nor forsake us.

Your ways are different from human understanding, we might question you at times but not even once do you disappoint. Thank you God.. Ohh God"

I felt this unexplainable joy deep within, I don't know how much damage was done but all I know is that nothing is impossible with God. There will be a way to help this girl heal and recover.

SCORPION

My father was driving, Sli and I were sitting with her at the back. Sli was holding her and still crying, I was looking at her and it made me more emotional. She probably cried and screamed for someone, anyone to come to her aid and no one did. She felt alone, scared and no one came for her. I have failed her, as a big brother I have failed to protect her from evil men like Kelso.. She had a tiny body, how was she able to take in all those beatings?

How did she remain strong? Who does such? Who does this ruthless act to another human being?

Kelso is going to pay dearly for this! I swear on my mother's grave...

SANDISIWE

NOVELSGURU.COM

The next morning I woke up and prepared myself

for work, I was still sleepy. I just wanted to sleep but I have a job to get too...

Sole walked in, he stood there and looked at me..Sole:

Good morning

I looked at him..

Me: That's different, no good morning sweets? A hug? A kiss?

He rubbed his eyes..Me:

Whats wrong?

He looked at me defeated.. Me:

Snowflake what's wrongHim: Kelso

fucked up

Me: What are you talking about?Him:

Nongcebo

Me: Ohh my word, he didn't kill her did he? Pleaseno

Him: No.. I have this friend by the name of Scorpion apparently her sister was stolen as a baby, and the



sister happened to be Nongcebo. I helped him to find his sister and I just got off the phone with him. Last night they fetched her, Kelso had badly beaten her up so much that he chained her like a dog

Me: What???

Him: He changed her, changed his wife like a dog I held on to the counter..

Him: It reflects poorly on me right now that he is my friend

Me: So if you didn't tell her brother and they didn't go there..

Him: She would've died

I walked up to him and hugged him...Me: I

am so proud of you

Him: I was late, I should've stopped this when it was still early

Me: I am very proud of you



NOVELSGURU.COM

SLI KHUMALO

I felt someone gently shaking me, I opened my eyes. It was the Nurse, Nurse siphosethu.

I had fallen asleep on the chair, I looked at Nongcebo she was laying peacefully on the bed. I looked around..

Me: Where is my brother and my father? Her:

They left

Me: I moved the chair closer and held Nongcebo's hand..

Nurse: Maybe you should go too, I am also going home

Me: No.. I'm okay

Nurse: There's 3 officers outside her ward, your father stationed them there. She's safe

I looked at Nongcebo..

Me: No.. I don't wanna leave her



NOVELSGURU.COM

The Nurse was the one who helped the Doctor last night when we brought in Nongcebo, she was doing a night shift..

Her: At least go and change

Me: No.. I can't leave, I don't want her to get confused when she wakes up

Her: I understand

We both looked at her..

Nurse: She's lucky... Most women they are found dead

Me: She is strong, she gets that from our Mother

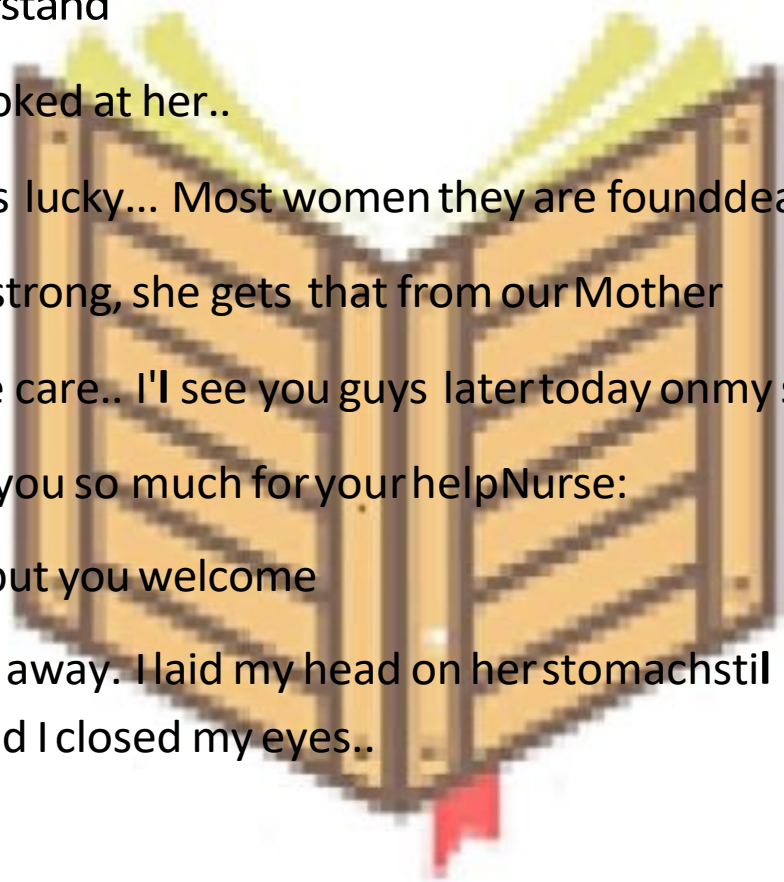
Nurse: Take care.. I'll see you guys later today on my shift

Me: Thank you so much for your help Nurse:

It's my job but you welcome

She walked away. I laid my head on her stomach still holding her hand and I closed my eyes..

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

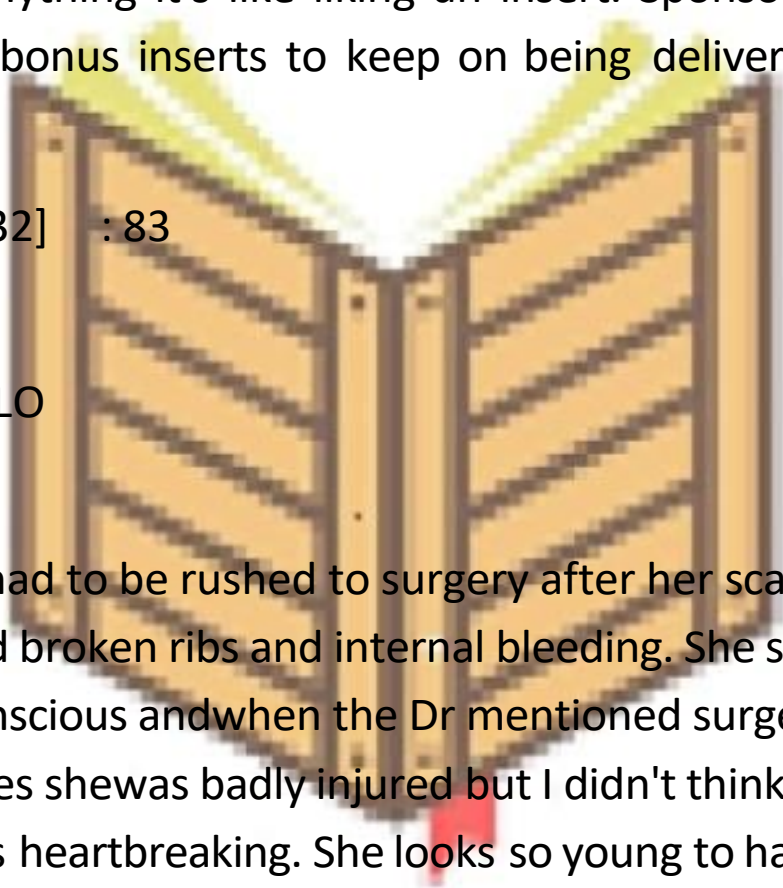
This insert goes out to all the readers who sponsored the insert without any advertising

Sponsored inserts with adverts will continue later, please support especially voting because it doesn't need airtime or anything it's like liking an insert. Sponsors made it possible for bonus inserts to keep on being delivered, please support

[08/24, 13:32] : 83

SLI KHUMALO

Nongcebo had to be rushed to surgery after her scans proved that she had broken ribs and internal bleeding. She still was very much unconscious and when the Dr mentioned surgery I panicked. Yes she was badly injured but I didn't think up to this point, this is heartbreaking. She looks so young to have endured such abuse, the question still stands on for how long has she been enduring this abuse for. I



NOVELSGURU.COM

don't understand, how can someone who claims to love you do this to you? She doesn't deserve this!

No woman does.. My

dad showed up..

Me: Thought you would be at work

Dad: I couldn't go.. You have to go home and change

Me: I don't wanna leave

Dad: She's in surgery, I will be here when she gets back

Me: I didn't imagine this kind of union

Dad: What matters the most is that we found her

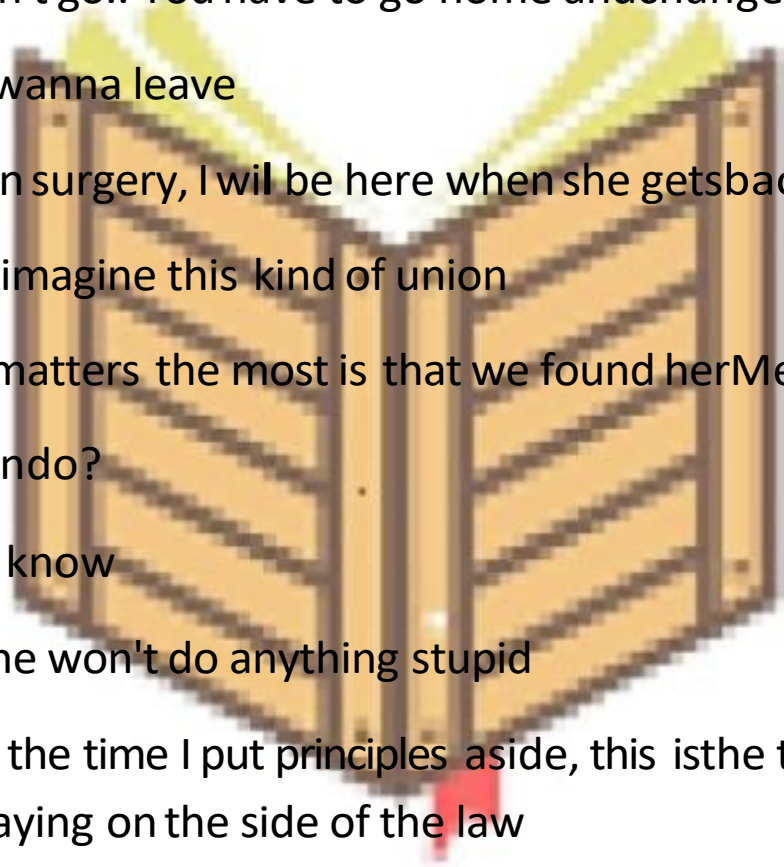
Me: Where is Lindo?

Dad: I don't know

Me: I hope he won't do anything stupid

Dad: This is the time I put principles aside, this is the time I won't be playing on the side of the law

Me: Dad please... We should be concentrating on



Nongcebo and her recovery

Dad: You a woman, you won't understand. Women tend to have good hearts, you forgive and leave it to God. This is my Daughter you won't understand how I feel as a father. If you were in her shoes, I do the same

Me: The best revenge we could have on him is to open a case against him then Nongcebo has to recover and regain her life

Dad: I've been in this field for many years, cases go cold. The docket can go missing, bastards go free, that won't be the case with my Daughter. I will never allow it, never!

KELSO

The sun was shining on my face to a point where I had no choice but to open my eyes. I yawned and stretched my hand to the other side of the bed and it was empty. I sighed and raised my head up to see

NOVELSGURU.COM

Scorpion sitting on the small dressing chair. He had his elbows on his thighs a bit close to his knees and his hands joined together at his mouth. He was looking at me...

I must be dreaming, I closed my eyes again and then opened them. He was still sitting there.

Wearing his black jeans, boots, a black hoodie and a beanie hat..

Me: How the fuck did you get in?

He turned to his side and took the chain and the dog collar, he manipulated it between his fingers.. Shit, Nongcebo!. I got out of bed only in my briefs..

Me: Where is my wife? Where is Neli?

He didn't say anything. I opened the drawer only to realize that my gun was in my car..

Him: A scorpion never forgives, and it never forgets. You can fuck up today, and it can plan your funeral even after 5 years. Even after 10 years, when you are living happily it will still come back for its revenge.

It's very deadly that's why you can't just find it anywhere, and most of all

NOVELSGURU.COM

He got up..

Him: A scorpion has a venomous sting. Only about 25 of them are known to have venom capable of killing a human being and I'm one of them

Me: I swear if you've hurt my Wife I'm going to kill you!

He made his way to me..

Him: I could kill you right now and right here, but that would be easy. I wanna take my time with you, I wanna be a nightmare that you have never imagined. When I'm done with you, you won't even recognize yourself. From today I want you to look over your shoulder everyday not knowing when I'm going to sting you, I want to paralyze you with fear so much that you will think you going crazy. I hate Men who beat women, but most of all . I hate the one who I am looking at right now

I charged at him, when I was about to throw the punch he ducked and punched me on my stomach. He didn't give me time to collect myself as I slightly bent. He hit me with his elbow on my back and

NOVELSGURU.COM

brought me up with his with knee on my face. I took a few steps back and he came to me disoriented as I was and punched me. Giving me no chance to defend myself, the last punch sent me down.

Things started to appear a bit blurry, he put his boot on my crotch and pressed down harder squashing my balls...

Me: Ahhhhh fuck!!!

I used all my strength to try and get his foot off but I failed, the pain was intense. He removed his foot and put the collar around my neck. He chained me at the TV stand, same spot where I had chained Nongcebo.

Me: You better run, I swear I'm going to kill you! Shiiit!

He pressed down on my balls again turning and twisting his foot with his hands in his pockets glancing down at me as my deep screams came out. He removed his foot and I put my hands down there..

Me: Shiiit!

Him: Shame..

He whistled his way out..

Me: I'm going to fucken kil you! Run you son of abitch!!
Ahhh dammit!

SANDISIWE

I couldn't focus at work today, my mind was blank. What happened to Nongcebo could happen to any woman. No woman is immuned to GBV. Men should protect us, love us, and not turn us into their punching bags..

I typed the title on my laptop: .

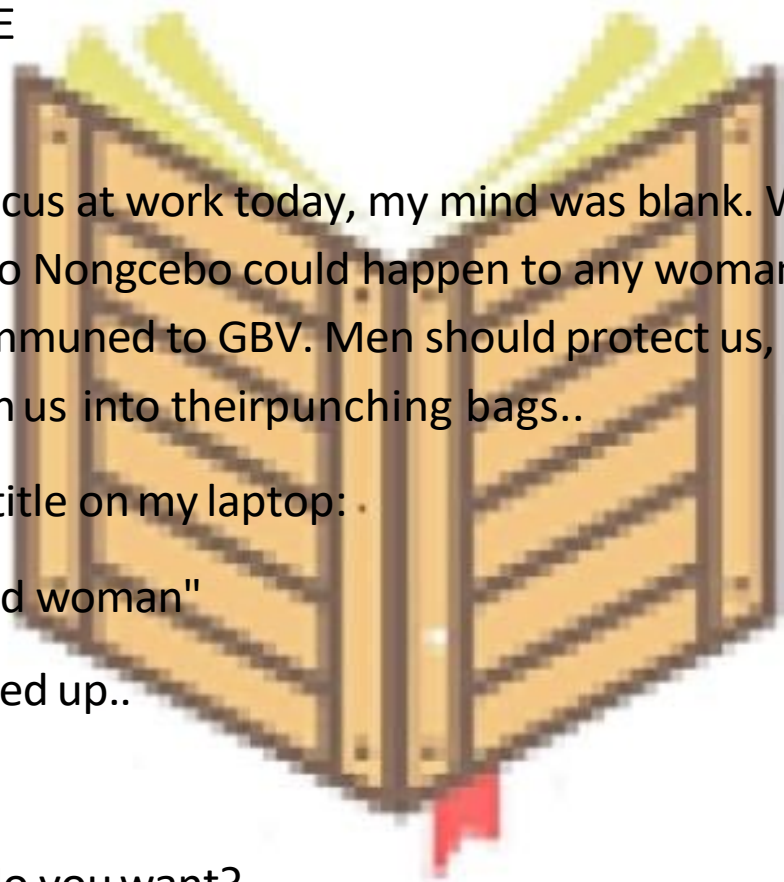
"The chained woman"

Anele showed up..

Him: Hey

Me: What do you want?

Him: Whoa! Woke up on the wrong side of the bed?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm not in the mood Him: I

thought we were cool

Me: I'm sorry it's just that.. I'm mad with all the abuse that is happening to women

Him: Ya that's shit, these men make us good men look bad

Me: I'm writing a story

Him: A story?

Me: On GBV titled "The chained woman" I'm going to post a chapter everyday on my column

Him: Have you spoken with the boss about that? You going off on what your column should be

Me: So you support these men? Him:

I'm just saying

Me: I'm a writer, it's my duty to be the voice of the voiceless

Him: If you weren't in a relationship right now nor pregnant I'd certify you a feminist

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I am a woman, and this can happen to me too

Him: In that case let me go get you some chocolates

Me: Thank you

NONGCEBO

I found myself at the cemetery, a cemetery that looked familiar. It was the one at Kzn, what was happening? What am I doing here?

I stood in front of a tombstone.. "Mimi

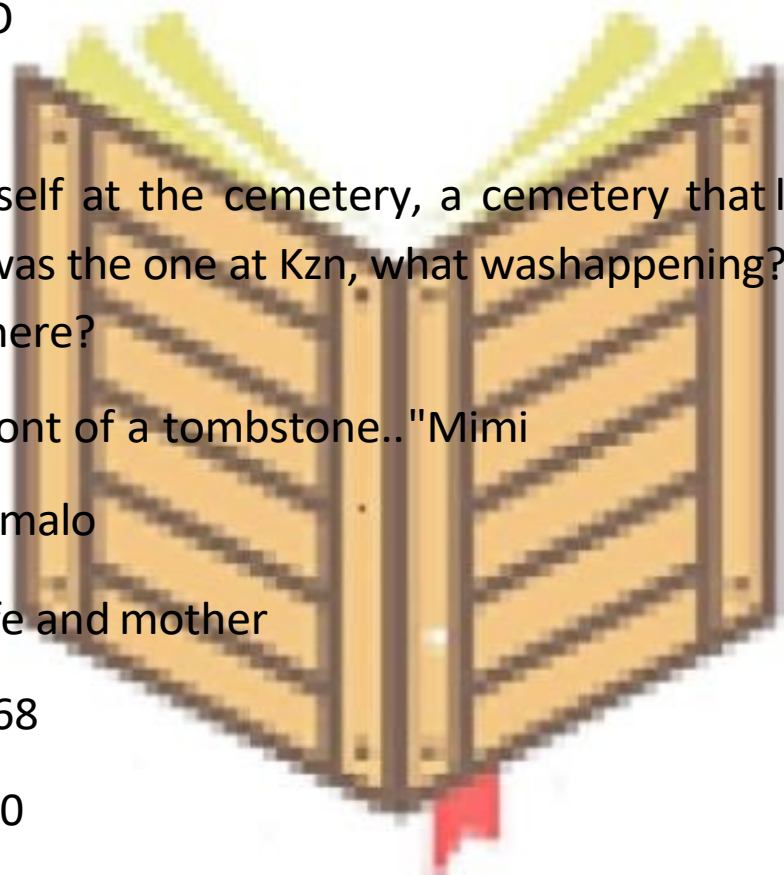
Benicia Khumalo

A loving wife and mother

+16. 10. 1968

-29. 04. 2000

She passed on a year after I was born. Who is this? Why am I standing there in front of her grave. I saw doves flying around in the sky, I felt this cool breeze.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked around and I was alone..Voice:

Ngcebo

I turned and saw this beautiful woman who looked very much like me standing behind me. She was wearing a white dress with a smile on her face..

Her: Ohw Ngcebo

I asked an obvious question.. Me:

Who are you? Ungubani? Her: I am

your Mother

I didn't know what to say..

Her: You were stolen from me when you were a baby, I have never known peace after that.

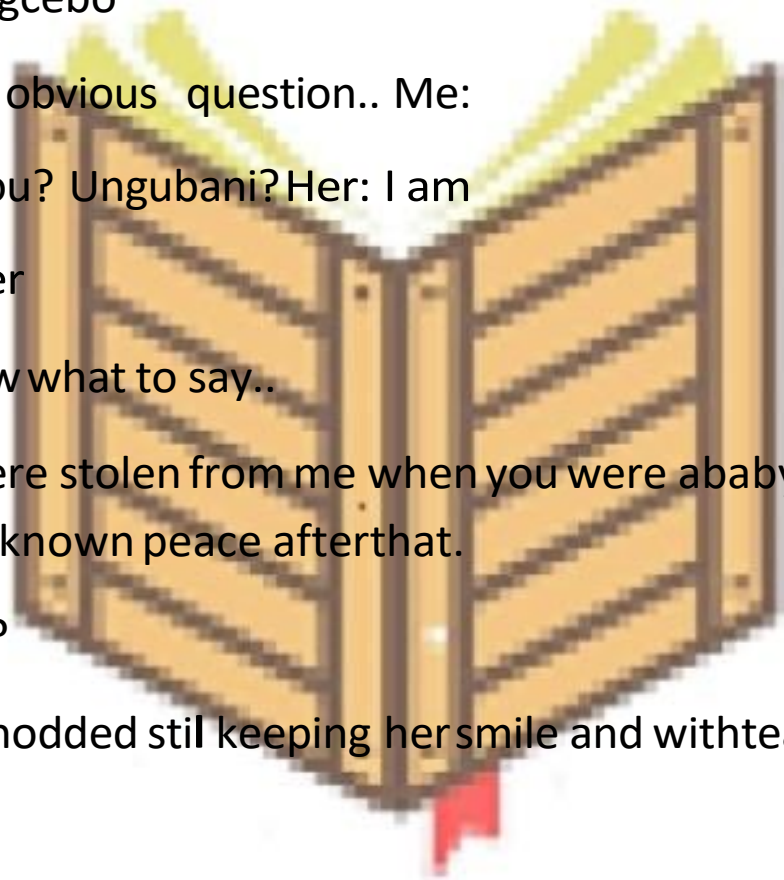
Me: Mama?

She slowly nodded still keeping her smile and with tears in her face...

Me: Ma?

Her: Ngiyaxolisa Nana (I'm sorry) I

walked up to her..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ma...

I put my hand on her face and she closed her eyes..I hugged her and her touch felt like the very same touch that I once experienced at the hospital..

Me: Ma (crying)I

held her tight..

Her: It is wel Nana... Usuphephile manje (you are safe now)

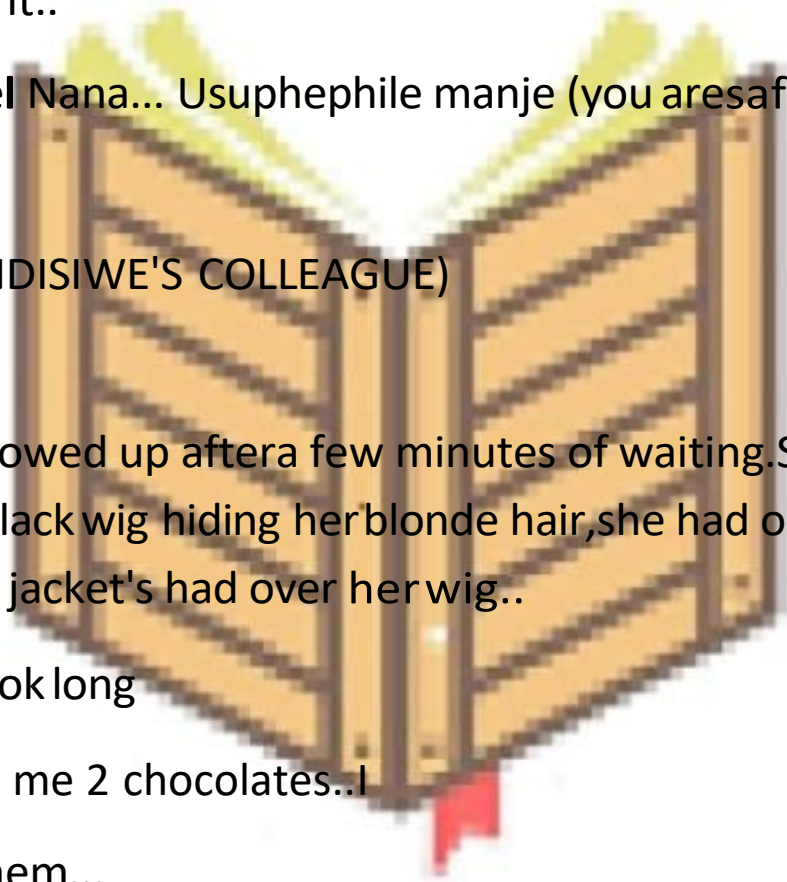
ANELE (SANDISIWE'S COLLEAGUE)

Wilsonia showed up after a few minutes of waiting. She was wearing a black wig hiding her blonde hair, she had on a jacket and hat the jacket's had over her wig..

Me: That took long

She handed me 2 chocolates..I

looked at them...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: How many did you buy? Me: 3

Her: Good.. Before I give you these 2 take one for yourself from the 3 that you bought. When you give her the mixed chocolates you must eat the one you kept for yourself in front of her. These two chocolates I have injected them with poison so mixed with the 2 you bought minus one for yourself, she will eat them all and the two that are poisoned they going to react then harm her and the baby

I looked at them..

Her: Nothing will be tied back to you, they will only suspect the shop that you bought the chocolates from

I nodded..

Her: Thank you for your services and you will be paid accordingly

Me: I see

.

To be continued

NOVELSGURU.COM



This insert was sponsored by Londeka Ntshaba, she's asking for you to subscribe to her YouTube channel. Please find the link below, to subscribe. She's on 187 subscriptions currently, please show some support to keep the inserts coming

<https://youtu.be/Fb0G1yvDV48>[08/

24, 13:33] : 84

SANDISIWE

Anele walked back in as I was busy with my column. He put 4 slabs of chocolates on my desk, he opened the one that he was holding and started eating it. I looked at them..

Me: Thank you very much

Him: You welcome... How is the column going? Me: It's getting there

I took one chocolate and unwrapped it, I started eating it. It felt so heavenly. Just what I needed..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Now I will be able to let ideas flow. He read a portion of it..

"This is a true story, that happened to a dear friend of mine. Real names won't be used to protect the identities of the people involved. Enough is Enough! Say no to GBV!"

Anele: Sounds intense

Me: It's going to carry a lot of emotions. Anele:

Where is the friend now?

Me: Safely at the hospital

Anele: I'm really sorry that such happened to her. Me: It's okay..

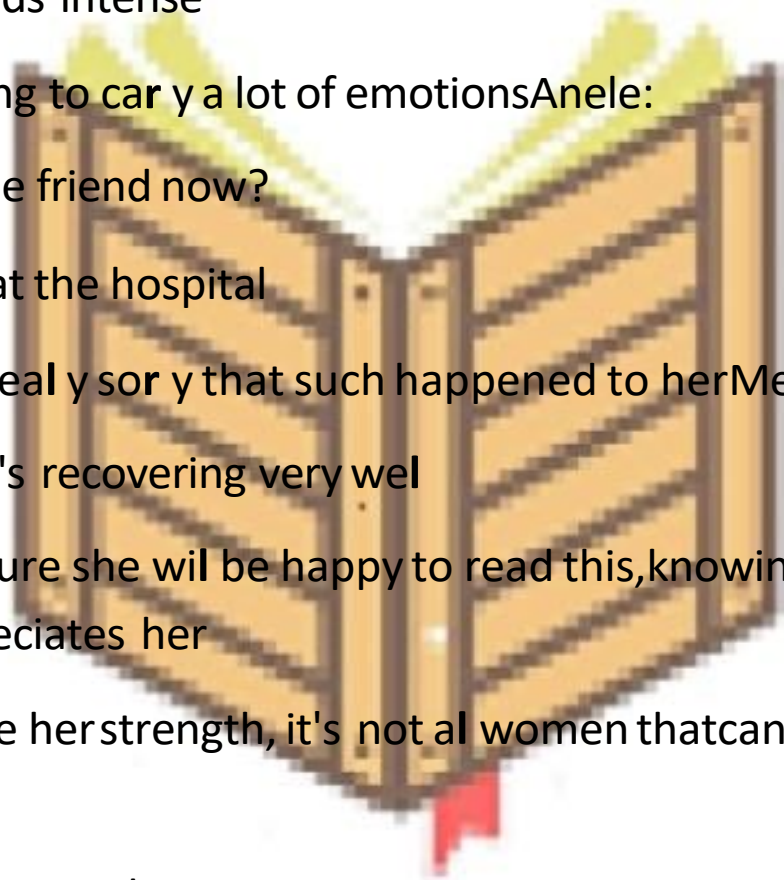
I'm glad she's recovering very well

Anele: I'm sure she will be happy to read this, knowing that her friend appreciates her

Me: I admire her strength, it's not all women that can survive such

Anele: That's very true

Me: Thank you for the chocolates again



NOVELSGURU.COM

Anele: You welcome.. I'll leave you to itHe
walked away..

NONGCEBO

We took a walk around, never really how I had imagined meeting my Mother. All these years I've been angry at her thinking that she had abandoned the me, but she was no more. The agony of her losing me led to her untimely death. She did care, cared enough to even contact me beyond the grave..

She was telling me the story about the day when I was stolen from the hospital, how it almost drove her crazy waking up and not seeing me there next to her. It brought her pain, pain that failed to heal...

Ma: Your disappearance scared the whole family, my death made it worse. Your father and your brother they always clashing, I was the only one who was able to make peace between them. She lost her husband, they filing for divorce. She gave up her

NOVELSGURU.COM

surgery, it has been difficult for them too, just as it was difficult for you growing up without a family. All I'm asking for is for you to give them a chance, it's not too late for you to feel their love

Me: It has been difficult, still can't believe my family found me

Ma: They never gave up, especially your Brother
Me: I wish I could've met you before all of this

Ma: Be grateful for this moment, not everyone is afforded this moment. I didn't want you to carry that anger and hate without knowing the full story, though I blamed myself until the day I died

Me: You couldn't have known that she was going to do that

Ma: That is very true
She looked at me..

Ma: You are beautiful
Me:

Thank you

I heard voices:

NOVELSGURU.COM

Voice 1: Her BP is dropping
Ma: You have to go

Voice 2: Suction please
Voice 1: BP is still dropping

Ma: Remember that I will always love you

She blew me a kiss before disappearing... I saw a bright light shining on me from high above..

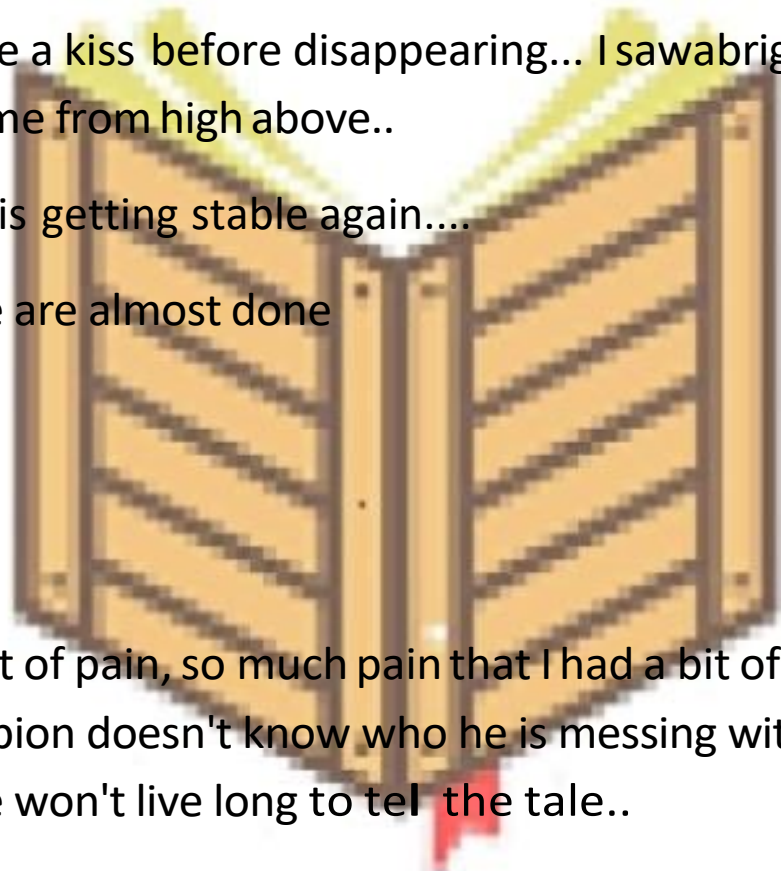
Voice 1: BP is getting stable again....

Voice 2: We are almost done

KELSO

I was in a lot of pain, so much pain that I had a bit of blood on my briefs. Scorpion doesn't know who he is messing with, if he took my wife. He won't live long to tell the tale..

I crawled on the floor to grab my jeans, they were also on the floor but the dog collar around my neck



was restricting me. The more I tried to reach for my jeans the more it strangled me.. I can't be stuck like this for the rest of the day. I need to grab my jeans, get my pocket knife from one of its pockets and cut off the collar around my neck...

I pushed myself hard and pain reacted.

The collar tightened around my neck, I laid there trying to gather more strength..

SCORPION

Dad: Where have you been? Me: I've been out

Dad: You went to him? Me: No

Dad: I know you out for revenge, I know you out for blood but death would be way too easy for him. We need to play this smart, we need to drag this. See how we can mess up his life more than he messed



NOVELSGURU.COM

up hers and that won't happen if he's dead
Me: He's not dead Pops, I didn't get to him
Dad: Good!

Me: Where is Sli?

Dad: She took my car and went home, I'm thinking that maybe she's resting

Me: Okay that's good

They brought Nongcebo back into her ward..
Dad: How is she?

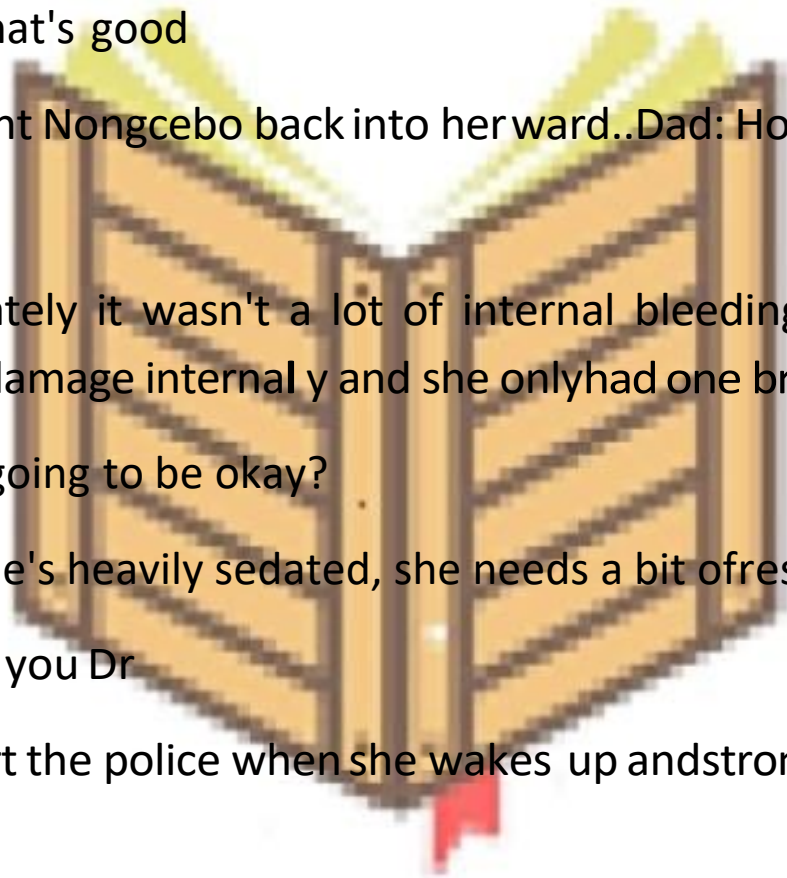
Dr: Fortunately it wasn't a lot of internal bleeding, there's was much damage internal y and she only had one broken rib

Me: Is she going to be okay?

Dr: Yes... She's heavily sedated, she needs a bit of rest

Dad: Thank you Dr

Dr: I will alert the police when she wakes up and strong enough to talk



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: I appreciate that a lot, but I think we should wait for her to wake up first

Dr: That won't be a problem Dad:

Thank you

Dr: Enjoy your day gentlemen Me:

You too

Dad: I'm getting coffee, do you want? Me: No

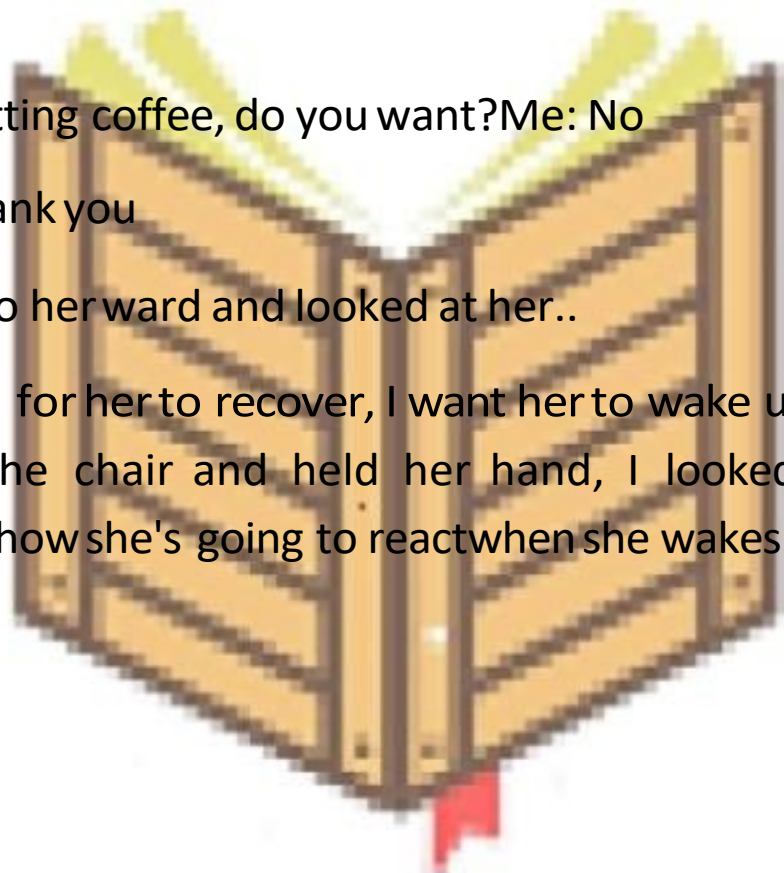
I'm okay thank you

I walked into her ward and looked at her..

All I want is for her to recover, I want her to wake up... I sat down on the chair and held her hand, I looked at her wondering how she's going to react when she wakes up..

KELSO

I ended up managing to get a hold of my jeans after a lot of time struggling. I took out my pocket knife



NOVELSGURU.COM

and cut the dog collar from my neck, when I was free I also got my phone out to call Sole..

Sole: Yeah?

Me: You need to get here at my place, I need to go to the fucken hospital

Sole: What happened?

Me: I'll tell you later what happened right now I need you to take me to the hospital

Sole: Cool... I'm coming

GERTRUDE

I received a call from my Niece letting me know that Nongcebo is safe. She's at the hospital and her real family had found her.

I was very grateful although I know Kelso won't let this go that easily. I hope Nongcebo's family is prepared for the war that's starting..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelo: I'm going to fetch Takie from the airport

Me: Okay.. You should know that Nongcebo is safe, she's at the hospital with her family

Kelo: That's good.. I should keep in contact with her to see how she's holding up

Me: Kelo..

Kelo: I know what you going to say and you should know that I really like her, liked her from the first day I saw her and I did say I'm going to marry her

I laughed..

Me: What she has been through I don't think she will ever want to be in a relationship

Kelo: The more reason to make her see that not all men are evil and ruthless, some of us will be there to pick up the pieces. I hate men who break women for the next man

Me: Kelo is not someone you want to piss off Kelo: I

know.. I should go I'll see you later

Me: I also have to tell Takie about him, have to tell you guys the whole truth

KELSO

Sole showed up, I couldn't wear any J ean. I had to settle for a t-shirt and a towel. Sole told me about Scorpion, told me that Nongcebo is Scorpion's little sister..

I couldn't believe it, never thought her family would actually come through for her. I thought she would be alone forever, this is a mess but Nongcebo is my wife. They can't just take her and I won't let them take her.

I was shocked to see my car damaged, the front windows were also broken. Scorpion is starting war, war that he won't win..

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by khwezikazi, she also entered Miss Teen SA. Please let's show her some

NOVELSGURU.COM

love with votes

<https://pageantvote.es/pageants/2741/contestants/18003>

[08/24, 13:33] : 85

NONGCEBO

[3 WEEKS LATER]

I hope this is the last time I ever get admitted, I've grown to dislike hospitals. I've visited this place more than anywhere else and I was now tired of it..Tired of just laying in bed and doing nothing, just eat, go and bath and that's it. I was even starting to gain a bit of weight and my complexion brightened more, I was yellow..

Learning about my family, I thought that things would be awkward between us but they treated me

NOVELSGURU.COM

like they've known me for a long time. Yes the first few days when I woke up, things were awkward between us. They were walking on eggshells around me, carrying the burden of not finding me on time. Especially my Brother Lindo, and for some reason we were more closer than I am with Sli and my Father. My father is still struggling to maintain that closeness between us, he doesn't know what to say when he's around me and he gets very nervous.. I could've been angry and all that but I was very grateful and happy. Happy that I finally belong somewhere, happy that from here on I won't be required to give myself to any man because I have nowhere to go. I have a home and I have a family that loves me unconditionally..

Therapy is still a bit difficult, having to revisit all those memories it's hard. I get nightmares everyday, I always feel scared, guilty and disgusted with myself most of the time. Especially my last sexual encounter with Kelso, it broke me. My bathing schedule is even longer than the usual, everyday I

try to rub him off me. Everyday I must look at my body and be reminded of what he put me through, it never goes away. It doesn't get better... I was more grateful that they also accepted Bongeka, My Brother Lindo promised me that nothing is going to happen to her. They even suggested that she moves back down here so that she could be more close to us, and I was surprised she agreed. When I told her the truth about what Kelso did, it affected her relationship with Nessi.

Nessi calls me every now and then, very broken and hurt over what happened..

They've come home for June holidays, Nessi is at her place and Bongeka is with our new family. I was also happy that today I was getting discharged. I'm going home...

Lindo stood at the door and looked at me. He spends most of his time here, sleeping on the chair making sure that I get through the night. He's an amazing person, he makes big brothers look the

NOVELSGURU.COM

best...

Me: What?

Him: It's hard having to look at an ugly person everyday then lie to them that their ugliness doesn't affect you

Me: You have indirectly said Mom is Ugly Him:

Ohw she was just like you

Me: Yeah whatever

He walked in with a plastic..

Him: I bought you a phone, new phone new numbers

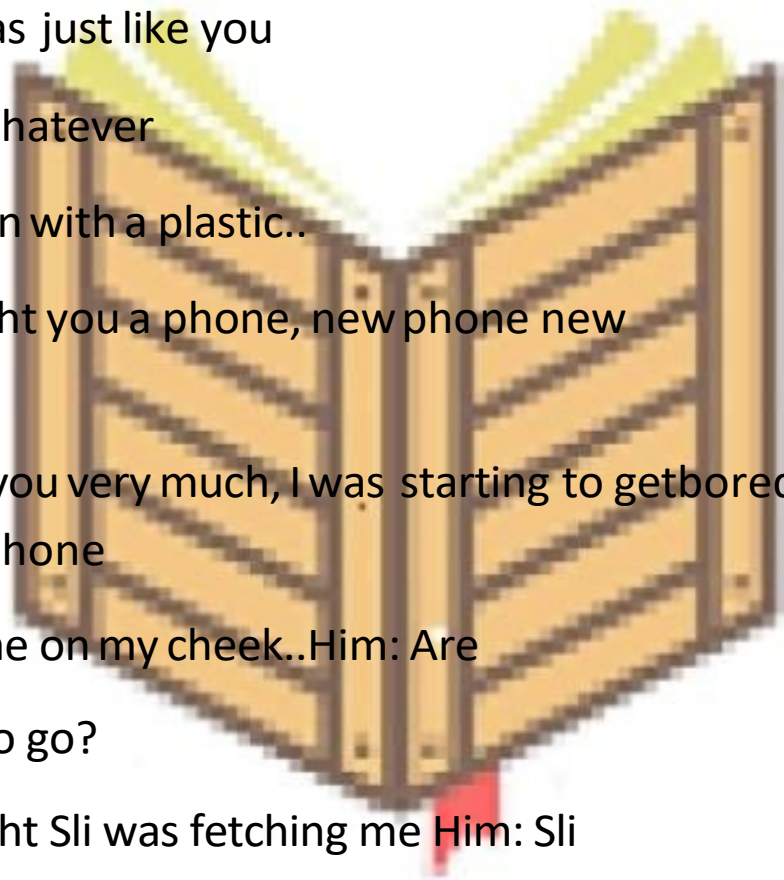
Me: Thank you very much, I was starting to get bored without a phone

He kissed me on my cheek.. Him: Are you ready to go?

Me: I thought Sli was fetching me Him: Sli

is cooking and al that shit Me: That's very

unnecessary



Him: That's what I told her, very unnecessary to be wasting food on ugly people

Me: That's not a nice thing to say, you a very mean person

Siphosethu walked in..

Sethu: I am so sad that you leaving us today, you were one of my favorite patients

Me: I'm sad I'm leaving you too

She walked up to me and hugged me..Sethu:

Take care of yourself

Me: Thank you

Sethu: And call me when you need anything Lindo took out his phone and gave it to her..

Lindo: She just bought a new phone, she will still have to navigate it so you can put your number here for safe keeping yabo

She smiled and took his phone, then saved her number..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sethu: Here

Lindo: I'll make sure she calls you
Sethu: Thank you

Lindo: I might call on her behalf every now and then
Sethu: I look forward to the calls

I looked at them as they looked at each other..
Sethu: I should get back to work

Lindo: Yeah we shouldn't keep you waiting more lives to be saved

Sethu: I guess I'll see you around
Lindo:

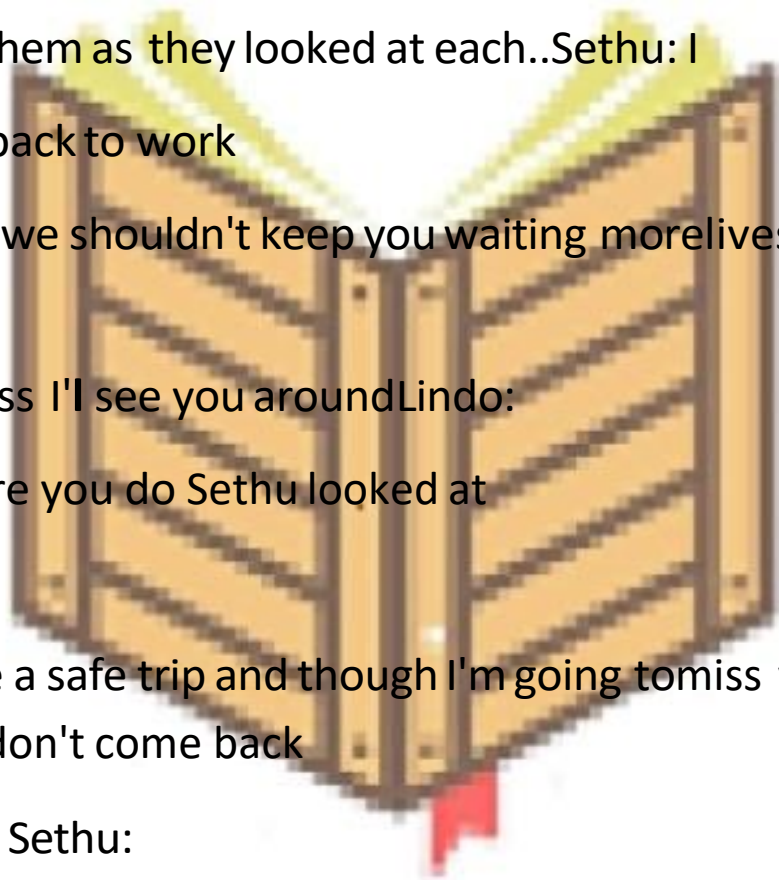
I'll make sure you do
Sethu looked at me..

Sethu: Have a safe trip and though I'm going to miss you but please don't come back

Me: I won't
Sethu:

Okay bye
Me: Bye

NOVELSGURU.COM



She walked away with Lindo looking at her..

SANDISIWE

Anele put chocolates on my desk. The last ones he bought me, I only ate one and took the rest home.

Sole threw them all out without even explaining to me and told me that I shouldn't accept foods or treats from anyone, it's dangerous. I totally get what he is saying and Anele has been buying me chocolates everyday same brand of chocolates, that's weird..

Me: Thank you

Anele: Your column is really doing well

Me: I

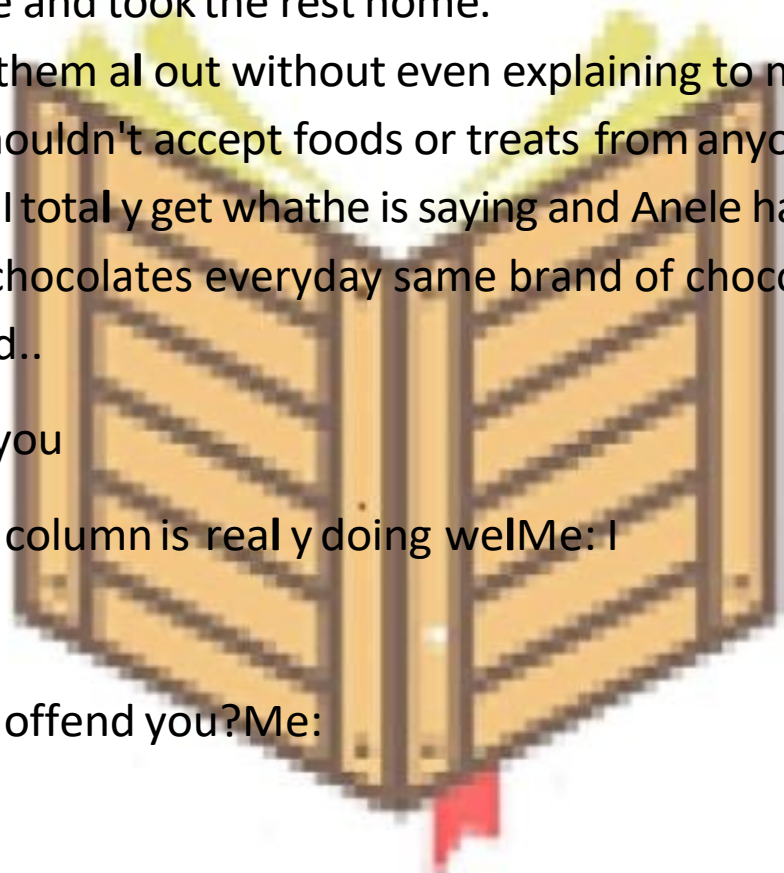
saw

Anele: Did I offend you?

Me:

Huh?

Anele: You are somehow to me lately, hardly even eat the chocolates I buy for you



Me: I eat them at home just that here I get busy and I even forget about my addiction

Anele: So there's no tension between us? Me: Not that I know of

She smiled..

Anele: I'm glad.. Let me leave you then to work Me: Thank you

He left..

SOLE

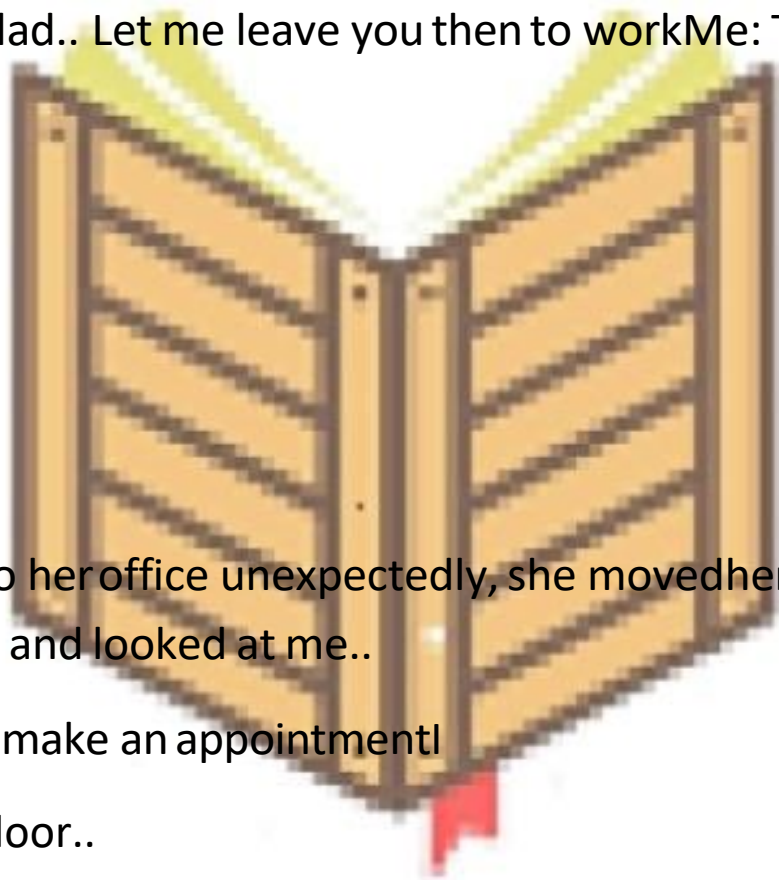
I walked into her office unexpectedly, she moved her eyes from her PC and looked at me..

Wil: People make an appointment!

closed the door..

Wil: I'm guessing this is a different kind of appointment

Me: If you going to try and poison my girlfriend and



NOVELSGURU.COM

my baby, try a different brand of chocolates not your favorite

She smiled..

Wil: So you got my message Me:

What do you want?

Wil: I just want you to have a relationship with your son that's all

I looked at his picture..

Wil: That's all I want and for your girlfriend to know about him

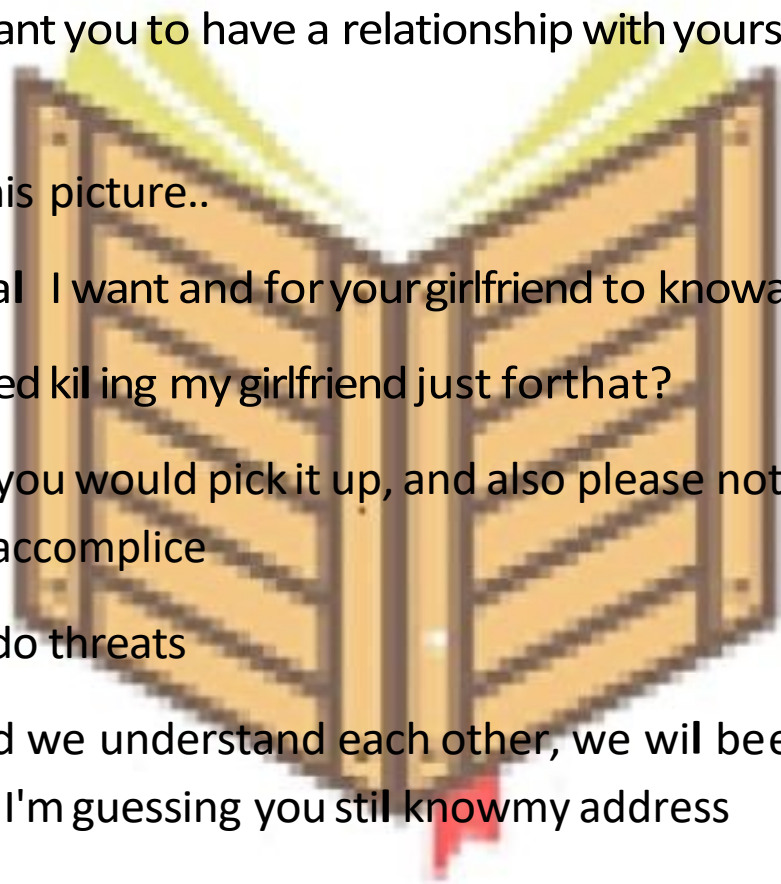
Me: You tried killing my girlfriend just for that?

Wil: I knew you would pick it up, and also please no threats against my accomplice

Me: I don't do threats

Wil: I'm glad we understand each other, we will be expecting you tonight I'm guessing you still know my address

Me: 19:30



NOVELSGURU.COM

Wil: Perfect, he's going to be thrilled. Always wanted to know his Daddy

Me: Stay away from my family Wil:

Understood!

KELSO

Wisani called me about a week ago to check up on me. She told me things that almost drove me crazy, things about Nongcebo. I remember when we spoke, she did tell me that Makhathini's family will have a hand in Nongcebo's life and unfortunately that hand ruined our marriage. That hand made me accuse my wife of things that she didn't do to a point where she admitted to doing something that she didn't do. I felt like a complete fool. I should've believed my wife, should've thought this through. I remember all the things I did to her, she suffered at my hand and also at the hand of those who turned her life upside down. How do I even begin to make things right? I've messed up so much and I don't know where to

NOVELSGURU.COM

begin to fix this. I love Nongcebo, I love her with all my heart. The anger and disgust I felt towards her, I don't know where it erupted from. I do remember everything I did to her, but I don't understand my anger in that situation..

Things are going to be difficult now that she has a family, Scorpion really fucked me up. So bad that I lost a testicle in the process. It was badly injured, they had to cut it off. The Urologist told me that my other testicle is very much functional, I can still have kids, my testosterone levels won't be affected too..

Nessi hates me, I don't want to mention how disappointed my Grandmother is at me. I don't blame them, I'm disappointed too in myself. I put her picture back on the dressing table and sighed. My life is crumbling.

I am broke, Sole did the last heist with Scorpion and Scorpion's friend. Scorpion was going to pull out if I was included, since I disappointed him he saw

Scorpion as a fit partner in this heist. They walked away with 3mil , my father didn't even get a cut for bringing Scorpion in. My father is the one who is helping me financially until I get back on my feet..

Sole has done so many things and I've always helped him to cover them up, just one mistake and the bastard I've known for years as my best friend cut me off. Now he has a new crew, that's really messed up..

My phone rang, it was Stalion..Me:

Stalion

Him: I am here

Me: Okay I'm on my way Him:

Cool

I hung up. Immediately after his call a text from Nelicame through:

"my rent is due"

NOVELSGURU.COM

This bitch has wiped me clean of my last cash,

drugs, rent, alcohol, shopping. What was I even thinking fooling around with her? Such bitches youfuck and move on from them. This is shit, my wholelife at this moment is shit!

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Ava Sibeko. A 2nd year student at Wits. She needs at least 500 - 1000 followers in an attempt to instil positive energies and encouragement to her followers as part of her work requirements. Please follow let's follow her

Her Twitter handle is: @AvaSibeko[08/24,
13:33] : 86

NONGCEBO

She really went all out in preparing everything for me. The dining table had all the food and drinks, even a

NOVELSGURU.COM

cake. She had one of her church ladies present who helped her to prepare everything, her name is Manto. Out of everything that was prepared, I liked my bedroom. I was going to share it with Bongeka. It was really beautiful, I don't wanna lie. As much as this was a beautiful gesture from her part, I couldn't help but be overwhelmed by unsettling emotions.

Fear being the dominant one. My heart was racing and my chest was closing in, I asked to be excused. I don't understand, I should be happy. I should be excited but I was fearful. Feared that Kelso might just walk in, shoot everyone and drag me out. I wanted to be happy and worry got to me quicker than anything..

I heard a knock at the door..Me:

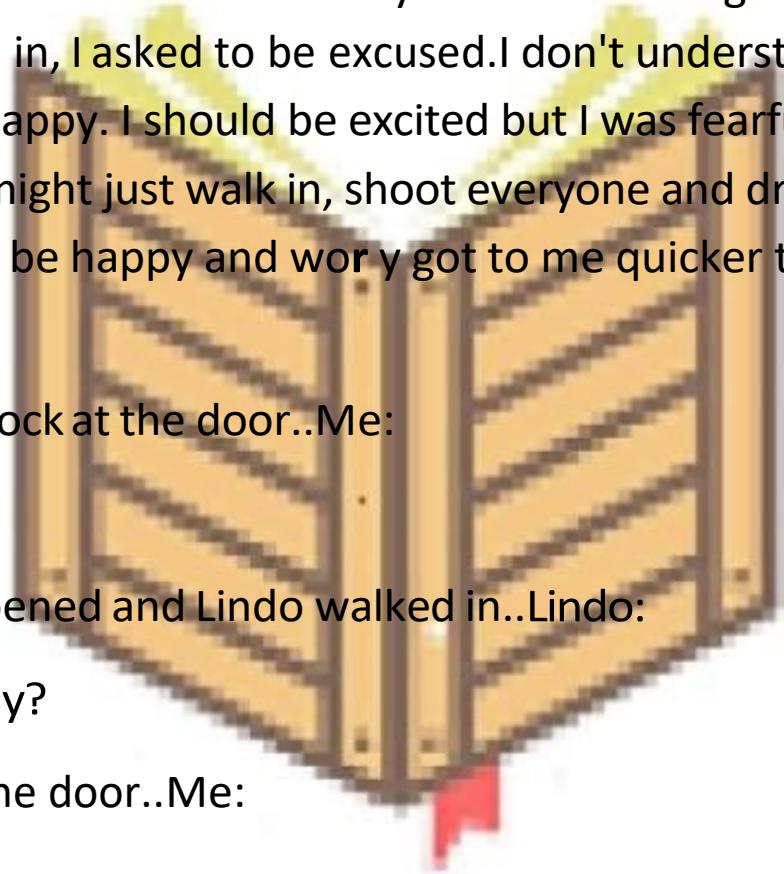
Come in

The door opened and Lindo walked in..Lindo:

Are you okay?

He closed the door..Me:

I'll be okay



NOVELSGURU.COM

He walked up to me..Lindo: Talk

to me

Me: I just have this fear that I cannot explain, fear that he...
That he might walk in and..

Lindo: Hey come here He

hugged me..

Lindo: I will never let anyone hurt you like that ever again.. I
promise

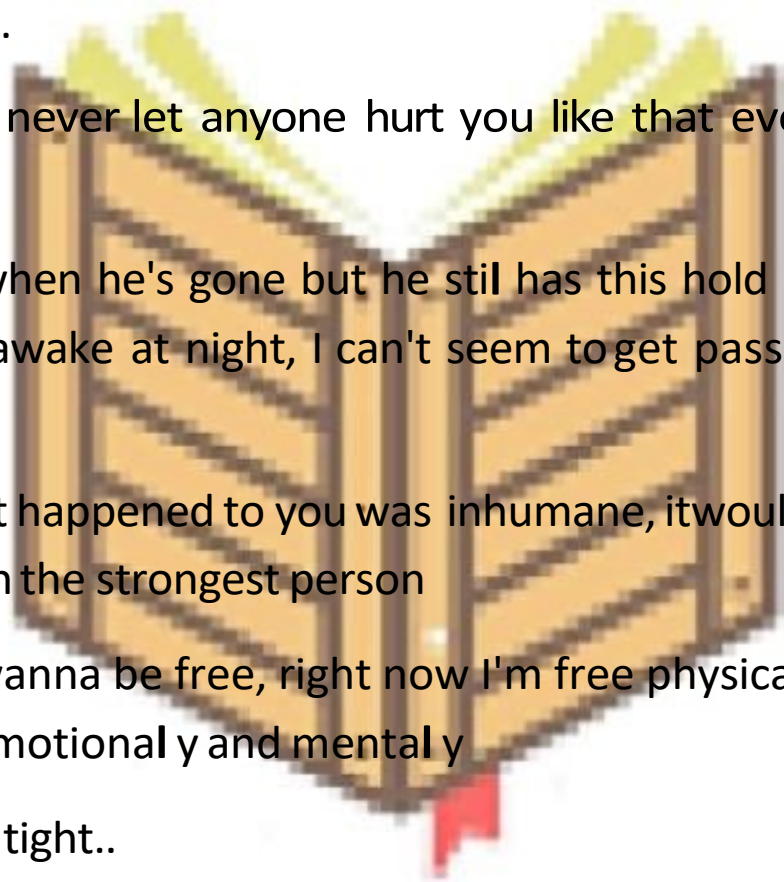
Me: Even when he's gone but he still has this hold of me, he
keeps me awake at night, I can't seem to get past what he
did (crying)

Lindo: What happened to you was inhumane, it would've
broken even the strongest person

Me: I just wanna be free, right now I'm free physical
and not emotional y and mental y

He held me tight..

Lindo: We will get through this, I promise.. I'll always be here for
you



KELSO

You look like shit..Me:

I feel like shit

Stal ion: Whats going on?

Me: A lot has been happening that.. J ust a lot hasbeen happening

Stal ion: Foryou to even cal me, it means shit hasbeen happening forreal

Me: I messed up so bad

Stal ion: Wanna talk about it?Me: No

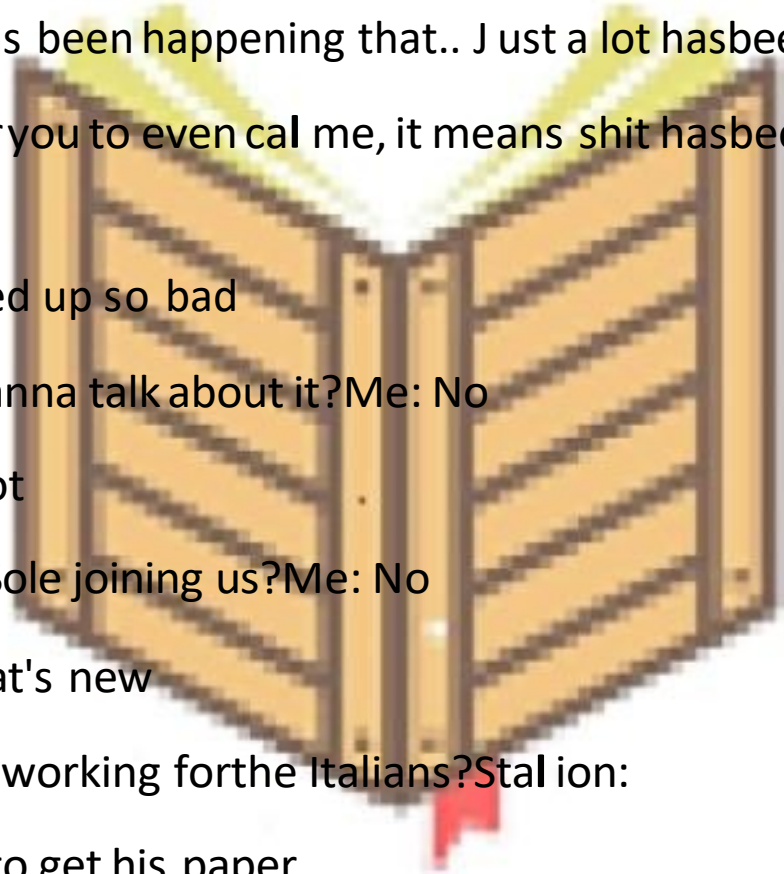
I'd rather not

Stal ion: Is Sole joining us?Me: No

Stal ion: That's new

Me: So you working forthe Italians?Stal ion:

A man has to get his paper



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I have information Stal ion:

What information?

Me: I believe the Italians are missing a few mil s?Stal ion:

I'm listening

Me: Sole was behind it, he was helped by a guynamed Scorpion. They robbed the Italians

He whistled..

Stal ion: Shit.. Sole must've fucked you up for you todo this

Me: Sole is the reason why my wife is not with me, Sole is also the reason why you don't have Londeka

He folded his arms..

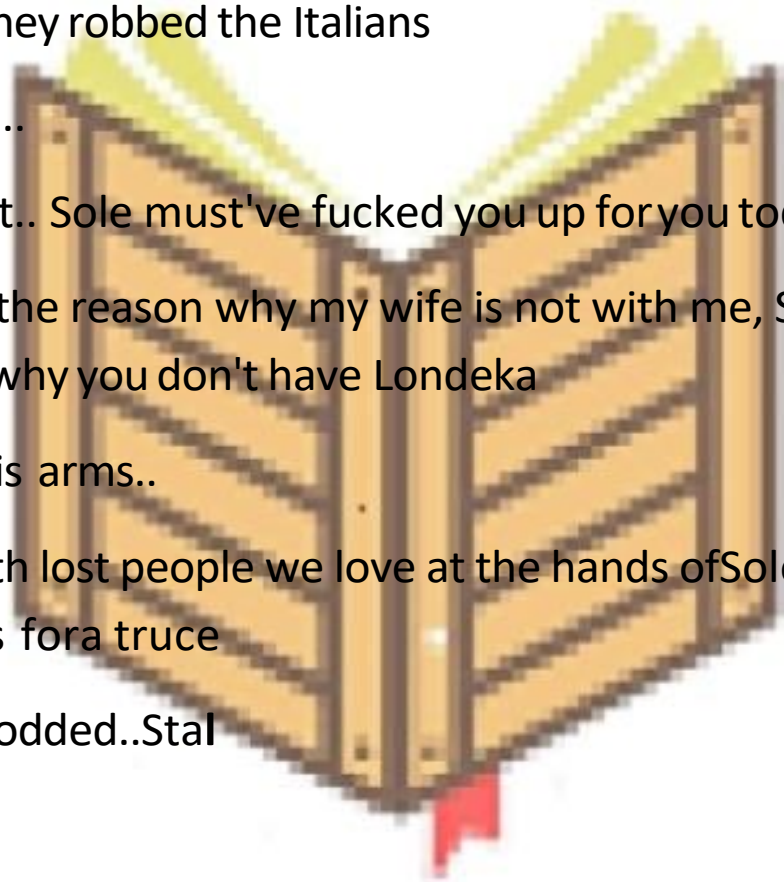
Me: We both lost people we love at the hands ofSole, I think it cal s fora truce

He slowly nodded..Stal

ion: I see

Me: Are you going to take me to the Italians?Stal ion:

I'll set up a meeting for tonight



Me: Cool Man

BANZA

Breaking up with Sasa was the hardest thing to do, I hurt her. I hurt her deeply. I didn't have it in me to swing her along knowing very well that now I had feelings for someone else. I didn't wanna cheat on her so I decided to hurt her with the truth than to lie to her..

I received a call from Manto..Me:

Bubu

Manto: Are you busy?

Me: Just waiting for 3 people, is everything okay?Manto:

Nongcebo just arrived

Me: And?

Manto: She was overwhelmed by everything I sighed..

NOVELSGURU.COM

It happens that Manto and Nongcebo's sister go to the same church and because Manto has to help Nongcebo she thought it would be better if she befriended Nongcebo's sister.

Manto: I'll keep you updated
Me:

Okay sharp.. I love you
Manto: I love you too

NESSI (KELSO'S NIECE)

I was broken that my Uncle's acts ruined what Bongeka and I had. The honest truth is that, Bongeka and I were in a relationship than we were in a friendship. Not really knowing how everyone was going to react to us being in a relationship, we decided to tell everyone that we were friends. Best friends for that matter.. We were mostly enjoying our lives at the boarding school, we shared the same room and it made our relationship easier. We got time to connect more..

NOVELSGURU.COM

After finding out what my Uncle did to Nongcebo, and her moving out. Bongeka broke up with me, now I'm seeing from her Facebook posts that she wants to change schools so she can be more close to Nongcebo.. This was crazy, I didn't know that her breaking up with me was going to be this hurtful. I've been struggling to eat, sleep, and I can't get her out of my mind. Felt like I was losing my mind especially since she's blocked my calls. She doesn't reply to my messages and she has blocked me on whatsapp. The last message she sent me stated:

"Leave me alone you psycho! Stay with your psycho family"

I read the message almost everyday and each time it brings about the same emotions. Anger and hurt...

Grams: How are you feeling? Me:

I'm fine

Grams: Bongeka is still not talking to you? Me: No

NOVELSGURU.COM

Grams: Give her time

Me: I've given her time, she's done with me Grandma! I've lost my gir-.. I mean my best friend

Grams: She has every right to be angry, your Uncle hurt Nongcebo a lot

Me: He's always doing bad things that affect us! He doesn't think about us before acting

Grams: I know and I'm sorry Sisi.. She will come around don't worry she's just upset that's all

NONGCEBO

Sli went out of her way to prepare this meal for me, make me feel all welcome. The least I could do is enjoy this moment and try to block out Kelso and everything that has happened. For now, I need to enjoy this moment. It was Me, Sli, Bongeka, and Manto around the table eating. Lindo had gone out.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Manto: Nongcebo how are you feeling now? Me: I'm feeling better thank you

Manto: I just want you to know that you are very strong

Me: Thank you

Sli and Manto looked at each other.. Me:

What?

Sli: Manto wanted us to invite you to church this Sunday, but I was telling her that it's too soon

Me: No it's okay, I would love to go

Manto: You don't have to if you still not ready Me: No it's okay.. I would love to visit your church

Sli: That's sweet maybe we can also start praying together

Me: That's a good idea

Manto: I love your attitude, it's difficult to view God differently when you have been through what you went through

NOVELSGURU.COM

I put my fork down..

Me: That night when he... I thought I was going to die. I prayed that "God if you get me through this, I will never question your existence again"

I fought back my tears..

Me: Not only did he save me that night but he gave me something more. Something I desperately needed, he gave me my family.

I chuckled through my tears..

Me: It was so quick, never did I think that I was ever going to be united with my family. I have lost all hope and I understand why I never knew about them earlier, he wanted to bring them at the right time and that night was the right time. For the first time since I've been in and out of the hospital, I opened my eyes that day thinking I was going to see the face of my abuser first, but instead. My family was in the ward.. That was the most beautiful moment for me, I woke up and saw my family.. All along I thought that God wasn't hearing me, but he was hearing me. He did see my pain, and

he wanted to save me at the right time. He did, he did that and more. I have hope now, I have faith.. There's no shadow of doubt in me that God exists I don't care who says what. I wasn't told that he exists, I saw it for myself. I saw it on my own to believe it

I took the napkin and wiped my tears..Manto wiped hers..

Manto: Wow..

Sli wiped hers too..

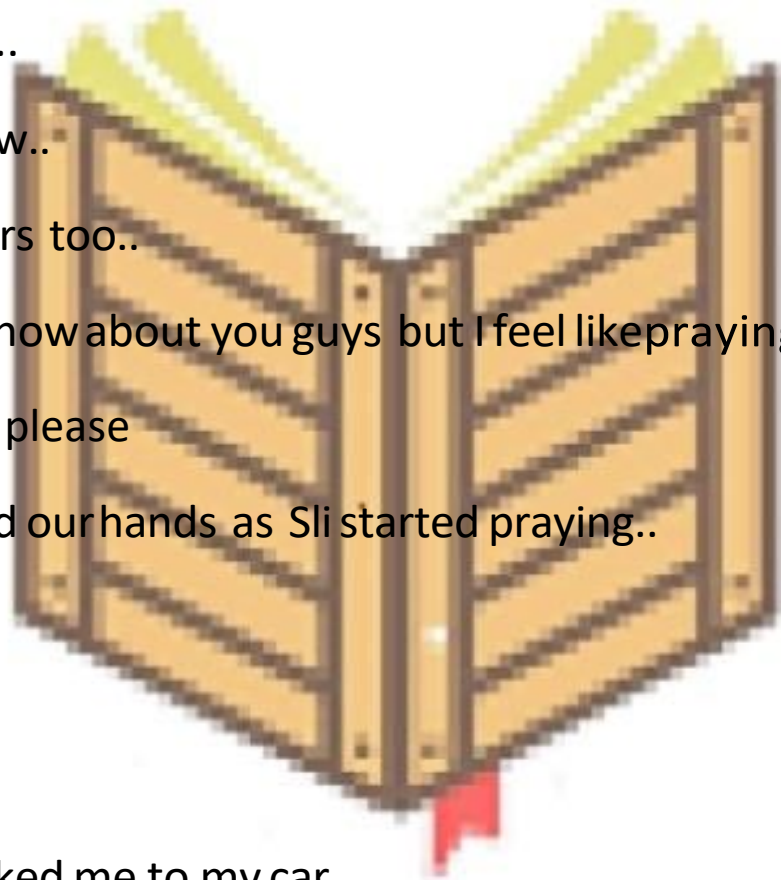
Sli: I don't know about you guys but I feel like praying

Manto: Yes please

We all joined our hands as Sli started praying..

KELSO

Station walked me to my car..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Stal ion: You can trust me, I need to know that I can trust you too

Me: We have a common enemy, I think we should trust each other

Stal ion: And I hope it stays like that

Me: What Sole did cannot be forgiven, he had no business running to Scorpion like that. He should've told me about Nongcebo's family

Stal ion: It's shit.. So he was kissing ass so much that he betrayed the only friend that was there for him.. Sole has always been a snake, I've never trusted him

Me: I should've never done that to you Man

Stal ion: Sole was your best friend, you two were very close. I'm glad you seeing him for who he truly is.. He has always been selfish

Me: I see that now

Stal ion: Whats that on your windscreen? I got the paper..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I don't know

I checked it and it was my obituary..

"In the loving memory of Kelso Bhembe"

It even had my picture. I opened it and not much was written inside other than..

"I'm coming for you"

Under the words was a picture of a Scorpion.

.

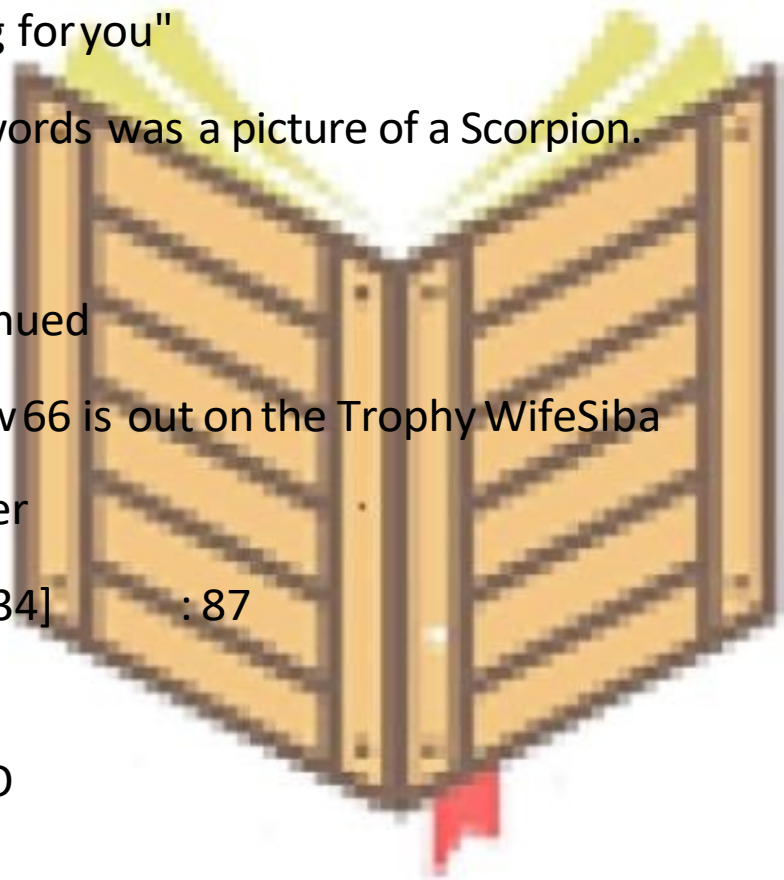
To be continued

Please know 66 is out on the Trophy Wife Siba coming later

[08/24, 13:34] : 87

NONGCEBO

Later at night, Sli and Bongeka were watching TV. I didn't join them I was in my bedroom laying on my bed and just catching up on Facebook. Decided to



NOVELSGURU.COM

upload a recent profile picture it was me and Scorpion, we took it when I was still admitted.. I checked the comments:

"Who is he "

.

"You were at the hospital, hope you recovering well "

.

"You beautiful but yer r r r Mr Man next to you, I thought you were married"

.

"Your boyfriend is handsome Sisi, so you have a husband and a side nigga"

.

"Isn't she married? Hai ngandani "

.

"Hai yi film"

.

NOVELSGURU.COM

"People and jumping into conclusions"

.

"See what happens? Then when we kill them we are wrong"

I can say that the picture sent the wrong message because Scorpion was laying next to me and kissing my cheek" it is so shocking that people decided to jump into that conclusion without even asking who he is, I had to reply to the comments by saying he's my Brother then they apologized. Kelo jumped in..

"So people shouldn't upload their pictures with their siblings and the close relationship that they share? Some of comments are sickening worse it's women saying that, even if it was her boyfriend wena ungenaphi? Ninesidina struu"

I had to go and delete all my wedding pictures and

NOVELSGURU.COM

changed my relationship status to single. This was insane..

I heard the girls greeting my Father, he showed up at my door before walking to his bedroom..

Dad: How are you feeling kiddo? Me:

I'm okay thank you

Dad: Why aren't you watching TV with the others? Me: I feel

a bit tired

He nodded..

Dad: If you need anything don't be scared to ask Me: Thank

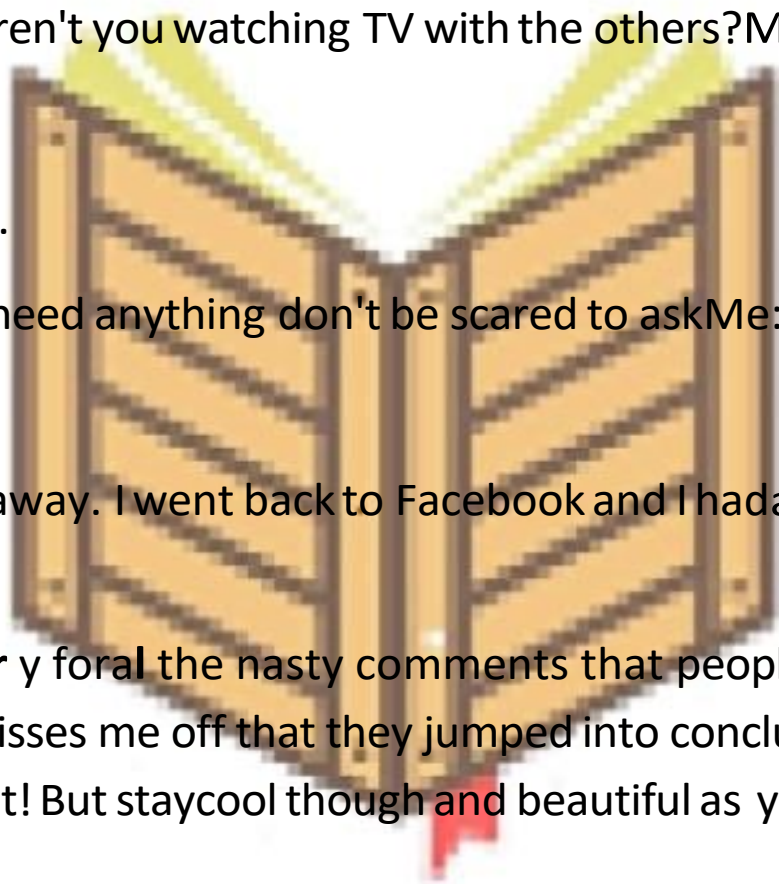
you

He walked away. I went back to Facebook and I had an inbox from Kelo:

"I am so sorry for all the nasty comments that people are making, it pisses me off that they jumped into conclusions like that. I hate it! But stay cool though and beautiful as you are at all times.

Can't stop looking at your profile picture, you look beautiful.

He tried breaking you but look at you..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Let me not sound creepy but I promise you one day I will marry you. Good night bunny"

I literally laughed at the last line..

KELSO

Things were awkward around the dinner table, it's not the first time. Things have been awkward ever since Nongcebo left. We were left as a broken family, a family that was once very close.. I looked at my Grandmother..

Me: I was thinking.. Maybe the Uncles can go to Nongcebo's place on my behalf and talk to her family

Grams: What for?

Me: So she can come back home, we married

Nessi: Her Facebook doesn't say so anymore, she deleted all her wedding pictures, pictures of you and changed her status to single

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You see that behavior is unacceptable
Nongcebo is still very much married

Grams: Are you sorry about what happened?

Me: I am sorry but I cannot take all the blame when I didn't know what was happening. Nongcebo realized what was happening to her she never said anything, she kept quiet and led me to believe lies. If she came clean from the start we would've gotten help

Nessi: Wow!

Grams: I am not calling the Uncles over such nonsense

Me: Married people go through tribulations and tribulations, Nongcebo came to me because she had no one. Made me fall in love with her, just a little mess up she's gone. Now that she has a good family, she doesn't need me anymore. I feel used! She used me!

Grams: I'm going to bed

She got up and took her plate, she walked to her

NOVELSGURU.COM

bedroom..

Nessi: Are you going to fix this?Me: I'm

trying

Nessi: Try harder. I've lost my best friend because of what you did

Me: Nongcebo and Bongeka used this family for their own selfish reasons. They came here when life showed them flames, we accepted them and loved them. Why is Bongeka even angry? I fucken took her to school and paid upfront 15k before she decided that she was going to pay for herself. They ungrateful

Nessi: Seeing it from that point of view it's really wrong, Bongeka's father abused them for years and they stayed until he mysteriously died

Me: He didn't mysteriously die Nongcebo killed him. Speaking of that I think tomorrow morning I must visit the family ask how that case is going

NOVELSGURU.COM

SCORPION

I waited at the waiting area for Sethu, I looked at the time and I've been waiting for almost an hour now. I kept myself busy with Facebook busy reading all the ridiculous comments that were made on Nongcebo's profile picture. There's this one guy who kept on bashing everyone who commented shit. Kelo Gxaba. I checked his profile and he looked exactly like Kelso. Could be Kelso's little brother, Nongcebo reacted with a heart on all his replies. I checked him out again and he definitely looked like Kelso..

Sethu walked in putting on her jacket over her blue dress..

Her: I'm sorry I took long, my patient was being needy

Me: I brought you your dinner She
took it from the chair..

Sethu: Rice and chicken strips from Galitos, my favorite
thank you for not forgetting

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You texted me after I texted you what you wanted for dinner

She sat down..

Sethu: Men have a short memory, thank you though
Me: You welcome

Sethu: Our first date at the hospital
Me:

Ohh so this is a date?

She blushed..

Sethu: You know what I mean I

brushed her cheek..

Me: Don't worry I get you

Sethu: How is Nongcebo? I took the fork from her..

Me: You will talk to her on the phone, when you with me I want us to talk about us

I took a portion of her food and ate

Sethu: I thought you bought the food for me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: We all live to share

I took another portion and fed her..Me:

Not bad

Sethu: They very delicious

I took the last portion and she opened her mouth, I turned the fork and put it in my mouth. She laughed..

Sethu: I'm no longer sharingShe
took the fork back..

Me: I have to go

Sethu: You just got here

Me: I have something to take care ofSethu:

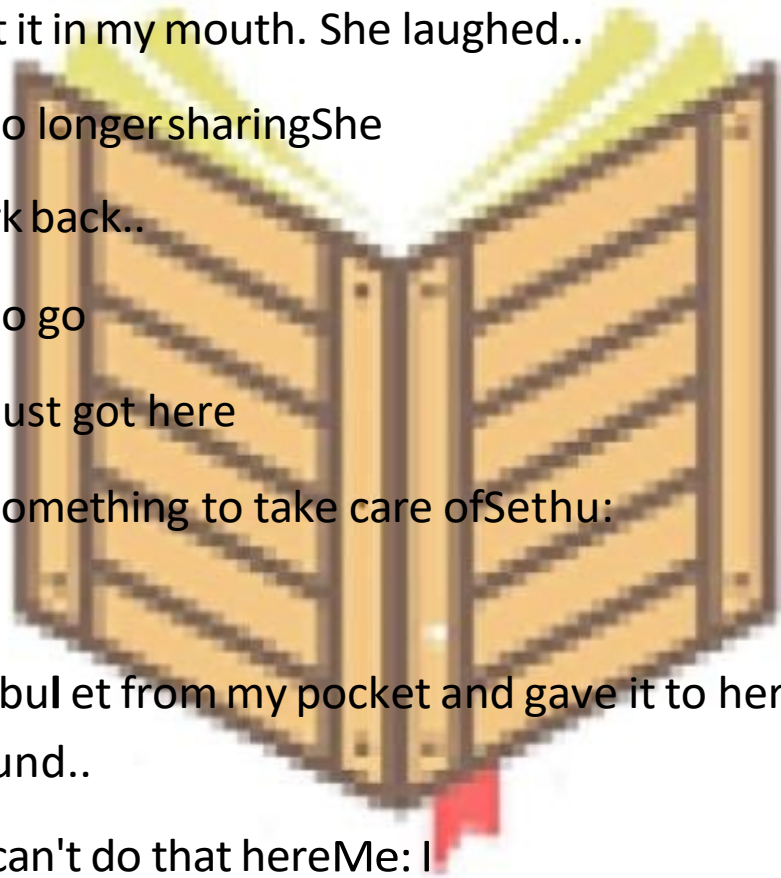
Like?

I took out a bullet from my pocket and gave it to her,she
looked around..

Sethu: You can't do that hereMe: I

live by the bullet **NOVELSGURU.COM**

She closed her hand..



Me: I'll call you later

I got up and walked away, I stopped and turned going back to her. I leaned over and kissed her..

Me: Enjoy your night

She didn't say anything, I left..

NELI

So since that whole drama with Kelso I went back to my life of whoring because he started giving me a cold shoulder. Unfortunately I fucked up and got myself knocked up. It was at a house party, I was drunk as hell and the guy that was laughing and acting all cosy with me. Fucked me repeatedly that night, I was too drunk to even push him off or anything. What's more messed up is that I feel pregnant. I took a pregnancy test 2 days ago and it was positive.. I don't know this fucker, never met him before, so I am definitely painting this on Kelso. I took a picture of the pregnancy test and sent it to

NOVELSGURU.COM

him..

I would abort but I've had a lot of abortions before that now I'm scared. What if something goes wrong, the last abortion was not good at all. Plus I'm getting tired of doing this shit, I wanna settle down. Kelso is good, he's crazy about me and he has money. I've hit the jackpot with him, I need the money. More especially since I flunked at school..

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Obanzi's mother. She's asking for votes for Obanzi by you guys liking her picture so she can win the competition

https://m.facebook.com/story.php?story_fbid=2644508919199421&id=2259658807684436

[08/24, 13:34] : 88

WILSONIA

NOVELSGURU.COM

I prepared myself for the dinner meeting. I was on my lace g-string, matching bra, and a silk gown over. They were all red in colour, and I put on a red lipstick. I tied my blonde hair and looked at myself in the mirror. I didn't wear any shoes.. I walked over to my Son's room, he was sleeping. I closed the door. I sat on the couch with a glass of wine waiting for him..

He showed up at exactly 20:00. I opened the door, he was on his phone..

Me: You late

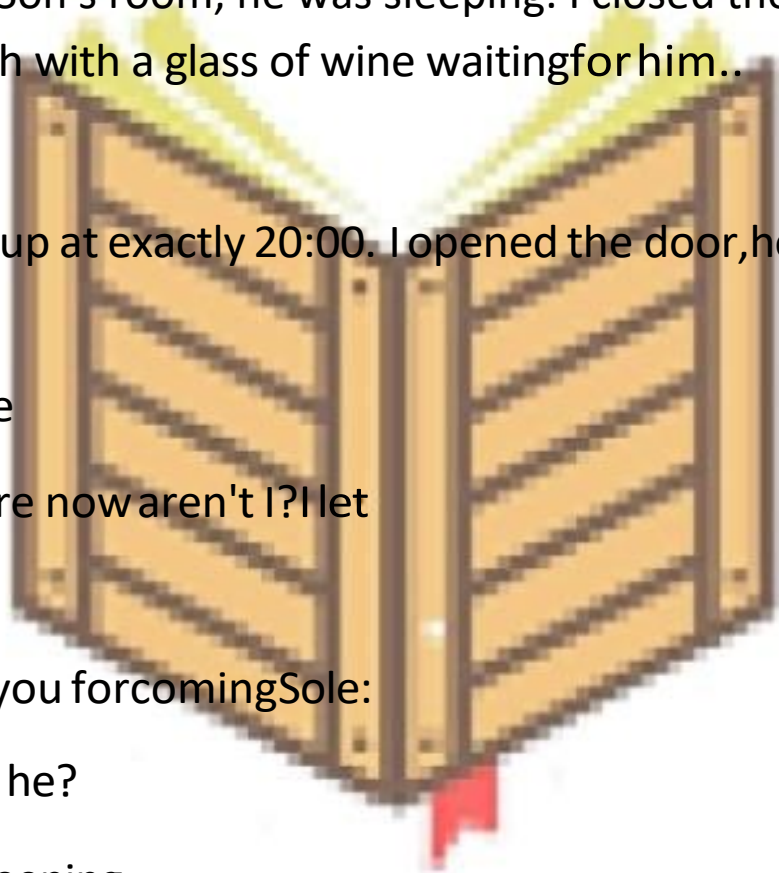
Sole: I'm here now aren't I? I let him in..

Me: Thank you for coming Sole:

So where is he?

Me: He is sleeping

Sole: You couldn't text me and saved me the trip?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: He will wake up don't worry

He looked at me..

The last time I recalled Sole liked his Women thick, and I didn't disappoint in that area. Even his current girlfriend she's a bit thick, but definitely not my size..

I got closer to him..Sole:

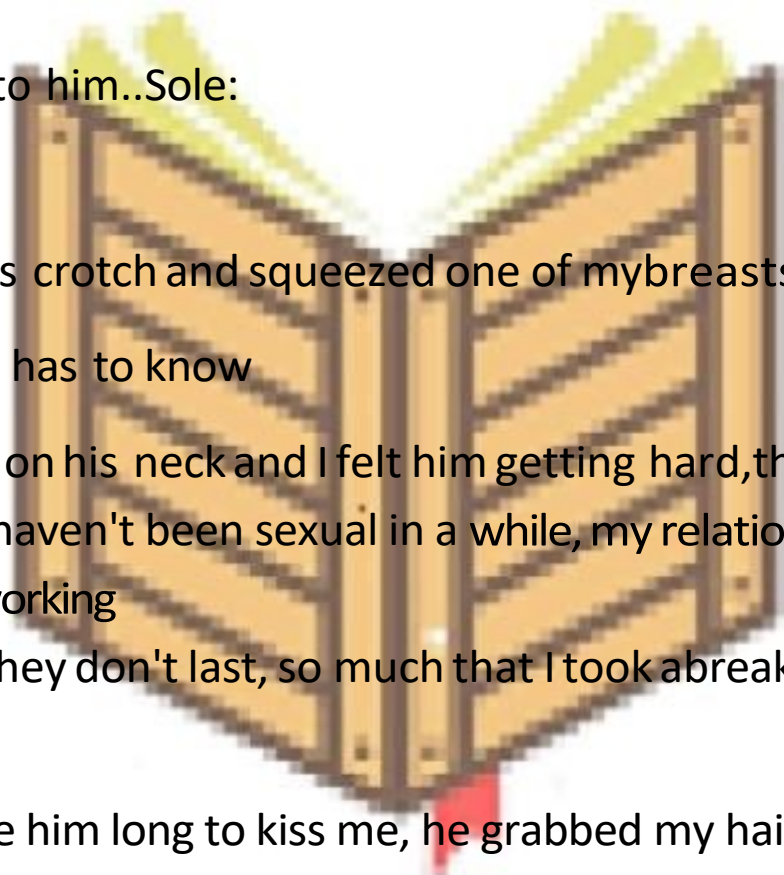
Wilsonia..

I grabbed his crotch and squeezed one of my breasts..

Me: No one has to know

I kissed him on his neck and I felt him getting hard, that's what I wanted. I haven't been sexual in a while, my relationships are not really working currently. They don't last, so much that I took a break from dating..

It didn't take him long to kiss me, he grabbed my hair as we french kissed and my silk gown dropped to the floor. He ran his other hand on my phat ass and I squeezed myself against him with my hand



NOVELSGURU.COM

still grabbing and squeezing his crotch. He closed his eyes and a moan escaped his lips. He tightened his grip on my hair, and kissed me again..

It would be better to take this to my bedroom in case my Son wakes up, I don't want him running into this situation.. So I held his hand and led him to my bedroom..

All gloves were off in the bedroom, I took out my oil, my vibrator, and a pack of condoms.

He took off my bra, and my underwear as I impatiently helped him undress too until he was left with his Calvin Klein briefs. His bulge indicated that Mr Man down there already wanted to come out and play. I got down on my knees and took off his briefs, I took him in. Gave him a BJ whilst massaging his balls. He grabbed my hair again as I went for a deep throat gagging and my saliva all over his dick. I took it out and took a breath, he literally slapped me with it on my face before letting me taking it all in again. I love how he moans and bit his lower lip hard I even thought it was going to start bleeding. He tightly grabbed my hair, with his

NOVELSGURU.COM

other hand squeezing my cheeks and he fucked me in my mouth whilst softly moaning..

Sole: Yeah fuck.. Oh yeah fuck..

He continued and I put my hands on his thighs for balance as he fucked me in my mouth for dear life, He pulled out when I had gagged enough. I wiped my tears and gave him a hand job, he was rock hard..

He pulled me by my hair to my feet and I walked over to the bed. I got on top of it and spread out my legs. I took the oil and ran it on my coochie as he stood there. I rubbed my oily clit going all the way down to my hole. Then I took the vibrator and slid it in whilst still rubbing my clit. It turned him on more witnessing me playing with myself.

My legs couldn't keep still as I continued pleasuring myself. He gave himself a rough hand job as I continued..

Him: Fuck you killing me..

When he couldn't take it anymore he walked up to me, I removed the vibrator and put it aside. He took my leg and put it over his shoulder. He was kneeling in between my legs when I grabbed the pack of condoms. I unwrapped one and put it on him. Then without delaying any further he made his way in..

Me: Hmmmmm

He pushed in until he was deep inside, how I've missed his thick rock hard cock deep inside of me. Tightly grabbing on my leg that was over his shoulder, he started pumping. I took the vibrator and put it on my clitoris as I enjoyed the moment.. He stretched his other hand and started playing with my tits. I have missed this, I've missed him fucking me like this...

KELSO

I lived up to my promise, the following morning I made my way to Makhathini's house. It was not difficult finding his house since he was well known

NOVELSGURU.COM

in his hood..

I found two women, one looked old. The other one wasn't that old..

They allowed welcomed me in and we sat in the living room..

Me: Sanibonani (greetings)

They greeted back, one of the ladies offered me tea but I refused..

Me: Ngiyaxolisa ukumane nginifikele ekuseni (I'm sorry for just budging in so early in the morning)

They waited for me to continue..

Me: Igama lami uKelso, umyeni ka Nongcebo (My name is Kelso, Nongcebo's husband)

The old looking woman was the one to answer first..

Her: Mima ngingu Nazulu uAunty ka Zulu, lo uGabisile udadewabo (I am Nazulu. Zulu's Aunty and that's Gabisile his sister)

I nodded..

Gabisile: Singankuncenda ngani? (How can we help you)

Me: Ngiziswa Indaba ka Nongcebo, kusho ukuthi mina naye saqala ukubonana eMal . Akaze wangitshela ukuthi ube nesoka (I am here because of Nongcebo, I met her at the mal and she never told me that she was in a relationship with someone)

They let me continue...

Me: Wayifihla leyondaba until ngamshada kulapho khona kwaphuma amaqiniso (She hid that until we got married, after marriage she told me the truth)

Nazulu: Awukakasho ukuthi uzengani (You haven't said what you here for)

Me: Kusho ukuthi uNongcebo uye wangitshela ukuthi ubulale uZulu (Nongcebo told me that she killed him)

I think they weren't prepared to hear that..

Me: Kuko konke engimenzele kona wagcina wangishiya uma esethole umndeni wakhe (She left me when she found her family)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Gabisile: Use ethole umndeni wakhe? (Now she has found her family)

Me: Yebo.. Ngenziwe isiphukuphuku, ngadalwa, ngashiywa. Waze wangithumela ngo mfowabo ophule imoto yami waphula ama window wasekhaya (Yes.. I was made a fool, she played me, and then left me. She sent her Brother to me who attacked me and broke my windows too)

Gabisile: Ukhohlakele lomntwana Ukhohlakele amncane (She's evil, she's evil at a young age)

Nazulu: Into engiyicabangayo umbulalile ukuthi azothola yonke into yakhe (What I think is that she killed him to take everything of his)

Me: Lihamba kanjani lcala? (How is the case going) Gabisile:

Sisamile (we still waiting)

Makhathini's Aunt spat on the floor..

Nazulu: Ngiyafunga lo Nongcebo wenu ngizomlungisa (I will solve this Nongcebo I swear)

NOVELSGURU.COM

SANDISIWE

I don't know at what time Sole came home last night, he left at around 19:00 said he's going to meet up with Scorpion. Scorpion who happens to be Nongcebo's Brother..

When I was ready to leave for work, I received a call from my Mother. I took a deep breath and answered...

Me: Ma?

Ma: Sandisiwe

Me: Unjani? (how are you)

Ma: I'm not going to say much to you but, we have a family meeting this Saturday. You have to come

Me: What is it about? Ma:

It's about You Me: Ohw

Ma: It's at 11am, please don't disappoint. You have already disappointed us enough

Before I could say anything she hung up..

NONGCEBO

Lindo took Bongeka and I out for shopping that morning. I needed new clothes, all my clothes are left at Kelso's place. I don't want them anymore and I don't want to go there..

I looked at the underwears, I took the lace ones and the bras. Lindo looked at me..

Lindo: Where are those going? Me: I am going to wear them

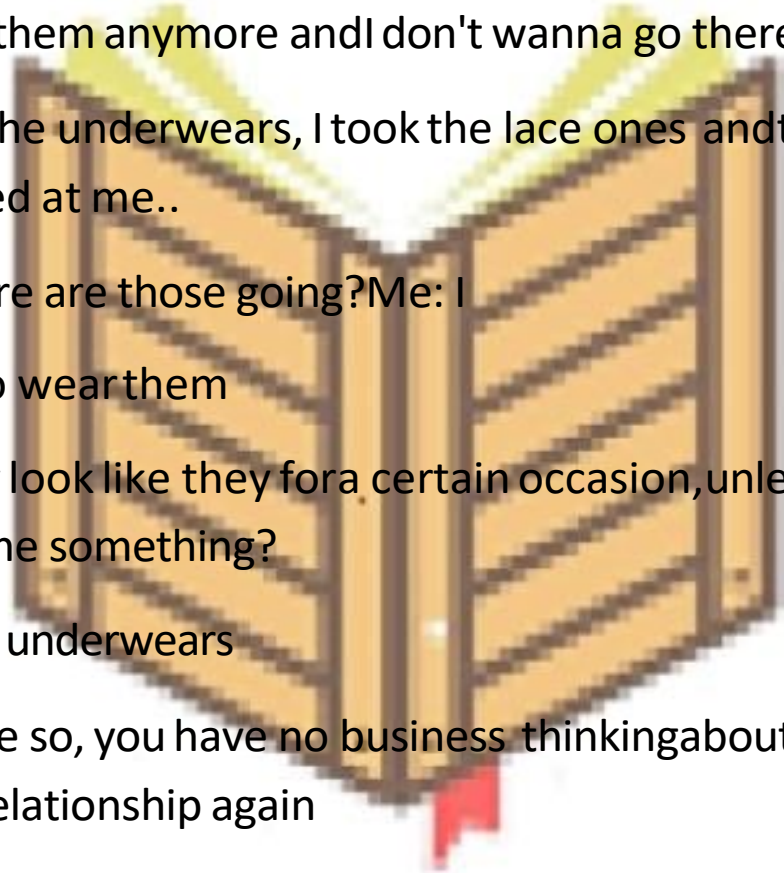
Lindo: They look like they are for a certain occasion, unless you want to tell me something?

Me: It's just underwears

Lindo: I hope so, you have no business thinking about being in a relationship again

Me: Relax that's the last thing on my mind

Lindo: I'm glad.. Let me go and check up on Bongeka



He kissed me on my cheek and walked away.

I texted Gertrude my new number, she inboxed me last night and asked how I was holding up. I have no beef or hate feelings towards her. She was one of the best people that I have ever met and known in my life..

I received a call..Me:

Hello

Gert: I am so proud of youMe:

Thank you

Gert: Sandisiwe's column, your story is intense. I am proud of you for sharing it with everyone

Me: What are you talking about? Gert:

Sandisiwe is writing your storyMe: What?

Gert: You didn't know?Me:

No.. Not at all

Gert: Well that's strange



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Please forward me her numbers on whatsapp I am so confused

Gert: I'll do that now now, I'm sorry. I thought you gave her the go ahead

Me: No I didn't

This was not good, she can't do that..

.

To be continued No

edits

This insert was sponsored by Olga who is asking for you guys to view and refer her website to others. Please click on the link below to check, the website also holds a competition for babies if you wanna enter your baby into the competition. Ages from 0-7 years old, if your baby wins. They will win a certain amount of cash

https://sweetstix.co.za/?source=2e65&refer=true&d=2020-07-08_14-23-35/#entry-form

NOVELSGURU.COM

[08/24, 13:35] : 89

NONGCEBO

What Sandisiwe did was crazy. I was sitting at Spur waiting for Gertrude to meet up with me, Lindo and Bongeka only left when she showed up. She was going to drive me back home, and Lindo made sure to take all her details. I understand why he did that, he literally doesn't trust anyone around me and he had this app where he would track my phone should something happen. If Gertrude was close to Kelso then I wouldn't have met up with her, right now I don't think she would have any sinister intentions towards me..

Gert: I am so happy to see you Me:

I'm happy to see you

She took a tissue and wiped her tears..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You going to make me cry too

Gert: I'm just relieved that you okay, when I heard that you were in and out of hospital because I'm just happy to see you sitting across me and looking well

Me: I'm happy too I'm recovering very well, not always are sweet though. Some other days are bad, some other days are better

Gert: The road to recovery is never easy, one moment you okay the next moment you feel like you can't take it anymore

Me: The nightmares still haunt me, I still can't get a good night sleep and I'm struggling with anxieties

Gert: Do you see a therapist?

Me: Yes.. My next appointment she will be putting me on medication. She mentioned something about tetracycline that it will help with my anxieties and also help me to get a good night sleep

Gert: That's good... That's very good.. Have you spoken to him? Kelso?

NOVELSGURU.COM

I shook my head..

Me: I don't even know what I'll do if I could see him
Gert: Has he tried contacting you?

Me: No.. It's more like he has accepted that I'm gone

She shook her head..

Gert: Don't let your guard down. I don't wanna stress you nor freak you out but.. He's going to come for you. When I was still with his father he was very abusive, I wanted to walk away and he knew how much I loved my kids. So he didn't want me to take them, the first time I tried he found me and almost killed me. Then I left them, told myself that if I can have him behind bars then it'll be easier but that was only the beginning. Ken ended up being in a gang and told me that if I take them, he will send the gang to me and they will kill me so I left them with their Grandmother. He made it clear he didn't want me to have a relationship with them, and to get to me by turning him in. He turned my kids against me... You know the last time I spoke to

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso, I said a lot of hurtful things to him because I wanted him to hate me more so that we don't end up fixing things and becoming close because Ken was going to come after me and my family

Me: Kelso is old enough to make his own decisions now

Gert: Kelso and I being close will result into him having to choose between me and Ken, he will never choose me. He doesn't know me, all he knows about me is that I abandoned him and his sister.

That's all he knows..

Me: I was united with my family now after so long. It was the best thing that has ever happened to me.

Kelso grew up with anger and hate, those are the only emotions he knows. His love is toxic, he loves the way that love was shown to him. He can't differentiate between toxic love and true love before me there was Power and he ruined her too.. He doesn't know how to love because he never experienced love from his parents. His father sounds toxic and he's probably the reason why Kelso is like this. His father never showed him love,

NOVELSGURU.COM

his father taught him to be a bastard She

nodded...

Me: You should try to reach out to him and try to fix things, trust me growing up without a Parent thinking that you were abandoned is the most heartbreaking thing, everyday you question yourself why you were not good enough for your mother to love you. You blame yourself everyday, you question and answer yourself

Gert: I will try

Me: Only you can help him become a better man for the next woman

Gert: I'm glad you said that, I don't want you going back to him

Me: I am never going back there, he can come back crying and kissing the ground but I will never go back there. Kelso broke me in ways that I was never broken before, things that he did to me were inhumane. Truthfully speaking I don't think I'll ever be in a relationship ever again, I don't see Men the same way again. Two men showed me hell, If I can

NOVELSGURU.COM

consider being in a relationship and I get broken again I will never recover. I will die. Kelso broke me for all the guys out there, right now I'm focusing on getting better fixing the pieces of my broken mental state. I wanna be mentally ready when I go to varsity, I wanna rebuild my confidence again, learn to love myself more. Self love is important, once you love yourself you will know your worth and never allow yourself to be treated less than what you deserve. I was in two broken relationships because I was searching for something that I never experienced. Love from my family and in turn I search for it in the wrong places. Now I have a family and for as long as they still here I wanna work on myself

She stretched out her hand and held mine..

Gert: Have you thought about being a social worker? I think you will enjoy it

Me: I really don't know what I want to study

Gert: Research about careers where you help people like being a health worker I think you will do

NOVELSGURU.COM

good. A broken heart, healing other broken hearts
Me: I'll do that

Gert: I'll also try and see where you can apply, next year you must go back to school

Me: That's the whole plan Gert:

I'm very proud of you
Me: Thank you

SOLE

What I love about Wilsonia is that she will never tell Sandisiwe what we did last night. She understands me very well and if she wants my attention, she will get it in the most messed up way. Like the chocolate situation, she knew that I was the only one who was going to understand the message. I doubt that she poisoned them, she wanted me to think that she did. I still don't understand why we never worked out, she is crazy in her own way and if we gave it a chance we could've made a killer

couple..

Last night was the best sex of my life, I still don't know how she manages to make one keep on begging for more. She's very good in bed, we consider each other's fantasies and we make sure we satisfy each other very well. Unfortunately my Son was asleep when I felt, I don't even think that was about meeting my son, I think she wanted a fuck. Speaking of the devil she sent me a whatsapp video of herself laying on the table with her legs wide open and masturbating. She worked that vibrator in her mouth before buying it deep inside her wet hole. Looking at that turned me on, it turned me on so bad that my dick was screaming for mercy inside my sweat pants. I felt like having her right now, I wanted her so bad I found myself jerking off to her that juicy pink well shaved pussy.. That was dripping wet with her wetness...

SIPHOSETHU (THE NURSE)

NOVELSGURU.COM

The doorbell kept on ringing..Me:

I'm coming

I tied my robe...

Me: I'm coming!

I went to open and it was Lindokuhke. I thought he was playing when he called and asked me for my address, didn't think he was actually going to show up at my doorstep..

Me: You actually came

He walked in and I closed the door, I had just taken a bath and I was preparing to go to sleep. I was tired from my nightshift and I'm grateful that from tomorrow I'm off for the next 7 days...

Without saying anything he pinned me against the door..

He leaned over and spoke right close to my lips with his knee in between my legs..

Him: Let's understand each other. I want you and I

think you want me, so I am not going to play cat and mouse with you. We adults and we know very well where this is going to lead, let's cut the crap and save ourselves 5 dates before we actually make out. What's going to happen now I'm going to fuck you

He forced his finger inside my mouth..

Him: I'm going to fuck you so hard I wanna hear you scream a little when you pee in the toilet, I want you to wake up tomorrow morning tired and in pain then go to the pharmacy to get something for the pain.

It's going to burn so bad that you will never think that you will have sex again whilst we both know that you will be calling me endless

He moved his finger from my mouth all the way down to my neck, then my chest..

Him: I'm going to eat your pussy that I wanna taste your salty cum, I wanna eat your pussy out in a way that you have never experienced before

He untied my robe.. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: Then the relationship would've started.. I will always be here to fuck you until you come to my

house and bring that pussy of yours. I understand since you a Nurse you know a lot about health more than anyone else and I won't fuck you with a condom and I hope you will decide on your own if you wanna prevent from hereon or we going to have a lot of mini Me's and you running around the house. If you positive then ohw wel I'm a scorpion, taking risks is my middle name

He picked me up and put me on the counter, then he took off my robe and put my legs on his shoulders. I put my hands on the counter and laid back. His tongue came in contact with my pussy. He moved his hand and parted my pussy lips with his fingers then he started working me without me saying anything. He moved his hands to my butt and picked me up, he was so strong to actually hold my weight. He moved to the door and pinned me against it with my hands on his head and my legs over his shoulders. His hands were still holding on tightly to my butt...

BANZA

NOVELSGURU.COM

My father did the unthinkable. Since the Senior pastor went on vacation he was the one relieving him of his duties..

I am not the one to bash on churches but my father's church is shit. The senior pastor does nothing but take offerings and tithe then go on expensive holidays, buy an expensive car, provide for his family and buy himself expensive suits. The congregation is so blinded, they can't see through his fakeness. They literally buy blessings and miracles from people that are paid to give out false testimonies. The church has about 300 members now and they also have another branch in North west, they looking to open more branches..

My father since he's not working he gets an income of 8-10k a month just for being a junior pastor, last month was his first time getting his income and the Pastor gave him his old Mercedes benz. Since my mother is not feeling well, Dad has moved in some

NOVELSGURU.COM

woman from church who will be doing all the cleaning, cooking, and washing my Dad's clothes. Literally attending to my father's needs. She is way younger than my Mother. I think she is in his late 20s and my father is 55. Her family has approved for her to stay with us and so did the church. This is not going to end well for my Mother, I can already see it..

To be continued

edits

[08/24, 13:36] : 90

SANDISIWE

Sole fetched me later on during the day from work and took me out for lunch. I appreciated him doing that seeing that we don't spend much time together lately because we are very busy people. I'm busy at work when I get home I'm on the MacBook typing

NOVELSGURU.COM

chapters for my stories and he goes about his business..

He opened the chair for me..Me: My

thank you..

He kissed me on my neck whilst rubbing my tummy..

Sole: You welcome

He went and sat down across me, we were already given the Menu at the door and our waiter said he will attend to us when we are ready to order something..

Me: This is good seeing that we are always busy

Sole: Our schedules clash that's why I thought it would be better if you know quit your job then we would spend much time together

Me: You wish

Sole: Who said wishes can't come true? I mean I'm home during the day and you not. When you come back you are always focused on your writing then at night I have to dash out when I come back you are already sleeping we don't get much action lately

NOVELSGURU.COM

What he was saying was true but there's no way I'm giving up my job to stay at home.

Me: My Mother called they having a meeting this coming weekend, I have to attend it

Sole: Are you sure it's a good idea? I don't want them stressing you and the baby out

Me: I think you should come so we can set the record straight

Sole: I really don't wanna impose I think you should go alone and here what they say. Your father might view it as disrespect if I show up at his house uninvited

Me: That's true though

The waiter came to get our orders..

NONGCEBO

Gertrude drove me back home after our meeting, I really had a great time with her as always. A wave



of sadness visited me as I was fitting my clothes. Looking at my body in the mirror was not exciting. My nipple was badly injured that they had to cut it off and they stitched me, all those marks looked like my skin was burnt. I was two toned, they were brown and didn't look well with my light skin. I probably will never be able to wear a bikini from hereon nor a t-shirt that's revealing. He marked me, and these scars will always remind me of the trauma that I suffered at his hands. I even dated back to everything that happened, how he bit my nipple senseless, how he poured detol and domestoes then scrubbed my body. How he left me bleeding on the floor and didn't even care, how he chained me like an animal. My neck still has the marks. I ran my hand on my neck as I pictured him strangling me with that chain. I grabbed my skin hoping that it would peel off so I don't get to see this part of myself everyday. I took the lamp that was by the door and hit the mirror whilst screaming..Me: I hate you!! I hate you!!

Why did he have to do this to me? Why did it have to

NOVELSGURU.COM

be me??

Me: IHATE YOU!!!!

The door opened and Sli made her way in...Sli:

Nongcebo

Me: I hate him! (crying)

I dropped what was left of the lamp and sank down to the floor..

Sli knelt down next to me and hugged me..Sli: It's okay... It's okay..

SIPHOSETHU (THE NURSE)

Lindo wasn't lying when he said he was going to fuck me. This was my first time experiencing roughsex and I've always viewed it from a bad perspective but he made it enjoyable somehow. I don't know how but it was good, it was very good..

NOVELSGURU.COM

He had all the energy invested in him from his male hormone to carry out this session to the best of his abilities. After the first round I told myself that maybe we will rest, yes we did for a couple of minutes then went again, and again. We started from the kitchen, to the lounge and ended in the bedroom. My pussy was screaming fire and at the same time it wanted more of him. I was taken by the tattoo of a scorpion on his right breast, another one on his shoulder and his belly button. The one on his right breast, underneath it was the number "28". Don't know what it meant but if he tattooed it then it means something to him.. My legs were locking him tightly deep inside of me, this round I thought he was going to pass out. He kept on bringing me back with a kiss but I was done, I was dead tired and I wanted to rest.. My wish was realized and he came inside of me, if he dragged it any longer I wasn't even going to have a voice left..

Both his hands brushed my hair back as he was still inside of me. He gave me one last kiss and got off me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Come here

With whatever strength I had in me, I got on top of him then he wrapped his arms around me gently squeezing and brushing my ass as I passed out on top of him..

KELSO

Power hasn't brought my Son at home in a very long time. No matter how much I called her she ignored my calls, so I decided to stop by at her place..

She stood at the door and folded her arms..Power:

May I help you?

She gave me all the attitude that she could draw up..Me: I am here to see my Son

Power: Ohw shame, you no longer have a Son

Me: Power I don't have time for your games I want to see my Son!

NOVELSGURU.COM

Power: You don't have a Son Kelso, Hakeem akana Baba uzihlelele uBoyza wami (Hakeem doesn't have a father)

I put my hand around her neck and pushed her back inside the house..

Power: Maa!

She tried to hit my hand off..Me:

Where is my Son?

Her Mother showed up from the living room holding a Machete..

Her: Hit her.. Ohh please hit her and see what I am made of

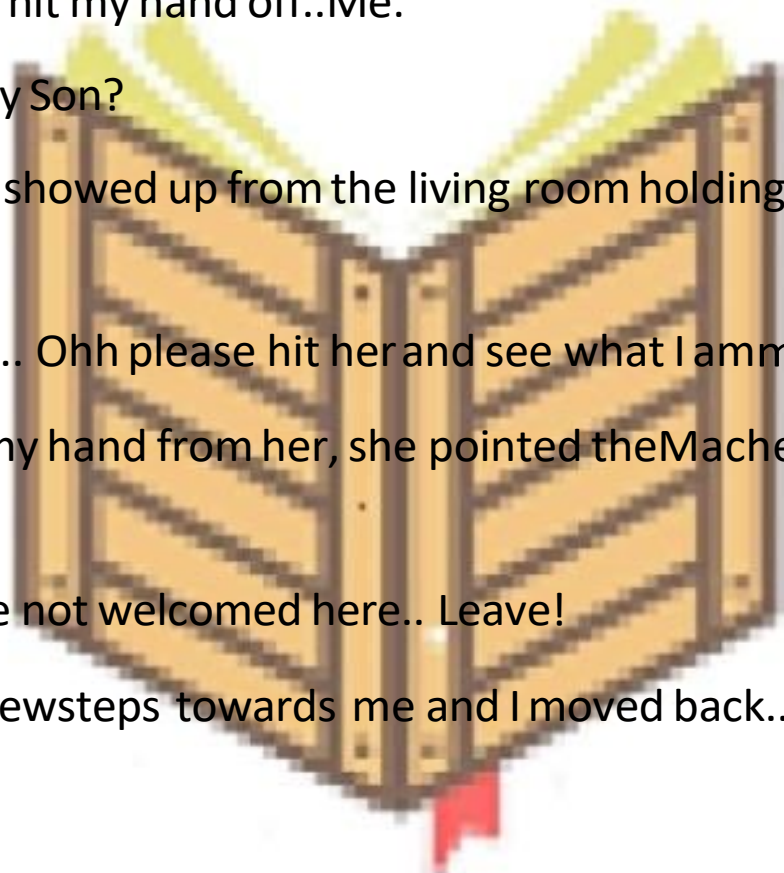
I removed my hand from her, she pointed the Machete at me..

Her: You are not welcomed here.. Leave!

She took a few steps towards me and I moved back..Her: Ayiye!!

(Leave)

She literally chased me out of her house with the Machete all the way to the gate, that I tripped and



fel .. She picked up the stones that were laying around and threw them at me..

Her: Ungaphinde ubeke inyawo lakho la (don't ever sat your foot here)

GAVENOR KHUMALO

I looked at him, he looked like he was ready to pass out. His hands were tied all the way up to the ceiling. He was naked, wet and bleeding. He had marks from enduring being whooped with a cable. His left eye was shut.

He couldn't even depend on his legs to balance him, they betrayed him by getting tired and going all soft on him. He has been in this position since from 6am this morning.

He was in solitary confinement..

Me: You bringing drugs into my prison Ken?

He was also bleeding through his mouth, with his lower lip split..

NOVELSGURU.COM

I took the chair and sat down..

Me: You are running a drug syndicate in my Prison? I saw him
pissing on himself...

I had him framed, one of the guards planted cocaine under his
pillow. We "found" it after doing a random search yesterday.
He will be here for the next few weeks, I want him tortured
everyday. This is the man whose son tortured and broke my
daughter..

I wasn't playing when I said I was coming for them...

BANZA

The lady's name is Nomzamo. She was taking down the laundry
from the washing line as I walked into the yard. She was wearing
a skirt, a shirt, flat shoes and a doek.

Her: "Ha le phirimileO

nea boroko,

NOVELSGURU.COM

Ke lala ke mo tshepile,
Ntate ya lerato"

Me: Hi

Nom: Sawubona Banele

I passed her and made my way into the house. It was clean, cleaner than how my Mother cleans it. I made my way to the lounge where my Mother was watching TV.

Me: Unjani? (how are you)

Ma: Ngiyaphila unjani? (I'm well how are you) Me:

Ngiyaphila (I'm well)

I gave her the R300

Ma: Ngiyabonga (Thank you)

She called me and asked me for money so that she could buy toiletries. Dad is making money now, why isn't he buying his wife toiletries?

Me: Will you be able to go to the mall? Ma:

Ngizozama (I will try)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: If you can't, let me know I'll drive you Ma: Hai

I'll take a taxi don't worry

I gave her another R50 for the taxi fare.. Me: I

have to go back to work

Ma: Ngiyabonga (Thank you)

I have decided to stay out of her business, she doesn't want to listen to me so the best way is to just let her be.. She will probably come back to her senses on her own...

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by "Ntokozo" she's asking for you guys to follow her on Instagram. Her handle is "@nguntokozoh_katshana"

Please follow her [08/

24, 13:36]

: 91

NOVELSGURU.COM

KELSO

Later on just as I was preparing to go and meet up with Stalin and Cosa Nastro, I had an unusual visitor. It was Gertrude. I let her in

Me: I'm not in the mood Gertrude what do you want? She was holding a box with her..

Gert: Good evening Kelso Me:

What do you want?

Gert: I know that the last time we spoke, things didn't go very well

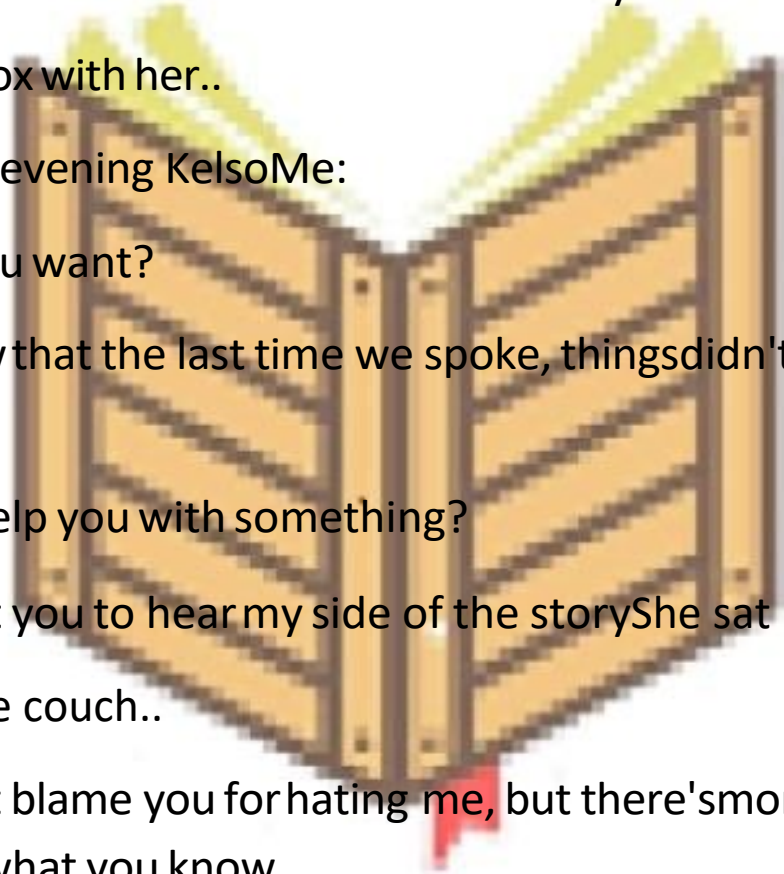
Me: Can I help you with something?

Gert: I want you to hear my side of the story She sat down on the couch..

Gert: I don't blame you for hating me, but there's more to the story than what you know

I sat on the arm rest of the couch.. Gert:

Your father abused me



NOVELSGURU.COM

I chuckled..

She stood up and took off her t-shirt, she threw it on the couch and turned around..

Gert: I've been living with these scars for years She went back and sat down..

Gert: Ken is not who you think he is I gave her my attention..

Gert: When I had enough of the abuse, I walked away with you and Takie but unfortunately he found me and brought me back. He beat me senseless, told me if I thought of running away again. He's going to kill me. I decided that if I could turn him in then I would be rid of him and it would be easier to take my kids. I turned him in but unfortunately it wasn't long until he sent his people, told me he would kill me if I take you and Takie with. Then I had to leave you guys behind with your Grandmother. I kept my distance for all these years because I didn't want to go against him, he didn't want me anywhere you or Takie. That day at the Police station I pushed you away more further because there was never

going to be a relationship between us, Ken would never allow it.. I am sure that when you go to Takie's grave you find a flower, I always visit her grave to put a flower and apologize. I wish I could've fought for you guys to the grave. These are the letters he used to send me from jail, if you don't believe me I want you to read them and see him for who he truly is

She got up from the couch and wore her shirt..

Gert: If you wanna talk you know where to find me...I love you Kelso, you are my Son. If I didn't love you, I would've aborted you. I hope you will forgive me.

I'm truly sorry

NONGCEBO

Lindo knocked once at the door and he made his way in... He walked up to my bed and sat next to me..

Lindo: Heard you had an emotional moment earlier

NOVELSGURU.COM

on

Me: I'm fine now

Lindo: What happened?

Me: Nothing real y... J ust one of those days

Lindo: You know you can call me anytime when you not okay

Me: I know

Lindo: What is it that you want? If you can say I can put a bullet on him I'd be happy too, just say so

Me: As much as that sounds tempting but... Even if he dies, it's not going to make any difference to me. The damage is already done

Lindo: Do you know why I'm keeping him alive? Me:

Why?

Lindo: I want him to witness you getting better. Best revenge you can have on someone who broke you, is living your best life when he thinks that you won't be able to make it without him

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm trying but it's difficult... I didn't know that

healing can be this difficult

Lindo: Healing takes time... You just have to be patient and concentrate on something positive, something that makes sense to you right now

Me: I was talking to Gert about going to school next year, actually that's the current positive thing that I'm looking forward to right now

Lindo: That's good.. What do you wanna study?

Me: I was reading about Social work, it sounds interesting

Lindo: Then we will make it happen, just give me a list of varsities that you prefer and I'll look into it how about that?

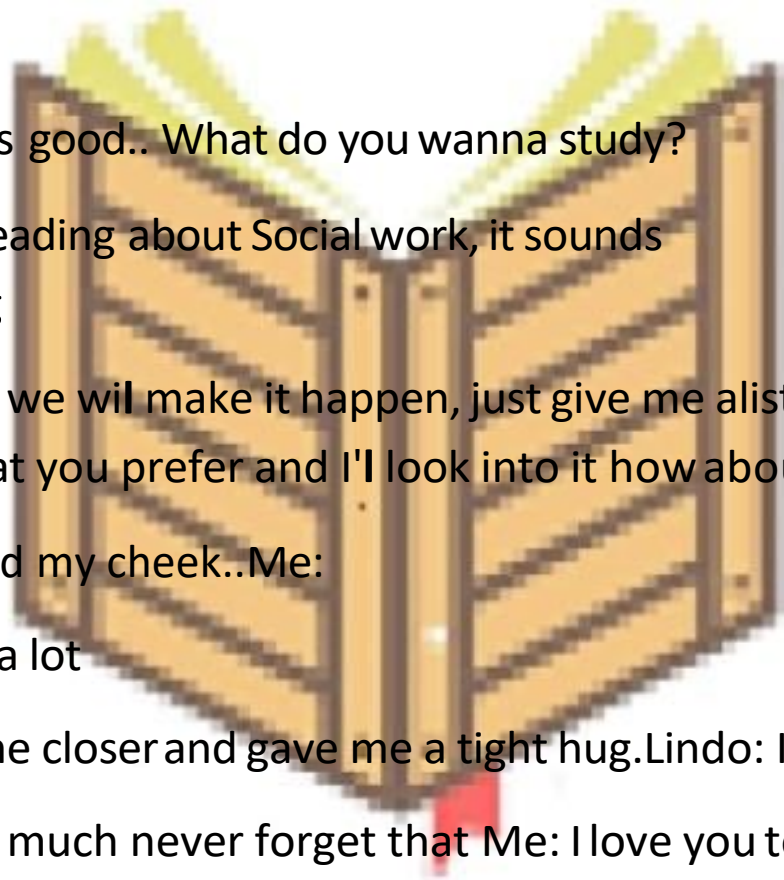
He squeezed my cheek..Me:

I'd like that a lot

He pulled me closer and gave me a tight hug.Lindo: I

love you so much never forget that Me: I love you too

Lindo: Try and get some sleep



Me: Okay

Lindo: A lullaby? Me:

No I'm okay

Lindo: "I know this girl She's

my baby Sis And it's past

her bed T-I-M-E

She goes to sleep

And she can just dream, and not have to be stuck in this house with me.." (singing)

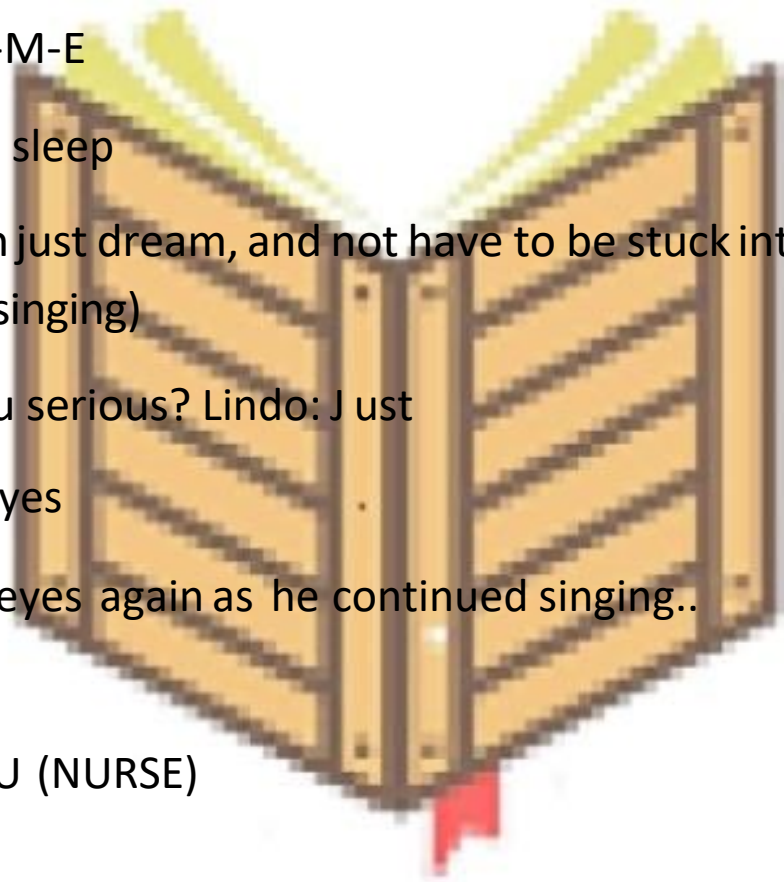
Me: Are you serious? Lindo: J ust

close your eyes

I closed my eyes again as he continued singing..

SIPHOSETHU (NURSE)

I woke up from my peaceful rest and Lindo was



gone. Though he didn't even say anything, but when I walked to the kitchen. He had cooked, literally cooked. There was a bul et on the kitchen counter with a note.

I read the note:

"If you stop getting one of those, then be very worried. I live by a bul et, and every bul et sent to you everyday will guarantee you that I'm okay. If a week passes by without you getting a bul et, know that I died by a bul et"

Normal guys will leave you a rose, a box of chocolates or something. Not a bul et, but it was sweet though. He is different and I like that, does things in his own way..

MANTO

I gave him the plate..

Banza: Thank you

I work at Capitec Bank as a consultant. I didn't go



NOVELSGURU.COM

for a car right away, I decided to fix my Grandmother's house first. When I was done with that part, I bought myself a 3 room house at some location. Then after I got a car. The previous owner of the house allowed me to pay in instalments for 6 months, when I was done paying for the house I got myself a car. I have two little sisters, we were all raised by my Grandmother after the death of our mother. My father is in the picture but he is married and we do keep in contact every now and then..

Banza and I we in a relationship but we haven't slept together as yet. My ancestors have approved of him yes, but he must do right by me and them.

He has to pay lobola first for my ancestors to fully accept him and also so that he can introduce me to his ancestors. My ancestors aren't the ones to toy with, they very protective over me. He can't even spend a night here. That's how serious the situation is. Call me old fashioned young as I am but I prefer it that way, I prefer things done accordingly. He can't even take me to his house, not until he is ready

to pay lobola then he can take me and introduce me to his family. This is a test, a test I'm vouching for him to pass..

He just visits me and leaves later on..

KELSO

By the time that I was on the 3rd letter, tears streamed down. I misjudged her...

The letters weren't fake at all, I know my father's handwriting very well. So this bastard is the reason why my mother abandoned us, he's the reason why Takie decided to turn to drugs. Things that he was saying on the letters were brutal, which made me realize that this is the same shit I've done to Nongcebo. I am my father's Son..

Speaking of Takie I took my phone and called off the hit on my step sister, I almost punished an innocent child, robbed a woman of her daughter because of my father's sins. I'll never forgive him....

NOVELSGURU.COM

GAVENOR KHUMALO

I took my jacket when I heard a knock at the door..Me: Come in

Warden: Sir sorry to disturb you Me: I was going home, what is it?Warden:

Ken Sir.. He is dead

I looked at him..

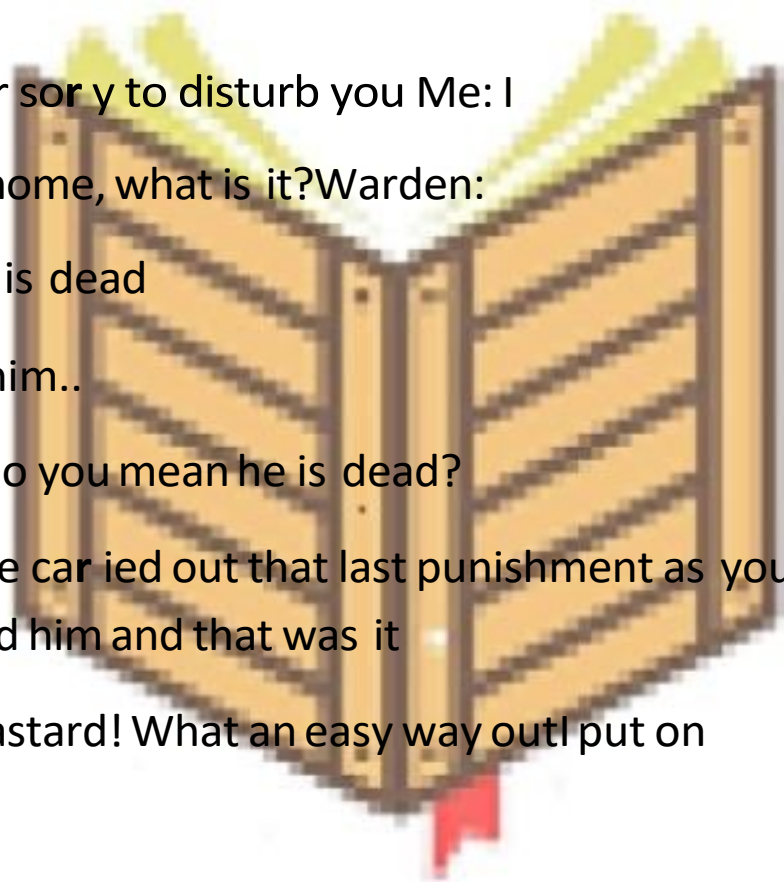
Me: What do you mean he is dead?

Warden: We carried out that last punishment as you said, we electrocuted him and that was it

Me: That bastard! What an easy way out I put on my jacket...

Me: Oh well ... That's sad for me because I wanted him to witness when I go after his Son, I guess he will witness from hell

Warden: Yes Sir



Me: I will personally deliver the news tomorrow to his family,
just make sure that he is dead dead dead

Warden: Yes Sir He

walked out.. Me: What

a shame

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:37] : 92

SANDISIWE

Nongcebo texted me that she wants us to meet, I texted her
back and told her the time.

I wasn't feeling well today, so I skipped out on work. Sole was not
around, said there's a few things that he wants to go out and fix.
So my cousin Takie came around, it's been a minute since I last
saw her. She was out of the country...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Takie: Here you go Me:

Thank you

I took the bowl of tomato soup from her.. Takie: So you saying you have met him?

Me: Yes Kelso is Sole's best friend or at least was Takie: I checked him on Facebook, he is hot

Me: Aunty has good genes

Takie: He looks like Kelo yes but he's hotter than brother of mine

Me: So you not upset? That Aunty didn't tel you about him?

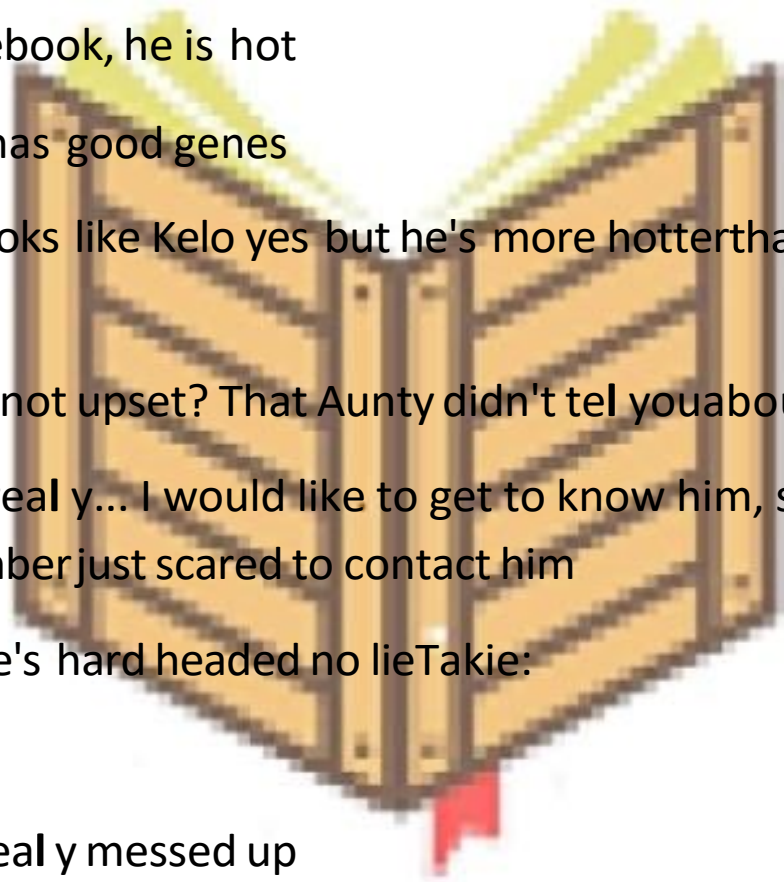
Takie: Not real y... I would like to get to know him, she gave me his number just scared to contact him

Me: Yena he's hard headed no lie Takie:

So I heard

Me: He is real y messed up

Takie: I don't care he's my Brother I really want to get to know him



Me: Well then contact him and see
Takie: I'll try

NONGCEBO

This morning I was having a session with my psychologist. He was starting me on medication, especially after I told him about yesterday's incident of me bashing my mirror. The medication she put me on was known as "sertraline". Antidepressants that will help manage my PTSD and Anxiety. She also added more sessions, I'll be seeing him at least 4 times a week so he can see how I'll be responding to the medication...

He is Indian, Dr Khatri.. We were talking about me and the conversation moved from what we were talking about, to talking about Bollywood movies. I used to love those movies, would be the only thing I watch when I was still living with Makhathini. Don't even get me started on their Series..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I never knew you were a big fan

Me: Oom Shanti Oom was my favorite movie
Him: I used to like it

Me: And my favorite series was Saath Saath

He is 60 years old and has been a psychologist for years now. He comes off highly recommended..

Him: You mentioned something about your friend writing about what happened to you

Me: That's true

Him: Have you read the column?
Me: Not yet

Him: Why?

Me: I don't wanna visit that past
Him: Are you scared?

Me: I don't wanna be reminded on what happened, I don't wanna visit those memories

NOVELSGURU.COM

KELSO

This morning we were visited by Gavenor Khumalo, he had come to tel us that my father passed on yesterday. They found him in Solitary confinement dead, no explanation, no nothing. He just died..

Grams: How does someone just die in solitary confinement?

Him: It happens a lot, most inmates commit suicide there because they left alone with their thoughts for a very long time He kept his eyes on me, it wasn't a pretty look..

Grams: My Son would never commit suicide, Ken has been in jail for a long time.. He wouldn't kill himself now

Him: I'm sor y.. I real y don't know what to tel you Grams:

Excuse me

She got up and left the room..(Silence)

Him: I thought you would be distraught

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: People die everyday, I knew that my Father waseventual y going to die too. It was quicker than I anticipated and way too easy. He was not a man who was weak

Him: Do you know who I am?

Me: You introduced yourself as GavenorKhumaloHim: I am Nongcebo's Father

I looked at him..

Him: Please take a good look at me because I am the man who is responsible for your father's death, the man who almost ruined my Son's life. Now I amgoing to ruin the boy who ruined my Daughter's life

Me: I am not going to change how you feel, and no amount of sor y wil undo what I did to your Daughter. I wish for nothing but to go back in time and do things differently, but I can't. From hereon I promise you that I will never touch your Daughternorgo anywhere close to her, but a man like you. I can see that you don't let things slide easily. Your Daughter is an amazing person, she's the best woman that I have met in my whole entire life. I

NOVELSGURU.COM

wish I had treated her better, and I am deeply sorry for everything that I have done to her. But that's not enough for you, if making my life difficult will be satisfying to you then I shall not stop you. We all have to pay for our sins one way or another.

I stood up..

Me: Thank you for letting us know about my Father, have a good day Sir

I walked out...

SOLE

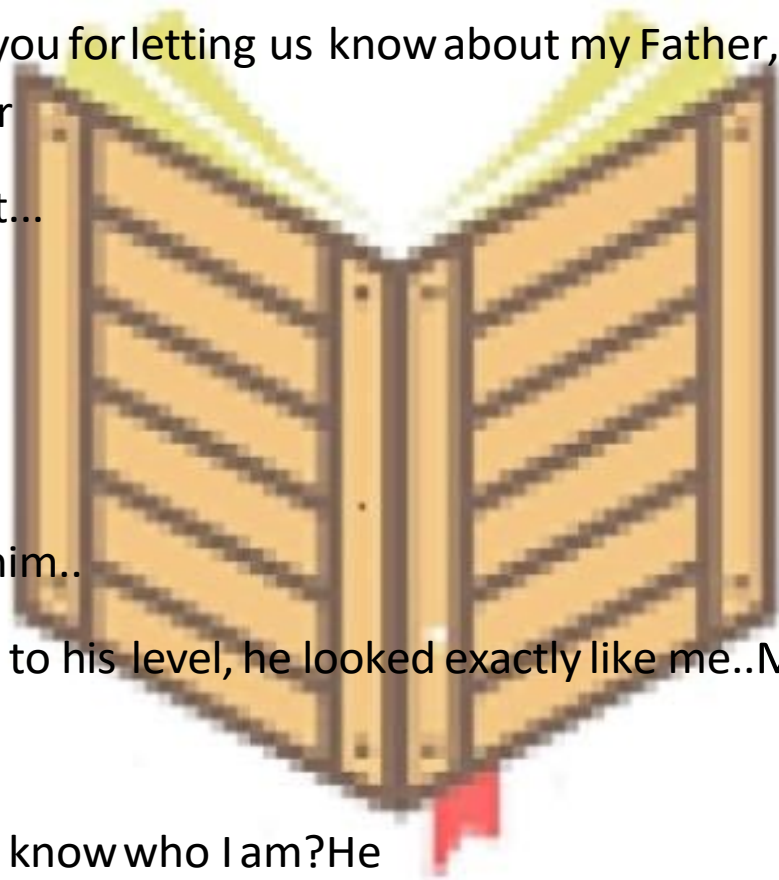
I looked at him..

I bent down to his level, he looked exactly like me.. Me: Hi

Him: Hi

Me: Do you know who I am? He

noded..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Who am I?

He looked at his mother, Wilsonia nodded..Him:

Daddy

Me: What have you heard? He

shrugged his shoulders..

Me: Your Mom has asked me to take you to preschool today, do you allow?

He didn't say anything..Wilsonia:

Bokkie

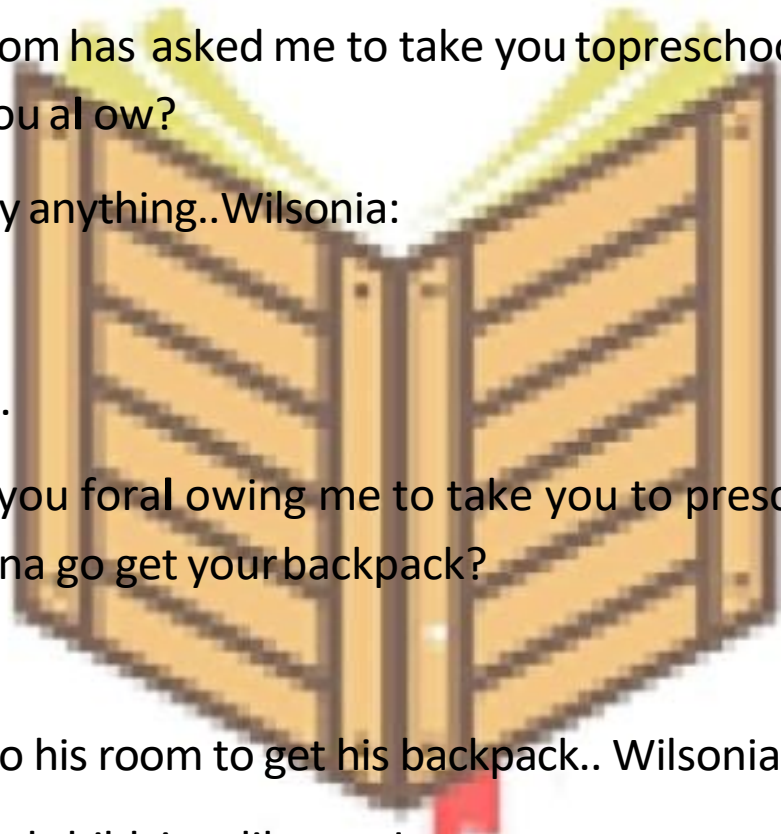
He nodded..

Me: Thank you for allowing me to take you to preschool, do you wanna go get your backpack?

Him: Okay

He walked to his room to get his backpack.. Wilsonia: He is a very reserved child, just like you got up..

Wilsonia: He doesn't say much unless it's required of him to sa-



I turned around and kissed her..

Wilsonia: Wow that was an unexpected turn of events

Me: I would like to get to know him, spend more time with him

Wilsonia: It's Friday so you can have him for the weekend, can I trust her with my Son?

Me: Sandisiwe is a good woman, she would never mistreat him

Wilsonia: I hope so.. Plus I'm going to spend the weekend with my girls so I will tell the Nanny not to come anymore

I kissed her again..Me:

Thank you

Wilsonia: Just be here at 16:00 to get him Me: I will

.. I promise

BANZA

NOVELSGURU.COM



I was running a bit late today, my father had called a meeting. We were all sitting in the living room waiting for him to talk..

Dad: I won't be long, I'll get straight to the point I looked at the time..

Dad: I have decided on a divorce That was unexpected..

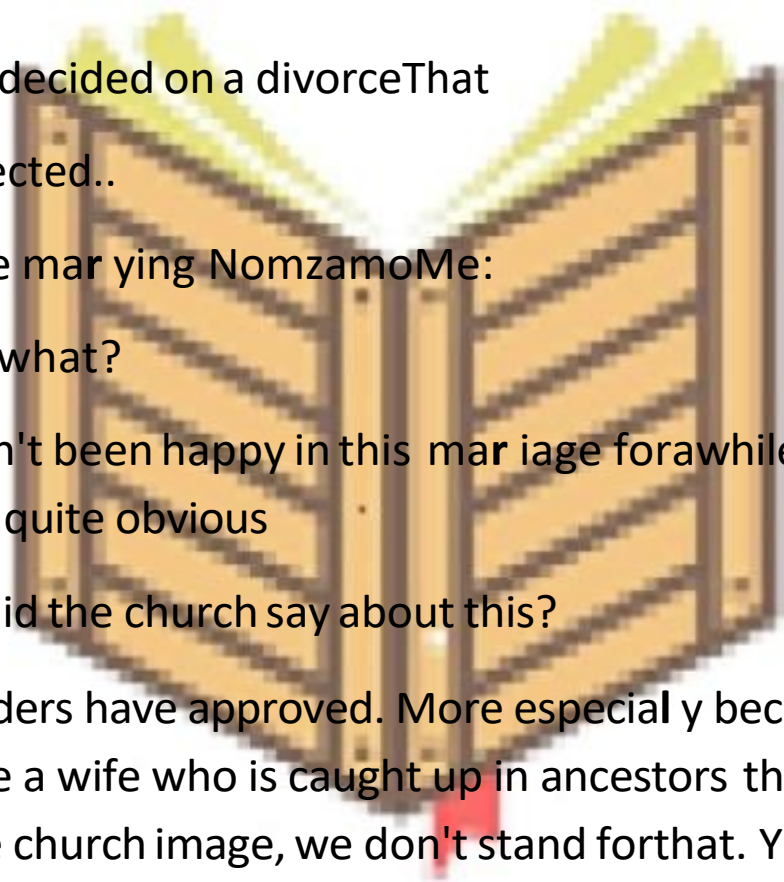
Dad: I will be marrying Nomzamo Me:

Excuse me what?

Dad: I haven't been happy in this marriage for a while now, I think it was quite obvious

Me: What did the church say about this?

Dad: The elders have approved. More especially because I cannot have a wife who is caught up in ancestors that's not good for the church image, we don't stand for that. Your mother has been sick, she can't even attend to simple duties like cleaning and cooking. After you she was no longer able to



conceive anymore, she's always sick to even show up at church. I am a junior pastor now I need my wife with me at all times. So with that being said Nomzamo will move into the main bedroom, I'm only giving you two a few days to find a place and leave my house

Me: Am I hearing you right? You putting your family out on the streets?

Dad: You old Banza, you should've long moved out. Your peers have good jobs, they married, they have houses. You have been stuck as a taxi driver for years.. This curse from your mother's family is deeper than I thought, so please I don't want to be apart of it anymore... I want both of you to leave my house

He looked at Nomzamo..

Dad: Let's go to the mall, I want to buy you new clothes and everything else that you need

.

To be continued

NOVELSGURU.COM

This insert was sponsored by Treasure, she's asking you Beloved to visit her stories on Visionarywritings and also increase her views. Let's see how many views we can score her which will unlock a bonus insert later..

Link:

https://visionarywritings.com/author/3906?fbclid=IwAR2BhpClwmV9vOsMNd4myzxYllKy_t9N3QQunkhBCcqp5RONxuoWec4x1LY

[08/24, 13:37] : 93

SANDISIWE

Nongcebo stopped by at my place, my cousin was already gone. She was accompanied by this good looking gentleman..

Nongcebo: This is my Brother Lindo but they call him Scorpion

Me: Oh so this is Scorpion

NOVELSGURU.COM

He raised up his eyebrow...

Me: I've heard a lot about you, from SoleHim:

Ohwit makes sense

Me: Nice to finally meet the man who keeps my boyfriend away from home most nights

He looked at Nongcebo...

Scorpion: This is starting to get awkward for me, you'll call me when you done I'll come and get you

Nongcebo: Okay

He arched her back and planted kisses on her cheek..

Nongcebo: Ohh my! This is why I wanted to take an Uber

Scorpion: Yeah I love you too bunnyHe

turned to me..

Scorpion: It was nice meeting you

He took my hand and kissed it, I got goose bumps..Me:

Likewise

NOVELSGURU.COM

He turned and walked up to the doorslightlypushing
Nongcebo out of the way..

Nongcebo: You are so childish Scorpion: You
are standing in the wayNongcebo: Bye

Scorpion

He gave her a serious look..

Nongcebo: Bye Lindo

He walked out and closed the door, I looked at her..Nongcebo:

Don't start

Me: Your Brother is very charming

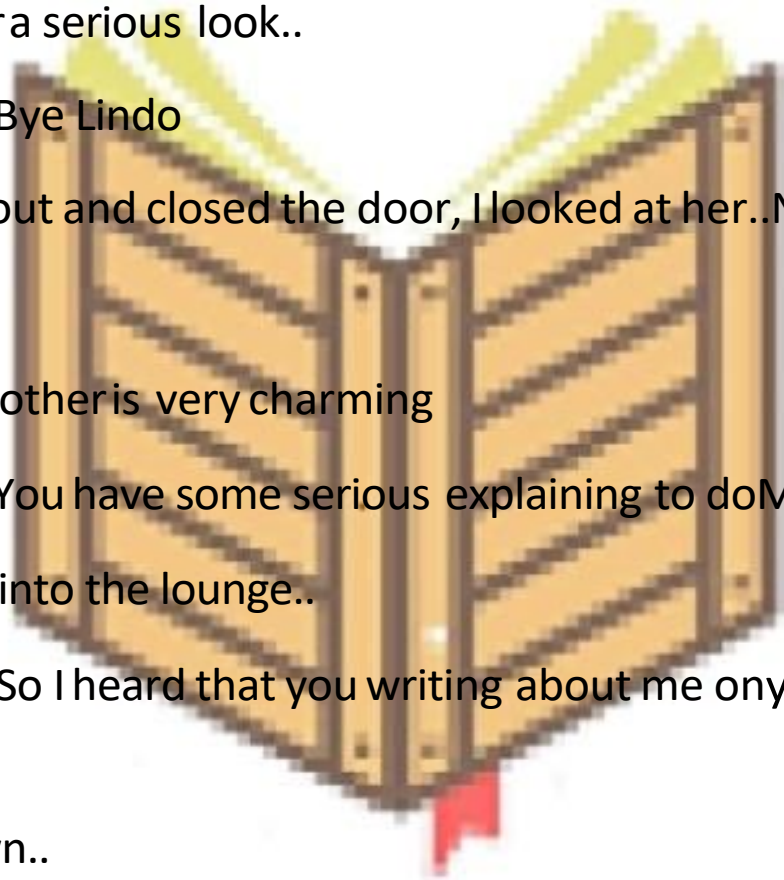
Nongcebo: You have some serious explaining to doMissy

We walked into the lounge..

Nongcebo: So I heard that you writing about me on your
column

We sat down..

Me: I thought that I could share your story to help other
women out there who are in your shoes



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nongcebo: It's not about you writing about me, it's the fact that you didn't talk to me first

Me: I deeply apologize for that hence real names were not mentioned. You still right though I should've asked first, I'm sorry

Nongcebo: So now we even, I take it you were revenging on me for answering your phone

I laughed..

Me: I even forgot about that... You look good

Nongcebo: I'm getting there

Me: I'm truly sorry about what happened to you, now a woman deserves to go through that

Nongcebo: It's life like what can we say

Me: Very true, we should plan a girl's trip I miss you Nongcebo:

We should some time



KELSO

NOVELSGURU.COM

I don't know what happened but I found myself walking into Gertrude's office..

Assistant: Mrs Gxaba your Son is here to see you She looked at me..

Gert: Okay thank you

Assistant: Should I bring you guys coffee? Gert: No it's fine.. Thank you

The Assistant walked out, Gertrude looked at me for a few seconds..

Gert: Whats wrong? Me:

Ken is dead

She got up from her chair.. Gert: What happened?

Me: He died in solitary confinement Gert:

I... Ken is dead

I sat down..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Bastard died before I could even confront him



Gert: You read the letters?Me:

Yes

She also sat down..

Me: I'm sor y you went through al that

Gert: I'm just glad everything is out in the openMe: Ya
final y

Gert: Would you like to come overfordinnertonight?Me: I
don't know

Gert: If it's soon, it's okay Me: I
don't wanna impose Gert: I
understand

Takeie walked in I recognize her from her Instagram photos..

Takeie: Good Morning

Gert: Morning Baby

Takeie: I was just in the neighborhood thought I should
stop by and greet

NOVELSGURU.COM



Gert: I'm glad you came through
She looked at me..

Gert: Remember I told you about Kelso my other Son?

Takie: Yes

Gert: Well this is Kelso
stood up..

Gert: Kelso this is my Daughter Takie
Me: It's nice to meet you

I stretched out my hand to her, she looked at it and then hugged me...

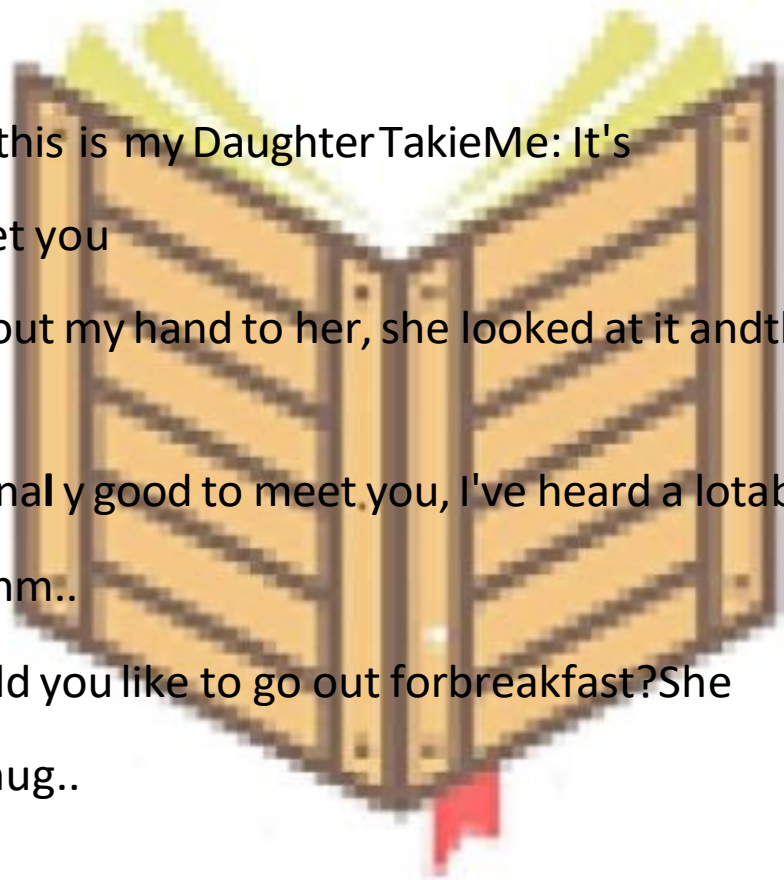
Takie: It's finally good to meet you, I've heard a lot about you..

Me: Well uhm..

Takie: Would you like to go out for breakfast?
She broke the hug..

Me: I..

Takie: Good... I know this great place



I looked at her..

Takie: DNA is not even needed, you embarrassed your Mother

I chuckled..

Gert: Forgive my Daughter she's not at all together upstairs

Me: No it's fine

I looked at her...

Me: I would like to go get something to eat with you

Takie: Great! No was never going to be an acceptable answer

Something about her personality that reminded me of my late Sister..

Takie: Well then let's go... Gert will see you later
Gert: See you later

Me: Bye Gert:

Bye

We walked out...

NOVELSGURU.COM



BANZA

We loaded the last of our things in the taxi..I stil can't believe that my Father did that..

My Mother is one person who keeps to herself, she doesn't necessarily show her emotional side. When she's hurt, she would mask everything and act like nothing happened..

It was good to know that we were not going to be entirely homeless, she told me about her Mother's house and we were going to drive there. She was nervous, hasn't been there ever in a very long time. Told me her Brother and the Brother's wife live there now.

I hope they going to welcome us with open hands..

SOLE

NOVELSGURU.COM

I was out doing a bit of shopping for my Son Nathan, Scorpion had called and he walked in..

Scorp: These toys seem a bit too much for an unborn baby

Me: It's for my first born Scorp: You have another child? Me: Yeah a 5 year old boy

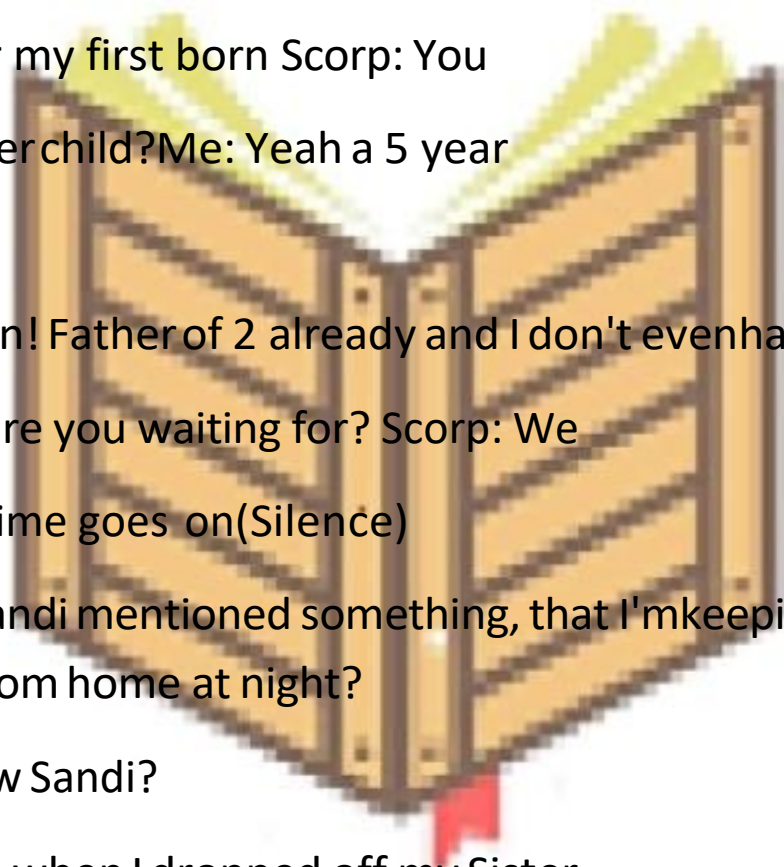
Scorp: Damn! Father of 2 already and I don't even have my first

Me: What are you waiting for? Scorp: We will see as time goes on (Silence)

Scorp: So Sandi mentioned something, that I'm keeping you away from home at night?

Me: You saw Sandi?

Scorp: Yeah when I dropped off my Sister Nongcebo



Me: I was seeing Son, she doesn't know about her
Scorp: You going to tel her?

Me: Yeah later on today because my Son is coming over for the weekend

Scorp: Shouldn't you have told her before? Me:
There's no time, it al happened so fast
Scorp: This is some messed up shit

Me: Messed up indeed

KELSO

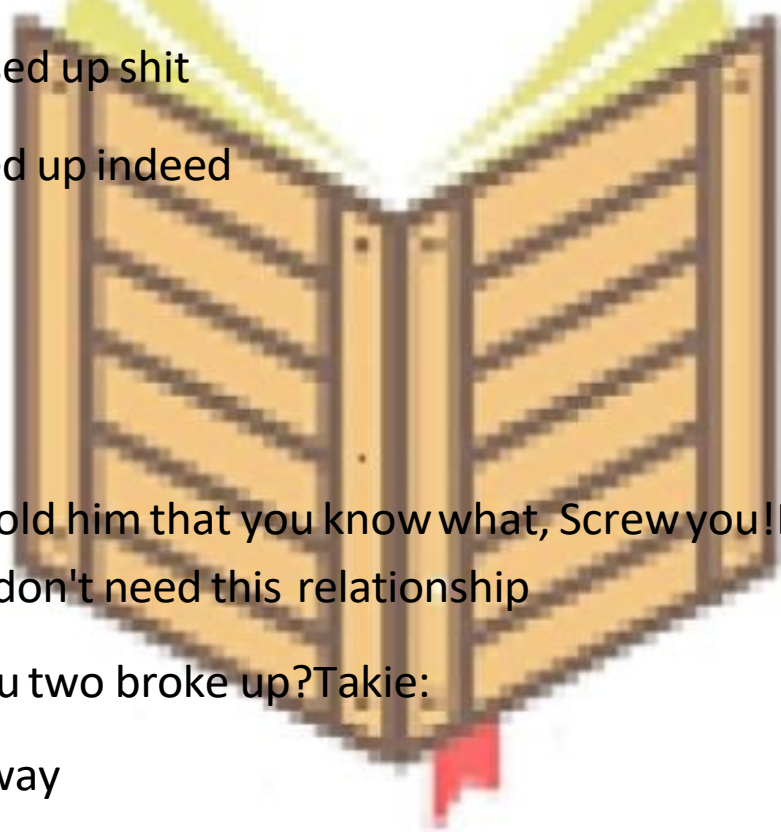
Takie: So I told him that you know what, Screw you! I don't need you, I don't need this relationship

Me: And you two broke up? Takie:

Not right away

Me: I am confused Takie: I

know



NOVELSGURU.COM

She moved her fork to my plate and took my sausage..

Take: Since from then I've been single

Me: I'm still confused, your story doesn't make any sense

Take: I know right? That's how the relationship didn't make any sense

She took another one..

Me: Would you like my plate?

Take: Oh No.. I just wanted your sausages
Me: Uhm
okay

Take: So how many girlfriends do you have?
Me:
Girlfriends?

Take: I assume you have girlfriends
Me: I'm
actually married

Take: Of course what was I thinking? I looked
at her..

Me: Let's go somewhere, I wanna show you



something Takie:

Now? Me: Yeah

now

Takie: Shouldn't we finish eating first? Me: I'll buy
you something along the way

Takie: Must be something important if it's more important
than food

Me: It is important!

got up..

Me: Come on

Takie: Okay wait.. Just one last bite! moved
her plate away..

Me: Come on

I took her bag and then we walked out..

.

To be continued

NOVELSGURU.COM

[08/24, 13:38]

: 94



KELSO

It's been a while since I last visited Takie's grave. If she was still alive and had to witness everything that I have done, she would be very disappointed in me. She was a sister, and also more like a mother.

She tried her best with me, until her demons got a better of her. Being here right now, made me realize that if someone was to do exactly to her what I did to Nongcebo, I would flip. I would turn this whole world upside down..

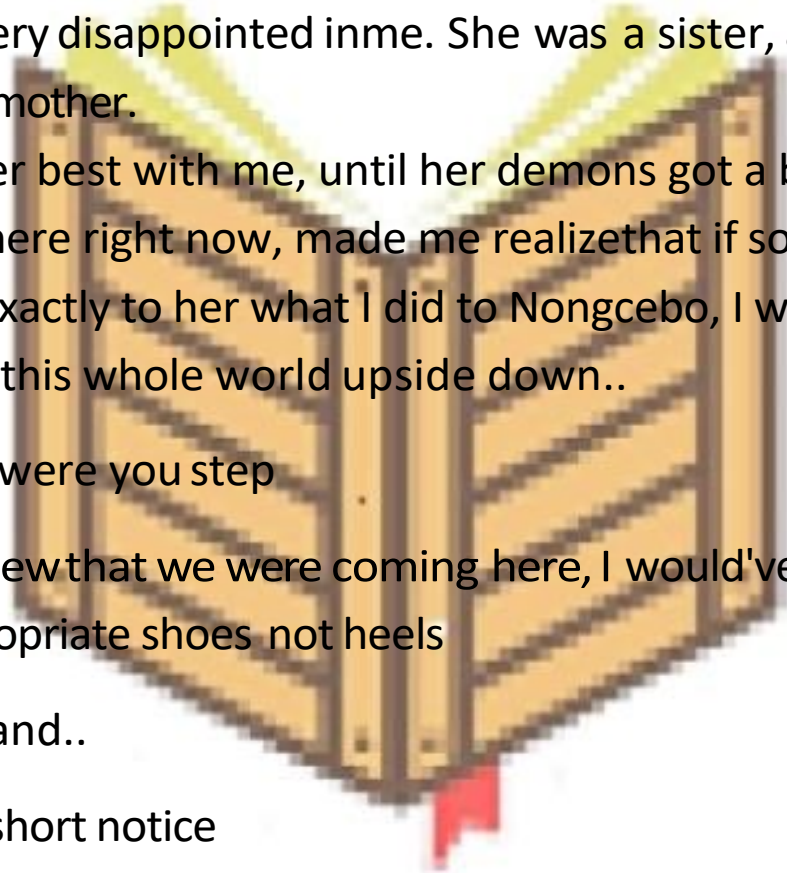
Me: Watch were you step

Takie: If I knew that we were coming here, I would've put on appropriate shoes not heels

I held her hand..

Me: It was short notice

Takie: Wow what a beautiful tombstone head
Me: It was the best I could do



NOVELSGURU.COM

Takie: How much was it?

Me: 10k

(Silence)

Me: This is your Mother's first born, she passed on many years ago. Drug overdose, she was greatly affected by Gertrude's disappearance. She never lived long to know the truth, her name was Takie

Takie: So Mom named us after you guys? Me: I believe so

Takie: I wish she told us earlier from the word go Me: She had her reasons

Her: It's a bit chilly here I took off my jacket..

Me: Here

Her: Thank you

She held on to my arm and rested her head on my shoulder...



SANDISIWE

Sole came back home with toys..Me:

You went toy shopping

He kissed me on my cheek..

Me: Why didn't you tel me? I would've came alongHe put the toys down and held my hand..

Sole: I have to talk to you about somethingMe:

What is it?

Sole: I think you should sit downMe: No

I think I'll stand

Sole: I have a Son, his name is Nathan. He's 5 yearsold

I laughed.. Me:

Yeah right

He was serious..

Me: Wait.. You have a Son?



Sole: Yes

Me: And you never told me about him?

Sole: I was never in his life and it was way before we became exclusive

Me: So because of that I'm not supposed to be mad? Sole: He's coming over for the weekend

Me: Wow! I don't have a day in that?

Sole: He's my Son what do you want me to do?

Me: I don't care even if he was your guardian angel, you should've told me about this.. Asked me how I felt about everything

Sole: You being very unreasonable

Me: I'm being unreasonable? What's next? You actually living a double life? You have a wife and other kids somewhere?

Sole: I expect you to understand because he was born before we started dating

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: And the Mother?

Sole: Wilsonia

Me: Wait.. Wilsonia the psychologist?Sole:

Yes

Me: You are twisted Sole do you know that? You had the mother of your child lie to me and convinced me that I was crazy! That the cemetery situation didn't happen?

Sole: The Cemetery incident didn't happen I slapped him across the face..

Me: You are pathetic do you know that? I regret this..I regret us, I regret everything! You a psychopath and you need help! One of these days you going to come back home and I'll be gone!! You wil never see me or my child ever again!

I walked away, he held my hand. I slapped him again..

Me: Don't you dare touch me, don't ever touch me! Matter of fact I want you out

Sole: What?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Pack your shit and leave!

Sole: You upset we will talk about this later

Me: I don't wanna talk about anything! I want you out!!

I walked to the bedroom to pack him a bag.. Sole: I am not going anywhere this is my house

Me: Don't be ridiculous! You expect the Mother of your child to be homeless?

I took out his clothes..

Sole: Stop this madness okay?

He tried to stop me and we ended up pulling one of his t-shirts..

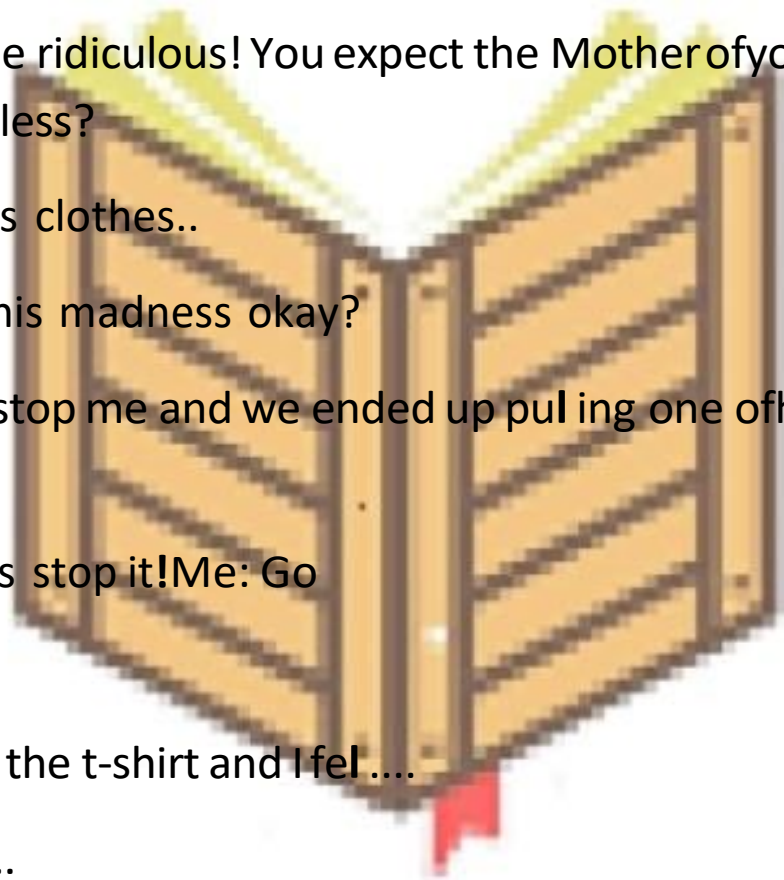
Sole: Sweets stop it! Me: Go to hell!!

He let go of the t-shirt and I fell

Me: Awww..

Sole: Are you okay? **NOVELSGURU.COM**

He tried to help me up..



Me: I said don't touch me! Leave! I never wanna see you again!

NONGCEBO

I looked at his Facebook pictures, he still had our wedding pictures and my pictures. He hasn't changed his relationship status nor has he posted anything in a while..

Bongeka: Hey

Me: Hey

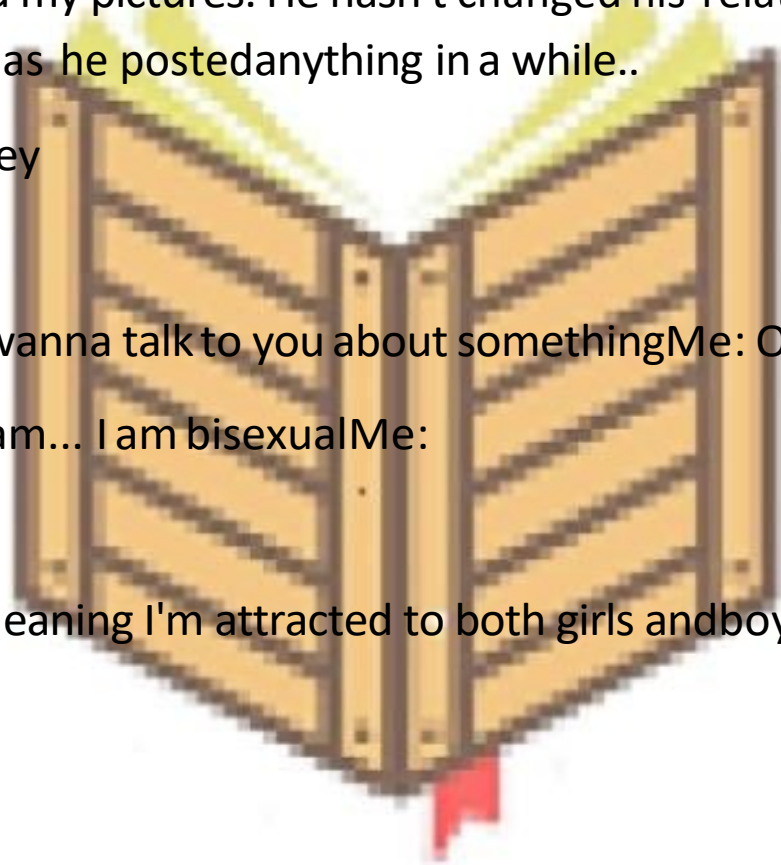
Bongeka: I wanna talk to you about something Me: Okay

Bongeka: I am... I am bisexual Me:

Huh?

Bongeka: Meaning I'm attracted to both girls and boys

Me: What?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Bongeka: Nessi and I we.. We actual y not best friends, wel we are and we also in a relationship

Me: I.. I am confused

Bongeka: I know it's a lot to take in, and If you don't understand nor wanna accept It's okay

Me: No don't say that... I just don't understand that part of life very wel , I mean.. Being attracted to girls, I real y don't understand

Bongeka: I just wanted you to know because I am planning on fixing things with her, I know her Uncle is a bad persona and I understand if you won't support us

Me: I have nothing against Nessi, I actual y love her..She's a nice girl

Bongeka: Shuuuuuu that's a relief

Me: You know what.. Why don't you invite her over for dinner?

Bongeka: Are you sure? Me: I'm

very sure

NOVELSGURU.COM

She smiled..

Bongeka: Thank you so much, I'll call her
Me: You welcome Baby

She walked out..

I continued looking at Kelso's pictures..

KELSO

I put her down when I got to the car..She put
on her heels again..

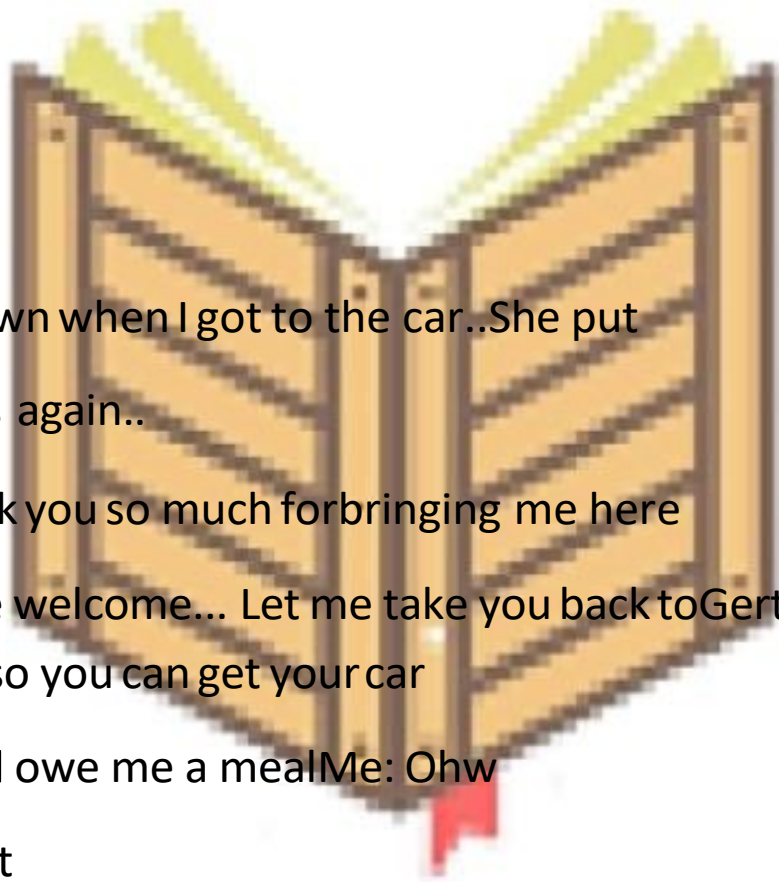
Takie: Thank you so much for bringing me here

Me: You are welcome... Let me take you back to Gert's
workplace so you can get your car

Her: You still owe me a meal
Me: Oh yes and that

We got into the car.

Her: So when am I meeting the wife?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: We having problemsHer:

Problems?

Me: She left me Her:

That's extreme

Me: I wouldn't be surprised if she serves me withdivorce papers

Her: It's that deep? Me:

I've hurt hera lot

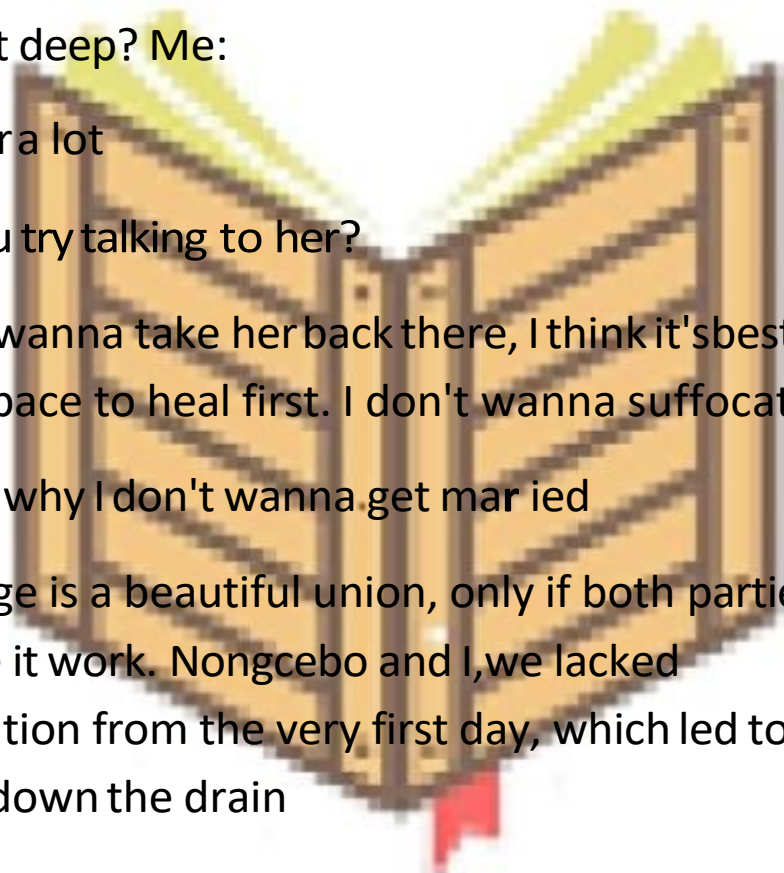
Her: Did you try talking to her?

Me: I don't wanna take her back there, I think it'sbest I give her some space to heal first. I don't wanna suffocate her

Her: This is why I don't wanna get mar ied

Me: Mar iage is a beautiful union, only if both parties are wil ing to make it work. Nongcebo and I,we lacked communication from the very first day, which led to our mar iage going down the drain

Her: I'm truly sor y to hear that... You've been through a lot. Mom was neverthere, You lost your



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sister, then your wife

Me: And my father passed on find out about it this morning

Her: I really don't know what to say Me: I'll

be good

Her: Have you tried therapy? Me:

No

Her: You should.. I can book you an appointment for Monday

Me: No I'm good

Her: Monday it is, I'll see if Dr Khatri can squeeze us in

Me: It's like Takie resurrected

Her: Well I did say I'll take care of you, You heard the promise I made to her

Me: I'm regretting it already

Her: And we calling Dr Khatri, he's good you'll enjoy therapy.. Your mom will pay



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Your Mom

Her: No your Mom, she's your mom first before mine.. I was born later

She put her phone next to her ear..

NONGCEBO

I looked at Bongeka..

Me: Did you get a hold of her?

Bongeka: Yes

Me: Is Kelso going to drop her off?

Bongeka: No... She will Uber

Me: Are you sure it's safe for her to Uber? Girls get kidnapped these days

Bongeka: I'll ask Uncle Lindo to accompany me

Me: Bad Idea

NOVELSGURU.COM

Bongeka: I really don't know then

Bongeka: Tell her to ask her Uncle to drop her off

Bongeka: Kelso coming here? Do you think that's a good idea?

Me: I just don't want Nessi missing and then everyone sees it as our fault

Bongeka: I'll call her and then we will see what we can do

Me: Okay... So long I'll prepare for dinner

Bongeka: Thank you

.

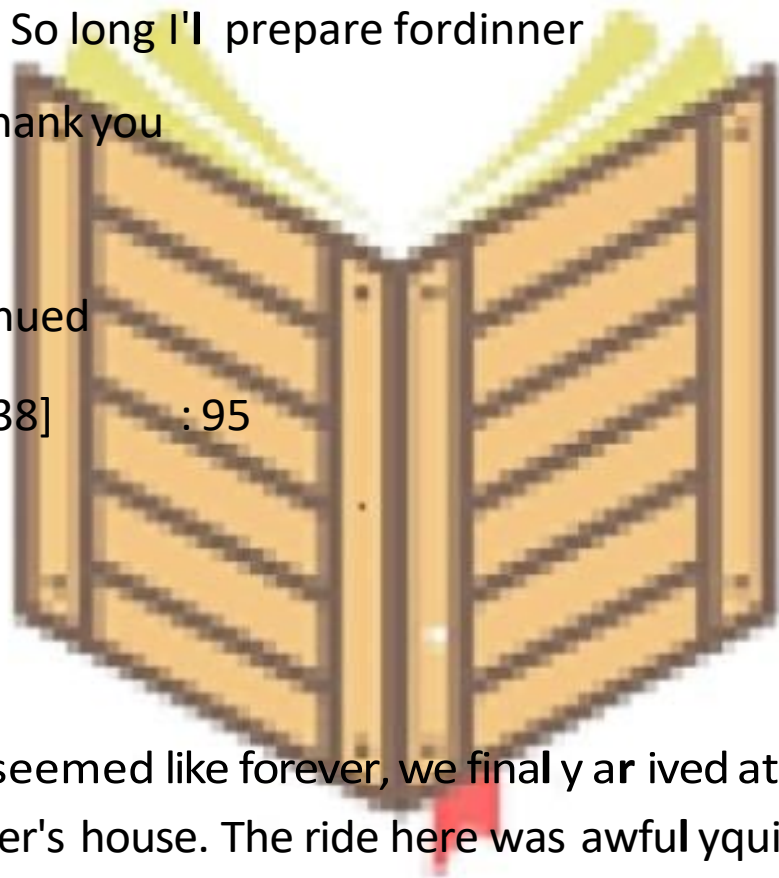
To be continued

[08/24, 13:38] : 95

BANZA

After what seemed like forever, we finally arrived at my Grandmother's house. The ride here was awfully quiet, and it took longer than expected. My

NOVELSGURU.COM



Grandmother's house was not far from my Dad's place, I don't know why my Mom never visited her home.. It was a nice looking 4 room house. The yard was swept clean, grass and flowers trimmed. There was even a horse pipe at the flowers. Whoever lives here, really knows how to take care of a house.

My Mother seemed nervous as we made our way into the yard, I don't blame her. She hasn't been here in years... As we walked to the back, we found a man sitting on a chair and sorting out sugar beans. My Mother stopped and looked at him. He was sitting by the two rooms outside. Some woman walked out of the house holding a basin, she dropped it when she saw us. The man looked at her, and then looked at us. I saw shock written all over his face too when he saw us.

Man: Sesi

Without any warning, my Mother collapsed.

SOLE



NOVELSGURU.COM

I was a little disappointed to find out that my Son doesn't really do toys. He's a gamer. I was disappointed at myself for not knowing much about him, I should've enquired first.

Nathan didn't even cry for his Mom when we left, which proved to me that he is used to not having her around, she must be spending more time with his Nanny than he does with Wilsonia. The ride home was very quiet, he was concentrated on his phone where he was playing a game, I can't believe Wilsonia bought a 5 year old phone. She assured me that it's only for gaming purposes especially when he's traveling. His PS5 tagged along too with his games...

Sandi was mad when I left, her anger is understandable. I hope now she has calmed down for the sake of Nathan. I don't want my Son witnessing any fights...

We offloaded everything from the car and then we made our way in, he was still concentrating on his

phone.. He had on his skull candy earphones..Nath: I need an M6

I looked at him..

He was definitely playing PUBG..

We made our way into the house, I was even worried that he will bump into something judging from how he was concentrating on his game..

Sandi was sitting on the couch eating ice cream and watching TV, her eyes moved from the TV and she looked at us..

Me: Hey

She looked at Nathan and then got up from the couch then walked to the bedroom. Nathan who was even attentive to what was happening went and sat on the couch and continued playing his game. I walked to the other bedroom and put his clothes there, it's going to be a long weekend..

NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nessi did arrive, she was dropped off by a Station. Bongeka was very happy to see her, they even kissed right in front of me as we fetched her from the gate..

Station: I am Kelso's friend, he had asked me to drop her off

Me: Nongcebo We shook hands..

Me: Thank you for dropping her off

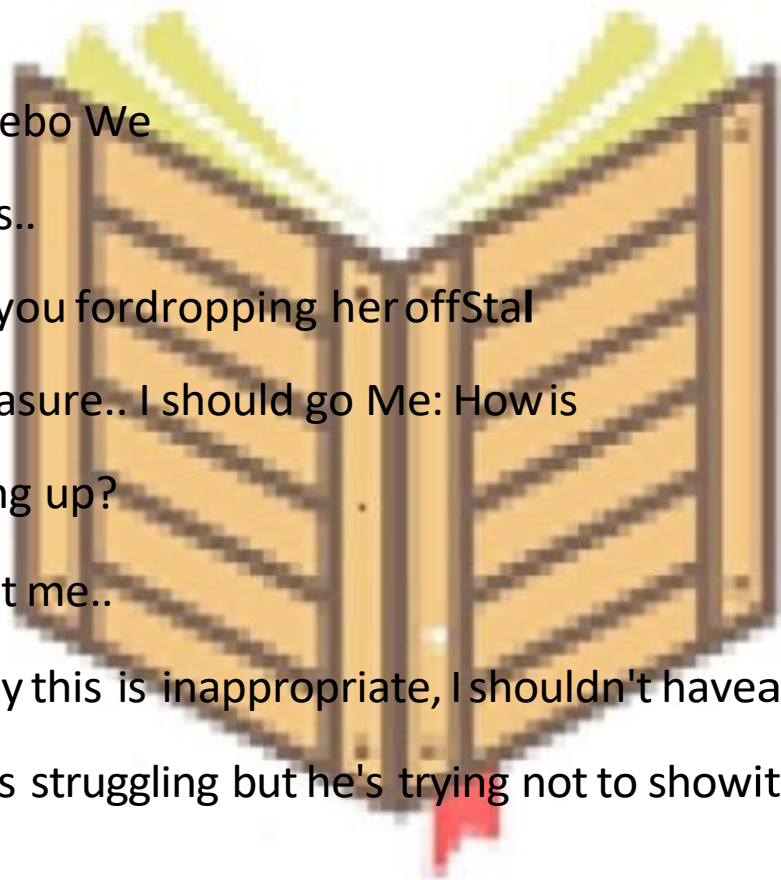
Station: My pleasure.. I should go
Me: How is Kelso holding up?

He looked at me..

Me: I'm sorry this is inappropriate, I shouldn't have asked

Station: He's struggling but he's trying not to show it

I nodded..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I see

Station: I really have to go

Me: Thank you again for dropping her off Station:

No problem

I looked at them..

Me: Guys take Nessi's bags They

both took Nessi's bags...Nessi: Your

house is big

Me: Well we are a big family so

Nessi: Thank you for allowing me to visit, especially
after everything

Me: You will always be a part of us, no matter what Nessi: You really
have a good heart

Me: Thank you

We made our way to the house..

NOVELSGURU.COM

BANZA

We looked at her as she slowly opened her eyes..The man that we found introduced himself as my Uncle, my Mother's older brother..

Uncle: J udith iza namanzi (J udith go get water)His wife went to get water..

Uncle: Sesi unjani? (How are you)My Mother looked at us..

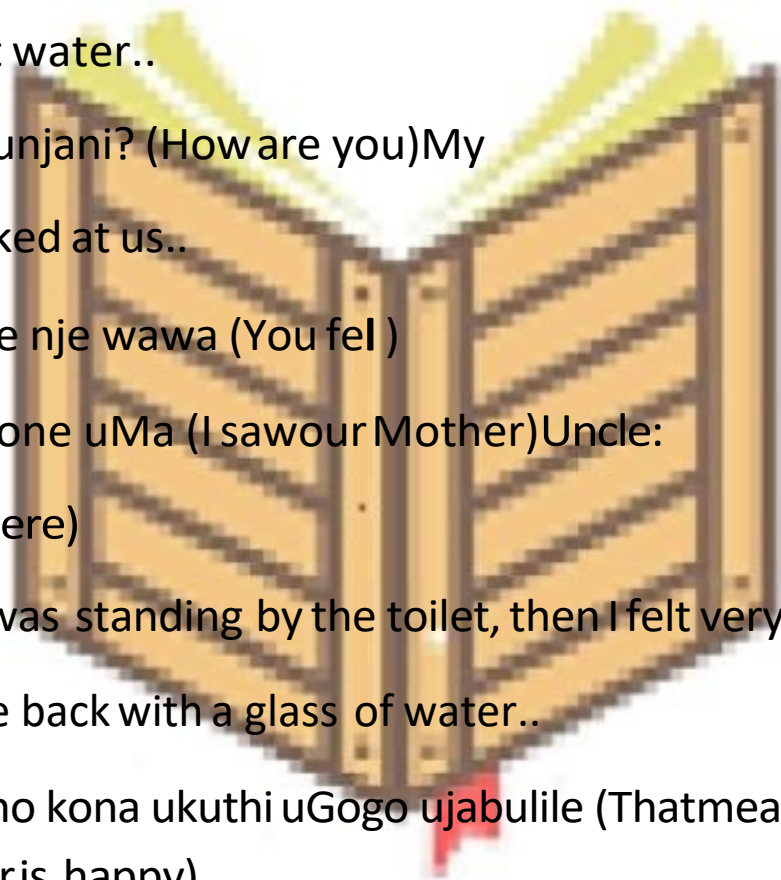
Uncle: Uvele nje wawa (You feel)

Mom: Ngibone uMa (I saw our Mother)Uncle: Kuphi? (Where)

Mom: She was standing by the toilet, then I felt very light headed
J udith came back with a glass of water..

J udith: Kusho kona ukuthi uGogo ujabulile (That means your Mother is happy)

Uncle: Impela laze lafika le langa, besazi ukuthi ngelinye lama langa uzongena mntaka Ma. Ngaze



ngajabula (Final y this day came, I knew that oneday you would come home)

J udith: Ithi ngiyokulungisela ekamereni (Let me goand prepare the other bedroom foryou)

Uncle: Kodwa Sesi, umfana aze abe ngaka

Mom: Ngiyolisa bhuti wam (I'm sor y my Brother)

Uncle: Ungazogamga wena, thina sijabulela ukuthi usubuyile ekhaya (We are just happy that you backat home)

Me: Ngisayo thatha izinto emotweni (I'm going totake things from the car)

Uncle: Ngiyeza ngizokuncedisa (I'm coming to helpyou)

KELSO

Gertrude opened the door..Gert:

Hey

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Hey

Gert: Please come in

I made my way in, Takie was standing at the stove cooking..

Takie: You came!

Me: You gave me no choice..They
both had on Aprons..

Me: Something smells nice

Gert: That would be my home made shepard's pie..Used to be
your Sister's favorite

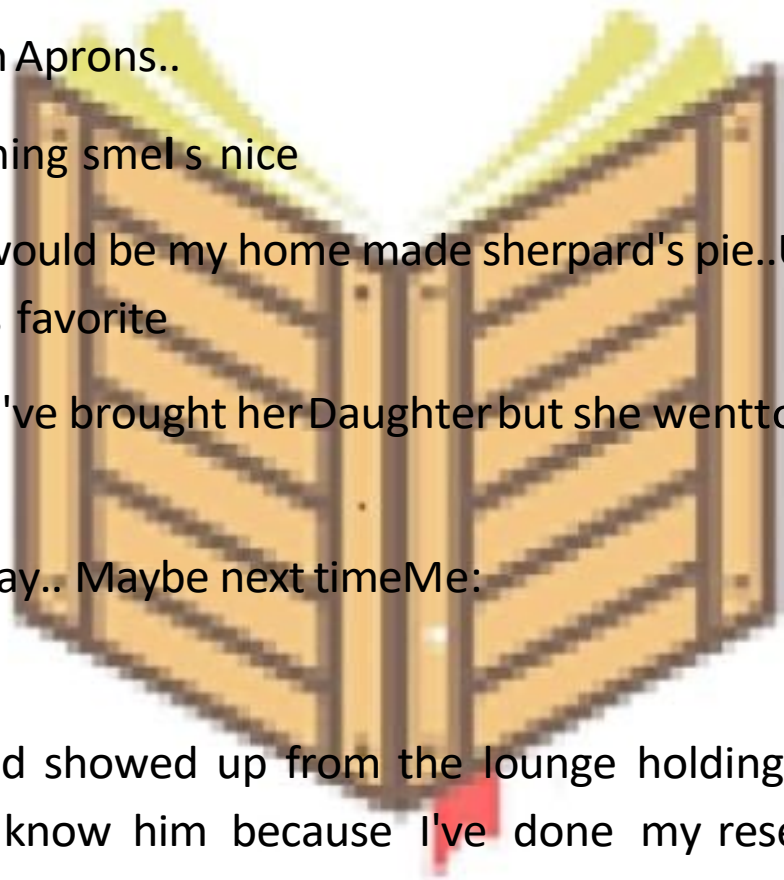
Me: I would've brought her Daughter but she went to visit
her friend

Gert: It's okay.. Maybe next time Me:

Yeah

Her husband showed up from the lounge holding a glass of
whiskey. I know him because I've done my research with
Gertrude..

Him: Kelso! Look at you Son!



NOVELSGURU.COM

He put the glass on the kitchen counter..

Him: The last time I saw you, you couldn't even pronounce your name. Look at you all grown up, time flies

He came and hugged me, I didn't expect such a warm welcome from him..

Him: Step into the lounge I'll pour you a glass of my favorite whiskey

I followed him to the lounge.. Him:

Damn! Time flies indeed Me: Yeah it does

I sat on the couch..

Him: It's good to see you Me:

It's nice to meet you

SOLE



With hopes of trying to connect with my Son, I made

us some snacks and connected the PS5 to the TV..We were about to play FIFA..

Me: Whats your favorite team?Nath:

Barcelona!

Me: You like Messi?He

nodded..

Me: Barcelona it is foryou, I'll take ChelseaNath: Chelsea is Bad Daddy!

I looked at him, don't think I'll get used to him callingme that..

Me: Let me school you the old way

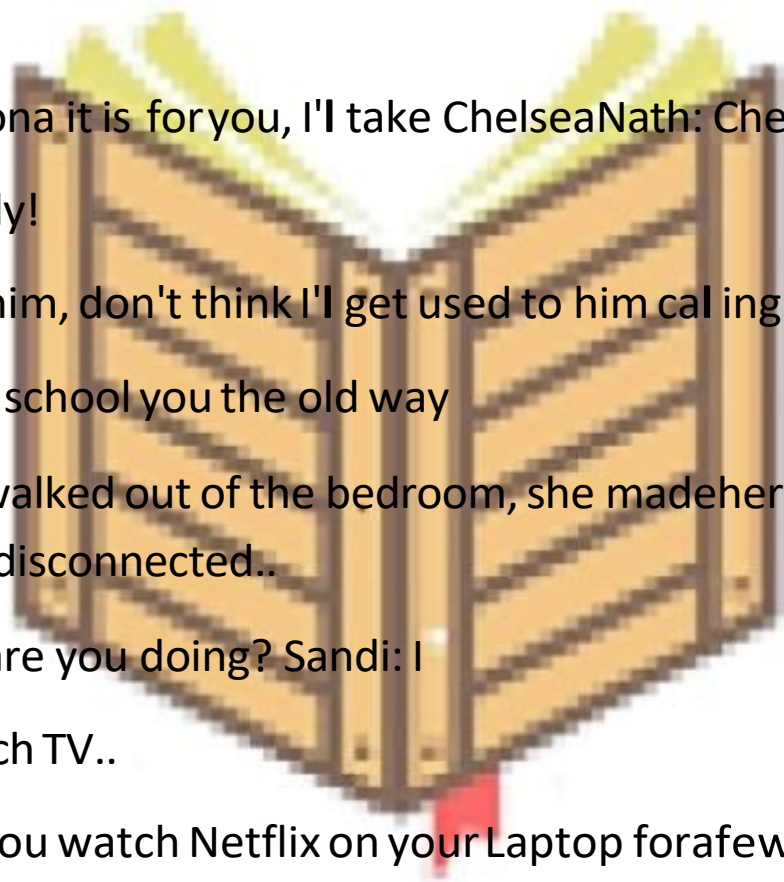
Sandisiwe walked out of the bedroom, she madeherway to the TV and disconnected..

Me: What are you doing? Sandi: I

wanna watch TV..

Me: Can't you watch Netflix on your Laptop forafew minutes?

Sandi: No! My favorite showis on



NOVELSGURU.COM

She took the remote..

Me: Let's go get Pizza we will come back later and play

Nath: Okay

My phone rang, it was Wilsonia..Me:

Look Mommy is calling Nath: Can I talk to her?

Me: Wait

I answered.. Me:

Coco Nathan:

Coco!

I gave him the phone as we walked out..

.

To be continued

Siba will be uploaded later on and The Trophy Wife will continue tomorrow

[08/24, 13:39]

: 96

NOVELSGURU.COM



SANDISIWE

I was very heartbroken at how everything was playing out. Sole lied to me and then now he expects me to play step mother to his Son in his own terms? He doesn't even look sorry nor does he look like he regrets lying to me. He should've been honest about this situation with me from the beginning to avoid all this nonsense.. I tried calling my cousin Takie but he didn't pick up, I called Nongcebo she didn't pick up too. I needed someone to talk too and everyone seemed busy at the moment. I can't talk to Aletta, she is strange and probably won't even take me seriously. That's if she even knows about Sole's Son...

BANZA

I was outside on a call with Manto as the family ate

NOVELSGURU.COM

dinner..

Manto: Despite how sad this situation is, but her ancestors are at work. This marriage was going to crumble at any time

Me: I still can't believe he did that

Manto: It's sad but look on the bright side. Your Mother might accept her calling, things will change for you guys. This is all God's plan, she will finally be free from all her sickness

Me: I hope she will accept her calling

Manto: She has too, there's no turning back now and I am sensing she's going to be very powerful. Her Mother was a powerful traditional healer

Me: Yeah we will see

Manto: Have you tried reaching out to Nongcebo?

Me: I tried calling her but her number doesn't go through

Manto: I'm just sensing that something is off with her

Me: How?

Manto: I don't know yet and it's difficult talking to her because we are not so close

Me: I'll try reaching out to her on Facebook and see
Manto: Okay thank you

Me: I have to go...I love you

Manto: I love you too

SIPHOSETHU (THE NURSE)

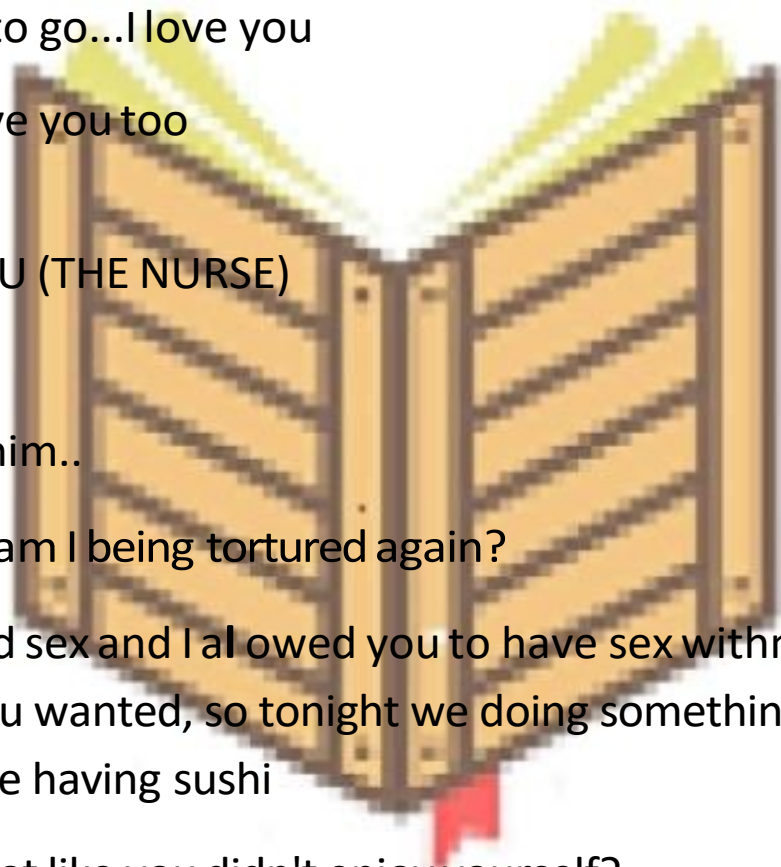
I looked at him..

Lindo: Why am I being tortured again?

Me: We had sex and I allowed you to have sex with me the way that you wanted, so tonight we are doing something that I want and we are having sushi

Lindo: It's not like you didn't enjoy yourself?

Me: That's not the point, the point is it's your turn to do something that I like



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindo: I will eat sushi in exchange for sex the whole night

Me: Lindo! Lindo:

What?

Me: You can't negotiate that's very unfair

Lindo: I could take anything except for what you're putting me through right now

Me: You are being unfair, very unfair

Lindo: I am a business person and this is a business deal.. I will eat sushi in exchange for sex all night

Me: What if I just want us to chill and watch movies?

Lindo: That will be for tomorrow plus my sister's are going to church tomorrow so it will be a boring day for me

Me: Fine then

Lindo: Did you go to the pharmacy?

Me: I actually went to the Dr and got a shot of the two months injection and I also got a morning after

NOVELSGURU.COM

pil

Lindo: How disappointingMe:

You want a baby?

Lindo: Is that a bad thing?

Me: We hardly even know each other, this is stil thehoneymoon phase. We haven't even fought

Lindo: You want us to fight?

Me: No.. I'm just saying maybe we should get to know each other first plus I'm stil paying my bondand my car, I have a lot of bil s to add on baby bil sontop

Lindo: I can pay what's remaining of your car

Me: Let me guess business deal? In exchange forababy?

Lindo: No.. I don't want you driving on the road witha debt on your head, it's going to be very embar assing for me as a man when your car gets repossessed because you failed to pay

Me: I haven't skipped a month

Lindo: Either way the point is I'll be paying off what's remaining of your car

Me: What do you do exactly? Lindo: I live by the bullet I told you

Me: You made that very clear but what is it that you do?

Lindo: I make things happen Me: So you a thug?

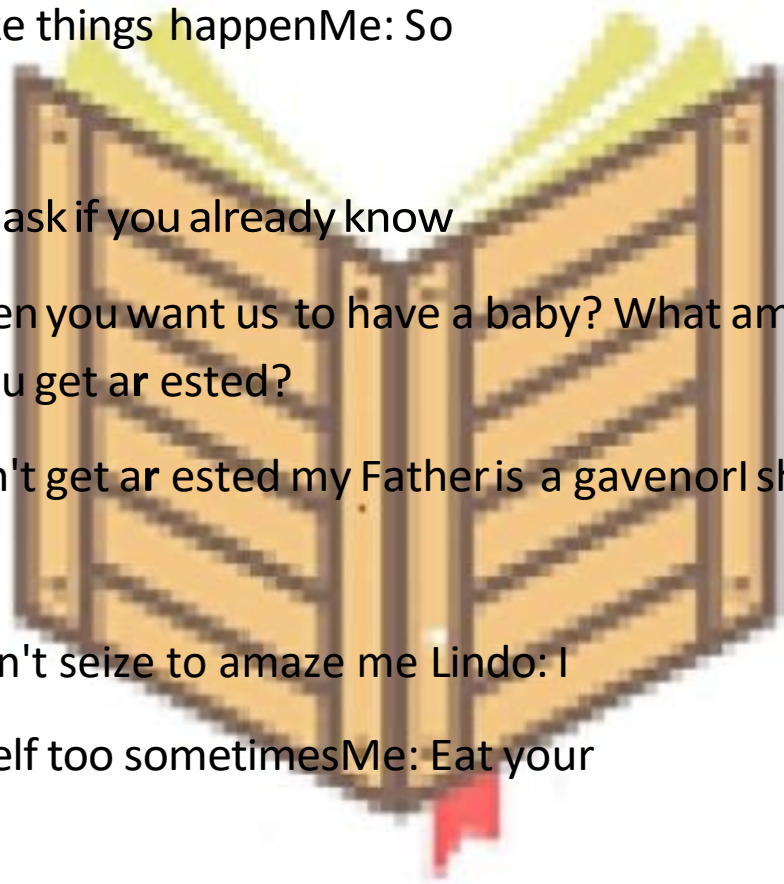
Lindo: Why ask if you already know

Me: And then you want us to have a baby? What am I going to do when you get arrested?

Lindo: I won't get arrested my Father is a governor I shook my head..

Me: You don't cease to amaze me Lindo: I amaze myself too sometimes Me: Eat your sushi

Lindo: I'm trying.. It's difficult eating sushi and looking at your body, maybe if you can cover up the



confusion with clear on what I should eat exactly. This raw fish or that raw fish

Me: Are you saying my pussy is a raw fish? Lindo: I'm saying it's raw meat

Me: That didn't sound nice at all fish doesn't smell good

Lindo: That's not what I meant, I was just making an example

Me: Try to be nice at times Lindo: Try to take a joke at times Me: Whatever

Lindo: Yeah whatever.. Congratulations we just had our first fight

Me: You a headache I swear Lindo:

Not my intention

KELSO



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dinner was going well, Gertrude's pie was very delicious. I looked at everyone at the table, they were chatting and laughing. It was a beautiful moment to witness, and more beautiful to be a part of it. I can't believe Ken kept me away from this, they not bad people.

Gert: Where did we lose you? Me: I'm just enjoying the pie

Takie: So Kelso is starting therapy on Monday Gert: Is it?

Takie: Yes and you paying for all the sessions, since you are the one who damaged him

Gert: Takie

Takie: I'm just being honest, you put this child through trauma the least you can do is help him heal.. Heal all that he is keeping deep inside

Mr Gxaba: What a way to put it

Me: If I wasn't used to my late sister being like that I would be very offended by now

NOVELSGURU.COM

Takie: Thank heavens for the resurrection We heard the kitchen door opening...

Takie: The other Son has arrived... Indeed Kelo walked in..

Takie: The other Brother has arrived Kelo looked at me..

Gert: There's still some pie left, help yourself Kelo: What's going on? What is he doing here? Takie: We invited him over.. Come help yourself Kelo: No thank you

Gert: Don't be like that

Kelo: I'm not going to share a table with a womanbeater

Gert: Here we go

Kelo: Quite frankly you all should be ashamed of yourselves, sitting here and dining a man who put his hand on a woman!

Takie: What should we do? Stone him to death? He

NOVELSGURU.COM

is stil our brother

Kelo: He is no brother of mine! He is nothing to me!

Take: He is your Mother's Son, unfortunately you can't choose your family

Kelo: I can and I choose not to be a part of him.. I resent him

Me: Maybe I should leave.. Thank you so much for the dinner

Gert: You don't have to leave

Me: No it's okay.. Thank you so much

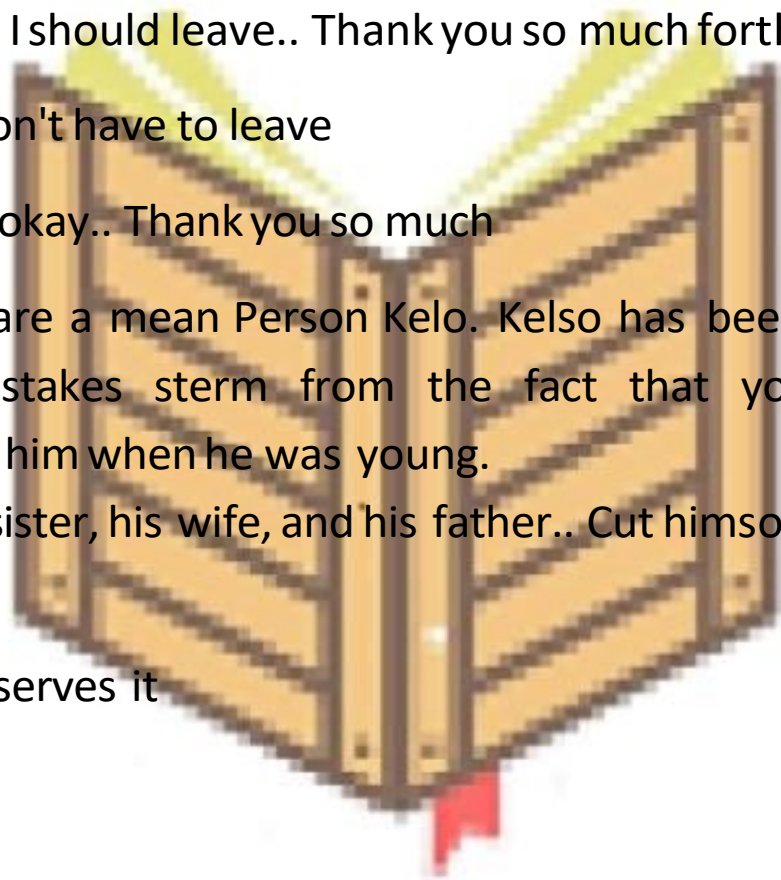
Take: You are a mean Person Kelo. Kelso has been through a lot, his mistakes stem from the fact that your Mother abandoned him when he was young. He lost his sister, his wife, and his father.. Cut him some slack!

Kelo: He deserves it

Gert: Kelo!

I got up..

Me: Thank you again for the dinner



Gert: I'll walk you out

She walked me out to my car..

Gert: I'm so sorry about thatMe:

It's not like he was lying

Gert: Have you tried reaching out to Nongcebo?

Me: No.. I don't even know what to say to her. Sorrywon't fix what I did

Gert: That's true but sometimes showing remorse goes a long way.. If you truly regret what you did tryreaching out to her and apologizing. Apologizing doesn't mean that you guys can now fix everything, it just shows that you regret what you did

Me: I'm trying not to start warwith herfamily, I wanther to enjoy having a family without me rocking up and reminding her of the past

Me: I understand.. Come hereShe

hugged me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Gert: Know that I'm very proud of you that you going

to start therapy, do it for yourself so that when you meet someone else you'll know how to love her right and treat her right

Me: That's true

Gert: I'll stop by tomorrow and see how the family is holding up with Ken's death

Me: Thank you

She put her hands on my cheeks.. Gert: I love you so much

Me: I know

She kissed me on my cheek.. Gert: Call me when you get home Me: I'll do so

NONGCEBO

I looked at Nessi.. Me:

How is Grandma?

NOVELSGURU.COM



Nessi: She's not holding up well especially since we got news that Grandpa passed on

Me: Ken died?

Nessi: Yes

Me: That's terrible, how does Kelso feel? Sli looked at me..

Nessi: He's trying... Ever since you.. Ever since you left he's trying to be strong but deep down he's broken he's just too proud to admit it

Me: I should probably go and see how Grandma is holding up tomorrow

Sli: Tomorrow we going to church

Me: My father in law passed on, I think it's going to be respectful if I go to pay my respects

Sli: Do you think that's a good idea? After everything that has happened?

Me: I am not asking for Kelso back, I'm just going to see the woman who was good to me. Just because my husband and I we not together anymore it



doesn't mean I have to turn my back on my in laws, yazi it would be nice if everyone can just stay out of my business! I am still married, until I'm divorced I have to do right by my in laws

I stood up... Me:

Excuse me!

walked out...

Bongeka: Wow

Me: I heard that too!

KEN BHEMBE

The warden unzipped the body bag..

Warden: You okay?

I opened my eye and looked at him, as my other eye was still shut.. I couldn't even speak because of my busted lip..

Warden: Maybe I shouldn't zip it, so you can be able



to breath properlyl

slowly nodded..

He took off his cap...

Warden: We almost there Boss, just hang onl nodded
and closed my eye..

.

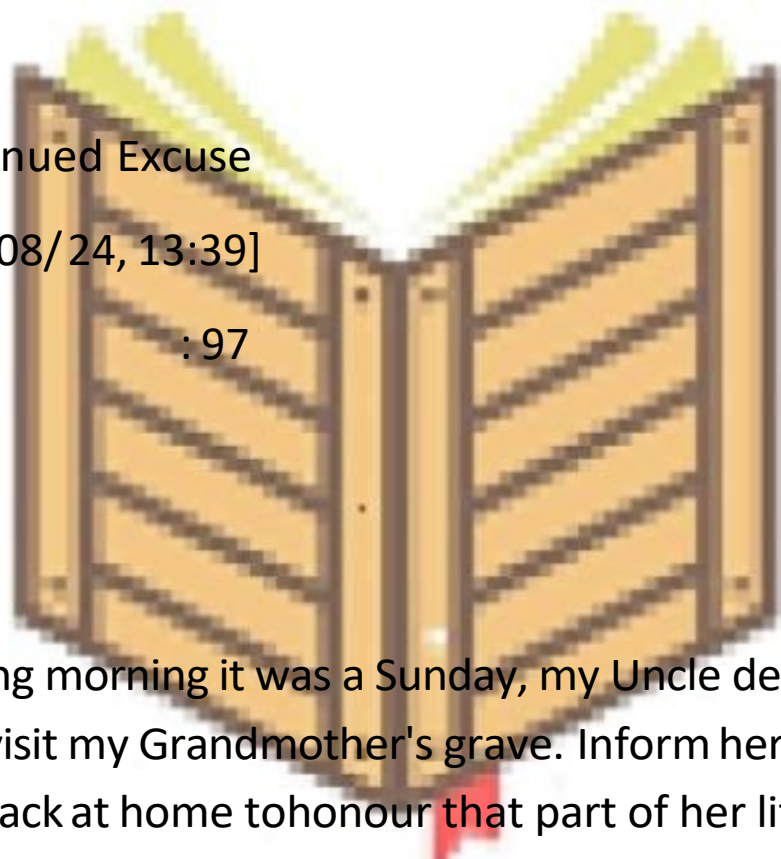
To be continued Excuse

any er ors [08/24, 13:39]

: 97

BANZA

The fol owing morning it was a Sunday, my Uncle decided that
we should visit my Grandmother's grave. Inform her that my
Mother is back at home to honour that part of her life that they
have blessed her with. Last night, my Uncle and my Mother
spent long hours talking about my Mother accepting her



gift. Being someone who doesn't have much knowledge about the underground gang she is pleading with them to allow her to accept her gift, in a way that she understands. And that is being a Prophet, possibly also accepting help from the underground gang. Her gift will circle around healing, freeing people from witchcraft and curses. I must admit that I was very proud of her. This little ceremony wasn't going to require much, just 2 chickens. The official ceremony will require a goat, we will save up for that. In the meantime the ancestors will help choose a church that will accept her for who she is.

We did find the bag of bones buried not so deep in my Grandmother's grave. My Mother taking the bag, it's her acknowledging her gift. Her ancestors will communicate with her through bones, dreams and visions.

It was a huge step from her part, I'm glad she found it in her heart to accept what she is meant to be.

Maybe things will eventually change for the better...

SOLE

The first thing Nathan did was to wake up and woke me up to connect the Playstation for her. Wilsonia must've went into great lengths in getting this Playstation before it's release date, afteral she is wel connected and have contacts in high places.. I told him to brush his teeth and wash his face, then have some cereal before playing.. I slept with Nathan in the guest room because Sandi was stil very much angry at me, it was stressful. I'm not used to her being this deadly quiet..As Nathan was playing I tried going into the bedroom but the door was locked, I hope that she wil eventual y accept how this situation and come around. I want Nathanto be a part of our lives fora very long time..

NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM

I did wake up the next morning and made my way to Kelso's house, I took a taxi. Everyone was sleeping when I left except for Sli who was preparing for church and Lindo was not around.. In the taxi I had a lot of time to think, think if this was a good idea or not.

Kelso's Mother was very good to me, she loved me and accepted me even when she didn't know much about me. I don't see why we should be enemies because Kelso failed to be a good husband.. Kelso's Aunt was sweeping the yard when I opened the gate, she stopped and looked at me..

Ntombela: Aww kodwa ngiyaphupha noma yini?(Am I dreaming or what)

Me: Aunty Ntombela

She threw the broom on the ground and dusted her hands, then she approached me.

Ntombela: Wee Ma.. Kwakuhle ukukubona (It's good to see you)

She hugged me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Ntombela: Usuzongithengela nama beer(You will buy me beers)

Me: Ngesonto kodwa (On a Sunday)

Ntombela: Ngoba? Kukhona oku wrong lapho? (Is there something wrong with you)

Me: Aww ngeke kodwa.. Ithi ngiyobabona endlini(Let me go inside and greet everyone)

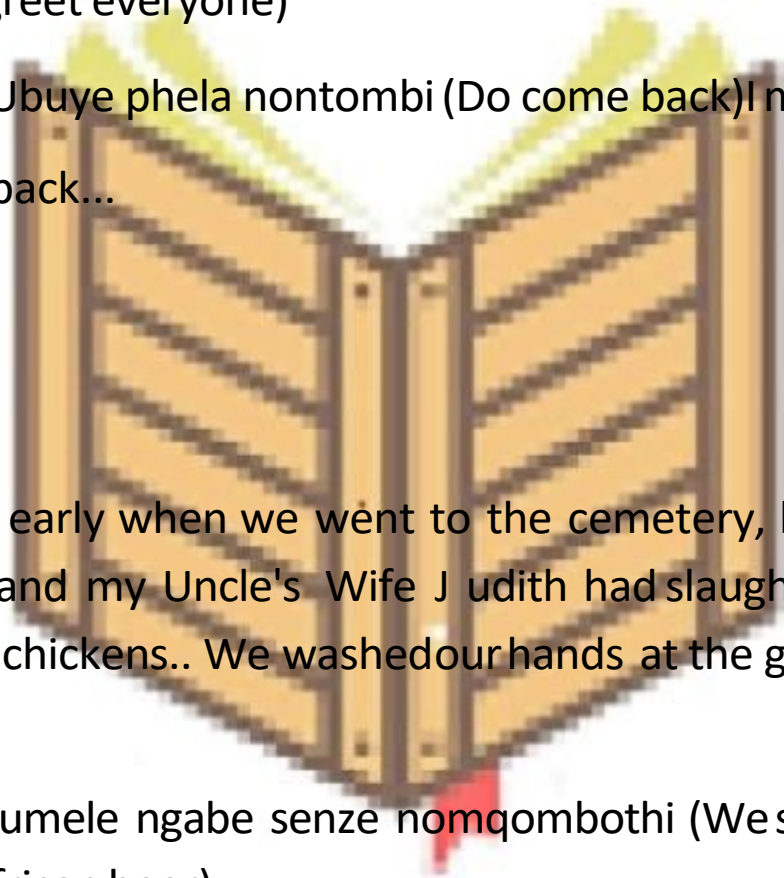
Ntombela: Ubuye phela nontombi (Do come back)I made my way to the back...

BANZA

It was very early when we went to the cemetery, by 9am we were back and my Uncle's Wife Judith had slaughtered and cooked the chickens.. We washed our hands at the gate before going in..

Judith: Bekumele ngabe senze nomqombothi (We should've prepared African beer)

Uncle: Sesizobona kahle ngomsebenzi omkhulu,



NOVELSGURU.COM

manje senze kahle nge catoon (We wil see thatwhen we have the official ceremony)

I was going to occupy one of the rooms outside, theother one was meant for my Mother as it looked different. It looked like a hut, herMother used to useit and the ones before her too..

Uncle: Uzizwa Kanjani Sesi? (How are you feeling)

Mom: It was my first time having a good sleep, evenwhen I woke up. I felt lighter than I did when I wasstil living at my house

J udith: kuzoya kancance ka ncane Sisi uzoba right(Slowly but surely you wil be wel)

Mom: uMthetheleli usese J ele? (Mthetheleli is stilin Prison)

Uncle: Uyamazi ubhuti (You know our Brother)Ma: Use yenzeni manje? (What did he do now)

Uncle: Lezinto zakhe zokuganga ukutshontsha (It'shis problem of stealing)

My Mother shook his head..

Ma: That's your other Uncle, the second born. He has always been problematic, always up to no good

Uncle: Kanti kuzomele siye soyombona azi ukuthi usubuyile (We have to go and visit him, so that we can tell him that you back)

Ma: Sokwenza njalo (We will do just that)

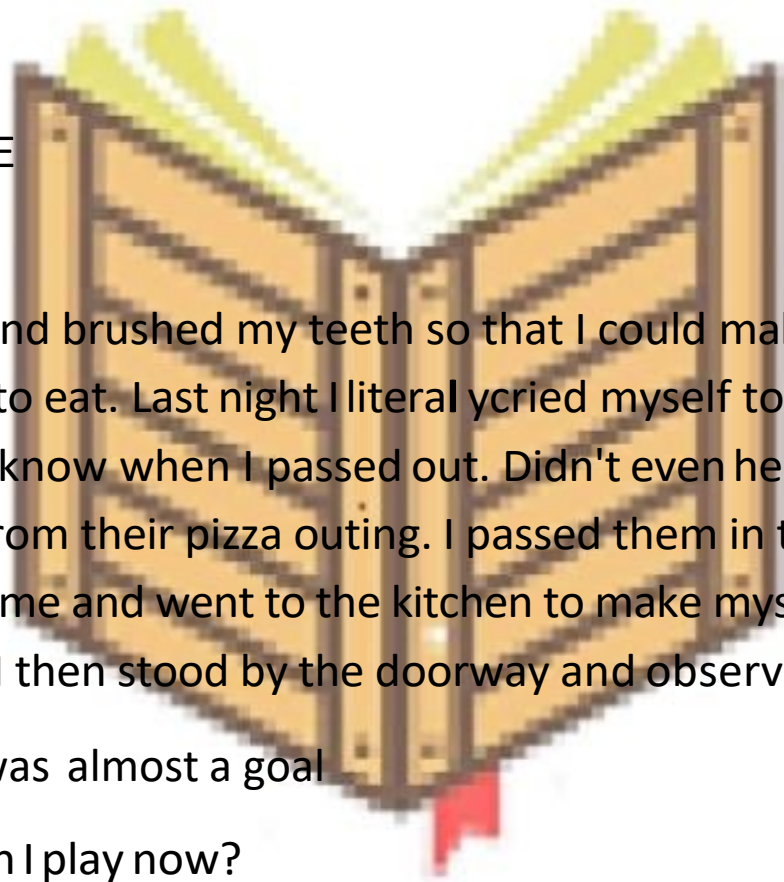
SANDISIWE

I woke up and brushed my teeth so that I could make myself something to eat. Last night I literally cried myself to sleep, I don't even know when I passed out. Didn't even hear them coming in from their pizza outing. I passed them in the lounge playing a game and went to the kitchen to make myself a sandwich.. I then stood by the doorway and observed them..

Sole: That was almost a goal

Nathan: Can I play now?

Sole: You have to finish eating your cereal first



Nathan: I'm almost done
Sole:

Finish up then

I folded my arms and looked at the Son, he looked very much like his father. He was very adorable. I watched him as he ate and finished all his cereal, he got up with his empty bowl and made his way to the kitchen. He stopped in front of me and stretched his arms..

I took the bowl from him.. Him:

Thank you

I went and put it in the sink..

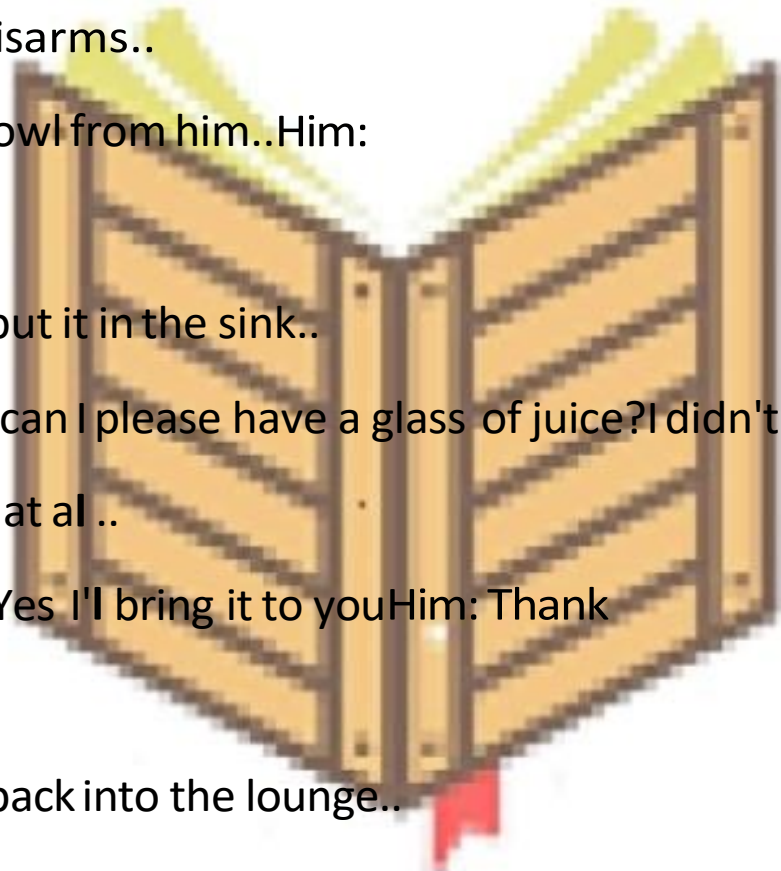
Him: Aunty can I please have a glass of juice? I didn't expect that at all ..

Me: Uhm.. Yes I'll bring it to you
Him: Thank you

He walked back into the lounge..

Such good manners and he was very polite.

I poured him a glass of juice and took it to him..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Here you go

Him: Thank you

He put it down on the floor..

Me: Why don't you put it on the coffee table?Him: It's

going to spil I don't have a cloth

Me: No it's fine.. You can put it on the table if itspil s I wil
give you a cloth to wipe

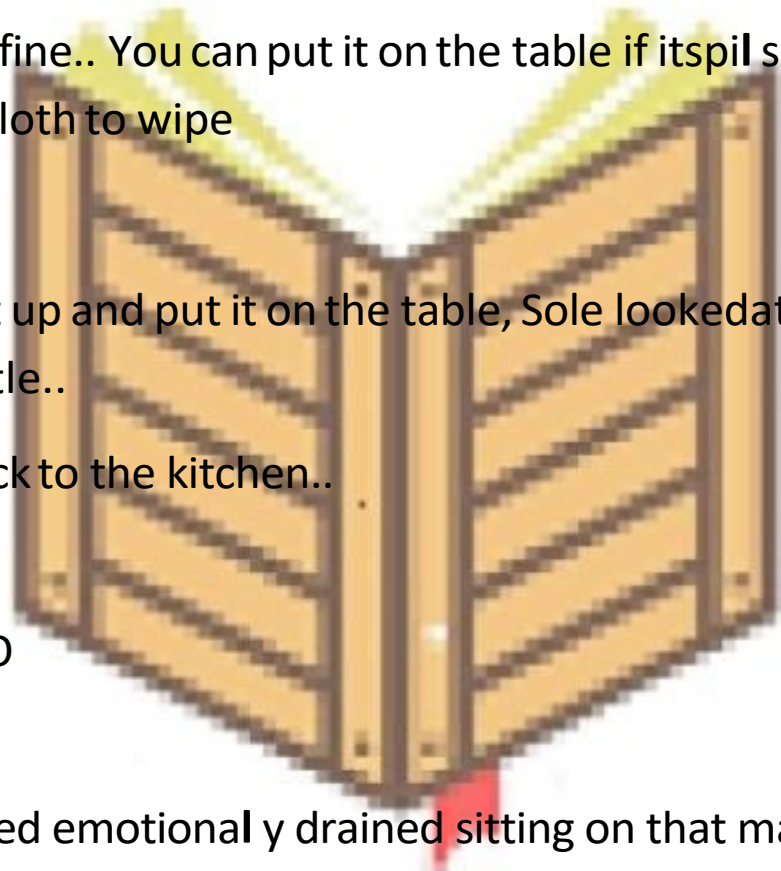
Him: Okay

He picked it up and put it on the table, Sole lookedat me and
smiled a little..

I walked back to the kitchen..

NONGCEBO

Grams looked emotional y drained sitting on that mattress.
Even when I greeted her, her reply was not as usual. I don't
blame her though, a lot has happened. First it was Kelso, now
herSon. She was



NOVELSGURU.COM

tired..

When two neighbours walked in, I walked out to make them a cup of tea and some scones. I waited for the water to boil. I looked at Kelso's room through the window, I don't think he was around because it was locked.

His car wasn't in the yard either...

SLI KHUMALO

Lindo walked in just when I was about to walk out..Him: Hey

Me: Hi

Him: Kunjani? (how are you)Me: I'm

good and you?

Him: I'm good

Me: Eyy asisakwazi (We don't know you anymore)Him: Ya I'm very busy these days

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: I see.. You must really be into her

Him: Whatever Sli.. Where is Nongcebo? I thought she was tagging along with you

Me: Nongcebo uhm.. She..Him:

She did what?

Me: Apparently Kelso's father passed onHim: So?

Me: Nongcebo went there to check up on the familyHim: She did what? And you let her go?

Me: Lindo listen..

Him: How can you let her go just like that? I trusted you with her!

Me: If I said no, she was going to hate me or still find a way to go back there

Him: Why would she go back there? I don't understand

Me: Look I think Nongcebo has Stockholm syndrome, it's very usual in women who have been

NOVELSGURU.COM

abused before

Him: Stockholm syndrome my left foot!

Me: We really have to approach this situation with caution

Him: I don't care even if she had the Mother of that condition, all I know is that I will go there and I pray when that Stockholm syndrome would've killed her before I get there, because if it doesn't I'm going to kill her myself!

Me: you need to calm down

Him: I'm not coming down for shit! You go to church and pray it away, I'm going to deal with it the best way I know how!

NONGCEBO

After making the tea and scones I took the key to his room and went there.. Immediately when I walked in, my heart was already beating fast threatening to beat out of my chest. I slowly walked

NOVELSGURU.COM

up to the bedroom, the duvet was changed. I looked around and looked at the corner of the room where I was chained.. I walked over and opened the curtains since it was a bit dark. I looked at the bed and imagined that scene between him and Neli, I needed to get out of here.

My breathing was even starting to be unstable... Just when I was about to walk out I heard him talking outside, I stepped back until I was against the window. I heard the door opening..

Kelso: Who opened my place

His voice alone sent me into a panic.

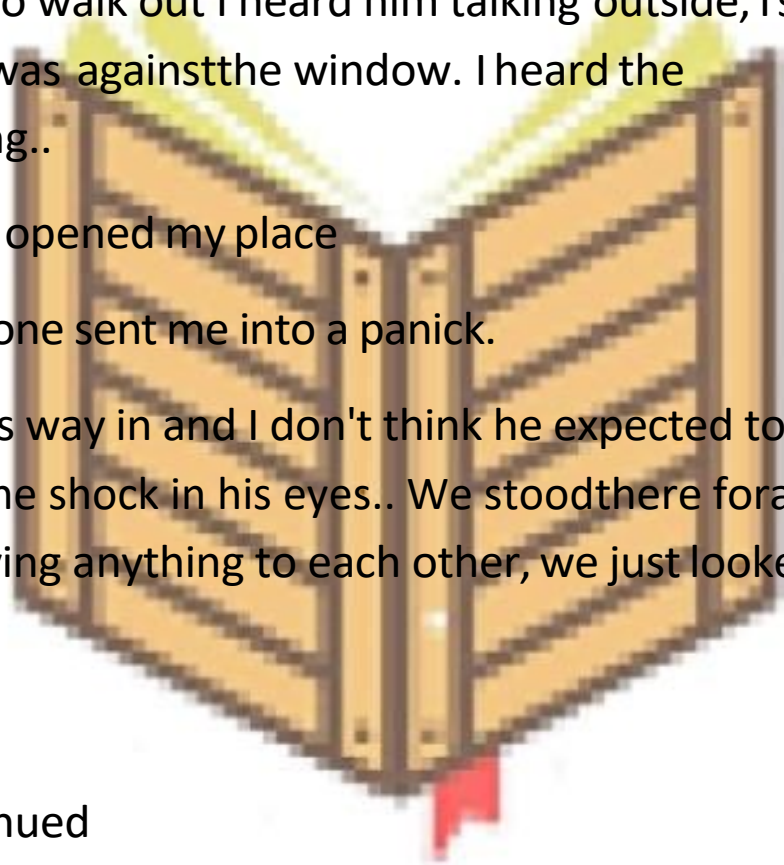
He made his way in and I don't think he expected to see me, I could see the shock in his eyes.. We stood there for a while without saying anything to each other, we just looked at each other...

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:39]

:98 **NOVELSGURU.COM**



BANZA

I was setting up the other room outside that I will be occupying, last night I slept on the couch at the dining room. My body was aching, tonight I need a thorough sleep. It was good to see that the other room had a bed seeing that I didn't come with one, it was a nice small room no lie. Very clean and only had the bed and a wardrobe. I have decided to give them my TV, they didn't have a TV at the house and my mother likes Dstv. Tomorrow I'll have to visit multichoice, so we can see if DSTV can't be installed..

My Mother walked in..

Ma: Looks like you settling in well, the room appears to be small though

I looked around..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It's good, at least it's warm

She nodded..

Ma: You need any help?

Me: No I'm okay

I looked at her..

Me: How are you feeling?

She sighed..

Ma: At peace. Last night I had a peaceful sleep, this morning when I woke up my legs didn't give me



NOVELSGURU.COM

much of a problem. My appetite is back, all that restlessness is gone

Me: I'm happy you feel that way, I can see that you are actually comfortable with being back at home

Ma: Are you comfortable with being here?

Me: I am. It's indeed peaceful, Umalume and his wife they are very welcoming and warm people

Ma: Your Uncle has always been like that

Me: When are you going to see the other one?

Ma: I don't know

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: We can go tomorrow

Ma: You have to go back to work, we can't really depend on your Uncle and his wife. They look like they're struggling a bit

Me: That's true

Ma: Let me leave you to finish up

Me: Thank you for finally accepting your gift

Ma: Thank you for being patient with me

Me: It's okay

She walked out..



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Looking at Kelso, I saw him different from how I initially met him the very first day at the mall. Yes he was an ass and all that but when we met there was a bit of good I saw in him, and today. I see him as the man that put me through shit, the man that was supposed to love and protect me. I suffered at his hand, this man said that he loved me but at the same time he treated me like trash, treated me like I was nothing but a dirty used piece of trash. He never for once grew a conscience and actually stopped in between, he brutalized me. Killed what was left of my sanity..

Kelso: Hi

I stood there with my eyes welling up...

Kelso: 'I'.. 'I' walk out and give you some space to

NOVELSGURU.COM

get whatever it is that you want to get

He put his hands in his pockets and walked to the door..

Me: I thought you loved me

He stopped but he didn't look at me...

Kelso: I loved you, I still do

Me: What you did to me was no love

Kelso: I hate myself everyday for what I did to you, no amount of sorry will make it better. If I had to go back and fix it all, I would. You are a wonderful woman, kind, full of love, caring and I was a messed up bastard. What I did to you had nothing to do with

NOVELSGURU.COM

you, it was all me. I was fighting my own demons and you were at the receiving end of it all. You didn't deserve that, and I never deserved you. I'm sorry Nongcebo, I pray that one day you will forgive me so that you can be able to heal. So that you can be able to let someone else in, someone who will love you better than I did

I took off my clothes..

Me: This is what you did to me!! This is a reminder that I have to live with everyday! Look at what you did to me!

Kelso: Nongcebo

Me: LOOK AT ME!!! (Screaming)

He turned and looked at me..

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: This is what you did to me! This was your definition of love!
This is what I have to live with everyday of my life!!! This is
how love was shown to me!! I have to go through this
everyday! Not you but me! I have nightmares! I can't even get a
decent sleep, everyday is a struggle! My own thoughts are
haunting me... A day doesn't go by without me thinking about
what happened, this is the kind of love that I live now! Whilst
you go on with yours!

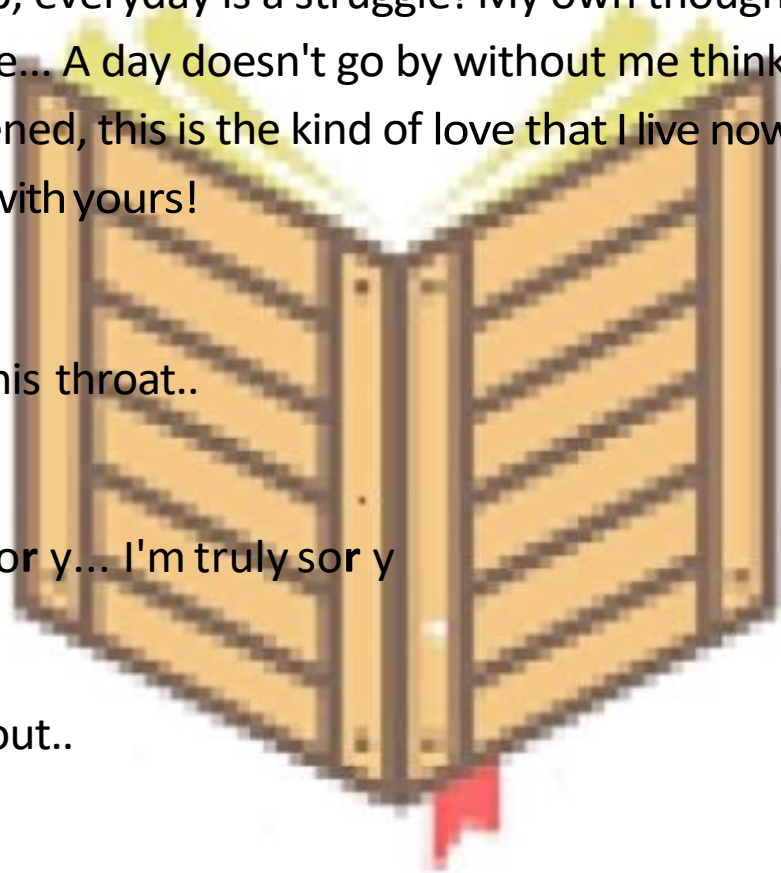
He cleared his throat..

Kelso: I'm sorry... I'm truly sorry

He walked out..

SANDISIWE

NOVELSGURU.COM



When I walked out of the bedroom Nathan was playing games alone in the lounge..

Me: Where is your Daddy?

Nathan: Sleeping

I thought about walking to the kitchen but I looked at him again..

Me: Would you like something to eat?

Nathan: No thank you maybe later

I walked over and sat next to him..

Nathan: Would you like to watch TV?



Me: Would you allow me to watch?

Nathan: Yes

Me: It's okay Baby.. Maybe later

Nathan: Okay

He was so humble just like his Father

Me: What are you playing?

Nathan: Grand theft auto

Me: It sounds brutal



NOVELSGURU.COM

He kept quiet..

Me: Maybe you can teach me later, how about that?

He nodded..

Me: Okay play your game and don't go outside

Nathan: Okay

I got up and made my way to the guest room, Sole was sleeping. I closed the door..

I walked up to the bed and took off my sleepers. I got in and laid next to him, I looked at him and ran my finger on his face.

He slowly opened his eyes..

Me: Hey

Sole: Hey

He put his arm around me..

I ran my hand down to his dick..

Sole: I thought you were mad at me

Me: I am mad at you

Sole: So why you up here harassing me?

Me: I'm mad at you not at your dick



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: You mad at me then you can't get my dick

I rubbed him and his dick picked up..

Sole: Isn't this classified under rape?

Me: Cal it what you want but I'm stil getting thatdick

He moved his hand up and squeezed my breast, I was wearing a long t-shirt and a bum short. I find his t-shirts more comfortable especial y now that I'm starting to get big, my clothes are starting not to get comfortable. I've been meaning to go and do shopping, but I've been busy..

He lifted the t-shirt up and got closer, stil squeezing one of my breasts he leaned over and sucked my tit..I snuck my hand inside his briefs and played with

NOVELSGURU.COM

his hard dick..

Now the problem is that this has to be the quickest sex because Nathan might just make his way..

I took off my t-shirt, and he helped me took off his briefs. I put my leg on him and his hand went down to massage my clit whilst still sucking my tit. I increased the pace of the Handjob and he moved down from my clit to my hole..

Sole: Damn you very wet

He rubbed his hand at the entrance of my coochie and I moaned, he came back up and kissed me.. I removed his hand from my coochie and then grabbed his dick. I guided him inside of me, then his hand squeezed my ass. He literally didn't pump.. He squeezed my cheeks..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: If I do this, you gonna drop al that attitude?

I nodded..

Sole: You can ask me anything about Nathan now and when we done I don't wanna talk about it

I nodded again..

He removed his hand from my cheeks and held my leg as he started pumping, I ran my hand on his chest..

This position was a bit restricting because of my bump, just slightly restricting so we opted for him to take it from the back. I turned and faced the other side as he took it from the back. He ran his hand on my tummy and whispered in my ear with his soft voice..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: Do you wanna ask anything?

Me: No..

Sole: Remember that this is your only chance to ask

Me: Do you love her?

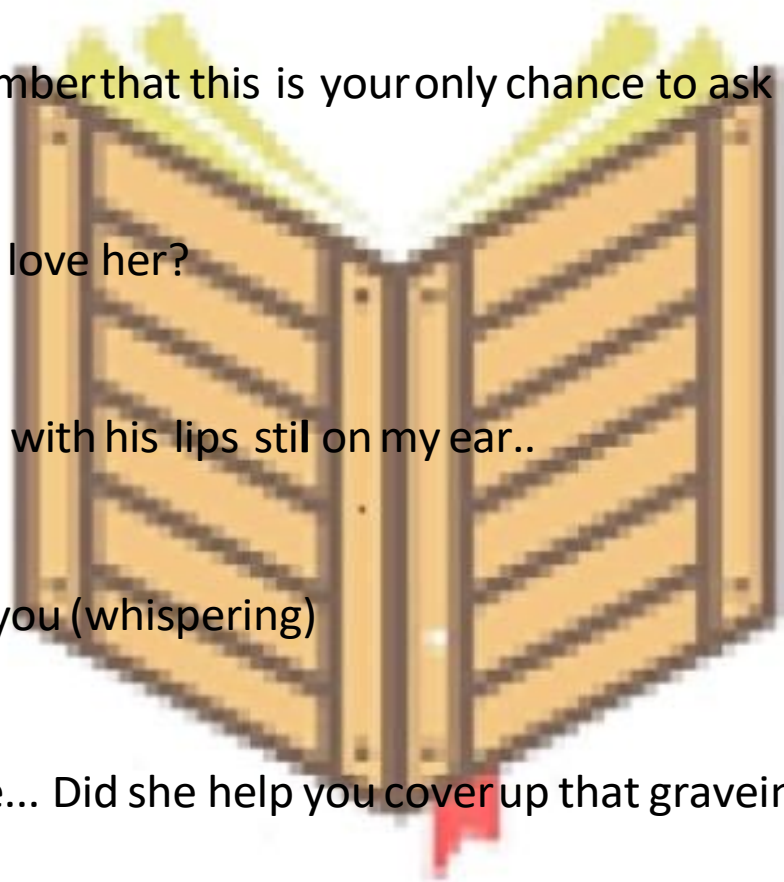
He pumped with his lips stil on my ear..

Sole: I love you (whispering)

Me: Did she... Did she help you cover up that grave incident story?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: This is about Nathan not her



Me: I wanna ask you about her

Sole: I'm not with her, so talking about her is useless

Me: I wanna talk about her

He increased his pace and squeezed my breast..

Sole: I don't wanna talk about her

Me: Do you still have feelings for her

He pumped me harder..

Me: Ahhhhhhhh!

NOVELSGURU.COM



Sole: My son is in the next room remember

He continued pumping me hard, and I tried so very hard to hold back but..

Me: Ahhhh Sole..

It was that damn good..

Sole: If you can't keep it together I'm going to stop

He moved down his hand and played with my clit as he continued pumping me..

Sole: Ohhh Shit you so wet baby.. (whispering)



I squeezed the pillow tight with my hand and closed my eyes as he continued to torture me and not wanting me to be loud..

NONGCEBO

After dressing up I walked out of the bedroom wiping my tears, he didn't go out. He was laying on the couch with his hands covering his face..

I walked up to the door..

Kelso: Can I hold you for one last time before you leave?

I touch the door handle..

Kelso: Please.. I just wanna hold you

NOVELSGURU.COM



I didn't say anything..

Me: Goodbye Kelso

Kelso: Ngcebo please

I turned around and he got up from the couch, he made his way to me. He got down on his knees and put his hands on my waist and pulled me closer. He laid his head on my stomach..

Him: I'm sorry.. Please forgive me

I would lie if I said I knew how I felt at this moment, he literally broke down..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: I'm so sorry

I closed my eyes and fought back my tears..

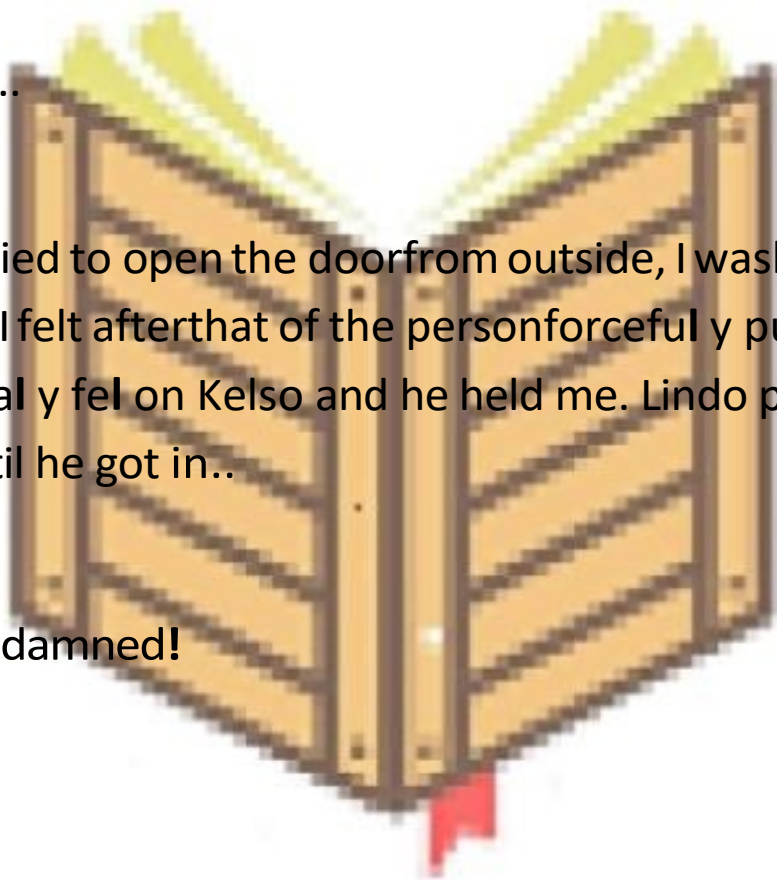
Kelso: I'm very sorry

I swallowed..

Someone tried to open the door from outside, I was blocking it. The impact I felt after that of the person forcefully pushing the door, I literally fell on Kelso and he held me. Lindo pushed through until he got in..

Lindo: I'll be damned!

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

[08/24, 13:40] : 99

NONGCEBO

Lindo was fuming, he total y lost his shit and attacked Kelso. He threw a punch after a punch, Kelso didn't even defend himself which I didn't understand why.. I tried to stop him but he wasn't backing down, what he was doing real y sent me back. It made me to visit my physical abusive state both from Makhathini and Kelso.. Things only got better when Gertrude and Ntombela stopped him. I don't even know when they got here..

Lindo real y did a number on Kelso..

Lindo: You come anywhere near my sister again I'm going to kill you!!

Gertrude: Go before I call the Police! Kelso and Gertrude are now best buddies?

Lindo grabbed my arm and then dragged me out of

there to the car..

Me: You don't have to drag me I can walk!

He opened the door and I got in, he banged it as he closed it. His behavior was unnecessary, these people are mourning and for him to just do that? He was seriously out of order..

SANDISIWE

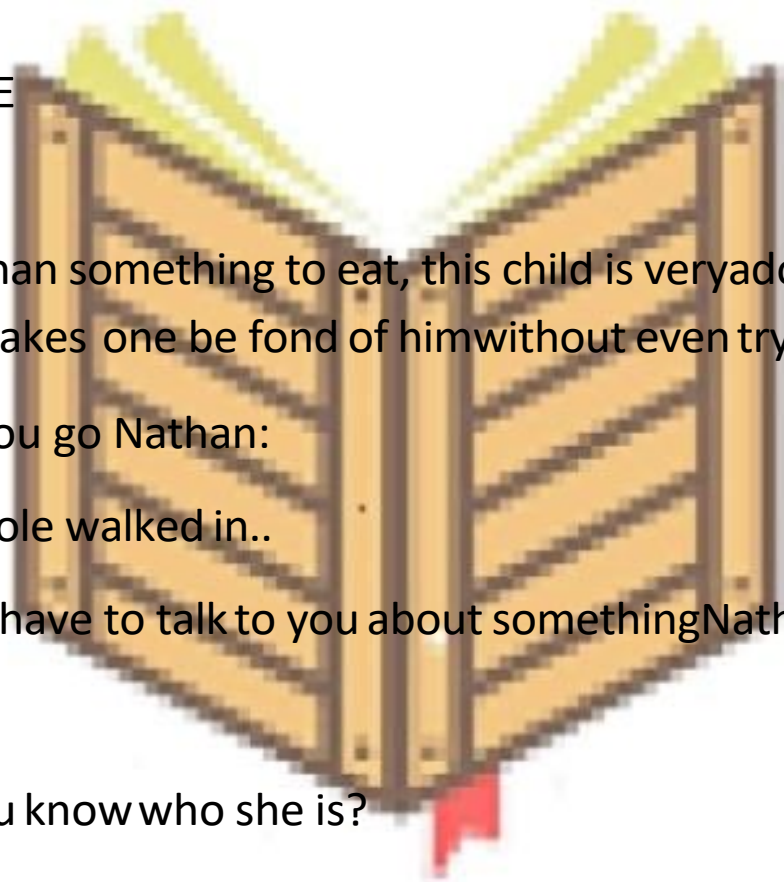
I made Nathan something to eat, this child is very adorable in all ways. He makes one be fond of him without even trying..

Me: Here you go Nathan:

Thank you Sole walked in..

Sole: Nath I have to talk to you about something Nathan looked at him..

Sole: Do you know who she is?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nathan shook his head..

Sole: She is Daddy's girlfriend, Aunty Sandi
Nathan nodded..

Sole: And she is going to bring you a little brother or a Sister
Nathan looked at his food..

Sole: Would you like a little Brother or sister?

Nathan: A little Brother, girls don't know how to play games
I laughed..Sole:

Ohw

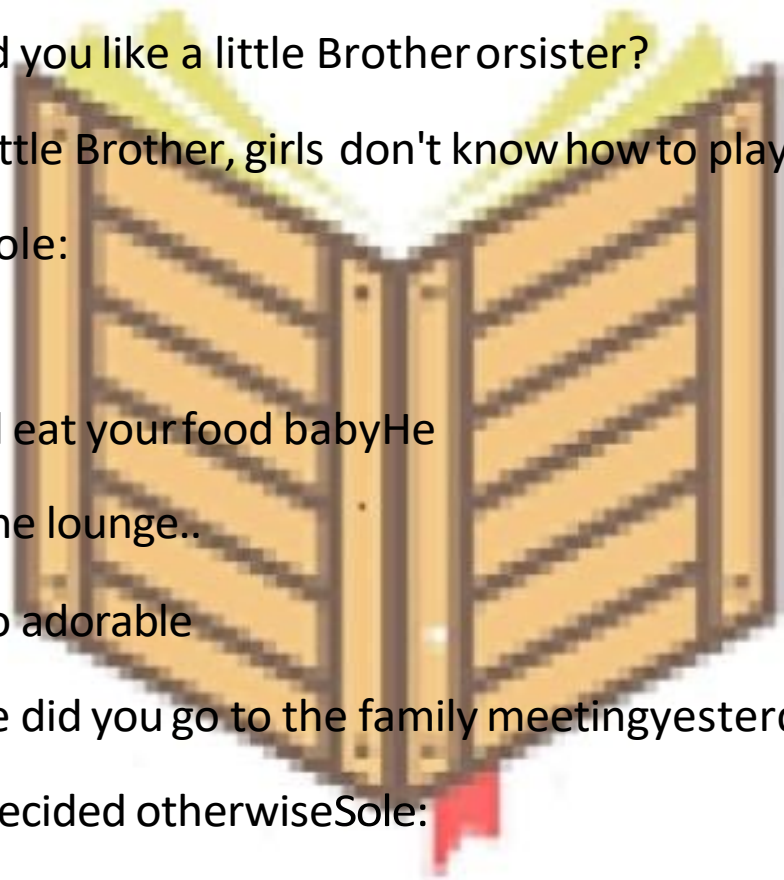
Me: Go and eat your food baby
He walked to the lounge..

Me: He is so adorable

Sole: Tel me did you go to the family meeting yesterday?

Me: No.. I decided otherwise
Sole:

Why?



Me: I don't want drama, I'm not in the mood for drama

Sole: I get what you saying

Me: Let me go and lie down for a bit
Sole:

Okay Sweets

I made my way to the bedroom..

KELSO

Gert: I can't believe he did that

Me: He was trying to protect his Sister

Gert: If you say that Nongcebo showed up on her own, he had no right to attack you

I didn't defend myself against Scorpion because I didn't want to make Nongcebo feel uncomfortable with the whole fight, I decided to let him be and let him have his way if it was going to make him feel better..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Gert: What did Nongcebo want?

Me: I don't know, I just found her here

Gert: Are you thinking of getting back together?

Me: Yes I would like that but a lot has happened between us, I don't think she will ever forget

Gert: I personally think that you should concentrate on yourself, attend therapy and concentrate on being a better person

Me: That's true

Gert: All done, I've managed to stop the bleeding
Me: Thank you

NONGCEBO

The drive home was intense, he was busy yelling at me as if like I was a 3 year old...

Lindo: You had no business being there in the first place



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: They my in laws

Lindo: I don't care! Have you forgotten what that bastard put you through? Now you running back to his arms? What the hell is your therapist doing?

Me: I am not a child!

Lindo: You are acting like a child and I swear the next time you do shit like this! I won't hesitate to put a bullet on him, you will visit him at the grave.. That I promise you!

BANZA

Judith was doing my Mom's hair. I didn't know she had such long hair, most of the time she used to wear a doek...

Me: Look at you, you look beautifulMa:

Thank you

Me: I didn't know you had such long hair

Judith: Nami ngithukile (I am also surprised)

Ma: There's no point in hiding it anymore

Judith: Umuhle Skwiza (You very beautiful) Ma:

Thank you

Judith: Kumele bakubone kahle manje, mhlambe uzothola elinye Isoka (They have to see you now, maybe you will find yourself a boyfriend)

Ma: Awungeke ngiguge so (I'm old now)

Judith: 45 usugugile ungazodlala wena (45 and you old, don't play like that)

Me: Mamncane is right though, you should start living your life

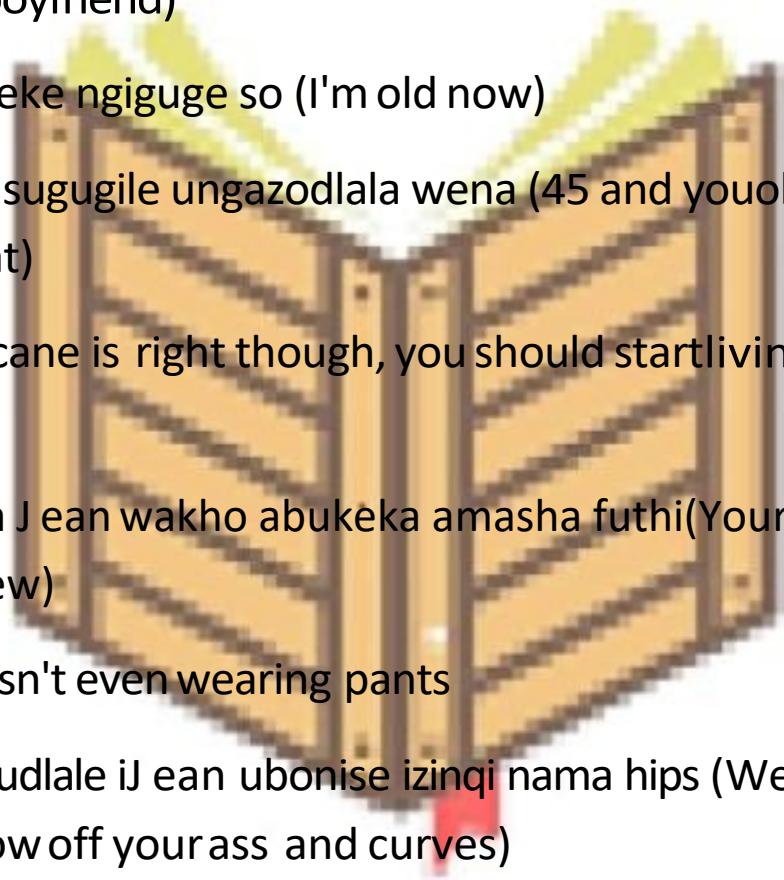
Judith: Ama Jean wakho abukeka amasha futhi (Your jeans they look new)

Me: She wasn't even wearing pants

Judith: uke udlale iJean ubonise izingqi nama hips (Wear your Jean and show off your ass and curves)

Judith: Ake nimeni (wait a minute) We al

laughed..



NOVELSGURU.COM

GAVENOR KHUMALO

The girls showed up at the kitchen as I was dishing up, they looked at me..

Me: Is everything okay?

Bongeka: Grandpa how old are you? Me: 60

Bongeka: Put 55, it doesn't even show that he's 60 Nessi: Got it

Bongeka: What are your hobbies?

Me: Why are you girls asking me all these questions? Bongeka: We are trying to find you a woman

Me: What?

Bongeka: We are trying to help

Me: What makes you think I want a relationship? Bongeka:

You look lonely and depressed, always in

your study alone.. So I decided that maybe if we could find you a woman your life will be comfortable

Me: I'm capable of finding my own woman

Bongeka: Where is she?

Me: Girls I understand that I am old and maybe I don't understand modern ways of finding a woman, I'm old school. I do things the old way

Bongeka: A love letter?

Nessi laughed..

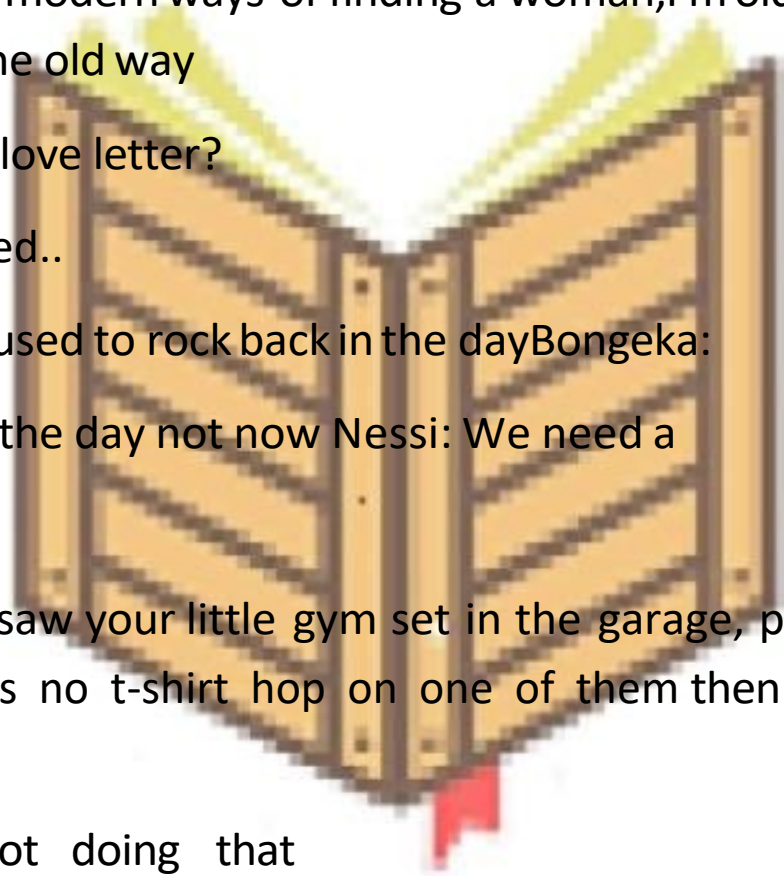
Me: Those used to rock back in the day Bongeka:

Yes back in the day not now Nessi: We need a picture

Bongeka: I saw your little gym set in the garage, put on some sweat pants no t-shirt hop on one of them then we take a picture

Me: I'm not doing that

Bongeka: Come on NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: What will it take for you two to leave me alone? They both held my hands..

Bongeka: Come on it'll be fun live a little

Me: I pray none of my kids bring me any Grandchildren if this is what I have to suffer, I am a Governor of a Prison I don't have to do to this

Bongeka: Put that on his profile Nessi:

Got it!

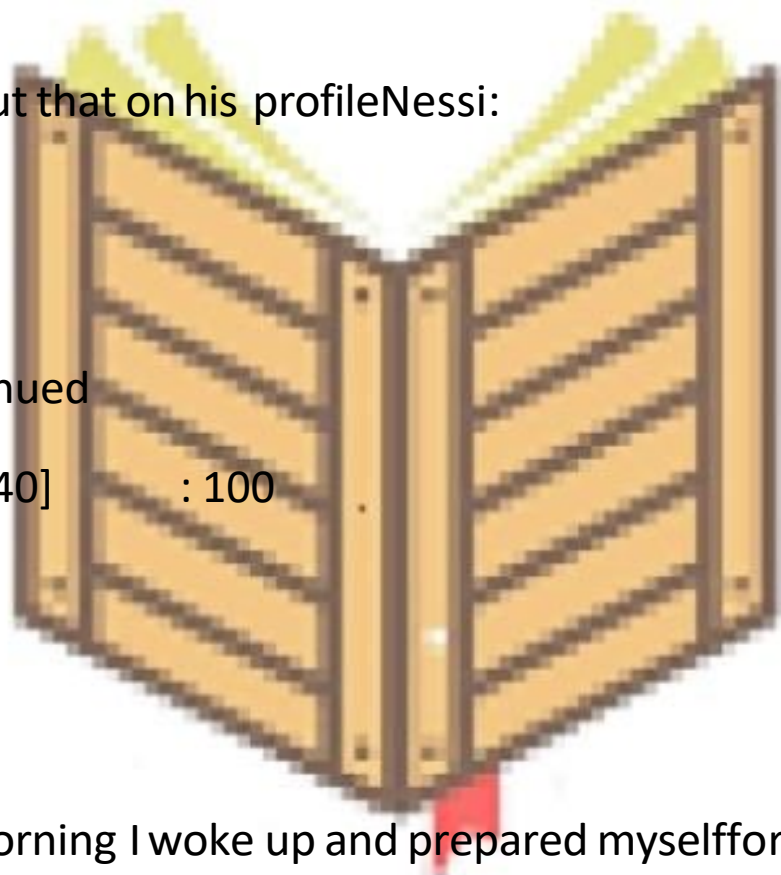
.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:40] : 100

BANZA

The next morning I woke up and prepared myself for the day. First I will drop off my Mother and Aunt Judy at the Prison so they can see my Uncle, I won't be able to pick them up they will come back



NOVELSGURU.COM

on their own. I will only give them money for taxi fare.. I was standing at the kitchen leaning against the cupboard when my Mother walked in, I almost didn't even recognize her. She was wearing a blue denim skinny Jean, boots and a t-shirt that she tucked in with a leather jacket matching her brown boots in colour. She had tied her hair into a ponytail with an eye brow that you couldn't miss.. One would deny that this woman is a Mother to a 27 year old grown man. I have never seen her in this state, mostly at home she was wearing long dresses, a doek, a mini blanket around her waist trying to be a respectful pastor's wife..

Ma: Good morning

Me: I am sorry but who are you? What did you do with my Rachel?

She chuckled..

Ma: Awukahle

Me: You look beautiful, now I am afraid that you will be mistaken for my sister instead of my mother

Ma: Ihaba Banza (You exaggerating)

Aunty Judith walked in..

Judith: Sesinghamba (We can go)Ma:

Ohh I forgot my ring

Judith: Awuyeke iRing (forget the ring)Ma: I am

still a married woman

Judith: Akukho married lana Sisi, awuyeke ukuziphatha for indonda ekulahlile (You not married anymore, stop being faithful to a man who dumped you)

Ma: But we not divorced yet

Judith: Awukahle ukuganga Rachel (Stop playing around)

My Aunt took the Tupperware from the table..

Judith: Naleyongiyilahlile (I threw that ring away)

Me: Wait.. We going to need a picture

Judith: Yenza uthathe sizohamba (Take the pictureso we can go)

WILSONIA (COCO)

I opened the door and Nathan ran into my arms... Me: Hello Bokkie! I've missed you so much Nathan: I've missed you too

Me: Let me look at you.. Did you have fun? He nodded..

Sole: We had fun Me: I'm glad you did I hugged him..

Me: I've missed you so much

Nathan: I've missed you too

Me: Go put your things in the bedroom okay? Nathan:

Okay

NOVELSGURU.COM

He ran to his bedroom...

Me: So how was the weekend?



Sole: It was good.. Thank you for letting him come over

Me: No problem

Sole: I would like to have him this weekend Me: I don't know, this weekend we have plans Sole: What plans?

Me: I met some guy, he has a kid too.. This weekend he asked me out on a date, he's bringing his kid too so I have to bring Nathan along

Sole: Yaa that's not going to happen I smiled..

Me: I wasn't asking for your permission

Sole: And I am telling you that my Son is not tagging along

Me: All of a sudden, your Son? Where were you again all these years when I was raising him alone?

He threw Nathan's bag at me..

Sole: My Son is not tagging alone, if you wanna see

NOVELSGURU.COM

what I'm made of do this shit and you will never see Nathan ever again!

Me: Are you threatening me?

Sole: You know I don't do threats, my word is my law

He walked up to the door..

Me: "My word is my law" my left foot! Where was your ass for all these years?

He stopped and looked at me.. Sole: Are you saying something? Me: I said have a

nice day

Sole: Have a nice day too... I'll be coming later to check on my Son

His eyes went down on me... Sole:

And my pussy

He walked out and closed the door. I laughed whilst shaking my head..



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Since things aren't really good between Lindo and I, Sli was driving me to the therapist this morning..

Sli: How are you? You very quiet

Me: Do you think therapy is working? Sli:

Why?

Me: I still love my husband very much and I also hate him for what he did to me

Sli: When we found you, you were in a very bad state. Nongcebo he had another woman there with him, whilst you were chained like a dog.. You were close to dying and I don't think that's love. For all it's worth you guys were in a toxic relationship, he was toxic to you

Me: I know but.. I am damaged Sli, who is going to love me?

Sli: There is and will be a man out there who is going to love you. For now, how about you concentrate on yourself?

Concentrate on your

NOVELSGURU.COM

healing, concentrate on reconnecting with you again

I nodded..

Sli: I understand you were with him when you had no one, and you will always see him as your savior. Talk to your therapist about this, your feelings for your husband. He is well knowledgeable and he will know how to help you through the process better than anyone else

Me: I'll talk to him

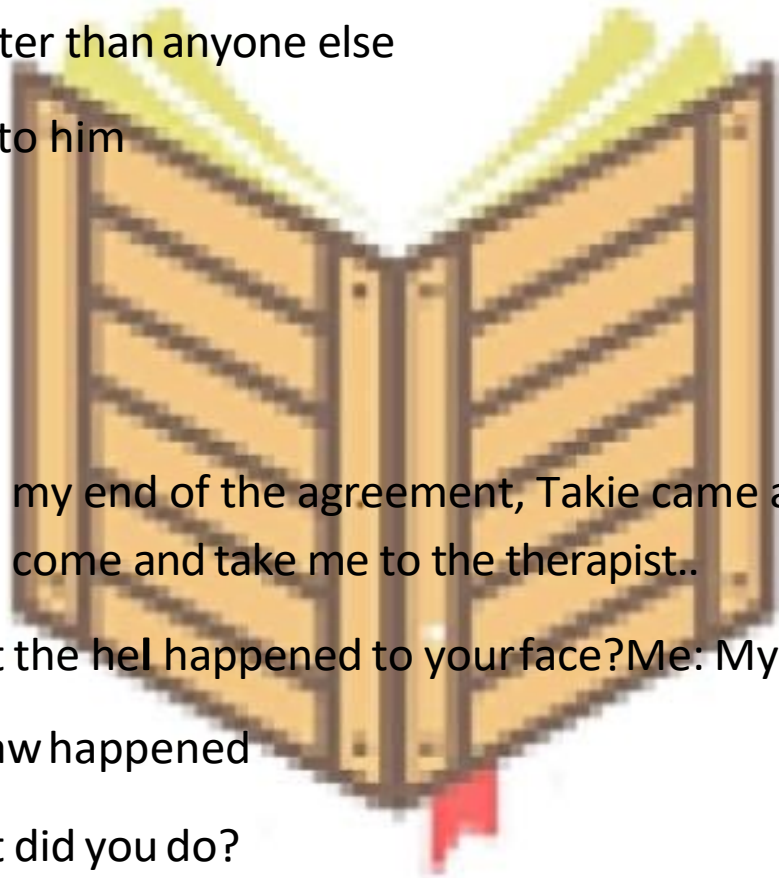
KELSO

I lived up to my end of the agreement, Takie came as promised to come and take me to the therapist..

Takie: What the hell happened to your face? Me: My brother in law happened

Takie: What did you do?

Me: I did nothing.. My wife stopped by yesterday



NOVELSBURU.COM

and her brother came to fetch her and the rest is self explanatory

Takie: Tell me more about her

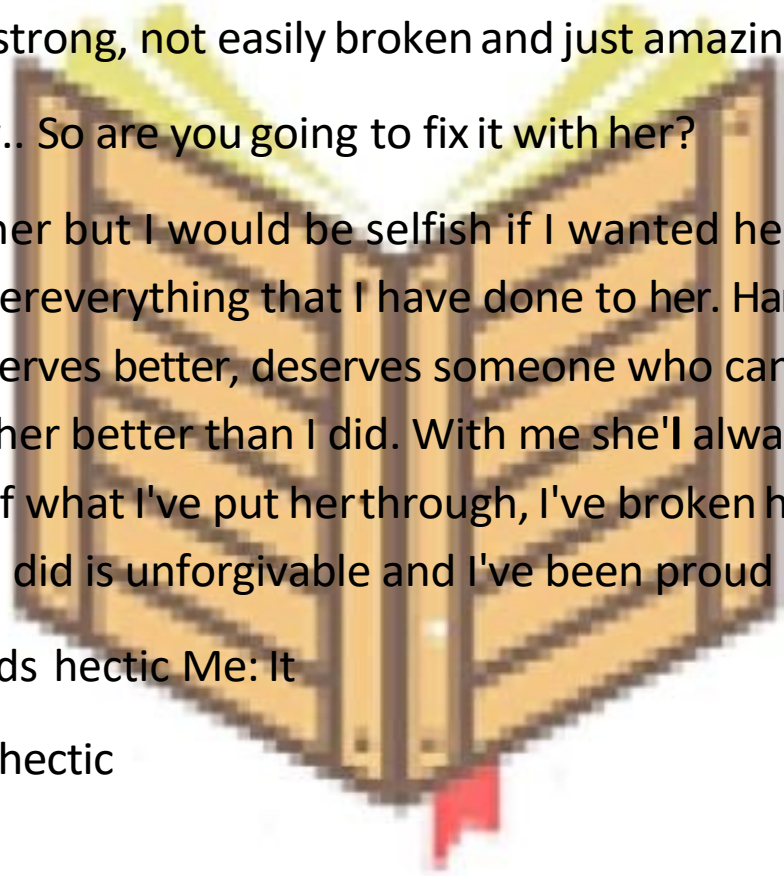
Me: She's very beautiful. Humble, kind, loving and caring. She cares more about others than she does for herself, she's a great cook, has a smile that can brighten your day. Smart, ambitious, strong, not easily broken and just amazing

Takie: Wow.. So are you going to fix it with her?

Me: I love her but I would be selfish if I wanted her to stay with me after everything that I have done to her. Hard as it is but she deserves better, deserves someone who can love and appreciate her better than I did. With me she'll always be reminded of what I've put her through, I've broken her to the core. What I did is unforgivable and I've been proud to admit it

Takie: Sounds hectic Me: It

is.. It's very hectic



SANDISIWE

Anele: Good morning Me:

Morning

Anele: How are you? Me:

I'm well and you?

Anele: I'm good.. How was your weekend? Me: It was good.. Yours?

Anele: It was good too.. I have a story wanna tag along?

Me: I would love too but I have to finish my column Anele: You can finish when we come back

Me: Ya you right, I need some fresh air.. What is it about?

Anele: Heist... Happened a while back we even late Me: Nice..

Sounds interesting

Anele: Trust me, it is



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Then what are we waiting for? Let's go
Anele:
Let's go

GAVENOR KHUMALO

I heard a knock at the door... Me:

Come in

The door opened..

Warden: Gavenor

Me: What is it?

Warden: There's an inmate that has visitors Me: So?

Warden: The inmate is in solitary confinement Me:

Again? So?

There was silence for a few seconds..

Voice: We were told that we can't see him, I totally understand. All I was asking for was for him to be

NOVELSGURU.COM

given this food that we brought for him

I moved my eyes from the file to the sound of her voice...

Her: I apologize if this is inappropriate I looked at her..

Me: It's not appropriate at all

She walked up and put the Tupperware on my table.. Her: Thank you for your time Sir, God bless

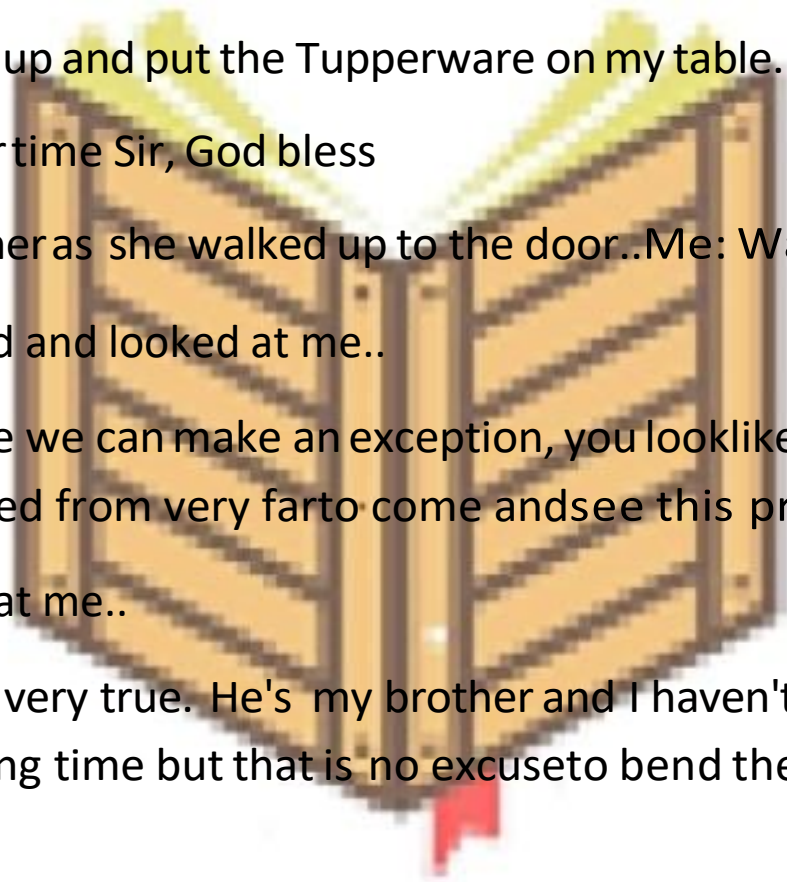
I looked at her as she walked up to the door.. Me: Wait

She stopped and looked at me..

Me: I'm sure we can make an exception, you look like you have traveled from very far to come and see this prisoner

She smiled at me..

Her: That's very true. He's my brother and I haven't seen him for a very long time but that is no excuse to bend the rules



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Please I insist

Her: You are very kind.. Thank you Sir

I took the Tupperware and walked up to her..Me:

What is his name?

Her: Mthetheleli KhuzwayoMe:

Let's go and see him Her: Thank

you very muchI walked out after

her..

Me: Warden.. My keys please

Warden: Yes Sir

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:41] : 101



NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM

DrKhatri was running a bit late, Sli and I sat at the

reception waiting for him. She was reading some magazines and I was on Facebook keeping busy. Only a few minutes left for him to walk in, apparently he had a problem with his car so his assistant informed us.. As we were sitting there waiting, Kelso walked in with some girl.

To say I was shocked would be an understatement. He looked at me and I looked at him, the girl turned him so that they can talk to the assistant. I sat there confused, with a lot of questions running through my mind. I know there's something called a "coincidence" this was far beyond a coincidence.

After they were done talking to the assistant, they went and sat on the other couch facing us. The girl took one of the magazines, crossed her legs and paged through. To avoid further awkwardness I went back to my phone..

RACHEL (BANZA'S MOTHER)

I haven't seen my Brother for years, the last time I

NOVELSGURU.COM

saw him was after my wedding day. When I was set to go to my new home..

This was far by the best moment of my life, words can't even explain the emotions that were running through both of us. I even saw tears from his eyes..

My brother has always been trouble, he has been involved in the life of crime. He was doing petty theft, mugging people then moved to house break-ins. He was lucky that mob Justice never visited him..

Him: Hau Sisi uma bathi izimanga azikho bazabe bakhuluma amanga (if they say there's no miracle then they'll be lying)

Me: Kuhle ukukubona (It's good to see you again) Him: Waze wamuhle dadewethu (you look beautiful) Me: Ngiyabonga (Thank you)

Him: Ngimangele nje bavumile ukuthi ungibone, sibonge okhokho (I'm surprised they allowed you to see me, I thank the ancestors)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Usakhuluma ngo khokho umshado wami uphelile, ngibuyele ekhaya nje ukuzovuma isipho Sami (Speaking about the ancestors, my marriage is over. I am back at home to accept my gift)

Him: Bese kuyiso isikhathi (It was about time)

Me: Bekungakuhle ukuthi ubekhona (it would be nice if you were going to be there)

Him: Sizathini isimo sisi (What can we say, it's life)

Me: Kuhle nje ukuthi uRight (It's good that you are okay)

Him: Kuyancengeka (I'm trying)

SANDISIWE

We got to the road where the heist took place. They haven't removed the car that caught fire, the truck was still there and traces of blood were here too..

Anele: These people are pros Me:

Huh?

Anele: They caused this accidentMe:

Really?

He nodded..

Me: I wouldn't have known, I'd think that it was just a normal accident

As Anele was taking pictures, a black classy car pulled up. It parked right behind the truck.

Me: Who is that?

Anele stood on his feet..

Anele: I don't know, we about to see

The driver got out first. He was dressed in a black suit. Had an earpiece, he opened the back door then this white good looking man got out. He was wearing a flashy suit too, one that looked to be specially designed for him. He was holding a cane, then he limped his way to us.. He was good looking! won't lie..

Him: Good dayUs:

Good day

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: My name is Andre Martinez

Anele:
Mr Martinez

I looked at Andre.. Andre:

Who are you?

Anele: I am Anele, I'm a journalist. This is my colleague
Sandisiwe

He walked up to me and stretched out his hand. I stretched
out mine to him and he kissed it..

Andre: It's a pleasure to meet you Señorita
nodded..

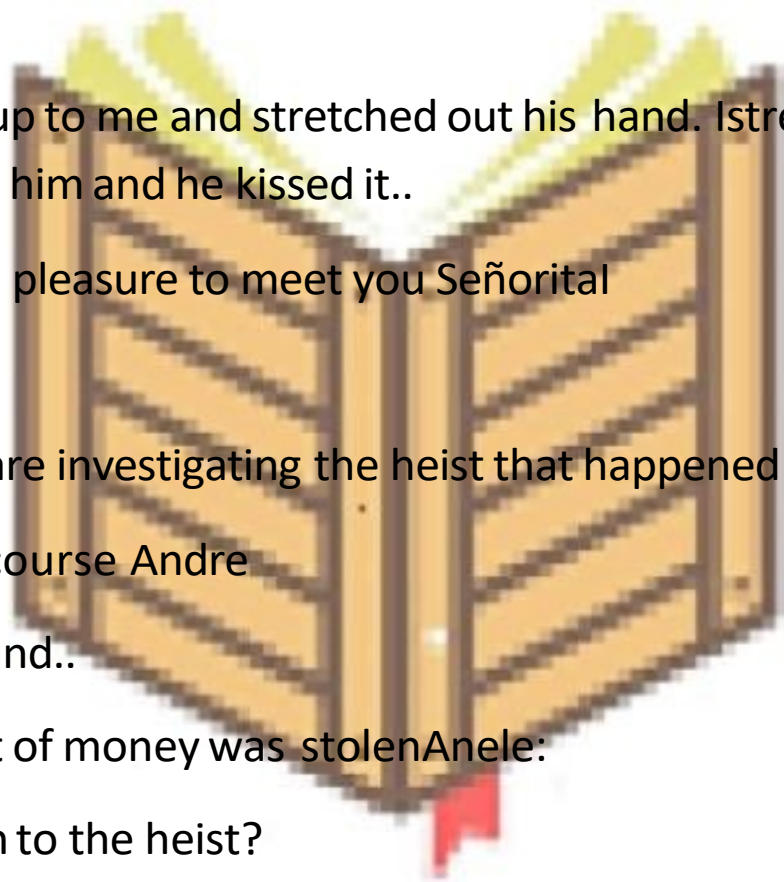
Anele: We are investigating the heist that happened here

Andre: Of course
Andre
looked around..

Andre: A lot of money was stolen

Anele:
Any relation to the heist?

Andre: All the money that was stolen is mine
Anele: I see



Me: Where was it going?Andre:

To my vault

Me: What happened to a bank account Andre: I store
my money everywhere Señorita

Anele: Any ideas on who did this? Perhaps an enemy?

Andre: My foes know very well not to mess with me, whoever did
this doesn't know me very well

Me: That sounds like a threat

Andre: I'm afraid not.. A Señor like me doesn't do threats

Anele: I hope you don't mind us being here

Andre: Of course not, you are mainly doing your jobAnele:

Thank you

Anele went on to take pictures..Andre:

How far along are you?

Me: About 7 months

Andre: Kids are very precious



Me: You have kids of your own? Andre: No

I don't

Me: How come?

Andre: It's a story for another day Señorita Me:

Ohw

Andre: Is the Father present? Me:

Yes he is

Andre: Lucky are you Señorita, you must be enjoying your pregnancy

Me: Yes I am.. Thank you

NONGCEBO

Dr Khatri finally walked in to do away with the awkwardness that was in the room. I was very surprised with Kelso's actions. He seems to not be able to pull his pants up. What happened to Neli? I don't understand him at all. Can't he just be single



NOVELSGURU.COM

and no woman involved in his life? Does he always need a woman to validate his dominance?

His actions are disgusting, now he wants to put this girl through what he put me through?

They were very comfortable with each other. As much as he was dominant but this girl brought out that soft side to him. That playfulness, the not so popular smile and laughter. They were very comfortable with each other..

Assistant: Mrs Nongcebo Bhembe, Dr Khatri will see you now

I got up..

Sli: I'll wait for you here Me:

Okay

I walked up to his office..

RACHEL (BANZA'S MOTHER)

NOVELSGURU.COM

The Gavenor walked in..

Gav: I'm sor y but the time is up

Brother: Ngiyabonga Sisi ukuza kwakho (Thank youmy Sister forcoming)

Me: Ngibonga nje ukukubona (I'm happy that I wasable to see you)

Brother: Kanti nokudla bekumnandi, ibhodo usalishaya (The food was delicious too, you stilknow how to cook)

Me: Aww kanti ngizokulethela okunye (I wil bringmore for you)

He got up and we hugged..

Me: Uziphathe kahle (take care of yourself) Brother:

Ngizokwenza njalo (I wil do so)

We broke the hug.. Mthetheleli looked at the Gavenor..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Brother: Ngiyabonga (Thank you)

The Gavenor nodded..I was escorted out..

Gav: I'm sor y if this is going to sound somehow but.. Your brother complimented your cooking skill s

Me: Ohwyes I love cooking

Gav: We are short staffed at the kitchen, we have put out a post. We need more cooks, I don't know if you would like to come into our kitchen

Me: Huh?

Gav: We had inmates at the kitchen but then they were able to sneak in drugs hide them with the veges that get delivered, so I decided to hire people from outside these wal s

Me: I don't know.. I haven't been to prison before, this place looks scary

Gav: I understand but know that you wil be protected, I'll personal y see to it

We both looked at each other..

Gav: In that way you wil be able to see your brother

more often, that's if you want the job

Things aren't looking up at home. My Brother and his wife don't have good jobs. Me taking this job will help us a lot financial y and Banza won't be that much strained. Plus I can save up to buy what's needed for my ceremony..

Me: I can give it a try

Gav: Thank you so much.. You can start tomorrow, just bring in your CV at 8am

Me: I'll do that.. Thank you very much, you are a very kind man

Gav: No thank you

There was an awkward silence..

Me: Guess I'll see you tomorrow morning
Gav: Yes please, and thank you again

I smiled at him..

The Warden continued to escort me out..

To be continued

[08/24, 13:42] : 102

NONGCEBO

Dr: Should we pick up where we left off? Me: Can I ask you something?

Dr: You can ask me anything

Me: What is my husband doing here? Dr: I'm sorry?

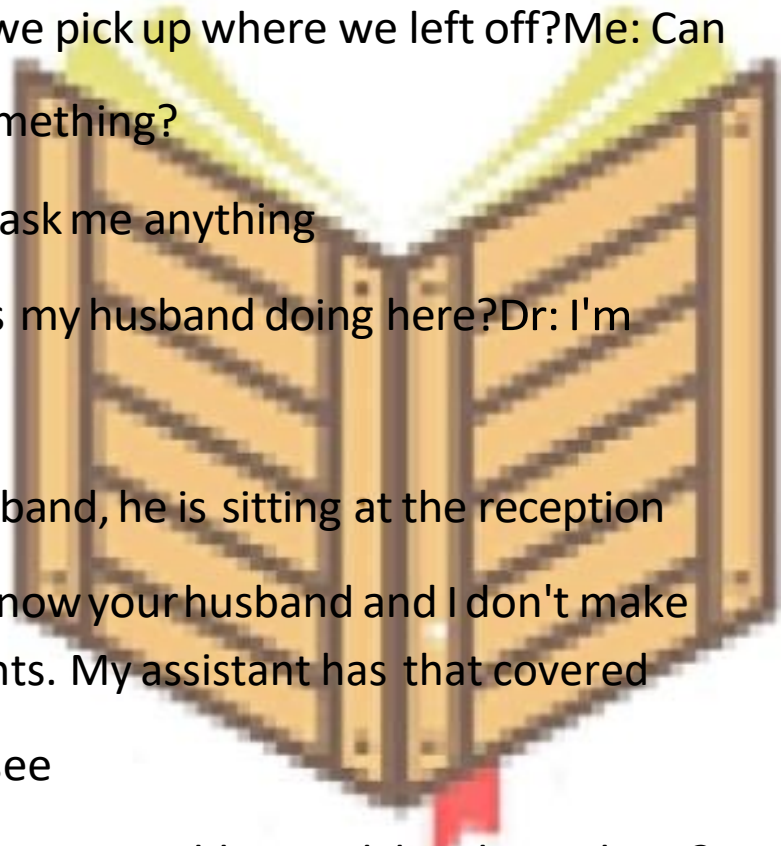
Me: My husband, he is sitting at the reception

Dr: I don't know your husband and I don't make appointments. My assistant has that covered

Me: Ohw I see

Dr: Do you have a problem with him being here?

Me: Not entirely I just.. I'm surprised. Kelso is, this is not his type of thing. Therapy he's way too proud for that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dr: Do you see the problem with that?Me: No

Dr: You claim to know him and in actual fact you don't know him. See this is the situation, you are here. This is your session but you feel the need to talk about him, that's because your life still revolves around him. Why do you feel the need to be with a man for self validation?

Me: I don't know

Dr: If he wants you back, would you take him back?

Me: Honestly speaking I had an encounter with him and.. I have never seen him so genuine, so sincere, so emotional. A part of me was softened but another part of me can't forget what he did to me

Dr: When we first discussed your relationship with him, you said that you got with him because you were running away from your previous relationship. It was a matter of finding stability and in the process you ended up falling in love with him

Me: That's true

NOVELSGURU.COM

Dr: Do you understand why it's important to take a break after a separation?

Me: Not really

Dr: When you have been with someone especially in your case. You easily become emotionally dependent to that person. When you separate from that person, you take a break to find yourself again. Learn to be emotionally independent so that when you get into another relationship you know exactly who you are and you won't repeat the same mistakes. Taking time to heal and gather yourself helps your mind to detox from that person. You learn to fall in love with you again, learn to see your worth. Once you have learned to fall in love with yourself again it won't be easy for you to be stuck in a relationship that is toxic for you. There's people you forgive and let go, then there's people you forgive and still keep in your life. I am not saying that he doesn't deserve a second chance but the question is, is he worth that second chance? That night you almost died but Divine power gave you a second chance. A second chance not to repeat the

NOVELSGURU.COM

same mistake, but a second chance to right your wrongs and learn from the past. People come into our lives for 2 reasons only. They either a blessing ora lesson. He was definitely a lesson, a painful one to be more exact. So that when you think of going back to your past, you wil think of the pain you endured. You don't need to live in fear anymore,your stability is not threatened anymore. You have a family now and you wil always have a home. This is the time to find yourself, fal in love with yourself and work on building yourself. I bet you al the money in the world, he is not here for you. He is here for himself, to fix himself so he becomes a better person for himself and possibly forthe next person. If you and him were meant to be, then Devine selection wil make it happen in it's own terms and not yours or his. Don't go through life waiting forthe outcome of you two getting back together, go through life and learn to conquer al lifestruggles on your own. This is the time for you to connect with you, and not the time to hold on to thepossibility of you two getting back together. You arenot a rehabilitation center for a broken man and you

NOVELSGURU.COM

cannot continue to make excuses for him. He abused you and that was his choice. There's no excuse nor justification in the world that will make what he did right because it's not right. You were not the trigger you were a victim, and now you need to work on healing what he broke because only you, can help you to get better. There's a saying that says "When you helping someone, don't try harder than the person". We can only do much but most work has to come from you. Only you understand how much damage was done, and only you can repair that damage. You are not a victim anymore, you are a survivor...

SANDISIWE

As we were driving back to the office, I couldn't stop thinking about Mr Martinez. Such a gentleman, very humble and knows exactly how to address a woman. His manners are very charming, his manners are rare. I applaud him for the way that he

NOVELSGURU.COM

addressed me..

Me: Anele?

Anele: Yes?

Me: It looks like you know a bit about Mr Martinez

Anele: He is the richest Italian man in South Africa everyone knows about him

Me: I don't

Anele: Wel he owns a very successful hotel, he is a member of a group known as the DL (Dark Lords) they very rich Men from al over. China, Tokyo, France, Italy.. J ust to name a few

Me: What is the group al about?

Anele: There were accusations that they sel weapons to fund wars and also they run a sextrafficking business

Me: What?

Anele: Never been exposed because there's no proof, they hide their dirty business very wel . Thisheist is messy that's why Andre came through, it

has created a lot of mess for them and he will be coming for revenge for those involved

Me: Sounds dangerous

Anele: It is

Me: If it's like that, why did he allow you to run the story?

Anele: Andre is tricky, there's a bit of a benefiting purpose that this article might do for him

Me: I see

Anele: We need to be very careful
Me: It looks that way

SOLE

Scorpion stopped by to come and see me, it's been a minute since I last saw him...

Scorp: Home boy hasn't come for your life? Me: No..

How is your sister doing?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Scorp: She's.. She's fucking up big time she's still hung up on him

Me: Give it time and give him time

My phone rang, it was a private number. I picked up..Me: Hello?

Voice: That money you and your friends stole, you didn't steal from Cosa Nastro. You stole from me! Did he put you up to this? That money was a payment from him to me

Me: Who is this?

Voice: Señor I want my money back with immediate effect

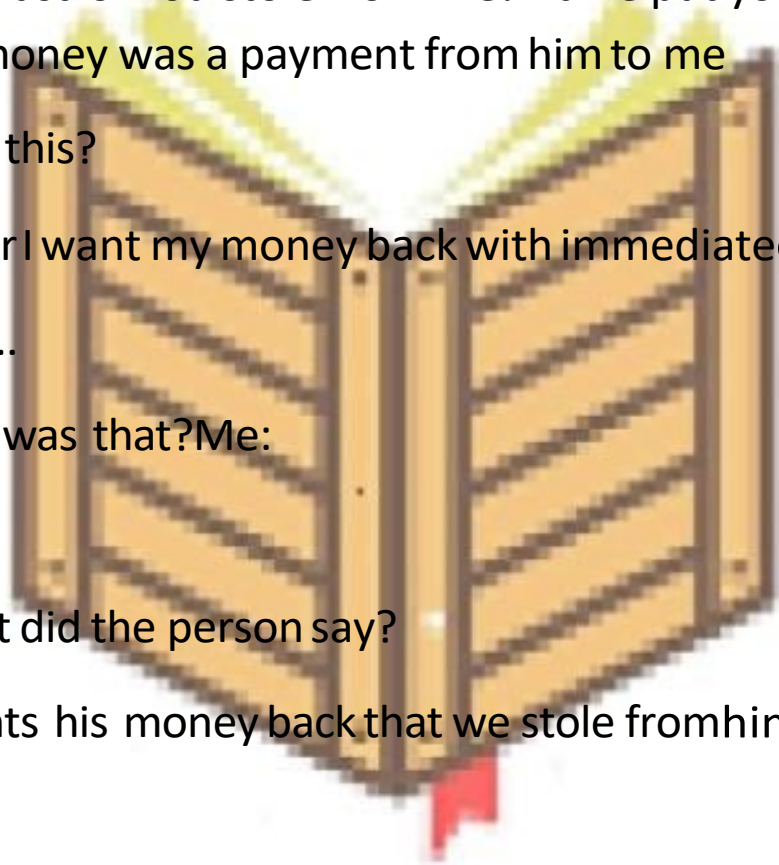
He hung up..

Scorp: Who was that? Me:

I'm not sure

Scorp: What did the person say?

Me: He wants his money back that we stole from him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Scorp: He must kick rocks! He's not getting anything from us

Me: How did he know it was us?

Scorp: I don't know pretty much don't care

Me: This doesn't make sense and it doesn't feel right, we might have opened a can of worms

NONGCEBO

Dr Khatri said a mouthful, basically his first time saying more than 3 words. He gave me a lot to think about.. I walked out of his office

Me: Thank you a lot

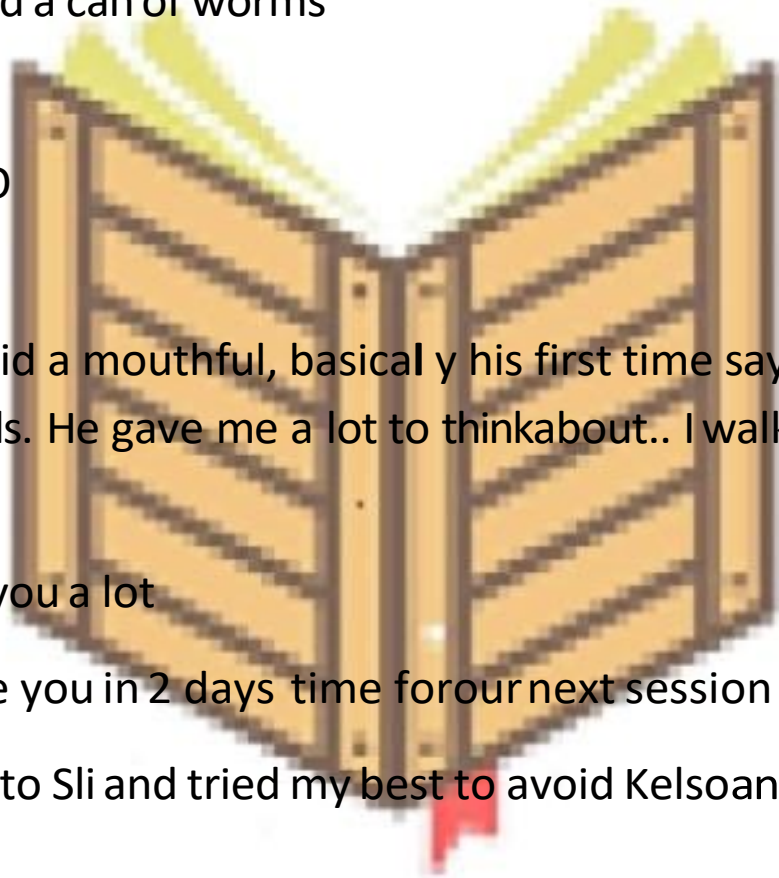
Dr: I will see you in 2 days time for our next session

I walked up to Sli and tried my best to avoid Kelso and his girlfriend..

Sli: How was it?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It was good.. I enjoyed today's session



Sli: I'm glad you did
Me: We should go

Sli got up and we walked away..Voice:

Nongcebo

I stopped and turned back, it was the girl that Kelso came with. He had walked into Dr Khatri's office..

She walked up to me..

Her: My name is Takie, Kelso's Sister or half sister
Me: Ohw

Takie: I've had a lot about you, and I'm pleased to meet you

Me: I'm pleased to meet you too

Takie: I'm sorry if this whole situation caught you off guard or made you feel uncomfortable

Me: It's okay.. I can't choose who Dr Khatri sees

Takie: I don't know my Brother that well but.. He is really trying and he feels horrible about what he did to you, I'm not justifying his actions al I'm asking

NOVELSGURU.COM

for is for you to forgive him. If you can forgive him he will find the strength to move on from this

Me: I admire what you are doing but.. What happened is between Me and him, I would like it to remain like that

She nodded..

Takie: Total y.. I'm truly sorry if I came across as rude

Me: It's okay.. Enjoy the rest of your day Takie:

You too

KELSO

This was new to me, honestly speaking if it wasn't for what I did to Nongcebo I wouldn't even consider doing this.. I have always frowned upon therapy, I've always seen it as a waste of time and money..

Dr: I am Dr Khatri Me:

Kelso



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dr: Before we start I believe that you are aware of your wife being my patient too. I shall not discuss her with you or what goes down in our sessions. You are mainly here for you and not to interrogate me about your wife

Me: Understood

Dr: What brings you here?

Me: Honestly speaking I don't know

Dr: What happened that you felt the need to seek therapy?

Me: I.. I abused my wife, I know she's off limits but..I'm here because of what happened between us after realizing what I did to her I'm afraid that I might do it again maybe to someone else

Dr: What angered you so much that you felt the need to act in a violent manner towards your wife?

Me: False cheating accusations. When that situation came about I remembered what happened between my parents, how my Mother left my father for another man and how that was happening to me

NOVELSGURU.COM

Dr: Abusing her what was the goal exactly? To capture her into staying with you by fear?

Me: I actually wanted to break her, break her for another guy to come. I wanted to make her not fall in love ever again and to see men differently. See them as monsters

Dr: What changed?

Me: A lot changed. I saw how much damage I've caused. I didn't understand how I could say that I loved her and yet do that to her

Dr: What was going through your mind as you did that?

Me: I don't know.. I wanted to kill her I guess

Dr: Tell me about your childhood and how it was like This was going to be a long ass session..

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:43] : 103

NONGCEBO

[A MONTH LATER]

I can say that I was in a good space now. I have started going to church more especially after my cleansing with Manto. She told me everything that Makhathini's family did to me, the spiritual husband thing. It really got to me, I was shocked and hurt that they would resort to something so sinister like this. Manto broke the spiritual marriage, we had a river cleansing followed by a 7 days fasting and prayer. Since my cleansing I haven't looked back, I am a regular at church now and I pray harder than I have previously.

She also gave me water than she prayed for and some bathing salts and a lavender oil that I have been mixing with my bath. I pray in the morning, then before I sleep and at 12am or 3am. We have become somewhat of good friends now, I call her my guardian angel because she's very spiritually mature and I can learn a lot from her. She changed

NOVELSGURU.COM

my mind on traditional healing, we spoke a great deal about that and I have softened up to that part of life. Knowing that my Mother has been fighting for me beyond the grave it made me change my mind about ancestors.

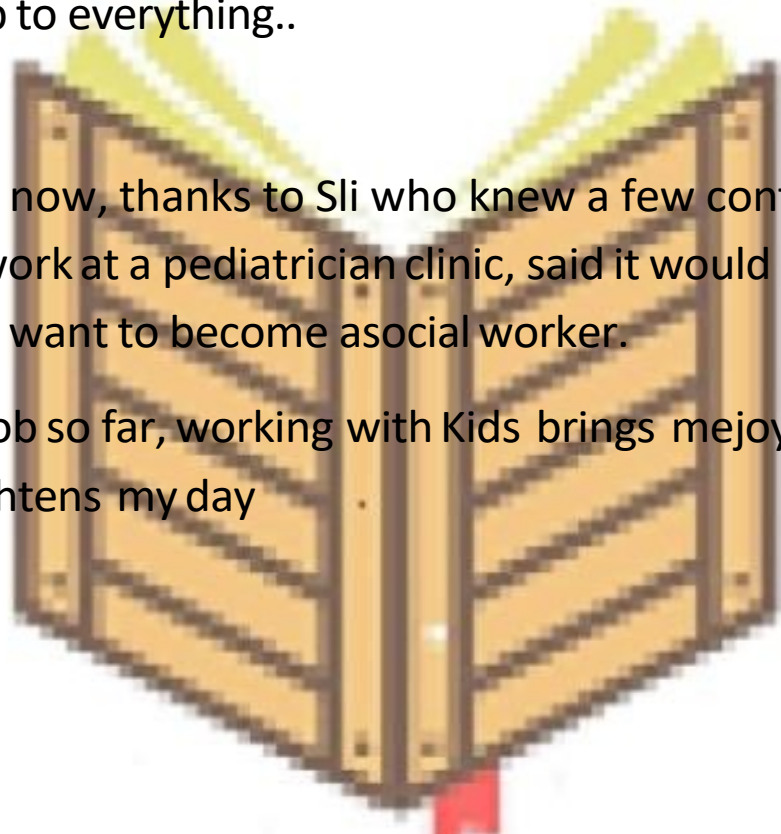
My Father has purposed that we should go to Kzn so I can be taken to my ancestors graves, let them know about me. That is the last step to everything..

I have a job now, thanks to Sli who knew a few contacts in her field. I work at a pediatrician clinic, said it would do me good since I want to become a social worker.

I enjoy my job so far, working with Kids brings me joy and it always brightens my day

KELSO

Dr Khatri changed my perspective on therapy, With the sessions I've been having with him I realized



that therapy is not as bad as I thought it would be. Helped me to control my Anger, and channel it in the right way. He's really good at what he does nowonder he is so expensive and comes off highly recommended..

Nongcebo and I we haven't been in communication ever since that time she came to my house, I am learning to live with how things are between us.

Giving her the space that she needs, and focusing on myself..

Power softened up to me and allowed me to start seeing Hakeem since she learned that I was going to therapy and seeing that financial y things weren't going well . I finally took up Stal ion on his offer of working with the Italians, something I didn't wanna do but this is the only life that I know.

Can't get a mere job when I dropped out in grade 10, not forgetting my minor criminal record. There's no way any employer in their right mind would consider hiring me...

"Black girl with a big booty

NOVELSGURU.COM

If she a bad bitch, let's get to it (right away) We up in
this club

Bring me the bottles

I know girl, that you came in this bitch with your man

That's a no-no girl

All this money in the air I

wanna see you dance"

Hakeem threw his pacifier against the front
passenger seat..

Me: Whats wrong with you?

He rubbed his eyes and started crying..

I pulled over. I was taking him to the Dr, he has flu. Power
couldn't do it since she has an interview this morning..

I got out of the car and went to check up on him, I took his
bottle and gave it to him. I heard he didn't sleep much last night
he was very congested, so he might be feeling somewhat
sleepy...

NOVELSGURU.COM

SANDISIWE

My column came to an end since I was official y 8 months pregnant now. I thought they would give me a maternity leave and I'll go back after giving birth, but my boss decided otherwise. I had a good time with them, I really enjoyed writing for their newspaper. Now it's time I thoroughly focus on my soon to come labour and prepare for my baby. That morning I was out shopping with Sole for some baby things, we needed a baby cot too..

Me: How do you feel about introducing Nathan to your family this coming weekend?

Sole: I am okay with it, it's about time

I have become very close with Nathan he is a wonderful kid..

Sole: Watch your step

Me: I'm happy that you have decided to give your family another chance

Sole: I'm not giving them another chance I'm just introducing Nathan to them

Me: Are you ever going to forgive them? Sole:

No.. Never

Me: You really know how to hold a grudge snowflake

Sole: I'm not holding a grudge I've survived without them so my surviving without them for all those years, it proved to me that I don't need them

Me: That's sad because they really nice people Sole: They not bad people

His phone rang, he looked at it... Sole: I

have to take this

He walked away. I am very suspicious that Sole might be dribbling me here and there. I'm just not very sure yet but he's been acting very strange lately and I hope it's just business as he says because if he is indeed dribbling me. I will leave him without even thinking twice...

BANZA

Nongcebo and I we have started communicating again. She surprised me by giving me full ownership of the taxis that Makhathini left for her. She said she wants nothing that's going to connect her with them. She signed the house off to them and the taxis she signed them to me. Manto told me not to worry about them doing anything to me, especially since I have a strong ancestor and now that my Mother has fully accepted her gift. I am so very proud of her for all the changes that she has made. Her traditional ceremony went well, she went to the river to connect with her ancestors. She has a job and so far she's doing church consultations since she is a Prophet. I go to church with her every Sunday, she was led to a church that fully accepted her of which happens to be Manto's church too. I have never seen her this happy and this much at peace with her new life. Her health has been restored back to her, she hasn't been sick ever since

she did this..

As my taxis were on the road this morning, I hired a few trusted drivers and instead of just sitting and being a taxi owner, I am on the road too driving one of the taxis that I own.

This is a new leaf for me, a better one for that matter. I can now budget for Lobola and I can help extend my Grandmother's house. My Uncle and his wife did the unthinkable, they made me the beneficiary of the house since they never had kids of their own. They said my Grandmother would want it that way.

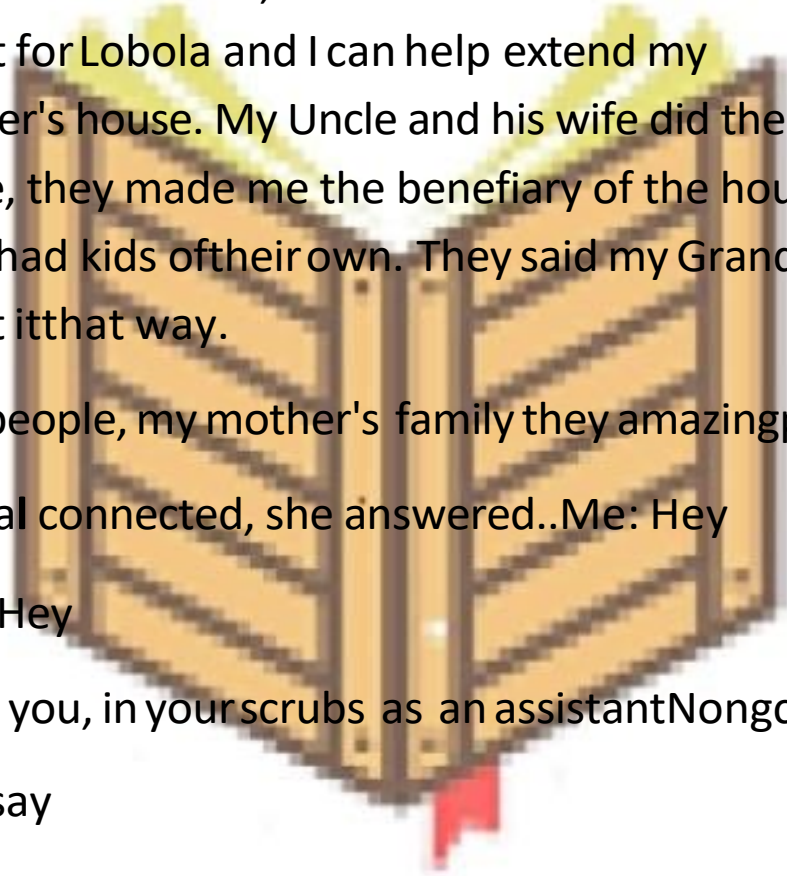
They good people, my mother's family they amazing people..

The video call connected, she answered.. Me: Hey

Nongcebo: Hey

Me: Look at you, in your scrubs as an assistant Nongcebo:

What can I say



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You look good

Nongcebo: You don't look bad either, I can see that you even gaining some weight results of having money

I laughed...

Me: Don't play with me.. I hope I'm not disturbing you

Nongcebo: Not exactly I just arrived at work

Me: Okay... Wanted to talk to you about something

Nongcebo: What is it?

Me: I think your Father and my Mother something is going on with them

Nongcebo: You don't say, I did suspect

Me: I have suspected for a while now just wanted to be sure

Nongcebo: Basically we might be step siblings soon
Me: Looks that way

Nongcebo: Not in a million years did I think this was

going to happen Me:

Tel me about it

Nongcebo: Let me go I'll call you later Me:

Sharp enjoy your day

Nongcebo: You too

RACHEL (BANZA'S MOTHER)

Khumalo stood up when I walked into his office... Me: You don't have to get up

Him: A prophetess just walked into my office how can I not show respect by standing up?

Me: You are always over exaggerating (laughing)

Him: May I say you look very lovely this morning Ma K

Me: Thank you

He walked up to me and kissed me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Now I'm even afraid to send you out there in a room full of those men

Me: I've been doing it for a while, and they very respectful

Him: They have too, if they know what's good for them

I put my hands on his chest..Me: I

am filing for divorce

Him: How do you feel about that?

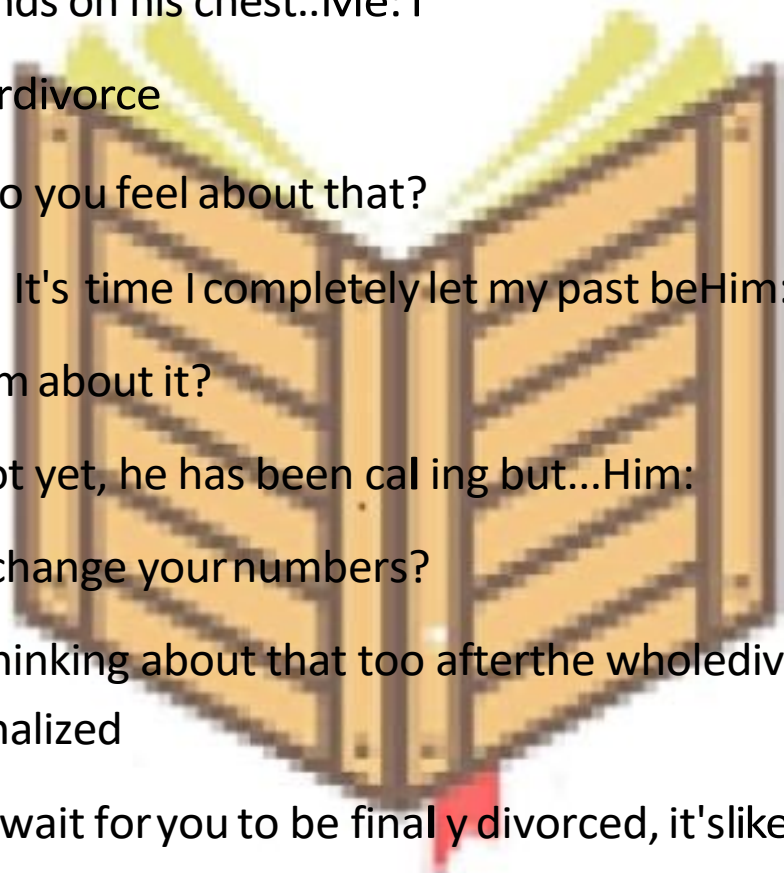
Me: Good... It's time I completely let my past be Him: Have you talked to him about it?

Me: No.. Not yet, he has been calling but...Him: Should we change your numbers?

Me: I was thinking about that too after the whole divorce has been finalized

Him: I can't wait for you to be finally divorced, it's like I'm having an affair with a married woman

I hit him on his chest..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Stop it.. My marriage was long over

Him: Good for me, I still don't understand how he let go of such an amazing woman

Me: It's life what can we say?

He kissed me again and the door opened, we broke the kiss..

Khumalo: What happened?

Voice: Ohw shit!

I turned and it was his Son, he showed me pictures of his children..

Khumalo: Manners Lindo

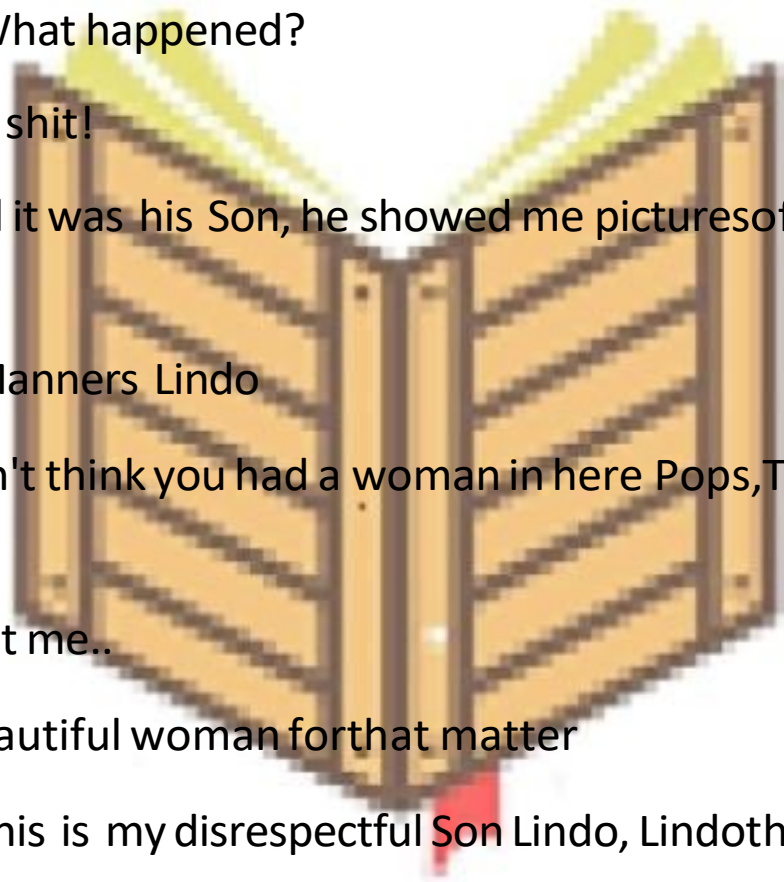
Lindo: I didn't think you had a woman in here Pops, Tie at the door please

He looked at me..

Lindo: A beautiful woman for that matter

Khumalo: This is my disrespectful Son Lindo, Lindo this Makhuzwayo.. MaK

Lindo: Lady K



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It's nice to meet you

Lindo: The pleasure is all mine, between you and me I didn't think of having such a beautiful and young step mother

Me: I'm not all young my first born is 27

Lindo: You must've had him when you were what? 13? 12?

I laughed..

Me: Aren't you charming?

Lindo: It happens

Me: I should go back to work

Khumalo: I'll come and check up on you

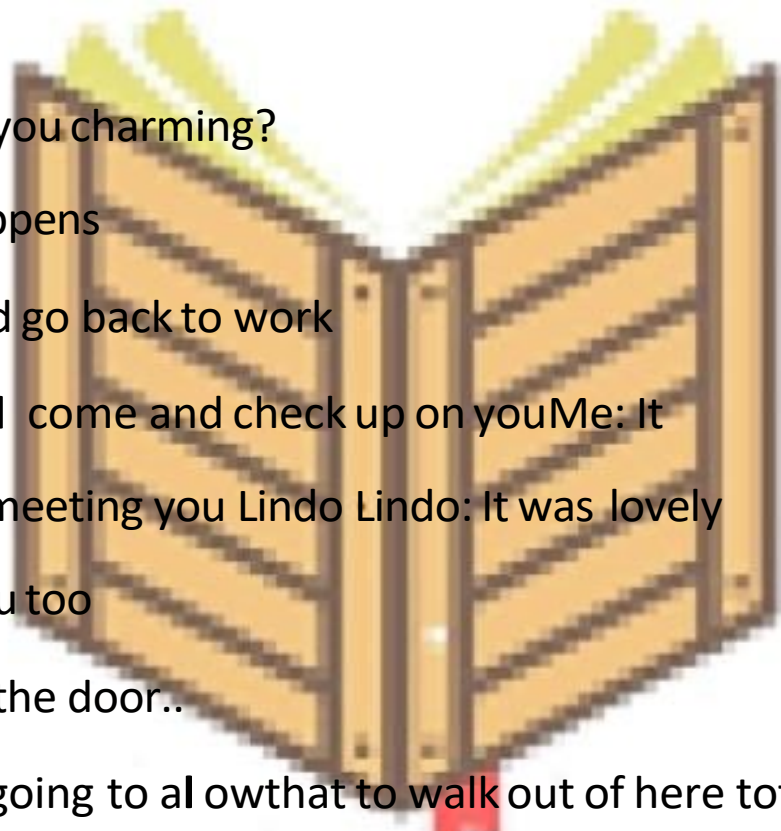
Me: It was lovely meeting you Lindo Lindo: It was lovely

meeting you too

I walked to the door..

Lindo: You going to allow that to walk out of here to the presence of all those hungry men?

Khumalo: Shut up! What are you even doing here?



NONGCEBO

Dr Zondo walked in..Him:

Good morning Me: Good morning

Him: Those scrubs look good on youMe:

Thank you

He put his things on the table.. Him:

How was your weekend? Me: It was nice... Yours?

Him: It was nice too... I went bikingMe:

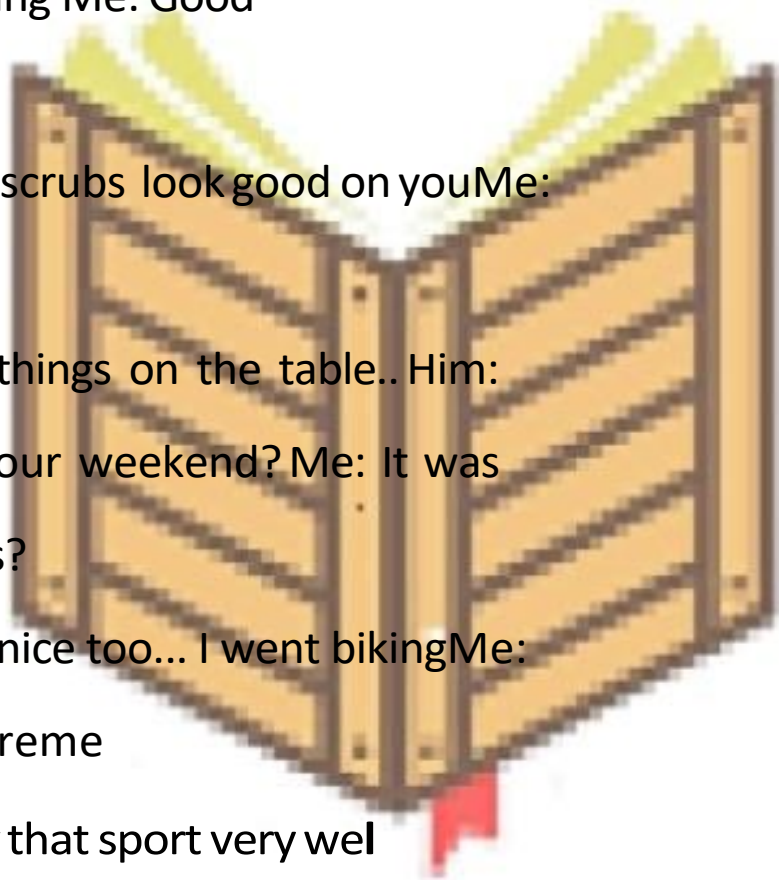
Sounds extreme

Him: I enjoy that sport very wel

Me: Wel I hope you didn't hurt yourselfHim:

Not at al

He put on his coat..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Are you ready?

Him: Yes.. Bring on the first patient

I walked out of his office, Dr Brits walked out of his surgery..

Him: Good morning Me:

Morning

Him: Aren't you supposed to be working with me today?

Me: Isn't it tomorrow? Him:

No it's today

Me: When are you getting an assistant again? Him: I'm

still searching

Me: Talk to Zondo

Him: I thought you were going to talk to him, I have a lot of patients today

Me: I know but talk to him that you are borrowing me for the day

Him: Is he in

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yes

He walked into his office, I went to Michel at the reception..

Michel : They fighting for you again?Me:

Brits has to get an assistant

Michel : Brits is stingy, he would rather use you and pay you half of what he was going to pay an assistant

Me: I need coffee before I go crazy

Michel : I was going to make one, hold the reception for me I'll bring you a cup

Me: Thank you

The door opened and Kelso walked in with Hakeem in his arms..

Michel : My my my who is that?

I really thought that I was never going to see him again, especially since our sessions are no longer the same day anymore.. He walked up to us, didn't even seem shocked to me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Good morning Ladies Michel :

Good morning

He looked at me..Him:

Mrs KB

Me: Good morning

Him: I've brought in my little Man!

looked at Michel ..

Me: Mich

Mich: Ohw yes.. Is it his first time

Him: Yes.. Someone recommended this clinic forme

Mich: You are in the right place Kelso

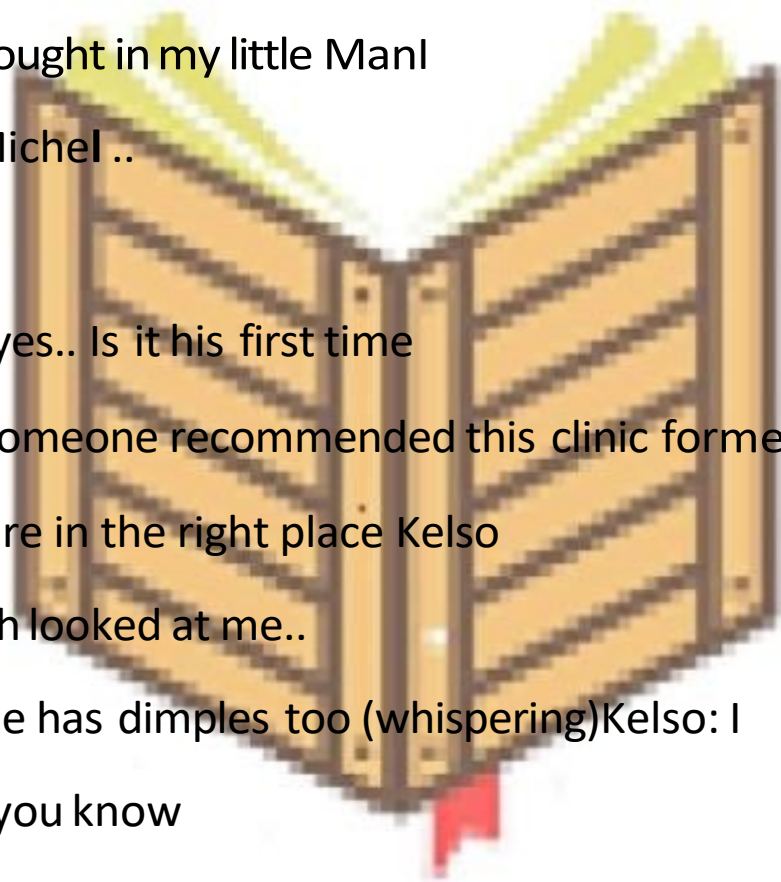
smiled, Mich looked at me..

Mich: And he has dimples too (whispering)Kelso: I

heard that you know

Mich: I wasn't gossipingKelso:

So you say



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mich: Wealth go make us some coffee
Me: I thought you were making it
Mich: I have a patient now

Me: Ohw... I'll go and make us coffee
Kelso: Can I get one too?

Me: Staff only I'm sor y

Kelso: That's sad

Me: I guess sol

walked away..

Mich: you can have mine Kelso: No

it's cool.. Thank you

.

To be continuedNo

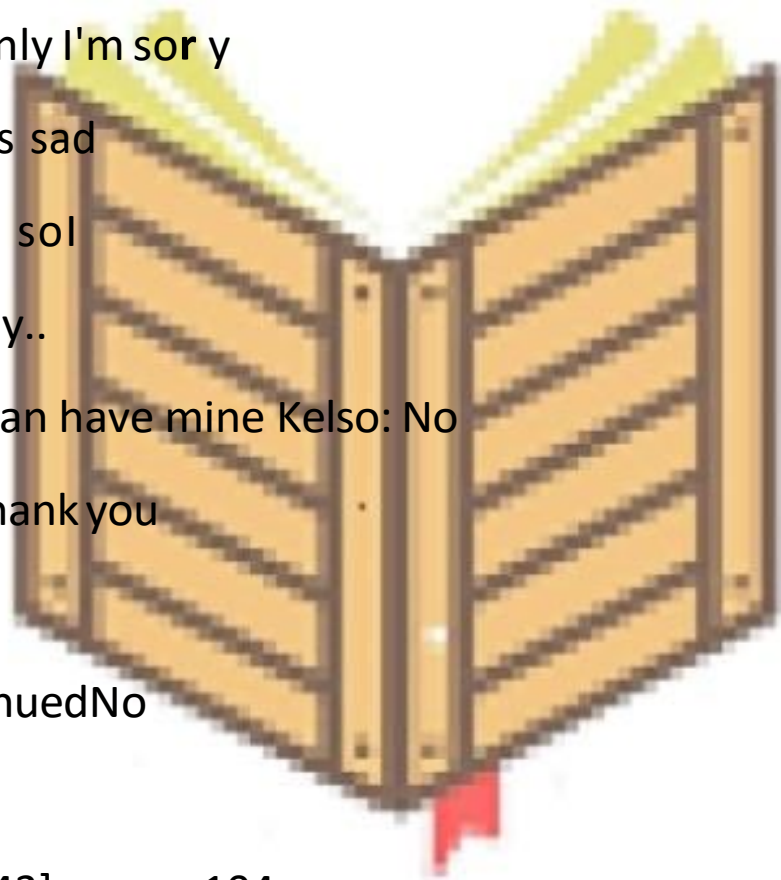
edits

[08/24, 13:43]

: 104

NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO



Michel gave me Hakeem's file. I looked at Kelso he was holding Hakeem who was sleeping on his chest and he was busy on his phone..

Me: Kelso

He moved his eyes from his phone and looked at me..

Me: DrZondo will see you now

He got up and made his way to me..

Kelso: "DrZondo will see you now" ave uSeriousMrs KB

Me: I am at work

Kelso: No I understand, and I'm very proud of you rolled my eyes..

Kelso: Awuyeke Nongcebo (stop it) until you file for divorce you and I are still very much married

Me: Thank you for reminding me, I even forgot about that.. I'll send the divorce papers soon

He chuckled..

Kelso: We not getting a divorce we not going to be another statistic of a failed marriage. We going to make this work because we are better people now

Me: Dr Zondo is waiting

Kelso: After you

I walked in first and he followed me..

Kelso: I'm good with the separation but can we do a strings attached separation?

We made our way in and I handed Dr Zondo Hakeem's file...

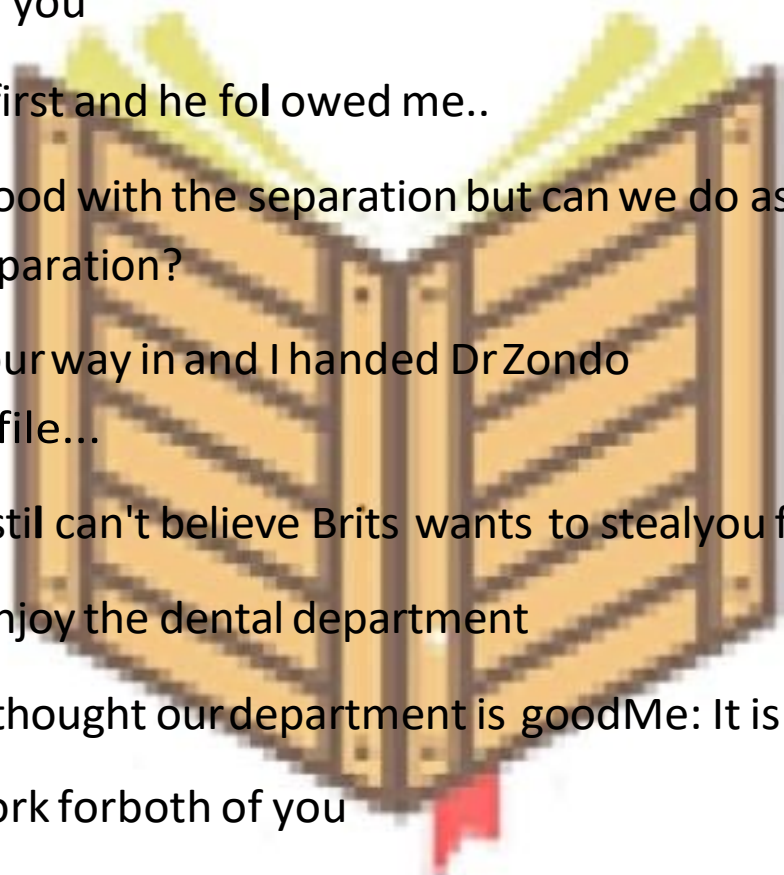
Dr Zondo: I still can't believe Brits wants to steal you from me

Me: I also enjoy the dental department

Dr Zondo: I thought our department is good
Me: It is but I can work for both of you

Dr Zondo: He has to hire a new assistant
Kelso

cleared his throat..



NOVELSGURU.COM

DrZondo: I'm sor y about that just that.. Mycol eague
wants to steal my assistant

Kelso: Wel I don't blame the other Dr my wife has that effect
Dr Zondo looked at him..

Kelso: Ohw she didn't say Kelso
looked at me..

Kelso: Are you an ashamed mar ied woman?

Me: Am I required to stay in for this consultation? Kelso: Yes

DrZondo: No you can go and help Brits Me:

Thank you

Kelso: I love you honey

I opened the door and walked out.. Mich:

Pssss get over her

I walked up to her..

Mich: Why you never told me that you mar ied?

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: I am not a proud married woman

Mich: What? Married to that I'd be flaunting my ring everywhere

Me: I have to go and see if Brits need help Mich:

We still going to talk girlfriend

RACHEL (BANZA'S MOTHER)

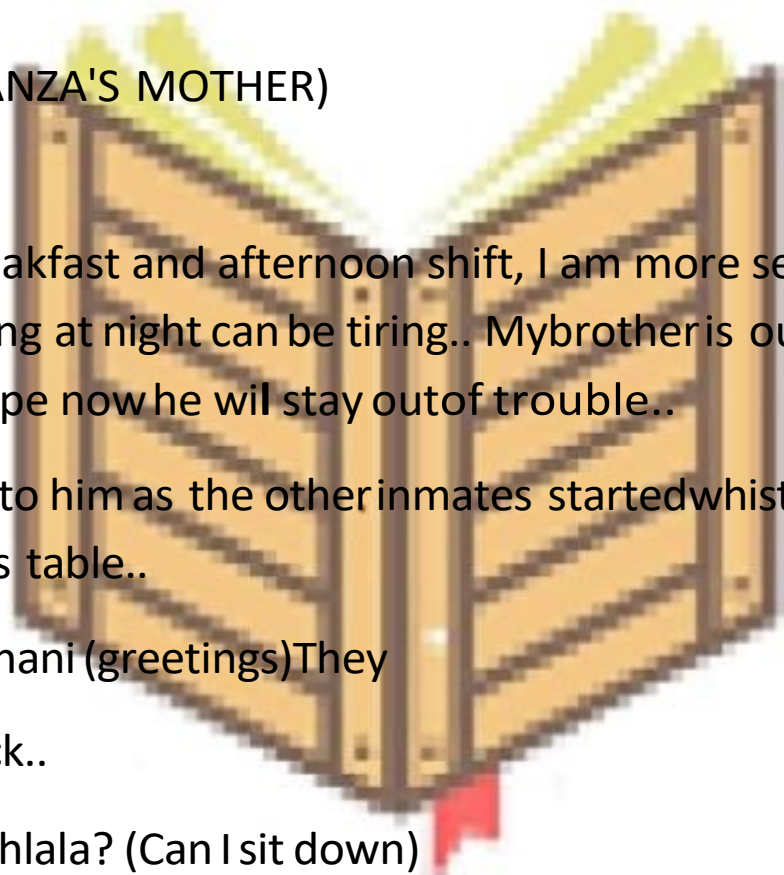
I do the breakfast and afternoon shift, I am more settled with that. Working at night can be tiring.. My brother is out of Solitary I hope now he will stay out of trouble..

I walked up to him as the other inmates started whistling.. I stood at his table..

Me: Sanibonani (greetings) They greeted back..

Me: Ngingahlala? (Can I sit down)

They all looked at me, Mthetheli made space for



NOVELSGURU.COM

me. I sat next to him..

Me: Unjani? (how are you)

Him: Ngi right wena? (I'm well and how are you)Me: Ngi right

I looked at the other inmates.. Me:

Ninjani? (How are you) Inmate 1: Si..

Sikhona my sister

They felt a bit uncomfortable with me around..

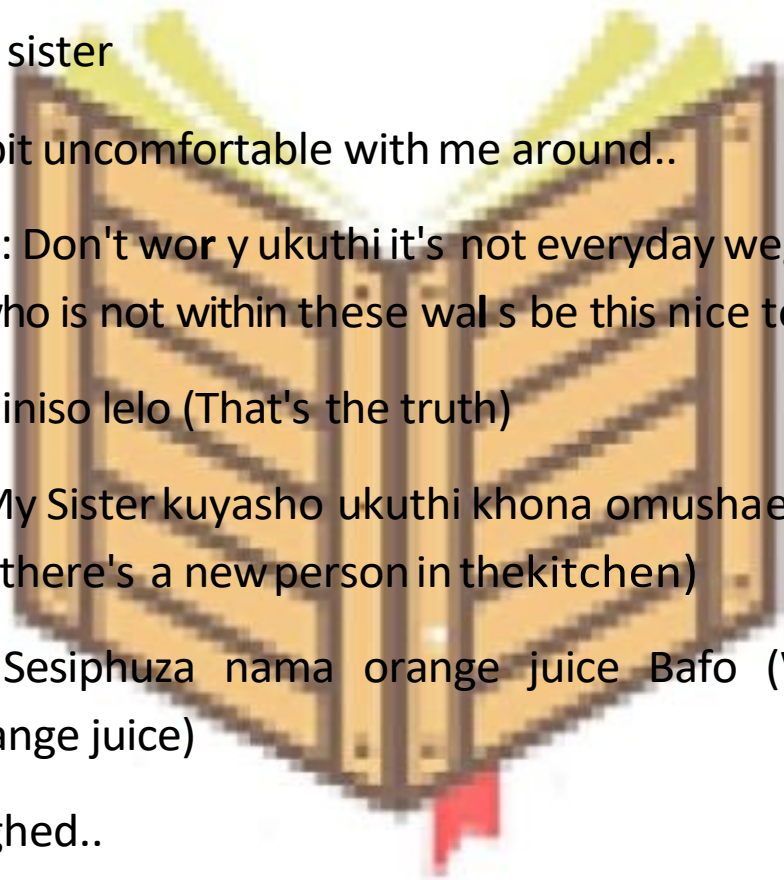
Mthetheleli: Don't worry ukuthi it's not everyday we get someone who is not within these walls be this nice to us

Inmate 2: Iqiniso lelo (That's the truth)

Inmate 2: My Sister kuyasho ukuthi khona omusha eKitchen (It shows that there's a new person in the kitchen)

Inmate 4: Sesiphuza nama orange juice Bafo (We now drinking orange juice)

They all laughed..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ngibonga manidla kahle, ukuthi nila akusho ukuthi mele niphathwe njengezilwane (I am happy that you guys are eating well, being here doesn't mean that you are animals)

I looked at the 5th inmate that was at the table, he was awfully quiet..

Me: Sawubona He

looked at me.. Inmate

5: Suster

I looked at him and immediately I got a vision about him..

Me: Akufanele ukuthi ube la (You not supposed to be here)

His eyes widened..

Me: Where you falsely accused of rape?

Everyone at the table went quiet..

Me: I understand that it was consensual but she turned on you, this lady she did this to spite you right? A bitter ex that didn't take you moving on well?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Inmate 2: Wazi kanjani? (How did you know)The whole room went quiet..

Inmate 3: Wangena uKhumalo, uBhubesi (Khumalo just walked in)

I looked around and everyone was quiet focusing on their food..

I looked at Khumalo and two Wardens. He ran his eye around and then he spotted us, then he made his way to our table..

Khumalo: Kwenzakalani la? (what's going on here) They all went quiet..

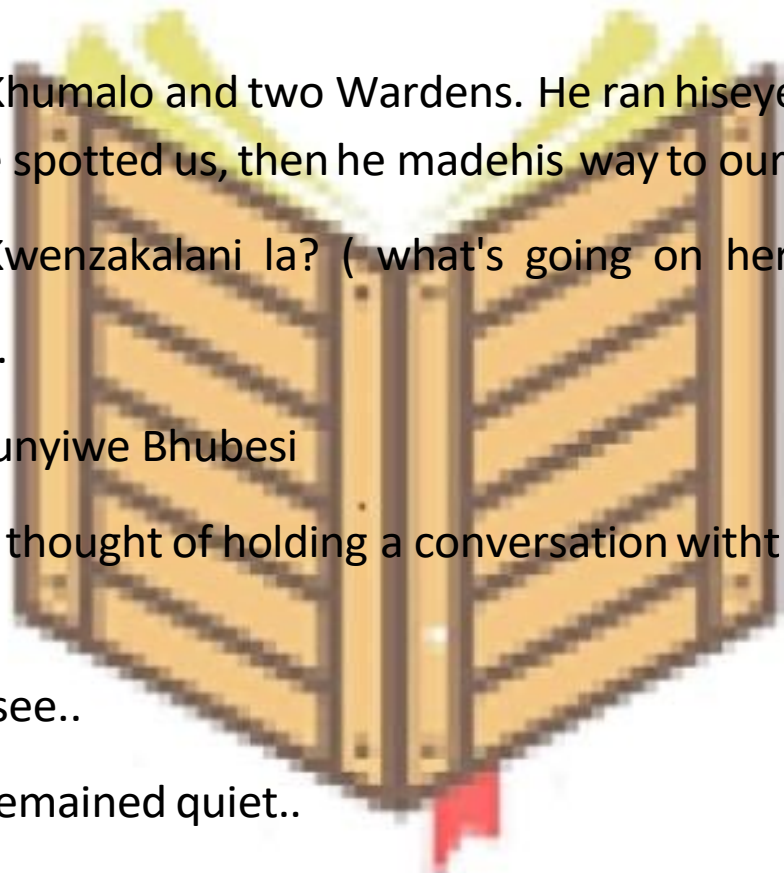
Voice: Makunyiwe Bhubesi

Me: I.. I just thought of holding a conversation with the inmates

Khumalo: I see..

We all still remained quiet..

Me: So uhm.. Gents are you enjoying your food? Khumalo: Ya the conversation is over now, come on



NOVELSGURU.COM

bring it up Me:

But..

Khumalo: You not supposed to be on this side, you supposed to be on the other side

I looked at everyone then I stood up. I started walking away with everyone looking at me..

Khumalo: If I hear so much as a whistle or a sly comment, Solitary for 2 weeks without food

They all kept quiet.. Khumalo:

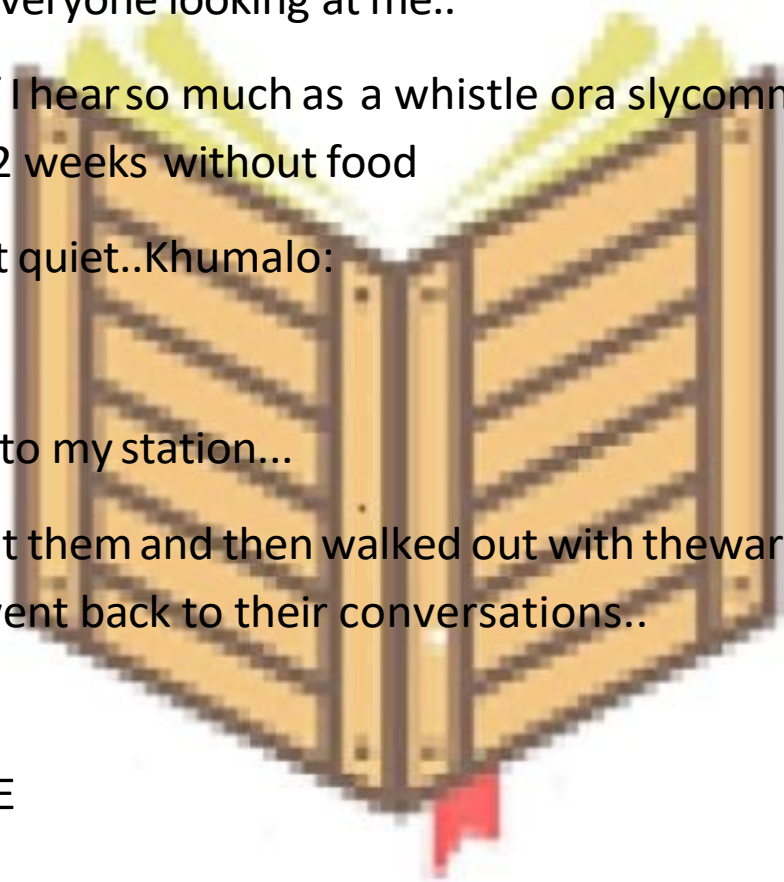
Good!

I went back to my station...

He looked at them and then walked out with the wardens, everyone went back to their conversations..

SANDISIWE

I heard the shower water running, I slowly got up



NOVELSGURU.COM

from the couch and took his phone from the table. I put on the password but the password was wrong. So he changed it, he changed his password. He had a whatsapp message from Wilsonia, the infamous Coco. I couldn't read it since I couldn't unlock his phone.. I put it back and went to sit down on the couch. I took my phone and called my Aunt...

Gert: Siwe

Me: Are you busy? Gert:

Not at all why?

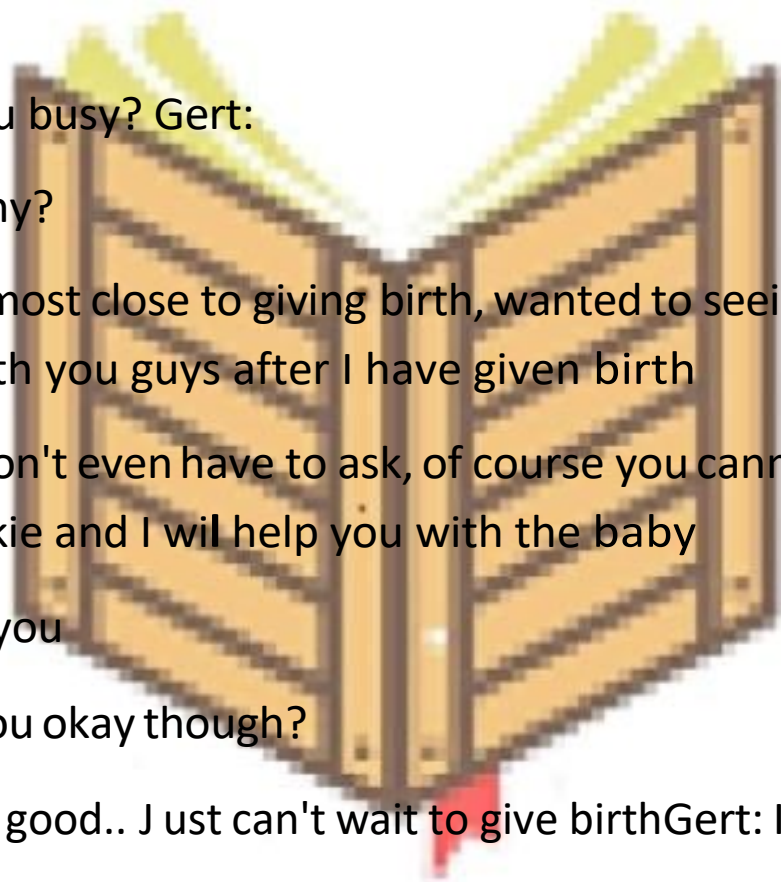
Me: I am almost close to giving birth, wanted to see if I can move in with you guys after I have given birth

Gert: You don't even have to ask, of course you can move in with us. Takie and I will help you with the baby

Me: Thank you

Gert: Are you okay though?

Me: Yes I'm good.. I just can't wait to give birth
Gert: I can imagine



NOVELSGURU.COM

I heard the water stopping..

Me: I'll talk to you again sometime Gert:

Okay Siwe take care

Me: Okay bye

After a few minutes Sole walked out with only a towel wrapped around his wet lower body.. His hair was also wet. He smiled at me and then took his phone from the table.

Me: Snowflake can I use your phone for a while? Sole: Yes

He handed it to me.. Me:

Thank you

The first thing I did was to go to his whatsapp. I opened his conversation with Coco, her latest message wasn't read as yet.

There was nothing of a red flag in their conversations. I just her sending him pictures of Nathan and videos. He doesn't even reply to the

NOVELSGURU.COM

pictures and videos. I checked and he talks mostly with Scorpion and his Brother.

I went on Facebook, still there wasn't any red flags. His social media was clean..

Sole: Found what you were looking for? Me:

Yes.. Thank you

I handed him back his phone..

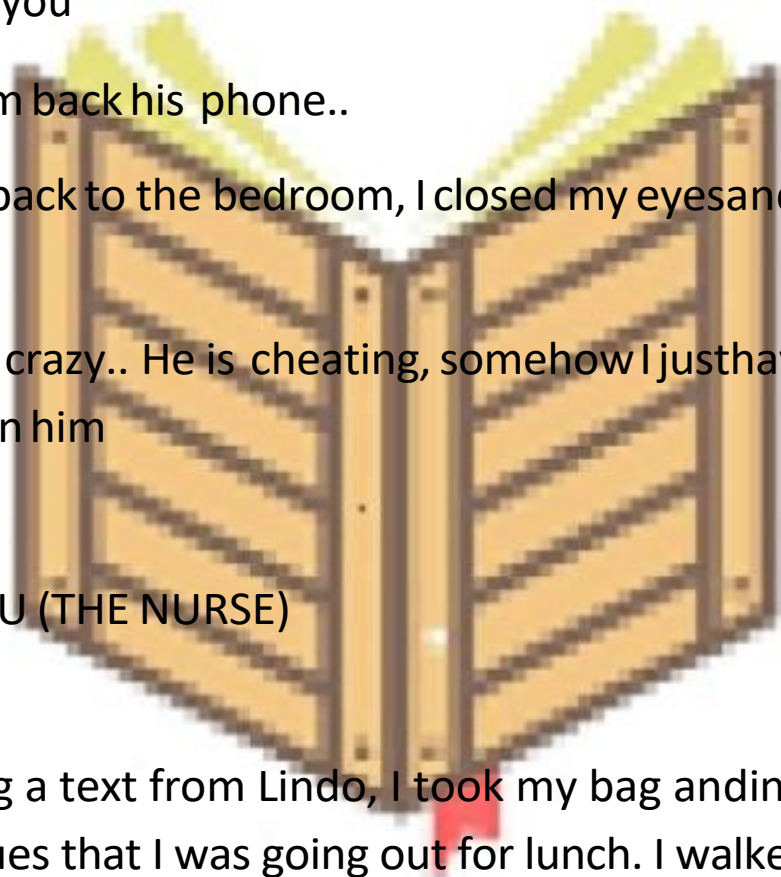
He walked back to the bedroom, I closed my eyes and let out a breath..

Me: I'm not crazy.. He is cheating, somehow I just have to be smarter than him

SIPHOSETHU (THE NURSE)

After getting a text from Lindo, I took my bag and informed my colleagues that I was going out for lunch. I walked out of the hospital and he was standing at the entrance.. He put his phone away..

Lindo: And here she comes



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Don't start

Lindo: You look tired alreadyMe: I

can't wait for 19:00

He put his arm around my waist and kissed me..

Me: The bullet tradition was still going on. He sends me a bullet straight to my house every morning at 6am. I have a lot of bullets now, it's crazy because I don't even have a gun. We started walking to his car...

He kept on walking on my path making me to bump into him..

Me: Stop it (laughing)

Lindo: What should I do when you all over the place?Me: You walking on my path

Lindo: Please.. I know you own the hospital you don't have to make it crystal clear

I pushed him..

Lindo: And where do we report what just happened?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Stop it.. You crazy!

Most of the time relationships tend to be a chore and stressful. Lindo makes our relationship fun, he is loving, crazy and makes being in a relationship very easy. There's good and healthy communication between us and the golden rule is to never go to bed angry at each other. He hates it with all his heart when there's no communication between us, no matter how angry I am at him he will annoy me until I give in and start talking to him.. He doesn't like silent treatment at all..

Lindo: I was thinking.. Maybe you can come over at my house for dinner tonight you know meet the family. I think it's time now

Me: I'd love too

Lindo: That was easier than I thought

Me: Wait you were expecting me to say No?

Lindo: Please don't say that... Thank you for accepting the invitation

He opened the door for me and I got in..

NONGCEBO

We heard a knock at the door..Brits:

Come in

The door opened and Mich walked in...Mich:

Husband wants to say goodbye Me: I'm busy

Brits: Your husband is around!

sighed...

Brits: Go on then and say Goodbye Me: I'm

busy

Brits: I'm still doing the examination and charting, go on I respect marriages. If my wife came I would literally excuse myself for a few seconds or so

Me: I'll be right back

I walked out of the surgery, he was standing at the door. I made my way to him and he walked out. I



NOVELSGURU.COM

followed him up to his car..Me:

Kelso I'm working

Kelso: We just wanted to say goodbye that's all, it was good seeing you

Me: Goodbye

He pulled me closer to him with his other hand..

Kelso: I don't know where you get that from but that's not even close to how you say goodbye to your husband

He kissed me unexpectedly...He ran his hand up my arm...

Kelso: That's how you say goodbye

I opened my eyes and looked at him.. Kelso:

Enjoy your day.. I love you Skat

He kissed again before walking up to his car.

.

To be continued

NOVELSGURU.COM

This insert was sponsored by Inganathi.

Please click the link below to leave a vote for her on the miss SA teen competition

https://pageantvote.es/pageants/2741/contestants/18101?fbclid=IwAR0G2H3kn7RLB9tvUI_OiTgJNQUkDcA1ONjvy3eQYCqP0OaA-o5dlalcpS0

[08/24, 13:44] : 105

KELSO

Seeing my Son that sick something deep inside of me moved. The way he struggled with breathing through his nose and can't even feed off well from his bottle because that's the only place that he can manage to breath through. I thought the saline nose drops would've kicked in already but he was stil congested..

Grams: How is he?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I am hoping that the meds will kick in soon Grams: I'm sure they will at least now he is resting
Me: Guess who I saw at the clinic?

Grams: Who?

Me: Nongcebo she's working there

Grams: That's nice, she's really turning her life around

Me: She is.. I'm very proud of her despite what she's been through she didn't allow her pain to take over

Grams: You told me what happened and you couldn't have known about her curse, I'm not justifying what you did

Me: Curse or no curse, I should've known that my wife was telling the truth. She ended up lying and telling me what I needed to hear because she feared for her life which is the main reason I think that she would be better off with someone else but at the same time I don't want her being with someone else. I want her to give me one last chance to prove myself to her that I am capable of loving her the

way that she wants to be loved, though I don't wanna push her

Grams: I understand... I'm just happy that you decided to seek help, you owned up to your mistakes

We heard a knock at the door..Me: I'll

get that

I walked to the kitchen to get the door and it was Neli....

Me: What are you doing here?

Neli: You have blocked me from social media, you have blocked my calls and I don't have a way to contact you

I stepped out and closed the door..Me:

Maybe I did that for a reason

Neli: I am pregnant Kelso! Did you get that message?Me: Yes I did

Neli: And you still ignored me?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How do I even know that it's mine? Neli:

Are you serious?

Me: Look I am fixing things with my wife and...

Neli: Your wife? Now she's your wife? After how you've treated her? After all the promises you made to me?

Me: You didn't think that it was all real right?

Neli: You were stringing me along and the unfortunate part is that I fell for it, I fell for you!

Me: That's bullshit Neli! You fell for it because you were benefiting from me

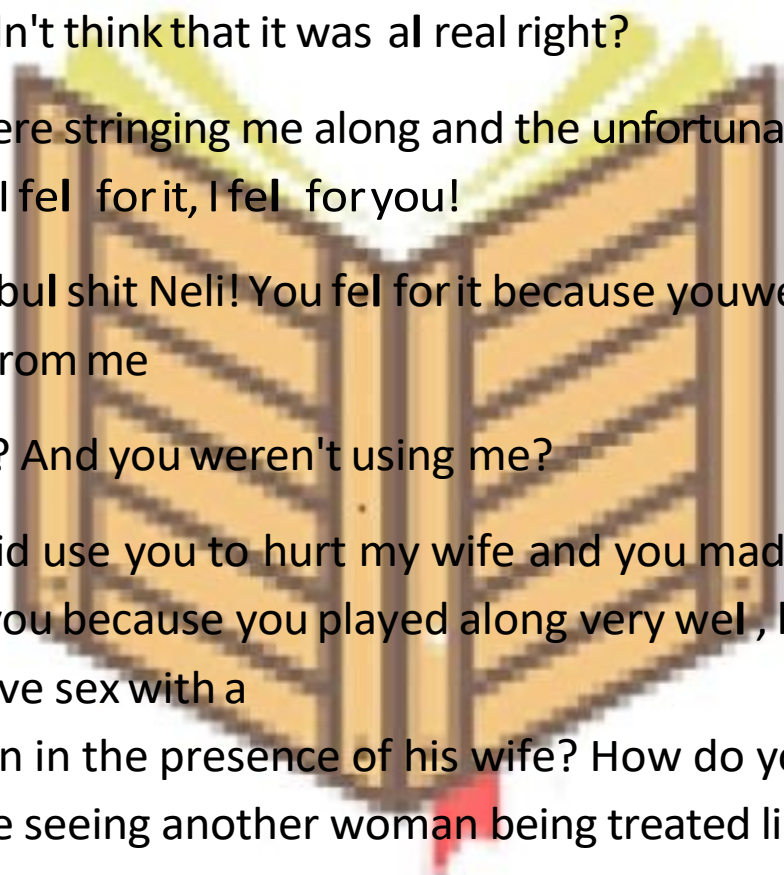
Neli: Really? And you weren't using me?

Me: Yes I did use you to hurt my wife and you made it easy for me to use you because you played along very well, how do you agree to have sex with a

married man in the presence of his wife? How do you find it comfortable seeing another woman being treated like that

and not even thinking that one day it could be you? How do you find pleasure in another woman's pain? I was a jerk but

you are a



woman and you should've known better than to play along in breaking another woman

She slapped me across the face. She slapped me again, and I managed to hold her hand as she tried to slap me again..

Me: Stop it! That's enough

Neli: You are a bastard and I'm glad she left you!

Me: After 9 months when the baby is born we will do a paternity test and if it's mine I'll take full responsibility if it's not then you on your own. For now, I don't owe you anything.

Verstaan? (understand) Neli:

Let go of my hand! I let go of her hand...

Neli: You'll be very sorry that you messed with me

Me: The time you going to use on revenge should be the time you use to better your life!

Neli: Fuck you Kelso! She

walked away..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Bye!

NONGCEBO

I had an unexpected visitor, it was Power. We still keep in contact...

Power: Look at you Me:

No.. Look at you We

hugged..

Power: You look great

Me: Thank you, and so do you Power: I'm

actually from an interview Me: That's great..

How did it go?

She shrugged her shoulders..

Power: We will see

Me: I hope you do get the job

Power: Ya I hope so too



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It's really nice to see you

Power: It's nice seeing you too.. You look like you doing well for yourself

Me: Yaa I'm trying

Power: So have you spoken to Kelso?

Me: Actually he was here earlier on, he brought Hakeem

Power: I thought he was going to take him to the family Dr

Me: Well he was here

Power: That man is crazy about you, I'm sure he searched you up and came

Me: What can we say.. Kelso will always be Kelso

Power: Actually he seems a bit humble now, it's even scary because that's so not like him

Me: He has even started attending therapy

Power: He told me, I'm surprised. Seems like the little boy in him is finally growing up

Me: It seems so hey

Power: Are you thinking of taking him back?Me: I

haven't thought that far

Power: What he did was unforgivable but it's my first time
actual y seeing him in love

Me: Kelso doesn't know the meaning of love

Power: He just doesn't know how to love right, and you
deserve someone who is going to love you right

Me: Right now I'm concentrating on myself. I am real y happy
where I am, I am happy with the kind of person that I am or have
become rather.. I'm getting used to this life of being single and
it's not bad

Power: Ohh trust me it's the best wel except for the sex part of it
I laughed..

Me: I'm good for now

Power: Let me not keep you, let me get back to my Son

Me: Thank you for stopping by



NOVELSGURU.COM

Power: It's nothing.. It was good seeing you and seeing that you at a much better place

Me: That I am.. No lies

RACHEL

Lunch was prepared and now I was about to knock off.. The inmates were outside getting some air and some were carrying out their chores.. Khumalo made his way in..

Him: Are you ready to go? Me:

Yes I am ready to go

I took my bag and bid my colleagues goodbye, then he walked me out..

Him: How are you finding the place?

Me: It's better than I thought, I enjoy working here except for the boss who likes throwing his weight around.. I don't think I like him that much

He chuckled..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: As long as you in that kitchen I wil throw myweight around everyday

Me: You scare the inmates a lotHim:

That's the whole point MaKI shook my head..

Him: How about we go out fordinner tonight? Anice meal at a nice restaurant

Me: HmMMM

Him: I'm trying this morden way of datingMe: It actual y doesn't sound bad

Him: 19:00?

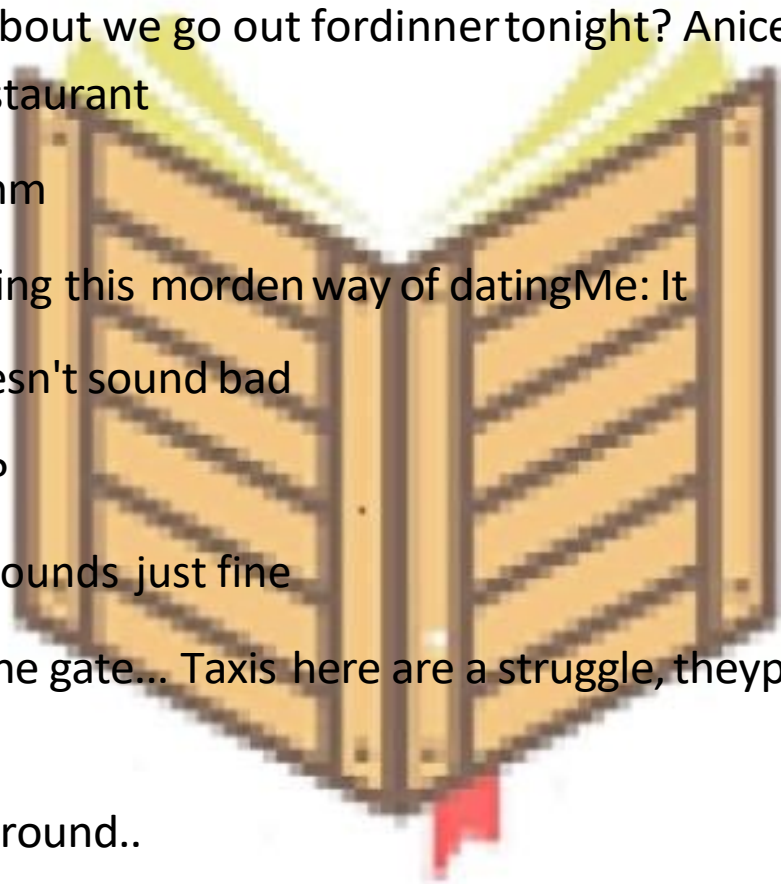
Me: 19:00 sounds just fine

We got to the gate... Taxis here are a struggle, theypass once in a while..

He looked around..

Him: Come I'll drive you home

Me: You going to leave the Prison to drive me home?Him: They'll be fine, plus they wil never know that I



NOVELSGURU.COM

have gone out

Me: I must be important for the Gavenor to leave his prison?

Him: You very important to me and you'll always be important

He kissed my hand..

KEN (KELSO'S FATHER)

Socks walked in holding a tray..Me: Thank
you

The road to recovery wasn't easy, I was badly wounded but I
had to soldier on and be patient with my recovery. Can't be
going to any hospital when everyone thinks that you dead..

Socks: Do you have a plan?Me: How
is Scorpion doing?

Socks: He is settled since our last heist

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: They walked away with a lot of money
Socks: It was a lot of money indeed

Me: Thank you for everything that you have done for me

Socks: I am a loyal soldier to the end
Me: You are very loyal

Socks: Plus I don't really like Scorpion
Me: Any interesting news or scandals?

Socks: My informant from the inside told me that Mr Gavenor is involved with one of the cooks

Me: That's interesting

Socks: I don't understand.. How can he put her in danger like that?

Me: It's not danger when you think that your enemy is dead

Socks: Still Gav has a lot of enemies he created a lot of them when he decided to change how the prison works, then he brings in his woman

Me: It's good that he's letting his guard down

Socks: That man is always alert, taking him down won't be easy

Me: No said it was going to be easy Socks:

Whatever you are planning I'm in

Me: I was hoping you would say that because from here on shit is going to hit the fan

Socks: We live by the bullet and we die by it Me:

That's the motto

.

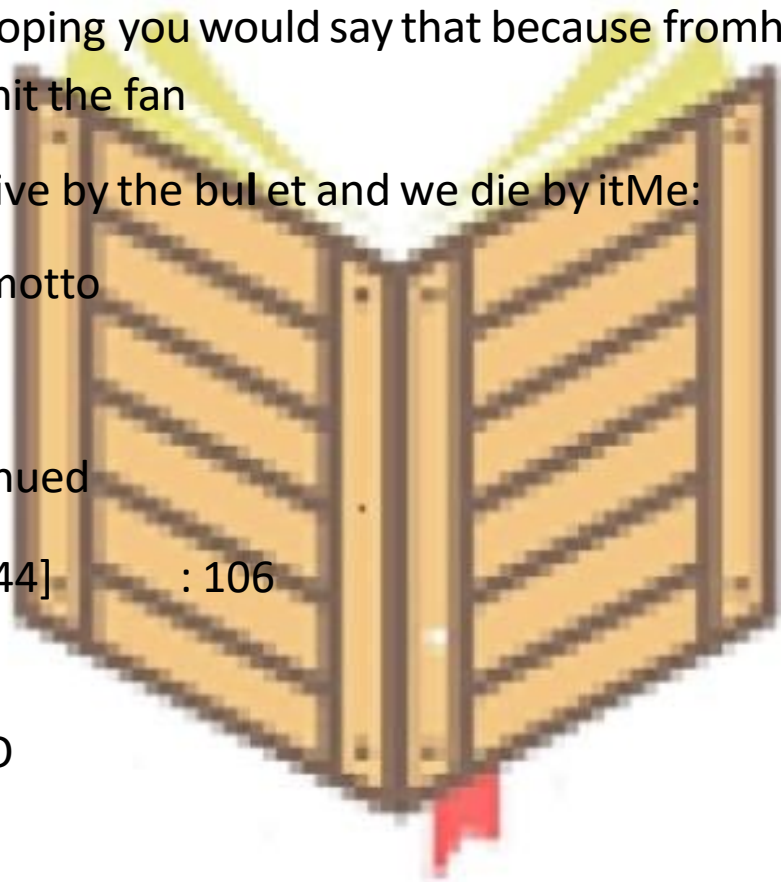
To be continued

[08/24, 13:44] : 106

NONGCEBO

After knocking off I drove straight home, my father and Lindo had decided to buy me a Renault Clio.

Said it will be more convenient to travel to work with



NOVELSGURU.COM

it. It's not bad for a first car, I actually like it. I really like my new life where I get gifts from people who genuinely love me with no strings attached. They actually encouraged me more to work hard and buy myself things. This is only a start.

I parked and took my bag together with my text books. Dr Zondo gave me a few text books that I can learn more about Pediatrics. I must say that I am slowly but surely falling in love with that branch of medicine. I might even consider studying medicine then specializing in Pediatric.. I opened the door and made my way in, it was a bit quiet when I was at the kitchen, as I moved closer I heard the sound of the TV. Lindo was laying on the couch and watching TV. I passed him..

Lindo: Ekse, Askies, sorry?

I sighed then turned and looked at him..

Lindo: Sesihlala emathutheni? Ngiyithuna mina vele?(Am I a grave)

Me: I'm sorry I thought you were sleeping

Lindo: You didn't see me changing the channels?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: No I was looking down the whole timeLindo:

We both know that's not true

Me: I'm real y tired Lindo, I don't wanna get into thiswith you

I walked straight to my bedroom, he walked in after a fewseconds..

Lindo: Angeke saxabaniswa yishlama! (We notgoing to fight because of nonsense)

I threw everything on the bed..

Lindo: I thought you didn't want him anymore, what happened to focusing on yourself?

Me: This is not about Kelso, this is about you treating me like a child!

Lindo: Uxolo kuleyondawo because the last time I remembered you are my baby sister and I'm not going to let no one or anything get to you at least not when I'm still alive

Me: I'm going to take a bath, I have a lot of studying to do

I took my toilet bag and the towel, then I walked pass him...

Me: Askies, kancance

I pushed him a little.. He chuckled..

Lindo: Ukuthi wawushadile noma ushadile whatever you wanna cal that nonsense, you are stil my babysister and not so grown up for a belt

I opened the door and closed it, I locked it too..

Lindo: Uzozwa ngebhande konyakaza amasende kayihlo emsebenzini (I wil belt you and your father is going to feel an uncomfortable pain in his testicles)

I rol ed my eyes..

KELSO

Stal ion had cal ed and told me that Cosa Nastrowanted to see me, said it was an emergency. I drove up to his private estate for the meeting. His

NOVELSGURU.COM

bodyguard led me to where Nastro was sitting and eating. I just next to his fancy looking pool. Stalion was standing next to him holding what looked like a puppy. I shook my head and looked at Nastro..

Nastro: Please

He pointed at the chair and I sat down..

Nastro: Never in a million years did we ever experience any heist when it comes to transporting our money

I listened..

Nastro: The people who did this, are people who have done research

Me: We can get to the point of why I'm here

Nastro: A little bird told me that only one person could've been able to pull such a heist. Sole Botha

I looked at Stalion he shrugged his shoulders.. Nastro: Sole who happens to be your best friend
Me: I had nothing to do with it

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nastro: You knew about the plan, you worked on it

and unfortunately you got axed. Had you not been axed you would be rich too

I can't believe Stal ion snitched..

Nastro: Now I am not moved by the fact that you were involved in the plan, I'm moved by the fact that you came to me and asked to work for me. You knew how much I wanted to find the people who did this, but you withheld the information from me. How does trust and loyalty work with you?

Me: Look Nastro if you wanna Axe me go ahead Nastro: Not so fast

He took the envelopes from the other chair..

Nastro: Now Andre thinks that I was behind the heist, he thinks that I didn't wanna pay him and I planned the heist he questioned my business principles and he informed the DL. Andre is not a fool, he knew that I didn't plan the heist but he just wanted to suspended from the DL so your friend helped him do that. Do you know what happens when you get suspended?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Humorme

Nastro: I am viewed as a fool, someone who can't handle business and my fate is decided whether they will Axe me or keep me. If they Axe me, it means that I won't be making any money. If I don't make money this life is gone and my little pump pump is going to live like any other normal dog

Me: I am deeply sorry about that, I'm sure your little Pum Pum will adjust to the normal ways of living

Nastro: You have jokes I see

He tossed the envelopes at me..

Nastro: Before you open them, let me tell you a little story..

He cleared his throat..

Nastro: My Daughter was kidnapped and sold as a sex slave to the highest bidder. He was kidnapped by Andre and sold by her

Me: I fail to understand this DL secret society. You guys claim to be brothers and yet you betray each other?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nastro: We enemies first before Brothers

Me: Again Nastro what does that have to do with me?

Nastro: Andre has a necklace that belong to my Daughter. The Necklace has coordinates and a chip that will lead me to where my Daughter is held captive. You and your friends will get me that necklace

Me: Why don't you get it yourself?

Nastro: Andre is not one to fool around with, I am not going to send my men when I have 3 idiots who can send to do the work without getting paid

Me: Well I am sorry to disappoint you but.. I am not doing it

Nastro: Oh well no you will because if you don't. Let me see.. Little Nessi and your wife will be on the next ship to wherever the ocean can take them.

Sold as sex slaves!

looked at him..

Nastro: Oh well yes and Sole. His pregnant girlfriend

NOVELSGURU.COM

when the baby is boy. The baby is going to be taken raised and when she's what, 7 or 8? She will be sold too.. Ohw his poor girlfriend will die, can't imagine how broken she will be as a mother getting videos of her Daughter being.. I can't even say it

He looked at me..

Nastro: I know about your little feud with Scorpion, I hope you two will work together because both of you deeply care about someone and what you put her through won't be compared to what they going to put her through. Poor Scorpion, having history repeat itself with her little Sister.. Personally I'd die

I took the envelopes..

Me: Give Sole his, I'm sure he won't be prepared for what's in there

This was fucked up...

RACHEL

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I think this dress will work perfectly

J udith: Awuvele ave lilihle (That's true, the dress is beautiful)

I sat down on the bed..

Me: Who would've believed that in the mist of my rocky marriage a good man would surface.

Honestly speaking I had lost all hope, I thought my marriage was it. We have been married for many years and.. I thought I was going to grow old and die in that marriage, I tried to make it work even when there was no point in making it work

J udith: Bheka ukuthi impilo yakho ishinshe njani ngesikhathi esincane, abokhokho bebakufuna la ukhona manje (Look at how your life has changed in such a short period of time, where you are right now is where your ancestors wanted you to be)

I nodded..

J udith: Lungisa phela u7 uyashaya manje (Fix yourself 19:00 is just around the corner)

KEN (KELSO'S FATHER)

I put my hands in my pockets as I looked at my grave. From the soil, it showed that it wasn't long since I was "buried". There were even flowers on top of my grave.. I fixed my cap and crouched reading the cards on the flowers..

NONGCEBO

Just when I got into my bedroom, my phone rang. I checked and it was a video call from Kelo. Kelo and I still keep in contact, no matter how much I tried to ignore him but he didn't give up. He would inbox me everyday on Facebook until I gave him my numbers. We actually good friends..

Me: Hey

Kelo: Hey look at you Me: I'm

just from bathing Kelo: Oh

sweet

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: What are you doing there?

Kelo: Just catching up on my school work

Me: That's good, I'm about to start studying too

Kelo: Ohw I saw the textbooks on your whatsapp status. I think it's good that you are preparing now for next year

Me: Ya I just hope that my application for medicine won't be too late and I hope that they are going to consider me. I have really fallen in love with kids, they bring me so much joy. They always make my day and their innocence reminds me of the good part of this world

Kelo: Preach Sister.. Amen! Me:

There you go

Kelo: You wanna pray too? Me:

No I'm not going to pray

Kelo: Actually it's a good idea, I'll talk to my Father. One of his clients is a dean of medicine, I'll ask him to talk to the Prof and we'll take it from there. Next year I wanna see you in school!

Me: I would really appreciate that

Kelo: How about we have study dates? Since you don't
wanna have a normal date

Me: Study dates?

Kelo: Yeah set a time every night where we videocall and
study together

I laughed...

Me: I don't know how that is going to work out but.. We can try
that

Kelo: Tonight?

Me: Yeah we can start tonight Kelo:

Time?

Me: 22:00-00:00am

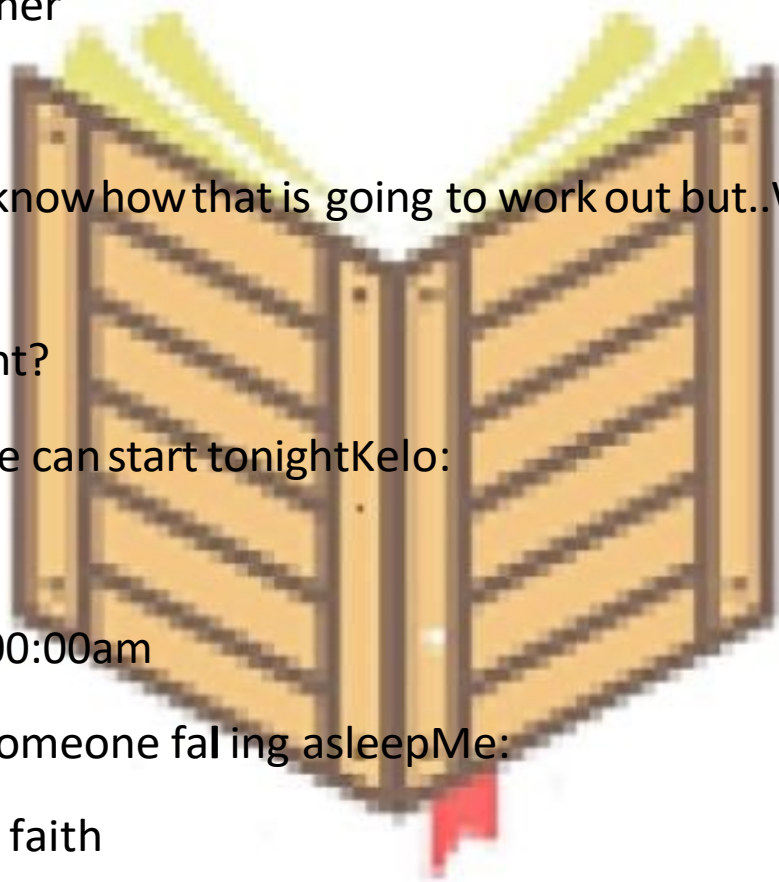
Kelo: I see someone falling asleep Me:

Yee of little faith

Kelo: Alright then 22:00 it is Me:

Alright

Kelo: Sharp



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Sharp

.

To be continuedNo

edits

[08/24, 13:45] : 107

KELSO

I rang the bell and waited. I had the envelopes in my hand. They were addressed to the 3 of us, I had left mine in the car..

He opened the door and looked at me..Sole:

Kelso

Me: Sole

Sole: What are you doing here?Me: I

came to give you this Sole: What is

that?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: The money that you and Scorpion stole, it belongs to an Italian mafia. Nastro, he's not very happy with what you two did

Sole: Who told him that we were behind the heist? Me: I told

Stal ion and Stal ion told him

Sole: Why would you tel Stal ion?

Me: The same way you told Scorpion about my wife

Sole: Come on Kelso this is ridiculous! How old are we? 4?

Me: You should've came to me

Sole: You were not in your right mind, you left us high and dry with the heist. Had I come to you, you weren't going to tel Nongcebo about her family, I did it to save her life. You were close to kil ing thatpoorgirl

Me: So you decided to pick up the cross and play the saviour? When did I ever come in between you and Sandy?

Sole: I'm not abusing my girlfriend.. For what it's worth because I know your ego is probably bigger

than your dick right now.. I'm sorry

Me: I just fucken open the envelope and get back to me. Nastro wants us to get him a necklace that's going to save his Daughter from being a sex slave

Sole: Since when do we work for the Italians?

Me: If you don't he is going to kidnap your unborn baby and sell her to a sex trafficking Lord, you will get videos of her being sexually abused. I don't know him that well but this guy means business. After you have went through your envelope you know where to find me. Give Scorpion his too

He reached out to take the envelope from me, I dropped it on the floor..

Sole: Typical Me:

Good night I left

him there..

NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM

My father called about an hour ago saying that we should set up the table he is coming with a visitor. Since I will be studying late I helped Sli with cooking, now we were setting the table..

Lindo: Ngcebo pass me the dry swab I threw it his way..

Lindo: What?

Me: Sorry I thought you were going to catch it Lindo:

Ngathi seyiya kude manje (It's going far)

He literally took off his belt, I put the dish down and moved closer to Sli. I stood behind her..

Sli: Okay what is going on between you two? Lindo: Nongcebo

has to learn respect the old way Sli: You not going to hit her

Lindo: Sli move

Sli: We don't use violence to sort out issues in this house

Lindo: Our parents used a belt to discipline us when

we were young, this is going to be a quick discipline
Sli: Put the belt away Lindo

Lindo: Then tel her to respect me. I'd understand if she was being like this for something important, but she's disrespecting me over that Bastard?

Sli: Okay we heard you.. I'll talk to her

Lindo: Nxa! I'm going out to get some fresh air
He walked out..

Me: Was he really going to belt me?
Sli: No

Me: He looked serious

Sli: He doesn't hit women, he was just using that technique to make you think that he will belt you when you disrespect him. That's how he enforces discipline but don't tel him I told you that

Me: I won't

Sli: Cut him some slack. Lindo blames himself for what happened to you and he's just being a protective big brother, he loved you way before we



even found you. I didn't know it was even possible to love someone like that someone you have never met before. We just all scared of losing you right when we have just found you. You are the baby of this family so do expect this kind of behavior from him and Dad

Me: I know I guess I just have to live with it

Sli: I'm just glad he's off my back now he has someone to annoy

Me: Sli can I talk to you about something? Sli: You can talk to me about anything Me: I want to officially divorce Kelso

She looked at me..

Me: I am over him now

Sli: Wait a minute are you seeing someone else? Me: No

She gave me a weird look..

Me: Well I am laughing with someone else again but it's nothing serious

Sli: J ust take it easy don't rush anything.. Who is he by the way?

Me: It's Kelo

I cleared my throat..

Me: Kelso's little Brother Sli:

Nongcebo

Me: He makes me laugh, smile, and he sends me sweet retarded messages. Kelo is different he doesn't have issues. He comes from a stable background, he is currently studying it'll be a more settled relationship. No guns, no fear, just a normal settled relationship

Sli: If he can bypass Scorpion and Dad then I'll take him serious

Me: He's really hard headed though Sli: You and guys with issues

Me: He doesn't have issues trust me

SOLE

NOVELSGURU.COM

I am always alert about a lot of things but nothing could've prepared me for this. This envelope crushed my whole world. This envelope consisted of endless pictures. Wedding pictures of Nastro and Wilsonia. Even had a picture of them at the hospital when she gave birth. The deal breaker was the copy of DNA tests proving that Nathan is Nastro's Son.

To make matters worse, there was a phone inside too. The phone had videos of Me and Wilsonia having sex so she had a camera at her house? To video us? It also had our dirty whatsapp messages that I have deleted and a record of our phone calls. I put everything on the table, Wilsonia played me!

There's no point in getting rid of these, he probably has copies. I took my phone and texted Scorpion to come and get his envelope. This Nastro of a person means business!

MODRID MARTINEZ

The door unlocked..

The Warden stood there and looked at me..Warden:

You have a visitor

Nastro walked in..

Me: Thank you Warden

The reason why I don't want to come out of Solitary it's because of these private visits from Nastro..

Nastro: It is done

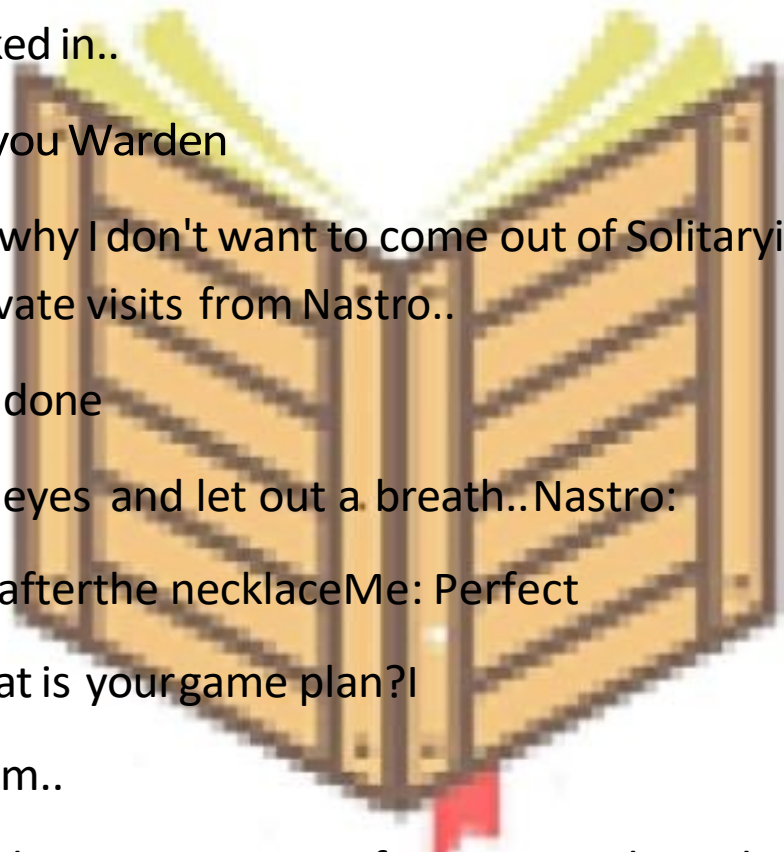
I closed my eyes and let out a breath..Nastro:

They going after the necklace Me: Perfect

Nastro: What is your game plan?!

looked at him..

Nastro: Sending 3 amateurs after your Brother, I don't even think this Sole is smart enough to go against Martinez



I took my Bible...

Me: Andre must never find out about Sole's foreign tissue implant

I looked at the walls..

Me: Without Sole's IQ I might never get out of here, it's only a matter of time before he asks for a meeting with me

Nastro: You playing a dangerous game Modrid

Me: I have been waiting for years for this.. You have been waiting for years for your revenge too

Nastro: What happens if they find out that my Daughter is actually dead and they going after Andre for nothing

Me: For your sake and my sake I hope they don't find out

Nastro: Modrid

Me: I'm about to have a conversation with God, I'm about to say my prayers

Nastro: Good night Modrid

NOVELSGURU.COM

He walked up to the door..

Me: I'm sorry about your Daughter I did love her Nastro:
Your brother killed her and you did nothing

Me: I was a boy still in high school, I was no match for Andre. I
couldn't do anything then but I'm going to do something
now

Nastro: I hope so

Me: "Without faith it is impossible to please him" Hebrews
11:6 have a little faith Nastro

Nastro: Amen! How refreshing (sarcasm)

.

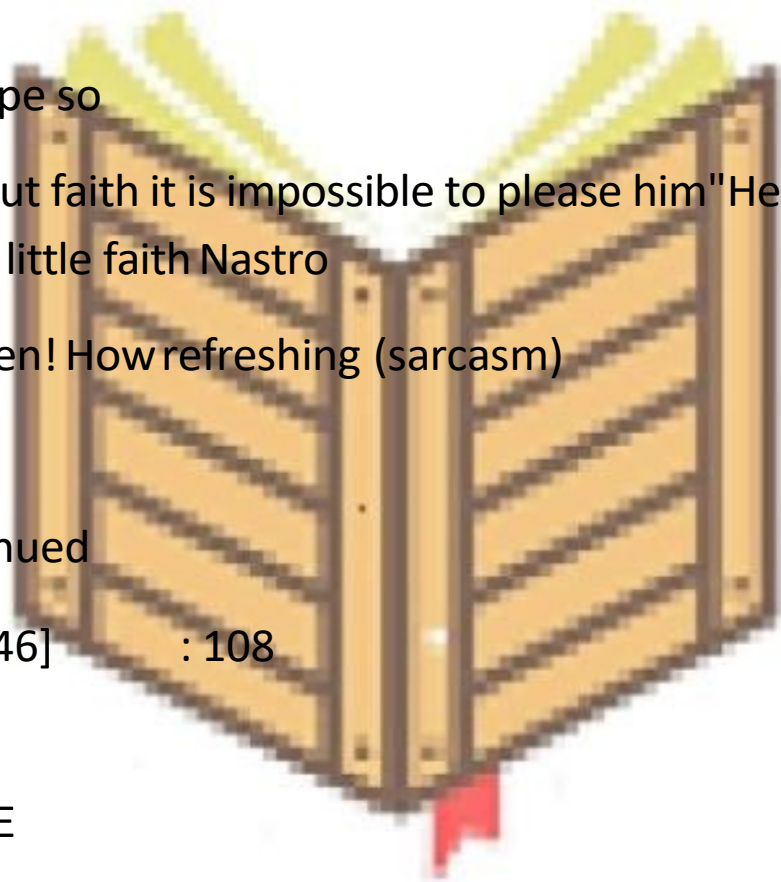
To be continued

[08/24, 13:46] : 108

SANDISIWE

NOVELSGURU.COM

Takeie dropped me off at home, I spent the day with her.
Needed to clear my head and get away from



everything that has been happening between Sole and I..

When I got in, he was at the stove cooking. Me: Hey

He turned around and looked at me... Sole:

Sweets.. Where have you been? Me: I spent a

day with my Cuz I told you Sole: Must've

forgotten

Me: You never forget anything, that's weird Sole:

Must've slipped my mind

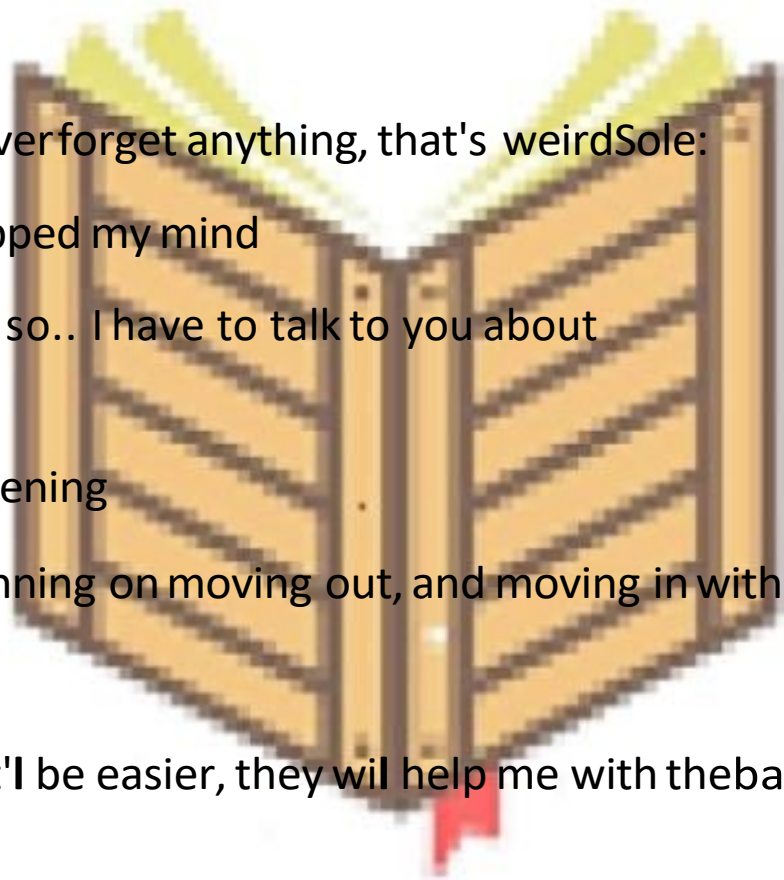
Me: I guess so.. I have to talk to you about something

Sole: I'm listening

Me: I'm planning on moving out, and moving in with my Aunt

Sole: Why?

Me: Think it'll be easier, they will help me with the baby



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: I thought that we agreed on hiring a midwife to help you

Me: I would really like to be with my family He walked over to me and held my hands..Sole: What is this all about?

Me: Nothing.. I just wanna be with family

Sole: No don't give me that, there's more to it I knowMe: I just wanna be with family

He put his head against mine and put his hand on my tummy.. The next words from him were accompanied by a soft voice..

Sole: Don't do this to me, don't do this to usMe: I wanna be with family

Sole: I need you okay? I need you guys

Seeing him this vulnerable really tore deep inside of me. Sole is never vulnerable, Mr know it all .. He has never been vulnerable..

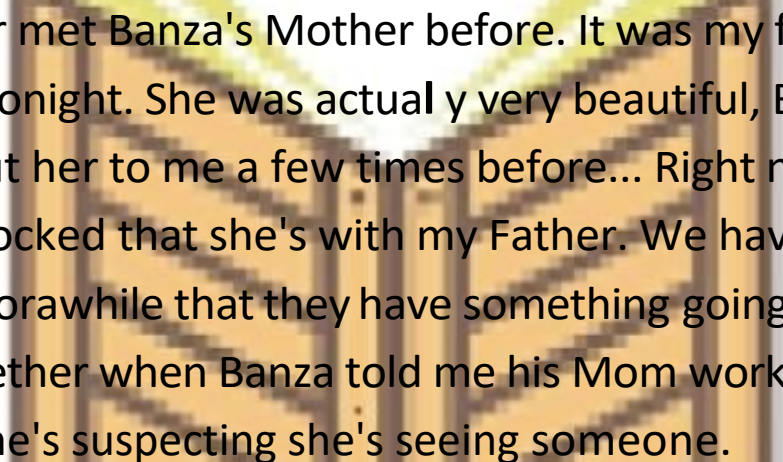
Sole: Please don't do this to me, not at a time like

this

He placed his lips on mine..

Sole: I love you soo much, please don't leave me

NONGCEBO



I have never met Banza's Mother before. It was my first time seeing her tonight. She was actual y very beautiful, Banza use to talk about her to me a few times before... Right now I am not at al shocked that she's with my Father. We have suspected forawhile that they have something going on. We final yit together when Banza told me his Mom works at the Prison and he's suspecting she's seeing someone.

So tonight it has been confirmed...

I was never fortunate to witness that my Mother and my Father's love, I've never seen how they weretogether. Seeing him with Banza's Mother, he looks

NOVELSGURU.COM

so happy.

They look good together, and she couldn't stop smiling and blushing from her side. Never thought grown ups can be this much in love. It's very rare I must say, and it was beautiful witnessing it...

Sli: How are you finding your job at the prison? Must be scary working in that environment

Rachel: Actually it's not, they not so bad once you get to know them well

Sli: That's good then, I don't know how I would work. I'd always be scared

Dad: Nothing is going to happen to her, not if I can help it

He took her hand and kissed it..Dad:

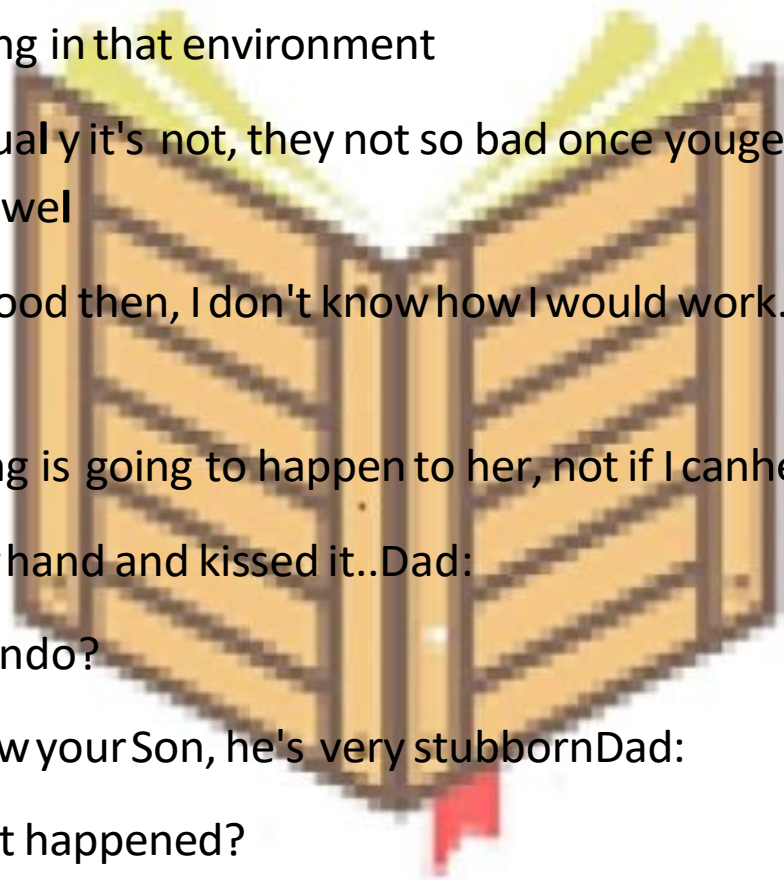
Where is Lindo?

Sli: You know your Son, he's very stubbornDad:

Exactly what happened?

Sli: Nothing much Dad you know Lindo

Rachel: The food is very delicious thank you for



NOVELSGURU.COM

having me

Sli: Thank you for coming over Rachel:

It's a pleasure

Sli: I'll clear the table and go get dessert Me: I'll help you

Rachel: I'll help too

Sli: No it's okay, you are a guest here.. We don't mind

Rachel: Your Daughters are very lovely Dad:

Only because you are around

Me: Haha! So we not good when there's no visitors? Dad: That's not what I meant

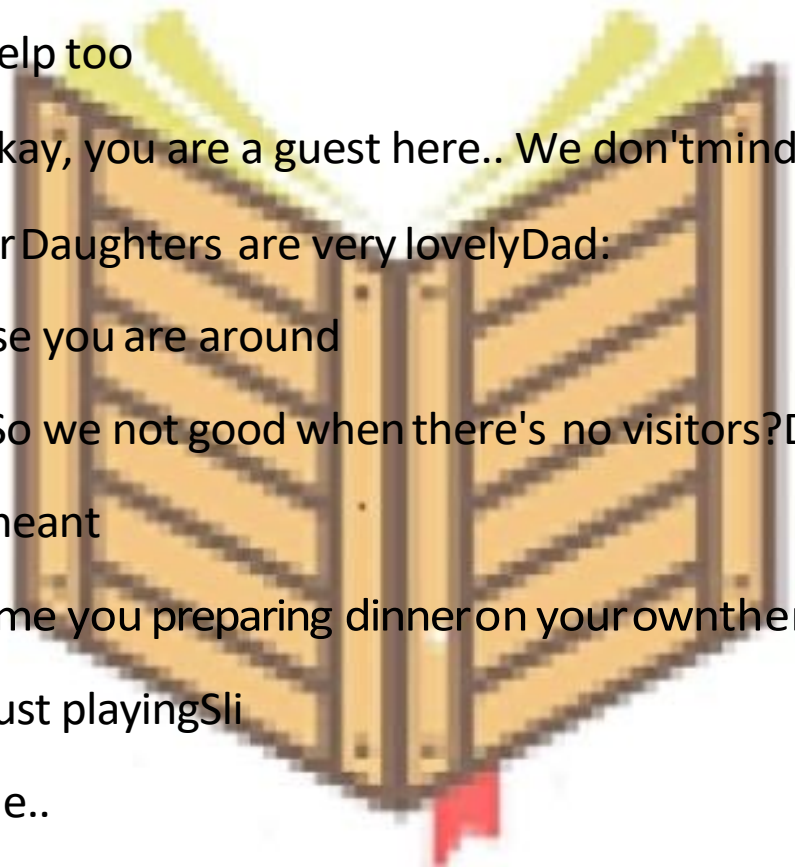
Me: Next time you preparing dinner on your own then

Dad: I was just playing Sli

looked at me..

Sli: Heard that? He's just playing.. Rachel you should come more often

NOVELSGURU.COM



Rachel: I'll do so

Sli and I went to the kitchen..

SANDISIWE

Sole's sex game was on another level tonight. Not that I'm complaining but he was hitting it harder than he has ever hit it before.

There was just too much aggression hiding behind those strokes, holding on to me for dear life as if like I was going to die tomorrow.. He was banging me and I hated that it was good, hated that he knows very well how to get to me.. My thick thighs weren't even a struggle for him, he was really working me and I enjoyed myself..

After he had come, he gently let go of my leg. He kissed me on my neck..

Sole: I love you so much Me: I

love you too

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: Please don't leave me, I don't want you to leave

He placed his hand on my thigh all the way up to my tummy and then massaged it..

Sole: Please don't leave

SIPHOSETHU (THE NURSE)

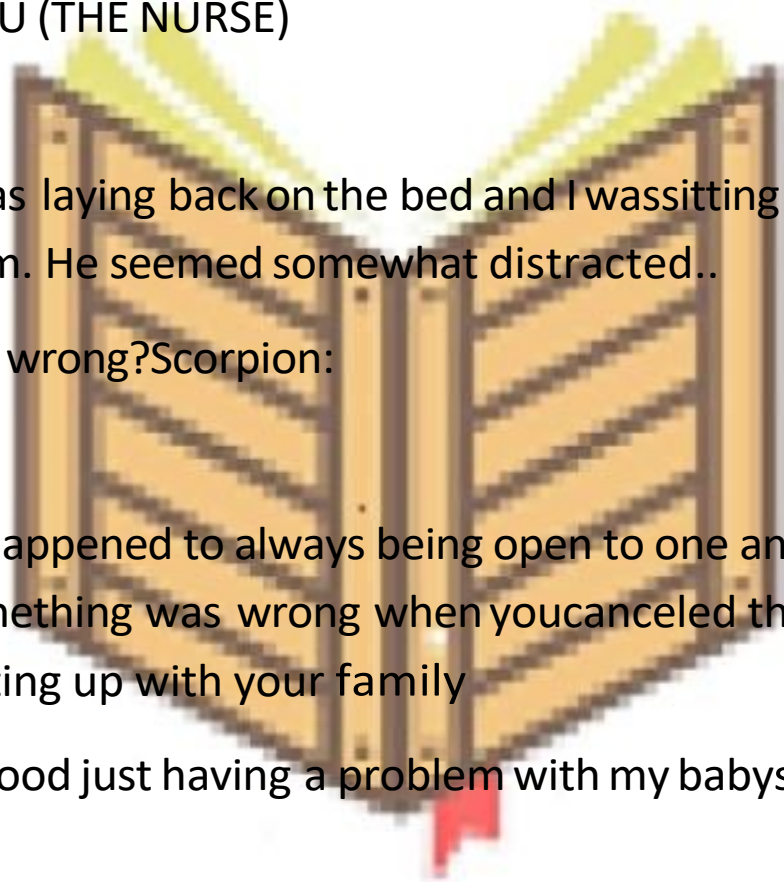
Scorpion was laying back on the bed and I was sitting on top of him. He seemed somewhat distracted..

Me: What's wrong? Scorpion:

I'm fine

Me: What happened to always being open to one another? I noticed something was wrong when you canceled the dinner of me meeting up with your family

Scorp: I'm good just having a problem with my baby sis



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What now?

Scorp: You know how it is

Me: I know hope you guys fix things because I miss my baby
I leaned over and kissed him..

Scorp: I was supposed to meet up with my friend today

Me: What happened? Scorp:

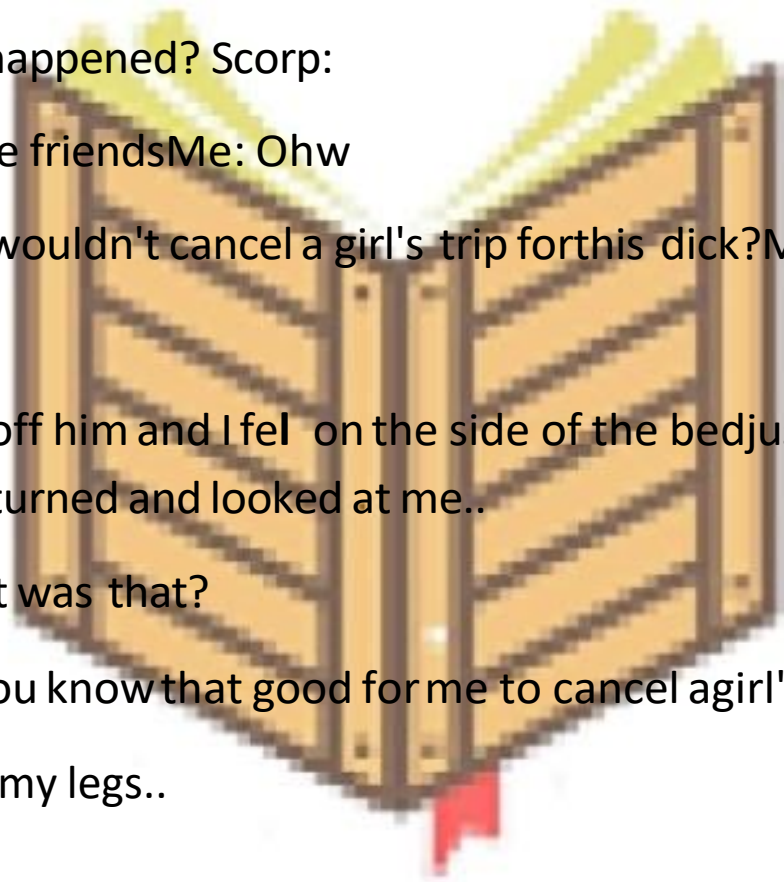
Pussy before friends Me: Ohw

Scorp: You wouldn't cancel a girl's trip for this dick? Me: You not
that good

He got me off him and I fell on the side of the bed just next
to him. He turned and looked at me..

Scorp: What was that?

Me: Well you know that good for me to cancel a girl's trip
He opened my legs..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Scorp: Say that again?

He moved his hand up to my coochie..Me: You not that good

His fingers located my clit, then his mouth located my tit..

I closed my eyes and bit my lower lip..Me:

You.. You.. You not that good

He moved his hand down and gently slid in his fingers in my hole..

I moved my hand and put it at the back of his head pressing him more harder against my tit..

Me: Yes babe.. Ohhh

KELSO

I looked at Hakeem.. Me:

You want this one?He

nodded..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Or you want this one? He

nodded again..

Me: Which one do you want young blood? He

looked at me..

I unwrapped the lollipop and handed it to him.. He took it and his pacifier slid out from his mouth and fell straight on the floor..

My phone started ringing, it was Gert.. Me:

Hey

Gert: Are you ever going to start calling me Mom? Me: In your dreams

She laughed..

Gert: What are you up too? Me: J

ust talking to Hakeem

Gert: When am I going to see him? Me:

Video call

NOVELSGURU.COM

She video called..

I picked Hakeem up.. Me:

Look it's Grandma

Gert: Hey Keemy.. Hel o boy

Hakeem pointed at the phone..

Gert: He is so adorable, he looks exactly like you..Where you denying him whilst his Mom was pregnant?

Me: Honestly I did a littleShe

laughed..

Gert: He is so cute, you should bring him over sometime

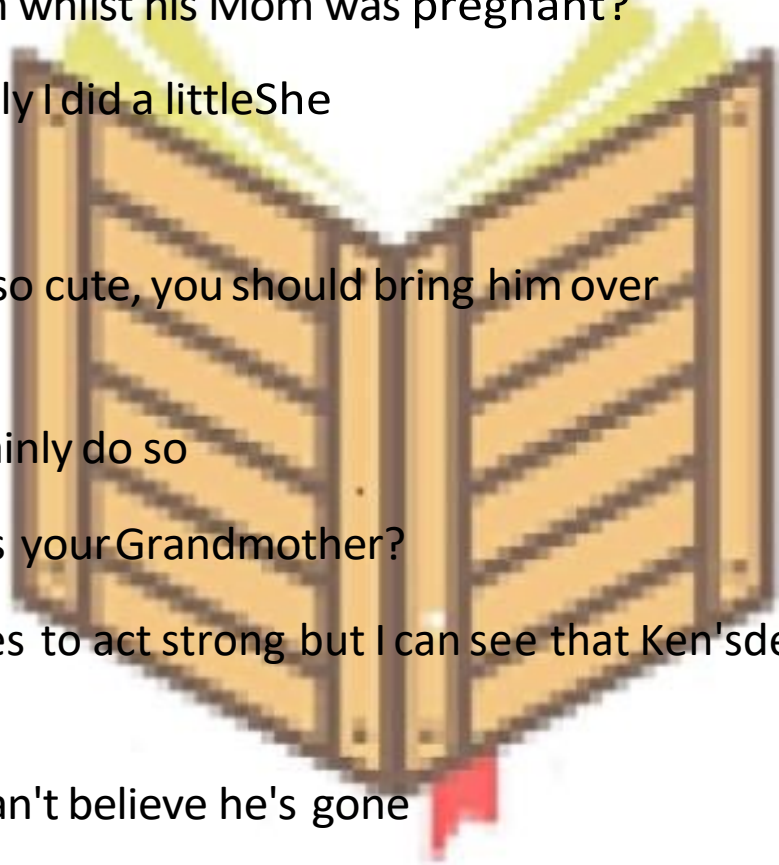
Me: I'll certainly do so

Gert: How is your Grandmother?

Me: She tries to act strong but I can see that Ken's death hit her hard

Gert: I stil can't believe he's gone

Me: We buried him.. Though it wasn't an open casket.. They said he was badly injured it was going



to traumatize us Gert:

Prison is brutal

Me: If the likes of Ken can just die like that Prison is indeed Brutal

Gert: I'm hoping that you learning a lot from this situation,
and I'm glad you changing for the better

Me: Yeah me too.. Bastard died before I could ask him
anything

Gert: Let's just leave issues of the past alone, I'm glad we finally
found common ground you and I

Me: Me too

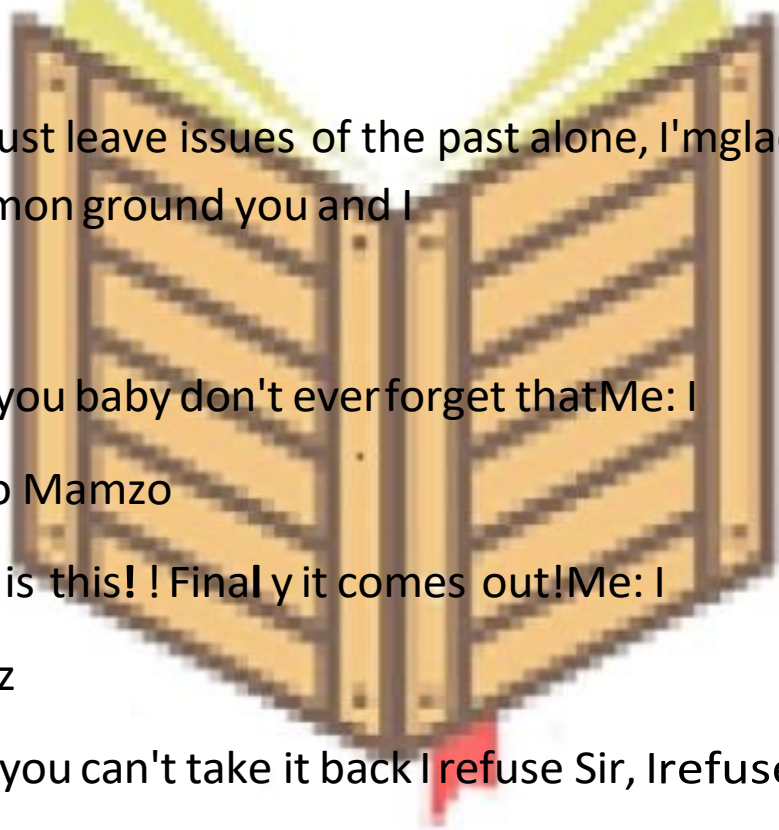
Gert: I love you baby don't ever forget that Me: I

love you too Mamzo

Gert: There is this!! Finally it comes out! Me: I

meant Gertz

Gert: Nope you can't take it back I refuse Sir, I refuse



NOVELSGURU.COM

MODRID MARTINEZ

My big Brother and I we were always close despite our retarded fights here and there but we were very close or used to be close.. Andre was always there looking out for me and our family, until he fucked up and had some bad guys kidnap our Mother, our Sister and her Daughter. Things that were done to them they still mess me up even today. After their death was captured in a video and shown to us, we had nothing left at home anymore. We knew they were going to come for us next, so we relocated to South Africa. A country they never thought would be a perfect hide out for us..

Andre changed when we got here. He was very cold and what's more messed up about the situation was that, what was done to our family, he did it to a lot of girls too. Shit started going left when he went for my girlfriends. Literally every girl that I liked or was involved with, Andre came into the picture.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Made them fall for him and then later on killed them. Masking their deaths as "Suicide".. What killed me the most was when he went for a girl that I had fallen deeply in love with. Her name is Sandy, after fucking up and landing in jail because I wanted to do away with her for good. Andre made sure that I get locked up for years and never come back to bother them..

I did accept my fate, I tried to let justice take its course. I tried to pay for my sins, but revenge burned me. So this whole time I've been here, I've been cooking up a plan of my own. I got his sworn enemy to work with me, Andre is never going to see it coming. What's nice is that I am his brother, I know him better than anyone else..

To be continued

[08/24, 13:47] : 109

NOVELSGURU.COM

SOLE

The next morning I met up with Scorpion for breakfast so I could give him his envelope. He was supposed to stop by at my house last night to

collect it, but he couldn't make it. Told me something came up so we settled to meeting up this morning.. He looked at Nongcebo's picture, his envelope consisted of Nongcebo's photos. Photos of her taken when she was still admitted at the hospital, after Kelso did what he did to her. This Nastro meant business for real, to even go as far as taking pictures of Nongcebo at the hospital? How did he know she was there?

Makes me think that he has contacts all around, even at the hospital. There's a few professionals that are on his payroll so it seems.. Last night I did my own research about the DL after Sandi had gone to sleep. Bunch of rich men from different countries who came together to start a secret society called the "Dark Lords". Now there wasn't too much that was said about them, other than their riches. They

NOVELSGURU.COM

owned hotels, restaurants, bars. They very well off, and I wonder how they managed to be this rich.

They probably help each other get rich? There was a lot behind that secret society. A lot that has been hidden from the naked eye, I know shit when I smell one...

This whole mess was giving me a migraine, I hardly even slept last night. A lot kept me awake, the fear of the threats coming true. My unborn baby actually being taken, Sandi finding out about my affair with Wilsonia, not forgetting how Wilsonia fucked me over..

Scorpion shook his head..

Scorp: So let me get this straight. Kelso told what's his name again?

Me: Stalion

Scorp: About the whole plan because he thought we fucked him over and he was ready to work for the Italians. Then this bitch ass Stalion snitched to Nastro about this? Now Nastro wants his money

NOVELSGURU.COM

but doesn't necessarily want it. He wants us to steal a necklace for him that will lead him to finding his Daughter who was sold into the world of sex trafficking by Nastro's enemy called Andre who happens to be in the DL too?

Me: Pretty much

Scorp: If we don't carry out this shit he's going to go after our loved ones?

Me: Yes

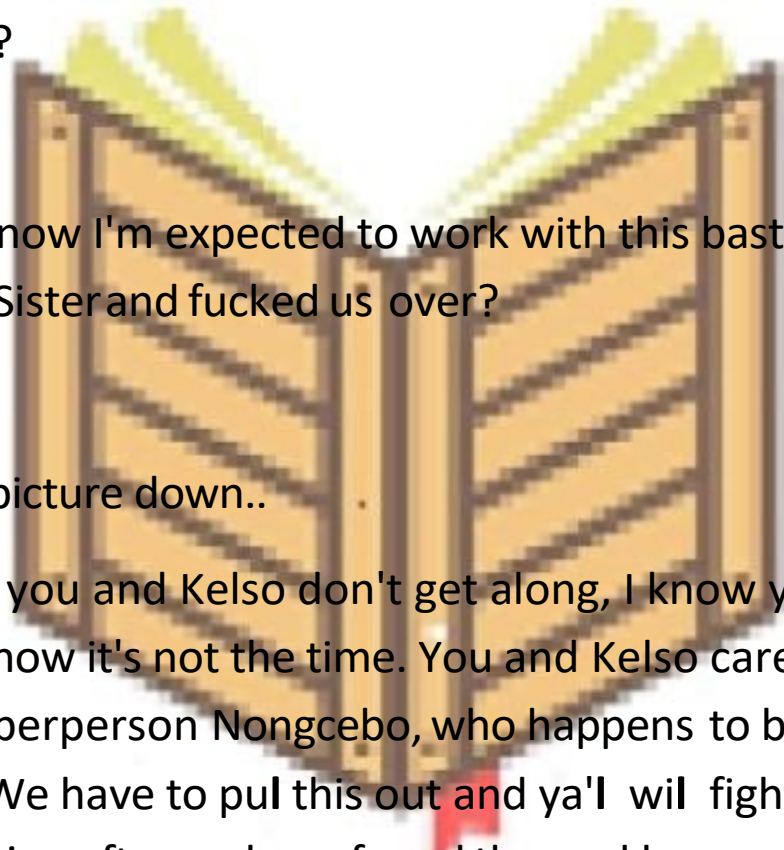
Scorp: And now I'm expected to work with this bastard who abused my Sister and fucked us over?

Me: Yes

He put the picture down..

Me: I know you and Kelso don't get along, I know you wanna kill him but now it's not the time. You and Kelso care a lot about one person Nongcebo, who happens to be in danger right now.. We have to pull this out and ya'll will fight it off in the boxing ring after we have found the necklace

Scorp: We did the heist alone, can't we also pull this



shit out on our own?

Me: We don't know much about this Andre, we can't go after the necklace on our own. We need Kelso and we need a plan right away

Scorpion: I don't know man

Me: Please bite your tongue until this whole shit is over, this is not about your Egos. This is about Nongcebo, I don't think you wanna lose her for the second time

NONGCEBO

The study session didn't happen last night. After the dinner I just went straight to bed, that's how tired I was.. I woke up this morning to a missed video call from Kelo, a missed call and texts. He was disappointed, the messages were about him being disappointed and thinking that I bailed out on him or something. Honestly speaking I just passed out, I told myself I would wait for 22:00 but I passed out

NOVELSGURU.COM

an hour before..

So whilst I was in my car about to drive out to work, I video called him. Took him a while to respond to the video call. He was still in bed...

Me: Good morning

He closed his eyes again and then put his index finger together with his thumb at the corners of his eyes.. He bit his lower lip and his dimples came out to play..

Me: You still sleeping

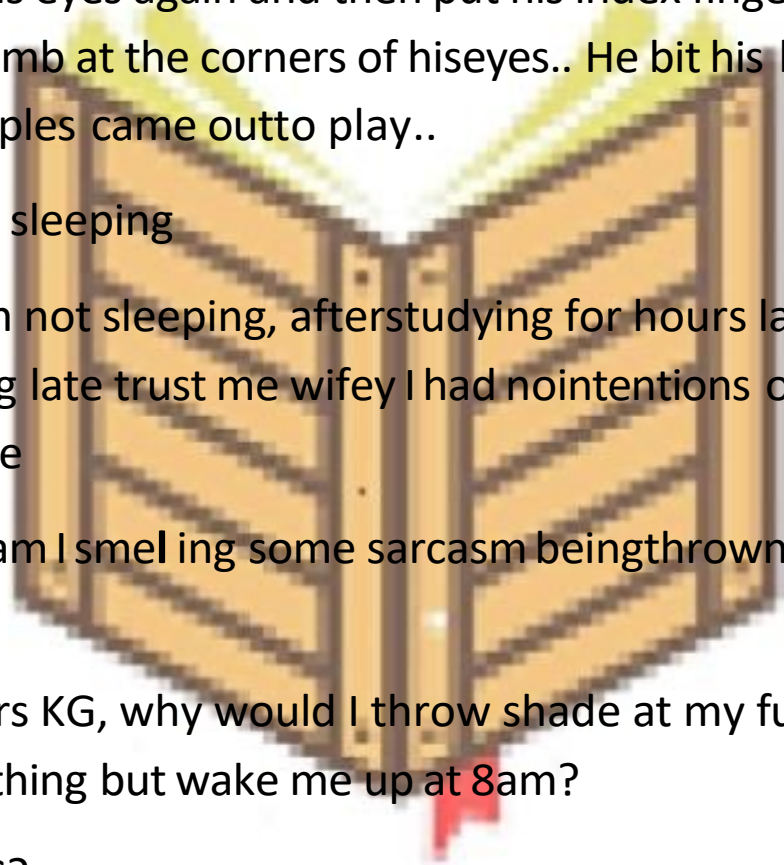
Kelo: No I'm not sleeping, after studying for hours last night and sleeping late trust me wifey I had no intentions of sleeping until this late

Me: Haibo am I smelling some sarcasm being thrown at me?

Kelo: No Mrs KG, why would I throw shade at my future wife who did nothing but wake me up at 8am?

Me: Mrs KG?

He opened his eyes and looked at me..



Me: Mrs Kelo Gxaba? Kelo:

Nowshe's getting it

Me: What makes you think I'm going to marry you? Kelo: You will marry me you just don't know it yet Me: We will see about that

Kelo: No apology? No explanation for missing the study date last night vele muntu wam'?

Me: I passed out

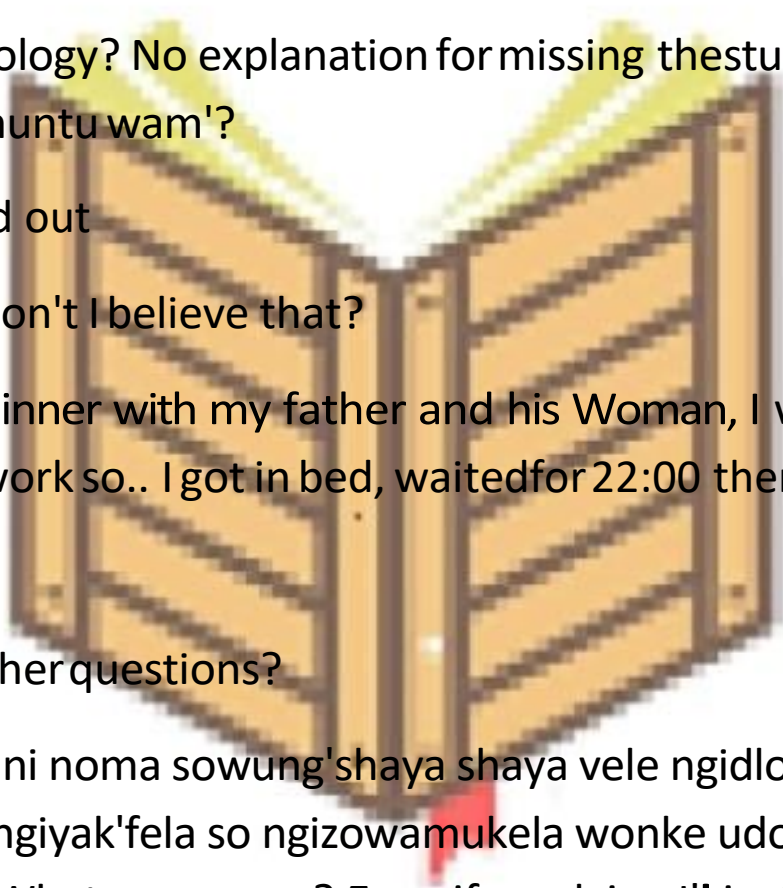
Kelo: Why don't I believe that?

Me: I had dinner with my father and his Woman, I was already tired from work so.. I got in bed, waited for 22:00 then I passed out

Kelo: Ok

Me: No further questions?

Kelo: Sizathini noma sowung'shaya shaya vele ngidloza uShut up. Angithi ngiyak'fela so ngizowamukela wonke udodi owenzayo (What can we say? Even if you lying I'll just keep quiet. I love you so I'll take every nonsense that you do)



I laughed..

Me: Ohw look at you sounding so defeatedKelo: It's

life muntu wami eyy

Me: I have to go I'll be late for workKelo:

You look beautiful

Me: Thank you, you look handsome even when you have just woken up

Kelo: I try.. With these face masks I usually do at night

I laughed..

Kelo: I'm joking glad I made you laugh thoughMe: Okay

check you later, let me drive

Kelo: Okay Baby have a safe trip to workMe: Bye

Kelo: Bye Muntu wam'

RACHEL

NOVELSGURU.COM

J udith was drinking tea when I walked into the livingroom..

Me: Good morningShe

looked at me..

Me: I'm late this morning, I overslept

J udith: Ukuvuka ekuseni njalo sisi, ngiyathemba ukhathele
(Waking up every morning, I'm sure you tired now)

Me: I'll get used to it Sisi

J udith: Ai cha umona phantsi, kodwa muhle uKhumalo Sisi (J
ealous down.. Khumalo is real yhandsome)

Me: Usho? (You think so)

J udith: Ungenzi ngathi awazi (Don't act surprised)I smiled and
fixed my dress..

J udith: Uyambona nje ukuthi yi ndoda womelele(You can
see that he is a very strong man)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ngiyabonga Sisi (Thank you Sisi)

Judith: Ungamlahli Sisi, ngisho nangendlela akubuka ngayo. Kuyasho ukuthi uyazifela (Don't dump him, even there way he looks at you. You cantel that he's in love)

Me: Ithi ngihambe ngoba lendaba ngeke iphele nje (Let me leave because this conversation won't end)

KELSO

Power: Thank you

Me: Sor y forbringing him so early, I have er andsto run

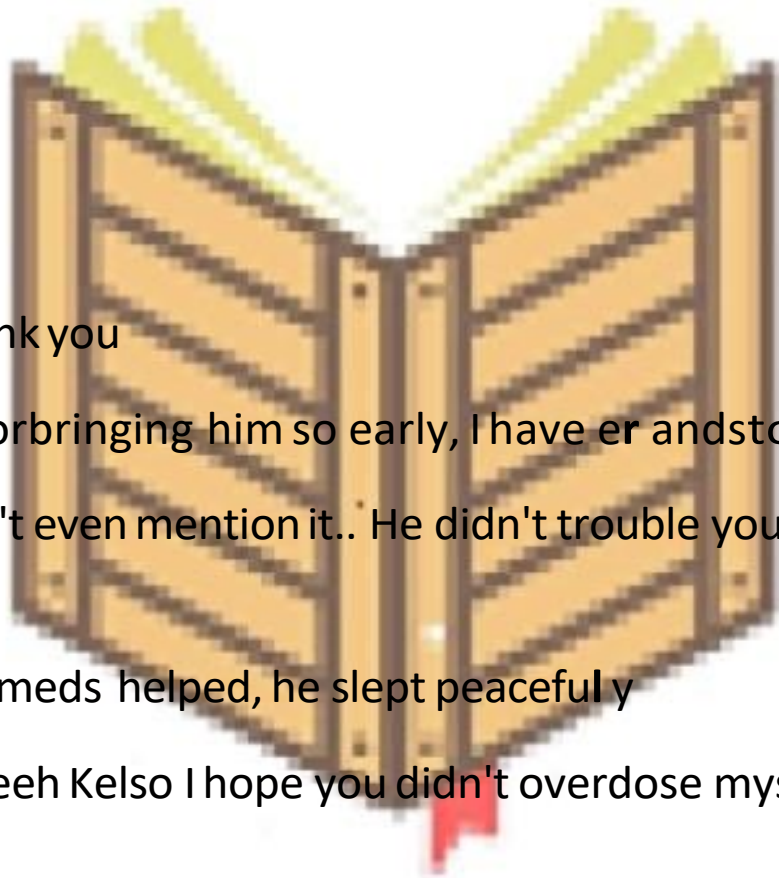
Power: Don't even mention it.. He didn't trouble youlast night?

Me: No his meds helped, he slept peaceful y

Power: Weeeh Kelso I hope you didn't overdose myson with Panado

Me: I didn't

NOVELSGURU.COM



Power: I hope so

Me: Let me kiss him goodbye I took
him from Power..

Me: I'll see you later

He looked at me and then laid his head on my chest...

Power: Ohh Nkosi yam kwasuka lokho (Here we go) She tried to
take him from me but he didn't want..

Me: Hakeem not today poi, Daddy has a lot of things to do today

Power took him from me by force, he grabbed on to my t-
shirt...

Me: Ngiyabuya angisho (I'm coming back) Power:
Hakeem maan hai!

It was difficult leaving him crying like that, but I had no choice.
He will cry and eventually keep quiet...

MODRID

NOVELSGURU.COM

Even with my good manners and hardly starting shit around here, the new Gavenor didn't trust me at all.. I am from a dangerous prison where I caused havock when I first got there because I was stil hurting over my girlfriend Sandy, but as time went on. I became more reserved, they say it gets better with time. I say it doesn't but revenge builds up with time... The Warden took me out for my usual morning walk, I'm in solitary I'm not supposed to be getting any fresh air but with my good behaviour I asked the Gavenor and he didn't decline..

I walked around the yard alone, other inmates were inside. They'll be coming here in 2 hours time. My hands were buried deep in my pockets as I walked around busy navigating the place..

Warden: What exactly is it that you looking for Martinez?

Me: What do you mean?

Warden: You walking around the yard somewhat

strategical y

Me: It's not everyday one gets this kind of freedom, I wanna embrace and take in every corner

Warden: Are you trying to break out?

I crouched next to the fence and with my other hand I felt the soil..

Me: Not exactly why would I do that with the presence of a warden

Warden: I'll be watching you
Me: I know

Warden: Stand on your feet!
I stood on my feet..

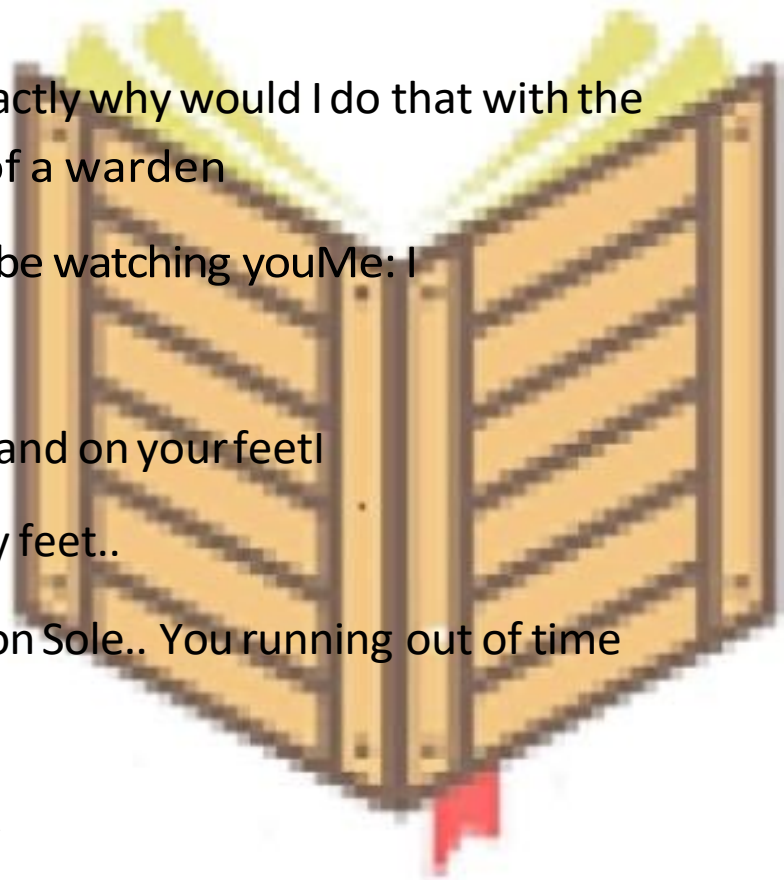
Me: Come on Sole.. You running out of time

WILSONIA

I heard a knock at the door..Me:

Come in

I raised my head and it was Sole...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What are you doing here? Sole:

That's how we greet now? He made his way in..

Me: What can I help you with?

He picked up the photo of Nathan on the table.. Sole: Well played.. Well played Wilsonia

Me: We learn from the best don't we now? Sole: So you and Nastro?

Me: Yes he is my husband, the same husband I cheated on with you

Sole: I'll be damned! So everything was a lie with you?

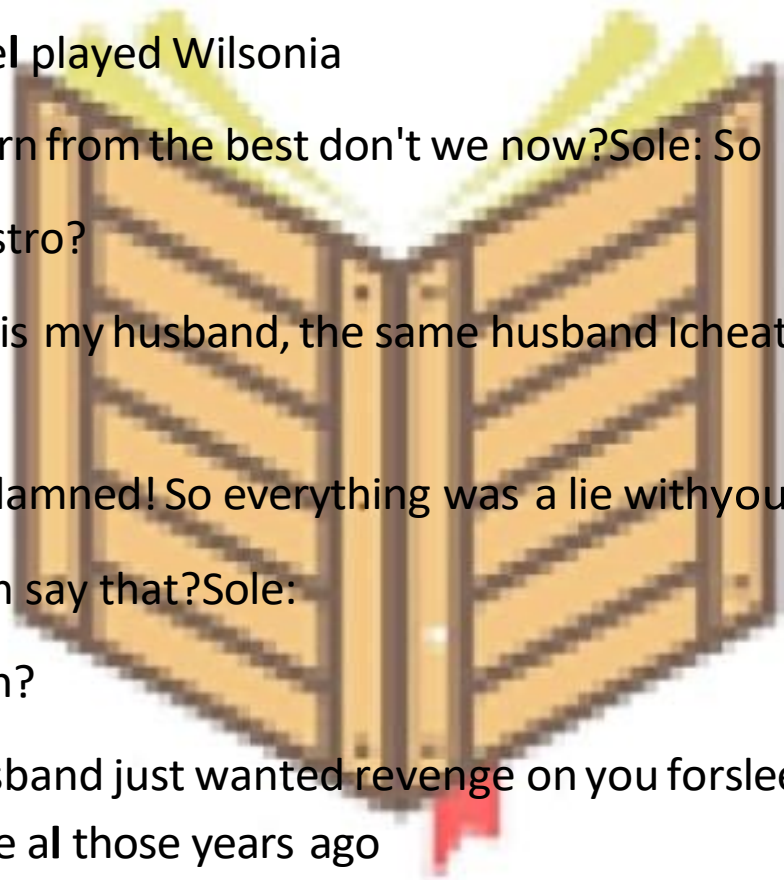
Me: You can say that? Sole:

Why though?

Me: My husband just wanted revenge on you for sleeping with his wife all those years ago

Sole: Why am I being punished for the whore? Me:

Maybe the whore got tired of your bullshit



Sole: First you tried poisoning my pregnant girlfriend, now this? What are you trying to get from me this time around?

Me: Nothing.. I was just trying to save my marriage

Sole: By betraying me? You know better than to betray me

Me: I'll take my chances and already I have taken my chances

Sole: Good luck with everything Me:

Thank you

He looked at Nathan one last time and walked out..

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:47] : 110

WILSONIA

I feel bad for Sole and right now I'm hoping that he



can read between the lines and actually realize that Nathan is truly his Son. Nathan does have a resemblance to Sole but because of how trusted the lab is no one can ever think that results could be falsified..

I cheated on my husband with Sole back when Sole was starting as my patient. Nastro has always been a busy person too much invested in the secret society and his businesses, not forgetting his infidelity. He had more mistresses than I could count in one hand, and our marriage took a downfall from there. Before Nastro and I got married, he had a child from his previous relationship. A daughter that he doesn't like talking about, all I know is that she is dead and it wasn't a natural death. She was killed.. With our marriage collapsing, we failed to have a child of our own. Instead, I felt pregnant for Sole, someone who was meant to be something I did for fun on the side to satisfy my sexual hunger.

Had I found out earlier that I was pregnant I would've resorted to doing abortion but it was late

NOVELSGURU.COM

when I found out and by then my Husband and I were already separated for a while. Coming into an agreement of working on our marriage was short lived when the bomb in the oven came about. Nastro swore that he will get revenge even if it took years. The only reason why I had felt for his sinister acts it's because he has a bullet on the street with my son's name on it. So I had to play along by videotaping Sole and I having sex at my house, sending him our private whatsapp conversations. I thought he was only going to use that information to break Sole and Sandi up, but he used my Son too in the process. He really wants to bring Sole down to his knees for breaking our already broken marriage. Their feud seems to have taken a more dangerous toll now and I hope no innocent person will get hurt along the way... All I ever wanted was for my Son to know and have a relationship with his real father, not what is happening right now....

SOLE

NOVELSGURU.COM

"Snowflakeeeee"

I tried to locate where she was by the sound of her voice..

"Snowflakeeeee"

The word echoed around the room it was difficult to locate exactly where she was standing..

I hate it when this happens, when I can't find answers to a certain problem I overthink and stress then I bring upon myself a terrible migraine which is accompanied by a lot of dizziness.. I felt her hand touching mine..

Sandi: Snowflake, are you okay? I gently squeezed her hand..

Me: I'm fine just lost in my own thoughts Sandi:

What are you thinking about?

Me: How to become a better Father

Sandi: You are a wonderful Dad to Nathan, I know you will make a great Dad again for the second time

I brought her hand closer to my mouth and kissed it...

Sandi: What's wrong are you okay? Me: I'm good

Sandi: Hey look at me

I ran my eyes around trying to focus on her face but I was disoriented. Things seemed to be appearing blurry..

Sandi: What's wrong talk to me, do you still take your meds that the Dr gave you?

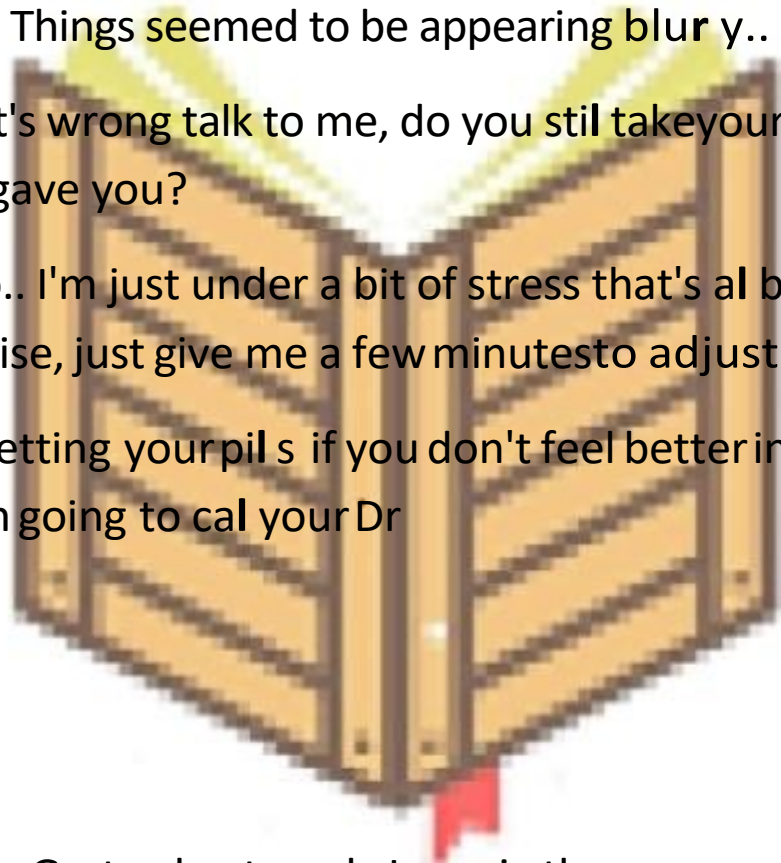
Me: I still do.. I'm just under a bit of stress that's all but I'll be okay I promise, just give me a few minutes to adjust

Sandi: I'm getting your pills if you don't feel better in a few minutes I'm going to call your Dr

KELSO

I went to see Gertrude at work, I was in the

NOVELSGURU.COM



neighborhood and I thought I should pop in and greet her..

Gert: Hey why didn't you tel me you were coming?Me: Are you busy?

Gert: No I am not, I just have a meeting what? 5mintime

Me: I should've cal ed first, I see you swamped witha lot of work

Gert: Not at al I was just reviewing the caseMe: What is it about?

Gert: I can't say it's confidentialMe: I see

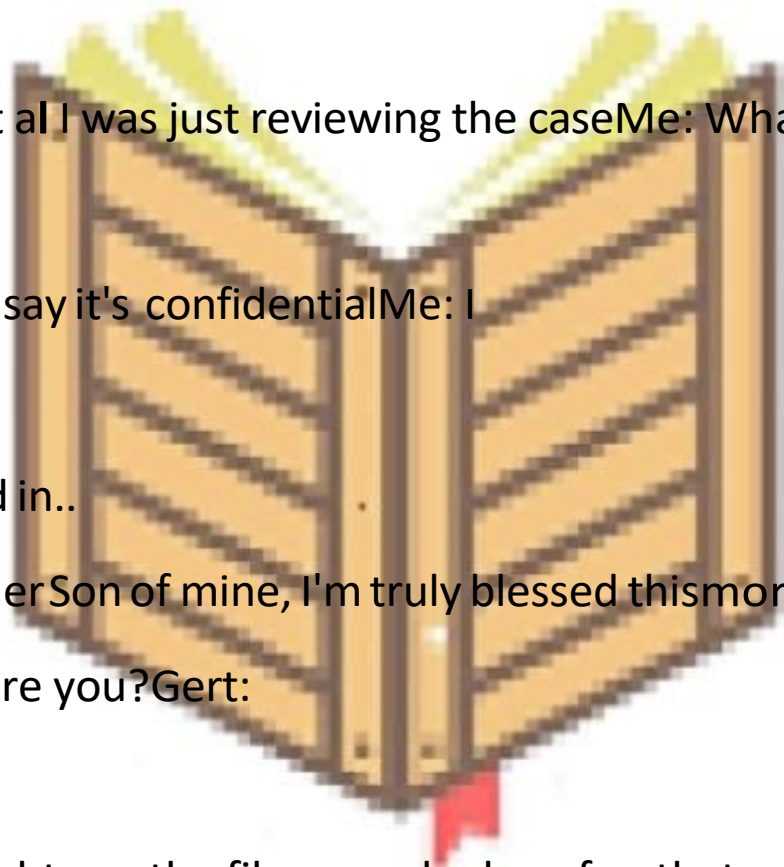
Kelo walked in..

Gert: AnotherSon of mine, I'm truly blessed thismorning

Kelo: How are you?Gert: I'm good

Kelo: I brought you the file you asked me for, that

NOVELSGURU.COM



you forgot at home

Gert: Ohw yes...I even forgot about itKelo

handed her the file...

Gert: You know going to greet your Brother?Kelo:

Who?

Gert: Don't do this

Kelo: I don't have a brother, I only have a SisterGert: Not now

Kelo, not now

Kelo: Anyway I just brought you this file, nothing more

He turned and walked back to the door bumping into me on Purpose..

Gert: Kelo! !

Me: Naa leave him, uku stage umfanaGert:

I'm real y sor y about this

Me: It's okay.. Let me go I'll cal you laterGert: Okay

bye

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Bye

SANDISIWE

I heard a knock at the door, I went to open. It was Scorpion..

Him: Hi Me:

Him

Him: Is Sole around?

Me: He is but he is not feeling well Him:

Can I see him?

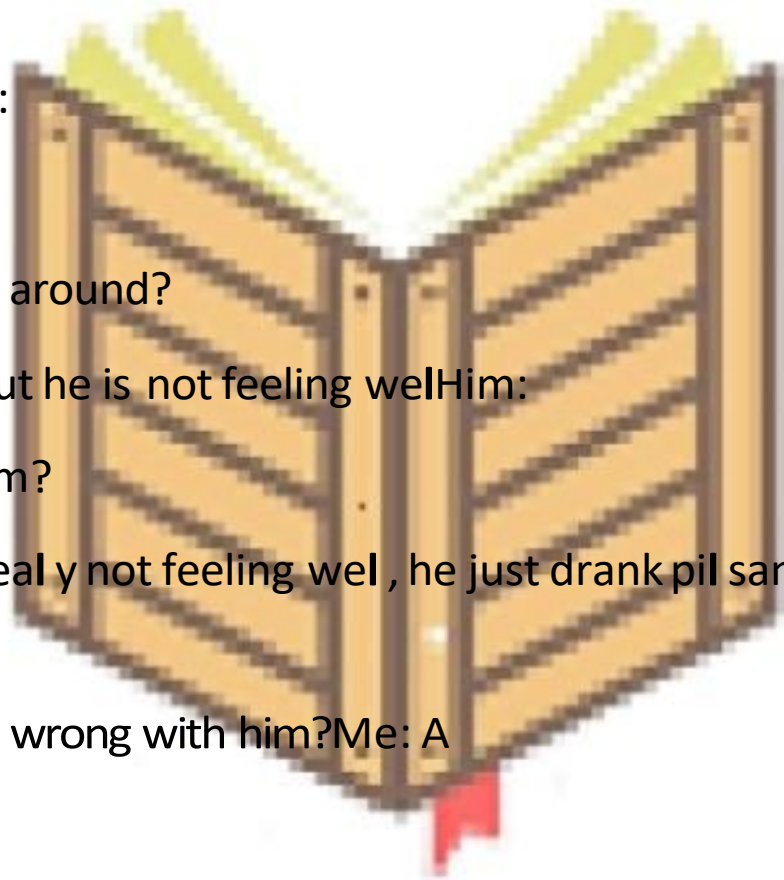
Me: He is really not feeling well, he just drank pills and got in bed

Him: What's wrong with him? Me: A

migraine

Him: A migraine is putting him down like that? Just like that?

Me: Is there something that you wanted I'll tell him



NOVELSGURU.COM

when he wakes up

Scorpion: Tell him Scorpion was here looking for him

Me: I'll surely pass the message
Scorpion: Thank you

Me: Bye

I closed the door...

KEN (KELSO'S FATHER)

I looked at the pictures..Me: Is this her?

Socks: Yes

Me: She's beautiful and looks a bit young
Socks: So what's the next step, kill her?

Me: No I have a more better idea
Socks:

I'm listening

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Sit down for this He sat
down...

NONGCEBO

I was on the phone with Kelo. Since I've learned that he is friends with Sandisiwe's cousin. I was thinking of doing a baby shower for Sandisiwe since she is now 8 months pregnant, though we should've done it long time ago at least when she was 7 months but a lot has been happening..

Kelo: Eyy Mnkami you will have to talk to my Sister Takie about that and Moms too, I don't know anything about that

Me: I didn't say help me plan it, was just letting you know

Kelo: I think it's a good idea, it will cheer her up. Takie told me she's having problems with her boyfriend. I'm not surprised, he is friends with Kelso. Skeem Sama Nyala nje kphela (They full of

NOVELSGURU.COM

nonsense)

Me: Hai I didn't call to talk about that crew Kelo: No

ku grand

Me: Let me go we will talk later

Kelo: Okay I love you have a productive day Me: Bye

KELSO

I was in the car when I called Sole. His phone was answered by Sandisiwe told me he's not okay. It was just after Nastro sent me a text that we running out of time, in the text he said I must go to prison and ask to talk to Modrid he might just help. The name of the prison was the same prison where my Father was in. This Modrid I've seen him a few times, I guess I don't have a choice now but to go and pay Sir Modrid a visit...



NOVELSGURU.COM

SOLE

I thought the migraine would eventually go away after taking the meds but it was still there. Now it was worse because I was vomiting. Seeing flashes and hearing some ringing sound. Flashes of memories from when I was young played out in my head like a painful movie, making the migraine more and more intense. I closed my eyes and collapsed on the bathroom floor, I glanced down and noticed I was bleeding. Probably from my nose. My headache intensified..

Me: Ahhhhhh!!

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Inganathi please let's continue voting for her

https://pageantvote.es/pageants/2741/contestants/18101?fbclid=IwAR2WNM92z9KAAR_AEQD7mYSaZg4eG6n7eXz0XyXirJwoFLK6OCQuHRgGws

NOVELSGURU.COM

[08/24, 13:48] : 111

KELSO

I had to put my plans on hold of going to see Modrid in jail when I received a text from Sole. It was Sandisiwe who sent me the text through Sole's phone telling me that Sole is not doing good, she's confused and doesn't know what to do. I drove there and kept on communicating with her, she told me she had called an Ambulance and it was delaying.... When I got there she had somehow helped him to the bed, there was drops of blood from the bathroom leading to the bedroom. She had put a cold wet face cloth on his forehead, I looked at him..

Me: Hey Buddy

He opened his eyes and ran them around..Me: It's

me, it's Kelso

He seemed so disoriented and couldn't even look

NOVELSGURU.COM

me in the eye.. Sandi: Is

he blind?Me: I don't

think so

Sole: "Fibonacci numbers are strongly related to the golden ratio: Binet's formula expresses the n th Fibonacci number in terms of n and the golden ratio, and implies that the ratio of two consecutive Fibonacci numbers tends to the golden ratio as n increases"

Sandi: What is that? What is he even sayingMe: It's the Fibonacci sequence

Sole: 0, 1, 1, 2, 3, 5, 8, 13, 21, 34, 55, 89, 144, 233, 377, 610, 987, 1597, 2584, 4181, 6765, 10946, 17711, 28657, 46368, 75025, 121393, 196418, 317811, ...

Sandi: Is it important to him? Why is he saying it?He's been saying it for a while now

Me: I don't know... How far is the Ambulance?Sandi: I'll call it again

NOVELSGURU.COM

My phone rang, it was a landline number, from my Father's prison..

Me: Hello?

Voice: Is this Kelso? Me:

Who is this?

Voice: You are speaking to Modrid

Me: How did you get my number? What the fuck is this? What's going on?

Modrid: I need to talk to you

Me: Ya I can't talk right now my best friend is sick Modrid: I know

Me: You know?

Modrid: Has it come to the obsession of the Fibonacci numbers?

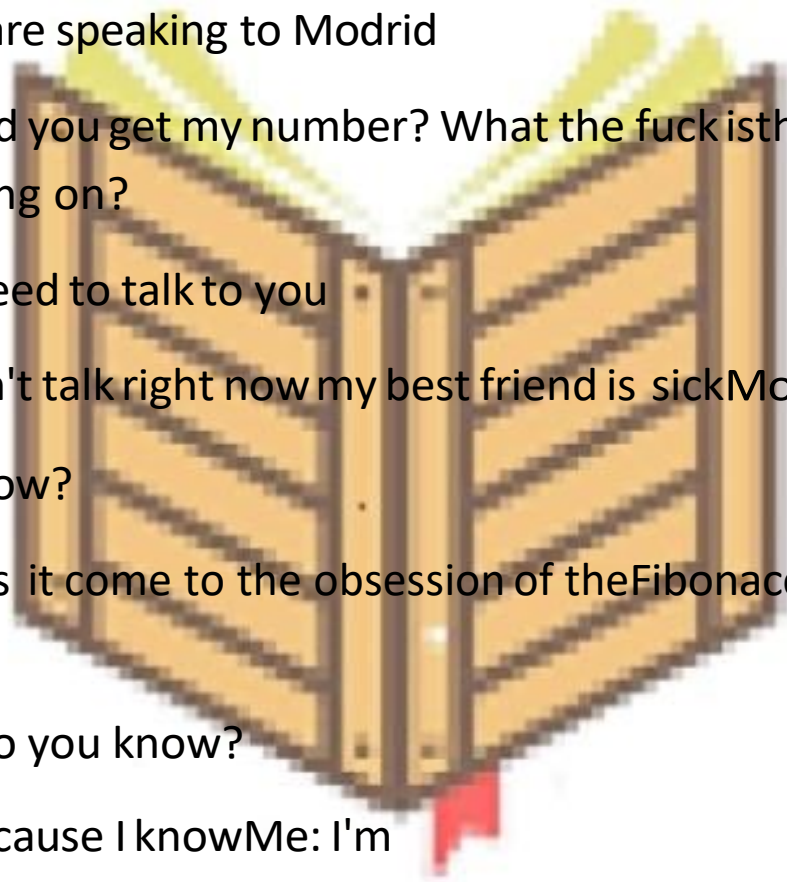
Me: How do you know?

Modrid: Because I know Me: I'm

hanging up now

NOVELSGURU.COM

Modrid: There's pills that Sole takes, they help him.



You need to find them and give it to him because if you don't he is going to lose his mind and when he does. They going to do a scan and find something in his brain that he doesn't want anyone knowing about

Me: What are you talking about?

Modrid: Find the pills

Me: I can't ask him he's not lucid enough

Modrid: Think like him, where would Sole hide something?

Me: Sole has an IQ of 225 or so, it will take me years to find the pills

Modrid: He wouldn't put them in a place that's far especially when he has to take them everyday. Find those pills, he can't go to the hospital.. Red & white capsules

Me: What?

Modrid: Sole is my only way out of here, I'm the only hope you guys have of finding the necklace and saving the girls

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How did you know?

Modrid: Because Andre Martinez is my Brother and you guys need me.. Sole cannot go to the hospital

He hung up..

Sandi walked back in..

Sandi: I called they said they on their way I looked at her..

Me: We can't take him to the hospital Sandi:

What?

Me: We can't take Sole to the hospital

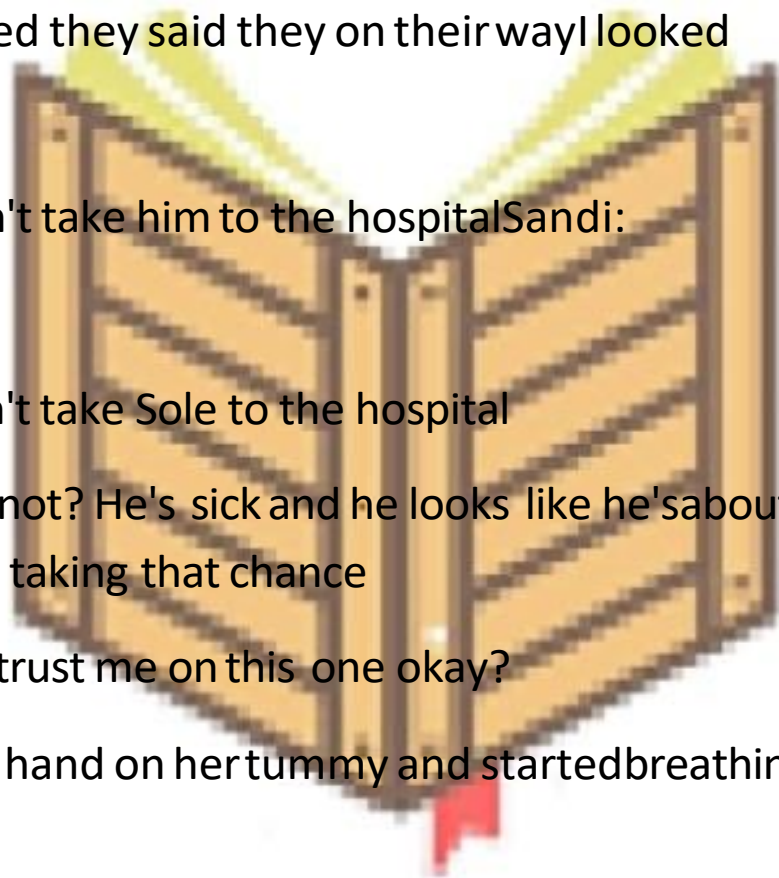
Sandi: Why not? He's sick and he looks like he's about to die.. I'm not taking that chance

Me: Please trust me on this one okay?

She put her hand on her tummy and started breathing in and out..

Sandi: This situation is going to make me go into early labour

Me: Okay let's calm down for a second



I walked up to her.. I put her arm around my shoulders..

Me: You sit on the couch and relax, I'll take care of this Sole situation.. I promise

Sandi: The ambulance is on it's way and..Me: You have to fake having cramps Sandi: What? I'm not doing that! !

I helped her to the couch..

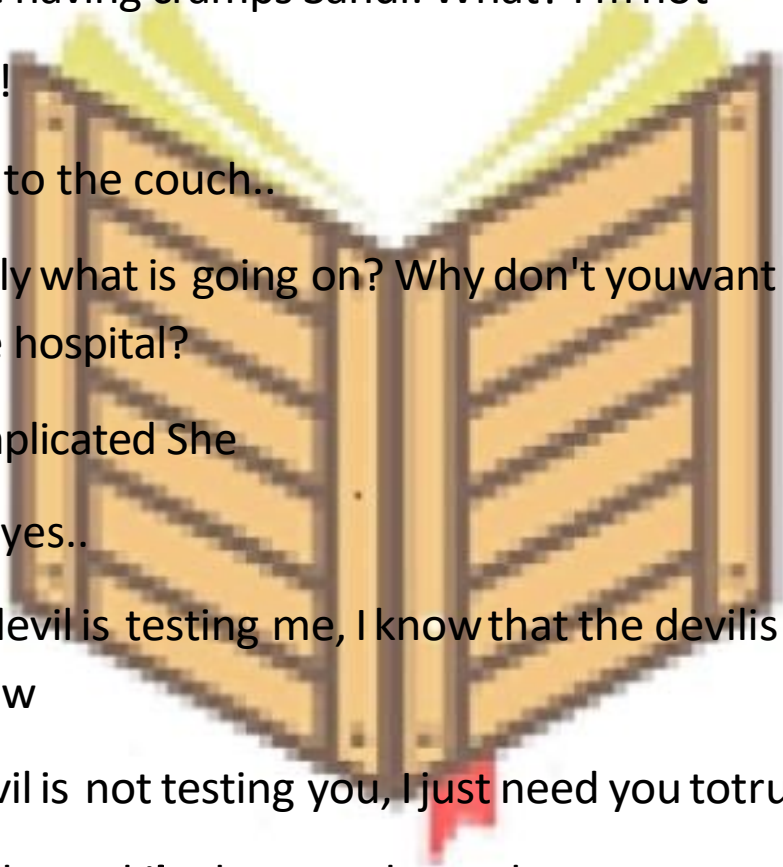
Sandi: Exactly what is going on? Why don't you want him going to the hospital?

Me: It's complicated She closed her eyes..

Sandi: The devil is testing me, I know that the devil is testing me right now

Me: The devil is not testing you, I just need you to trust me

Sandi: You almost killed Nongcebo and you want me to trust you?



Me: On this yes.. Please, if I don't fix this and Soledies. You can have my head on a silver platter..

Since you have Sole's phone please text Scorpion to come

She nodded repeatedly..

Sandi: Get me a pillow Me:

A pillow coming up

Sandi: And a bowl of ice cream Me:

Okay

Sandi: Bring the whole tub of ice cream, and some water and some chocolates

Me: I'll get them

Sandi: And some mayonnaise Me:

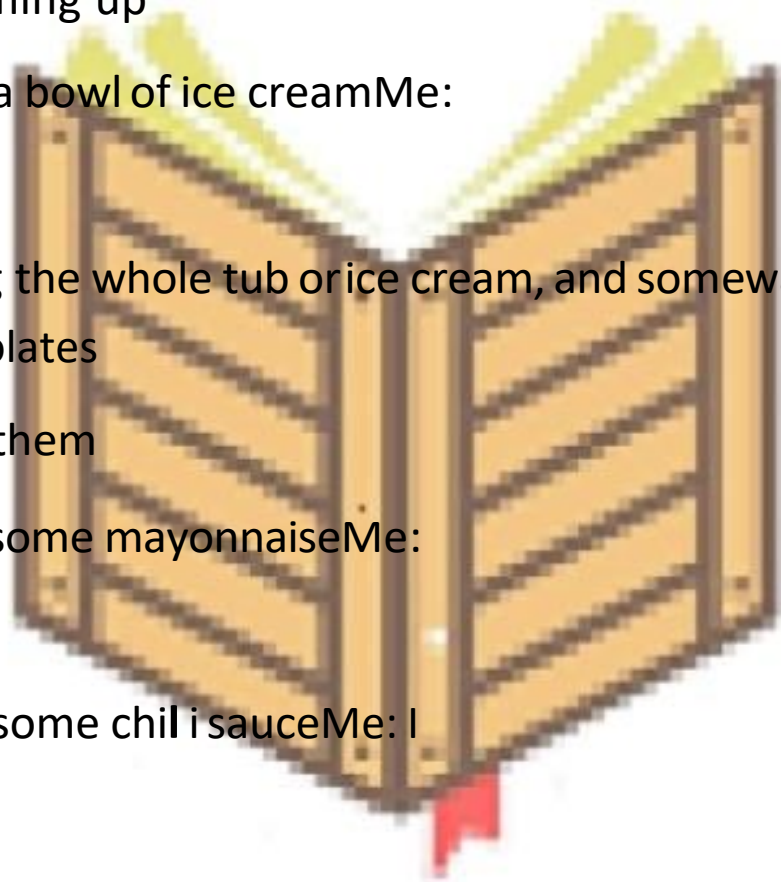
Huh?

Sandi: And some chili sauce Me: I

do-

Sandi: Get them.. Right now!! I

made my way to the kitchen..



NOVELSGURU.COM

SLI KHUMALO (NONGCEBO'S SISTER)

I decided to go shopping today. Since I'm the only one at home who is not tied to anything I must make sure that we don't run out of groceries.. I was at checkers slowly pushing the trolley and checking a few things when I accidentally bumped into someone's shopping basket on the floor..

Me: I am so sorry

He turned back and glanced at my trolley..Me:

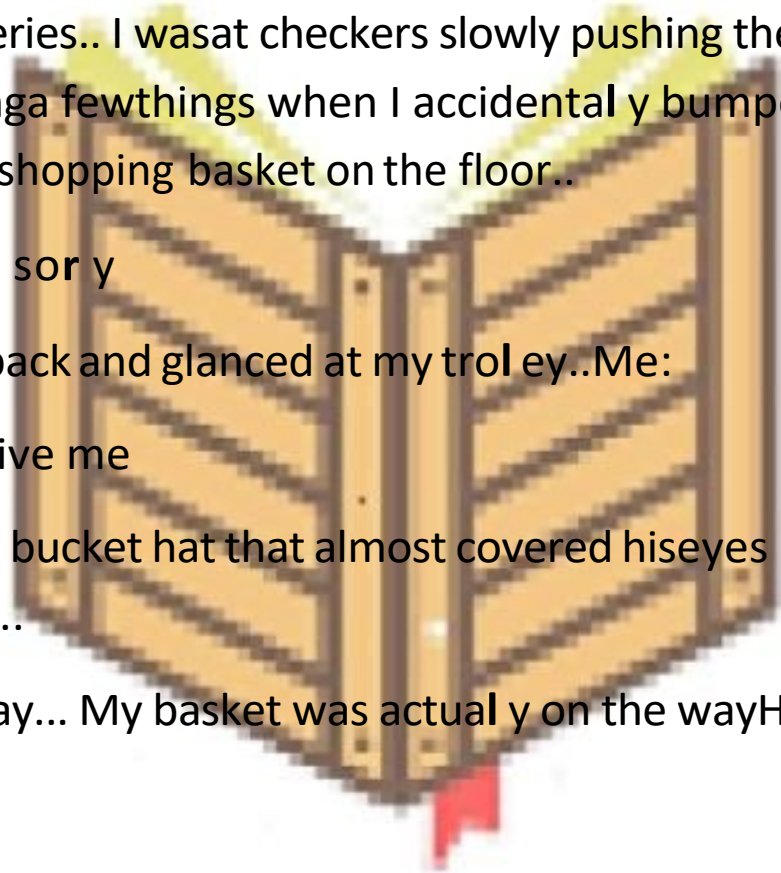
Please forgive me

He had on a bucket hat that almost covered his eyes completely..

Him: It's okay... My basket was actually on the way He picked it up..

He looked at me under that bucket hat..Him: I

apologize



NOVELSGURU.COM

When he had his back against me, I thought that maybe he was a random guy in his 30s judging from his body. But when he said something his voice and his grey&black goatee gave it away that he is a bit older. Maybe he's mid 40s, was really difficult to come up with a precise estimation of his age.. Older guys usually are a turn off they just let go of themselves, well expect for my father and this gentleman right here.. Though I couldn't see him clearly.. His body already got me wondering if he is into sports. Maybe Rugby, boxing or so. Such a strong looking man must be doing some extreme sport..

I continued pushing my trolley.. Him:

Excuse me?

I stopped..

Him: Can you please help me out here? Me:

Uhm I guess

I left my trolley and walked up to him. His shower gel left a good scent across my nose

Him: I don't know which one will work better between these two

I looked at the spices that he was holding..Me: Take this one

Him: I already had my eyes on the other oneMe: This is one is better trust me

Him: I'll take them both because I favour this one more

Me: Then why ask for my help if you not going to take my advice

Him: Maybe I just needed a reason to talk to youMe: Ohw I see

Him: Kenny

Me: Sli

Him: Nice to meet youMe:

Same here

I walked back to my trolley.....



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Mich: Next patient

Me: Can I make a quick phone call ?

Mich: Ya it's okay I'll tell Zondo you went to the ladies, I'll take the patient to his office

Me: Thank you Mich

I made my way out and called Gert. Gert and I things are becoming a bit awkward. She has been distant for some reason..

Gert: Hello

Me: Hey.. I hope you not busy

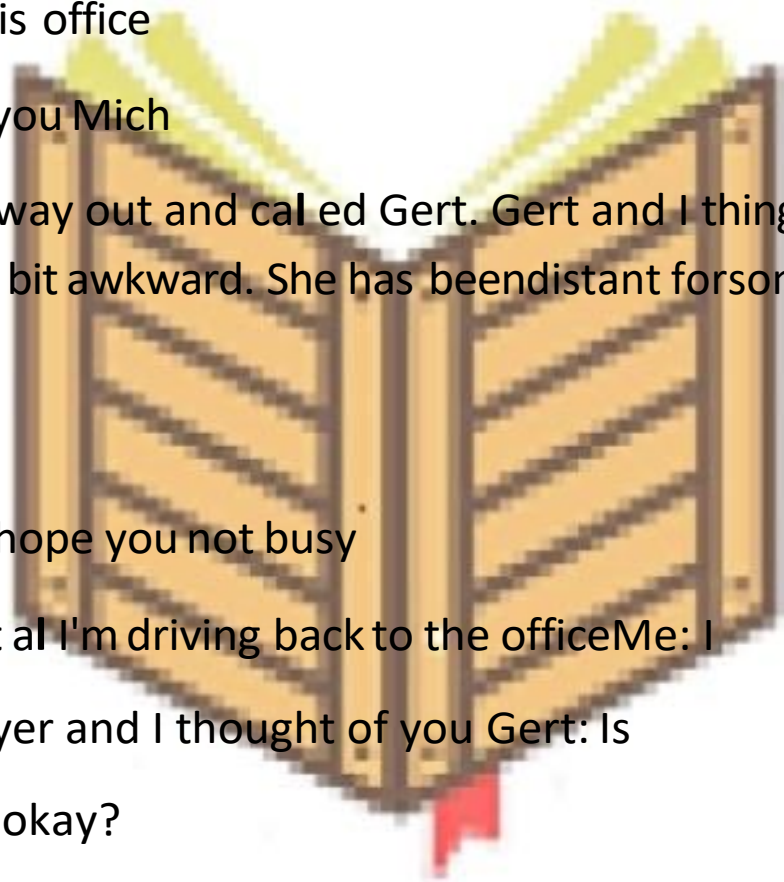
Gert: Not at all I'm driving back to the office

Me: I need a lawyer and I thought of you

Gert: Is everything okay?

Me: Yes I'm just.. I'm filing for divorce, I want to divorce Kelso

Gert: I.. Can't you get another lawyer?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I only know you and you come highly recommended

Gert: I do come expensive too

Me: It's okay I'll pay

Gert: I really don't know about this

Me: Why?

Gert: Kelso is my Son. I don't wanna go against him

Me: It's your job

Gert: I know but going against any of my kids the mother in me comes out first than the lawyer in me

Me: I understand you and Kelso are now Mother and Son, you very tight but let's not forget one thing. Let's not forget you were the one who was advocating for me. Not in support of what he was doing to me

Gert: I do not support what he did but he is still my Son, I don't wanna do this with him. I'm sorry you will have to find another lawyer

She hung up..

NOVELSGURU.COM

KELSO

Scorpion finally came. I was leaning against the wall and lost in my thoughts. Thinking about where Sole could've hidden the pills. Modrid stated they were red&white capsules.

Scorpion gave a deadly look..

Scorp: Where is Sole? I hope he didn't text me to come and make peace with you

Me: Sole is sick... Sandi was the one who sent you that text through his phone...

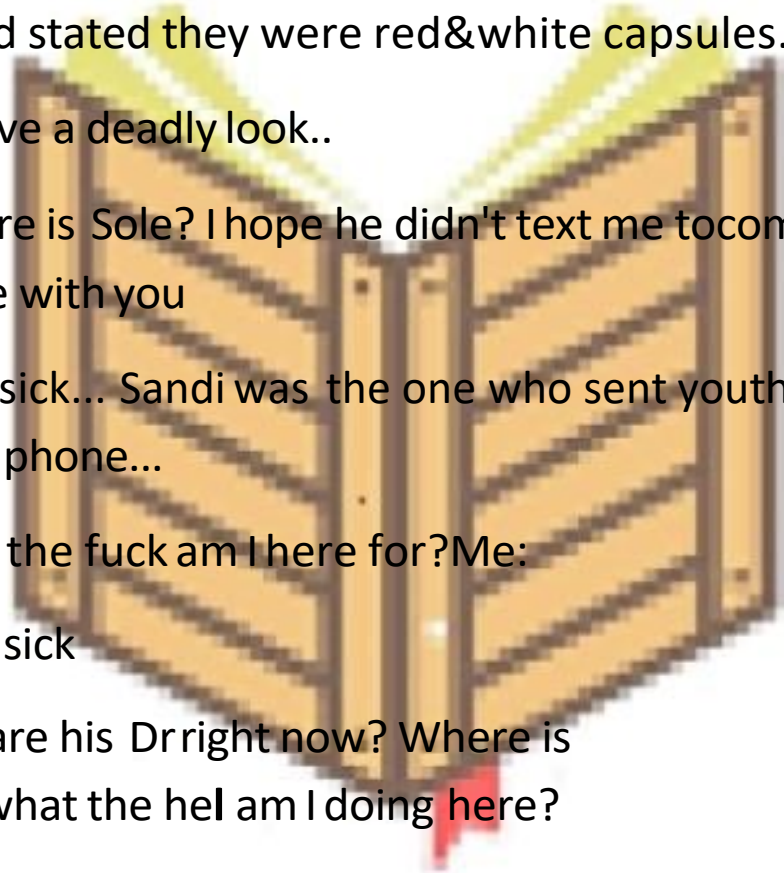
Scorp: Why the fuck am I here for? Me:

Sole is very sick

Scorp: You are his Dr right now? Where is Sandi we what the hell am I doing here?

Me: Sandi we just fell asleep trust me she's better off sleeping

Scorp: This is bullshit.. I'm leaving



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Scorpion I know you hate me and I cannot change how you feel about me. If someone was to do the same thing to my sister that I did to Nongcebo I would react the same way too

He walked up straight to me and put his hand around my neck, he pinned me against the wall ..

Scorp: Say her name again, I dare you!

(Silence)

He removed his hand around my neck...

Me: I'm never going to fight you, not now not ever!

Scorp: You don't have what it takes to fight a man, you don't have the balls!

Me: How ironic.. Look if you were someone else, this would be the last time you put your hand on me.. The only reason why I haven't done anything to you it's because of Nongcebo

He punched me in my stomach..Me: Fuck!

Scorp: This is definitely woman abuse, you got a

hoe in you! I feel like I'm punching a woman, I seriously feel bad now (Sarcasm)

Me: Listen you can fuck me up however you want after we have made sure that the girls are safe, I give you permission you can even kill me.. But damn! Can your love for your sister overcome your tantrum right now? Do you know what they are going to do to her? What I have put her through will be just a warm up so please!! Do it for her, do you want her to go through that trauma again?

He walked to the sink and got himself a glass of water. He opened the tap, filled it and then drank. He put the glass down and took a deep breath

Scorp: What's the plan

Me: We have to find Sole's pills then go visit Modridin jail

Scorp: Where are the pills?

Me: We have to FIND them.. Focus Scorpion! Scorp:

Let's find the damn pills!

NOVELSGURU.COM

MODRID

The Warden unlocked.. The

Gavenor walked in..Gav: Modrid

I looked at him...

Gav: You have a visitorMe: Is it
my Brother?

Gav: How did you know?

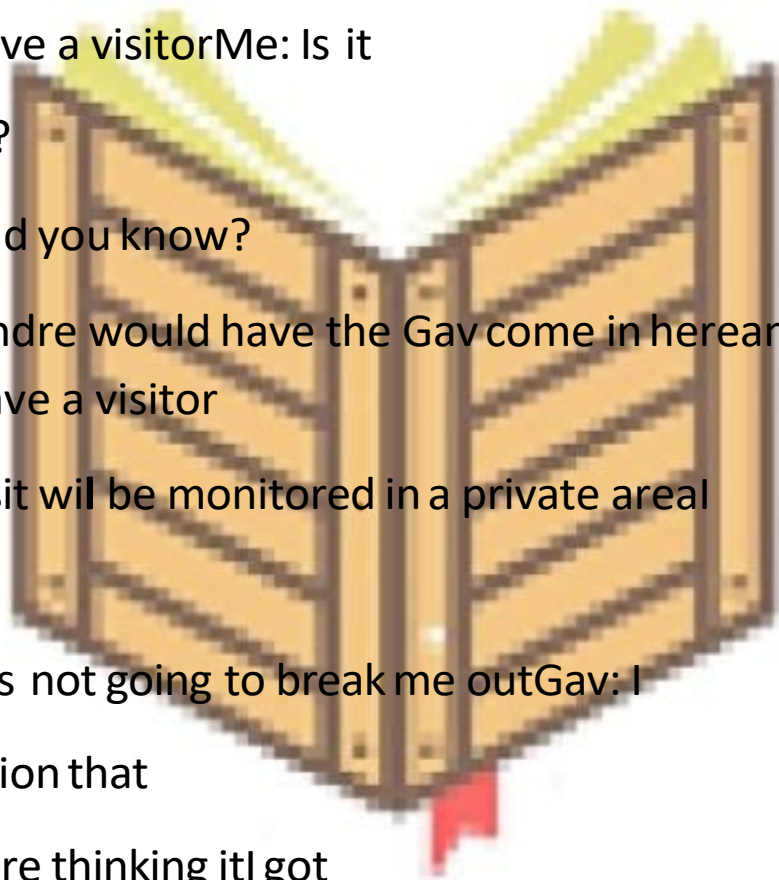
Me: Only Andre would have the Gav come in here and tel
me that I have a visitor

Gav: The visit will be monitored in a private area
chuckled..

Me: Andre is not going to break me outGav: I
didn't mention that

Me: You were thinking itl got

up from the bed... **NOVELSGURU.COM**



Me: Let's go

I took my Bible..

Gav: Where is that going?

Me: I am a changed man, my Brother has to see that
Gav: Give it here

I handed it to him. He checked it then he looked at me..

Gav: It's clean

Me: What where you hoping to find? Some Michael Scofield plan to break out of here?

Gav: Very funny.. Let's go Martinez

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by the admin of untamedhearts..
Please check out her story

<https://m.facebook.com/Untamed-Hearts-115751916878921/?ref=bookmarks>



NOVELSGURU.COM

[08/24, 13:48] : 112

MODRID

The visit between Andre and I was carried out in what looked like an interrogation room. There was a big glass on the wall that I was very sure the Gav and other Wardens stood behind it.. Andre looked flashy as always, his well fitted and expensive suit. His cane leaning against the arm rest of the chair, he really didn't have to go all out with his clothing just for this visit. Maybe he had other important commitments before the visit.. I put the Bible in the middle of the table and sat down facing him..

Andre: Mo

Me: Dre

Andre: You look well, your hair looks longer than the last time I saw you

Me: I decided not to have it cut, there's no much privileges around here

Andre: I understand Me:

You look well too Andre:

Thank you Me: How is

Sandy?

Andre: She's good, she's very good

Me: I hope she has forgiven me for what happened between us

Andre: I am sure she has. She is living her life grudge free and focusing on important things

Me: That's good to hear

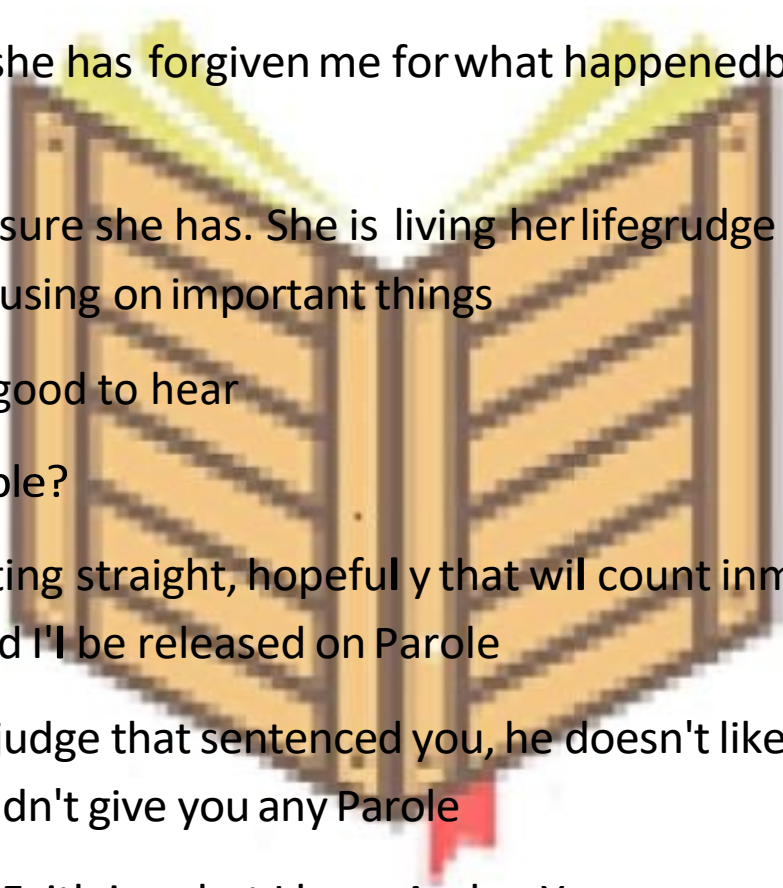
Andre: A Bible?

Me: I'm getting straight, hopefully that will count in my good behavior and I'll be released on Parole

Andre: The judge that sentenced you, he doesn't like us very much. He didn't give you any Parole

Me: Faith... Faith is what I have Andre: You

sure are serious about this Me: Yes I am



Andre: It was good seeing you
Me: It was good seeing you too

KELSO

This was harder than I thought, we have searched almost everywhere. Starting with difficult places, and places that look perfect to hide something of this nature. Sole never told me about these pills.

Honestly speaking he has been hiding a lot from me so it seems. What are these pills meant for? Why is Modrid involved?

Scorp: This is getting us nowhere
Me: We have to try harder

Scorp: We have to wake her up and ask her

Me: If she doesn't know about these pills, then that means she doesn't know where Sole had hidden the pills. Waking her up is just going to upset her, especially since Sole is still not very lucid

Scorp: Women have a PhD in snooping around, I'm sure she has found them. Asked him about it and he lied

Me: We not sure about that

Scorp: Should we keep on searching for something that is impossible to find or should we ask someone who might have an idea

Me: What if she doesn't know? It'll only create chaos for him, you know how women are. She will over react and in her condition, she doesn't need the stress.. Let's keep on searching if we fail then we'll wake her up

NONGCEBO

On my lunch break I called Kelo..Me:

Hey

Kelo: Muntu wam' (my person)Me:

What are you doing?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelo: I was submitting some assignments at school
Me: Ohw
okay

Kelo: Whats wrong?
Me:

Nothing

Kelo: I can hear it from your voice, out with it

Me: Wel so I am divorcing Kelso and since your Mother knows my situation very wel . I asked her to represent me she refused. Now I know that she's trying to mend her broken relationship with her Son, but I don't wanna get a stranger and put our dirty laundry there out in the open. People talk! Plus Gertrude is a very powerful lawyer

Kelo: Lawyers aren't allowed to discuss cases with other people

Me: I know just that I feel more comfortable with Gertrude

Kelo: I understand.. Do you want me to talk to her?
Me: I don't
wanna make you guys fight

Kelo: I insist

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: If you insist, then okay Kelo:

Only in one condition Me: Yes?

Kelo: You go out with me, on a date

Me: I thought we agreed on a study date

Kelo: Just one date, if you don't like it then I'll understand

Me: Okay just one date Kelo:

Tonight?

Me: Okay I'll hear from you Kelo: Okay

my person

Me: I have to go my food just arrived

Kelo: Don't get too full and cancel on me tonight I laughed...

Me: I won't, I promise

Kelo: Okay bye

Me: Bye



NOVELSGURU.COM

WILSONIA

I looked at him as he sliced his meat..

Nastro: Thank you for allowing me to take you out for lunch

Me: Did I even have a choice?

Nastro: Don't do that.. You always have a choice, I didn't put a gun on your head

Me: Like how you didn't put one on my head when you used me to go against Sole?

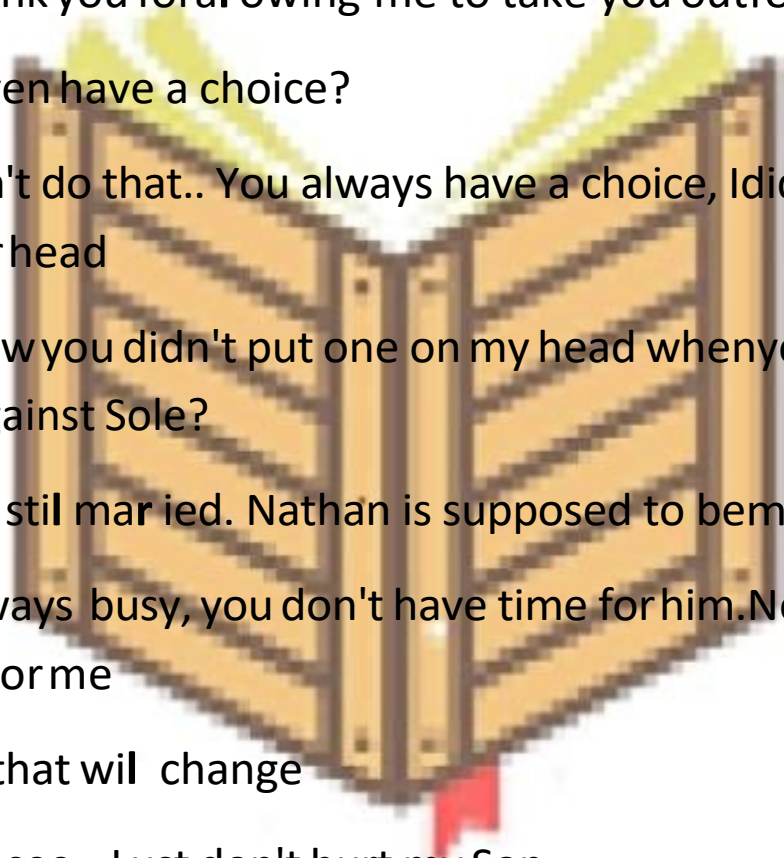
Nastro: We still married. Nathan is supposed to be mine

Me: You always busy, you don't have time for him. No do you have time for me

Nastro: All that will change

Me: We will see.. Just don't hurt my Son

Nastro: Nathan is my step Son, I would never hurt



him

Me: I hope so

BANZA

I was very excited and relieved that I will be able to budget for Lobola. Manto is making it hard for me by putting me in a difficult situation of wanting me to pay Lobola first. Though I truly admire that, she's a woman who knows exactly what she wants..

Sasa and her friends showed up, they greeted but Sasa didn't greet me. They all hopped in the taxi. This was just ridiculous, I don't want any bad blood between us..

I walked over to the taxi and called her out, her friends gave me nasty looks. She got out

Me: Hey Her:

Banza

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How are you?

Her: What do you want?

Me: Look I'm real y sor y about what happened between us

She folded her arms...

Her: You just wanted to push time with me until you found someone else right?

Me: That's not true, I real y liked you

Her: Liked? Oh wow.. So you didn't love me as you said, you liked me?

Me: You know what I mean

Her: No I don't.. Please enlighten me Me: I just

wanted to apologize that's all Her:

Uyang'jwayela yazi

She got back into the taxi..

SLI (NONGCEBO'S SISTERS) NOVELSGURU.COM

After doing the grocery I went back to see if I can't find myself a nice dress for church..

Coincidentally enough, I bumped into Kenny again...Me: Are you following me?

Him: Are you following me?I

chuckled..

Me: No I'm not

Him: I'm not following you too Slim:

Okay

I walked away...

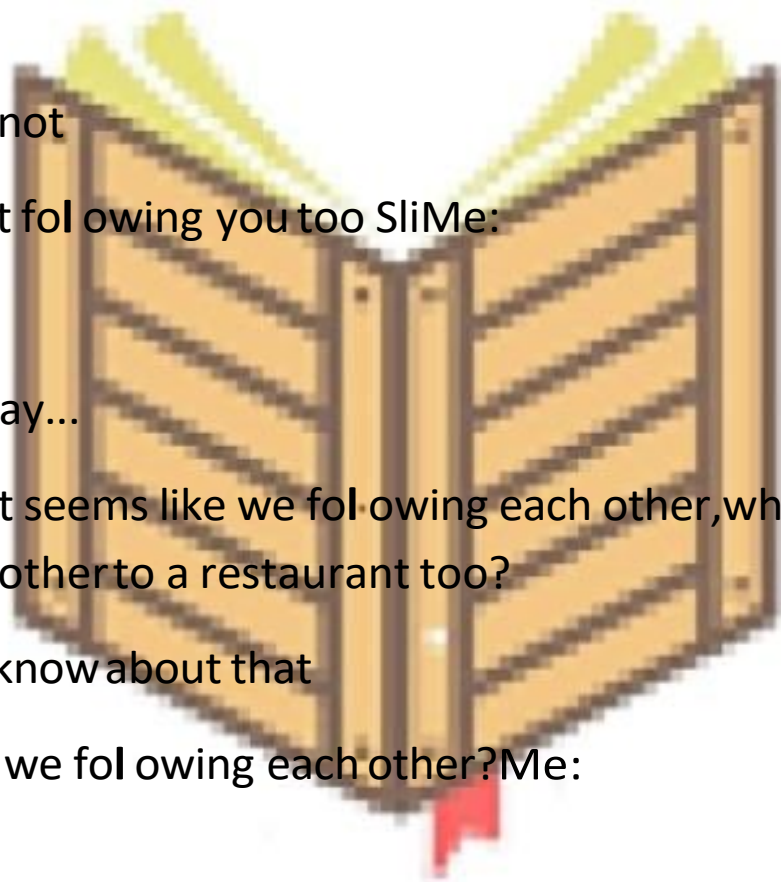
Him: Since it seems like we following each other, why not follow each other to a restaurant too?

Me: I don't know about that

Him: Aren't we following each other?Me:

Well

Him: So let's follow each other to the restaurant, I'm sure you hungry from all the shopping you been doing



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Oh well

Him: I'll take that as a yes Me: Only

because I'm hungry Him: I'm glad
you hungry

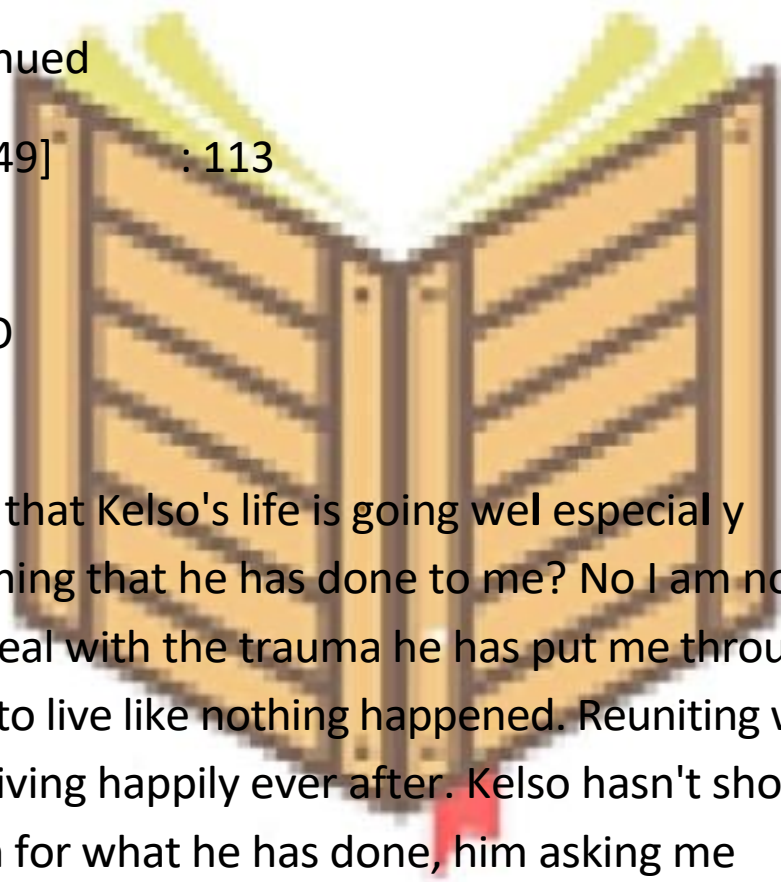
.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:49] : 113

NONGCEBO

Am I happy that Kelso's life is going well especially
after everything that he has done to me? No I am not happy. I
am left to deal with the trauma he has put me through, whilst
he goes on to live like nothing happened. Reuniting with his
family and living happily ever after. Kelso hasn't shown any
compassion for what he has done, him asking me
for forgiveness was even short lived. Do I love Kelo, the honest
answer to that is that I've been with



NOVELSGURU.COM

Makhathini for years and I didn't love him. I was able to tolerate him. Kelso once said "This is the game of love, and we going to play it his way" now the tables are turning. It's my turn for us to play it my way, my rules, and my commands!..

I arrived home less tired than I usually am, maybe I am starting to get used to the hours.

Now I have to prepare for my dinner date with Kelo later on. I have to make sure that I look my best...

SLI (NONGCEBO'S SISTER)

This Kenny of a person was very interesting I won't lie. I found myself enjoying our lunch, we talked about a lot of things and he said a little about his life. Not much of a talker in that department, I don't blame him though we have just known each other for 5 seconds

I was very much taken and impressed by him, his physique and how he carried himself. He had a

NOVELSGURU.COM

body that surpassed Men younger than him. The world would be a better place if Men took care of themselves the way that Kenny is taking care of himself.

He walked me to my car..

Me: I had a great time, thank you

Him: You gave me your number I will be calling, I hope it's not a wrong number

Me: Why would I give you a wrong number? Him: I know you ladies

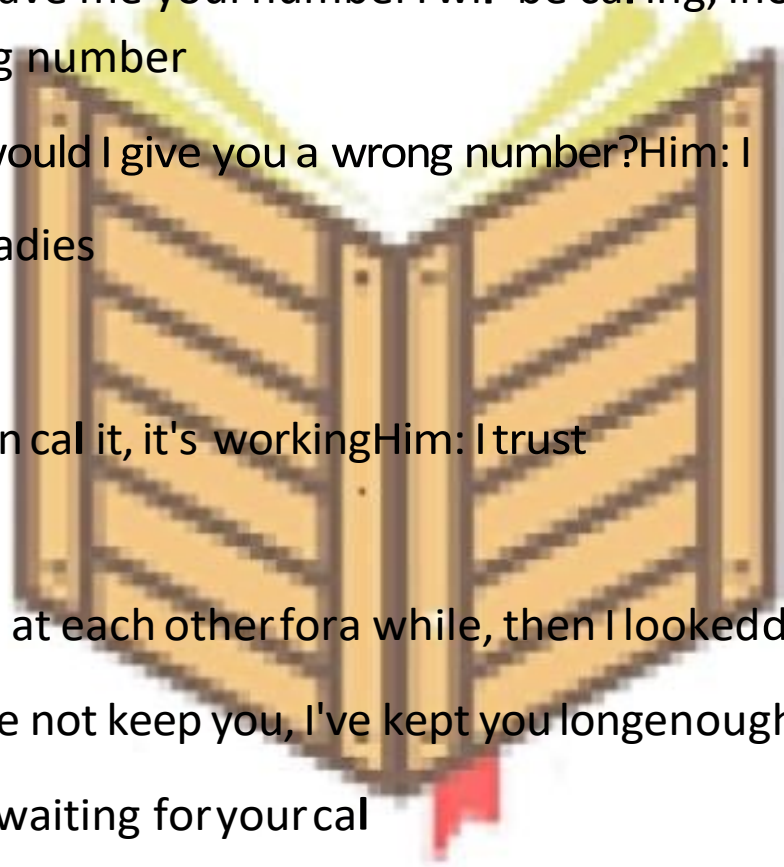
I chuckled..

Me: You can call it, it's working Him: I trust you

We looked at each other for a while, then I looked down..

Him: Let me not keep you, I've kept you long enough

Me: I'll be waiting for your call



NOVELSGURU.COM

He walked closer and hugged me. Haven't shared a hug with the opposite gender in a while now only my Brother. He kissed me on the cheek..

He then opened the door for me.. Him:

Take care and get home safe Me: I will

I got in, and he closed the door. He stepped back and waited for me to drive off..

KELO

My Mom was at the stove cooking..

Me: I have to talk to you about something Mom:

What is it?

I folded my arms and leaned against the fridge.. Me: Why did you refuse to be Nongcebo's lawyer? Mom: She told you?

Me: Yes she did

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: You two are that close?!

nodded..

Mom: You think it's a good idea seeing your Brother's wife?

Me: Kelso is not my Brother

Mom: Nongcebo loves Kelso, Nongcebo will always love Kelso. You are just a rebound

Me: Ohw am I now?

Mom: If Nongcebo is ready to go back into the world of dating again, why did she choose to do it with you? You and Kelso look very much alike. If I was Nongcebo I wouldn't want anything to do with you because you will always remind me of the person who hurt me deeply, but here she is agreeing to be with you if that's the case. I'm not going to represent her, I'm not going to play directly into her web. She is playing against your own brother and you allowing her to do so, she's trying to make Kelso jealous and possibly hurt him. You allowing her to do so. I'm not going to be a part of it

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: There way that you defending him, al of a sudden you wanna play Mommy to him after years and years of dumping him and didn't even care. You named me almost after him to sooth your guilty conscience of abandoning him

Mom: Hey! ! This is my house and don't evertalk tome like that! Nowas a woman I sympathize with Nongcebo and what happened to her. I'm glad she left him but how she's going about everything I'm not happy with it. You wanna play right in hertrap then that's okay but don't expect me to play along too.. I am not representing this girl!

RACHEL

I knocked at his door..Gav:

Come in

I made my way in. He smiled when he saw me..Gav: Done with your shift?

Me: Yes hope I didn't catch you at the wrong time



NOVELSGURL.COM

He closed his laptop and stood up.. Gav: Not at all .. I will drive you home

Me: I was hoping to talk to you before I leave

Gav: Is everything okay? Are the prisoners giving you a hard time?

Me: No.. Not at all

He walked up to me.. Gav:

What is it?

I placed my hands on his chest..

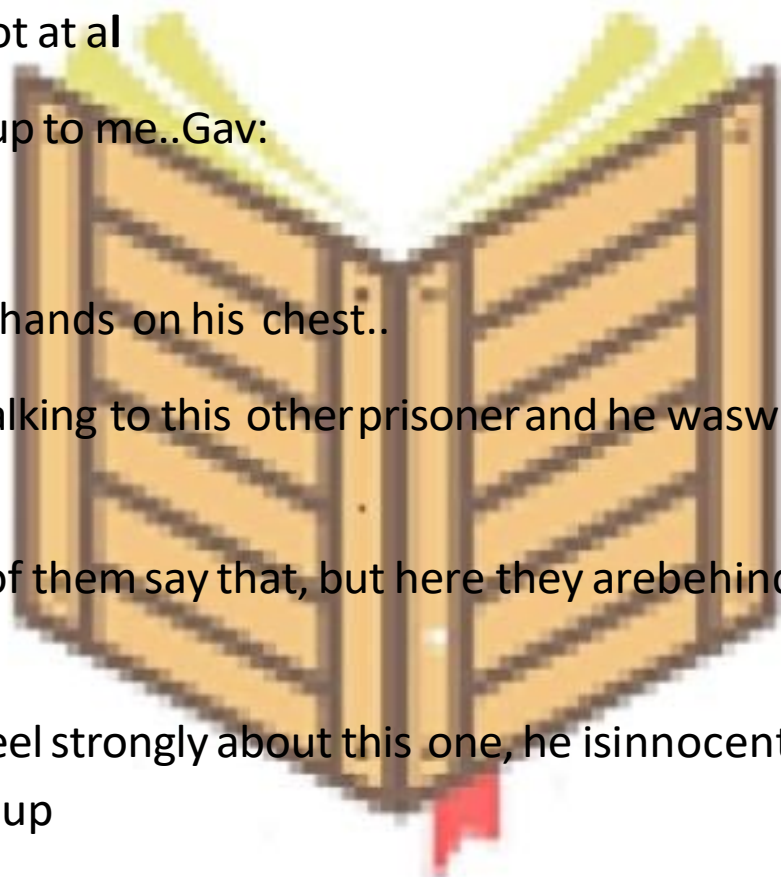
Me: I was talking to this other prisoner and he was wrongfully accused

Gav: Most of them say that, but here they are behind these walls

Me: No.. I feel strongly about this one, he is innocent he was set up

Gav: If there's evidence against him, concrete evidence then my hands are tied

Me: I just want you to look into his case that's all



NOVELSGURU.COM

that I'm asking for He

sighed...

Me: Please

Gav: I will .. Maybe you can spend a night at my house and then we will go through his file together

Me: Is that your way of trying to get me to your bed tonight?

Gav: That would be messy of me to do that

Me: Fine, I'll sleep over at your house and we will talk about his case

Gav: I promise.. We will

He leaned over and kissed me..

KELSO

I sat down on the bathroom floor and looked at the pills I found in the cabinet. They weren't the ones Modrid was talking about..

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Come on Sole.. Where did you hide the pills?

I sat there for another 2 minutes, and then got up. I dusted my hands and put the pills in the sink. I walked to the door and stopped. The bathroom is clean, but the area where I was sitting had dirt. My hand had dirt when I placed it on the floor to support myself when I got up. I turned around and went to that area, indeed it was a bit dirty. I looked around and it was the only area that was dirty. I looked up, I noticed that one tile of the ceiling wasn't steady. I got the small chair and climbed it. I removed the tile and inserted my hand inside and I came back with the pills. I closed my eyes and exhaled.

Red & white pills as how Modrid said...

MODRID

I was taken outside again for some fresh air and a smoke. I don't smoke but I had to start, it's all part of the Divine plan. I looked around and saw the

NOVELSGURU.COM

police van approaching the main gate. I looked at the Warden..

Me: What time is it? Warden:

16:00

Me: What's that van for?

Warden: It's dropping off new inmates Me: It comes everyday at this time?

Warden: In the morning at 8am, after between 15:00-16:00 then at night again between 20:00-21:00 Me: I see

The gate was open and it drove in, 3 Guards were at the gate holding their guns as the van drove in..

Warden: Time up, you have to get back inside I threw the cigarette down and stepped on it..

KELSO

Scorp: How is he going to drink the pills if he's not

NOVELSGURU.COM

lucid? I doubt he can even say his name..Me: I

have a plan

I went to the kitchen and got a spoon. I opened two capsules and poured the contents on a spoon and mixed it with a bit of water. I went to them..

Me: Turn him, he must face up

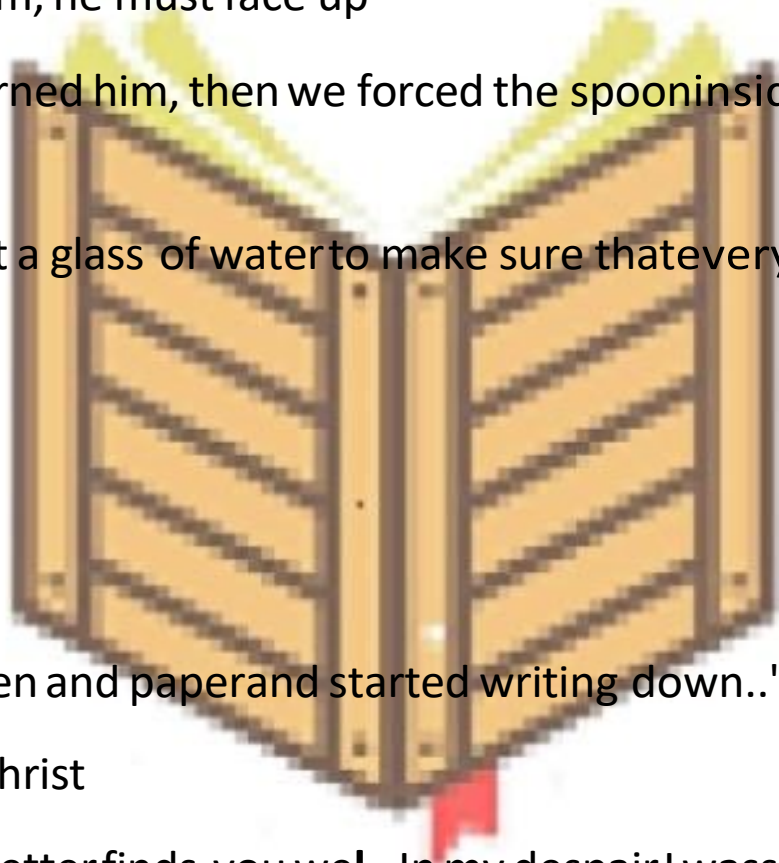
Scorpion turned him, then we forced the spoon inside his mouth..

Scorp: I'll get a glass of water to make sure that everything goes down

MODRID

I took the pen and paper and started writing down.."Beloved Brother in Christ

I hope this letter finds you well. In my despair I was sitting here and reading the book of Acts 16 verse 25-26. It reads:-



But at midnight Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and the prisoners were listening. To them. Suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken. And immediately everyone's chains were loosed.

I hope this letter finds you well, and I hope you will visit me soon to send some prayers my way. I also send prayers your way since I heard you not feeling well.

Take care Brother God

bles

I wrote Sole's address on the envelope.. Tomorrow morning letters will be sent..

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

[08/24, 13:49] : 114

SOLE

A WEEK LATER

I handed Kelso the letter.. Kelso:

What am I looking at?Me: Read

He read..

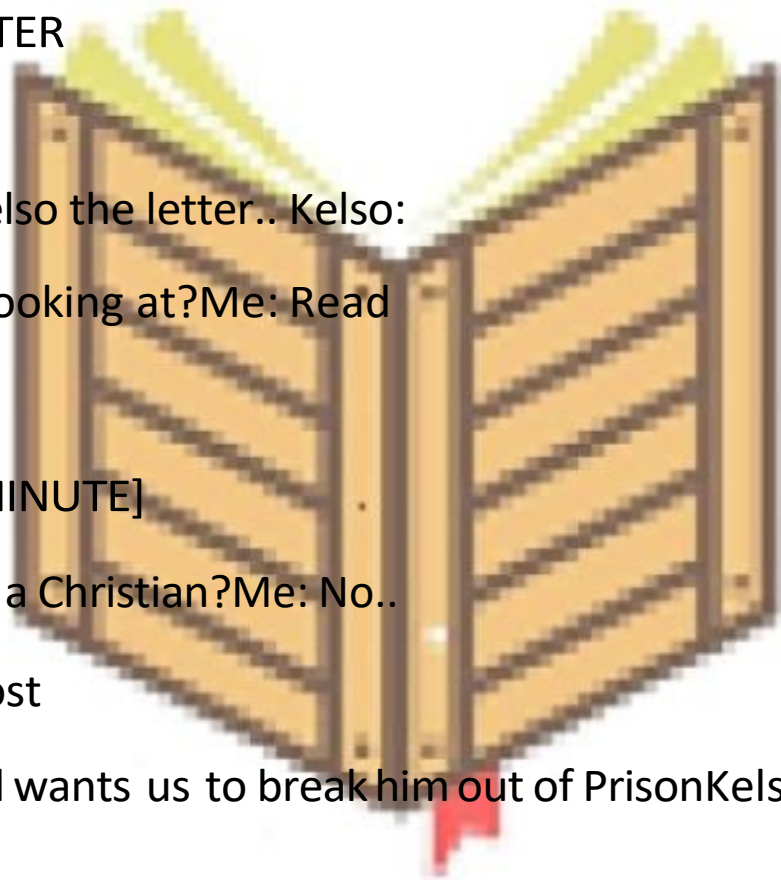
[AFTER A MINUTE]

Kelso: He is a Christian?Me: No..

Kelso: I'm lost

Me: Modrid wants us to break him out of PrisonKelso:

What?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: The book of Acts.. Looking at the word "Act" it means do something, take action. Chapter 16 means we have 16 days to break him out. Counting the date that leads to the time frame that we are given, it means the 16 days will be on the 25th with only one day delay should we encounter problems along the way which is the 26th. The whole verse circles around breaking him out of Prison

Kelso: Damn! I wouldn't have figured that out

Me: The question is who is Modrid? How does he know much about us to the point of knowing where we live

Kelso: That's alarming, he does a lot about us

Me: It seems so, I wanna pay him a visit later today and see what he's about

Kelso: In the meantime I'll go to Scorpion and tell him what's happening

Sole: I'm glad you guys decided to find common ground

Kelso: Ya we cool



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Go to Scorpion and I'll go see what this Modridis about

Kelso: Ayt we'll check you laterMe:

Cool

SANDISIWE

Sole ended up agreeing for me to move in with my Aunt and her family. With everything that's going onwith him, he wanted me to be safe whilst he works on himself...

The pregnancy was weighing me down now, worse Takie and Nongcebo have planned a baby shower for me this coming weekend. It was meant to be a secret but Takie has a big mouth. I real y don't wanta baby shower, I can't disappoint Nongcebo though.Especial y since I'm not meant to find out about it.. I heard a knock at the door..

Me: I'm coming!

Everyone was out, I was alone in the house.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Took me a while to get off the couch, I dragged my feet and went to open the door. To my surprise, it was my Mother..

Me: Mama?

Ma: Sandi

I let her in...

I am not up for drama. She turned and looked at me..Ma: How are you?

Me: Good and how are you?

Ma: I'm well .. You look like you ready to pop soonMe: Yes I am

She nodded..

Me: Can I offer you something to drink?Ma: Tea would be nice thank you

Me: Okay let me make it, you can wait in the lounge for so long

She walked to the lounge while looking around..

NOVELSGURU.COM

SLI (NONGCEBO'S SISTER)

Ken and I we have been in communication ever since the last time we saw each other at the mall. He calls me everyday, we text each other a lot. He's a very good man, and he has started to make me feel somehow.. Last night he called and asked me to come at the park for a picnic today. Such a classic tradition to take a woman out, I liked the whole idea so I put on my summer dress, sandals, and a summer hat.. Indeed it was a picnic. Towel on the grass, fruit salad, sandwiches, grape tizer and snacks..

Me: Wow this is nice

He wrapped his arms around my waist and kissed me..

Him: You don't find it boring? Me: No

it's really beautiful Him: I'm glad you

like it

He held my hand and helped me to sit down..

NOVELSGURU.COM

I glanced down at everything..

Me: Did you get any help from someone? Him: Not at all, this is all me

Today he was wearing a cap instead of the bucket hat..

Him: I brought the grape tizer wasn't sure if you take alcohol

Me: Grape tizer is fine, thank you Him:

Then I shall pour for you

He took the glass and poured for me.. Me:

Thank you

Him: You look nice

Me: Thank you, and you look handsome Him:

Thank you

I couldn't help but look at his trunk, his jeans weren't tight but his manhood didn't shy away from being displayed..

Such a strong man, I wonder how sex is like with

NOVELSGURU.COM

him. I'm sure he knows his business, I mean he takes care of himself very well . He must be a beast too in the bedroom..

MANTO

I had taken my annual leave, and I was home to let my Grandmother know that someone will be asking for my hand in marriage pretty soon. She took the news better than I expected, especially after I told her about Banza and his family. She was grateful that I'm getting married into a family that's going to understand my gift, a family that actually has a Prophet too.. I was on the phone with Banza..

Banza: She's okay with everything? Me: I'm surprised too

Banza: That's great news Sthandwa Sam Me: I am happy I can't wait

Banza: I can't wait too

NOVELSGURU.COM

My Grandmother called me.. Me:

Let me go I'll call you laterBanza:

Okay I love you

Me: I love you too

NONGCEBO

I was off today so I decided to laze around the house. Needed to rest, working and studying at the same time can be tiring. Kelo succeeded in getting through my application for Medicine, now I'm just waiting for a response. Whether my application was successful or not, I really wanna go to school next year.. I heard the doorbell being rang..

I went to open, it was Kelso. He was looking down when I opened, as soon as the door was fully open he looked at me..

Kelso: Hi

Me: Hi

NOVELSGURU.COM

What is he doing here?

Me: What are you doing here? Kelso:

I am looking f-

Me: You really didn't have to show up at my doorstep, this is disrespectful. You harass me at work now you harassing me at home?

He chuckled..

Kelso: I never harassed you at work Me: You showed up at my workplace Kelso: I did because my Son was sick

Me: So there wasn't any Doctors around? He rubbed his eyes with his fingers..

Kelso: Ng'khathele kanjani Sthandwa Sam (I'm tired my love) I folded my arms...

Me: What do you want here?

Kelso: I am looking for your Brother Me: NOVELSGURU.COM

Huh?

Kelso: Scorpion

Me: You decided to hand yourself over?

Kelso: Again sthandwa sam' I'm real y tired for whatyou trying to do

Me: My Brother hates you, he wil definitely kil youright here and right now!

Kelso: Please cal him for me

I went back in to cal Lindo, he showed up from his room..

Me: Kelso is here to talk to youLindo:

Ohhh I'm coming

This was strange, since when is Lindo and Kelsofriends?

I went back to the door..Me:

He's coming

Kelso: I'll wait in the car

Me: Did you get the divorce papers?Kelso:

Yes I did

Me: Are you going to sign them?Kelso:

No I'm not

Me: I am in a relationship

Kelso: No you are a married woman who is pissed at her husband and then decided to fool around with his little Brother to make him jealous. So when you done playing just tell me

I was speechless.. I folded my arms again..Kelso: What a shame

Lindo showed up..

Lindo: Eyy Kelso

Kelso: Scorp

They did some handshake..

Kelso: Sigwale istradi? (Should we take a drive)Lindo: Yeah asambe (let's go)

Lindo walked out..

NOVELSGURU.COM

This was very confusing, something is wrong..



SOLE

With everything that was going on, I was relieved that Sandi was with her family. I don't want her stressing.. I drove to the prison to see this Modrid, I was dressed up formally with a Bible under my arm trying to fit the character.. The visit was monitored

They brought him in, he looked at me and walked up to the chair. He also had his Bible

He didn't sit down though.. Modrid:

Brother

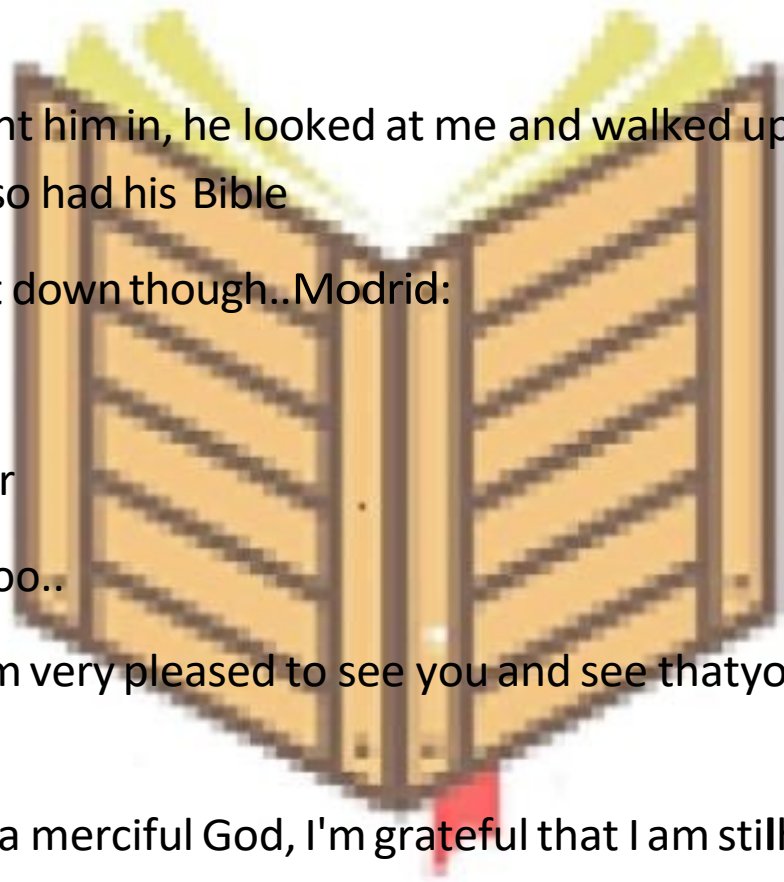
Me: Brother

I stood up too..

Modrid: I am very pleased to see you and see that you are holding up well

Me: God is a merciful God, I'm grateful that I am still here

Modrid: In deed... I think we should pray, thank the



NOVELSGURU.COM

Good lord for everything Modrid: I agree..

We sat down and bowed our heads..

Me: "Good Lord we thank you for this meeting, thank you for showing our brother a way. The right way.. Amen"

Modrid: Amen

Me: I received the letter Brother

Modrid: I am pleased to hear that

Me: Tell me how exactly did you find out about our church?

Modrid: Lot of research, in a place like this you have time to research

Me: I see.. Are you happy with our church?

Modrid: Not my first choice but.. I have faith that the church will do better than how it's currently doing

Me: I agree.. I agree

Modrid: I wish for a baptism

Me: Ohh Brother, that's stil early
Modrid: I'm ready

Me: Do you know that when you go down that road there's no coming back?

Modrid: I know.. Brother I am trying to change my ways, become a better Person

Me: You remind me of Paul right now. When he was going after God's children. J esus hit him with lightning and asked "Paul why are you persecuting me" that's how he changed his ways

Modrid: Amen Brother.. In a place like this, you are alone with your thoughts. You end up thinking about a lot of things and you change your ways

Me: Very true

Modrid: This is a blessed meeting

Me: Indeed Brother, I wil talk to the Reverend about your baptism

Modrid: Thank you Brother

GAV KHUMALO

I listened to them as they carried on with their conversation..

Warden: I can't believe we actually listening to two men talking about baptism

Me: No.. This is not a baptism, something is not right. They speaking in codes

Warden: If they are then they really masterminds
Me: On their next meeting, call Detective King
Warden: Yes Sir

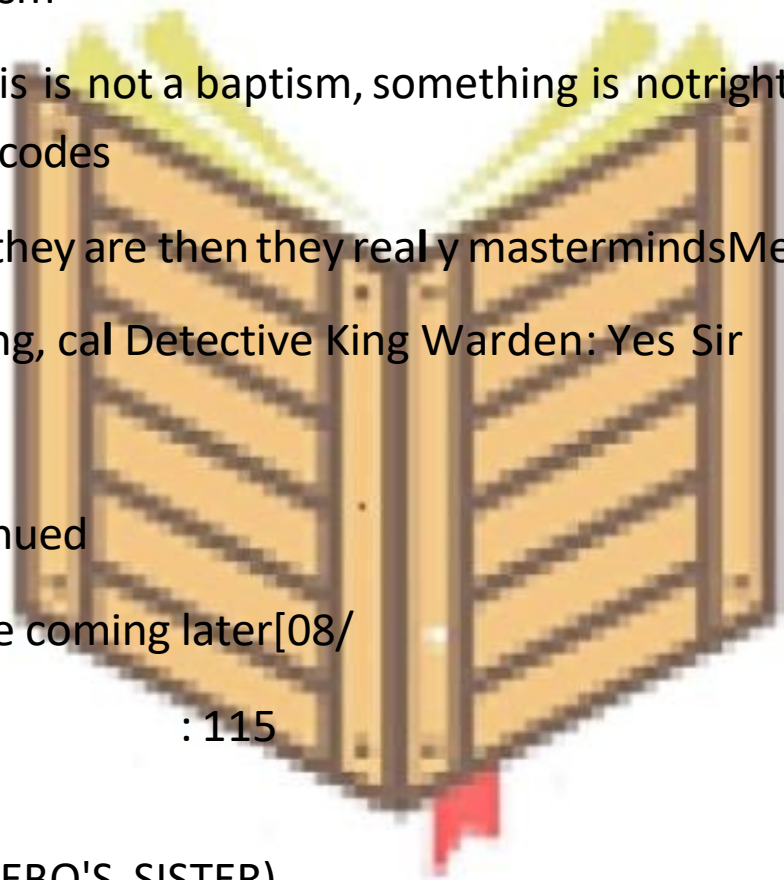
To be continued

Trophy Wife coming later [08/

24, 13:50] : 115

SLI (NONGCEBO'S SISTER)

NOVELSGURU.COM



Ken decided that we take a walk around the park after eating. Just walk around and talk.

We held hands as we walked around, there weren't many people or maybe it's because it's a weekday that's why the park didn't have a lot of people. My sandals were starting to hurt my feet, they were too tight and the leather was digging through my skin. I stopped..

Ken: What's wrong?

Me: My sandals are hurting me

We walked to the nearby bench and sat down.. Ken: May

I?

I nodded..

He took my foot and put it on his, then he took off my sandal and massaged my foot. He had a very gentle touch. He did the same with the other foot..

Ken: I've always thought that heels were the only ones that hurt

Me: Not exactly

NOVELSGURU.COM

Ken: How does that feel?Me:

It feels good

My foot was very close to his trunk..Ken: Will

you able to walk back?

Me: I think soKen:

Let's go

Me: before people steal out things

He got up first and extended his hand out to me, I held it and he helped me to my feet...

Me: Thank you

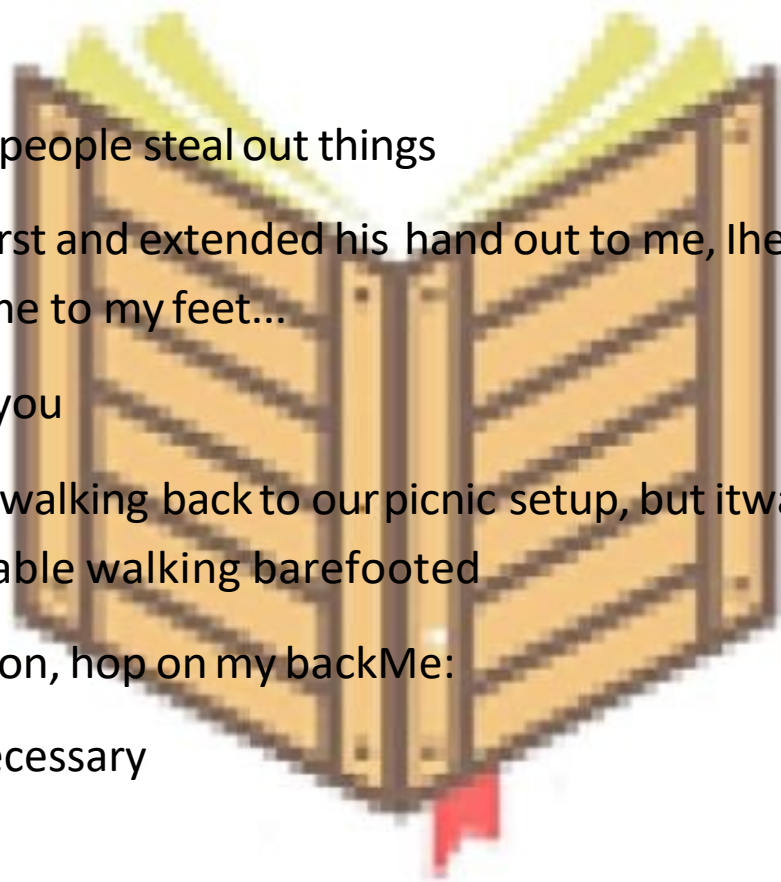
We started walking back to our picnic setup, but it was uncomfortable walking barefooted

Ken: Come on, hop on my backMe:

That's unnecessary

Ken: I insist

He helped me to get on his back, then I put my arms around his neck. He held my sandals and at the same time his arms were firmly situated under my



NOVELS.GURU.COM

butt for support..

I laid my head on his shoulder..Ken:

You good?

Me: I'm good

Ken: Haven't passed out?Me:

No (laughing)

Ken: J ust checking, you can never be sure thesedays

Me: I'm fine thank you

Ken: No thank the heavens you alright with your beautiful sensitive feet

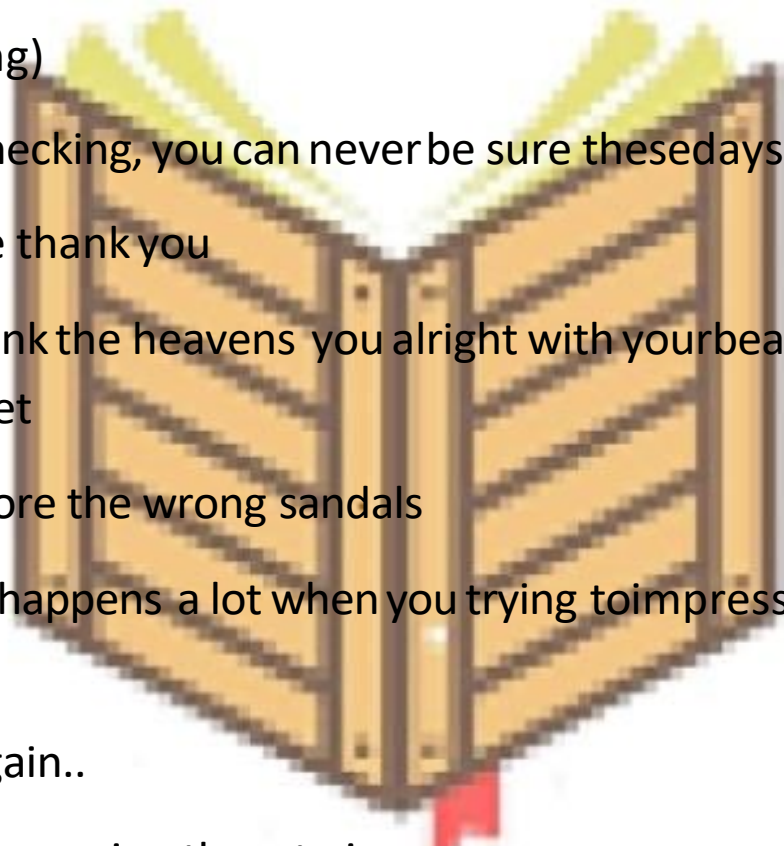
Me: I just wore the wrong sandals

Ken: That's happens a lot when you trying to impress someone

I laughed again..

Me: I wasn't wearing them to impress you

Ken: Ohw now the truth comes out, did you have someone else around here that you wanted to



NOVELSGURU.COM

impress?

Me: Stop it! (laughing)

Ken: You can never be too sure Me:

You walking slow

Ken: Do you want me to put you down and you walk on your own?

Me: Don't be dramatic

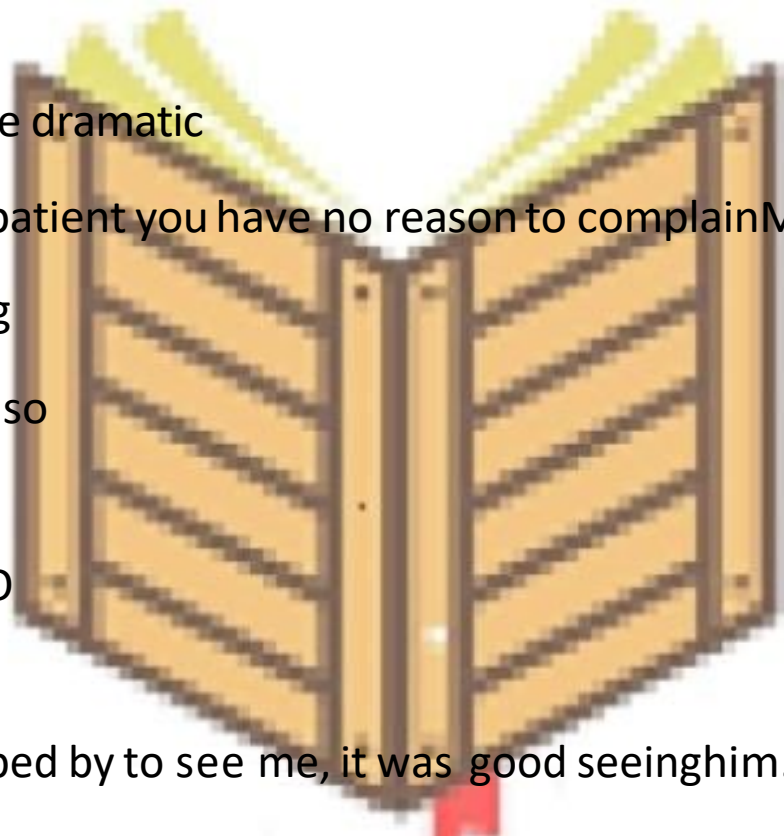
Ken: You a patient you have no reason to complain Me: I'm not complaining

Ken: I hope so

NONGCEBO

Banza stopped by to see me, it was good seeing him..

Banza: It's been a minute since I last saw you Me: Tell me about it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Banza: How have you been?Me:

I've been good

Banza: I see you have a new boyfriend, from your Facebook posts

I kept quiet..

Banza: What is the matter?Me: It's

nothing

Banza: Talk to me, you know we used to talk about anything and everything

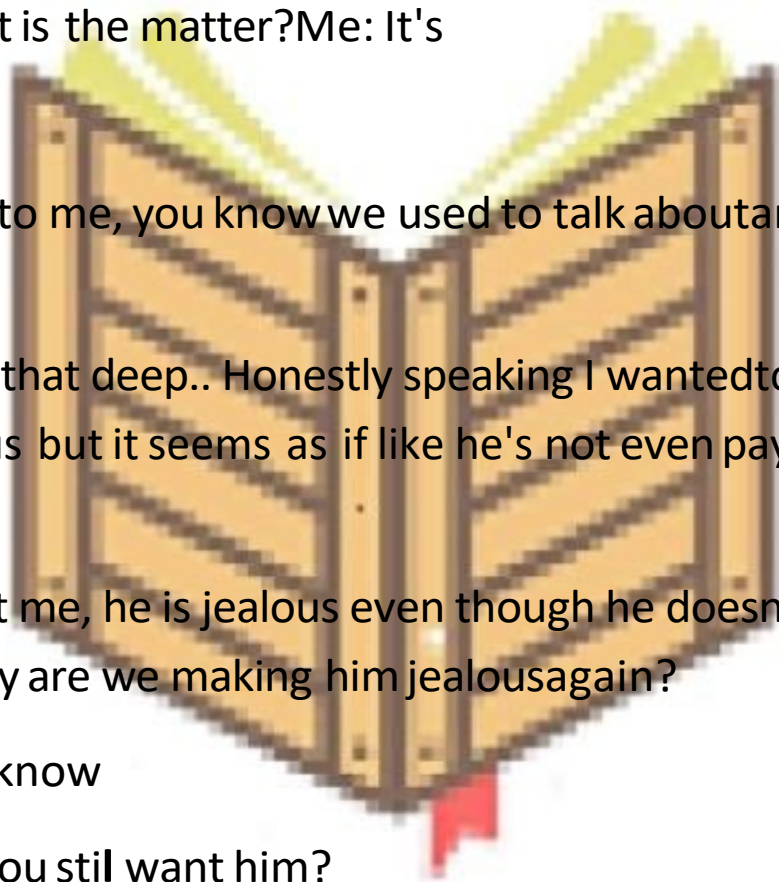
Me: It's not that deep.. Honestly speaking I wanted to make Kelso jealous but it seems as if like he's not even paying attention

Banza: Trust me, he is jealous even though he doesn't show it. Why are we making him jealous again?

Me: I don't know

Banza: Do you still want him?

Me: What happened between Kelso and I was deep, it was that deep because witchcraft was involved



NOVELSGURU.COM

Banza: Isichito is very dangerous, it can break what was once good

Me: I wish I had realized sooner, and got help sooner before this whole situation between Kelso and I

Banza: I understand what you mean but the question still remains. Do you still want him back?

Me: Going back to Kelso would just feel like sending the wrong message, that it's okay to go back to your abuser

Banza: Kelso is a shit person no lie, naturally he is a shit person. Witchcraft is very deep and what they did to you affected you in a way, there's Kelso then there's Kelso when he is with you. I hate to say this but Kelso would have acted that way to you if he was in his right mind. Say the witchcraft didn't work and he was Kelso would he have done that?

Me: No Kelso is intimidating but not once did he raise his hand on me before the Makhathini situation

Banza: So you going to live your life worrying about

what people are going to say? People always talk whether you doing good things or bad things. We cannot decide for you, it's your life. If you do consider going back to him, it'll be very different this time around. You not alone you have us, you have a family. Hell dare your father is the Gav he knows one mistake Khumalo will put him behind bars for life and make his life hell a difficult inside that's if Lindo doesn't kill him first

Me: Speaking of that one they are best friends now Banza:

What?

Me: Hypocritical tendencies I tell you Banza:

What a different turn of events Me: Kelso is even attending therapy

Banza: Maybe you guys should go together attend therapy together as a couple if things don't change by then, then you will know that it was not meant to be

KELSO

NOVELSGURU.COM

Scorpion and I went out for drinks, Sole joined us when he came back from the visit.

Me: How did it go?

Sole: I am meeting up with him later on tonight for a more thorough visit and explanation

Scorpion: So we are going to break this guy out of Prison for real?

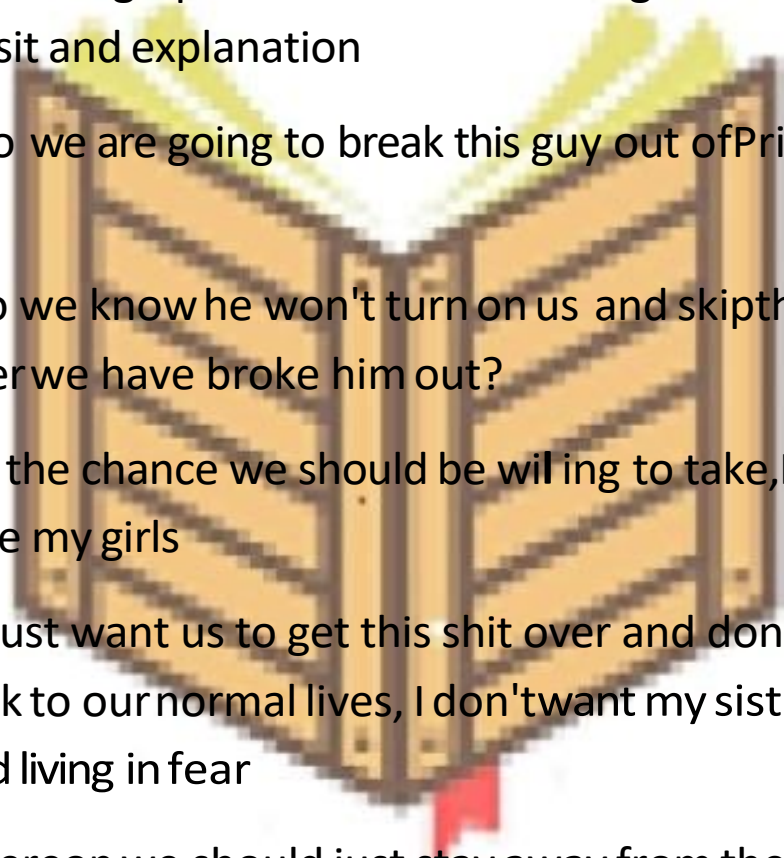
Me: How do we know he won't turn on us and skip the country after we have broke him out?

Sole: That's the chance we should be willing to take, I'm not ready to lose my girls

Scorpion: I just want us to get this shit over and done with then go back to our normal lives, I don't want my sisters and my girlfriend living in fear

Me: From here on we should just stay away from the Italians

Sole: Agreed.. It should be easier because Scorpyour father is the Gav



Scorp: Ohw yes I can cal him and he can join us then we can discuss with him how we wanna breakone of his inmates out
I laughed..

Sole: That's not what I meant

Scorp: It's very difficult that I'm going against him

Me: Why don't we just tel him, it's his DaughterI'msure he wil break the lawforher

Scorp: He would rather find the Italians and lockthem up than break the law

Sole: Then we doing this ourselves afterthis we justgo back to our lives

Me: Yeah let's see how it goes

Sole: Scorp you stil wanna kil Kelso afterthis?Scorp: Yes..

When this is done he is done too

Sole: Going against my best friend **wil** be goingagainst me too

Scorp: Howthings change

Me: That's sweet Sole, I'm actually blushing

Sole: I'm probably one enemy you don't wanna have
Scorp: I'm one enemy you don't wanna have

Sole chuckled..

Scorp: Nongcebo was going to go back to him either way

Me: Nongcebo is fooling around with my Brother

Scorp: I hate that high pitched voice guy, isiyoyo (he's a fool)

Me: My mother this, my mother that
Scorp:

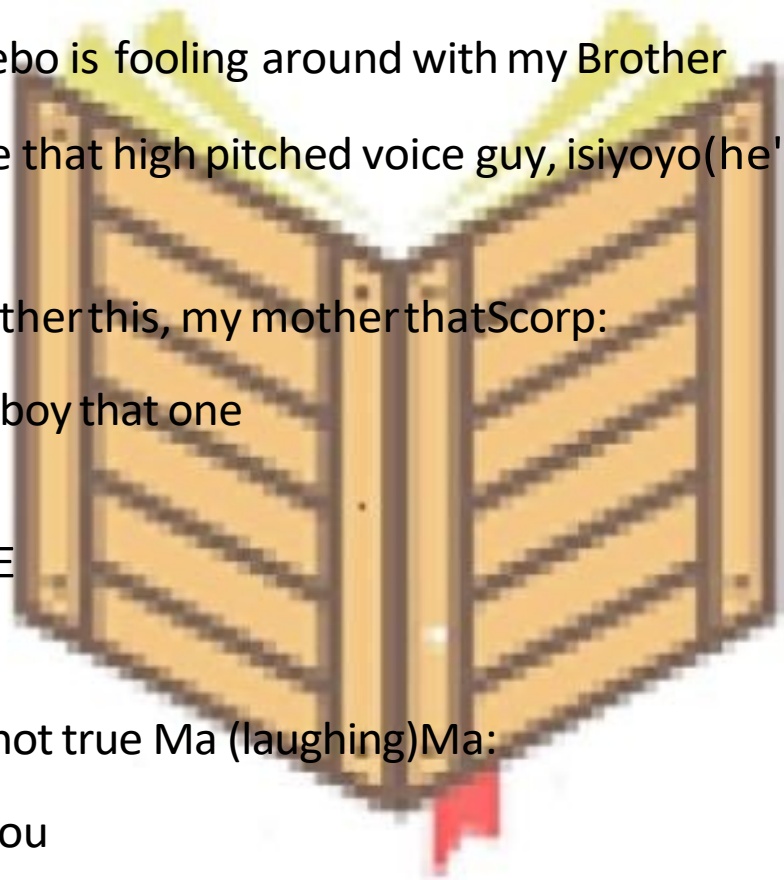
He's a little boy that one

SANDISIWE

Me: That's not true Ma (laughing)
Ma:

I'm telling you

Me: Well my pregnancy is not like that



Ma: Then you blessed

Me: Does Dad know you here?Ma:

He doesn't know

Me: He will be mad if he finds out

Ma: It didn't feel right with me knowing that my Daughter is out there Pregnant and alone, what kind of a Mother am I to abandon her

Me: It has been difficult no lie but Sole has always been there for me

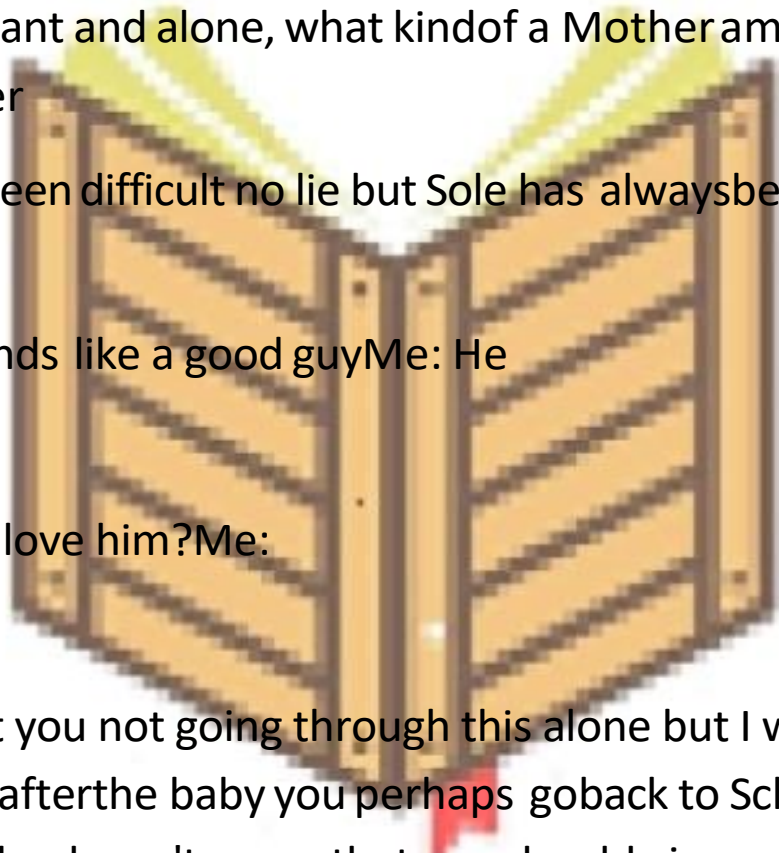
Ma: He sounds like a good guyMe: He is

Ma: Do you love him?Me:

Yes I do

Ma: At least you not going through this alone but I would've liked it that after the baby you perhaps go back to School. Having a baby doesn't mean that you should give up on life

Me: That's what I'm planning on doing.. Thank you for coming, I truly appreciate it



Ma: You welcome my love Me: So
continue with the storyMa: Yes as I
was tel ing you..

RACHEL

Today I was doing the afternoon shift. When I opened the
doorabout to walk out, my husband was standing at the
doorormy ex husband rather..

Him: Rachel

Me: Good afternoon

He looked at me fora while..Him:

How are you?

Me: I'm good thanks and you?

Him: I'm wel .. I almost didn't recognize youMe: Ohw

Him: Can we talk?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I can't talk, I'm going to workHim:

You work?

Me: Yes I do

Him: That's good to hear

Me: I have been meaning to send you the divorcepapers
I've just been busy

Him: I'm here to talk about thatMe:

You'll be getting them soonHim: I don't
want a divorce

Me: I don't understand

Him: I don't want a divorce, I want us to work thingsout

Me: You don't want a divorce but I want it

Him: Rachel come on, you are a woman of faith youknow
exactly what the Bible says about divorce

Khumalo showed up, wearing his ful uniform..Khumalo: Good

afternoon MaK

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Good afternoon

Khumalo: You looking good as alwaysHe
walked up to me and kissed me..

Khumalo: Is it me oryou become more beautifuleach day?
I need to rethank my ancestors for bringing you my way

Me: I don't know maybe it's youHe
kissed me again..

Khumalo: Are you ready to go?Me:
Yes

He held my bag for me and also held my hand. When we
started walking I tripped but didn't fal ...

Me: My dress is hooking on my heels Khumalo
crouched down and fixed my dress..

Khumalo: J ust watch your step I don't want youfal ing and
breaking yourbones

Me: Thank you

He got back up on his feet..

Khumalo: Hold it up a bit



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Okay

We continued walking..[08/

24, 13:50] : 116

NONGCEBO

Later on Banza dropped me off at Kelso's house. I wanted to see how his Grandmother was doing, it's been a while. She welcomed me with open arms as always, though I didn't like how she looked. She had lost a lot of weight. She wanted to make tea for us but I insisted because she didn't seem so well ..

Grams: It's good to see you, it's been a while

Me: It's been a while indeed, how are you holding up?

Grams: I am trying, since my Son passed on I haven't been good. Yes he was in jail, and he has been there for a long time. He wasn't going to come out anytime soon, but him being alive gave me hope, hope that he would come out

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm truly sorry, I can only imagine what you going through

Grams: It's life and God's will . We cannot change what God has intended

Me: That's true

Grams: I heard you found a job Me:

Yes I am working

Grams: That's lovely, I'm glad you decided to get up and get your own

Me: Thank you Grams Grams: I should start cooking Me: No please..

Allow me

Grams: You really don't have too Me: I want too.. It's no trouble at all Grams:

Thank you, God bless



BANZA

NOVELSGURU.COM

I received a call from my Father asking me to stop by at the house. I wonder what he wants now.. I parked and walked into the yard. I walked to the door and knocked, it was awful y quiet. The yard wasn't tidy, when Mom was still here. The yard was always clean. I even saw laundry that was half done and left outside, the water was even starting to get slimy. Pots next to the outside tap..

My Father opened the door..Dad:

Banele

Me: Baba

I walked in. First thing I noticed were dishes in the sink, the floor was dirty too..

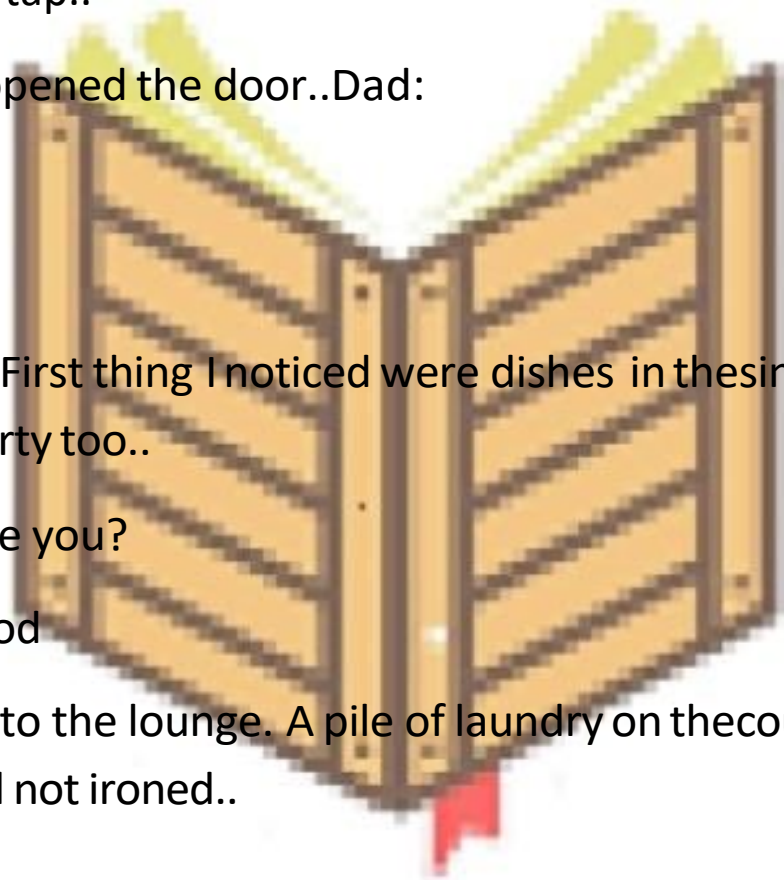
Me: How are you?

Dad: I'm good

We walked to the lounge. A pile of laundry on the couch that was washed and not ironed..

I sat down..

Dad: Can I offer you something to drink?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: No thank you

Dad: How have you been?

Me: I've been good.. I have been doing goodDad:

Word is out that you now own taxis

Me: Yes I do.. I'm actual y saving up to pay Lobola

Dad: That's good to hear, I'm real y proud of youSon

Me: Thank you

Dad: Banza I made a ter ible mistakeI looked
at him..

Dad: I should have never let your MothergoMe: It is
what it is Dad

Dad: I want her back, I want my wife backI shook
my head..

Me: No..

Dad: I'm wil ing to send church elders to go and talkto her

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: No.. Don't.. Not now. Mom is really in a good space, she has come very far. Please don't disturb her peace. She's very happy with her life right now

Dad: And she has found someone else

Me: Yes.. Someone who loves her and accepted her for who she is

He put his hands on his head and looked down..Me: What happened to the lady you found?

Dad: She is the biggest mistake of my life. She got here and started befriending not good neighbours. She spends her time on the streets gossiping, my house is now a gossiping station. These women also come here, eat, and talk. She hardly does anything around the house. Even now, she's out on the street. At church she has befriended the youth, people are complaining about her that she gossips a lot

Me: You made your bed, you put your wife out worse she was sick. You put us out as if like we were dogs

I saw tears welling up in his eyes.. Me: I'm sorry but.. You made your bed

KEN BHEMBE

Sli was supposed to be my sweet revenge to the Gav. I wanted to bring him to his knees by using his Daughter to do, that was the whole plan. Spending time with her has made me to soften up from doing that. She's an amazing woman, very beautiful, and humble. I enjoy spending time with her, enjoy how respectful she is. She is messing with me, she is mess with my head..

Sli: So what do you think?

Me: Being a lecturer sounds good, I mean it sounds like a good job

Sli: I've always wanted to be one, it's less work than actually having a practice or working at the hospital

Me: Just say you lazy

NOVELSGURU.COM

She laughed..

Sli: It's been a while since I have worked so, I don't wanna go back in the field yet

Me: I understand.. I get you

Sli: I miss you, I really had a good time at the park
Me: I miss you too, we will do it again sometime
Sli: I look forward to it

Me: Let me get back to what I was doing, I'll call you later

Sli: Okay then bye
Me:

Sli

Sli: Yes?

Me: Ngiyak'thanda
Sli: I

love you too

Me: Manje why are you starting with politics? I didn't say "I love you" ngithe ngiyak'thanda

Sli: iDrama engaka.. Nami ngiyak'thanda
Me: Bye

Ntokazi

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sli: Bye

NONGCEBO

I walked out of the house as the pots were on the stove, Kelso was leaning against the wall smoking. With his leg slightly raised up and his foot hitting against the wall.. Music was playing from his room and he broke the match stick with his teeth. His eyes were focusing on the ground, he had his beanie hat on and the hat of his hoodie over the beanie hat. I walked up to him and stood next to him without saying anything..

Kelso: I'm not signing the papers Me: I

know

I folded my arms...

Me: You and my Brother?

Kelso: We have found common ground that's all Me: I see

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: Are you jealous?

Me: No at al

(Silence)

Kelso: Awung'tshele yento yakho no Kelo iyophela nini? (Tel me this thing between you and Kelo whenis it going to end)

I kept quiet..

Kelso: You can't replace me Skat, ungabalandabonke (You can get them al)

Me: I'm not trying to replace youKelso:

What are you doing?

Me: I also don't knowHe

looked at me..

Kelso: If you don't wanna be with me why don't you take time and be by yourself, this thing that you doing.. He wil catch feelings and I think he has..

Ang'funi uk'busy ngijikisana no Kelo (I don't wannabe fighting with Kelo)

NOVELSGURU.COM

He dropped the cigarette bud on the ground..

Kelso: Angiy'thandi lento oyenzayo (I don't like what you doing)

He walked into his room..

SOLE

They let me in, inside the solitary confinement. The Warden walked out and closed the door..

I put my hands in my pockets and looked at him.. Mo: That was a great performance earlier on

Me: I wanna know everything, wanna know how you know so much about us

Mo: I am working with Nastro, he ran a background check on you guys

Me: I see

Mo: Including your foreign tissue implant I looked at him..

Mo: Don't worry, your secret is safe with me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Although, it will eventually drive you insane. It doesn't belong there and it's messing with your brain. I admire you for volunteering but I admire the Neurologist who did the whole procedure more.

Apparently it was only the two of you who responded well to the experiment. Would be a shame if people knew that you aren't as smart as they think you are

Me: I'm sure you didn't call me here for that

Mo: No.. Of course not.. You and your friends stole Nastro's money and he wants you guys to get him the necklace..

Me: I know the details, let's get to the point

Mo: You will break me out of here and I'm going to help you guys get the necklace, then I sail off to another place

Me: Why should we trust you?

Mo: Do you have much of a choice? Me: I guess

not

Mo: The Baptism plan is a decoy to mislead the Gav,

NOVELSGURU.COM

it's not the real plan. He's not a stupid man I am sure he has picked it up that we were speaking in codes.. Our plan is going to be less messy

Me: I'm listening

Mo: I was thinking of the judge that put me here, get him to transfer me that's the plan. When the van leaves, you guys will be waiting on the other side then it goes down

Me: Who is the judge?

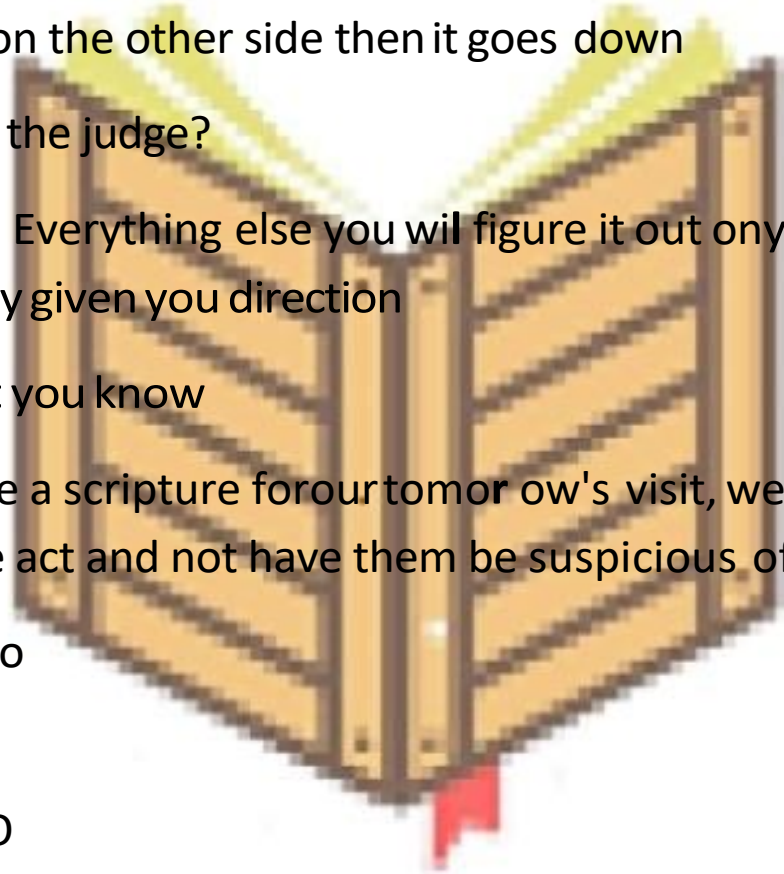
Mo: Fourè.. Everything else you will figure it out on your own, I have already given you direction

Me: I will let you know

Mo: Prepare a scripture for our tomorrow's visit, we have to keep up the act and not have them be suspicious of anything

Me: I'll do so

NONGCEBO



NOVELSGURU.COM

When I was done cooking I dished up for everyone. I took Kelso's food to the bedroom, he was passed out on the bed. I put the plate on the dressing table and looked at him. I turned and walked away but stopped, I turned back and walked back to the bed. I took off my shoes and gently laid next to him. I put my head on his chest and he wrapped his arms around me without saying anything.. I closed my eyes too

To be continued

[08/24, 13:50] : 117

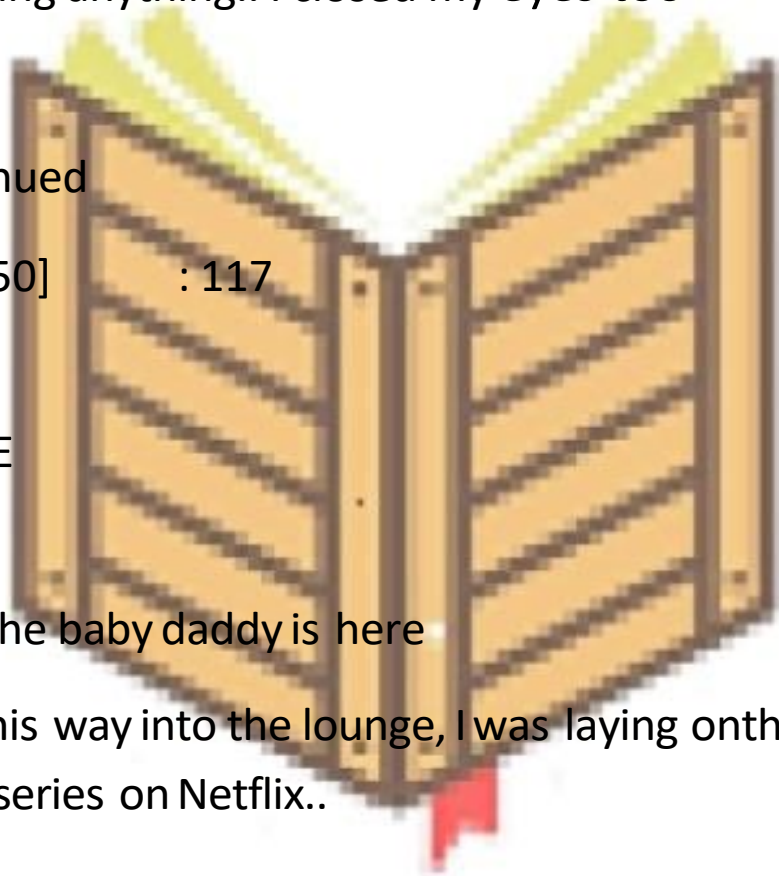
SANDISIWE

Takie: And the baby daddy is here

Sole made his way into the lounge, I was laying on the couch watching a series on Netflix..

Me: Hey

NOVELSGURU.COM



Sole: Sweets

Takie: I'll give you guys some space She went to the bedroom..

Sole: How are you? I miss you guys

He kissed me on my forehead and sat next to me.. Me: We good can't complain.. Where you been?

Sole: Had drinks with Kelso and Scorpion, the house is boring without you guys around

Me: You kicked us out

Sole: Says someone who wanted to move out on her own

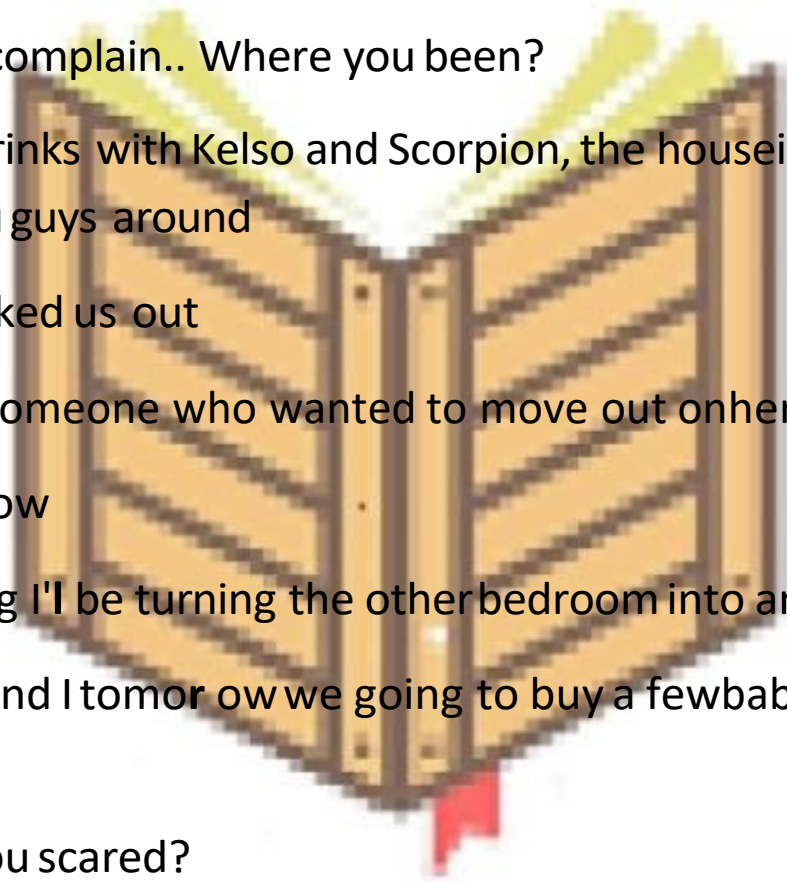
Me: Ya I know

Sole: So long I'll be turning the other bedroom into a nursery

Me: Takie and I tomorrow we going to buy a few baby essentials

Sole: Are you scared?

Me: Very.. My mom was telling me that labour is no



child's play

Sole: Well I'm going to be there.. Your mother was here?

Me: Yes but Dad doesn't know Sole:

You guys talked?

Me: Yeah we did I think we good Sole:

That's good

Me: What are we going to name her? Sole: I

haven't thought about a name

Me: I was thinking two names.. An African name and an English name

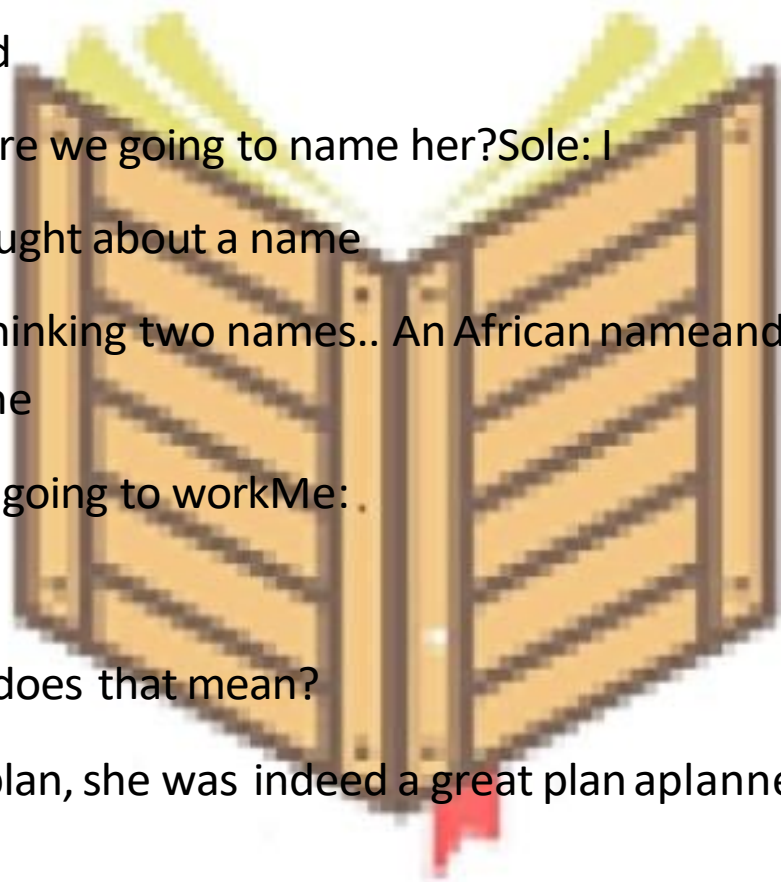
Sole: That's going to work Me:

Cebokazi

Sole: What does that mean?

Me: Great plan, she was indeed a great plan a planned great plan

Sole: Gonna take me a while to pronounce it but I will work around it.. How about Avery?



Me: Avery is not bad.. Avery Cebokazi Gxaba
Sole: She can use my surname

Me: Why not mine?

Sole: Incase we get mar ied

Me: Why would I wanna mar y you?

Sole: Who would you wanna get mar ied too otherthan me?

Me: You so fool of yourself!
Sole:

I'm just asking

Me: Wel we wil see

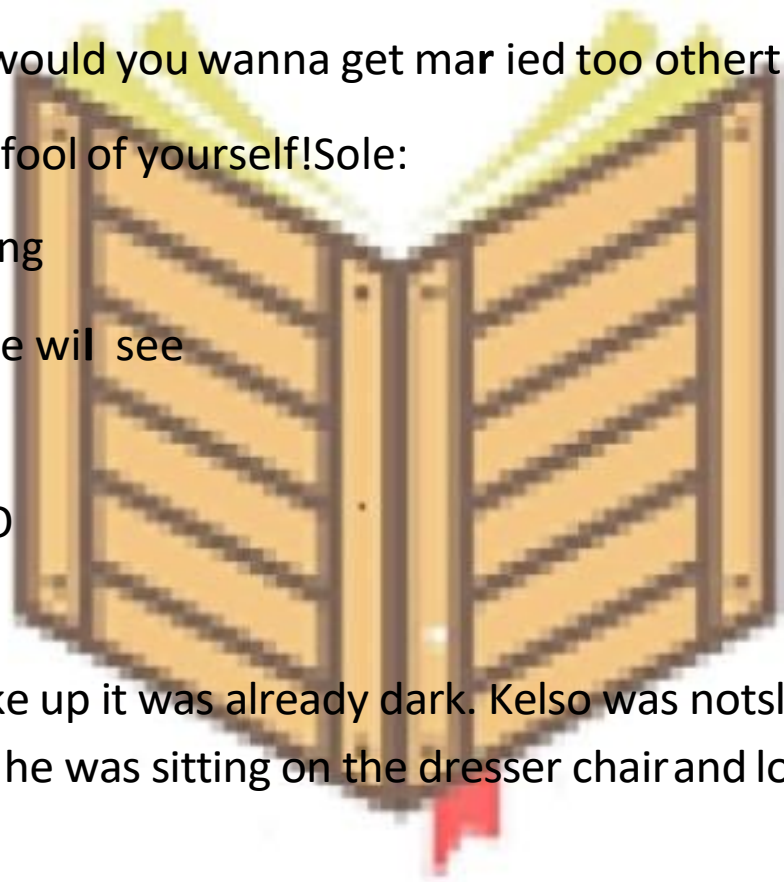
NONGCEBO

When I woke up it was already dark. Kelso was not sleeping next to me, he was sitting on the dresser chair and looking at me..

Me: What?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: Nothing... I was just thinking



Me: Thinking or staring at me? Kelso:

Both

Me: What were you thinking about?

Kelso: Never imagined you in my bed again
Me: I was just feeling sleepy

He chuckled.. Kelso:

Yeah right

Me: If witchcraft wasn't involved, where you going to act like that?

He shook his head..

Kelso: I made a Promise to myself that I will never raise my hand on you and I was never going to do that

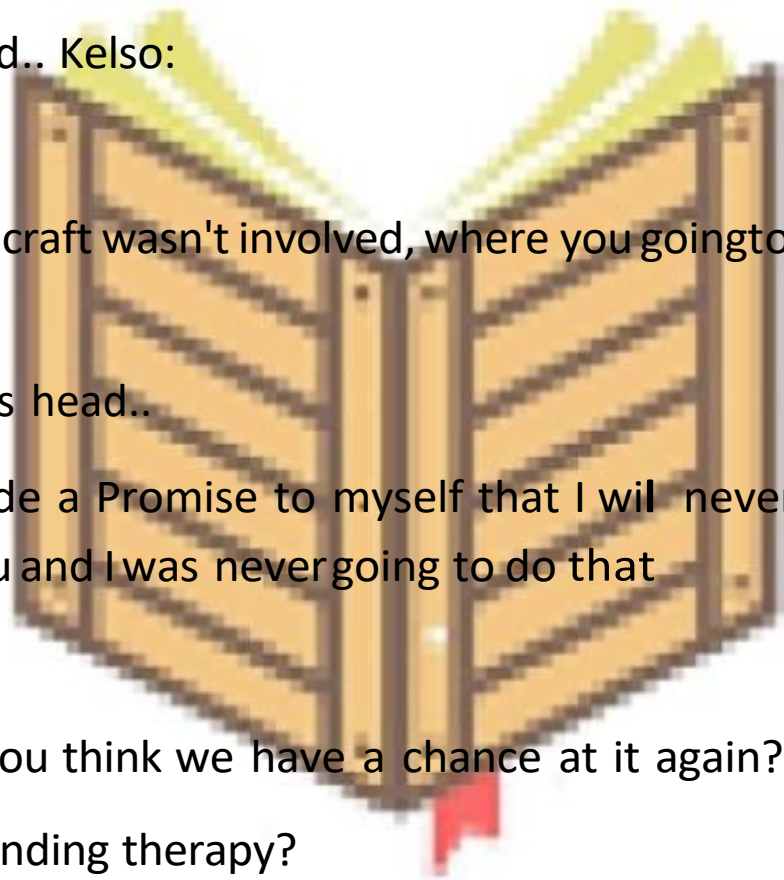
Me: I see

Kelso: Do you think we have a chance at it again?
Me: Are you still attending therapy?

Kelso: I am

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: If you continue attending therapy then we might



have a shot at it again, with everything that's happened it won't be easy

Kelso: I'm a very patient man Me:

You and Neli?

Kelso: We over

Me: Seeing someone else?

Kelso: Not at all, you are the one who is seeing someone else

Me: Please don't start

Kelso: You really thought you could replace me with Kelo?

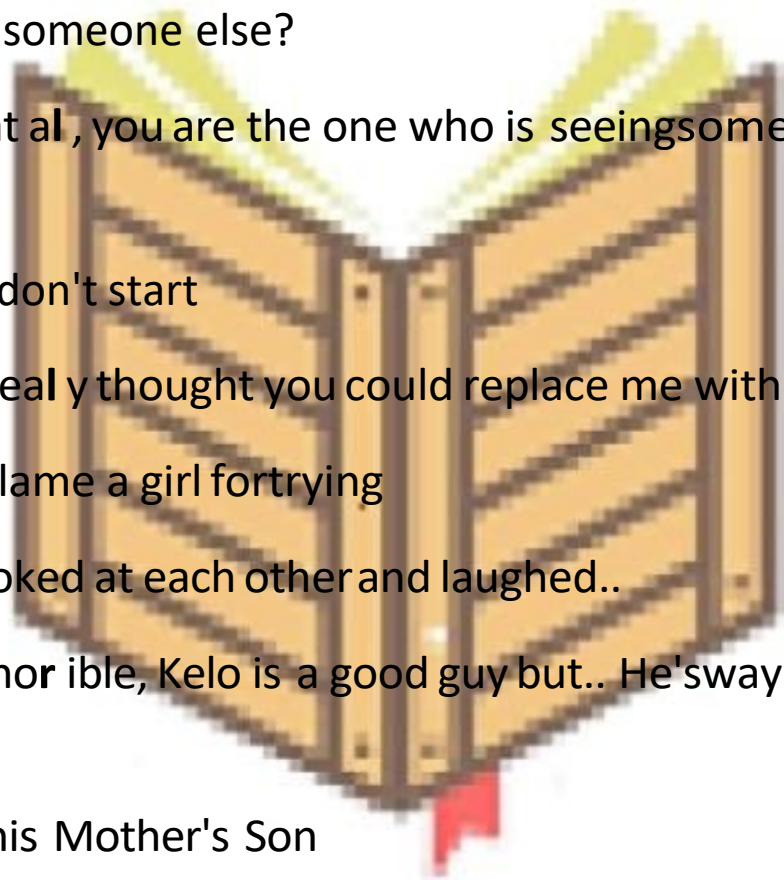
Me: Can't blame a girl for trying

We both looked at each other and laughed..

Me: It was horrible, Kelo is a good guy but.. He's way too childish

Kelso: And his Mother's Son

Me: The Mother situation was getting to me, you know he's going to lose it right?



Kelso: I know

Me: And I don't want you hurting him

Kelso: I won't hurt him, quite frankly I have a lot going on right now to even entertain him but you have to end it with him

Me: Yeah I know.. Speaking of that I also have to go Kelso: What's the rush?

Me: I'm not living here anymore, remember? Kelso: I forgot
I got out of bed and fixed myself..

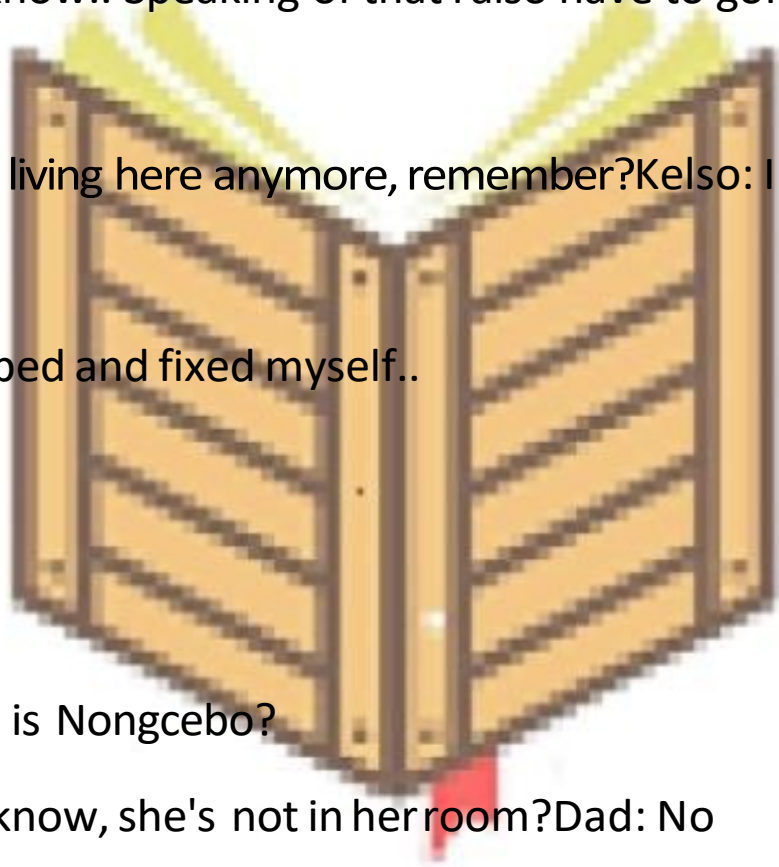
SLI

Dad: Where is Nongcebo?

Me: I don't know, she's not in her room? Dad: No

Me: I don't know

NOVELSGURU.COM



Dad: Let me call the station
Me: What for?

Dad: In case she's missing
Me: Aren't we over reacting?

Dad: The day you have a child you would know
He took out his phone...

Me: She might be with her boyfriend
Dad: Dad: What boyfriend?

Lindo walked in..

Lindo: People

Me: Dad is calling the station
Lindo:

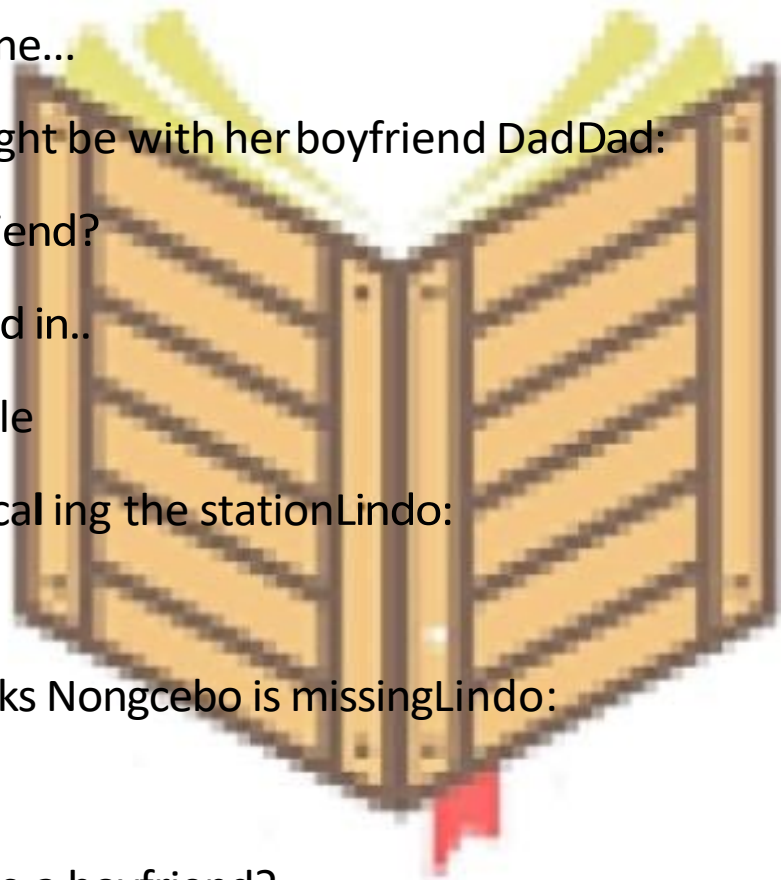
Why?

Me: He thinks Nongcebo is missing
Lindo:

Missing?

Dad: She has a boyfriend?

Lindo: I wouldn't put it like that.. I'll go and fetch her, I think I know where she is



Lindo walked out..

Dad: Tel me more about this boyfriendHe sat
down...

KEN

Not a lot of people know me, the best thing to do isto stay away
from people who know me..

Socks: Are you evergoing to tel the gang that youout?

Me: Yes Socks:

When?

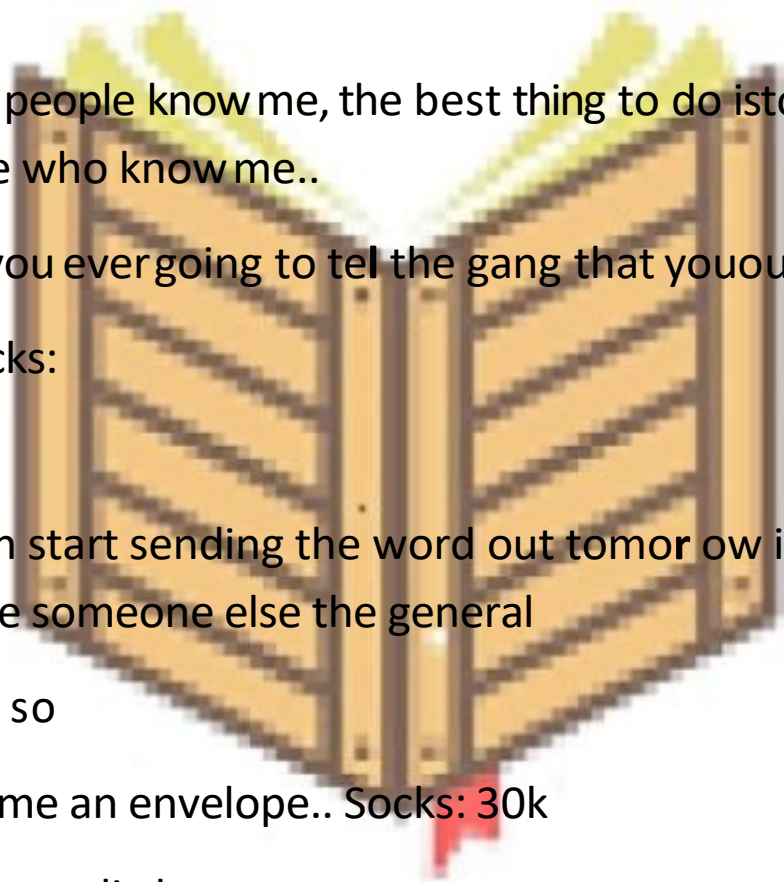
Me: You can start sending the word out tomor ow incase they
wanna make someone else the general

Socks: I'll do so

He handed me an envelope.. Socks: 30k

it wil help you a little

Me: Thank you.. Need to find a way on how to



NOVELSGURU.COM

continue with the drug operation inside Socks:

The Gav is on our necks

Me: You have to go back in to be in charge and make sure everything is going down smoothly

Socks: I understand

Me: I have a plan one that will get you years inside Socks: I have missed home I won't lie

Me: Then we better act fast Socks: Just take care of my house

Me: I will might change a few things here and there but.. I'll take care of it

BANZA

I told my Mom everything that my Dad and I were talking about..

Ma: He will be getting divorce papers soon Me: He is broken, never seen him that broken



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ma: I'm not going back to the past, I have a new life
Me: And a new man

Ma: And a new man

Me: Do you trust the Gav?

Ma: Honestly speaking I think he was sent my way by the ancestors.. He is a good man most of all he understands me and my gift, he is a firm believer in ancestors

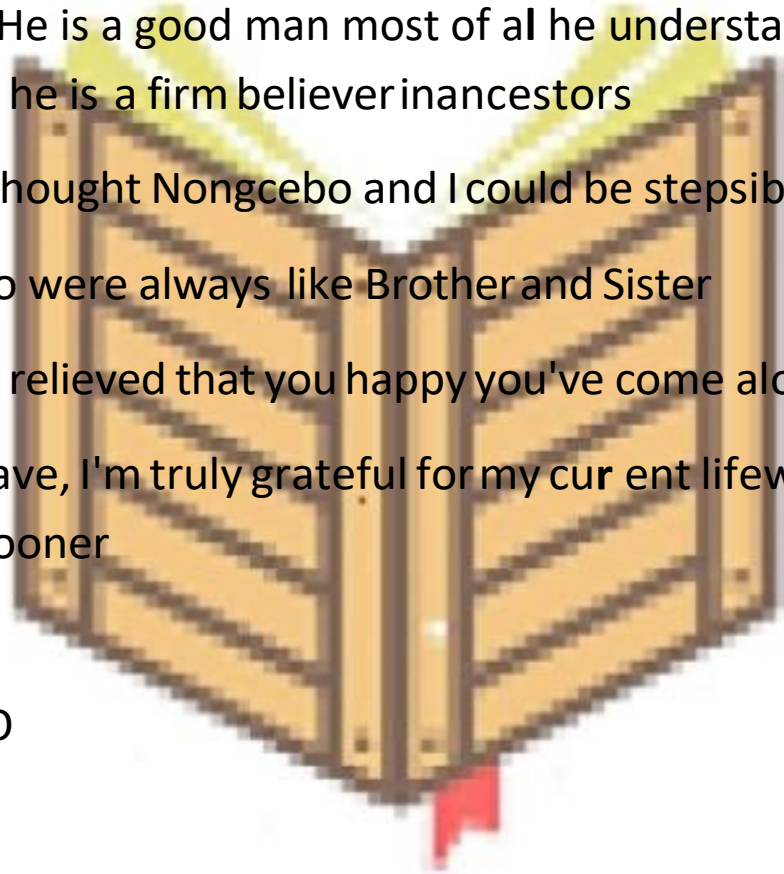
Me: Never thought Nongcebo and I could be stepsiblings

Ma: You two were always like Brother and Sister

Me: I'm just relieved that you're happy you've come along way

Ma: Yes I have, I'm truly grateful for my current life wish I had done this sooner

NONGCEBO



NOVELSGURU.COM

I should go probably my Father is worried, I left without telling anyone where I was going.

Kelso: Wouldn't want to get on his bad side, he already hates me

Me: I know

Kelso: And I don't blame him

Me: He will come around eventually

Kelso: A man like him doesn't come around trust me, I hope you will enjoy the short time you will have with me because he's definitely going to put me behind bars

Me: He won't do that

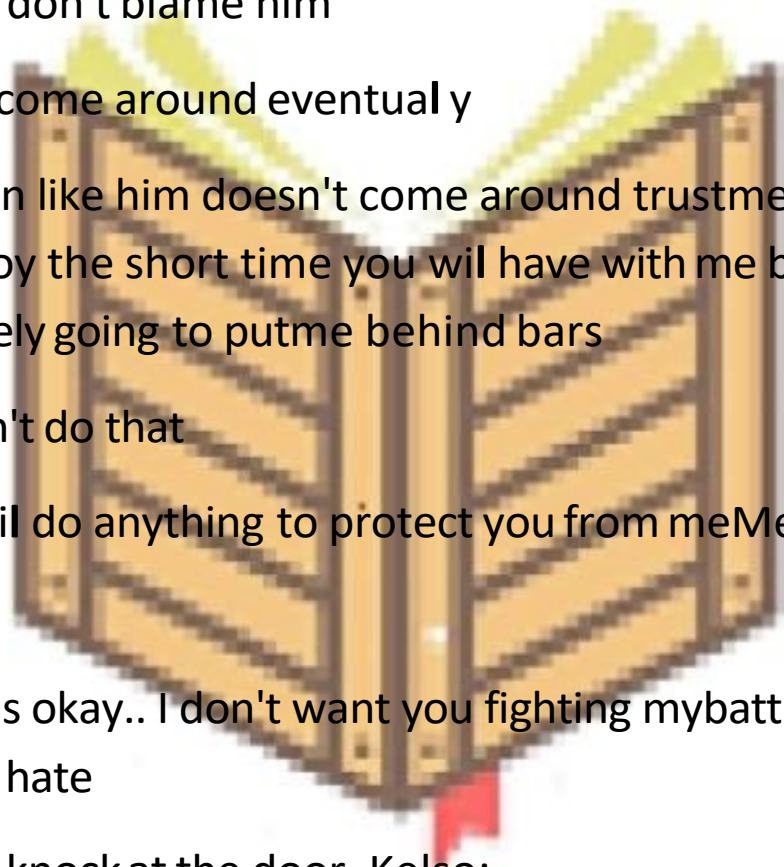
Kelso: He will do anything to protect you from me
Me: I'll talk to him

Kelso: No it's okay.. I don't want you fighting my battles. I deserve his hate

We heard a knock at the door.. Kelso:

Let me get that

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Let me go too

We went to open, and it was Lindo. My heart dropped straight to my knees..

He looked at us..

Lindo: I'm here to get you, your father is Wilding out
Me: I was already leaving

Lindo: Next time at least state that you going out, don't just leave

Me: I was actually with Banza and he dropped me here
wanted to see how Grams is doing

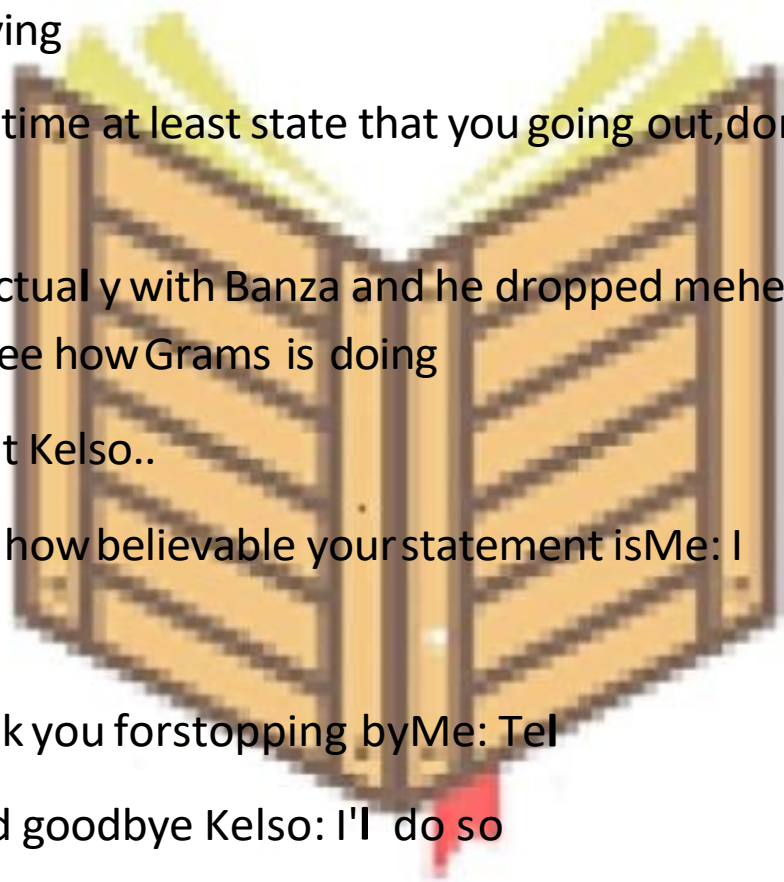
He looked at Kelso..

Lindo: Yeah how believable your statement is
Me: I should go

Kelso: Thank you for stopping by
Me: Tel

Grams I said goodbye
Kelso: I'll do so

We looked at each other and Lindo made things difficult for us..



I extended my hand to Kelso..Me:

Bye

He shook it.. Kelso:

Bye Lindo

chuckled..I walked

out Me: Let's go

.

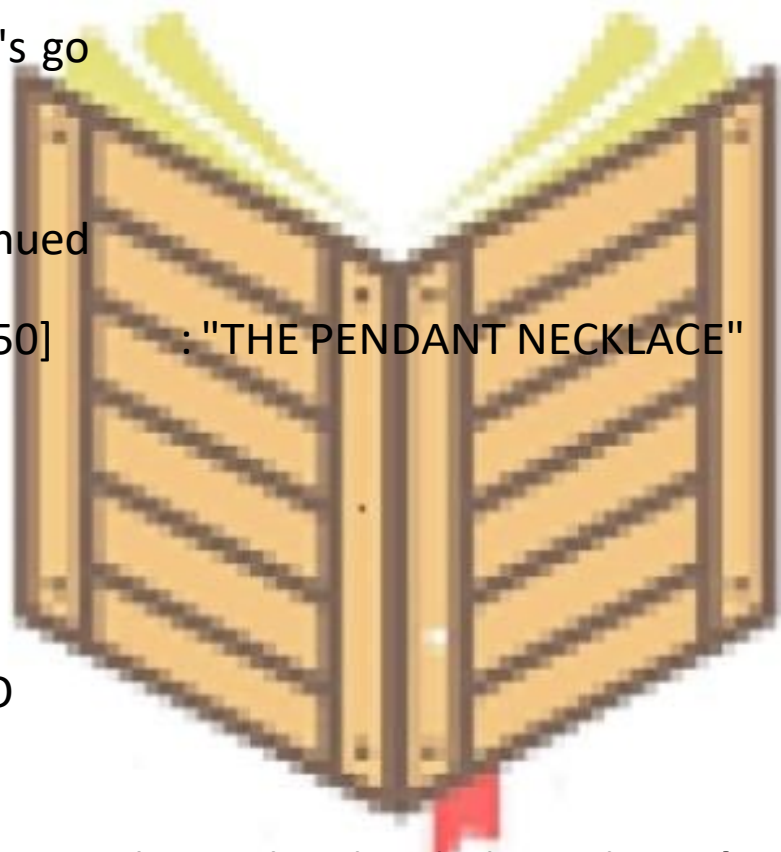
To be continued

[08/24, 13:50] : "THE PENDANT NECKLACE"

118

NONGCEBO

When I got home that night I decided to video call Kelo and tell him what's going on, that I have



NOVELSGURU.COM

decided to work things out with my husband. As expected, he didn't take the news well but nothing could've prepared me for the things that he said..

Kelo: You fixing things with him? Me: Yes

Kelo: Just like that? Me:

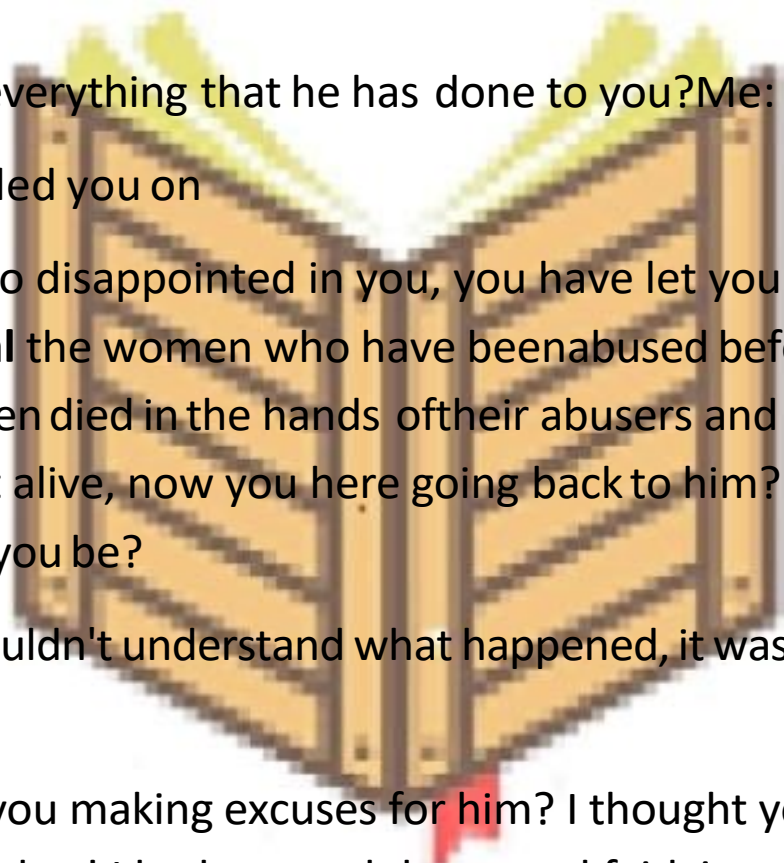
Yes

Kelo: After everything that he has done to you? Me: I am sorry that I led you on

Kelo: I am so disappointed in you, you have let yourself down and all the women who have been abused before. Some women died in the hands of their abusers and you made it out alive, now you here going back to him? How foolish can you be?

Me: You wouldn't understand what happened, it was deeper than that

Kelo: Now you making excuses for him? I thought you were better than that! I had so much hope and faith in you. You are an independent woman why do you need an abuser for? This guy broke you, you



almost died!

Me: I think you should block me

Kelo: Consider it done and that medicine application forget about it, that field doesn't need foolish people. I wish he kills you this time around you deserve it!

Me: That was expected from a momma's boy. Grow up and play with your mates 13 year olds.

Kelo might be a lot of things but he's a man. He doesn't hide under his Mother's skirt! Grow up!

Kelo: Beauty with no brains that's what you are! Me:

Whatever

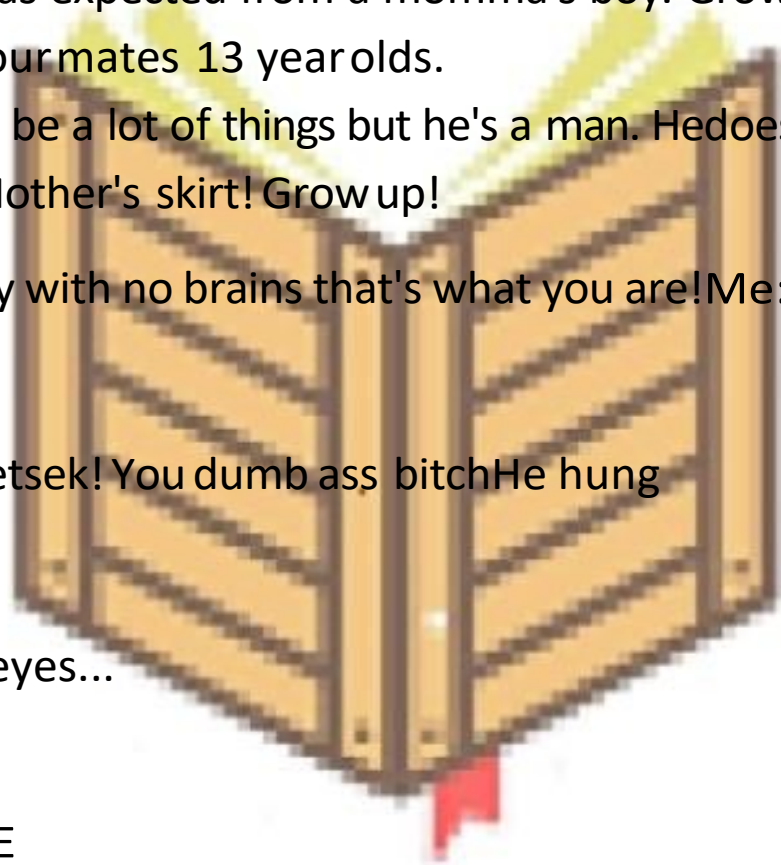
Kelo: Ya voetsek! You dumb ass bitch He hung up..

I rolled my eyes...

SANDISIWE

NOVELSGURU.COM

The next morning Sole picked me up and we went



shopping for the baby clothes. He wanted to do it with me, and I'm glad that he is being supportive since I'm very close to giving birth..

Me: What about this?Sole:

It's beautiful

Me: I want us to get a baby cot and put it in our room, I want the baby to sleep in our room until she's at least 5 months then she can move to theNursery

Sole: I was in the Nursery since from the day myParents brought me home

Me: In our culture we do things differently, the babywas even supposed to share a bed with me only and you sleep in the other room. The baby can't go out

Sole: What a culture

Me: Don't worry you'll get used to it

Sole: I hope so.. At what time is your photo shoot?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: In 30min time

Sole: We doing it together?Me:

You weren't counted Sole: I'm

counted now

Me: Yeah whatever Snowflake.. So did you talk toNathan about Avery?

Sole: No

Me: I think he will make a good big brotherSole: I hope

so

Me: Let me get these too

Sole: Are you going to lose al the baby fat aftergiving birth?

Me: Yes..

Sole: Why? I like you this thick

Me: I just wanna go back to my usual weight, thisass is too big

Sole: I don't mind at al **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Of course you wouldn't



Sole: Maybe moving in with your family was too soon

He ran his hand on my butt.. Me:

Stop it we in a public place Sole: They

know what it is

He stood behind me and put his hands on my tummy..

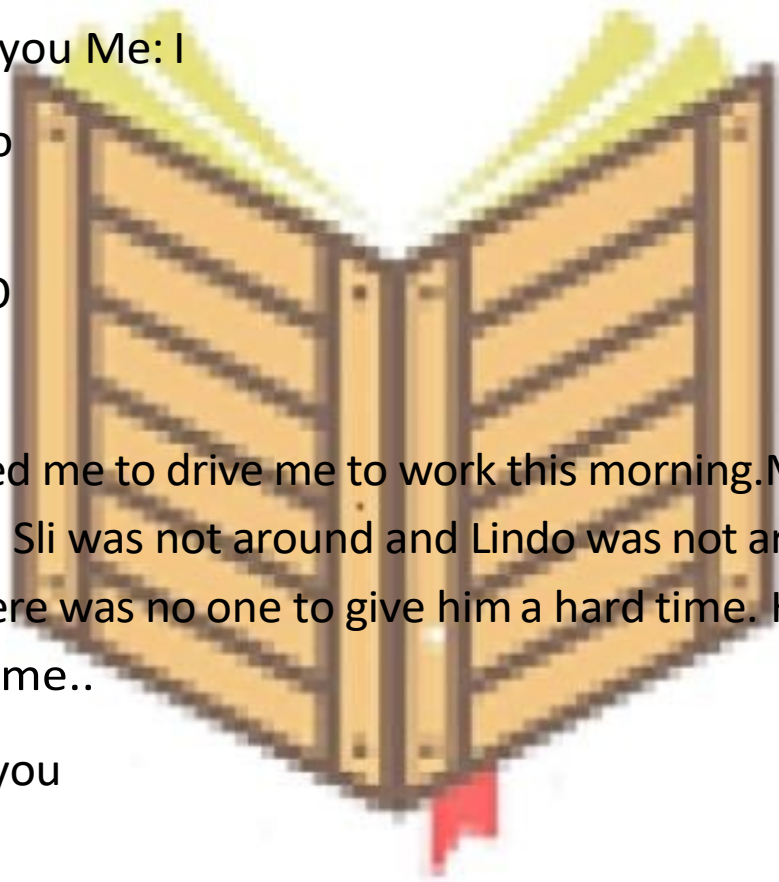
Sole: I love you Me: I

love you too

NONGCEBO

Kelso fetched me to drive me to work this morning. My Dad has already left, Sli was not around and Lindo was not around too. Basically there was no one to give him a hard time. He opened the door for me..

Me: Thank you



NOVELSGURU.COM

I got in and he closed the door, he went and got in on the other side..

Me: Thank you for picking me up Kelso:

You welcome

I put on the seat belt..

Kelso: I don't even get any kiss?

I leaned over and kissed him, after a kiss he hit me a little on my forehead..

Me: You are still childish? (laughing)

Kelso: What can I say? You like them childish He started the car..

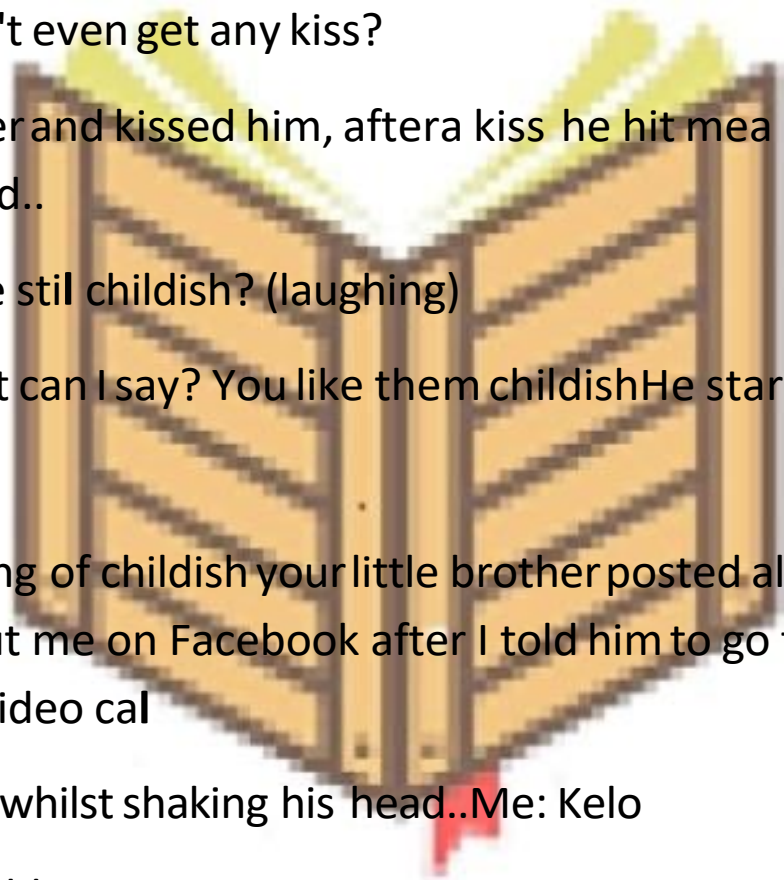
Me: Speaking of childish your little brother posted a lot of crazy things about me on Facebook after I told him to go to hell last night on a video call

He laughed whilst shaking his head.. Me: Kelso

is such a child

Kelso: Don't worry about him he's still a child Me: I

wanna call Dr Khatri and ask him to



recommend a good therapist for us

Kelso: Can't he do it? I trust him and he already knows our situation starting over with someone else is another story

Me: I'll call him and ask Kelso:

Where is your ring? Me: I threw

it away

Kelso: Okay

Me: I'm joking it's in the drawer

Kelso: When are you going to start wearing it again? Me: When

I'm sure that it's worth being worn again Kelso: What?

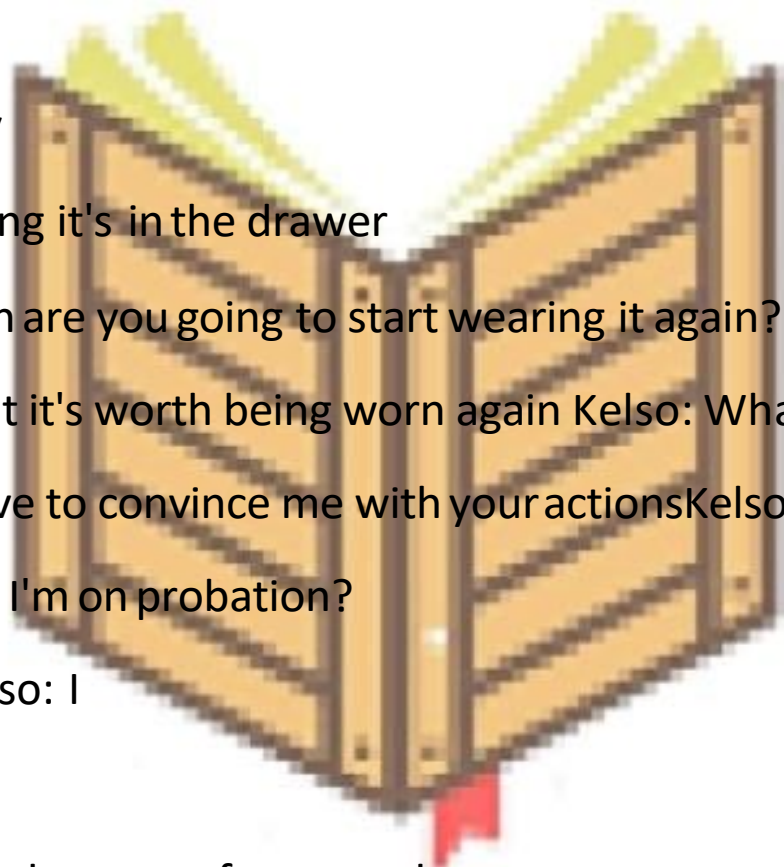
Me: You have to convince me with your actions Kelso:

Kahle kahle I'm on probation?

Me: Yes Kelso: I

see

Me: Let me play songs from my phone



NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: This is my car

Me: You playing hip hop KB it's boring Kelso:

Oksalayo Mrs KB this is stil my carMe: You

shouldn't have picked me up thenKelso: Ungrateful

little piece of good ass

I hit him on his shoulder..Me:

Watch your mouth

Kelso: I am complimenting youMe:

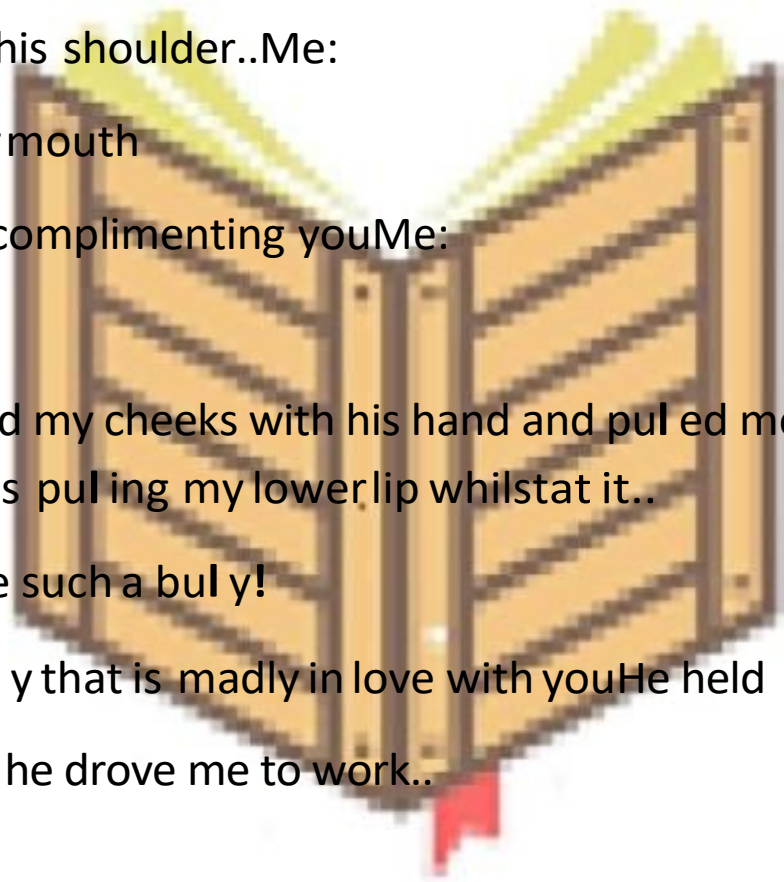
You a mess

He squeezed my cheeks with his hand and pul ed me over to him fora kiss pul ing my lower lip whilstat it..

Me: You are such a bul y!

Kelso: A bul y that is madly in love with youHe held

my hand as he drove me to work..



SIPHOSETHU

NOVELSGURU.COM

I wasn't feeling well this morning so I skipped work. I had the flu. I opened the door for Lindo..

Me: Hey

He looked at me..

Lindo: Aww mara kodwa, angisathandi ke mosowunje
(I don't like it when you this sick)

He closed the door..

Lindo: I didn't think it was this bad

Me: I'm congested, my head hurts, my eyes are watery, my throat hurts, my body is aching

Lindo: You poor baby, come here

I got closer to him and he hugged me.. Me: I got

meds but they not working Lindo: Should we
go to the Dr?

Me: I don't know

NOVELSGURU.COM

He picked me up and walked into the bedroom.. He put me on the bed..

Lindo: I will prepare you my mother's tomato soup, did you get enough meds?

Me: I got what I could get

Lindo: Did you bath?

Me: Not yet

Lindo: I'll prepare you a bath and later on I'll get more meds for you

Me: I would appreciate that very much He kissed me on my forehead..

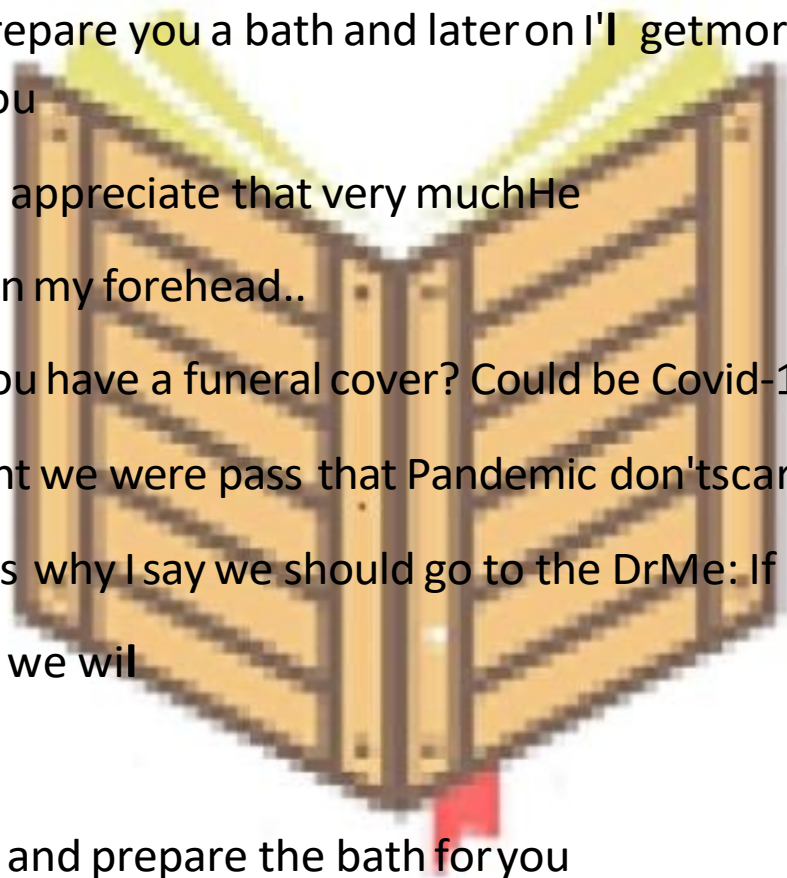
Lindo: Do you have a funeral cover? Could be Covid-19

Me: I thought we were past that Pandemic don't scare me

Lindo: That's why I say we should go to the Dr Me: If it gets worse we will

I laid back..

Lindo: I'll go and prepare the bath for you



ANDRE MARTINEZ

I waited in my study for Aldo to show up.

Aldo is a trained Assassin, he's very good at what he does and he works for me. He has worked for the military base in Russia, he has been to Afghanistan. He has been around a lot. If they send Aldo to kill you, you won't survive the bullet. He kills without having any mercy. Funny thing is that you would expect someone like that to be a loner, but he has a fiancé and a kid on the way..

Me: Are we ready?

Aldo: We have a problem!

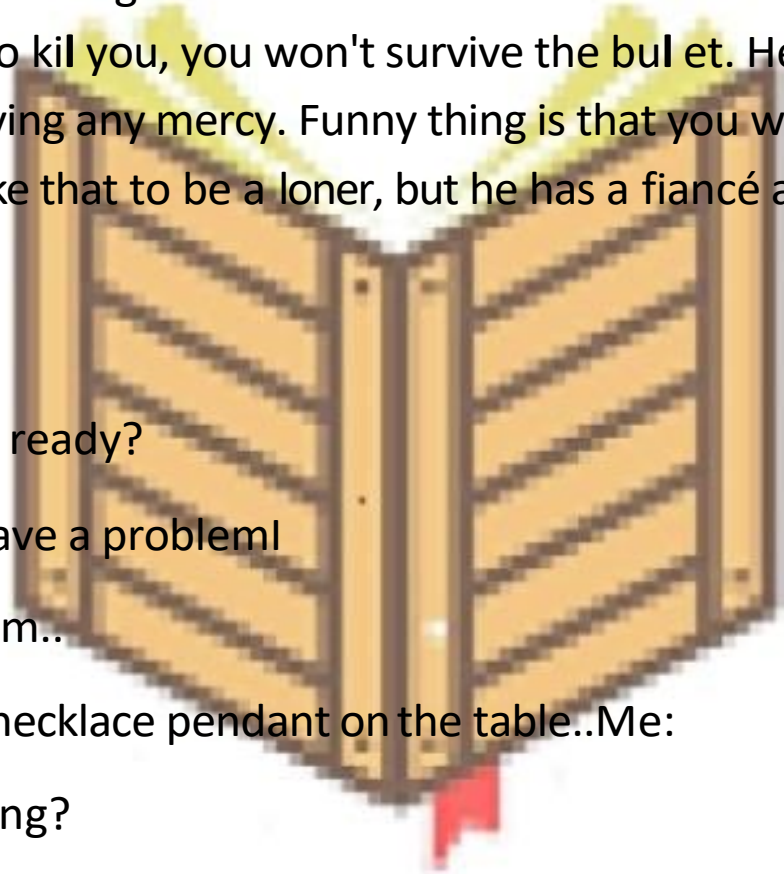
looked at him..

He put the necklace pendant on the table..Me:

Whats wrong?

Aldo: Check it

I picked it up and looked at it.. My heart almost



NOVELSGURU.COM

stopped..

Me: It's fake! It's a fake!

Aldo: Some stole the original and replaced it with a fake one

Me: Who would do that? The Necklace was very secure anyone who got close to it would be toast! Only you and I knew the codes

Aldo: It looks like someone else knew the codes

Aldo would never betray me, he's a soldier. Loyalty is important to him..

I sat down..

Me: Only Nastro wanted this necklace too

The Necklace holds the coordinates and a tracker to my offshore account. If it lands in the wrong hands, I could lose all my money and the person will attain the evidence the authorities need to put me behind bars. I won't even get a life sentence, I'll get the death penalty..

Me: For how long has it been missing?

Aldo: I'm not sure

Me: Get me the person who has the necklace, get me something Aldo

Aldo: I'll do so, I'll start with Nastro's wife
Me: Do so, bring her here

Aldo: Yes Sir

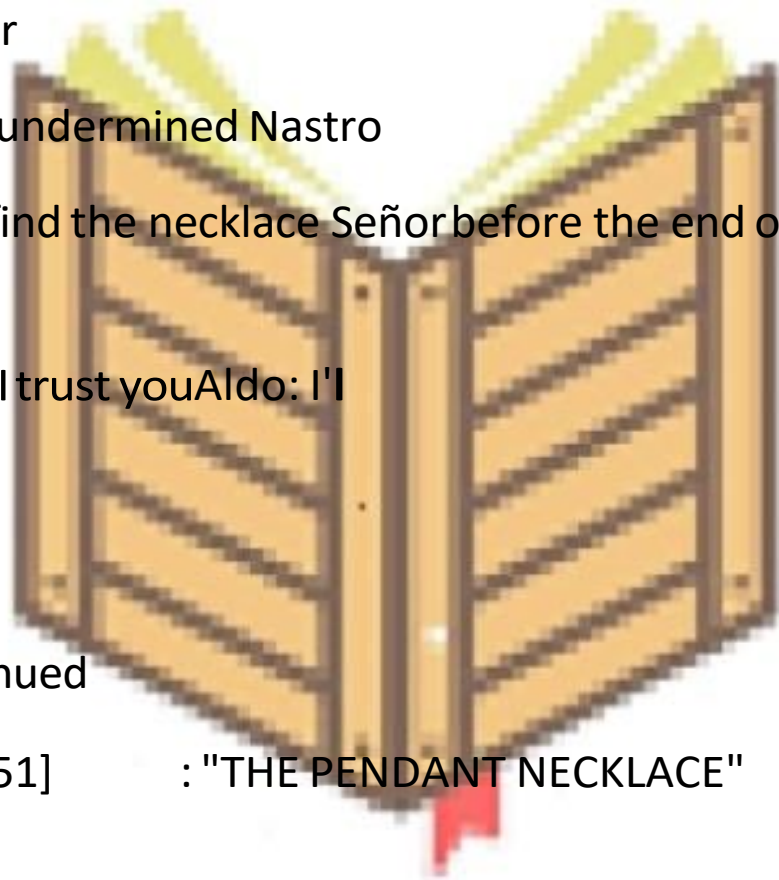
Me: I really undermined Nastro

Aldo: We'll find the necklace Señor before the end of the day if possible

Me: I know I trust you
Aldo: I'll be back

To be continued

[08/24, 13:51] : "THE PENDANT NECKLACE"



NONGCEBO

It was okay when Kelo was posting my shit last night on Facebook, but now he had tagged me. Hewas saying al kinds of nasty things about me.

Saying how much of a disgrace I am to women, saying women like me don't deserve to be pitied. Hewent as faras saying I shouldn't have children because I wil make a bad mother. I wil teach my Daughter that it's okay to stay with an abusive man until she gets kil ed, and that if I have a son. He wil abuse girls because me staying with an abusive man wil make him think it's okay to be abusive. He detailed everything I told him about the abuse, he went and downloaded a picture of a woman on the internet who didn't have a nipple and cal ed me MrsMissing Nipple. His posts got a lot of comments, likes, and shares. Women were dragging me saying al kinds of things about me. These are the same women who fight forcheating men, the same women who bewitch their boyfriends or husbands because of cheating. These are the same women

who attack other women when they find out that their partners are cheating, the same women who take videos of the other woman naked and embarrassing her on social media. It hurt that people were judging me, it hurt that people only know a portion of our story. He said maybe the witchcraft that I said was used against us, is actual witchcraft that Kelso used against me to make me stay with him abusive as he is.

Kelo was out of control, he also uploaded a picture of a chained dog and compared it to me. I was broken, how could he be so heartless? I couldn't even focus on my work I made my way to the bathroom to cry it all out...

SANDISIWE

I didn't want Sole to be a part of my photoshoot. This photoshoot was scheduled only for me, maybe next time we'll do it together. I liked the setting, most of all I like the bathtub setting. They had pink

NOVELSGURU.COM

flowers inside and I don't know what they used but the water was also pink..

Photographer: Perfect! Now touch your belly did..

Photographer: Beautiful

I was totally naked, Sole was holding the towel for me..

Photographer: Yes I like that pose.. Hold one of the flowers up a little

I did..

Photographer: Beautiful! He

lowered the camera..

Photographer: Now we going to do the pink garden setup.. You can go and put the ballerina attire

He walked away and Sole walked up to me.

He stretched the towel and I took a while to get out of the bathtub since I was doing it alone. When I was out he wrapped the towel around me..



Sole: That was beautiful, you were beautiful
Me: You think?

Sole: I know so

Me: Thank you Snowflake

Sole: Let's have you dress up like a ballerina
We walked to the fitting room...

KELSO

I received a call from Scorpion..Me:

Scorp

Scorp: What the hell is wrong with your brother?Me: I'm lost

Scorp: He's posting shit about my sister on Facebook

Me: Ohw Nongcebo told me

Scorp: I'm not happy with you and my Sister



NOVELSGURU.COM

laughing and all that shit, I'm not happy that you guys are getting back together but you don't see me bitching about it on social media. He is embarrassing my sister and now feminists are all over her, this thing he's doing is spreading faster than the speed of lightning

I sighed..

Me: I'll check it out

Scorp: Do so before I check him out! He hung up and I checked Facebook.

I thought this thing was just a small tantrum from Kelo, but it was now going big. Things that he was posting were not good, they actually got me very mad. They were highly disturbing, I grabbed my keys and walked out of my room..

SLI

Me: Thank you very much

NOVELSGURU.COM



Lady: You welcome

I was at the bank fixing something, now I'm supposed to meet up with Ken. When we spoke earlier he told me that he wanted me to help him choose a few things for his house, he wanted me to help him renovate the house. I walked out and made my way to my car, when I got to it I unzipped my bag to take out my keys. Before I could find my keys I felt a knife behind my back..

Voice: Turn around slowly

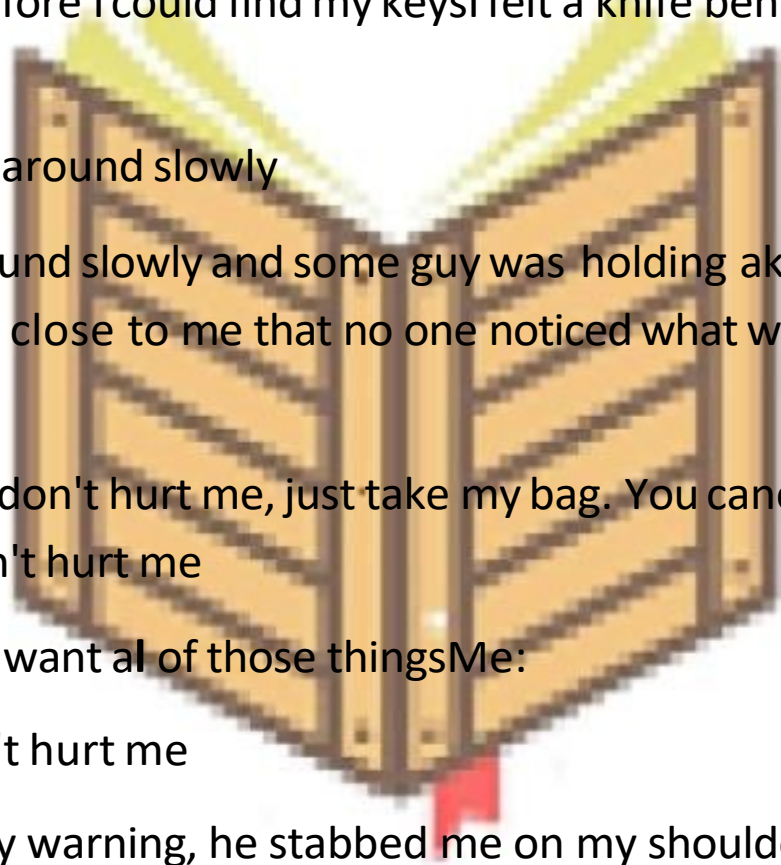
I turned around slowly and some guy was holding a knife at me. He was very close to me that no one noticed what was going on.

Me: Please don't hurt me, just take my bag. You can even take my car, just don't hurt me

Him: I don't want all of those things Me:

Please don't hurt me

Without any warning, he stabbed me on my shoulder. I dropped my bag and screamed, people started looking at us..



He cut me on my face and then stabbed me again on my stomach. I heard people screaming..

Him: If you make it, tel your father Socks did this to you. U Socks wama 28

With that being said, he walked away...

ANDRE MARTINEZ

It didn't take Aldo that long to bring Nastro's wife to me. I in my garden..

Aldo: I got her I

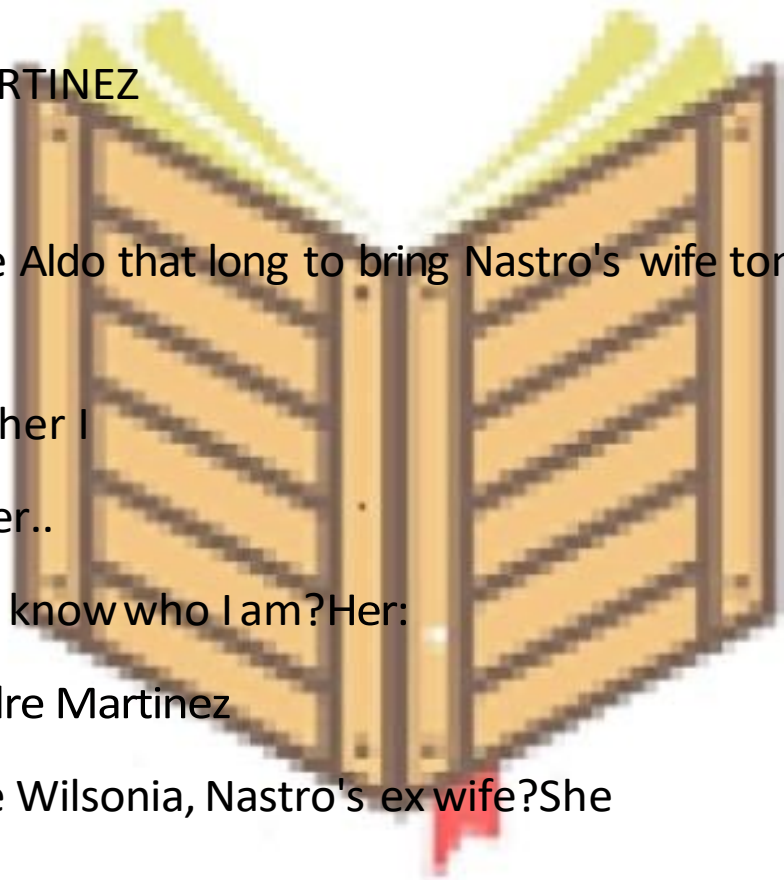
looked at her..

Me: Do you know who I am? Her:

Andre.. Andre Martinez

Me: You are Wilsonia, Nastro's ex wife? She nodded...

Me: If you know me, you know that I'm a dangerous man. I'm going to ask you a few questions and I



NOVELSGURU.COM

want you to be very honest with me.. Do we understand each other?

She nodded..

Me: What does Nastro want with my necklace?She kept quiet... I walked up to her..

Me: Your life is in my hands right now, and I intend not to stop with you. See how easy it was to find you? It will be more easier to find someone who is very close to you, someone that you care about a lot

She looked at me..

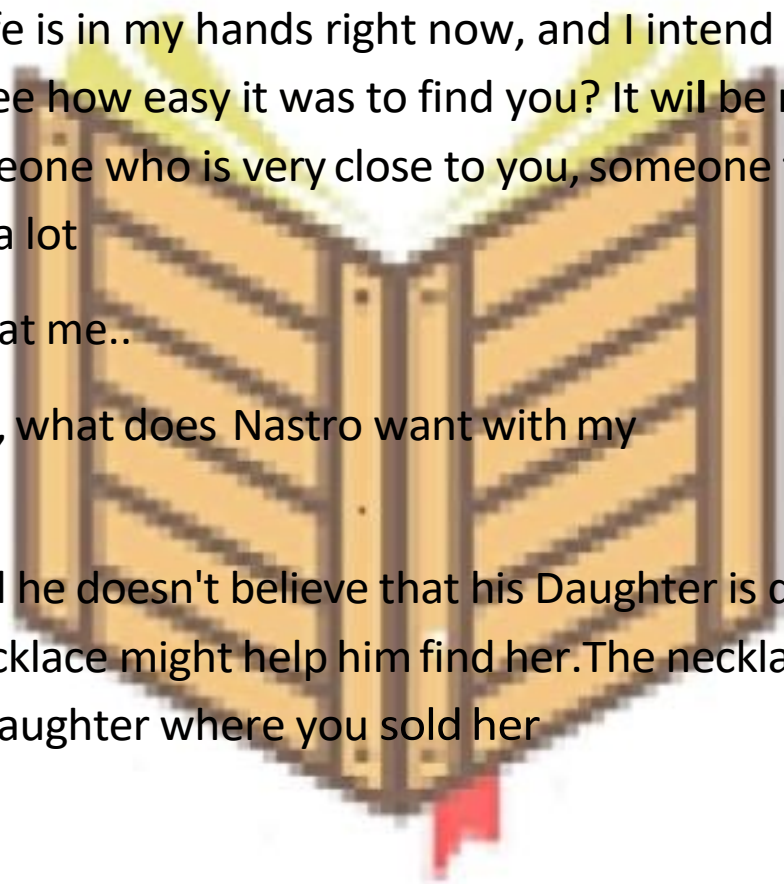
Me: Señora, what does Nastro want with my necklace?

Her: He said he doesn't believe that his Daughter is dead, said that the necklace might help him find her.The necklace will locate his Daughter where you sold her

I nodded..

Me: Good Señora.. Who was he working with?

Her: He had hired 3 Men to steal the necklace. Sole,



NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso and I'm not sure but he said Scorpion or something

I looked at Aldo..

Aldo: Same guys behind the heist

Me: Are those boys capable of robbing someone like me?

She kept quiet..

I walked up to her and put my hands on her cheeks.. Me: Come on Señora, you doing very good

I saw tears in her eyes..

Her: I don't know about the other two but Sole is very smart

I nodded..

Me: You did good Señora, you did good Her: Can

I go now?

Me: Yes please..

She turned back and started walking away..

I looked at Aldo, he took out his gun and shot her.



Shot her on her back and she fell. He walked up to her as she tried to crawl away screaming for help. Aldo shot her several times, I closed my eyes..

Me: Dump her body somewhere I'll have the cleaners come and clean the blood

Aldo nodded..

To be continued

[08/24, 13:51] : "THE PENDANT NECKLACE"

120

KELSO

Kelo has gone too far, I know that he is shit but this. This was out of order he had no right to disrespect my wife publicly like that just because she chose to stay with me.

It was her decision and people shouldn't make her feel bad about it. I know what I did was unforgivable, I know that most women would've left without even thinking twice. Nongcebo chose to give me a second chance and I appreciate that, I wanna show her that I can love her. Love her the way she wants me to love her... I got to Gertrude's house and I was glad to find him at home. He was with Takie.....

Without any warning, I put my hands on his neck and pinned him against the wall strangling him.

Takie tried to break us off but she couldn't, I was way too strong for her..

Takie: Kelso stop it you going to kill him!

Me: I have tolerated your shit for too long now you have gone too far!!

Takie: Kelso stop it!!

Takie jumped on my back and bit me on my cheek, I let go of Kelo and moved backwards to throw her on the couch..

Takie: What the hell is wrong with you?

Me: What the hell is wrong with your Brother

disrespecting my wife like that on Facebook!! I looked at Kelo..

Me: You will take down everything that you have posted about my wife right away!!!

Takie: Kelo what did you do?

I clicked my tongue and walked out..

GAV KHUMALO

I rushed to the hospital when I got that call. Someone called me and told me that my Daughter was stabbed at the mall. Sli gave the person my number before passing out.

I was angry, and I was worried. I just found Nongcebo and I can't lose Sli. The Person also told me that a "Socks" was the one who was behind this attack, Sli had said a lot of things before passing out. Socks a member of the 28s.. The Nurses were giving me a run around, telling me to sit down that they will give me the information that I want. The

waiting game was the hardest. I took my phone and texted Lindo..

SANDISIWE

After the photoshoot we went to my pregnancy class. I was grateful that Sole was here with me, learning what to do when I'm in labour. Some of the ladies had brought their friends and partners too.

He was sitting behind me as we practice the breathing exercises. His hands moved from my tummy all the way to my breasts..

Me: Snowflake stop (Whispering) Sole: I am following instructions Me: Your own instructions

The instructor looked at us..

Me: Stop or you going to get us kicked out

He put his lips on my neck and moved them to my ear..

Sole: I never told you this, but sex with you since you felt pregnant was the best sex that we have ever had. It's really hard doing this and not getting turned on

Me: Stop it!

The instructor looked at us..Me: Sorry

His phone vibrated..

Me: Ohh God what is it now?Sole: I'll

put it on silent..

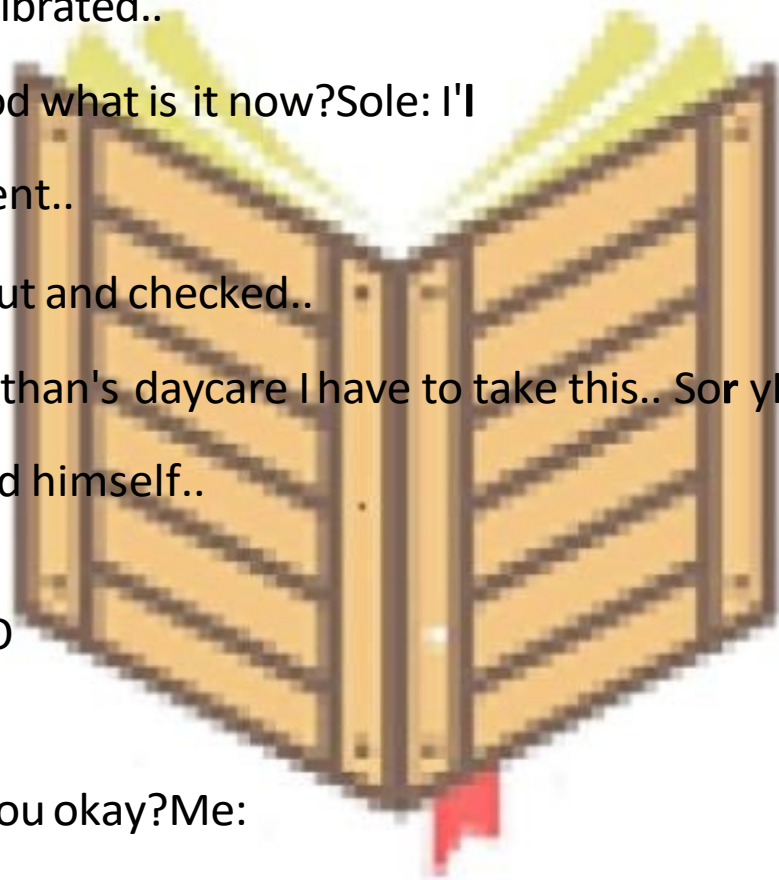
He took it out and checked..

Sole: It's Nathan's daycare I have to take this.. SorryHe got up and excused himself..

NONGCEBO

Mich: Are you okay?Me:

Yaa I'm okay



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mich: You don't look like you okay Me: I'll

be fine it's okay

Mich: Hey guess what? Me:

What?

Mich: A story is trending on Twitter, The Governor's Daughter was stabbed at the mall in broad daylight

Me: What are you talking about? Mich:

Look

She handed me the phone and I checked. People had uploaded Sli's video when she was on the ground bleeding..

Me: Ohh my word! This is my sister Mich:

What?

Me: I have to go

This day couldn't get any worse!



NOVELSGURU.COM

KELO

Takie shook her head..

Takie: I can't believe you did that, this is not what we do! We don't attack our own family on social media, we don't do this Kelo

Me: I was just telling the truth, Nongcebo went back to a man that almost killed her! What message is she sending to all the women out there?

Takie: So what? It's her choice you have nothing to do with how she lives her life

Me: It's stupidity! I thought she was smart!

Takie: She has her own reasons why she went back to him wena awungeni ndawo!

Me: Yeah whatever!

Takie: Take this shit down right now!

SCORPION

NOVELSGURU.COM

When I got that text from my Dad, I drove straight to the hospital. How can Socks do this? Socks was

involved in the heist. He knows the rules, we don't and we never attack women. He has broken our code, this is not what we do! Worse he stabbed my sister! !...

I arrived at the hospital and spotted my Dad, I went to him.

Me: Pops!

He got up from the chair.....

Me: How is she?

He punched me across the face..

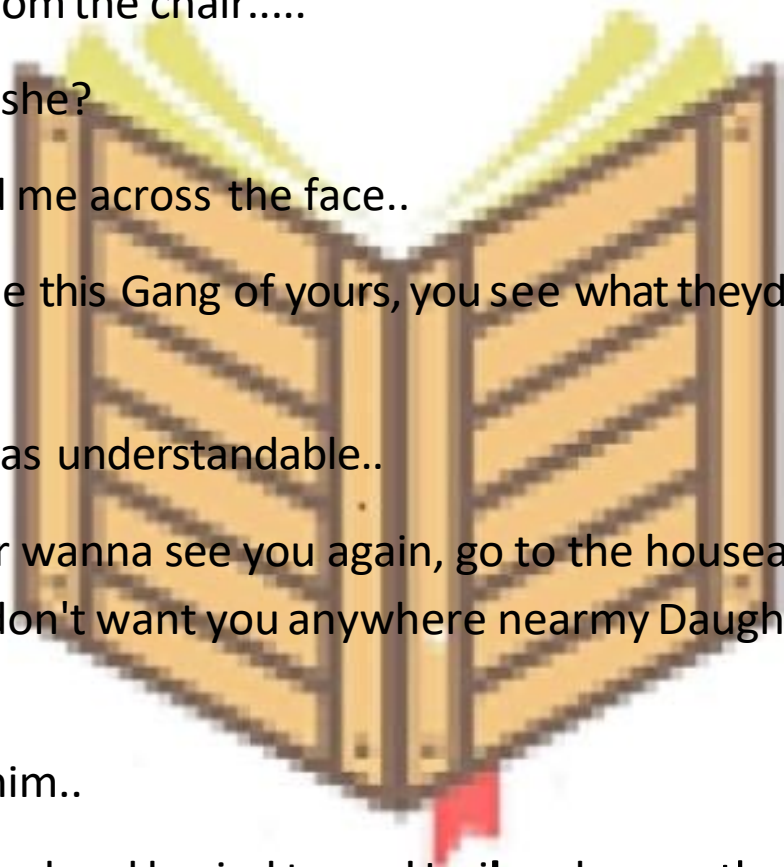
Dad: You see this Gang of yours, you see what they did to my Daughter?

His Anger was understandable..

Dad: I never wanna see you again, go to the house and pack your shit! I don't want you anywhere near my Daughters ever again!

I looked at him..

Dad: You dead and buried to me! I will make sure that I put all you in jail! Every one of you!



KEN

Already the news were covering Sli's story. I never meant for her to get hurt, but this was the only way to get Socks back inside and make sure he doesn't get released anytime soon..

"This is Noluvuyo mqela reporting live from East rand mal "

I closed my eyes and squeezed the remote..

Me: Come on Sli, you have to make it. Come on Ntokazi, you have to make it!

.

To be continued

This insert was sponsored by Esona. She's asking for support on her diary. Please check it out

NOVELSGURU.COM

<https://m.facebook.com/Story-time-By-EJ-udge-112985963764719/>

[08/24, 13:52] : "The Pendant necklace"

121

SOLE

Nathan's teacher explained that Wilsonia didn't come to fetch him from Preschool. She has enlisted me as a second person to fetch Nathan from Preschool if they can't get a hold of her. I was surprised, tried to call her. Her phone took me straight to voicemail, it's so unlike her. I even called her work phone, still she didn't pick up... Wilsonia would've called me or texted me, and told me that she won't make it to pick up Nathan. She wouldn't just keep quiet..

NOVELSGURU.COM

SCORPION

I still don't understand how Socks would harm my sister like that. Apart from us not hurting women, he knew exactly who she was. He is my sister, she broke a lot of codes. The 28s won't take this lightly.

I went to the police station and demanded to see him, they told me he is in custody and I can't see him. I need answers, I need to know why he did this..

King: I know that you hurting

Me: Have you lost a Sister before? Do you know how I'm feeling?

King: I know exactly how it feels like to lose someone that you love dearly, I understand that you want to put a bullet on his head. Trust me when I say justice will be served

King: Justice will be served my left foot! He's going to get 3 meals a day, prison is like home to him. He is a 28, he's going to get a better treatment than anyone else

King: I don't like how a Prison is ran, I am not for Prisoners being ill treated. With your father being the Governor of the Prison, and with Socks hurting the Daughter of the Governor. I doubt he's going to get any special treatment. What he did to your Sister cannot be undone, but justice will be served. Do you know how many people get away with shit like this? Be very grateful that Socks is behind bars. Don't go out there and do something stupid, I wouldn't want to arrest you too. Trust and believe in us

NONGCEBO

I walked into the hospital and saw my Father, I went to him. He got up and hugged me..

Me: How is she?

Dad: They still busy with her We

both sat down..

Me: Where is Lindo? Does he know?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: I don't want to see Lindo anywhere near Sli or you

Me: What happened?

Dad: The man who stabbed your Sister happens to be in the same gang as Lindo

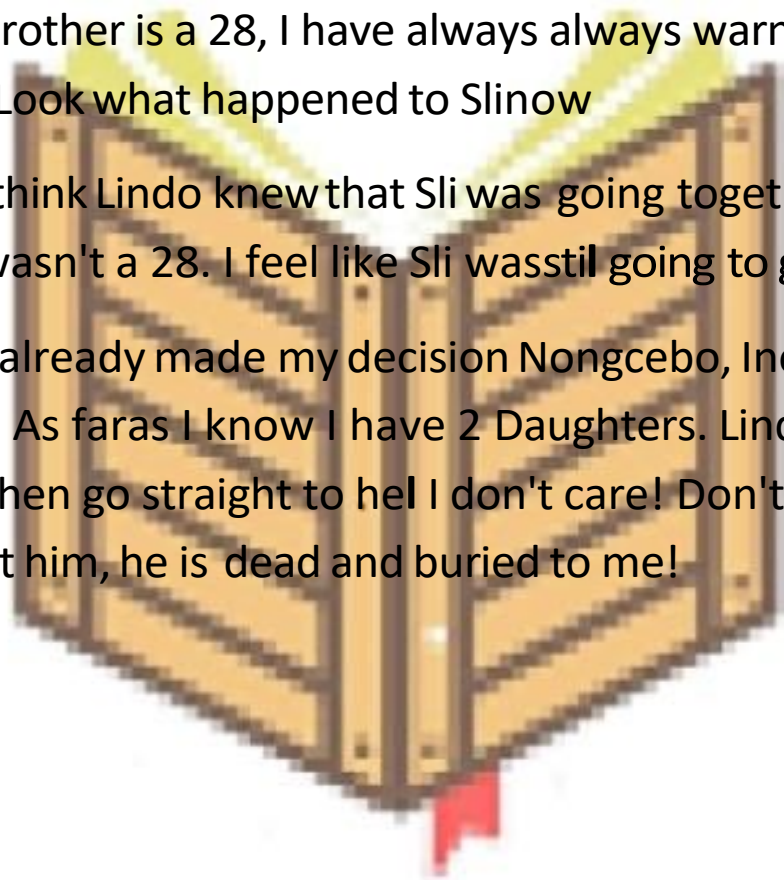
Me: Lindo is in a Gang?

Dad: Your Brother is a 28, I have always always warned him about this. Look what happened to Sli now

Me: I don't think Lindo knew that Sli was going to get hurt, even if he wasn't a 28. I feel like Sli was still going to get hurt

Dad: I have already made my decision Nongcebo, I no longer have a Son. As far as I know I have 2 Daughters. Lindo can go kill himself then go straight to hell I don't care! Don't ever talk to me about him, he is dead and buried to me!

MODRID



NOVELSGURU.COM

I opened my Bible at the farback of it, I have a secret component there where I had hidden the necklace. Before I was arrested, I stole the original necklace and replaced it with a fake one. I don't think Dre has realized yet because he hasn't said anything about it.

This necklace is my ticket to a better life, when I get out of here. I am skipping the country, probably go to Mexico and live there or somewhere else. I will definitely be sending the authorities all the evidence against Dre, he has to pay for his sins too..

I had a visitor, it was Kelso. Today we met at the visiting room, I'm guessing the Governor is too busy to monitor our conversation..

Kelso: The Governor's daughter was stabbed Me: What?

Kelso: Yes she was stabbed at the Mall Me: By who?

Kelso: Some guy named Socks, he's a 28 Me: He's a 28

Kelso: Yeah.. I don't know who pissed him off

Me: Word has been going around here that Governor is behind the General's death. It seems like they out for revenge

Kelso: Scorpion must be losing his mind

Me: Things like this happen all the time, it's life. He will be fine

Kelso: Excuse You?

Me: I don't know what you expect me to say because such things do happen, it's part of life and we can't deny it. You don't mess with such people and expect them not to bite back. The 28s ruled this prison way before the Gav came, he changed everything. Did you expect them to be happy? If you are someone in power, you tread carefully. The Gav had this coming, I'm sorry to say

He shook his head..

Me: Where is Sole? How is the escape plan coming along?
That's what we should be concentrating on

SANDISIWE

Sole fetched me from my class he was with Nathan. Told me that Wilsonia is nowhere to be found..

Me: So what are you going to do?

Sole: I don't know.. It's unlike her to just be this quiet

I looked at Nathan then I looked at Sole..

Me: Do you think something happened to her?

Sole: I'm trying not to think like that at all, I keep on hoping that she became her crazy herself. Probably with her boyfriend and lost track of time, I don't wanna think of the worst. I don't remember her having enemies

Me: So what are you going to do with Nath?

Sole: He will stay with me until I find Wilsonia! I hope she's dead wherever she is because I'm going to kill her myself if she's not, what is she thinking leaving Nath like this?

Me: It's pretty shitty!

NONGCEBO

The Dr walked up to us. We both stood up and waited for him. He was holding his face mask on in his hands..

Dr: Good afternoon Me:

Afternoon

Dr: I believe that you are Sli's family? Me: I'm her Sister and this is our Father

Dr: I am sorry to say this but.. Sli didn't make it. We tried everything but the bleeding was too much

My Dad sat down again..

Dr: I'm truly sorry.. She passed on at 16:00

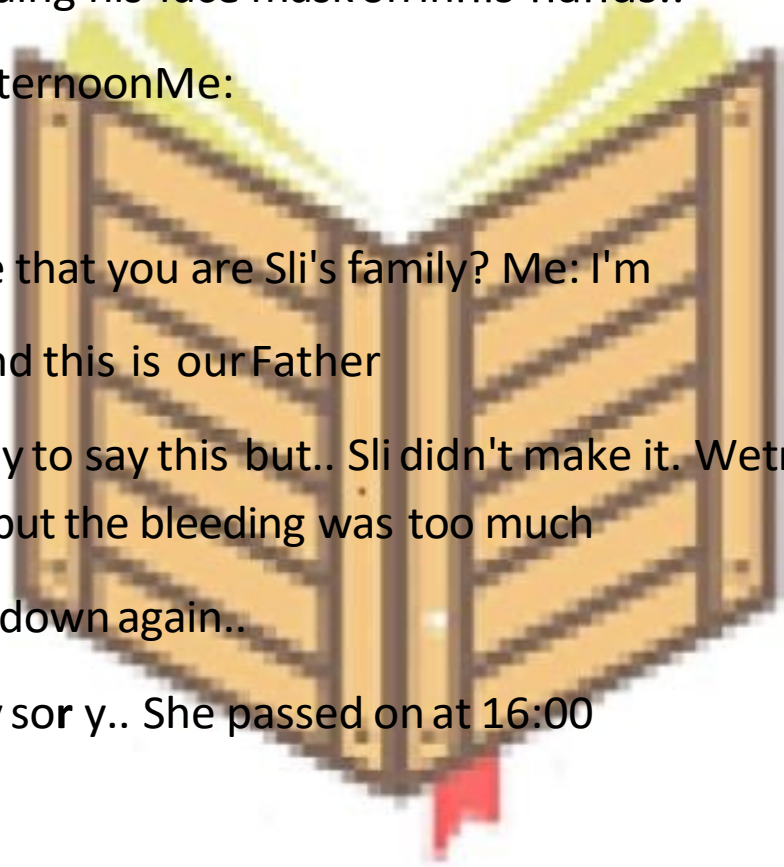
.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:52]

NOVELSGURU.COM

: "The Pendant necklace"



NONGCEBO

They allowed us to see her in the theater room before they take her to the mortuary. She was laying there peacefully, with her eyes closed as if like she was going to wake up anytime. She had a scar on her face and they also showed us the wound on her tummy that brought about her untimely death. It hurt, it hurt deeply. Sli was a sweetheart, she troubled no one. Why would they do this to her?

Why would they choose to kill her in such a brutal manner. My Father stepped out, this was too much for him. It was also too much for me. I had hopes that we were all going to be a close family for a very long time, but I guess death decided otherwise. I still can't believe that she was gone, her face was also swollen and so were her eyes. You can tell that she died in pain, Sli didn't want to die. Her soul left

too soon, I wish she could've fought. Her life was taken from her soon, she was stolen from us way too early..

SOLE

I had gone to Wilsonia's place. She wasn't there, where could she be? Her phone was still on voicemail. This was not good, Wilsonia wouldn't just up and leave. Leave Nathan stranded without even calling me and letting me know. I know things weren't picture perfect between us, but when it comes to Nathan's well-being she wouldn't play like this. Something was definitely not right.. I took Nathan's things and took him to my place, he will be staying with me until Wilsonia shows up from wherever she is.. I looked at him..

Me: Do you want us to go get something to eat? He nodded..

Nath: Where is Mommy?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Mommy is not around she went to visit a friend, she will be back soon okay?

He nodded..

Me: Let's go get something to eat then you can come back and play your games

Nath: Okay

SANDISIWE

My Aunt was yelling at Kelo about what he did. I also found it inappropriate and disrespectful what he did. He had no business putting Nongcebo's dirty laundry in public, he dirtied her name in an unforgivable way..

Aunt: What is wrong with you? How can you do that? I did not raise you like this!

Kelo: You also failed Nongcebo! Nongcebo came to you, you should've been an adult about this and showed her the right way, not this nonsense that you condoning

Aunt: Nongcebo is old, she's not a child. If she wants to go back to him then it's her choice, we can't force her to leave him!

Kelo: She was still traumatized, she wasn't thinking straight Ma. You've been through this, she thinks that it's love. You know how women are, you should've shown her the right way

Aunt: Lalela la! It's her life. She can choose to be with anyone she wants to be with and there's nothing anyone can do about it

Kelo: Ohw I see.. You taking this lying down because Kelso is your favorite now. You are okay with this even though you know it's wrong because it's your Son! You abandoned him! No amount of support will change that. Kelso is a grown man, he was influenced by his father and the life he's living is the only life he knows. The next thing you will be defending him, being his lawyer and try to get him off the hook knowing very well that he's rotten to the core. You also rotten to the core
My Aunt slapped him across the face..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Aunt: You will never talk to me like that. I am your Mother! I demand respect!

Kelo walked away, I rolled my eyes..Aunt:

Whats wrong with him?

Me: Kelo is Kelo Aunty, let him be

Aunt: He's old now to be this disrespectful! Hai maan he has to change. Something has to give!

KELSO

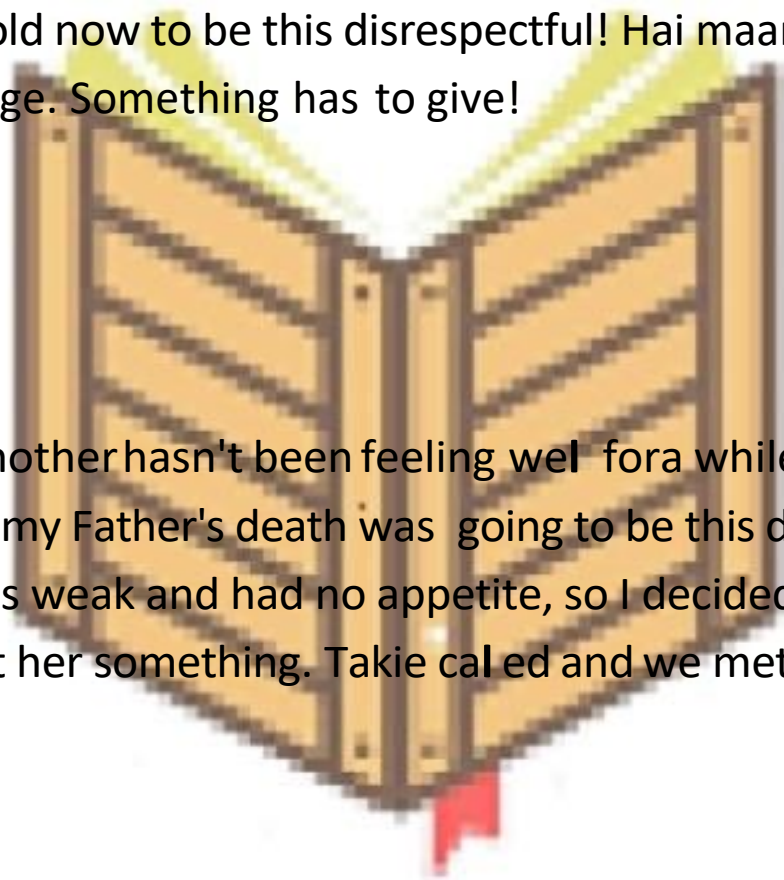
My Grandmother hasn't been feeling well for a while now. I didn't think my Father's death was going to be this difficult for her. She was weak and had no appetite, so I decided to drive to Clicks to get her something. Takie called and we met at the mall

..

Takie: Dwa!

Me: Dwa Ngamabomu

Takie: Uthini Dwa? (How are you)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ang'rasi wena? (I'm not saying anything) Takie: I'm good

Me: I'm going to clicks to get some meds for my Grandmother

Takie: Whats wrong with her?

Me: She is not feeling wel , since my father passed on she hasn't been wel

Takie: It must be difficult for her Me: It truly is

Takie: She wil be fine as time goes on

Me: I also have to check on Nongcebo, she posted that her Sister is no more

Takie: Losing a loved one is not easy, I hope she gets through this

Me: Yeah me too

ANDRE MARTINEZ **NOVELSGURU.COM**

I looked at their pictures..

Me: I find it very difficult that these boys can access my vault

Aldo: Apparently this one Sole

He moved his picture and brought it forward.

Aldo: Sole is said to be very smart, I believe that a vault is child's play to him

Me: What do we know about them?

Aldo: Sole has a pregnant girlfriend, This one Kelso. His Grandmother, his Niece, and his wife mean a lot to him. Then Scorpion unfortunately his sister passed on today, and his other sister is Kelso's wife he also has a girlfriend who is a Nurse

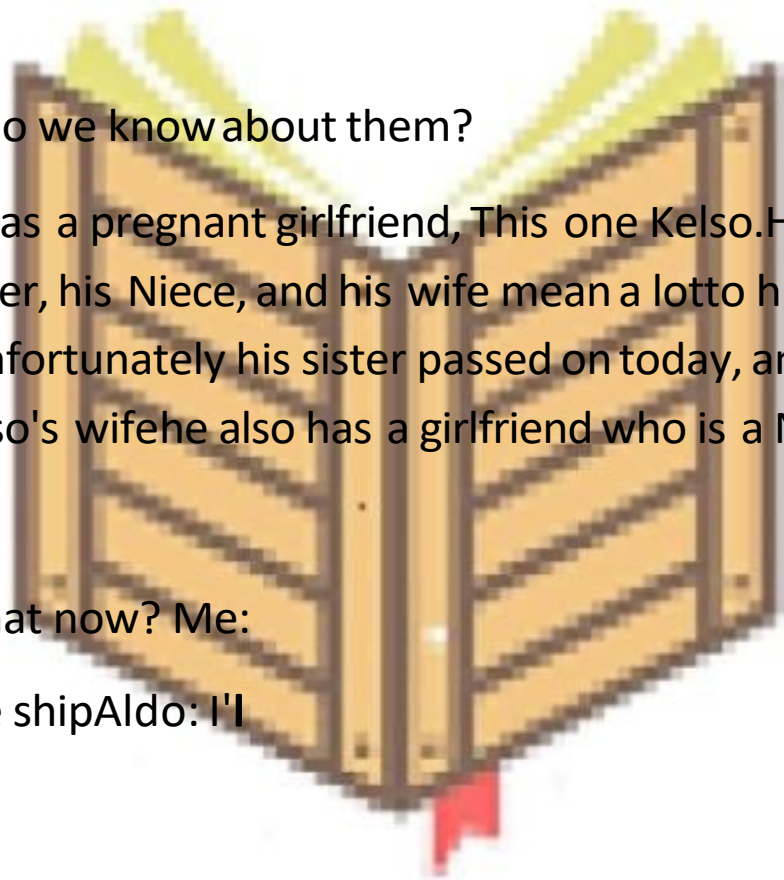
I nodded..

Aldo: So what now? Me:

Prepare the ship Aldo: I'll

do that

I picked up Kelso's picture..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How old is Grandmother? Aldo:

In her late 70s

Me: She has lived her life Aldo:

True that

Me: Let's visit Grandmother first Aldo:

I'll do that Sir

SIPHOSETHU

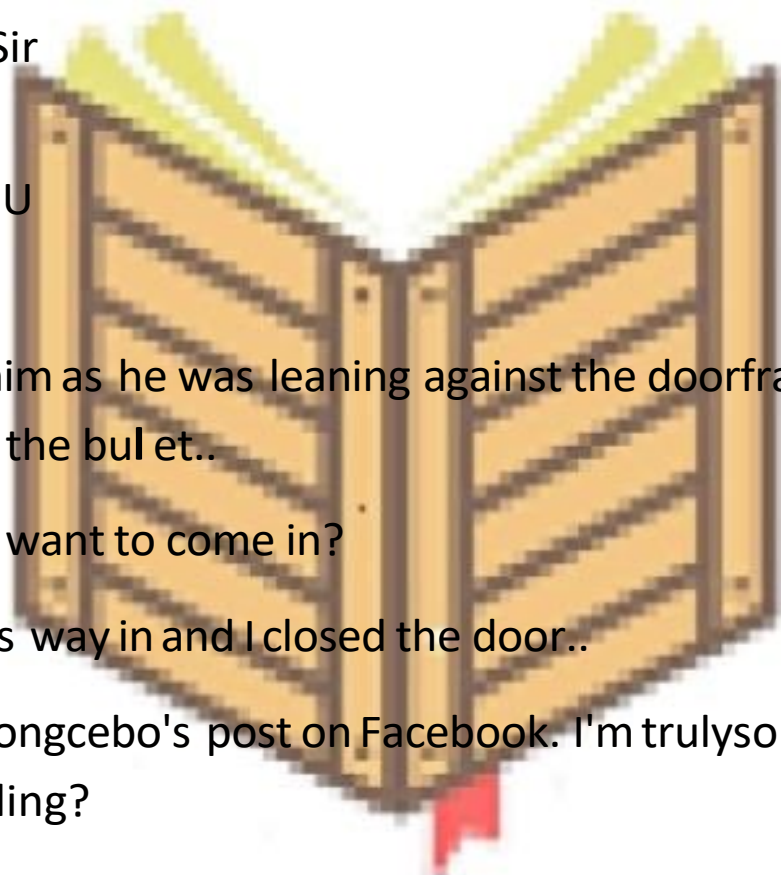
I looked at him as he was leaning against the doorframe. He played with the bullet..

Me: Do you want to come in?

He made his way in and I closed the door..

Me: I saw Nongcebo's post on Facebook. I'm truly sorry.. How are you feeling?

Lindo: I don't know how I'm feeling, I am numb. I am very numb, feels like this is a bad dream that I am going to wake up from. Sli can't die just like that.



She troubled no one, she was always smiling. She was friendly and she loved people, she can't die!

This is wrong

Me: I'm sorry my love, I don't know what to say. You were always talking about her

Lindo: She can't die, it's wrong.. It's very wrong!! I walked up to him and hugged him..

Me: I'm sorry.. I'm truly sorry

KEN

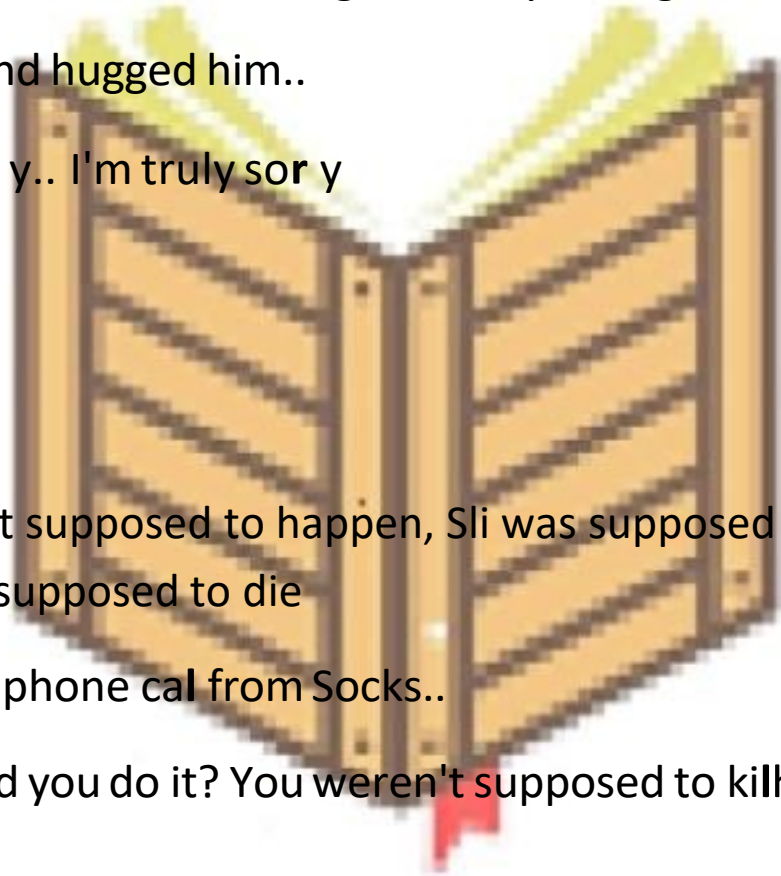
This was not supposed to happen, Sli was supposed to live. She wasn't supposed to die

I received a phone call from Socks..

Me: How did you do it? You weren't supposed to kill her dammit!

Socks: I didn't know she was going to die Me: You

weren't supposed to kill her!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Socks: I did exactly what you asked me to do, injure the Governor's Daughter to stay for a long time in jail remember?

Me: I said injure her! I didn't say kill her! How deep did you lodge the knife?

Socks: I don't remember

Me: Dammit Socks! Not only are you going to be charged with murder the Governor is going to serve your head in a silver platter, our plan of selling coke inside is slowly going down the drain

Socks: The 28s are going to show me flames, yes Sli wasn't supposed to die. I broke the biggest code! And you seriously worried about Coke right now?

I sighed..

Me: Who is the current general?

Socks: I don't know yet but word will be out, I'm suspecting Shadow

Me: Shadow won't compromise his freedom. He has a family now

NOVELSGURU.COM

Socks: Then I don't know.. Look I have to go

Me: Cool.. We wil speak again soon

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:52] : "The Pendant necklace"

123

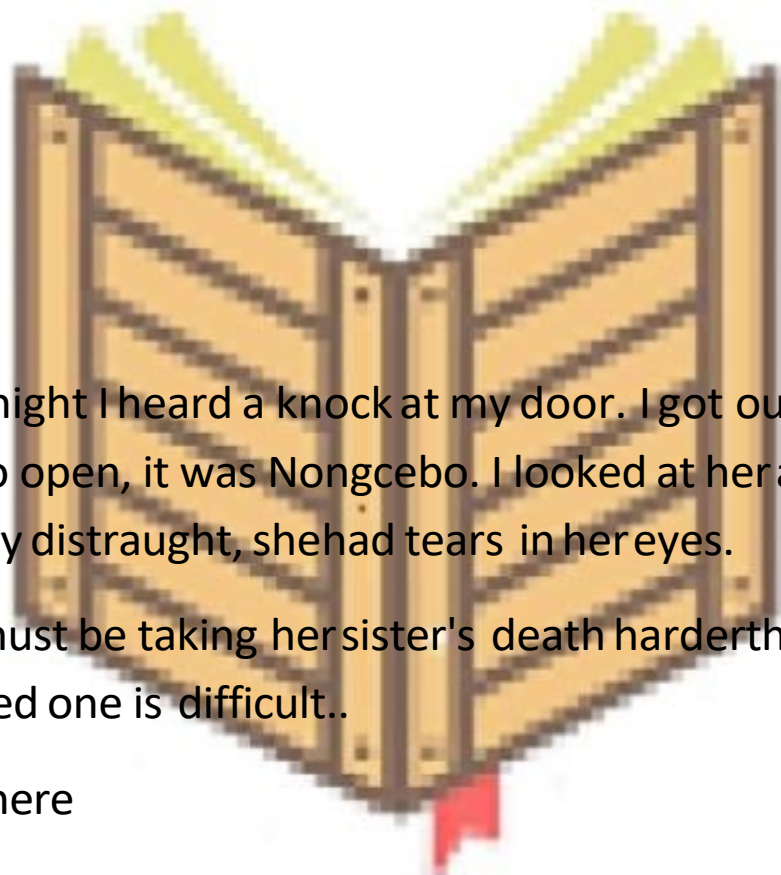
KELSO

Later on at night I heard a knock at my door. I got out of bed and went to open, it was Nongcebo. I looked at her and she seemed very distraught, she had tears in her eyes.

She really must be taking her sister's death harder than I thought, losing a loved one is difficult..

Me: Come here

She walked in and I hugged her, she dropped her bag on the floor and cried in my arms. I've never



NOVELSGURU.COM

seen her this emotional..

Ngcebo: It's Sli (crying) Me: I'm

so sorry

SANDISIWE

I gave her a glass of water and an aspirin for a headache..

Aunt: Thank you

Kelo is troublesome no lie, but for my Aunt to cry like this until she gets hiccups. Something was definitely not right. I sat next to her..

Me: You shouldn't let Kelo get to you, you know how she is like

(Silence)

Aunt: Your Uncle and I, we getting a divorce Me:

What?

Aunt: Why haven't you asked yourself about his

NOVELSGURU.COM



disappearances? He's hardly at home

Me: I thought both your jobs were demanding Aunt: They are but this is too much. He has been having an affair and I've tried to downplay it, now he wants a divorce because his mistress is said to be pregnant. Our marriage has been over for a while now, we were just downplaying it for the kids

Me: I am so sorry. You and Uncle seemed like the "It" couple

Aunt: Not everything is at it seems Me:

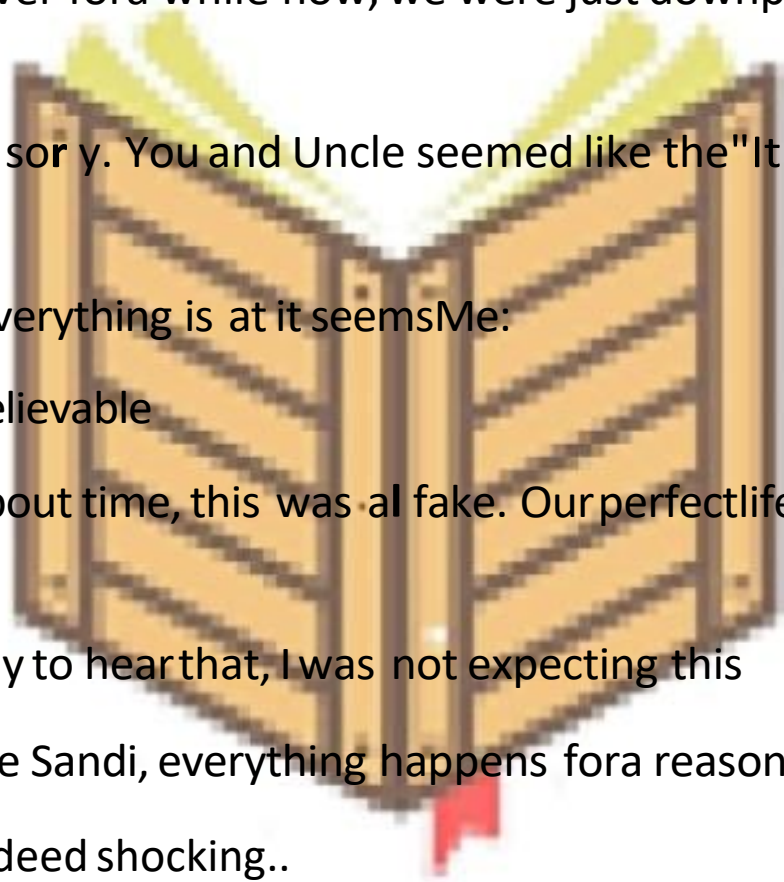
This is unbelievable

Aunt: It's about time, this was all fake. Our perfect life was very fake

Me: I'm sorry to hear that, I was not expecting this

Aunt: It's life Sandi, everything happens for a reason I guess

This was indeed shocking..



NOVELSGURU.COM

SIPHOSETHU

He was behind me, buried deep inside my coochie with a firm grip around my breast.

His warm breath hitting against my neck, his body very much squeezed to mine.. I had no doubt in my mind that Lindo was now using sex to make himself feel a bit better, using sex to take out his Frustrations. This was our second round, and I didn't mind. I enjoy having sex with him, especially rough sex. Not that kind that will put you off, not that kind that will make you hate sex. He wasn't doing anything against my will, we were sharing this moment together. I lifted my leg up a bit, and his hand traced my clit. I moved mine down too and located his balls. I massaged them, gently played around with them and he rubbed my clit vigorously.

At first it was a bit uncomfortable, but as he carried on. It started to be very very nice.

I closed my eyes and bit my lower lip.

I was enjoying him to the highest satisfaction, I didn't want him to stop. I don't think he wanted to

stop too...

NONGCEBO

I laid down on his chest, he played with my hair. My leg was across him, his other hand was going round in circles on my butt..

Me: I have known Sli fora very short time, but it's like I've known her forever. She had that motherly love, she was so warm. Hersmile made everythingokay, she was loving and started trouble with no one. She was the best

Kelso: I'm very sor y. You just found your familyand already you lost one of them

Me: It was not supposed to be this way

Kelso: Everything happens fora reason, you wilnever forget but it wil get easier with time

I raised my head up a bit and looked at him..

Me: I'm sor y I shouldn't have came here to trouble

you like this

Kelso: No it's okay.. Don't even mention it

I looked at him for a while, then I leaned closer and kissed him..

Kelso: I don't think this is a good idea, not when you like this

Me: I just want to make the pain better, I don't want to think about her

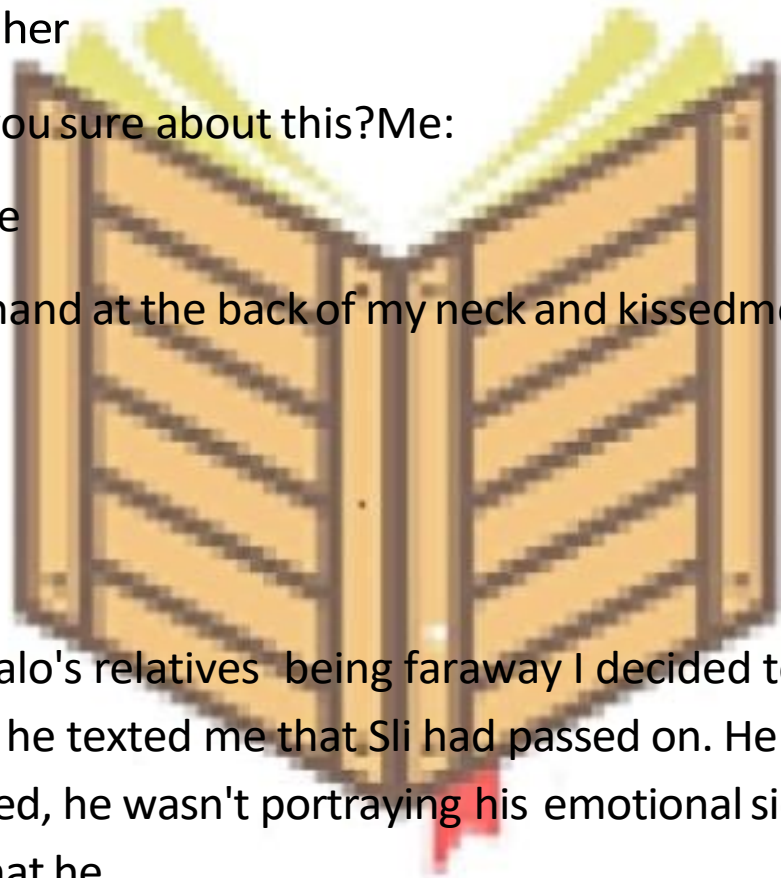
Kelso: Are you sure about this? Me:

I'm very sure

He put his hand at the back of my neck and kissed me..

RACHEL

With Khumalo's relatives being far away I decided to go to his house after he texted me that Sli had passed on. He was alone and Frustrated, he wasn't portraying his emotional side but I could see that he



NOVELSGURU.COM

was breaking. He was crying from deep within and too proud to show his emotions. I tried to make him a cup of tea, he didn't drink. He stayed in study and was going through his Daughter's pictures over a bottle of whiskey...

Banza showed up, he found me washing dishes..Banza: Ma

Me: Boy

Banza: How is everything? And how is everyone?

Me: Nongcebo is not around, Khumalo is in his study

He walked in and took off his hat..Banza:

How are they taking it?

Me: Not so well.. Sli didn't wanna go, she died painfully I can feel her heavy presence around her but I won't tell them it'll only make them more emotional. She will reunite with her family especially her Mother after her burial, for now her soul is roaming around here in this house and it's getting more harder with her family this broken. They

will prevent her from moving on, they have to let her go so she can rest in peace

Banza: This is sad, I can't imagine what they are going through

Me: It's very sad, it's heartbreaking
Banza: Do you need help with anything?

Me: I don't want to prepare the mattress and everything until their relatives get here, I don't want to be stepping on anyone's toes

Banza: I understand

Me: I'll probably spend a night here, I'll leave when they arrive

Banza: I think that's a good idea, I'll call Nongcebo and see how she is holding up

Me: Please do, Nongcebo has been through a lot. She shouldn't be alone at this moment

Banza: I'm on it

ANDRE MARTINEZ NOVELSGURU.COM

I heard a knock at the door, it was my wife..She walked in..

Sandy: I thought you weren't aroundMe: I took a day off

Sandy: Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is okay Señora MartinezShe looked at me..

Sandy: I don't like it when you like this, it means something is wrong

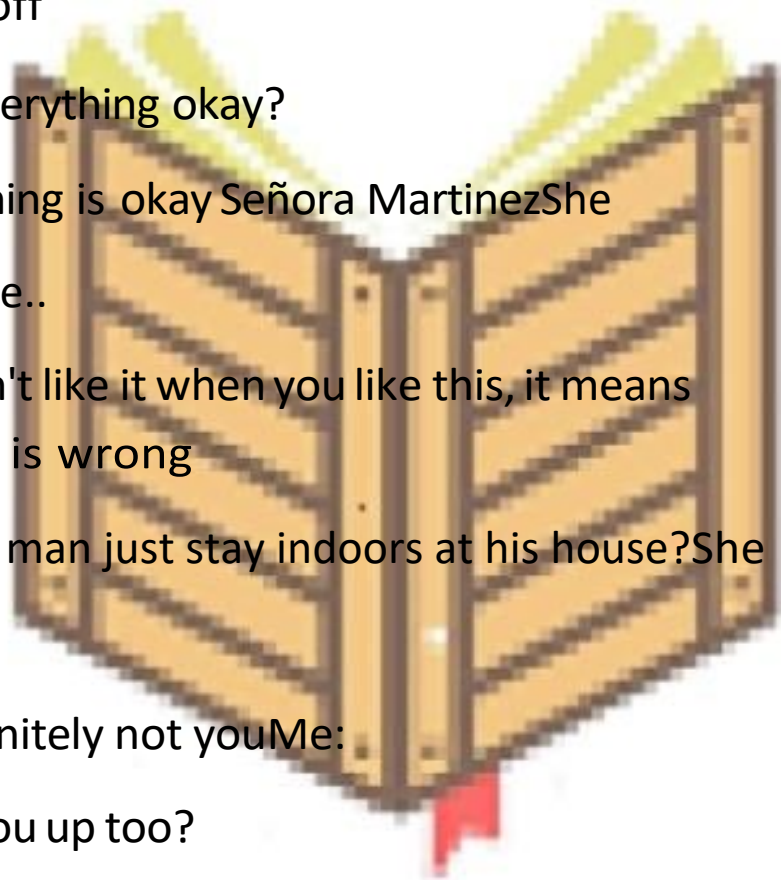
Me: Can't a man just stay indoors at his house?She smiled..

Sandy: Definitely not youMe:

What are you up too?

Sandy: Remember what I said to you?I looked at her..

Sandy: I said if you hurt anyone I'm going to leave



NOVELSGURU.COM

you, and I meant it. The major reason why we don't have kids today it's because of who you are and what you do

Me: I understand very well and I promise you that I haven't hurt anyone

Sandy: Why don't I believe you?

I got up from my chair and walked up to her. Me:

When did I ever lie to you?

Sandy: Aldo was here Me:

Aldo is always here

Sandy: I hope you boys are playing good

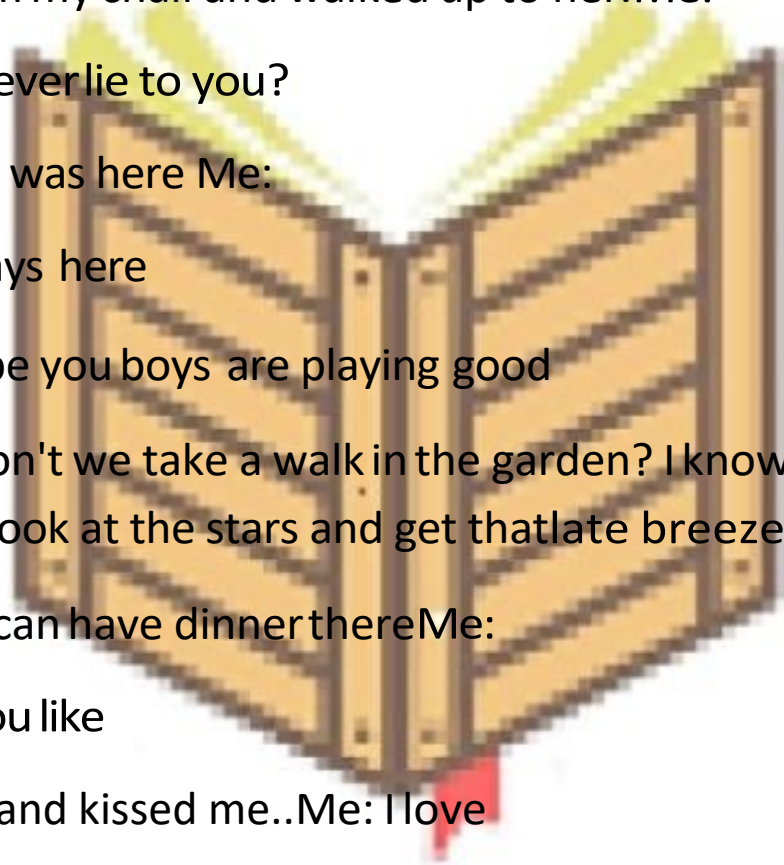
Me: Why don't we take a walk in the garden? I know how much you like to look at the stars and get that late breeze

Sandy: We can have dinner there Me:

Anything you like

She smiled and kissed me.. Me: I love

you so much



Sandy: I love you too

NONGCEBO

The moment and the timing was not good, but the sex felt good. I even forgot about my messed up body, the scars and how unappealing it was. My mind was set on this moment, I wanted to be rid of this pain. I wanted it to go away, and this seemed like the only way I could deal with what I was feeling deep inside..

He held my waist and helped me go up and down on him, my bra was still on..

I increased the pace, his d** felt so damn good deep inside of me. I was enjoying every part of it, and I was extremely wet.. I leaned over and placed my hands on his chest, my long nails digging deeper into his skin. How he bit his lower lip and revealed his dimples, which drove me more crazy. He moved his hands down to my butt and squeezed it. I placed my head on his shoulder and fought back tears, the

NOVELSGURU.COM

sex was good but the pain was still there..

SIPHOSETHU

I looked at myself in the mirror, I had visible love bites on my neck. All the way down to my breasts. I am light skinned, so they appeared red, as if like something had bit me

I had just taken a shower, and he was passed out. He needed to rest, maybe he will wake up feeling slightly better...

SANDISIWE

I was on a video call with Sole... Me: You still haven't found her?

Sole: Not at all.. Tomorrow I'll wake up and report her missing. My PI is trying to trace her phone

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm starting to get a bit scared

Sole: I don't think she up and left, I think something happened. Something bad

Me: I think so too

yawned..

Sole: Let me not keep you

Me: Okay say hello to Nathan for me

Sole: I'll do that.. Get some rest

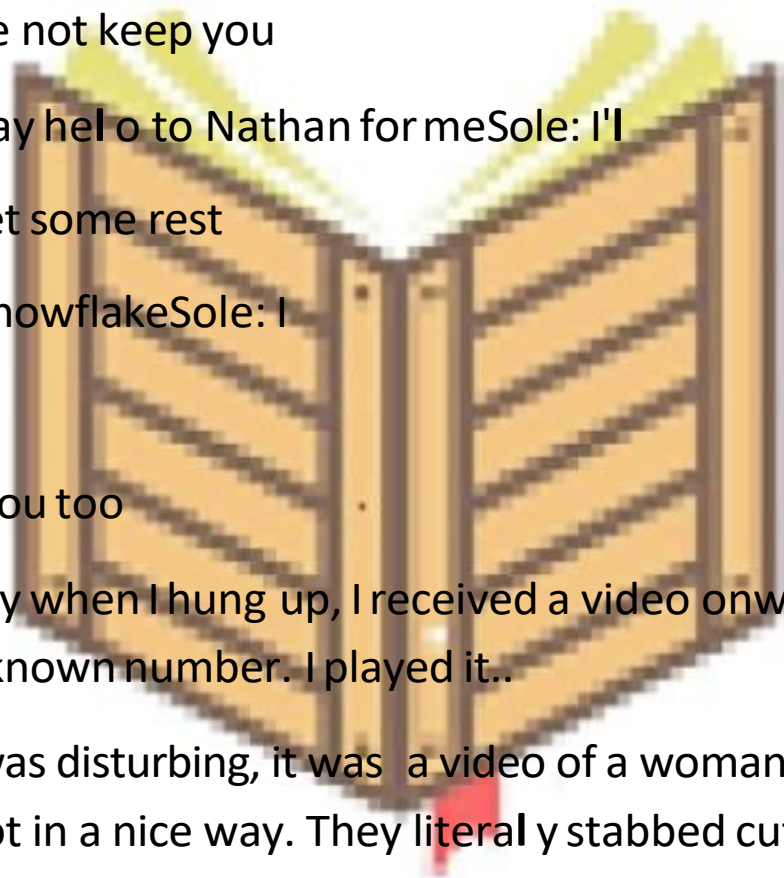
Me: Okay Snowflake

Sole: I love you

Me: I love you too

Immediately when I hung up, I received a video on whatsapp from an unknown number. I played it..

The video was disturbing, it was a video of a woman giving birth but not in a nice way. They literally stabbed cut off her tummy and took out the baby, she was screaming and bleeding. It seemed like a clip from a horror movie, very very disturbing..When the video ended, I read the message:



"Tel him to give back my necklace or this will happen to you"

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:53] : 124

NONGCEBO

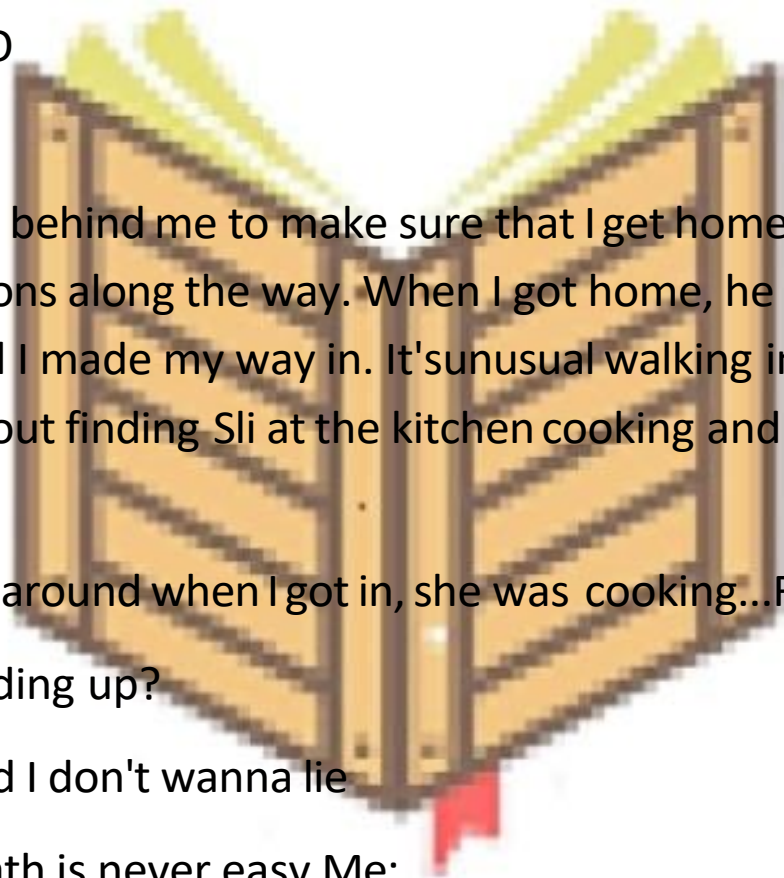
Kelso drove behind me to make sure that I get home safe with no distractions along the way. When I got home, he bid me farewell and I made my way in. It's unusual walking into the house without finding Sli at the kitchen cooking and being her sweet self

Rachel was around when I got in, she was cooking... Rachel: How are you holding up?

Me: It's hard I don't wanna lie

Rachel: Death is never easy Me:

That's true, where is Dad?



Rachel: Your father is in his study Me:

How is he holding up?

Rachel: It's still hard for him too

Me: I can imagine.. Do you need help with anything? Rachel: I

am good, I think you should rest a bit

Me: Thank you

I made my way to my bedroom..

SANDISIWE

I sent Sole that video, he didn't waste time. He came right away with Nathan. We tried to call the number but it was unavailable, if this is a prank then it's not that funny..

Me: This person has a weird sense of humor

Sole: This is not a prank, this person means business

Me: Who could that be? I have never pissed off



someone to this level

Sole: I'll look into it, right now I need you to be safe. Stay indoors

Me: Tomorrow morning I have a Doctor's appointment, Takie is taking me

Sole: I'll take you

Me: You still have to find Wilsonia, I will be fine. You know which route I take, and you know my Doctor.

You can call me every 5 min

Sole: Are you sure?

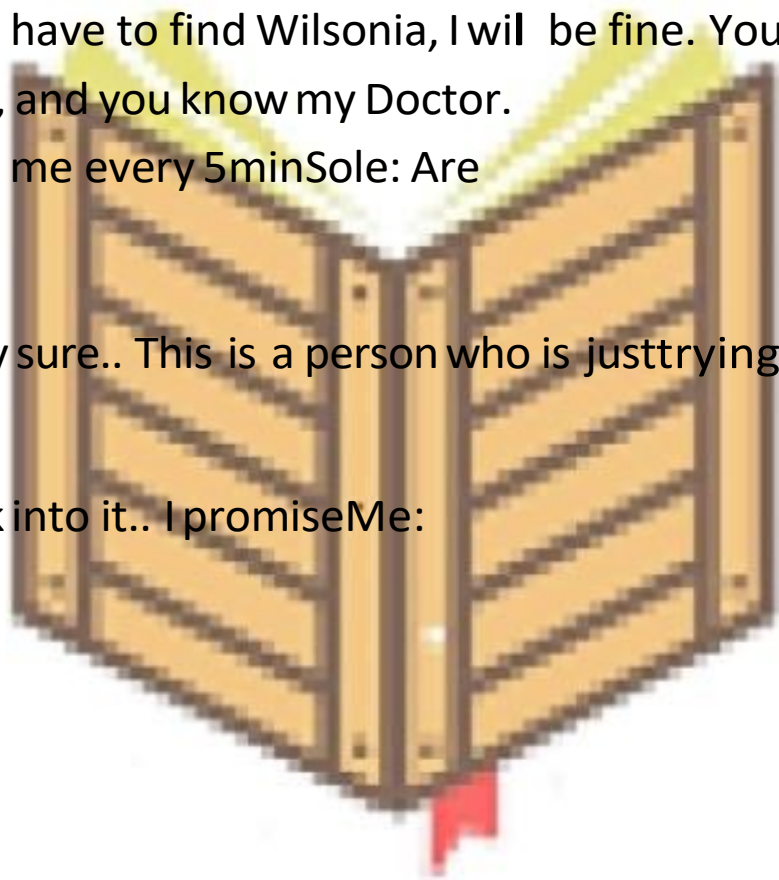
Me: I'm very sure.. This is a person who is just trying to be funny

Sole: I'll look into it.. I promise

Me: Okay

KELSO

When I arrived home from accompanying



Nongcebo, my Grandmother had an unusual visitor. They were even drinking tea in the lounge..

Grams: Ohw KelsoMe:

Who is this?

Grams: He said he's your friend, you two went to school together

I looked at him..

Him: You don't remember me? My name is Aldo

He looked a bit older to have went to school with me..

Aldo: Your Grandmother is a very amazing woman, you are blessed. I wish my Grandmother was still alive, Grandparents are wonderful. We should always cherish them because they can die sooner than we expect then all we going to have left are memories

Grams: That's very true, we should always be cherished and thank God for the little time that we have. I know that I'll be dying soon

Me: Don't talk like that Grandma

Aldo: It was lovely meeting you
Grandma Grams: It was lovely meeting you too

Aldo: Thank you for the tea, it's late I should get going

Grams: Thank you for stopping by, such a lovely young man

He stood up then we walked outside..Me:

Who the hell are you?

He looked at me..

Aldo: Where is the Necklace?Me:

What Necklace?

Aldo: The one you and your friends stole from Martinez

Me: I don't know what you talking aboutAldo:

Don't gamble with Grandma's life

I grabbed him by his t-shirt and pinned him against the wall ..

Me: Stay away from my family, you don't know me

NOVELSGURU.COM

that we'll to come here

Aldo: If I were to get a R1000 foreverly threat made my way, I'd be the richest Motherfucker on earth..

Get your hands off me

I got my hands off him..

Aldo: Return the necklace then we can forget about this visit

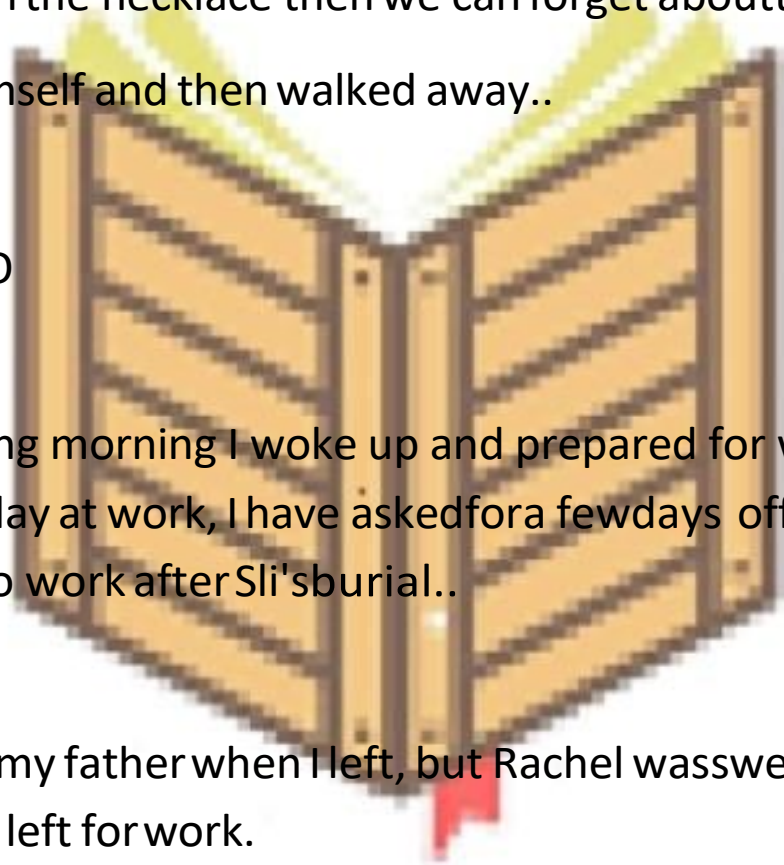
He fixed himself and then walked away..

NONGCEBO

The following morning I woke up and prepared for work. This will be my last day at work, I have asked for a few days off. I'll be returning to work after Sli's burial..

I didn't see my father when I left, but Rachel was sweeping the yard when I left for work.

I hardly slept last night, I kept on thinking about Sli.



NOVELSGURU.COM

She kept on playing in my mind over and over like a movie, it was hard to accept that she was gone..

I stopped at the garage to get myself a chocolate and an energy drink, it's going to be a long day for me. I was extremely tired no lie...

SIPHOSETHU

Lindo left last night. I wanted him to spend a night here because he was in a very bad state, but he told me that he needed to take a drive and clear his head a little. I let him be..

I was preparing for work when I heard a knock at the door..

Me: I'm coming

I was already dressed and was about to make myself something to eat. I walked to the door and

NOVELSGURU.COM

opened, A black man wearing a maintenance uniform was at my doorstep.

Him: Good morning Mam'Me:

Morning

Him: My name is Sive, I do maintenance around here

Me: Ohw.. They didn't give us any notices that maintenance will be done

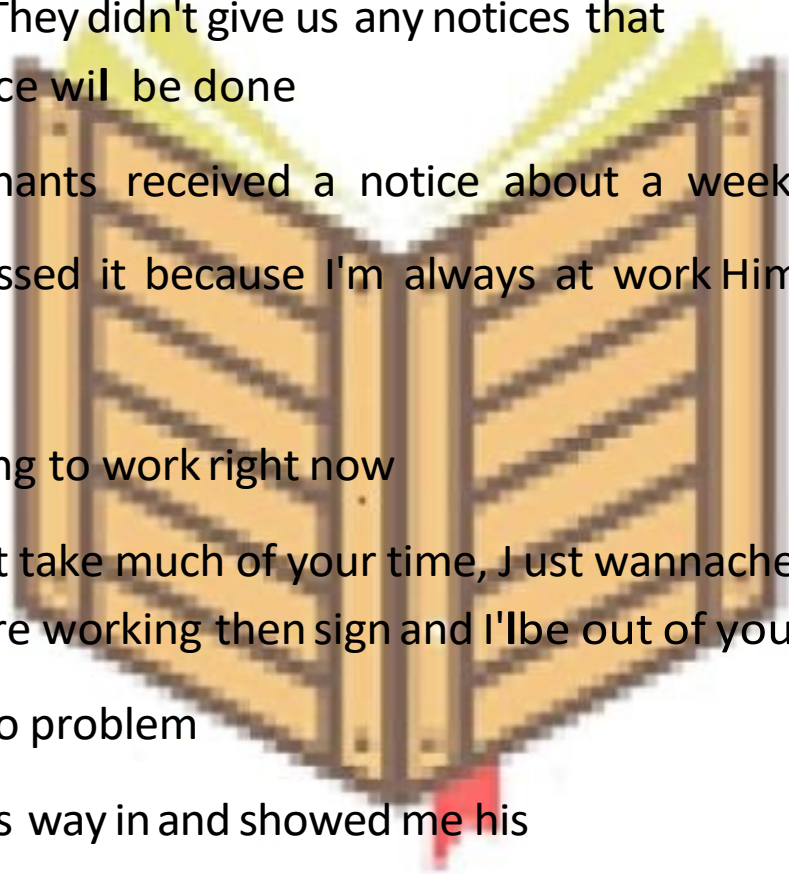
Him: All tenants received a notice about a week ago Me: I must've missed it because I'm always at work Him: It seems that way

Me: I'm going to work right now

Him: I won't take much of your time, Just want to check if all your taps are working then sign and I'll be out of your hair

Me: Okay no problem

He made his way in and showed me his identification..



Him: I'll start in the bathroom
Me: No problem

SANDISIWE

I texted Sole in the car whilst Takie was driving, he was very worried about me..

Takie: But who would send such a video? People are mentally disturbed

Me: I'm telling you

As we were driving we saw a cop car, it pulled us over..

Takie: What the hell? Me:

What is this now? Takie pulled over..

Takie: What did we do? Me: I

have no idea

Sole called, I ignored his call as two officers came



NOVELSGURU.COM

to us. One was black and one was white, Takie rolled down her window. The other one came to my side..

Sole called again and I picked up..Me:

Snowflake

Sole: Are you guys halfway there?

Me: We just got pulled over by the copsSole:

Why?

Me: I don't know look I'll call you backSole:

Sandi N-

I hung up..

Officer 1: Good morning ladiesTakie:

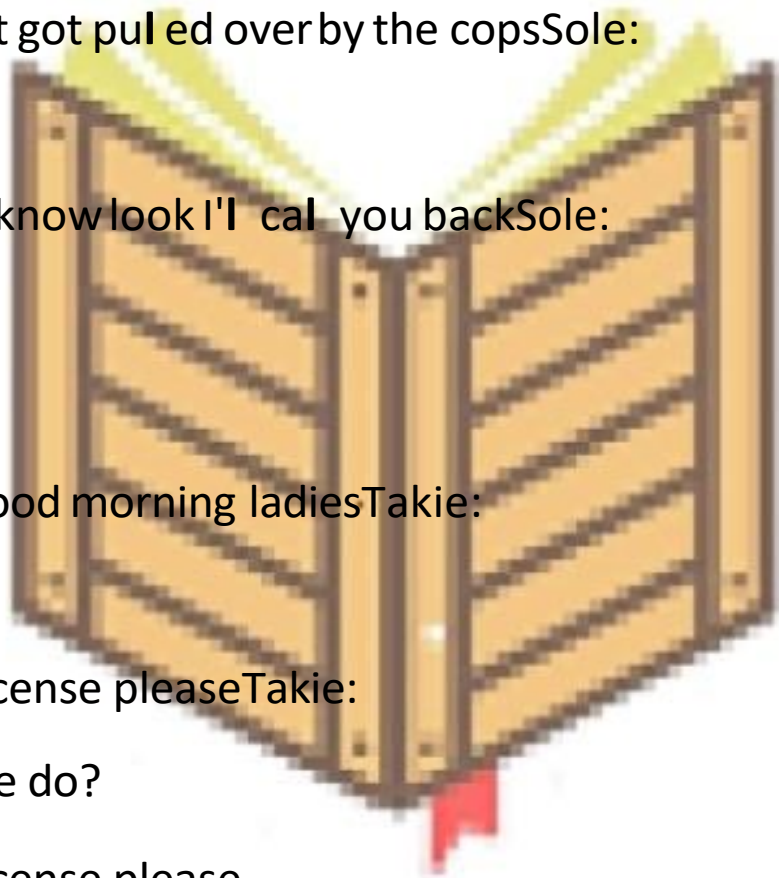
Morning

Officer 1: License pleaseTakie:

What did we do?

Officer 1: License please

Takie took it out and showed it to him..



NOVELSGURU.COM

The other officer knocked at my window and instructed me to roll down my window.. I did..

Officer 2: Good morning Me:

Morning

Officer 2: Are you Sandisiwe Gxaba? Me:

Yes.. Who wants to know?

Officer 2: I'm so sorry about this

He took out his pepperspray and sprayed me.. Me:

Ahhhhhh!!

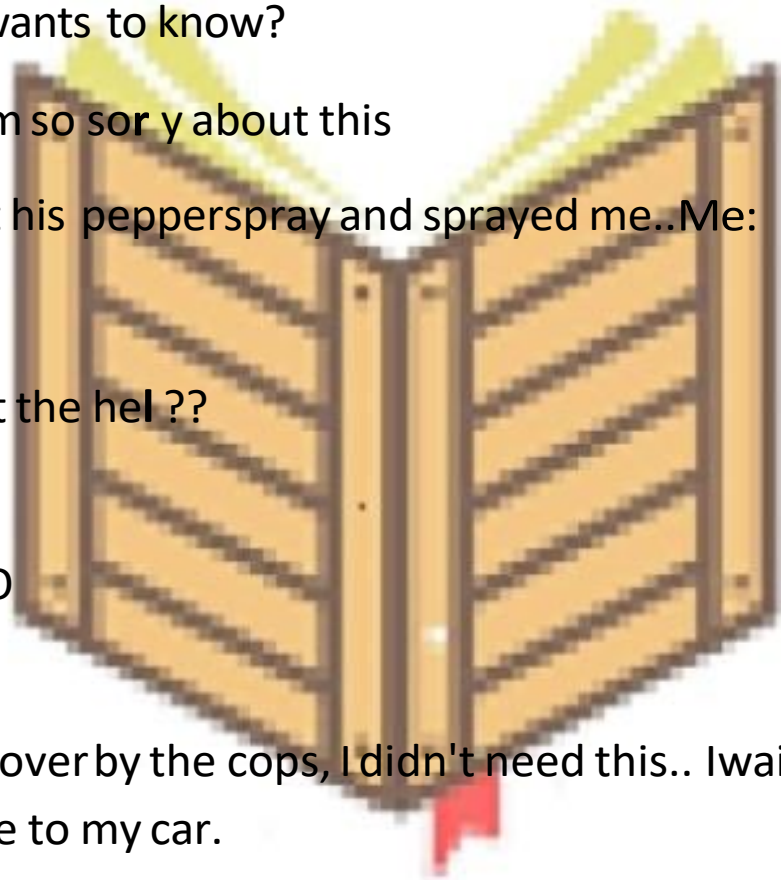
Take: What the hell??

NONGCEBO

I got pulled over by the cops, I didn't need this.. I waited for him to come to my car.

I rolled down the window.. Him:

Good morning Mam



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Good morning Him:

How are you? Me: I'm good
and you?

He was wearing glasses..Him:

License please

Me: Let me get it

I took my bag and searched through it. I found my license in
my purse and when I was about to give it to him, he
peppersprayed me..

SIPHOSETHU

This gentleman was taking forever in the bathroom, I made my
way there. I heard the water running..

Me: Sive?

The door was closed..Me:

Sive?

The water was running. I opened the door and made



NOVELSGURU.COM

my way in slowly..

The water in the shower was running. This was strange. I walked to turn the tap off when I heard the door closing. I turned and he grabbed me, within a matter of seconds he had a cloth around my mouth and nose, whilst holding me tight..

To be continued

[08/24, 13:53] : "THE KIDNAP"

125

SCORPION

Siposethu's house was a crime scene of some sort. I actually stopped by here an hour ago, when I received a call from her sister telling me that Sethu was missing. I was surprised that she gave her sister my number as someone her family should

NOVELSGURU.COM

cal should something happen to her. If it wasn't for that note left, I would've been the first suspect already.. The note read:

"Return the necklace if you want to see her again"

I had no clue about it, had no clue who was behind this..

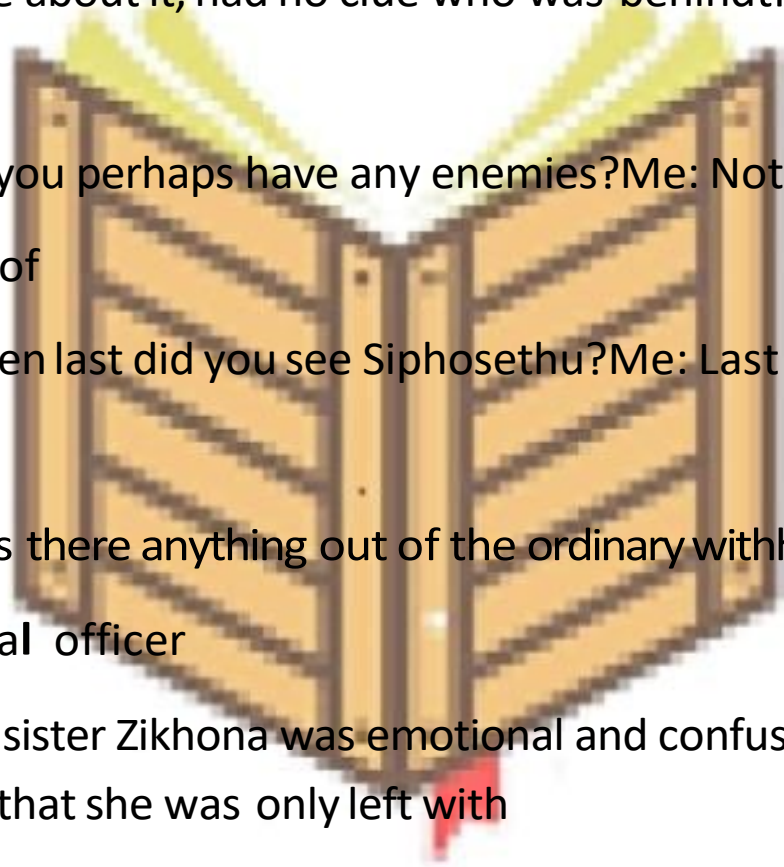
Officer: Do you perhaps have any enemies? Me: Not that I know of

Officer: When last did you see Siphosethu? Me: Last night

Officer: Was there anything out of the ordinary with her?

Me: Not at all officer

Siphosethu's sister Zikhona was emotional and confused, she mentioned that she was only left with



NOVELSGURU.COM

her. She was younger than Siposethu and still in varsity, this was taking too much from her soul...

SOLE

Takie was being questioned. Apparently she was restrained as those two officers took Sandisiwe and put her in their car. She said it was a police car, metro police so she said. She was traumatized and scared. Couldn't stop shaking. She was given a note that read:

"Bring back the necklace if you want to see them alive"

I couldn't help but think where they were, what has been done to them. She's pregnant, she doesn't need this much stress. It killed me that I couldn't wrap my head around everything, it was so bad that I got a migraine and had to dash out to the

NOVELSGURU.COM

bathroom to vomit. I don't wanna lose my baby and my girlfriend, can't lose my family over this..

KELSO

Nongcebo's car was found abandoned by the side of the road. The scene was packed already, I got here as soon as I saw the whole situation trending. I explained to the officer in charge that I was her Husband, he explained to me that a note was found. I am very sure that Aldo was behind this. It's no coincidence that he showed up at my house last night, this is not a random kidnapping. These people mean business. I texted Scorp and Sole that we should meet up and discuss this..

RACHEL

This was going to kill Khumalo, there was no point in hiding it from him, this whole situation was even

NOVELSGURU.COM

on the news. He was going to find out one way or the other..

After telling him, he sat on his chair and said nothing. He added Nongcebo's photos to Sli's photos and looked at them. He didn't want to eat or drink anything other than his whiskey

Even last night he didn't eat anything, this is going to kill him. It's going to kill him slowly.

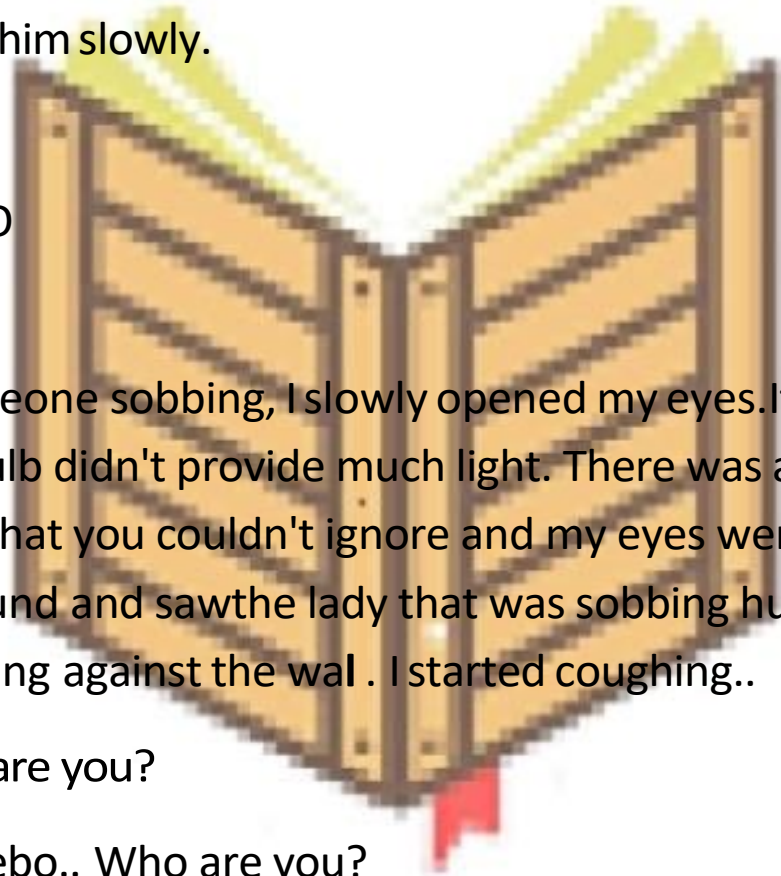
NONGCEBO

I heard someone sobbing, I slowly opened my eyes. It was very dark, the bulb didn't provide much light. There was a pungent smell, one that you couldn't ignore and my eyes were on fire. I looked around and saw the lady that was sobbing hugging her legs and sitting against the wall. I started coughing..

Lady: Who are you?

Me: Nongcebo.. Who are you?

Lady: Ohh my word! Nongcebo it's Sethu



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Sethu?

Sethu as in the Nurse? Lindo's girlfriend?

I crawled my way to her and we shared a hug Sethu:

Nongcebo what's happening?

Me: I don't know.. Where are we? We

heard someone coughing..

Me: Who is that?

We followed the sound of her coughing until we got to her. I looked at her but my vision was not that good..

Me: Who are you?

She continued coughing..

Me: My name is Nongcebo, who are you? Her:

San.. Sandi.. (Coughing)

Me: Ohh my Gosh Sandi! Are you okay? Sandi:

Where are we? What's going on? We helped her

to sit up..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sethu: Guys I am scared

Me: Everyone try to calm down

Sandi: Where are we? What's going on?Me:

Let's try to calm down

Sethu: Let's do that, we don't want anyone passing out because of an anxiety attack

There wasn't enough air to breath, what the hell is going on?

RACHEL

Banza walked in car ying the things I told him to bring. I needed to consult the elders, and pray to God to show us where the girls are. 3 girls were said to be missing according to the news. 3 notes were found, 3 notes said the same thing..

Banza: This is a mess, this is a serious mess

Me: I don't know what's going on, I don't know why this is happening to this family. Such a dark cloud

NOVELSGURU.COM

engulfing this family

Banza: We have to find the girls, Nongcebo has been through a lot she doesn't need this

Me: I know.. This is not good

Banza: I'll also contact Manto about this
Me: Thank you Son

Banza: Let me go to her
Me:

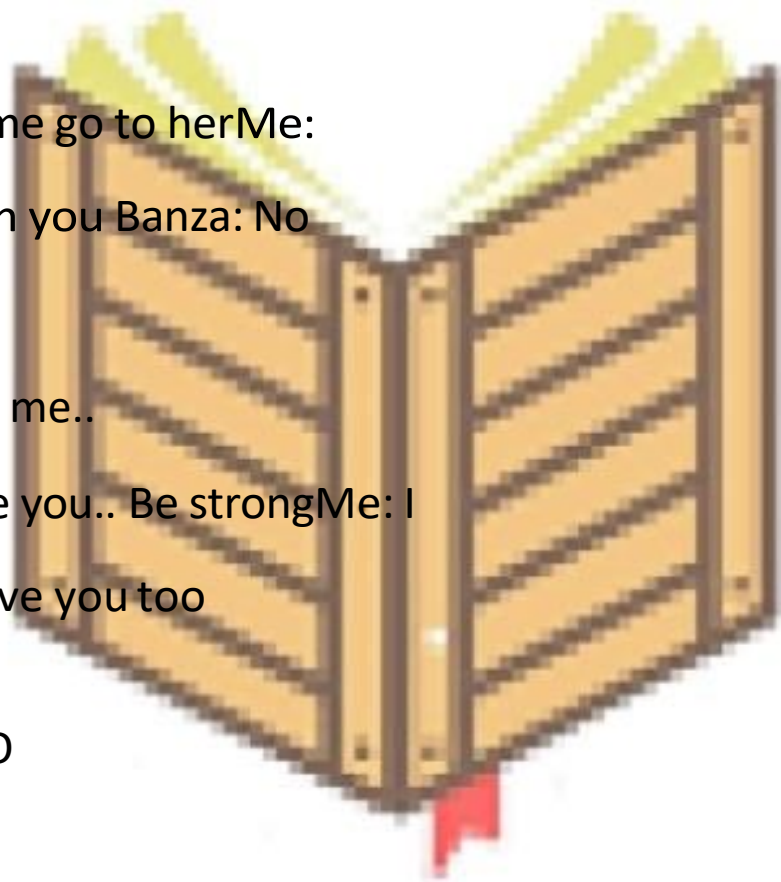
I'll hear from you
Banza: No problem

She hugged me..

Banza: I love you.. Be strong
Me: I will be.. I love you too

NONGCEBO

Sandisiwe was not holding up well, she was hyperventilating and struggling to breathe together. It was bad because she's pregnant, if this



NOVELSGURU.COM

doesn't get intercepted she was going to go into labour. Sethu was trying to calm her down.. I was at the door, banging it for dear life..

Me: Someone help us please.. Someone anyone!(yelling)

My heartbeat was slowing, I was struggling to breathe myself. I was sweating. It was too hot in here, this was not good..

Me: Please.. Someone help us (crying)

.

To be continued

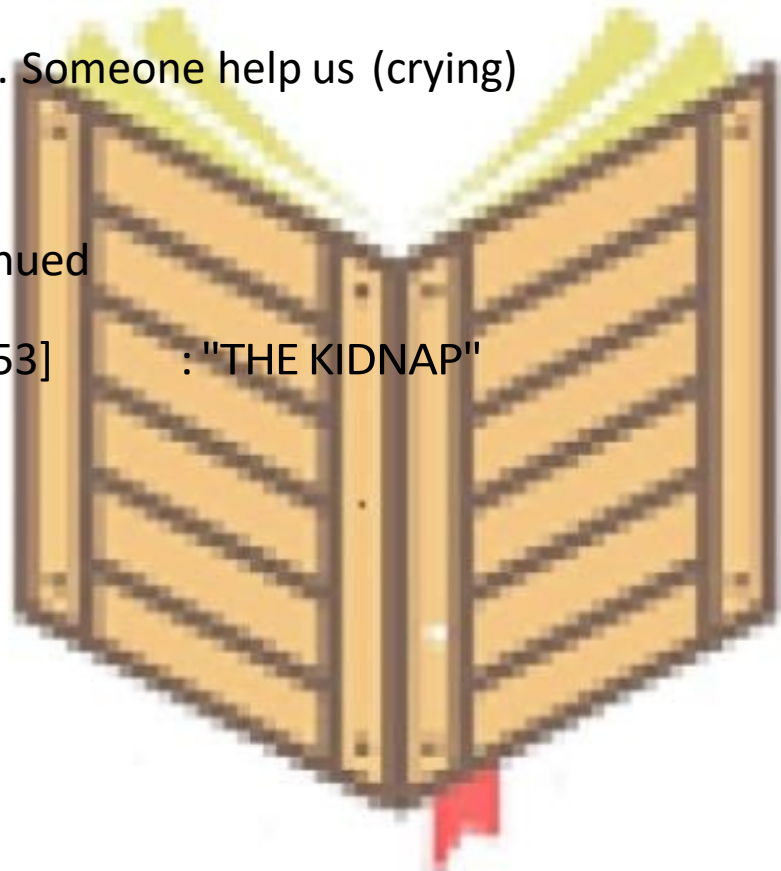
[08/24, 13:53] : "THE KIDNAP"

126

KELSO

We all went to visit Modrid in Prison, since he might

NOVELSGURU.COM



shed some light on what happened to the girls and who took them. We believe it has everything to do with Nastro, he's the one who has been threatening us..

Sole: No more games, lives are at stake here. Tell us what we need to know and tell us about the necklace because the person who kidnapped the girls think that we have their necklace

Mo: The Necklace belongs to my Brother. Nastro and Andre are and have been Rivals. The Necklace holds the key to where Nastro's Daughter is. We find the necklace, Andre will let go of the girls

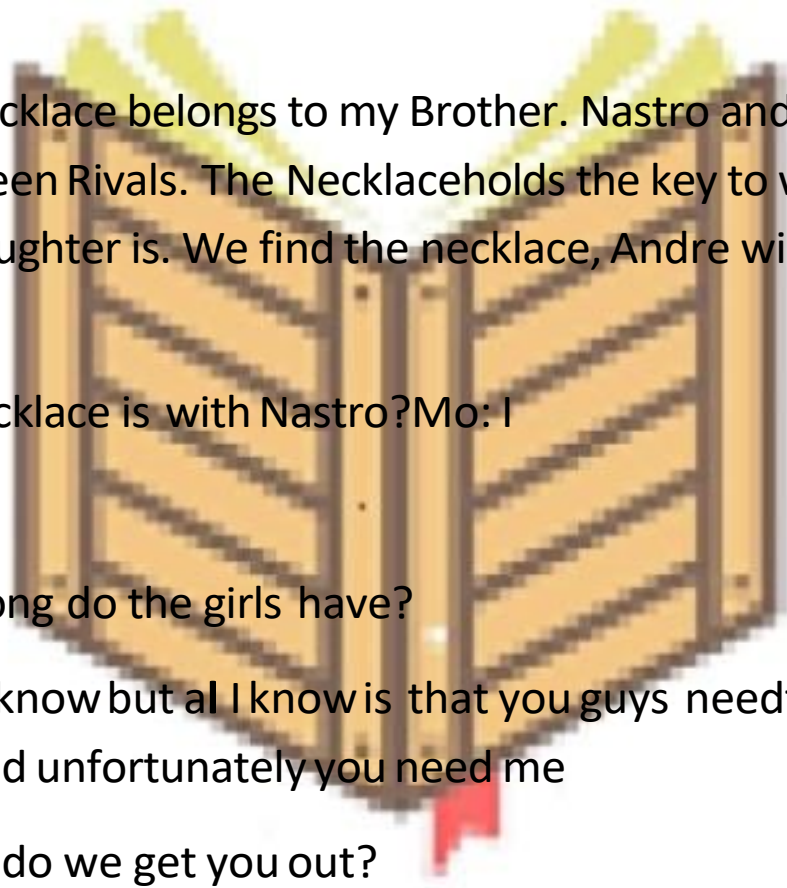
Me: The necklace is with Nastro? Mo: I believe so

Sole: How long do the girls have?

Mo: I don't know but all I know is that you guys need to find that necklace and unfortunately you need me

Scorp: How do we get you out?

Mo: The Gav is not around so it will be very simple. You find the judge that sentenced me, then you ask



him to transfer me. When I'm being transferred, in the middle of nowhere that's where we take the guards down and I escape. Then we find the necklace, then the girls are safe

Scorp: That sounds easy

Mo: Not so much. The Judge that sentenced me he's not moved by anything. He is a divorcee so there's no wife that you can blackmail him with

Me: Kids?

Mo: They overseas, it'll be hard getting to them
Sole: He must care about something

Mo: I don't know what that is, but I believe you boys can find out

Me: Give us his details

Mo: Judge MM Legae, he's a pitbul be careful

NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM

I was more worried about Sandi than I was about us. She's pregnant, stressed and she's not holding up well. Sethu has been trying to calm her down, but the environment wasn't having any mercy on us. We were close to passing out. It was hot, we couldn't breathe, and we were sweating.. We heard the door being opened, then light came in. 3 guys stood there and looked at us..

Guy1: We are going to move you into a better facility for now
He looked at the other guys..

Guy1: Where you are no one will come to your rescue, you can scream, you can try and run but..

Me: We just want Sandi to get help, she's.. She's pregnant..

Guy2: She should hold on, this is no time to be weak
Sethu: She's pregnant!

Guy2: Do I look like I care?

Guy3: We will start with her and move her into the vehicle

The other two guys got in and carried Sandi out who was close to passing out. They carried her to the black SUV with tinted windows..

The first guy looked at us..Guy1:

Let's go

Sethu and I tried to help each other get up..My legs felt weak..

Guy1: To the SUV let's go

We walked out and he closed the container. We were in a place filled with containers, in an abandoned area. I looked around and there were bushes surrounding the area..

I stopped and put my hands on my knees..Guy1:

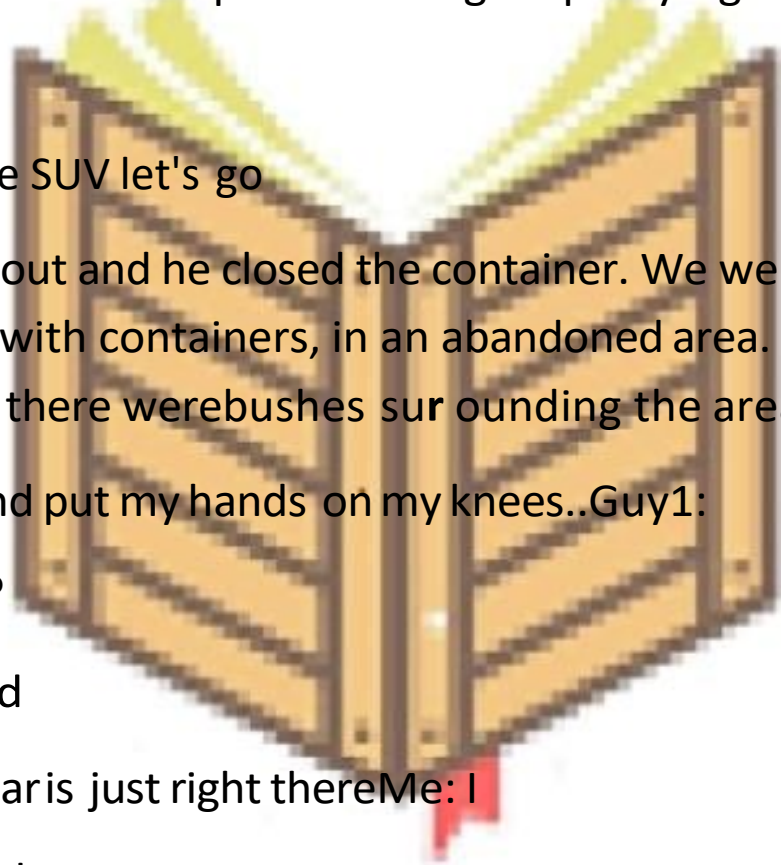
What now?

Me: I'm tired

Guy1: The car is just right there Me: I

said I'm tired

Guy1: Come on I'll help you



NOVELSGURU.COM

He grabbed my arm and I pushed him..Me:

Don't touch me!

Guy1: Then fucken walk to the car

Me: I'm not walking anywhere! Why are we even here?

Who are you? What do you want with us?

Guy1: You wasting unnecessary time

He tried grabbing my arm again and I kicked him inbetween his legs..

Guy1: Fuck! ! Sethu:

Nongcebo!

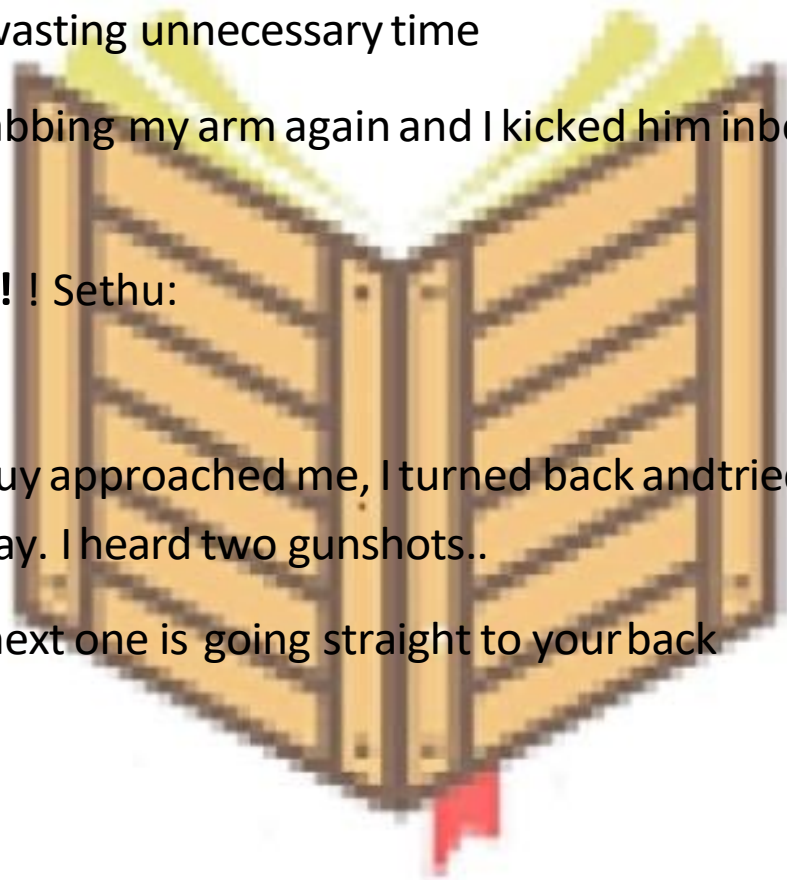
The other guy approached me, I turned back and tried running away. I heard two gunshots..

Guy2: The next one is going straight to your back

RACHEL

NOVELSGURU.COM

I called the Ambulance when I found Khumalo on the floor in his study. His breathing was very



shal ow, it looks like he has downed the whole bottle of whiskey..

I also texted Lindo before the ambulance took us..This was not good, this was not good at al ..

NONGCEBO

He threw me inside the car at the back, Sethu was checking up on Sandi..

Sethu: Really Nongcebo?

I sat down.. The injured guy got in at the back with a pack of ice cubes...

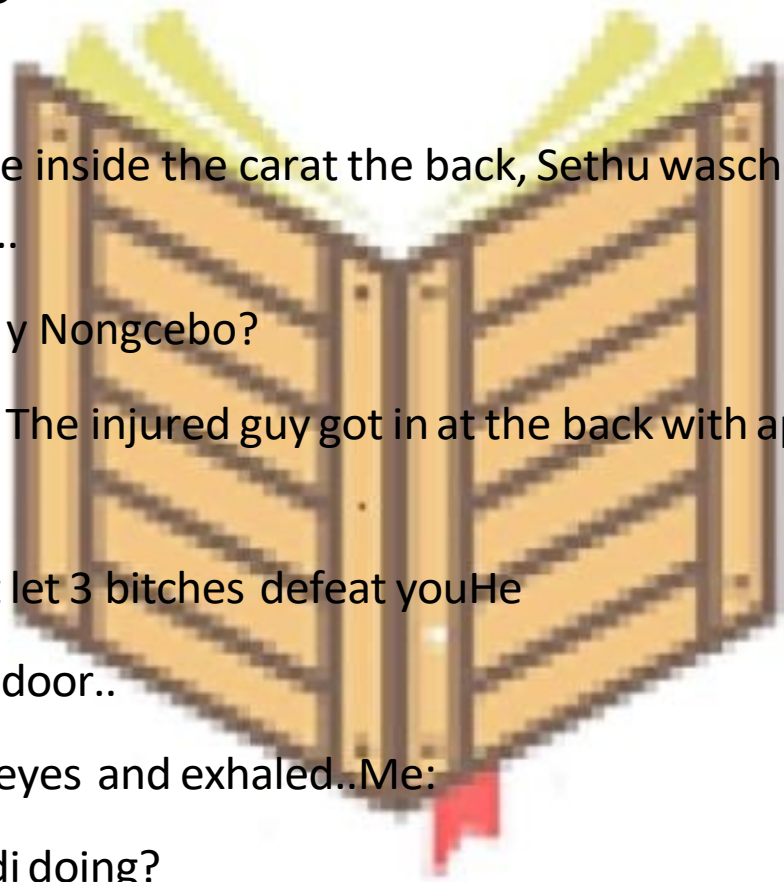
Guy2: Don't let 3 bitches defeat you He banged the door..

I closed my eyes and exhaled..Me:

How is Sandi doing?

Sethu: She's not doing well

The guy put the ice pack against his crotch and



NOVELSGURU.COM

closed his eyes, I shook my head..

The car started moving, we couldn't see anything since the windows were dark..

This wasn't good...

SOLE

Scorpion had to rush to the hospital, he got a text that his father was on his way to the hospital... I did a U-turn

Kelso: What are you doing?

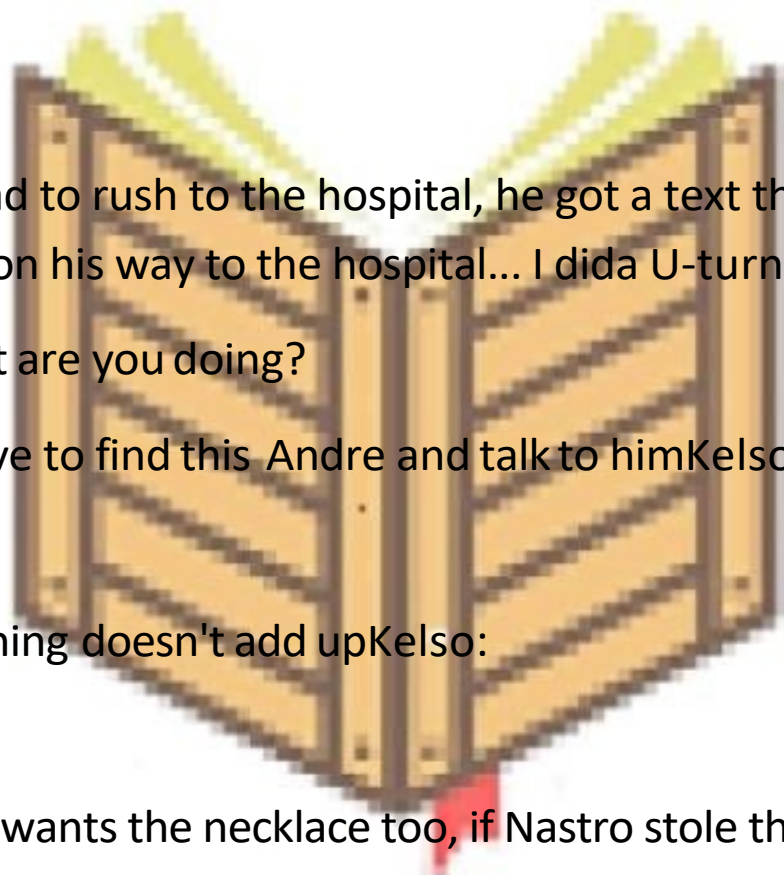
Me: We have to find this Andre and talk to him Kelso:

Why?

Me: Something doesn't add up Kelso:

Like what?

Me: Nastro wants the necklace too, if Nastro stole the necklace from Andre. Andre wouldn't be coming after us he would go straight after Nastro



Kelso: That makes sense

Me: Modrid is not telling us everything

Kelso: How did you figure that out?

Me: Because Modrid seems like a bulshiter!

Kelso: You think Modrid has the necklace?

Me: We will find out when we connect all the dots.. Search Andre up, we need to know the feud between him and Modrid

Kelso: I'll do that

NONGCEBO

I looked at him..

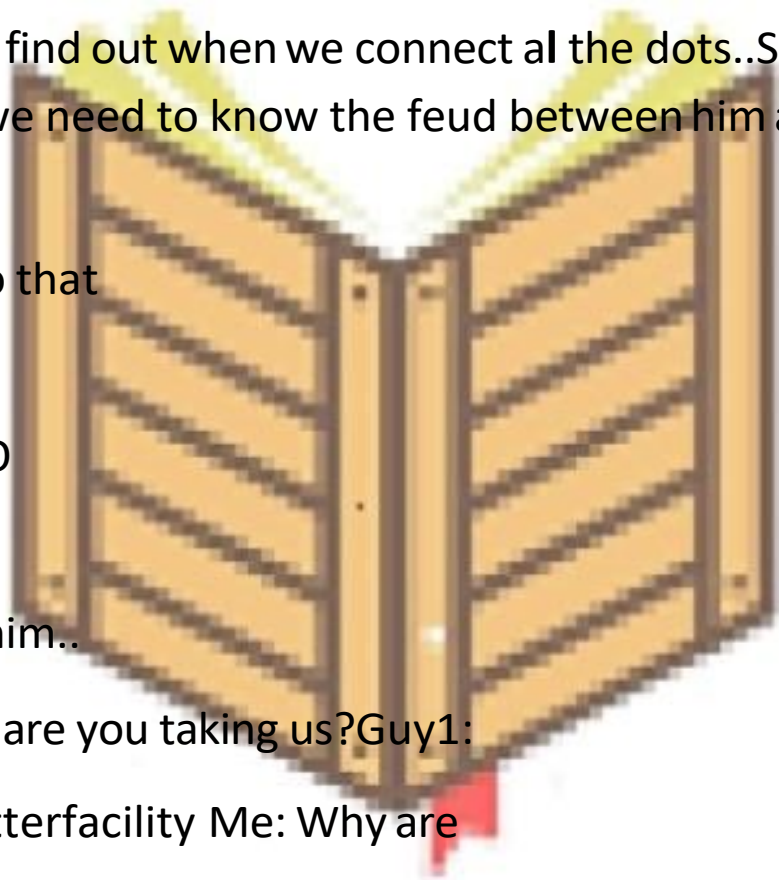
Me: Where are you taking us?

Guy1: A much better facility

Me: Why are you doing this?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Guy1: You need to drop that attitude, the other Ment that you will be dealing with are very heartless



Sethu: What do you mean other men? Guy1: You ladies are going to be auctioned Sethu and I looked at each other..

Me: What?

Guy1: If your boyfriends don't bring back the necklace, I don't wanna say what's going to happen to you ladies

Sethu: What necklace?

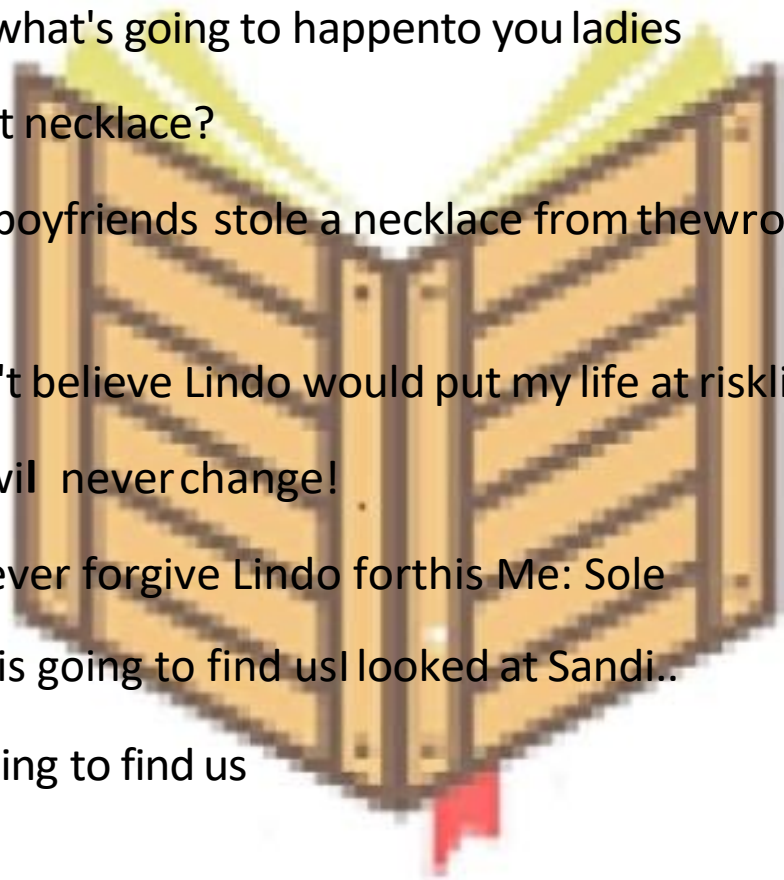
Guy1: Your boyfriends stole a necklace from the wrong guy

Sethu: I can't believe Lindo would put my life at risk like this

Me: Kelso will never change!

Sethu: I'll never forgive Lindo for this Me: Sole is smart he is going to find us I looked at Sandi..

Me: He's going to find us



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

[08/24, 13:54] : "The kidnap"

127

SCORPION

I walked up to Rachel..Me:

Hey

Her: Hi

Me: Is he okay? Her:

Alcohol poison!

exhaled..

Her: He lost one daughter, another one is kidnapped.. It's really hard for him

Me: This is all a mess

Her: How do you prepare a funeral and a search at



NOVELSGURU.COM

the same time?

Me: I don't know what's happening with my family, this is not on

Her: I think you should stay with him, I have to go back home and pray then wait for your relatives. They coming tonight

Me: Thank you.. Thank you for everything. My father is blessed to have you

She put her hand on my shoulder..

Her: It's going to be okay, the girls will be found I put my hand on top of hers..

Me: Thank you.. Thank you so much for everything

SOLE

We found Andre's hotel, and we were lucky to find him in there. He had just finished a business meeting, and he's client had left.

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: I'll do all the talking We
approached his table..

I don't want Kelso ruining this..Andre
looked at us..

Andre: I was waiting for you two.. Please We both
sat down..

Andre: I believe you boys have my necklace Me: We
don't

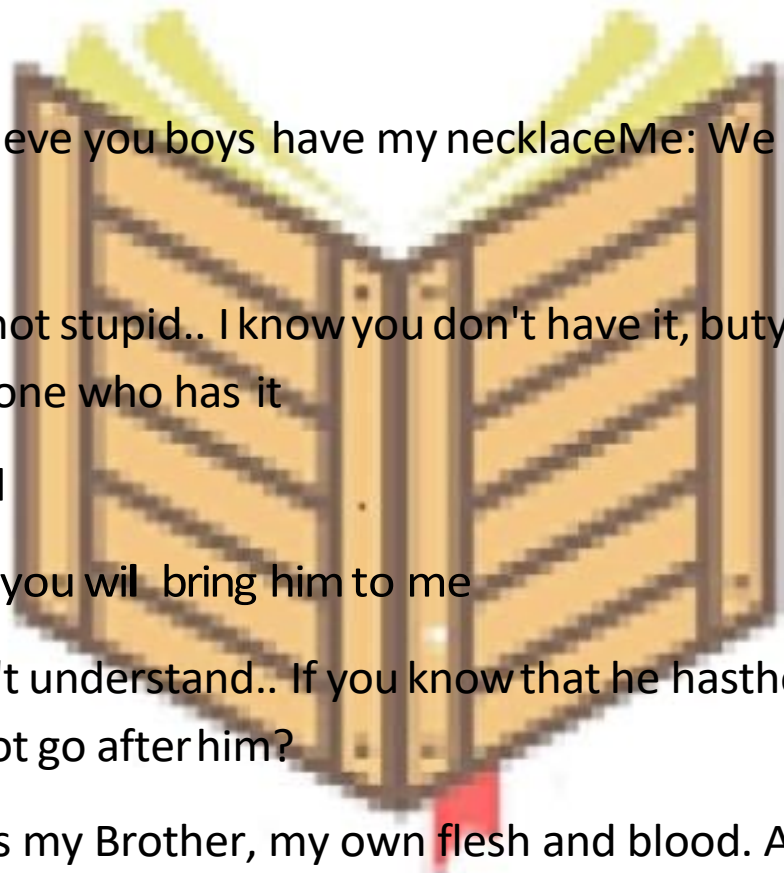
Andre: I'm not stupid.. I know you don't have it, but you do
know someone who has it

Me: Modrid

Andre: And you will bring him to me

Kelso: I don't understand.. If you know that he has the necklace
then why not go after him?

Andre: He is my Brother, my own flesh and blood. Apart from
that, if I attack him head on he will see me coming but if you
boys do it then he won't see it coming. Aldo traced your paths,
it seems like you



working closely with Modrid

Me: Why did you and Modrid fight? Andre:

That's a story for another day

Kelso: So if we can get you Modrid, you will give us back the girls.
Safe and sound?

Andre: That's the deal

Me: We going to break him out. We going to use a prison transfer to do that, when we in the middle of the road far from our destination and far from the prison then you can come and get him

Andre: Deal

Me: If you harm my girls, forget about the necklace

Andre: The girls will be safe but you boys are running out of time

Me: We will get you the necklace Andre:

Perfect



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

We were taken to a very big house, a house that was in the middle of nowhere. Sandisiwe was taken to another room, said there's Doctors who will help. Sethu was taking a shower as I was busy checking out the bedroom..

The guy I kicked in the balls was leaning against the door..

Him: How are you finding the room? Me: What is your name?

Him: Marco

I sat down on the bed..

Me: Marco you don't seem like a bad Person, why are you doing this?

Marco: I'm Italian, the only way to have survived in this country was to join forces with my kind, I couldn't go against them. They are powerful, I have a mother and Sisters back home that I care deeply about

I nodded...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I see

Marco: I'm truly sorry.. Sometimes being a DL, requires me to do things that I don't like but I've never hurt a woman. That's why I didn't even fight you back when you kicked me

Me: How nice

Marco: Look.. I can protect you but my colleagues are more brutal, they don't care. If you don't behave they will hurt you

Me: Noted

I took off my shoes, my feet were killing me. Marco:

Can I take a look at that?

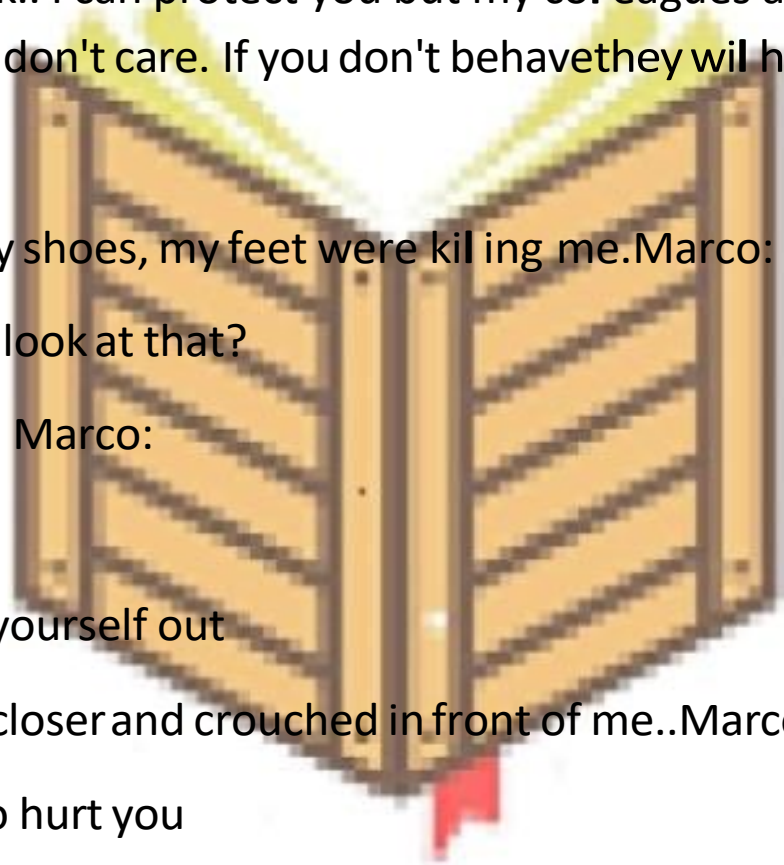
Me: What? Marco:

Your feet

Me: Knock yourself out

He walked closer and crouched in front of me.. Marco: I'm not going to hurt you

He took my foot and checked it.



Marco: You have blisters SeñoritaMe:

Huh?

Marco: I'll get a towel and warm waterMe:

Nongcebo.. My name is NongceboMarco:

What does it mean?

Me: Wealth

Marco: Beautiful name

Marco was really handsome. I mostly liked his hair, his faint smile and his physique..

Marco: I'll be right back.. Should I get you something to eat?

Me: No thank you

He gently put my foot down and got up. He walked out..

SCORPION

I held my Father's hand. I looked at him, I can't



NOVELSGURU.COM

imagine what he is going through..

Me: I'll get Nongcebo back.. I promise, all that you have to do is to hold on.. I promise that I'll get her back. I give you my word

My phone rang, it was my Grandmother..Me:

MaKhumalo

Her: LindokuhleMe:

Ma

Her: We are at the airport, please tell your father to come and fetch us

Me: I will come

Her: Okay.. We will be waitingMe:

I'm on my way

SANDISIWE

Voice: BP 125/90

NOVELSGURU.COM

I was drowsy but even though I was drowsy I could



partially see what was happening. 3 individuals were standing over me dressed as health professionals. A white cloth was preventing me from seeing what was being done to me. The woman leaned over and looked at me..

Her: She's waking up Male: Put

her under again

Me: What is h.. What is happening to me?

KELSO

We sat in the car quietly for a few minutes..Me:

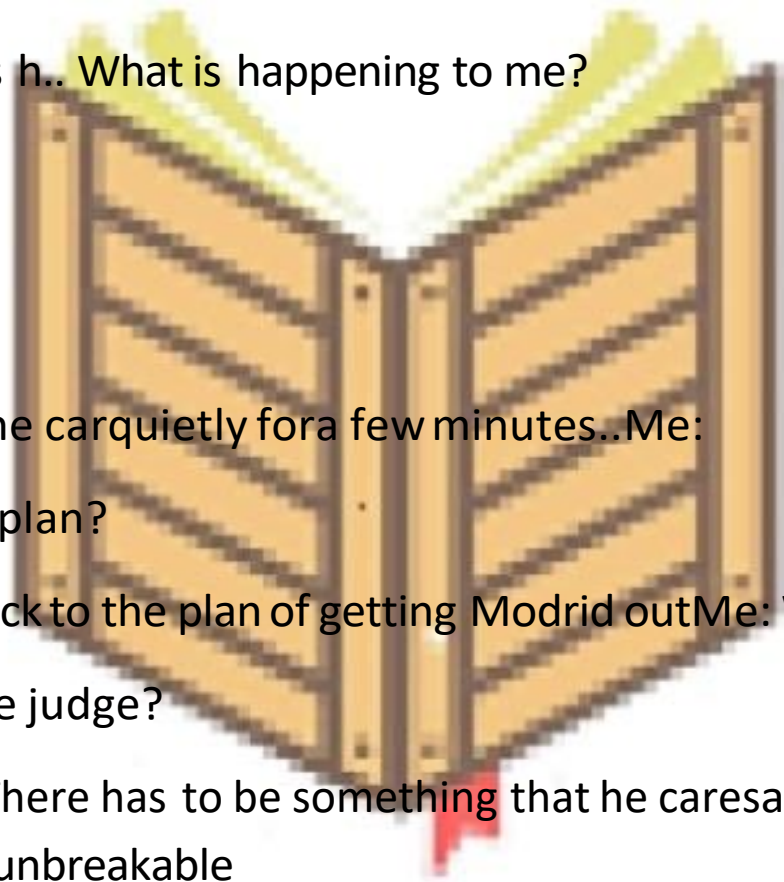
Whats the plan?

Sole: We stick to the plan of getting Modrid outMe: We

going to the judge?

Sole: Yes.. There has to be something that he cares about, I doubt he's unbreakable

Me: We going to find his weakness, then we going



NOVELSCURIU.COM

to find the girls. I can't lose Nongcebo again
Sole: Then let's get to work

NONGCEBO

Me: Wow.. This feels good

Marco: It will take a while for the blisters to go but..
Me: Do you have someone?

Marco: A woman? Me:

Yes

Marco: No Señorita, my line of work is dangerous. Wouldn't like putting someone's daughter in danger

Me: Okay

Marco: Do you have someone? Me: I'm married

Marco: I see.. He must be worried about you

Me: You know he's going to kill you when he finds



NOVELSGURU.COM

me

He chuckled..

Marco: Someone's husband always wants to kill me, I hope he will be the first one to succeed. If I was him and I had kidnapped you, I would kill me too

I laughed..

Me: Maybe I'll kill you first

Marco: You don't have what it takes

Me: Don't underestimate a woman scorned Marco:

My mistake

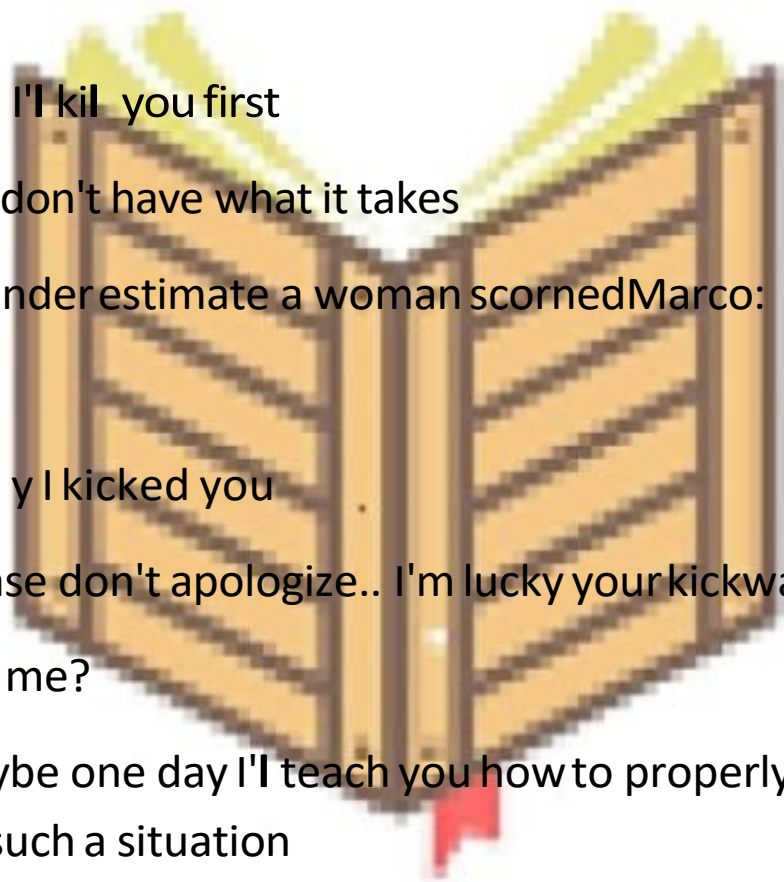
Me: I'm sorry I kicked you

Marco: Please don't apologize.. I'm lucky your kick was lousy

Me: Excuse me?

Marco: Maybe one day I'll teach you how to properly defend yourself in such a situation

Me: One day I'll be out of here and back to my family



Marco: Your husband you mean?

Me: No.. My family, my Father and my Brother

Marco: I'm sensing a bit of dislike towards your husband

Me: He wasn't the best person. He abused me
Marco: Did you try and get him arrested?

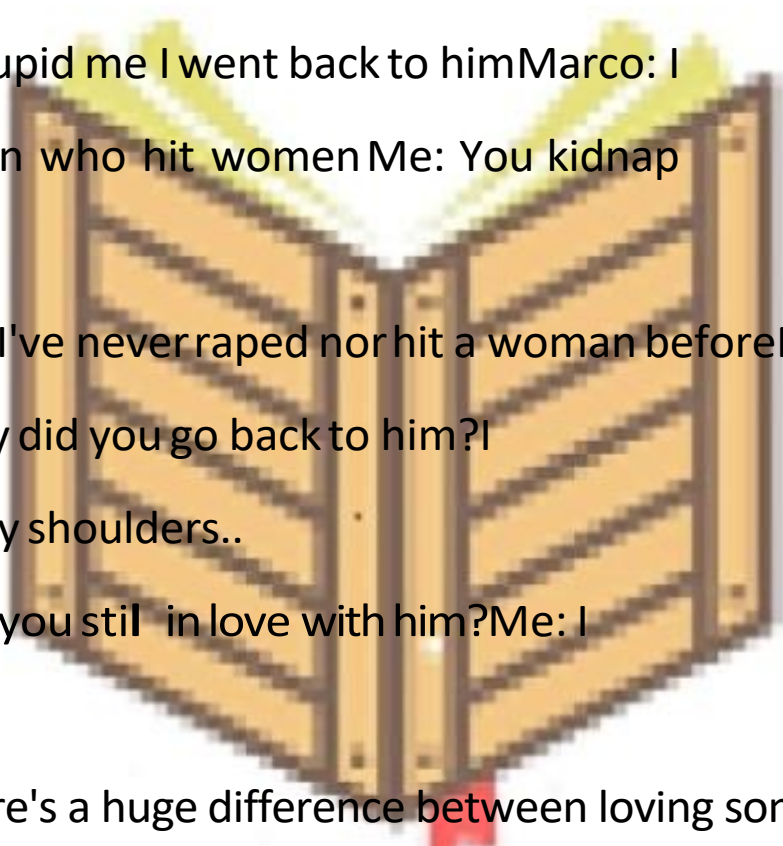
Me: No.. Stupid me I went back to him
Marco: I despise Men who hit women
Me: You kidnap them

Marco: But I've never raped nor hit a woman before
Me: Ohw

Marco: Why did you go back to him?
I shrugged my shoulders..

Marco: Are you still in love with him?
Me: I do love him

Marco: There's a huge difference between loving someone and being in love with someone. I always say learn to fall out of love with a man whilst you



still with him, so that when you walk away you won't go back. No woman deserves to be in an abusive relationship or marriage, he showed you who he is.

The man that beat you up is who he really is. If a man shows you who he is, believe it the first time. Now I'm not going to judge you for going back but never allow yourself to be treated less than your worth. You are a beautiful man and you deserve to be loved the way you want. I don't believe in all men cheat, all men are abusive. If you truly care about someone you would never hurt that person

Me: Wow.. You said a mouthful

Sethu walked in, with a towel wrapped around her naked body..

Sethu: Ohw am I disturbing something? Marco:

Not at all Señorita

Marco stood up.. Marco:

Excuse me

He walked out, Sethu looked at me..

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

[08/24, 13:54] : "THE KIDNAP"

128

NONGCEBO

Later that evening we were dined at the dining area. This house was actually bigger than I thought, vintage furniture and very clean. This is a different type of kidnapping, hostages are mostly tortured and treated badly. Here we were, allowed to bath and eat delicious food.. It was only Sethu and I around the dinner table..

Sethu: This is insane! Where is Sandi? Me: I don't know

Sethu: Are we just going to sit and enjoy this dinner? Not knowing what happened to one of us

Me: I really don't know what you expect me to say,

NOVELSGURU.COM

they have told us nothing about her Sethu:

You enjoying this aren't you? Me: Excuse me?

Sethu: We were kidnapped, we are being held against our own will and you think this is the best time to fool around with one of our kidnappers?

Me: I'm not fooling around with anyone

Sethu: We could be shipped somewhere, we could be sold, one of our own is missing and you seriously doing this?

Me: What do you want me to do? Try to access tightly sealed windows? Break shut doors? Or take out 3 Men?

Sethu: That's not what I meant, all I'm saying is that you seem to be enjoying this hostage situation more than you should

Me: Sethu I am going through the most. I was abused I try to downplay that but it still haunts me, my sister passed on I might not be able to make it to the funeral. We kidnapped! If I sink all of that in, I

might get a nervous breakdown. I went to therapy, I've learned how to keep calm in stressful situations to protect my sanity

Sethu: I'm so sorry I didn't mean to upset you

Me: It's okay.. I'm sorry too, we shouldn't even be arguing

Sethu: That's very true

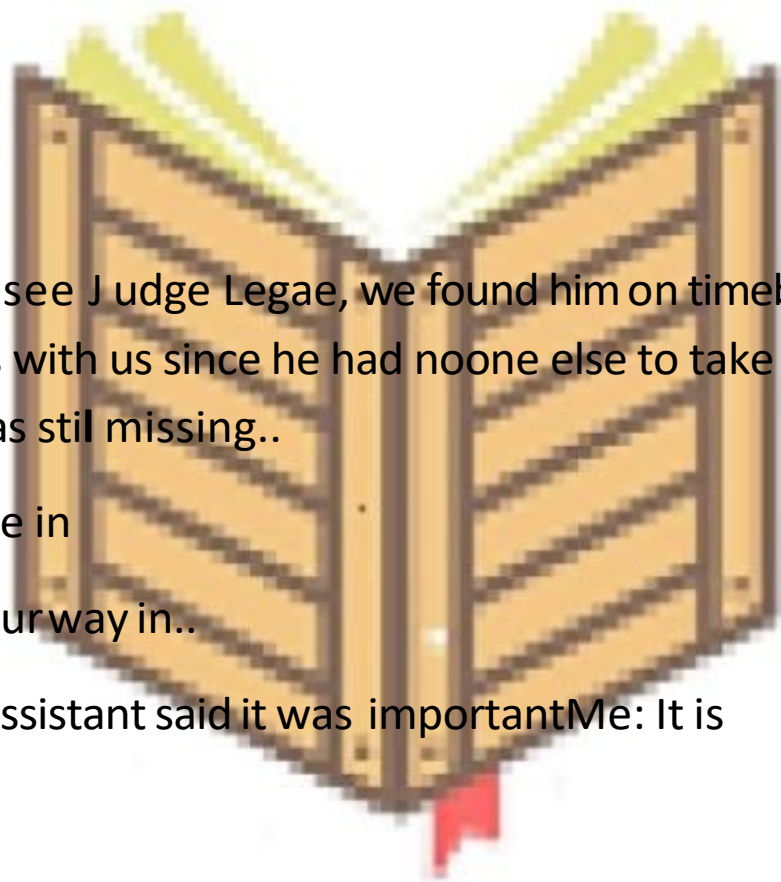
SOLE

We went to see Judge Legae, we found him on time before he left. Nathan was with us since he had no one else to take care of him, Wilsonia was still missing..

Legae: Come in

We made our way in..

Legae: My assistant said it was important
Me: It is



NOVELSGURU.COM

Legae: Please sit down We

sat down..

Legae: How can I help?

Me: It's actual y about one of the prisoners you sent to Prison

Legae: I send a lot of prisoners to jail, might not remember him

Kelso: Modrid Martinez

Legae: I remember him, I remember him very wel

Me: We would like you to transfer him to another prison

Legae: I am sor y but who are you again? Me: It is
very important to transfer him

Legae: Which department do you guys work for? Me: We
are good friends

He looked at us..

Legae: Modrid was transfered from a maximum prison
because he held no threat to the other

NOVELSGURU.COM

inmates nor the guards anymore, he should be happy. A maximum prison is dangerous, where he is right now. It is less dangerous

Me: We understand that but..

Legae: Let me make this clear "Good friends"

I don't appreciate you gentlemen showing up at my office like this, at this time of the night to discuss nonsense with me. I can call the authorities right now but I won't. So I'm going to ask you to please stand up and walk out without any restraints. Have a good night gentlemen

SCORPION

My Grandmother and my Aunt were the only ones that I fetched from the airport. Our other relatives were going to come during the course of the week. I explained to them exactly what happened, I even told them about Nongcebo. They were stunned, they flew down to bury my sister and they were

amazed at the other revelations..

My Father's family is very successful. My Grandmother is a retired Nurse, and my Aunt is an Engineer. My father's little sister. It's just the two of them..

Grandma: I'll ask Rachel to help me put the mattress on the floor

Aunt: I'll go see Khumalo with Lindo
Grandma: Rachel seems like a lovely woman

Me: She is, she's very lovely. Kind and has a good heart. She's been keeping this place clean until you guys arrived

Grandma: That's very lovely. Khumalo must get himself together and marry her

Me: I'll definitely tell him

Grandma: Don't take too much time, there's still a lot that has to be done

Aunt: We won't

I took my car keys and we left..

SANDISIWE

I was still feeling a bit drowsy but it wasn't that intense.. A woman wearing scrubs walked in..

Her: Good evening Me:

Who are you?

Her: Your baby is safe but she has breathing problems, but she will be okay

Me: Where is she? I wanna see her

Her: You are still in pain and a bit weak, you are in no position to see her now

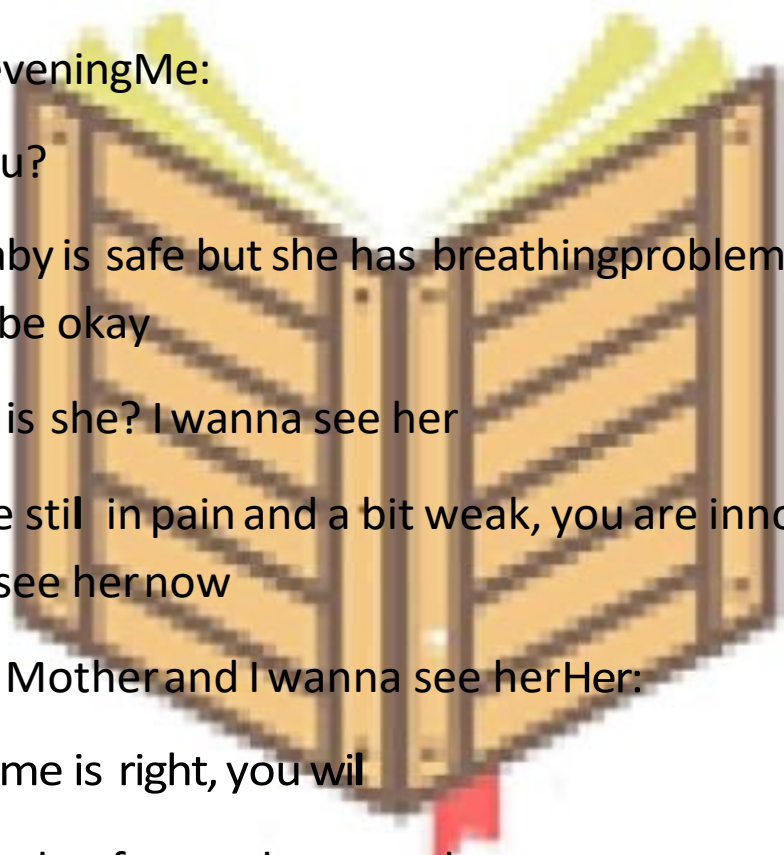
Me: I'm her Mother and I wanna see her Her:

When the time is right, you will

Me: I wasn't due for another month

Her: We know but you were in too much distress, we had to safely remove her

Me: This is wrong, this is so wrong. This is not how



I imagined giving birth.. This is so wrong (crying) Her: I'll have food brought in for you

SOLE

They sent me a video of my baby. She was a bit tiny and in an incubator. Shit just got real, this video was confirmation that shit got real

I squeezed my phone..

Me: Now the ball is in Modrid's court

Kelso: He has to kill a few inmates or a guard to be transferred into a new prison

Me: With the new acting Governor let's hope he will permit the transfer and not keep him in solitary forever, we don't need that.. We don't have time

Kelso: Brothers coming at each other like this Me: A woman must be involved

Kelso: You think?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That's a typical thing that brothers fight for most of the time. Tomorrow morning we will visit him and he has to do his part

Kelso nodded..

NONGCEBO

We weren't allowed to go outside, but we were allowed to walk around the house. Windows were tightly sealed, and doors that let outside were shut. There wasn't any sunshine coming in, the lights were on though.. I passed the study and saw Marco drinking a glass of whiskey, sitting by the fireplace and reading a novel..

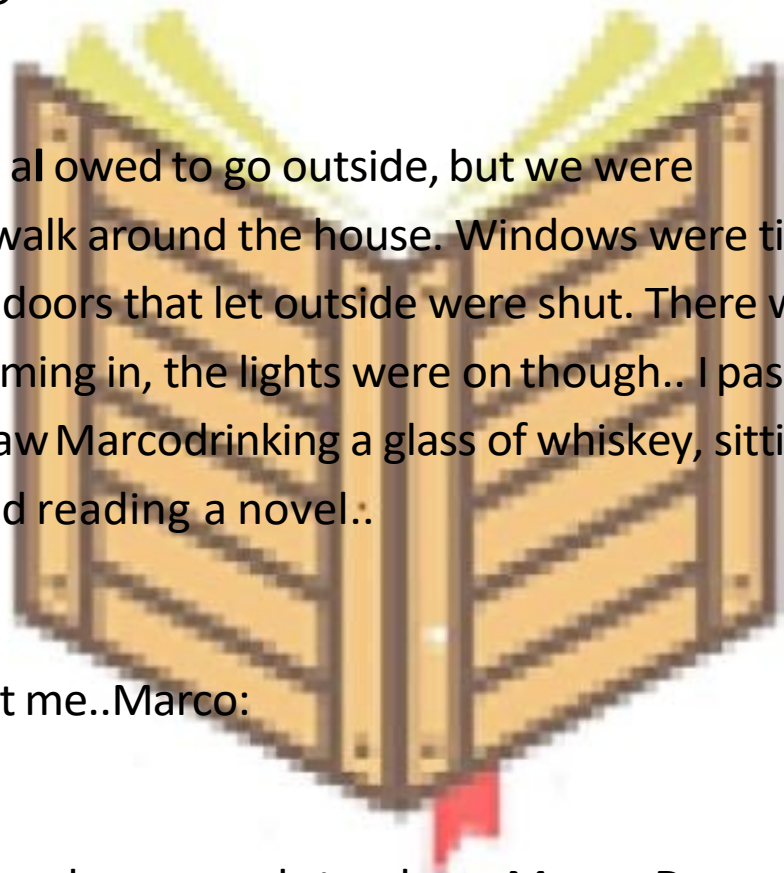
Me: Hi

He looked at me.. Marco:

Señorita

He put the book away and stood up.. Marco: Do

you need anything perhaps?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: No.. I was just stretching my legs and getting "fresh air"

He chuckled..

Marco: It's better than nothing Me: I

guess so.. May I come in? Marco: Yes

please

I made my way in..

Me: Where are the other guys?

Marco: They attending to some business Me: So

you are alone?

Marco: There's guards outside Me:

You live here?

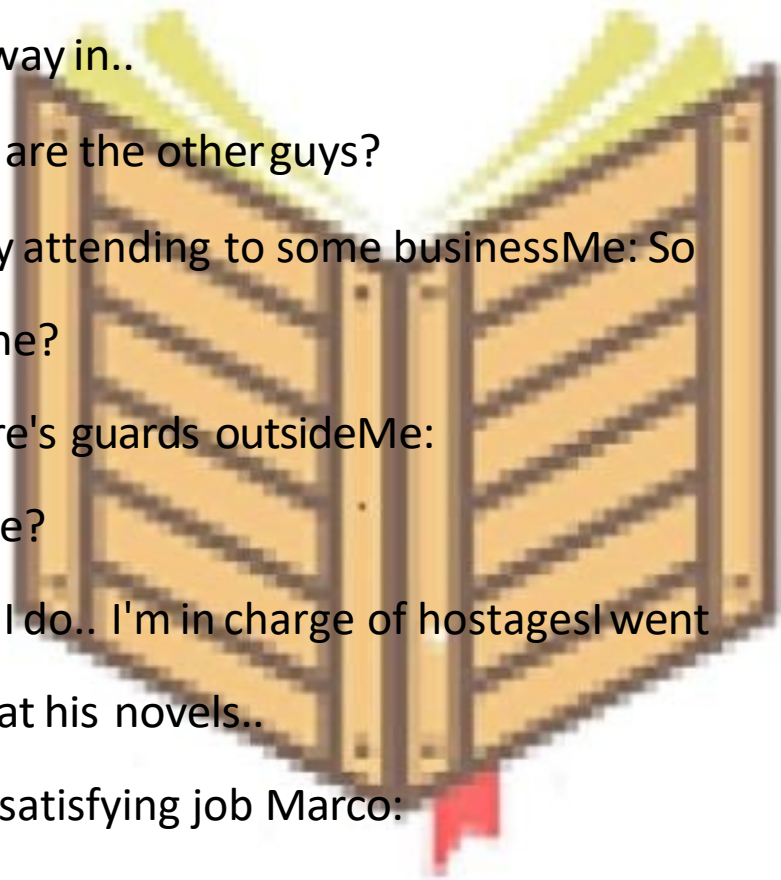
Marco: Yes I do.. I'm in charge of hostages I went

and looked at his novels..

Me: Such a satisfying job Marco:

Sarcasm.. Impressive (Silence)

NOVELSGURU.COM



Marco: Did you get burned? I

turned and looked at him.. Me:

Sor y?

Marco: You have marks on your body don't you? Me: How did you? How did you notice that?

Marco: I noticed when I was massaging your foot I fixed my clothes..

Me: I'm fine

Marco: I didn't mean to upset you nor alarm you Me: You didn't

He nodded..

Me: I should get going and join my friend Marco:

Good night Señorita

I walked up to the door..

Marco: He did that to you didn't he?!

stopped..

Me: Good night Marco



NOVELSGURU.COM

I walked out..

RACHEL

Grandma: Thank you for helping me
Me: It's

my pleasure

Grandma: For how long have you and my Son been seeing each other?

Me: It's not too long

Grandma: You are a wonderful woman

Me: Thank you so much.. We should've asked Lindo to help me with the base of the bed

Grandma: That's true he will be back, he will help you

Me: I will attend to other things in the meantime

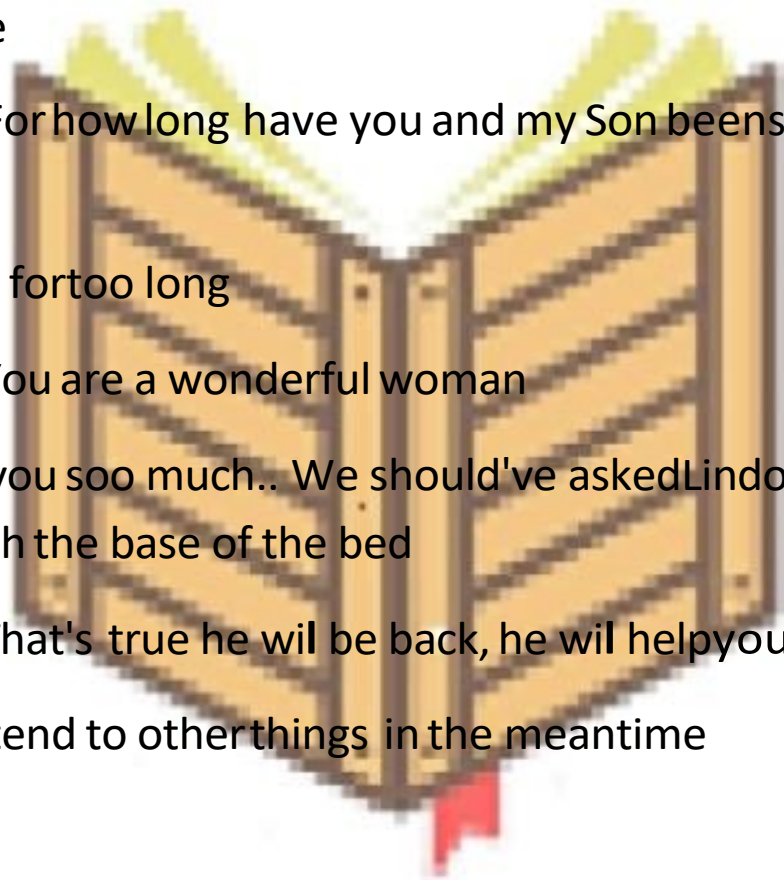
.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:54]

NOVELSGURU.COM

: SEASON FINALE



NONGCEBO

The following morning we were having breakfast around the table when Marco wheeled Sandi in. She was sitting on the wheelchair and seemed drained, but the biggest relief was that she seemed fine..

I stood up and went to her..Me: Hey

I knelt down next to her wheelchair and held her hand..

Me: Hey are you okay? Tears wel

led up in her eyes..Sethu: What

happened?

She closed her eyes as tears fell and exhaled Sandi: They

did a C-section.. Then they took my

baby

Sethu: What?

Sandi: They won't give me my baby! I got up and looked at Marco...

Me: What happened to her baby?

Marco: I am not at liberty to give you that kind of information

Me: Screw that! What happened to her baby? Marco: Please sit down

Me: What happened to her baby?

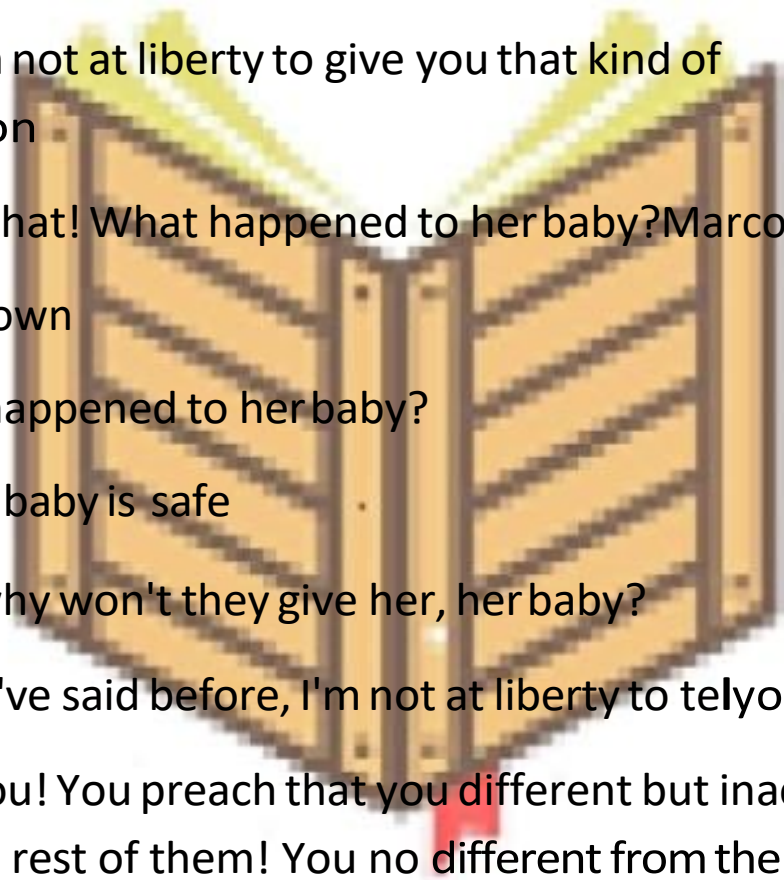
Marco: The baby is safe

Me: Then why won't they give her, her baby?

Marco: As I've said before, I'm not at liberty to tell you that

Me: Fuck you! You preach that you're different but in actual fact you're like the rest of them! You're no different from them!

Marco pinched his nosebridge using his thumb and



index finger..

Voice: Why don't you sit down?

We moved our eyes to where the voice was coming from..

It was one of the other guys..Him: Sit

down Señorita

Me: I'm not going to sit down, not until you give Sandi her baby

He walked up to me and grabbed me by my hair, he then sat me down..

Him: When I tell you to do something, you do it no questions asked okay?

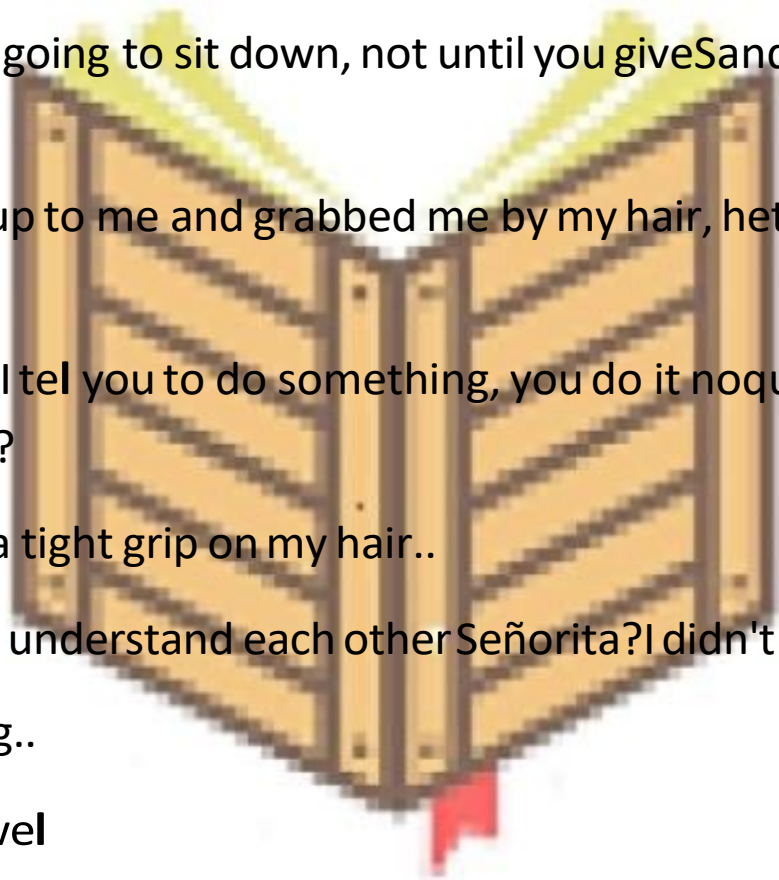
He still had a tight grip on my hair..

Him: Do we understand each other Señorita? I didn't say anything..

Him: Oh well

He stood me up again by pulling my hair..Marco:

Fabiano



NOVELSGURU.COM

Fabiano: Stay out of this!

He dragged me out of the room..

SOLE

After dropping off Nathan at school, I went to see Modrid..

Modrid: I have to kill ?

Me: That's the only way to get you transferred
Modrid: Isn't there another way?

Me: If there was, I would be telling you

Modrid: Find another way

Me: Modrid listen! This is not a joke! They have my girlfriend, and they have my baby. They have my whole entire reason to live! This is not a joke! Do the damn thing and then we go find the necklace please!

He laid back on the chair..

Modrid: I will do it today, I will kill a guard

Me: Thank you

Modrid: I'm going to need a sharp object
Me: I got that covered

I looked around and then passed him the pocketknife under the table..

Modrid: This better work. If they don't transfer me they going to put me in solitary confinement for a very long time

Me: It's the only option we have right now
Modrid: I understand

Me: Who is the acting Gav?

Modrid: They bringing in Detective King
Me: Never heard of him

Modrid: Me too, but if he's coming here then he's a bull dog. We need to tread carefully

Me: It's a risk I'm willing to take, do the damn thing and we'll see what happens next

NOVELSGURU.COM

KELSO

Power: Any news about Nongcebo?Me:

Not at al

Power: Who would just randomly kidnap 3 womenMe: The world that we live in

Power: Nongcebo has been through a lot shedoesn't deserve this

Me: I'm very wor ied about it her. Wor ied about what they doing to her. Wor ied that she's scared and they might be doing al sorts of things to her. After what I've put her through, she doesn't deserveto go through the same nightmare twice. She won't recover, she wil lose her sanity. I can't lose my wifeforthe second time, I won't forgive myself if anything happens to her

Power: I wil keep her in my prayersMe:

Thank you

Power: Here is Hakeem's bag

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Thank you.. I'll bring him back tonightPower:

Okay

NONGCEBO

He led me straight to the bathroom..

Fabiano: Take off your clothes

Me: What?

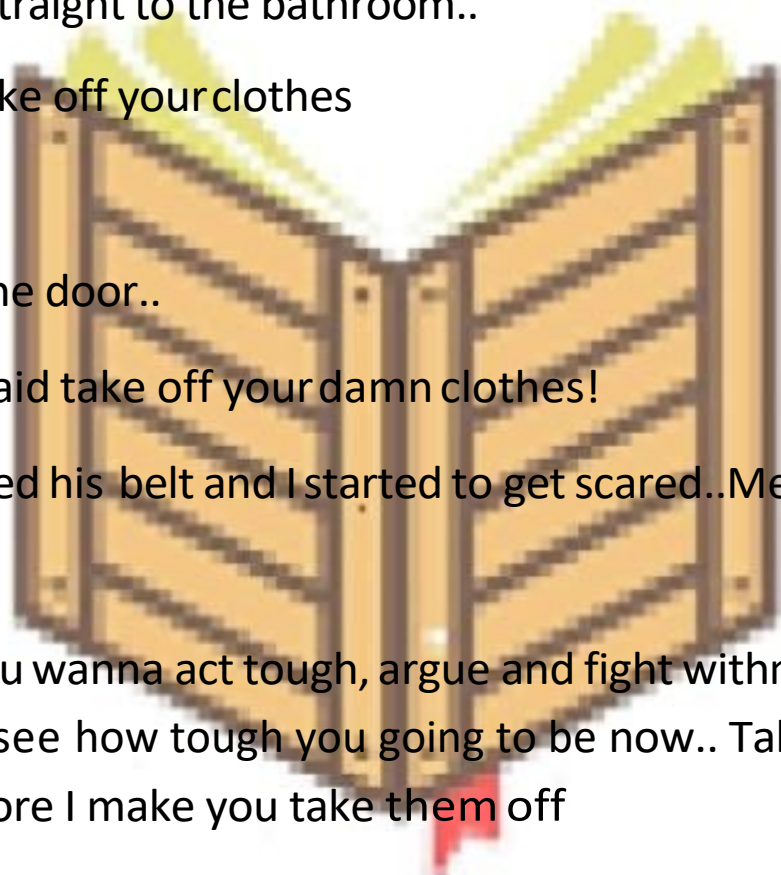
He closed the door..

Fabiano: I said take off your damn clothes!

He unbuckled his belt and I started to get scared..Me: Don't do this please

Fabiano: You wanna act tough, argue and fight with me as a man? Let's see how tough you going to be now.. Take off your clothes before I make you take them off

I didn't take off my clothes, he walked closer to me and started stripping them off me. Fabiano was no



NOVELSGURU.COM

match for me, fighting him will only aggravate him more..

He took them off until I was only left with my underwear and bra, he looked at my body..

Fabiano: What the hell?

By now I was shaking like a damn leaf.. The door opened and Marco walked in..

Marco: That's enough Fabiano leave her alone
Fabiano: You don't tell me what to do!

Marco: I said leave her alone!

Fabiano looked at me..

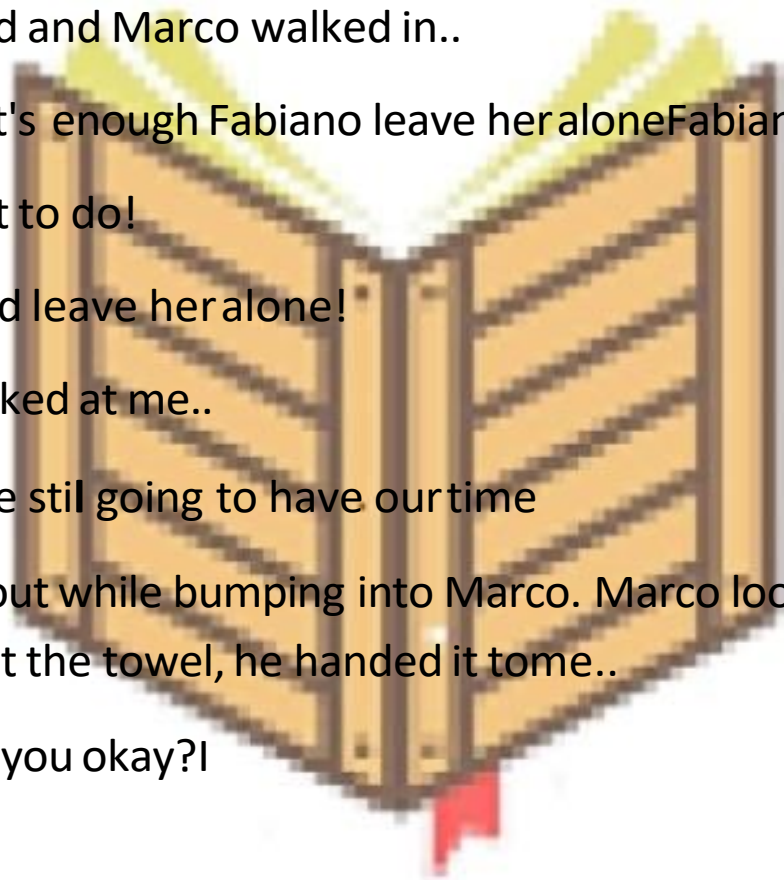
Fabiano: We still going to have our time

He walked out while bumping into Marco. Marco looked at me and then got the towel, he handed it to me..

Marco: Are you okay?

I nodded..

Marco: I'm getting you out of here tonight, Fabiano



NOVELSOURU.COM

is going to make your life a living hell Me:

What about my friends?

Marco: I can't do much for them, I'm getting you out because you are in danger

Me: I'm not leaving them behind

Marco: Señorita do you know what guys like Fabiano do to women? I don't want that in my conscience. Now when we get out, I'll call for help call the police and have them rescued if it's going to make you feel any better

I nodded..

Marco: We are leaving tonight, I'm going to need you to behave until then

Me: I will

Marco: Come and join the others and don't tell them about this

MODRID

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I would like to go out for fresh air
Guard:

Come

He led me outside..

Me: I'm going to need a smoke too
Guard:

Don't push it

He held my arm and walked me outside, he unlocked and I walked out. The sun was out

Guard: 10min
Me:

No smoke?

Guard: Nothing at all
Me:

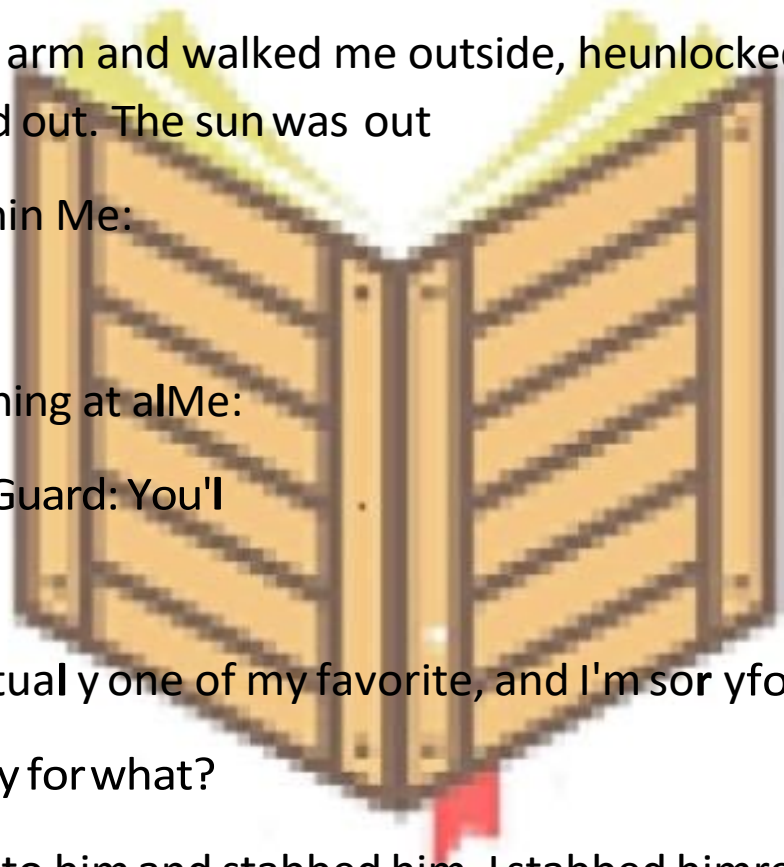
That's bad
Guard: You'll

live

Me: You actually one of my favorite, and I'm sorry for this

Guard: Sorry for what?

I walked up to him and stabbed him, I stabbed him repeatedly until he went down. The siren went off..



ANDRE MARTINEZ

I received a call from Fabiano..Me:

Fabiano

Fab: We have a problem Me:

What damn problem?

Fab: It seems like Marco has fallen in love with one of the girls

Me: What?

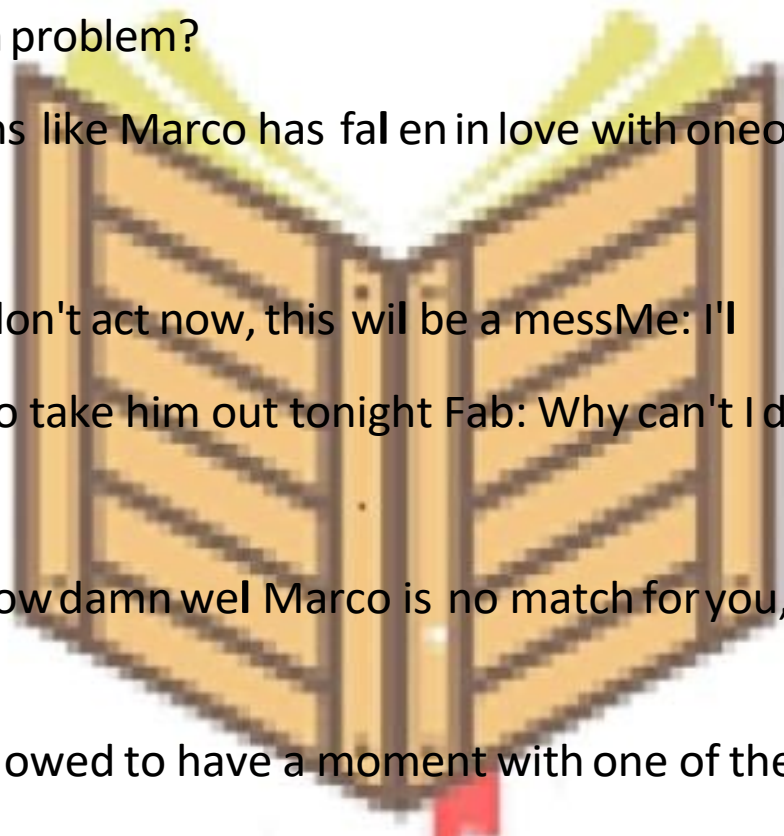
Fab: If you don't act now, this will be a mess Me: I'll

send Aldo to take him out tonight Fab: Why can't I do it?

Me: You know damn well Marco is no match for you, he will see it coming

Fab: Am I allowed to have a moment with one of the girls?

Me: You can have all the moments you want with her after Aldo has taken care of Marco



NOVELSGURU.COM

Fabiano: Yes Sir!

DETECTIVE KING

I walked into the prison and it was very chaotic. Inmates were making noise in their cells, I made my way to the office followed by 2 Guards..

Me: Who did the Stabbing? Guard

1: Modrid Martinez Me: His file

The Guard walked to the cabinet..

Me: I need to know the judge that transferred him and I need you to get him on the line for me. This Modrid has to be transferred to a maximum prison in 3 days at least. If he stays here, he's going to influence the other inmates and we can't have that. They see him as a damn hero! He must go, he must go to a maximum prison

Guard 2: Yes Sir!

To be continued

[08/24, 13:54] : SEASON FINALE

130

RACHEL

At some point later on during the day I had to go back home to get clean clothes. Whilst I was there, I decided to consult with the Guardian Angels so that they can keep the girls safe and return them home. I couldn't see where they were, so I opted to pray for protection. Plead with God to protect them and their Angels to also protect them.

I called Manto..

Manto: Ma Rachel

Me: Kunjani? (how are you)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Manto: I'm wel wena Unjani?

Me: I'm wel too.. I was asking if you were able to see where the girls are?

Manto: Unfortunately no

Me: Me too so I opted to pray for protection Manto:

Me too.. They will be safe

Me: I hope so

Manto: We just have to pray and have faith Me:

That's true.. Where is Banza?

Manto: I think he's at the taxi rank

Me: I'm sorry that this is going to delay your lobola negotiations

Manto: No it's okay.. I totally understand Me:

Okay then, we will speak again soon Manto: No

problem.. Bye

Me: Bye

NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

Sandi: Did they do anything to you? Are you okay? Me: I'm fine

Sethu: I'm getting scared, we are no longer safe here.. These Men can turn on us anytime

I put on my clothes..

Sandi: How can Sole do this to me? To me and our baby?

Sethu: I knew Lindokuhle was up to no good, I just didn't know he was into deep shit

Sandi: I just want my baby and to be out of here that's all

Sethu: Me too

(SILENCE)

Sethu: What do you think they going to do to us? They can't keep here forever

Sandi: I don't know and I don't want to know

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sethu: Nongcebol

looked at her..

Sethu: Are you sure that you okay?Me: I'm

fine

Sandi: If they did something to you, please tel usMe: They

didn't do anything to me

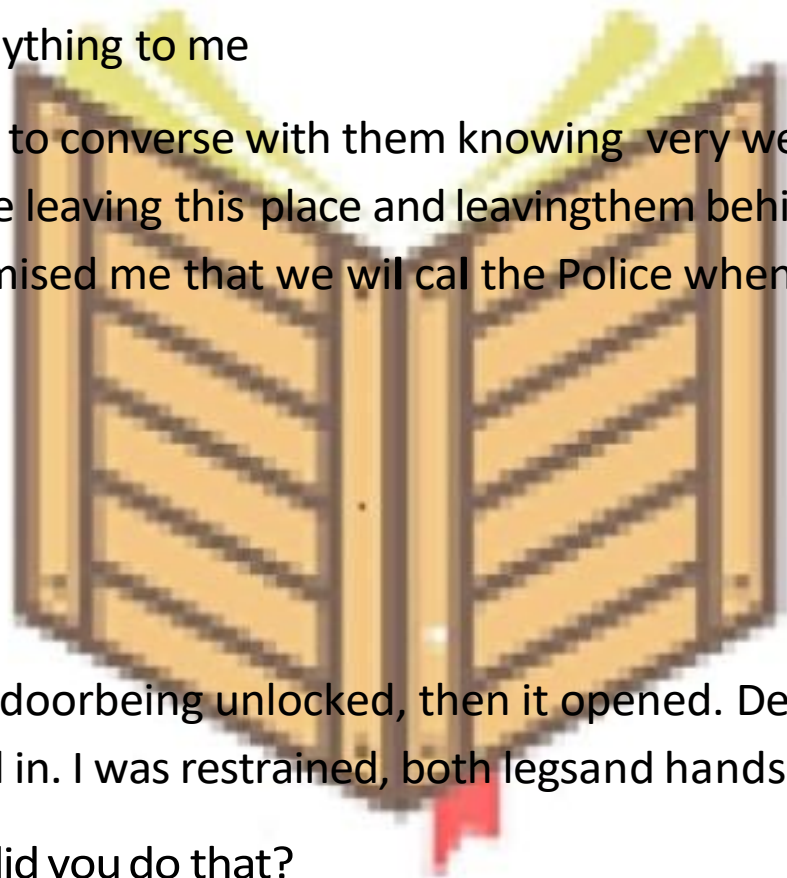
It was hard to converse with them knowing very wel that tonight I'll be leaving this place and leavingthem behind but Marco promised me that we wil cal the Police when we out of here....

MODRID

I heard the doorbeing unlocked, then it opened. Detective King walked in. I was restrained, both legsand hands cuffed..

King: Why did you do that?

Me: I asked fora smoke and he didn't wanna give



NOVELSGURU.COM

me

King: You killed a guard because of that?

Me: Guards treat us like shit, you just don't know

King: I was on the phone with Judge Legae, he has signed off on your transfer. You will be going back to the maximum prison, you have just added life to your sentence with no parole

Me: That's bad.. I was beginning to like it here

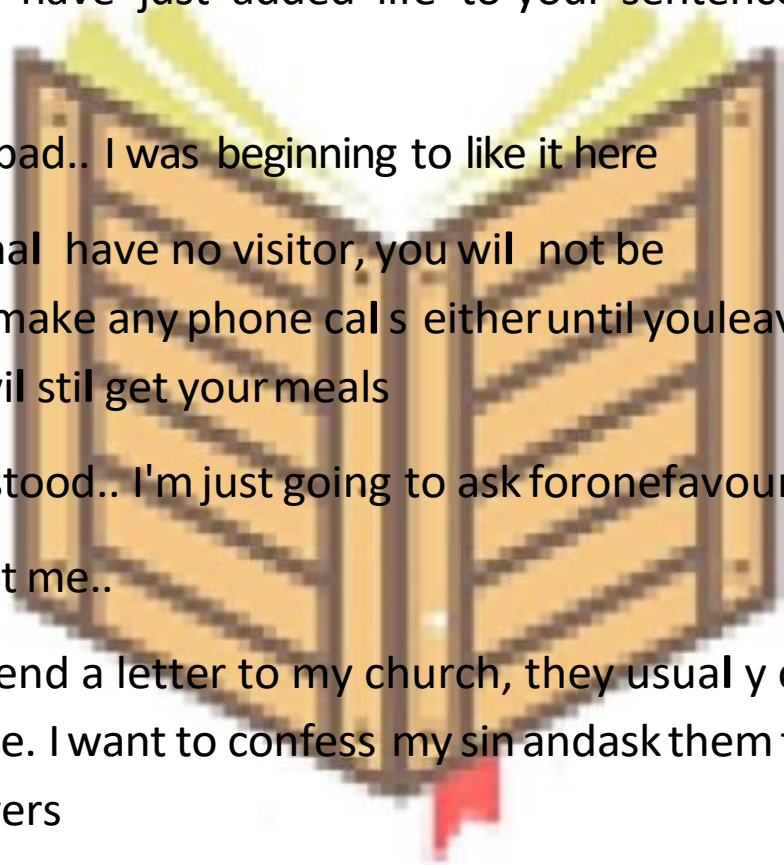
King: You shall have no visitor, you will not be allowed to make any phone calls either until you leave in 3 days. You will still get your meals

Me: Understood.. I'm just going to ask for one favour

He looked at me..

Me: Can I send a letter to my church, they usually come to pray with me. I want to confess my sin and ask them to keep me in their prayers

King: I will see to it that your letter gets delivered first thing tomorrow morning



Me: Thank you Detective, I am truly sorry for my act King:

Whatever Modrid

He turned back on and walked to the door..

SOLE

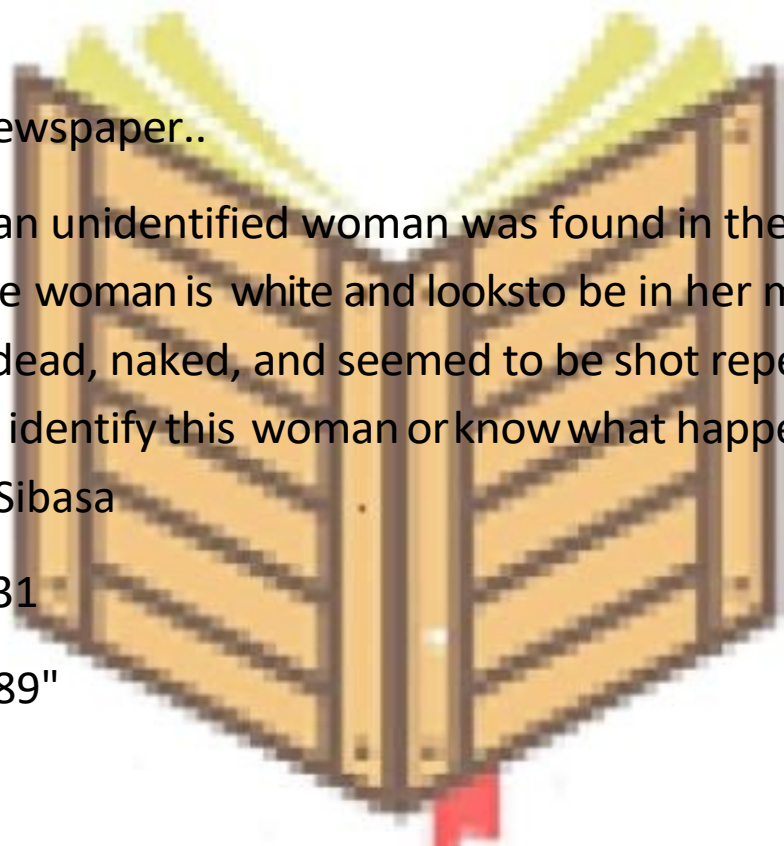
I read the newspaper..

"A body of an unidentified woman was found in the bushes this morning. The woman is white and looks to be in her mid 30s. She was found dead, naked, and seemed to be shot repeatedly. If anyone can identify this woman or know what happened please call Colonel Sibasa

071 462 3031

011 736 1089"

They had put a picture of her, it was her. It was Wilsonia. I laid back on the couch and sighed. What is happening? What am I going to tell Nathan? I took



NOVELSGURU.COM

my cel phone and cal ed the station...

MARCO

I was outside making a cal to my cousin andhaving a smoke..

Cuz: Marco

Me: Luca

Cuz: How are you holding up?

Me: I don't have much time, I need your helpCuz: Talk to me

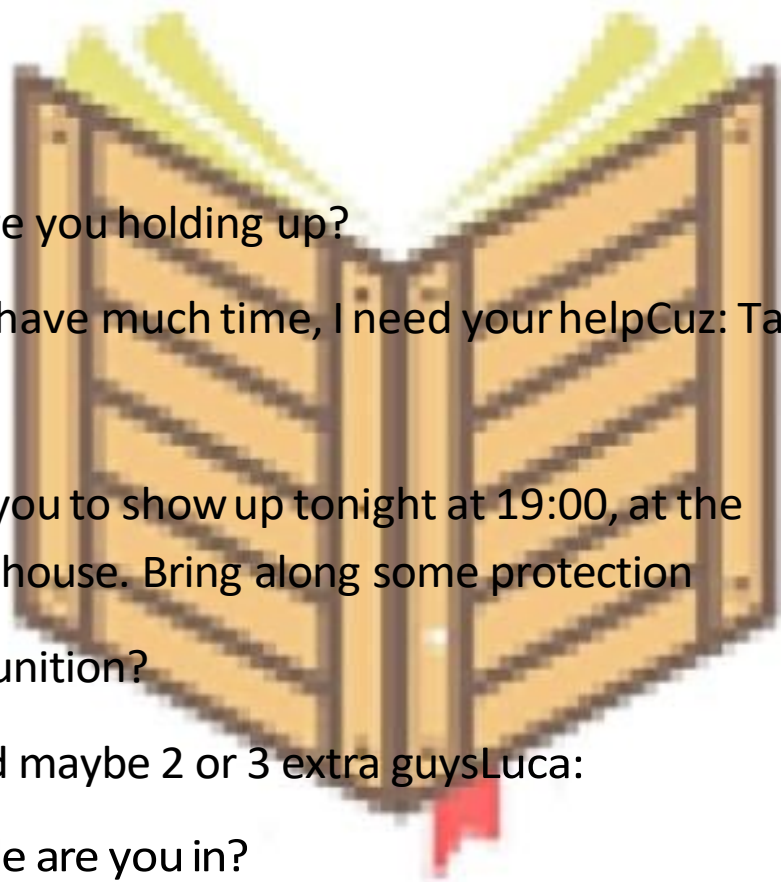
Me: I need you to show up tonight at 19:00, at the abandoned house. Bring along some protection

Luca: Ammunition?

Me: Yes and maybe 2 or 3 extra guysLuca:

What trouble are you in?

Me: I am leaving this place with someone and myfirst thought is that.. Andre is going to send me



NOVELSOURU.COM

Aldo tonight

Luca: Ohwis it a Señorita?Me:

Something like that Luca: We wil

be there Cuz

Me: Perfavore cugino (Please cousin)Luca:

You can count on me Cugino

Me: If you don't show up I'm going to dieLuca:

You can count on me

Me: lo so (I know)Luca:

19:00 it is

Me: Thank you Cugino

Luca: Il piacere è tutto mio Cugino (My pleasurecousin)

I hung up..

[AFTER 10 SECONDS]

Fabiano: Chi era quel o? (who was that)I turned

and looked at him..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: My Personal calls are none of your business

I threw the cigarette bud on the ground and spat on it.. I started walking away..

Fabiano: Puttana (whore)

I turned back and looked at him..Me:

What did you say?

Fabiano: You risking your life for a Puttana that you don't even know?

Me: Guarda la tua bocca! (Watch your mouth) Fabiano:

O Cosa? (or what)

He stepped up to me. I punched him on the face, he staggered back. As he was still disoriented I punched him again. He tried returning the punch but I blocked him and punched him on his stomach. He bent down, I hit him with my elbow on his back, before he went down. I rose him up with an uppercut then he fell on his back. I put my foot on his neck and pressed down hard until he stopped moving...

NOVELSGURU.COM

KELSO

I looked at Nongcebo's picture..

Me: I just hold on for a little longer, I will find you and I'm going to do away with all those men who must've instilled fear on you. I pray for their sake that they didn't touch you..

I exhaled..

Grams: Uzobuya uNgcobo (She will be back)

Me: I just want her back home and safe, I didn't realize how much I loved her until now

Grams: We hear about such things on the news, never thought that one day it would happen to someone I know

Me: I just want her back safe, I don't care what they do to her we will deal with the consequences later but I just want her back home

Grams: God is going to keep her safe

Me: She's been through so much, it kills me that she

might even be screaming for help, my help and I'm not there

Grams: Don't beat yourself too hard, you didn't know that this might have happened. It's going to be okay

SCORPION

I received a call from Bongeka's boarding school.. Bongeka:
Nongcebo is missing?

Me: Hey

Bongeka: What's happening? I had to learn from social media that Auntie Sli is dead and now Nongcebo is missing

Me: We kept it from you because we didn't want to worry you. Exams are on the corner you need to focus on that

Bongeka: If something happens to Nongcebo, what's going to become of me? I'll have no one

Me: I never wanna hear you say such things. You are a part of our family and we love you very much, nothing is going to happen to her. I will find her and bring her home safe but I need you to stop worrying and focus on your studies. Can you do that for me?

Bongeka: I will try

Me: Good girl.. I will call you again later on

Bongeka: Okay

Me: Okay bye.. Your Uncle loves you very much
Bongeka: I love you too.. Bye

NONGCEBO

I went to the kitchen to get myself a glass of water. Tonight's escape was frustrating me to the core. I heard the door being unlocked, I dropped the glass on the floor and it broke. The door opened and Marco walked in, I let out a sigh of relief. He closed and then locked..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: Why aren't you with the others Señorita? Me: I came down to get a glass of water

Marco: You don't walk around the house unless I'm around I thought we understood each other earlier on

Me: I know

Marco: Then what is this Wealth? Are you trying to get yourself hurt?

Me: I just wanted to get a glass of water, I'm sorry

He calmed down and rubbed his eyes. I noticed that his knuckles were hurt..

Me: Oh my word what happened?

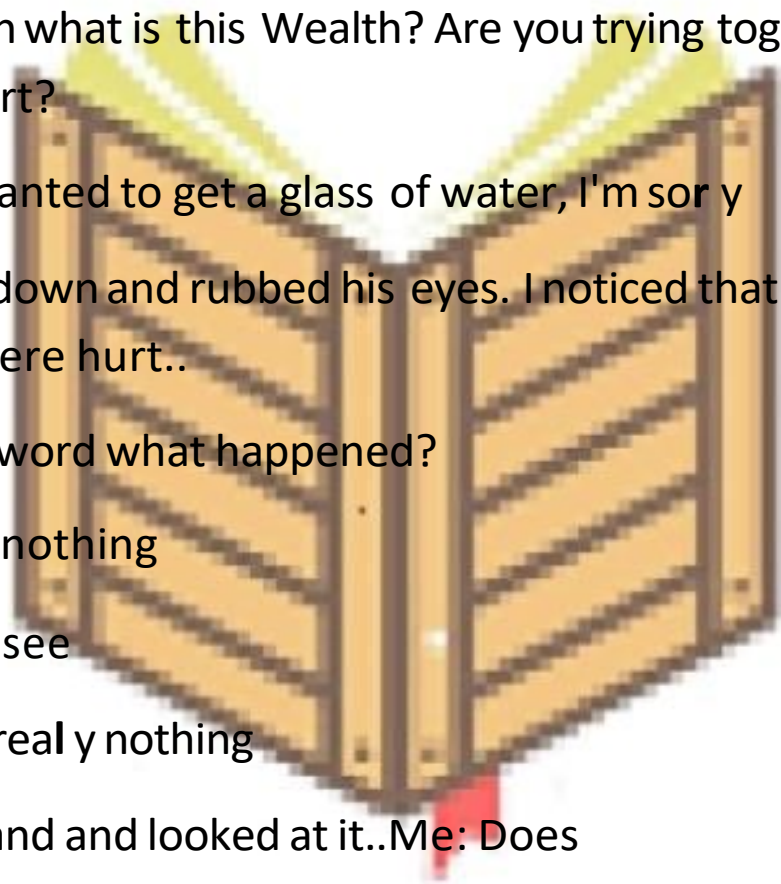
Marco: It's nothing

Me: Let me see

Marco: It's really nothing

I took his hand and looked at it.. Me: Does it hurt?

Marco: With this gentle touch, not anymore



NOVELSGURU.COM

I blushed a little.. Me:

What happened?

Marco: You know how guys are, little disagreement there and there

Me: Ohw I see

He retracted his hand back..

Marco: I'll be fine, don't worry about me.. Come on, let's take you back to the others

He put his hand on my back..

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:55] : SEASON FINALE

131

SOLE

NOVELSGURU.COM



I went to the station later on for my appointment with the Colonel. I left Nathan with my Parents since I didn't have anyone else to look after him. I was asked a few questions and shown a lot of pictures of her. It was indeed her, her tattoos etc. It was all her.. This was messing up with me, messing up with my mind. I have a lot going on and this shouldn't have happened. I also had to confirm my Alibi on the day of her disappearance..

Me: Any suspects so far?

Colonel: No.. We have none, we looking into it.. Did she have enemies?

Me: Not that I know of

Colonel: This was definitely personal, maybe a pastor's current lover

We heard a knock at the door.. Colonel: Come in

The door opened and an Officer walked in with Nastro..

Officer: Miss Wilson's ex husband



Colonel: MrCosa.. Thank you forcoming down

Nastro: My Pleasure.. Sor y I took time, I had other commitments

Colonel: No problem at al The

Colonel looked at me..

Colonel: Thank you forcoming down too.. We wilcal you if we need something from you

Me: Very wel

I stood up and Nastro looked at me..

Nastro: Oh I'm going to need you to give me my SonI ignored him and walked out..

Nastro: I'll be in touch

NONGCEBO

I waited by the bathroom doorper Marco's instructions. Sandi and Sethu were in the bedroomsleeping. I was nervous, I couldn't stop pacing up



NOVELSGURU.COM

and down.. Marco showed up, he was wearing a cap. A white t-shirt, black jeans, and black sneakers..

Marco: Are you ready to go?I

nodded..

Marco: Let's go my cousin is waiting outsideMe: Okay

He held my hand and we started walking to the staircase. Then we walked down the stairs. It was very quiet, I wonder where the other two guys were. Just as we got downstairs, in the middle of the empty space. We heard two gunshots, Marco put me behind me as he drew out his gun..

Me: What's happening?Marco

looked around..

We didn't see where the gunshots were coming from..

We started walking again slowly, then two gunshots again. This time around, Marco was shot on the arm.. I screamed..

Marco: Stay behind me!

I was starting to get real y scared..

Marco: Aldo.. I know it's you! Care to show yourself?It was quiet..

Me: You bleedingMarco: I'l

be fine

Me: Maybe this was a bad idea Marco:

There's no turning back now!He looked around again..

Marco: Aldo if you going to kil me, face me!

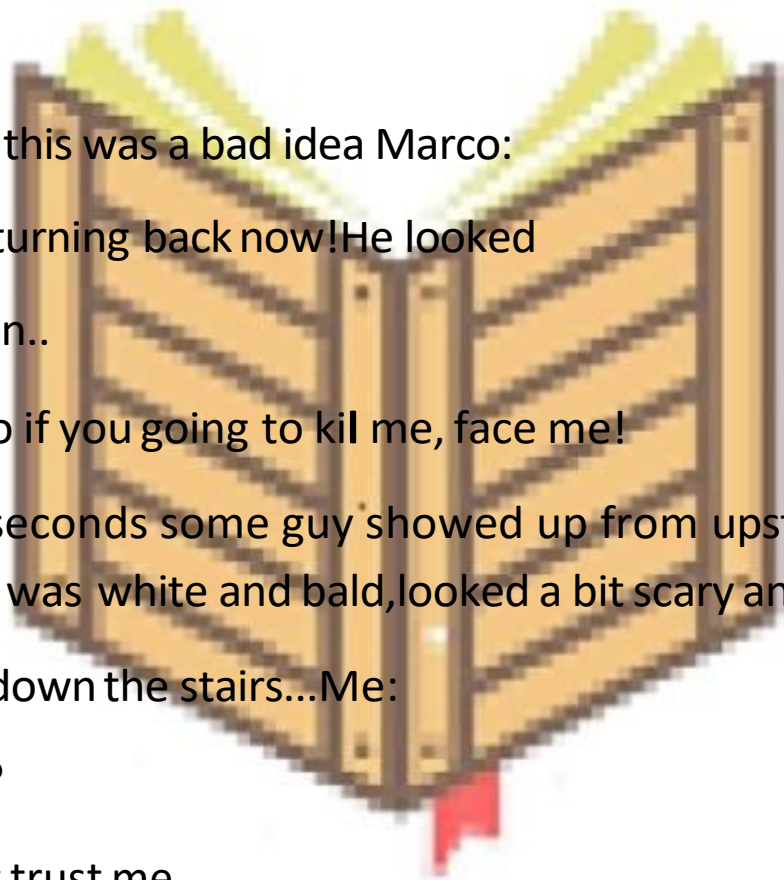
After a few seconds some guy showed up from upstairs, wearing al black. He was white and bald, looked a bit scary and hardcore..

He walked down the stairs...Me:

What now?

Marco: J ust trust me

He walked down until he got to us.



Marco: Guns on the floor
Aldo:

Simultaneously

They both put their guns on the floor slowly, then they kicked them to the side. Aldo kicked Marco on his face before Marco could even get up. Marco staggered back and bumped into me which made me fall ..

Marco stood up on his feet with blood on his face, Aldo punched him across the face..

I moved backwards..

Aldo: even if you try running you won't make it out, you don't have the print to unlock the door..

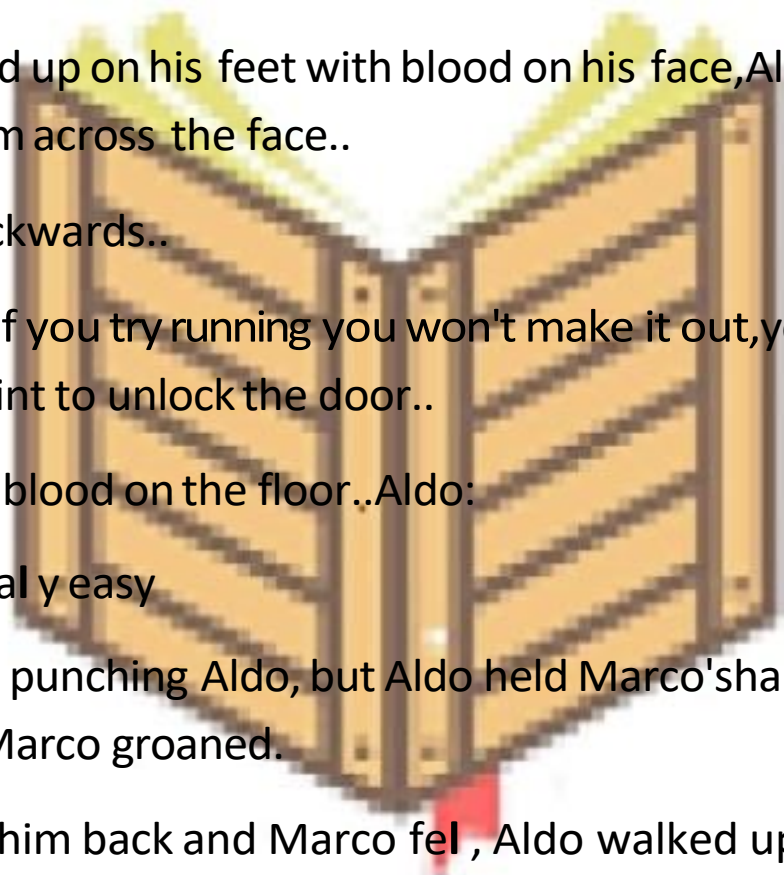
Marco spat blood on the floor.. Aldo:

This is actually easy

Marco tried punching Aldo, but Aldo held Marco's hand and twisted it. Marco groaned.

He pushed him back and Marco fell, Aldo walked up to him and put his foot on Marco's bleeding arm. He pressed hard and Marco groaned louder in pain..

This didn't look good



NOVELSGURU.COM

KELSO

I stopped by at Scorpion's place after dropping off Hakeem.
The door was opened by Banza's Mother..

Her: Hel o

Me: Good evening Her:

Please come in

I took off my hat and made my way in..Me:

Thanks

Her: How are you? Me: I'm

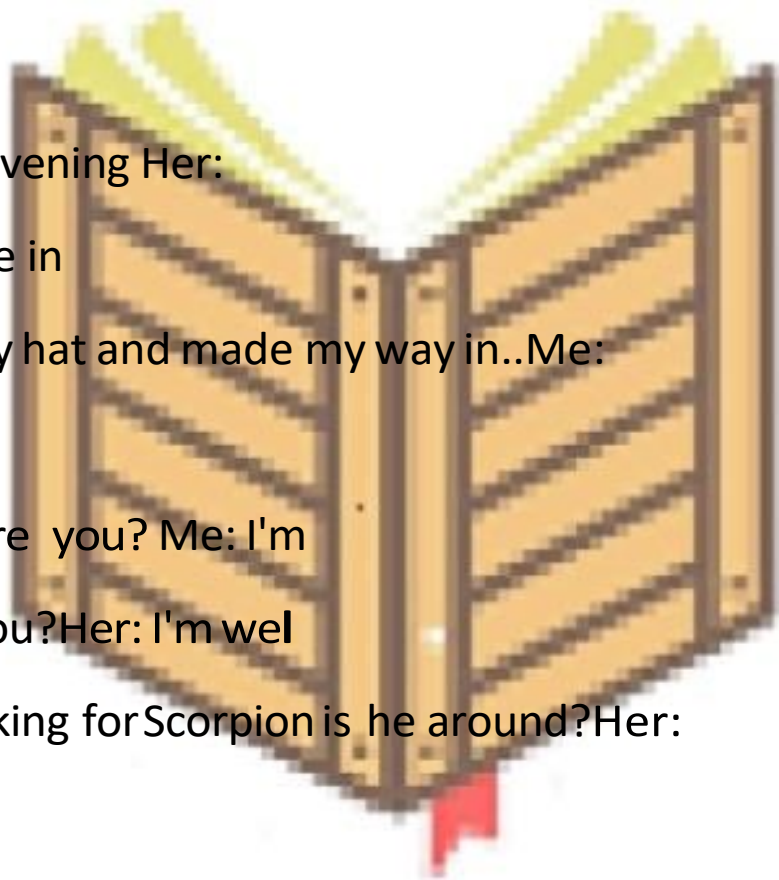
good and you?Her: I'm wel

Me: I'm looking for Scorpion is he around?Her:

Who?

Me: Lindo

Her: Ohw.. Yes he's around.. I'll get him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Okay thank you

She disappeared to go and call Scorpion..

Scorpion walked into the kitchen after a few seconds..

Scorp: Hey

Me: Eyy

We bumped shoulders..

Me: Sorry for just dropping in, have you heard from Sole?

Scorp: Not yet

Me: Should we drive to his place?

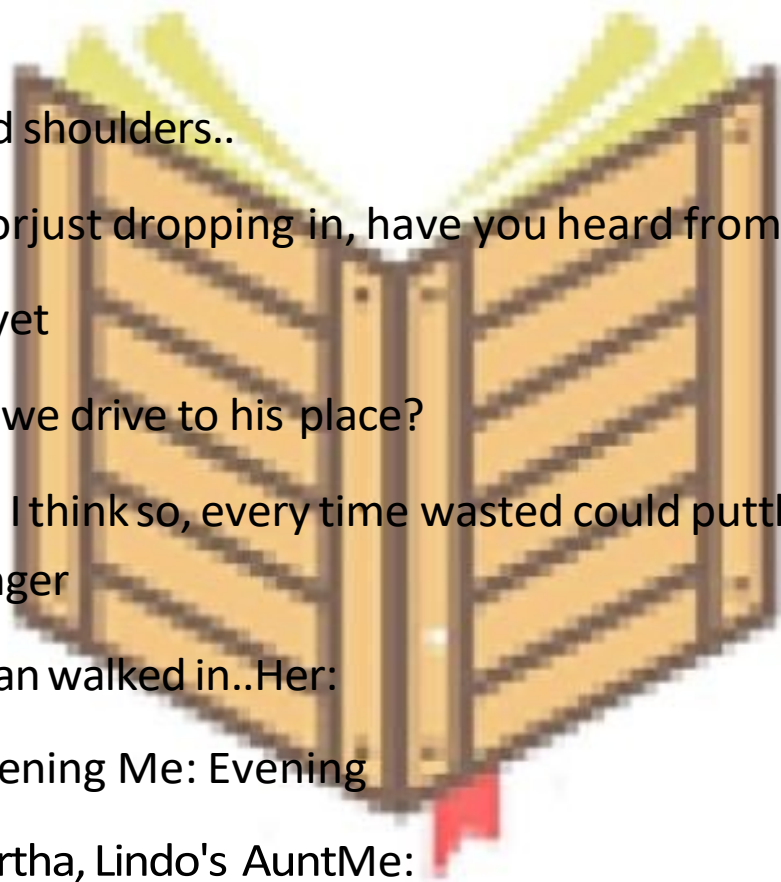
Scorp: Yeah I think so, every time wasted could put the girls more in danger

Some woman walked in.. Her:

Oh good evening Me: Evening

Her: I'm Martha, Lindo's Aunt Me:

I'm Kelso



Scorp: He is Nongcebo's Husband Martha:

How nice.. Lovely to meet youMe: Likewise

Scorp: We going out fora while I'll be back

Martha: Don't stay out too late, you not even supposed to go out at night

Scorp: I'll be okay

Martha: It was lovely meeting youMe:

Me too

NONGCEBO

Marco was laying on the floor helpless. Aldo walked up to me, I took a few steps back.

Aldo: Please make this easier for me

He stretched out his hand to me. I held it..

He held mine tight and dragged me to the staircase...

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Please don't hurt me

Aldo: I have no intentions of doing that We

continued walking up the staircase..Marco: Aldo

We stopped then Aldo exhaled. Aldo turned around, and Marco shot him 3 times. He let go of my hand and fell down the stairs..

I put my hands over my mouth..Marco laid back down again...

SANDISIWE

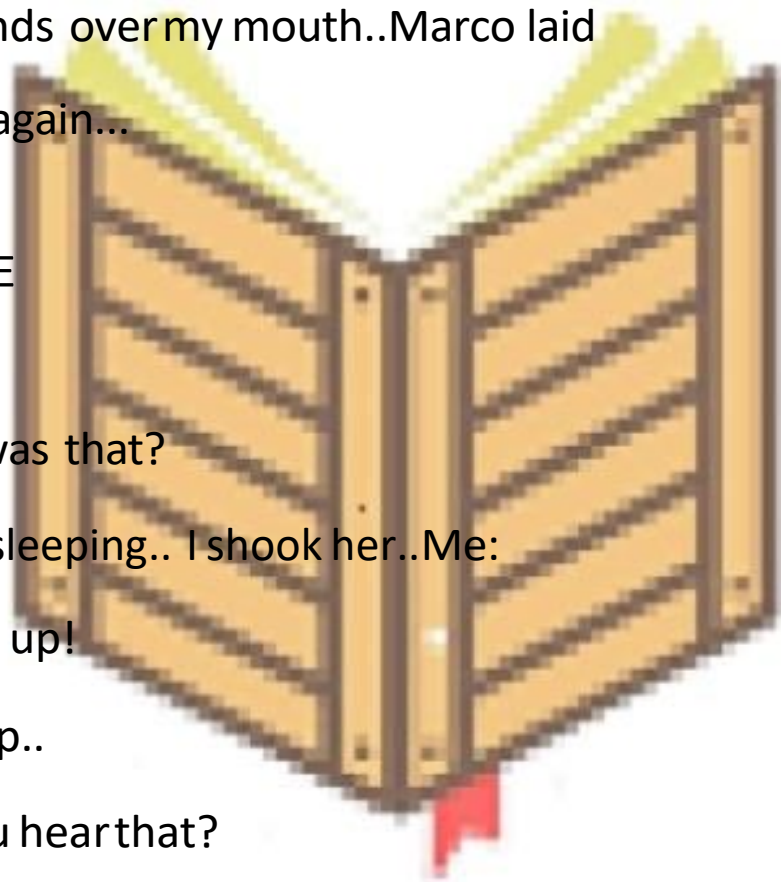
Me: What was that?

Sethu was sleeping.. I shook her..Me:

Sethu wake up!

She woke up..

Me: Did you hear that?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sethu: Heard what?

Me: Sounded like gunshots

Sethu: You probably dreaming, I didn't hear anything

I looked around, Nongcebo seemed to be sleeping..Me: Ngcebo

Sethu: Go back to sleep, don't wake her up. I'm sure it was nothing, our door is locked

Me: I don't like this.. I don't like it one bit

NONGCEBO

I made my way to Marco..Me:

Marco.. Hey..

He looked at me.. Me:

Are you okay?

Marco: Help me to get up, we have to go. Aldo has a monitor on him, if it goes red Andre will have this



whole place flooding with his people helped him up..

Marco: Let's go

I put his other arm over my shoulders and we walked up to the door..

Me: Slowly.. Slowly..

He put his thumb on the fingerprint, and the door opened. We walked out..

Me: Are you going to make it? Marco:

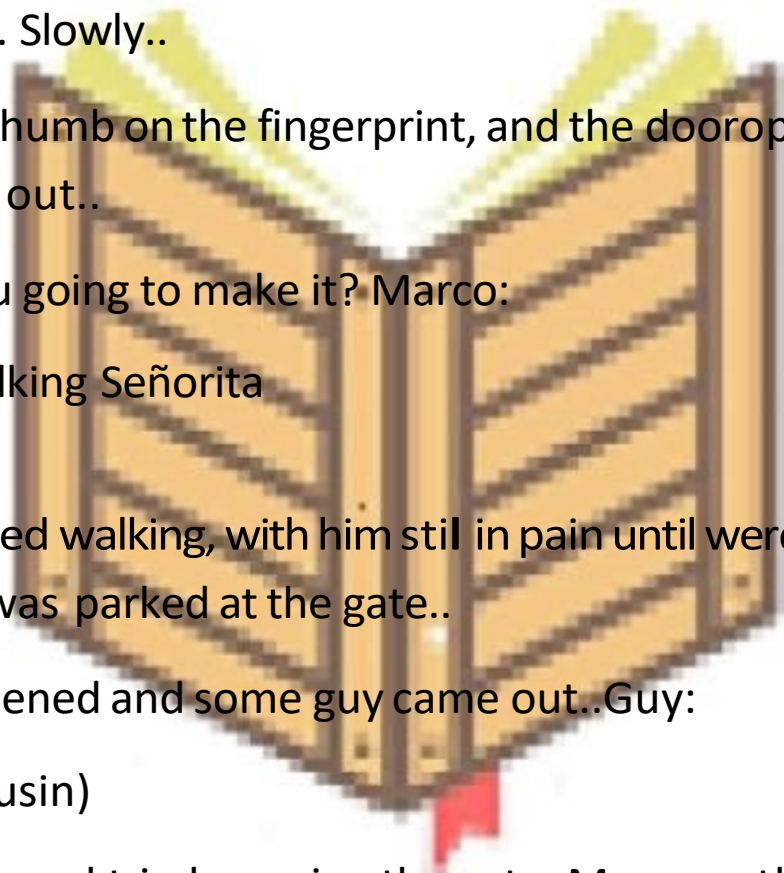
Keep on walking Señorita

We continued walking, with him still in pain until we reached the gate. A car was parked at the gate..

The door opened and some guy came out.. Guy:

Cugino (Cousin)

He ran to us and tried opening the gate, Marco put his thumb on the fingerprint and the door opened. The guy came to us and helped Marco..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: We have to leave.. Now!Guy:

Let's go Cugino!

ANDRE MARTINEZ

My watch started beeping, I looked at it. It flashed a red light.. I looked at Sandy...

Me: Excuse me

Sandy: No leaving the table when we eatingMe: Just

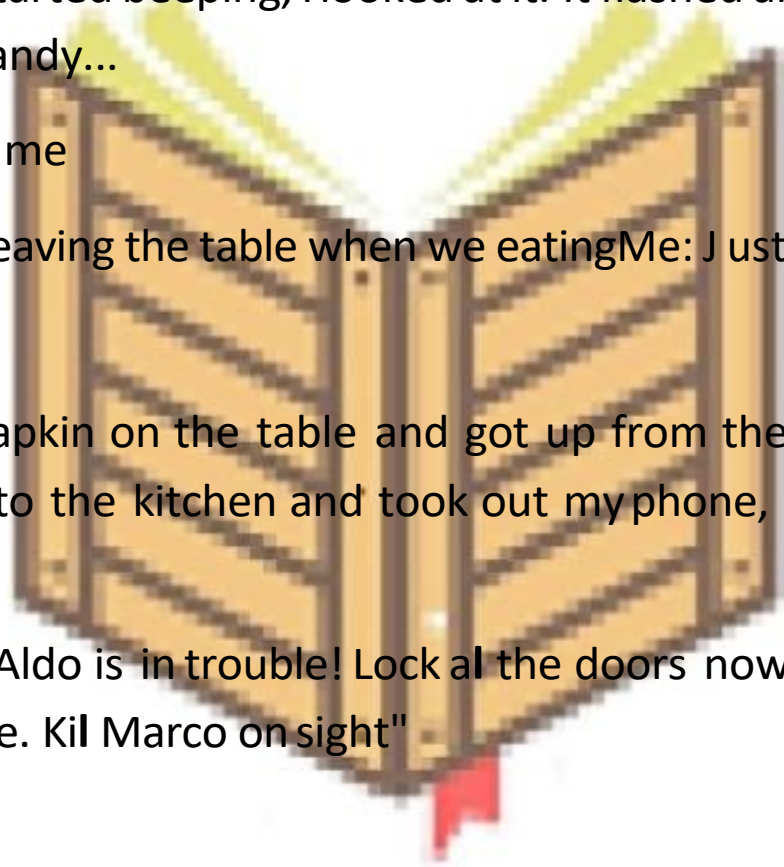
5 seconds

I put the napkin on the table and got up from the chair. I walked up to the kitchen and took out my phone, I texted Romeo..

"Code red, Aldo is in trouble! Lock all the doors now so the girls don't escape. Kill Marco on sight"

He texted back: "Roger

that Señor"



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

We were at the back of the van, some guy was driving. The other guy whose name is Luca and also happens to be Marco's cousin so he said, was applying pressure on Marco's bleeding wound..

Luca: Aspetta cugino (Hold on Cousin) Marco:

Is.. Is wealth okay?

Luca looked at me..

Me: I'm fine.. I'm good, just hold on

Marco held my hand as he closed his eyes.. Luca:

Guida più veloce! (Drive faster)

KELSO

NOVELSGURU.COM

We arrived at Sole's place, he let us in...Scorp:

Hey

Sole: Hey

Me: You good? Sole:

Yeah I'm good We closed
the door..

Scorp: What's the low down?Sole:

We waiting on Modrid Scorpion
closed his eyes..

Me: For how long do we have to wait for him? With every
second wasted the girls could be more and more in danger

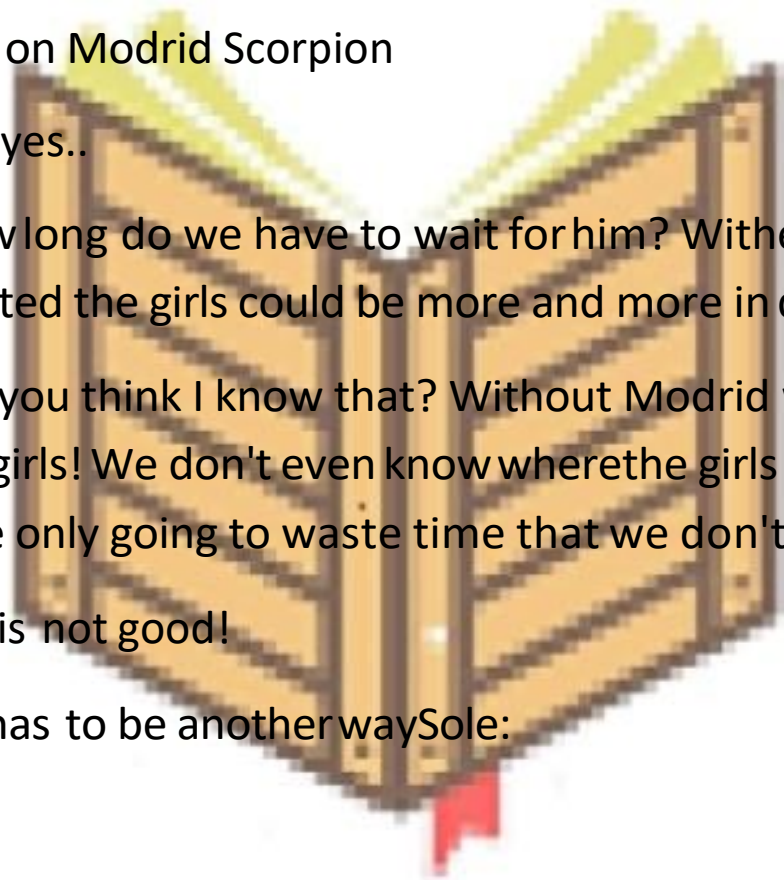
Sole: Don't you think I know that? Without Modrid we can't
rescue the girls! We don't even know where the girls are, looking
for them we only going to waste time that we don't have

Scorp: This is not good!

Me: There has to be another waySole:

I'm thinking

Scorp: Think harder! My Sister is out there!



Sole: My girlfriend and my Daughter are out there too!!

Me: Okay guys we can't fall apart, we have to think of something and not fight each other! We don't have time for that right now!

.

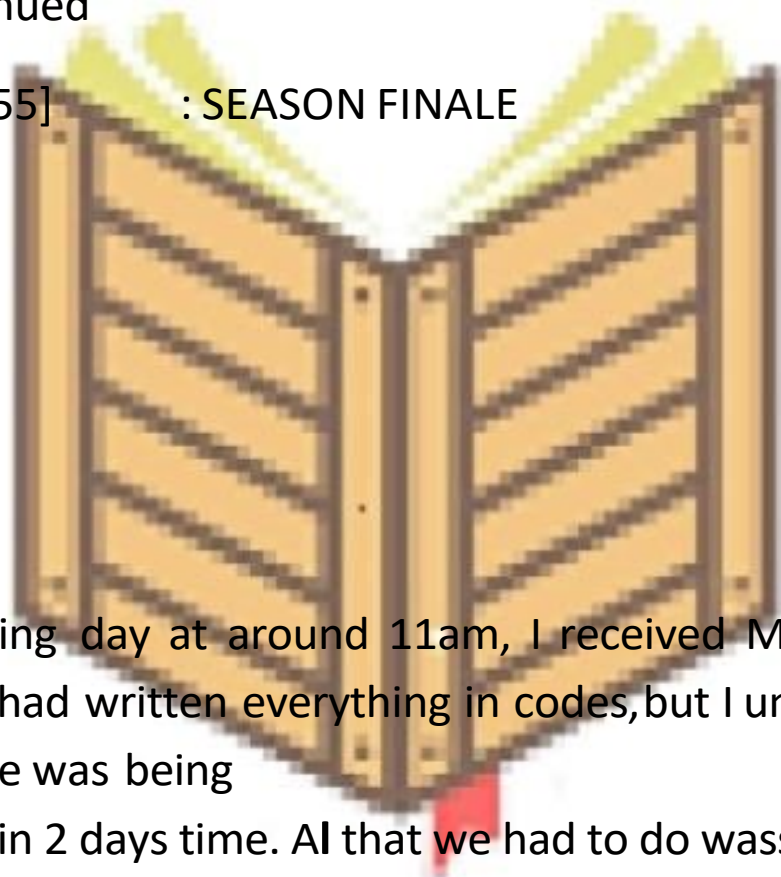
To be continued

[08/24, 13:55] : SEASON FINALE

132

SOLE

The following day at around 11am, I received Mo's letter. Though he had written everything in codes, but I understood very well. He was being transferred in 2 days time. All that we had to do was set everything up, make sure everything runs smooth and perfect. If we mess this up, I might



NOVELSGURU.COM

never see my girls anymore.. I heard the doorbell ringing, I put the letter on the coffee table and went to open.. It was some gentleman in a suit..

Him: Good morning Me:

Morning

Him: I am looking for Mr Sole Botha, hope I have the right address

Me: Yes.. Who are you?

Him: I am Miss Wilsonia's lawyer

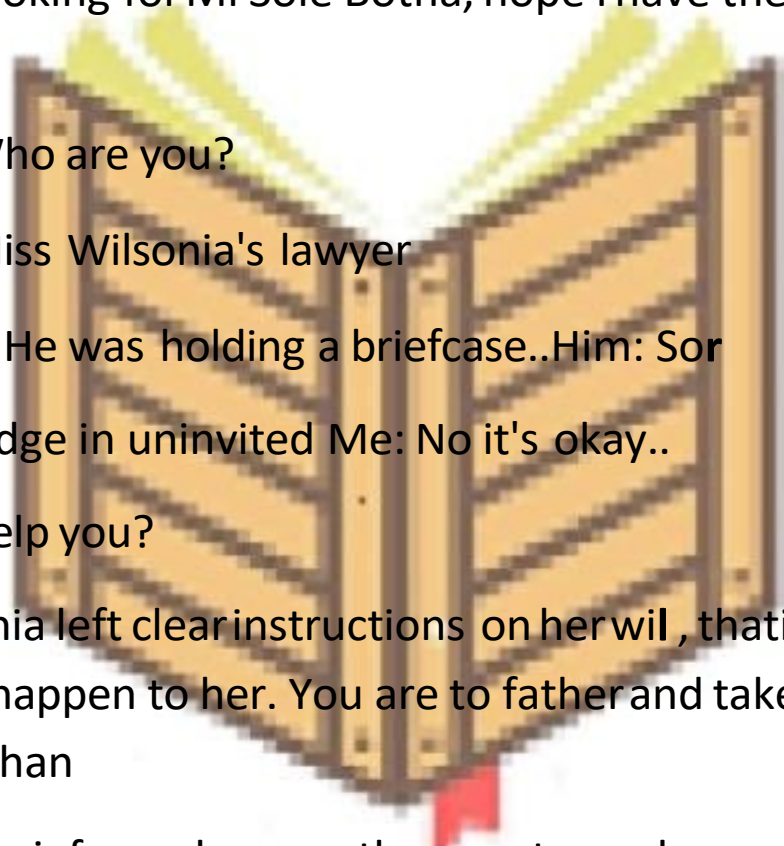
I let him in.. He was holding a briefcase.. Him: Sorry to just budge in uninvited Me: No it's okay..

How can I help you?

Him: Wilsonia left clear instructions on her will, that if anything could ever happen to her. You are to father and take care of her Son Nathan

He put the briefcase down on the counter and opened it, he took out a few documents..

Him: These documents will help you get full custody of your Son



NOVELSGURU.COM

I took them.. Me:

Thank you

Him: You welcome.. Again, I'm truly sor y for your loss

Me: Thank you

Him: I should be on my way.. Have a good day Me: You

too

He closed the briefcase and made his way to the door..

SETHU

They threw Sandi in the room, she fel and hurther self a bit..

Me: Please watch it she is stil in pain Romeo: I don't care

Last night they moved us out to another place without any form of explanation. This house in



NOVELSGURU.COM

particular was a bit smaller than the last one we were in...

Sandi: Where is Nongcebo? Me:

Where is our other friend?

Sandi: Ohw she escaped last night, she escaped with Marco and she's the reason why you two have been moved

Sandi: Nongcebo wouldn't do that

Romeo: Ohw well she did!

Me: I knew it! She was getting closer to him

Romeo: Please know that I am not Marco, I am not Fabiano. I shall not accept any form of disrespect, and thanks to your friend your stay here will be a little bit different!

He looked at us one last time and then walked out, locking the door behind him..

I looked around the room, there were two buckets. Basically we going to use the buckets as our toilets...

NONGCEBO

I walked into the kitchen, Luca seemed to be making breakfast. The cabinet was small and not too bad. It was very warm too..

Me: Good morning

Luca: Good morning Señorita Me:

Where is Marco? Is he okay?

Luca: He's going to be okay, last night I took out the bullet. He needs rest

Me: Okay I see

Luca: Your friends I'm sorry about them

Me: Marco said we are going to call the Police

Luca: I did but unfortunately they were already moved when they got there

Me: Doesn't Marco know another place where they were keeping them?



Luca: They will put them in a place where Marco wouldn't know to prevent him from calling the cops

Me: This is bad

Luca: If Andre needs them he won't hurt them
Me: You think so?

Luca: I hope so
Me:

Me too
Luca:

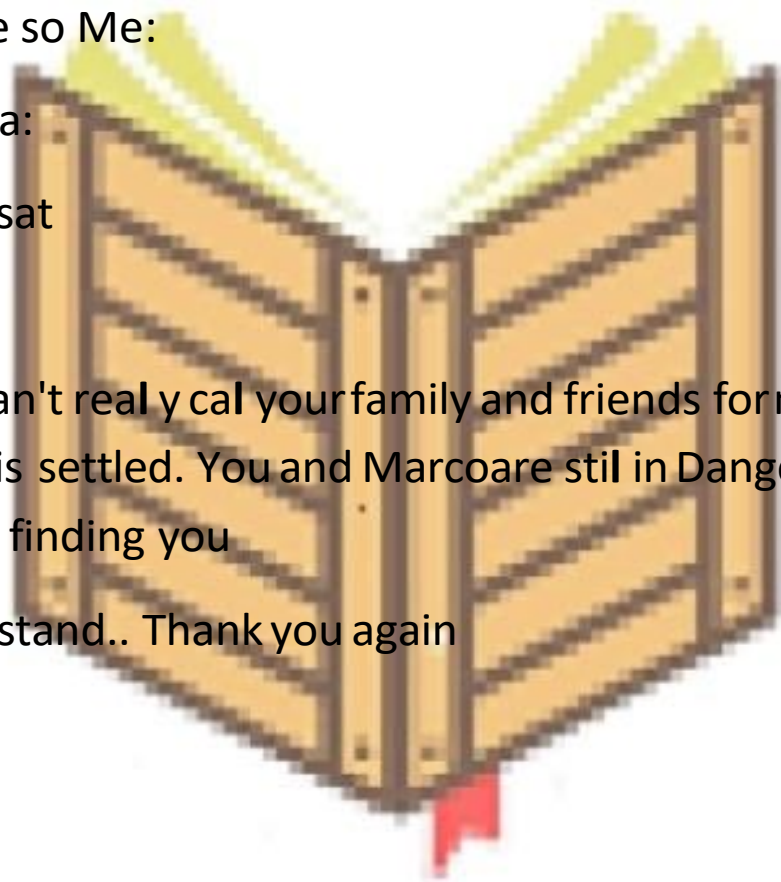
Breakfast? I sat
down..

Luca: You can't really call your family and friends for now until everything is settled. You and Marco are still in danger, can't have Andre finding you

Me: I understand.. Thank you again

KELSO

Sole: Modrid has confirmed that in two days time he will be transferred. We have to be ready



NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: Final y!

Sole: We are going to do this on our own, you, me, and scorpion

Kelso: That's the way

Me: They sent me a picture of my Daughter
Kelso: Let me see

I took my phone and showed him..

Kelso: She looks a bit tiny, Hakeem was a bit bigger
Me: She's a premature

Kelso: She's going to make it and we going to find her

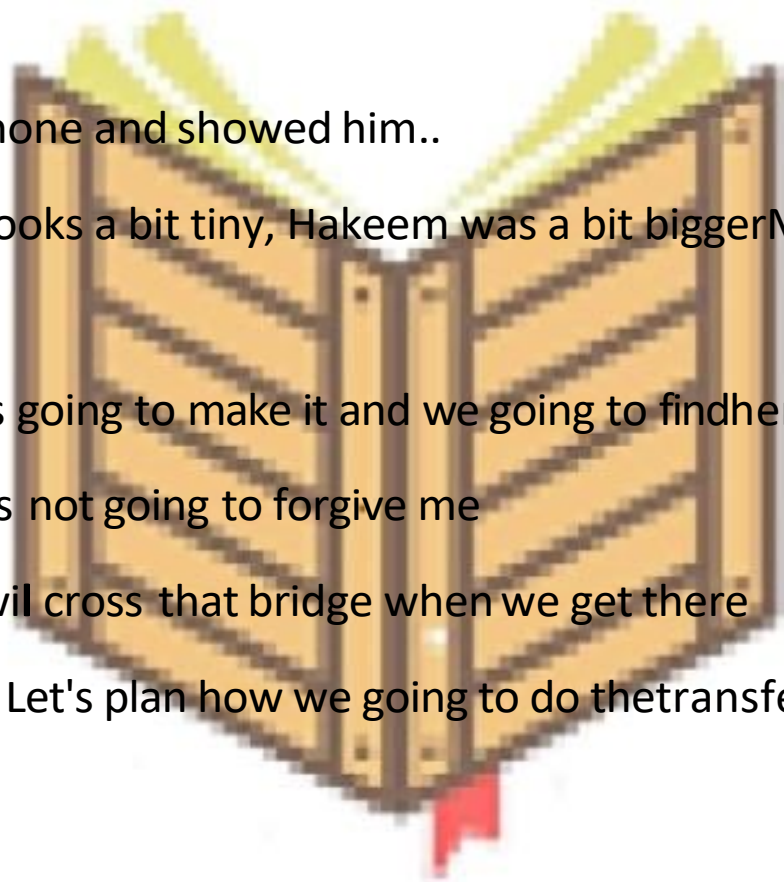
Me: Sandy is not going to forgive me

Kelso: We will cross that bridge when we get there

Me: True.... Let's plan how we going to do the transfer

SETHU

NOVELSGURU.COM



I looked at Sandi..Me:

Are you okay? Sandi:

I'll be okay

Me: Can I see your operation?Sandi:

It's fine.. Thank you

I sat down and leaned against the wall with my back..

Me: How can Nongcebo do this to us? Escape alone?Leave us here?

I shook my head..

Sandi: She probably had her own reasonsMe: Her own selfish reasons!

Sandi: Do you think my Daughter is still alive?

Me: I think so and I hope they going to let you see her soon

Sandi: I pray so.. They won't even let me hold her,breast feed her

Me: This is bad Sandi.. How did we even end up

NOVELSGURU.COM

here? This is bad indeed

NONGCEBO

After eating breakfast with Luca, he allowed me to go and see Marco. He was in the other room. I knocked and opened the door gently, he was laying on the bed. He was shirtless with a bandage around his arm, bruises on his body where Aldo had beaten him up. His face was also still wounded.. I closed the door and looked at him..

Me: Marco

He didn't move

Me: Marco

I walked closer to the bed and gently shook him..Me:

Marco

He held my arm and twisted it..Me:

Ahhhhh!

NOVELSGURU.COM

He let go..

Marco: I'm so sorry, I didn't know it was you Señorita

I rubbed my arm..

Marco: When you live a life similar to mine, you don't peacefully sleep. You can get killed in your sleep

Me: I can tell

Marco: I deeply apologize

He got out of bed in nothing but his briefs only.. He was still a bit disoriented..

Me: You still need to rest, you're in pain

Marco: I can't rest forever Señorita.. How are you? I shrugged my shoulders...

Marco: When everything is done and we're out of danger, I will get you back to your loved ones I promise. Andre has to get whatever it is from them, then you **will** be home free

Me: What about you?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: I'll have to go away, I've shot his right hand man. That won't be forgiven, he will hunt me down everyday of my life. Which is why I need you to stay put for now this is no longer a game, it's serious war

I nodded..

Me: Thank you again, thank you for saving me Marco:

You welcome Señorita

Me: I should leave you to rest, I wanna rest too. Hardly got any sleep last night

He nodded..

I walked out of the bedroom and closed the door..

KELSO

I had to part ways for the day with Sole. He had to go and get Nathan, then I drove home.

I was relieved that this plan with Modrid was going well, there's hope that the girls will be returned back to us..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I took my keys and opened the security door, when I heard a familiar voice...

Ken: Kelso

I looked at him..

He took off his hat, this was very unbelievable.. I must be dreaming or something. This is not real, Ken is dead! We buried him not so long ago...

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:55] : SEASON FINALE

133

KELSO

I looked at him, he was sitting on the couch..

Ken: I had to fake my death, The Gav had it in forme



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: We buried you, Grams mourned. She was shattered by your death

Ken: I understand, if I didn't fake my death, he was going to kill me for real

Me: How sweet.. Do you want a medal for your fake perfect stunt?

Ken: I know you mad, it must've been difficult to mourn for me

I chuckled..

Me: I didn't mourn for you, don't get it twisted Ken:

Kelso

Me: Gertrude told me everything, she showed your letters. The threats you made to her, everything that you've put her through

Ken: She did (cunning smile)

Me: You know Ken I don't have time for this, I have a lot going on right now. Nongcebo is missing, do you mind coming back another day?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Ken: I read the story.. I'm sorry. I know how much

you love her, it must be very hard for you

Me: I don't need your sympathy, what I need from you is to disappear. Grams doesn't deserve this, have some heart. You've put her through hell, we don't need you anymore

Ken: That's sad.. I hope one day you will let go of this anger that you have towards me, and we can possibly fix things

Me: Goodbye Ken, close the door on your way out

SOLE

I went through Modrid's letter again and rewrote the plan. His letter had the whole plan written but it was coded, how did I not see this. This is going to be a simple gateway, one that won't attract any attention that we don't need...

Me: The Van will be at the gate exactly at 16:00 to pick up Modrid. It goes through St Anne street, a street that is presumed to be safe.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at his letter again..

Me: Justice.. Justice can access the SAPS data base and forge IDs for us. He will charge us R50 000

I looked at the price again..

Me: 50k for IDs that we going to use for a few minutes?

I shook my head..

Me: Lenny.. Lenny is a mechanic, he will help us with a van and it will cost R100 000

The prices were insane! But this is for my girls, Scorpion and I we'll have to pay for these guys..

I went through everything again, and saw something else. Justice will also help us with the Radios. When the real van gets stuck, they will try to contact the station but the signal will be jammed from their side. They won't be able to get through, their cell phones won't have signals too. They won't be able to call for help, for at least 2 hours. This whole shit will be based on 2 hours, just a mere 2

hours is what we need to get Modrid out. I hope it's going to work..I took my phone and texted the boys,we don't have much time..

NONGCEBO

I sat on the wood and threw stones around on the leaves. It was a bit chilly, the woods are cold. I felt a jacket around my shoulders, I turned back and it was Marco..

Marco: Señorita

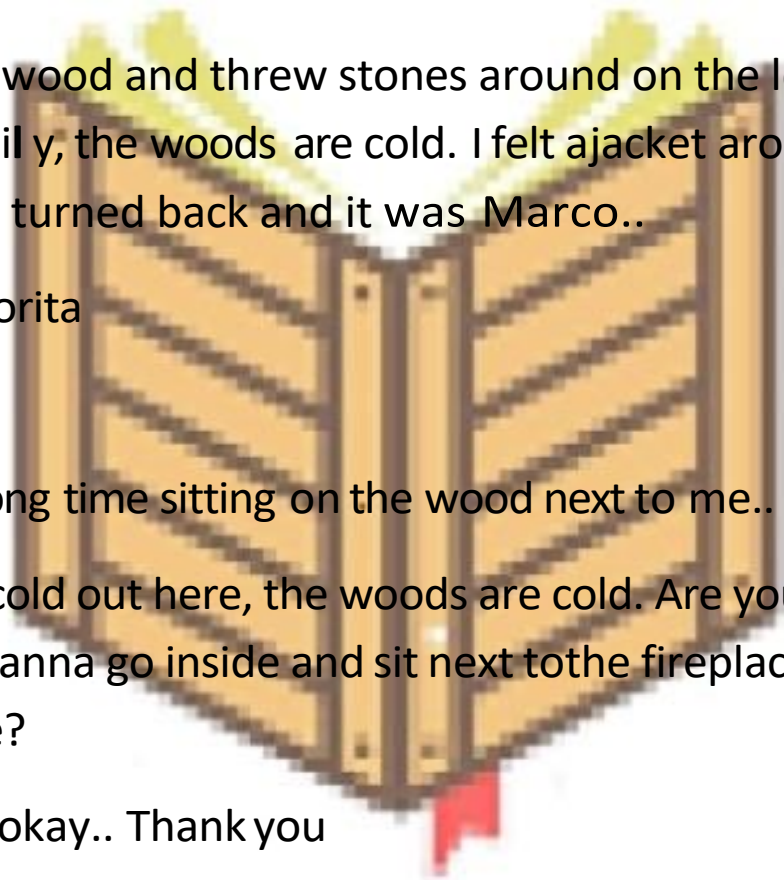
Me: Hey

He took a long time sitting on the wood next to me..

Marco: It's cold out here, the woods are cold. Are you sure you don't wanna go inside and sit next to the fireplace and drink coffee?

Me: No I'm okay.. Thank you

Marco: I know this is difficult for you, I know you miss home. I promise you that when all this is done,



you will be reunited with your loved ones
Me: I can't even call them?

Marco: No... We can use a prepaid phone but still..If you call home since they know that you are missing they might track the signal, if they do Andre will track your family down and they will find us

Me: I doubt my family would do that

Marco: If my wife was missing and she calls me, after that call I'm in the car chasing the trail

I faked a smile..Me:

How sweet

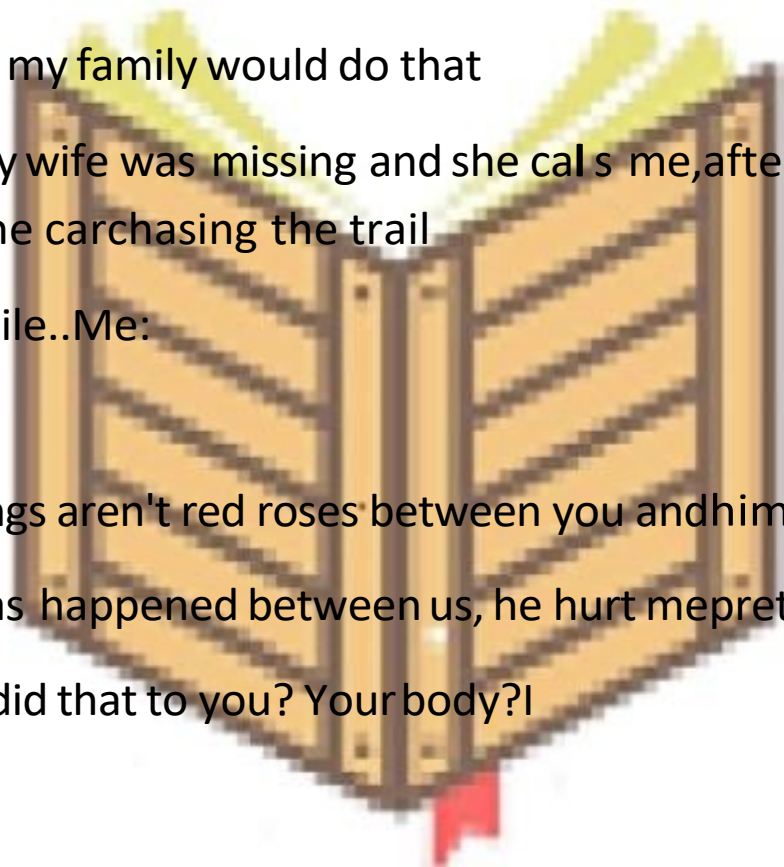
Marco: Things aren't red roses between you and him?

Me: A lot has happened between us, he hurt me pretty bad

Marco: He did that to you? Your body? I

noded..

Me: Threw me in a shower, scrubbed me with chemicals until my skin peeled off. Burnt my nipple,



raped me. Had sex with his mistress and made me to witness it

Marco: And you still went back? Me:

Stupid I know

I took a deep breath..

Me: I thought no one was going to love me, I mean look at me.. I thought that sticking with the devil you know is better than seeking an Angel that you don't know. Didn't wanna go through hell twice

Marco: Not all men are like that.. I'm sorry you went through that, I despise Men who abuse women.

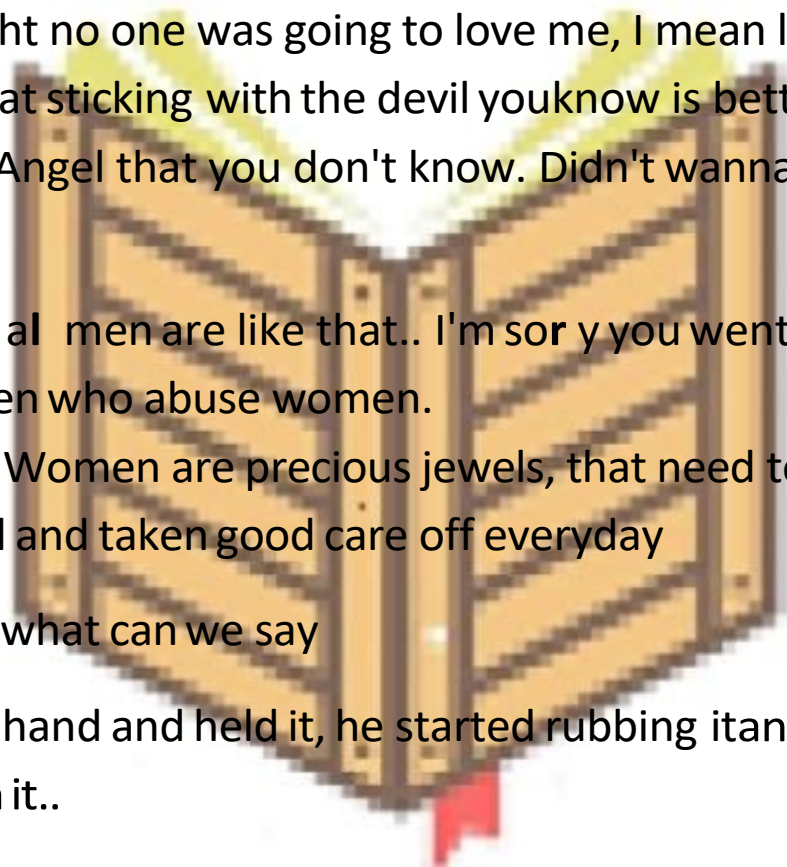
They weak. Women are precious jewels, that need to be appreciated and taken good care of everyday

Me: It's life what can we say

He took my hand and held it, he started rubbing it and blew warm air on it..

Marco: We need to get you inside, it's freezing cold here

Me: Can I ask you something?



Marco: Yes

Me: Why did you save me? Risk your life and betrayed your boss?

Marco: I don't know.. Maybe you needed saving, you looked like you needed saving

We both looked at each other and laughed..

He held my other hand, and rubbed my hands together..

Marco: How is that? Me:

Feels a bit better(Silence)

Me: Some people would feel scared right now but.. I trust you, I don't know why but I trust you

Marco: Too trusting, you have to work around that Me: I will

He looked at me and I looked at him too..

He leaned over and kissed me still holding my hands... He broke the kiss before it went far..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: We should get you inside Luca:

Marco

We looked at him..

Luca: I'm going to collect wood for the fire place Marco:

Will you be able to do that all by yourself?

Me: We can tag along Marco: I

don't think so

Me: It's around the woods right? No one knows where

Marco: I know but...

Me: Come on.. We can't be stuck in the cabin every day forever

He looked at Luca, Luca shrugged his shoulders.. Marco: Fine just this once

I got up and helped him to get up.. Luca:

Need a walking stick Marco? Marco: I'm

fine

NOVELSGURU.COM

Luca: Thought you would want to be Andre for some change

Me: Andre uses a walking stick? Luca:

Yes..

Me: And he's dangerous?

Marco: Very

Luca picked up a stick..

Luca: He would be showing up right now walking like this

He imitated him..

Luca: "Marco I'm highly disappointed in you Brother"

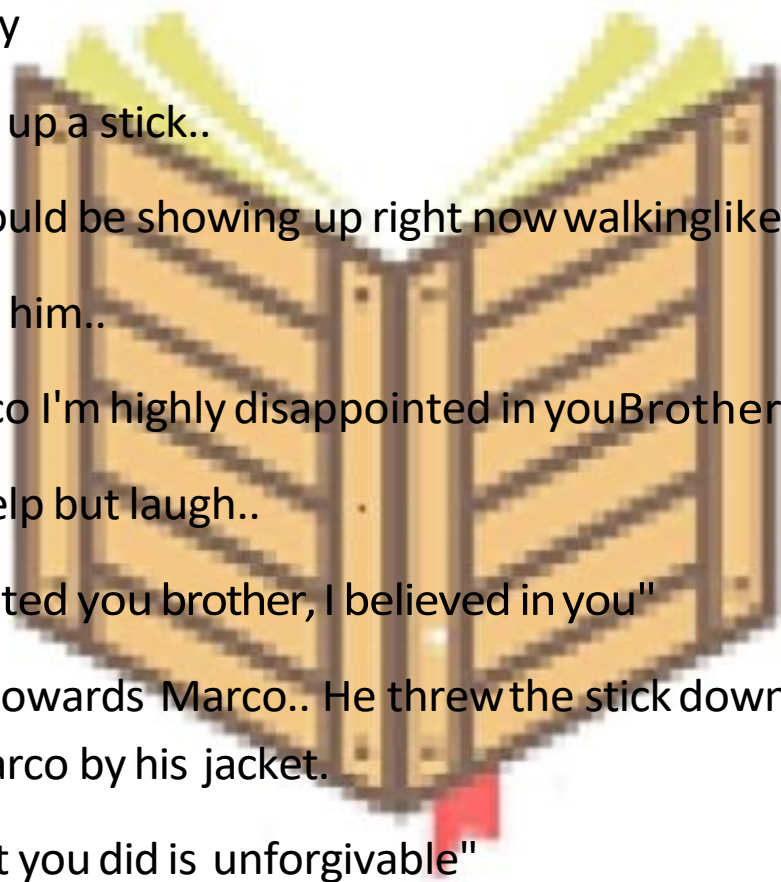
I couldn't help but laugh..

Luca: "I trusted you brother, I believed in you"

He walked towards Marco.. He threw the stick down and grabbed Marco by his jacket.

Luca: "What you did is unforgivable"

I continued laughing.. Marco hit Luca's hands off..



Marco: Quit playing let's go get the wood Me: That was brilliant I actually enjoyed that Luca: I'm a man of many talents

Marco put his arm around my shoulders and I put mine around his waist..

SETHU

I glanced down at the food. It was a cheese sandwich, juice and an apple..

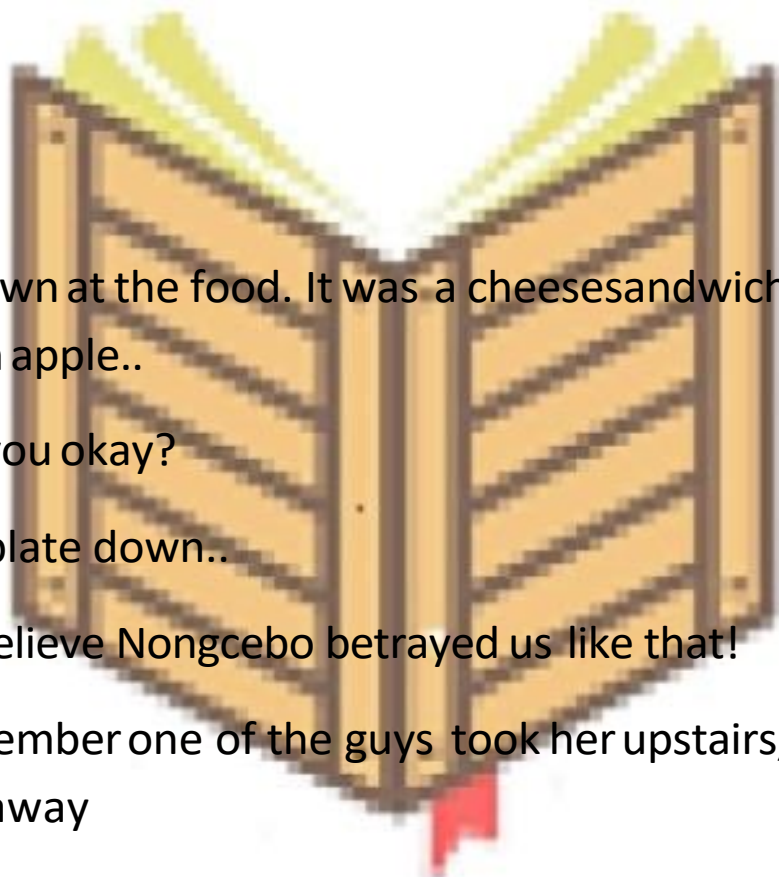
Sandi: Are you okay?

I threw my plate down..

Me: Can't believe Nongcebo betrayed us like that!

Sandi: Remember one of the guys took her upstairs, maybe she had to get away

Sethu: Bullshit! She saw an opportunity to get with Marco then used him to help her escape and leave us behind! I thought we were all in this together



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandi: If you were in Nongcebo's shoes wouldn't you have done the same thing if you had an opportunity to get out of here?

Me: No I wouldn't Sandi:

ohw I see

We heard the door unlocking, Romeo made his way in..

He looked at Sandi..

Romeo: You.. Come

Me: Where are you taking her?

Romeo: Shut up!

He walked up to Sandi and forced her up.. Sandi:

Awwww!

Me: Where are you taking her?

Romeo: I said shut up!

Sandi: It's okay Sethu Romeo

dragged her out..

NOVELSGURU.COM



NONGCEBO

I picked up the sticks..

Me: They smaller than I imagined Marco:

Luca is lazy to chop real wood Me: I guess this

will do for now Marco: I guess so too

He looked at me..

Marco: Are you fine? Your stack looks heavy already

Me: I'm fine.. It's not heavy

I picked up another stick and I almost touched a lizard, it hid under a leaf.. I dropped all my sticks jumping around and screaming...

Marco: What's wrong? What happened? Me: I

almost touched a lizard

Luca came to us..

NOVELSGURU.COM



Luca: Is everything okay?

Marco: Yeah everything is okay, just a damn lizard..I think we should go, Luca get the rest of the sticks

Luca: With pleasure

Luca picked up the remaining sticks.. Marco: I think we have enough.. Let's goWe started walking back to the cabin..

Marco: Put your hand around my arm

Me: Won't it put more pressure on you? Consideringyou holding a stack of sticks

Marco: I'm fine

I put my hand around his arm..

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:55]

: SEASON FINALE

NOVELSGURU.COM

SANDISIWE

Romeo took me to the room where they were keeping my baby. She was in an incubator, there was a guard at the door and a Dr inside the room..

I sat on the chair next to the incubator and looked at her, I couldn't even stop my tears from streaming down. I wasn't even allowed to hold her, but I could put my hand inside and touch her...

Me: Hi (crying)

I wish all of this could be over, my baby doesn't deserve to be here. This is not my idea of how I wanted to give birth..

RACHEL

NOVELSGURU.COM

Since Khumalo's family had arrived, I had to go back home. Tomorrow morning I have to go back to

work, then I'll see them later on when I knock off..First thing I did, was to pray again. Upon praying I got assurance that Nongcebo was safe, more safer than the other 2 girls. All we want is for them to come back home, come back safe. I opened my eyes and the other candles were blown out but the red one was still burning. Looking at it, it wasn't burning for the reason that I had in mind, I was shown new love. For the fact that it didn't blow out, it represented new and genuine love between two individuals. I was confused, how does love come into play with regards to the girls being kidnapped?

SOLE

Justice: Yes I know Modrid, he's a very good client of mine I looked around, this guy was a geek. Computers everywhere, Xbox and games. The place was untidy..

Me: Modrid sent us

NOVELSGURU.COM

He fixed his glasses..J

Justice: It's time?

Kelso and I looked at each other..

Justice: Modrid contacted me a while back telling me that some guys will show up asking for help on his behalf

Kelso: We are the guys

Justice: I see.. Well then please make yourselves feel at home.. Something to drink?

Me: No thank you.. We cool

Justice: Modrid only explained a bit

Me: We need fake IDs to get into the prison, we need you to login into their database. Check which guards are assigned to pick up Modrid, and also on the big day we need you to jam the signal. They shouldn't be able to contact the station at all for at least 2 hours

Justice: That's some big ass mission you guys have! Me: Can you do that?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Justice: Give me some few minutes

My phone beeped, I took it out and checked. They had sent me a picture of Sandisiwe and our baby. She was sitting next to the incubator, my heart sank.. I clenched my jaws and squeezed my phonetight..

Me: Justice

Justice looked at me..Me:

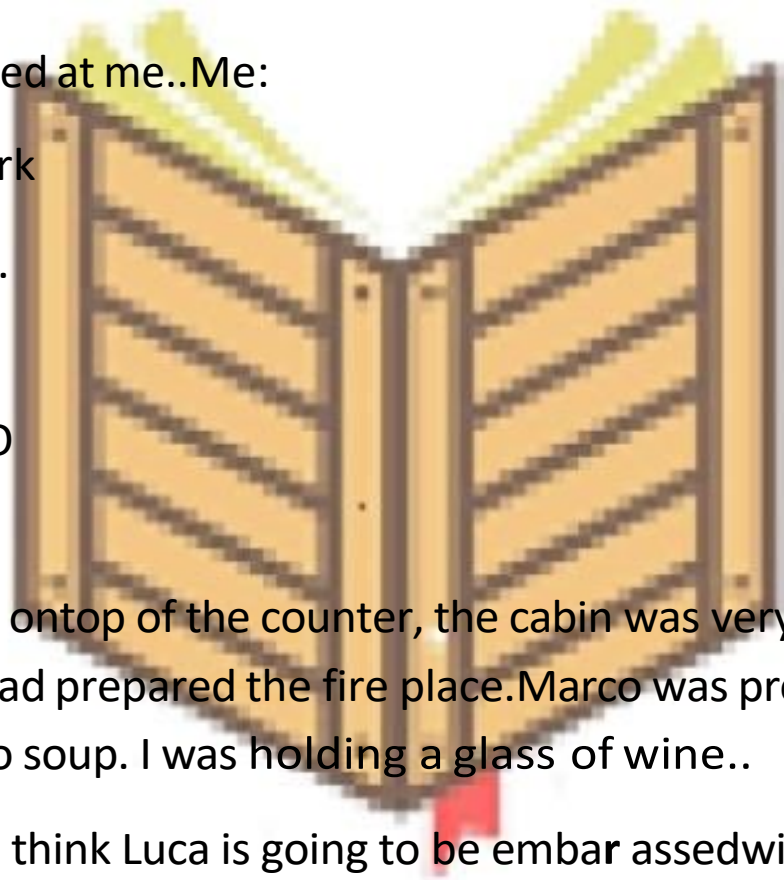
Make it work

He nodded..

NONGCEBO

I was sitting ontop of the counter, the cabin was very warm after Luca had prepared the fire place.Marco was preparing a chili tomato soup. I was holding a glass of wine..

Me: Do you think Luca is going to be embarrassedwith buying with women things?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: No he won't Me:

I need clothes

Marco: We will make a plan. Luca will come back with your toiletries, that's the most important thing now

Me: I can't wear your t-shirts forever you know He looked at me and smiled..

Marco: I don't mind

Me: Do you have any colours when it comes to clothes, other than black & white?

Marco: No

Me: Why?

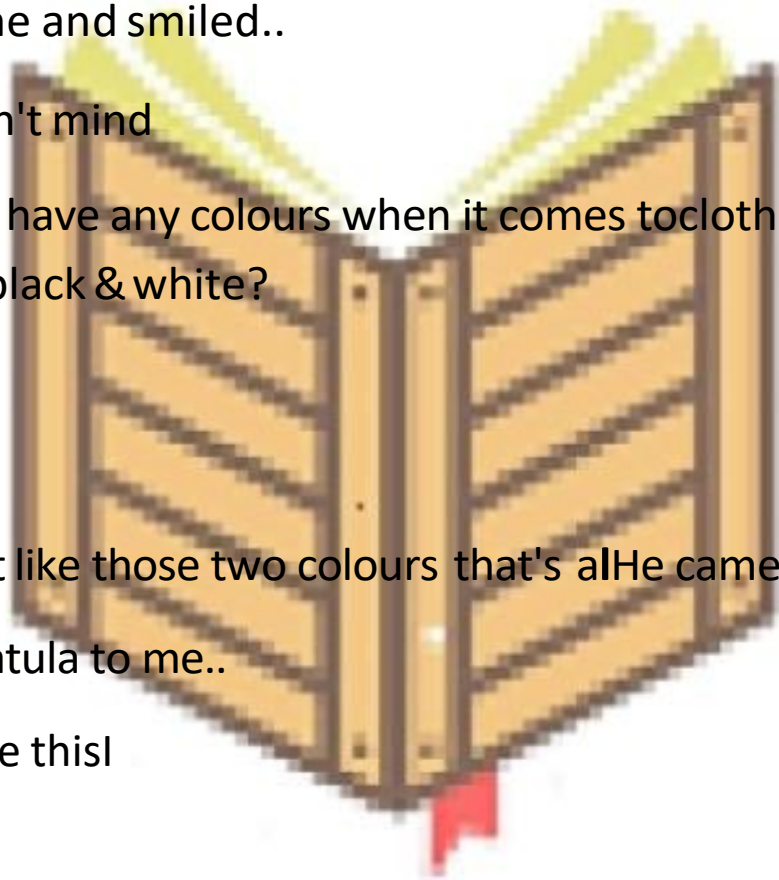
Marco: I just like those two colours that's all He came with the spatula to me..

Marco: Taste this!

tasted..

Me: It's delicious but chili

Marco: It's an old family recipe



Me: I see

Marco: You will go back to your loved ones when the time is right, I promise you that

Me: I know I will

He walked up to me and stood next to me..

Me: Will I ever see you again? When all of this is done?

Marco: I don't know.. I prefer keeping you safe, this war between Andre and I will turn out dangerous I don't want you getting hurt

Me: So when I go home, you'll only be a distant memory

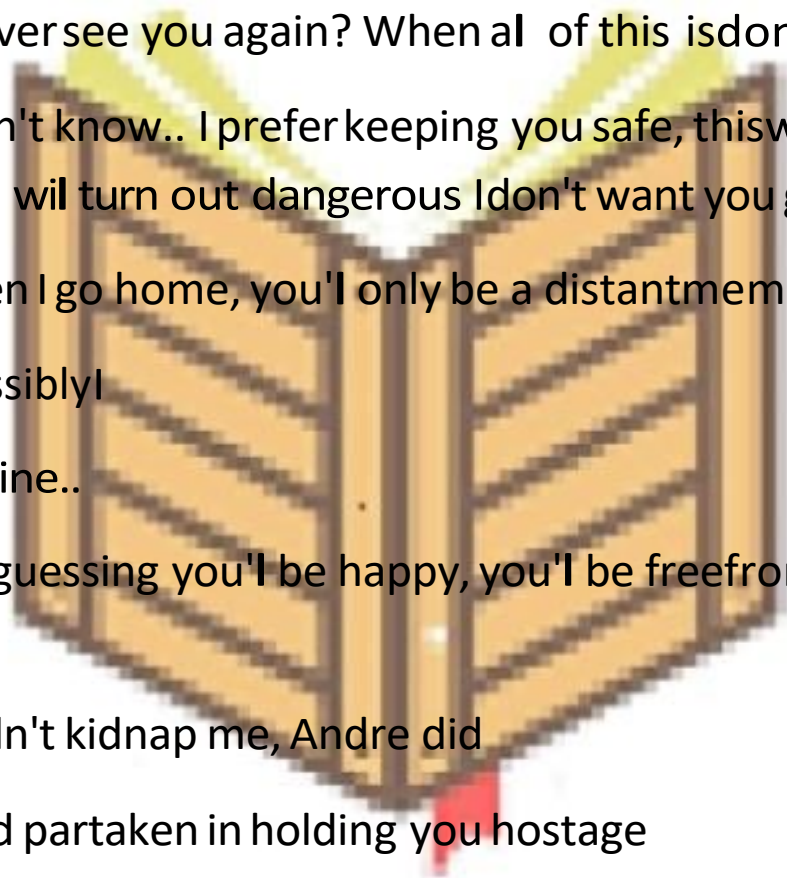
Marco: Possibly I

drank my wine..

Marco: I'm guessing you'll be happy, you'll be free from your captor

Me: You didn't kidnap me, Andre did

Marco: I had partaken in holding you hostage



Me: You rescued me from harm, that should count for something

Marco: It should

We looked at each other for a while, he put his hand on my waist and came to stand in front of me. Then we kissed..

SANDISIWE

Romeo opened the door, I walked in. He locked it behind me..

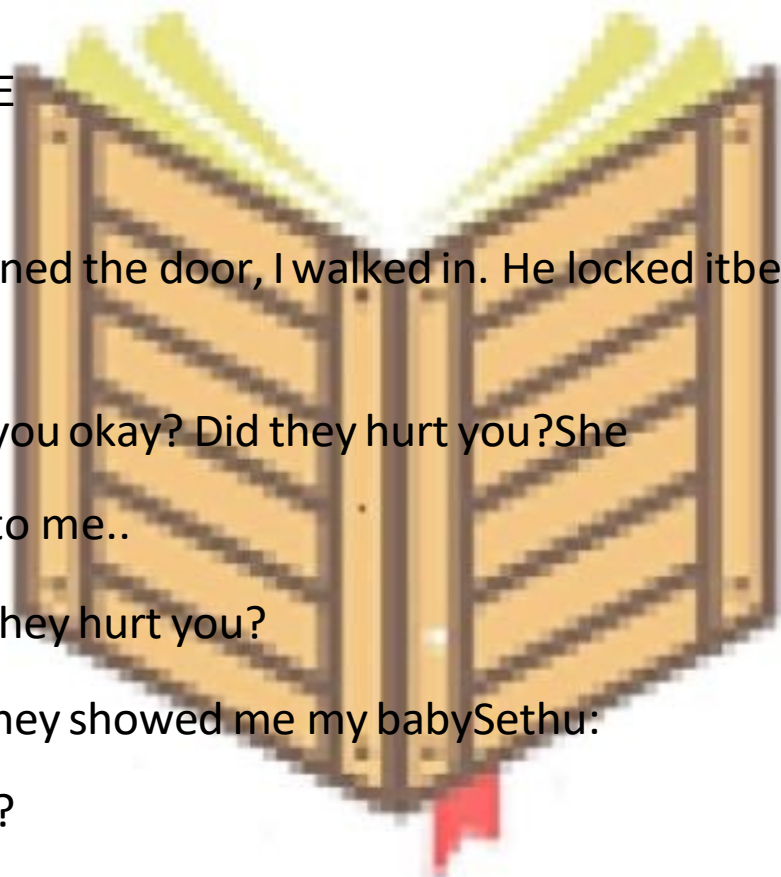
Sethu: Are you okay? Did they hurt you? She walked up to me..

Sethu: Did they hurt you?

Me: No... They showed me my baby Sethu:

Wow really?

Me: Yes.. They even allowed me to pump my breasts, not as good as breastfeeding but at least



she'll be drinking what she was meant to be sucking from me

Sethu: You are so strong, I don't know how you do it

Me: I have a baby to think of, I have to be strong for her

Sethu: What did you name her? Me:

Avery Cebokazi Gxaba Sethu: Beautiful

names

Me: She's very cute and adorable, took much from Sole than she did with me

Sethu: Wish I could see her Me:

Maybe you will

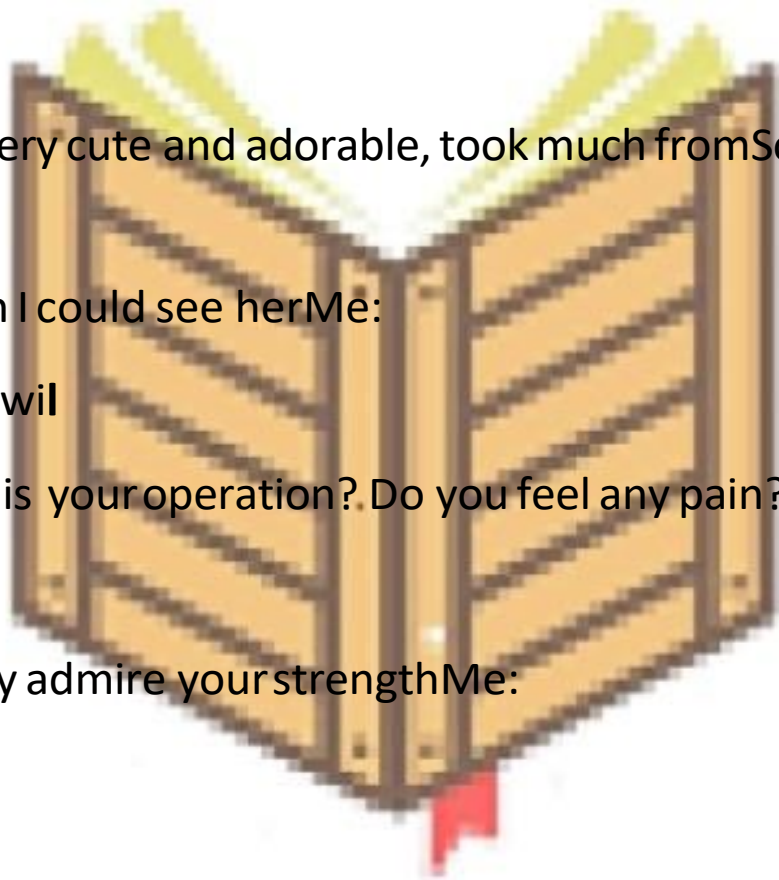
Sethu: How is your operation? Do you feel any pain? Me: No I'm good...

Sethu: I truly admire your strength Me:

Thank you

NONGCEBO

NOVELSGURU.COM



He parted my legs and got in between them.

He put his hands on my thighs, I wrapped my hands around his waist. His hands moved from my thighs and he put them on my butt, he pulled me more closer to him. A breath escaped my lips as we continued kissing.

I wrapped my arms around his neck, he squeezed my half displayed butt and moved to leave kisses on my neck. He kissed my cheek and came back to my lips. He moved his hands up underneath the t-shirt all the way up to my breasts, I stopped him...

Me: Stop

He looked at me...

Marco: I won't force you into anything that you don't want to do

Me: It's just that..He

looked at me..

Marco: I've seen you almost naked remember?



Me: I was in a bra and an underwear remember?

Marco: I don't care what your body looks like, your scars just prove that you are a survivor. He tried to kill you, tried to destroy you but here you are today. Beautiful as ever

My eyes wel ed up..

Marco: I'm sor y.. You shouldn't have went through that

My tears streamed down, he wiped them with histhumb..

Me: We going to do this and I might never see you again, how is that fair to me?

Marco: Let's shut everything out and try to enjoy the moment

Marco: May I? I

nodedd..

He lifted up my t-shirt and took it off..

I closed my eyes and he looked at me. His handssqueezed my breasts. Tears streamed down..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: You truly are beautiful

KELSO

I threw the cigarette bud down and stepped on it with my sneaker. I took out my phone, Nongcebowas my wal paper. I truly miss her

Me: hold on just a bit longer Babe Sole:

Hey I got them

I looked at him..

Sole: Tomor ow we going to see Lenny about thevan

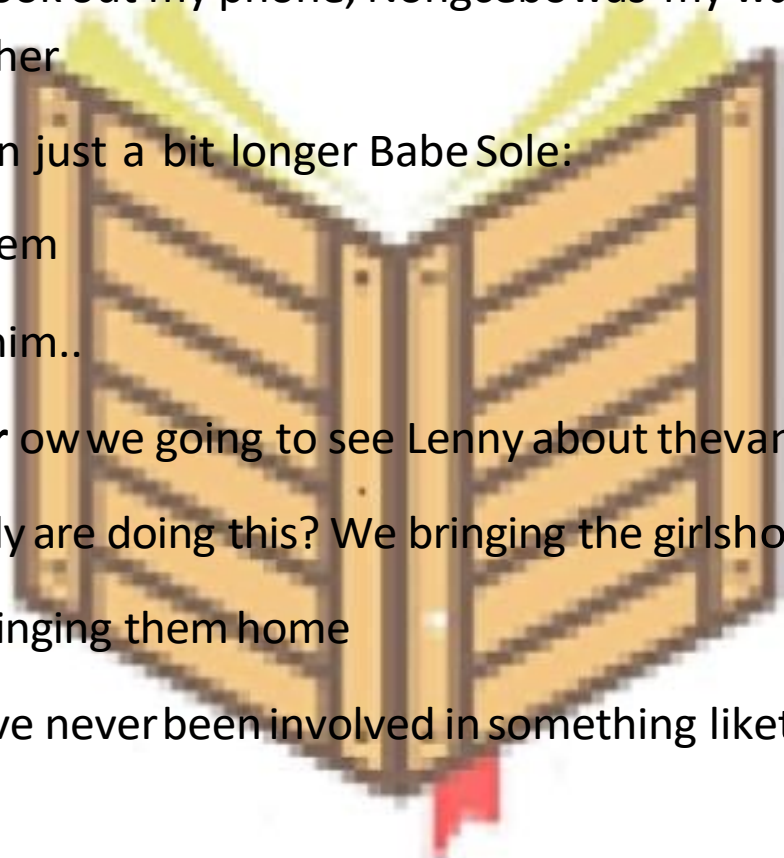
Me: We truly are doing this? We bringing the girlshome

Sole: We bringing them home

Me: We have never been involved in something like this before

Sole: After this, we no longer going to fuck with the

NOVELSGURU.COM



Italians Me:

Word!

RACHEL

Banza: Are you okay?!

looked at him...

Banza: You haven't touched your foodMe:

Something is puzzling me

Banza: What is it?

Me: When I was praying for the girls.. I had assurance that Nongcebo was safe...

Banza: That's good news right?

Me: Yes apart from the fact that there's also love that's starting with one of the girls. A new beginning, genuine and true love

Me: That's very strange, all the girls have partners.. There can't be any new love

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That's why I'm confused, I'll pray again

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:56] : SEASON FINALE

135

SOLE

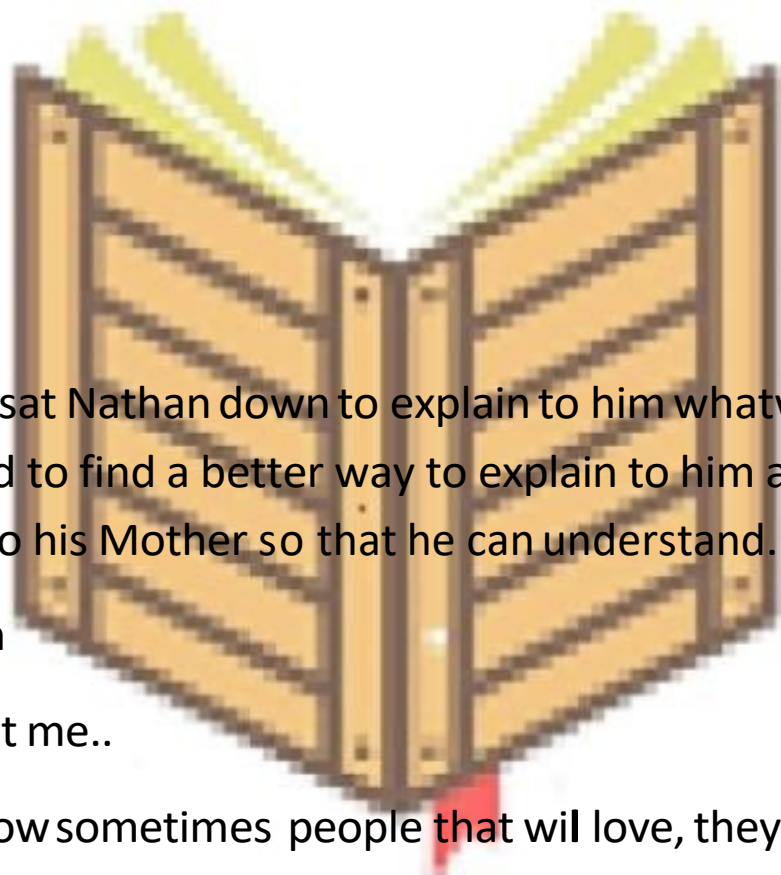
That night I sat Nathan down to explain to him what was going on, I needed to find a better way to explain to him about what happened to his Mother so that he can understand..

Me: Nathan

He looked at me..

Me: You know sometimes people that will love, they leave us and go to Heaven. Go be with God

He still listened...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: God called Mom to come to heaven and visit
Nathan: Is she going to come back?

Me: No but.. One day God is going to call you too then you will go to heaven and see Mom

Nathan: But if Mom went to heaven, who is going to take care of me. Take me to school?

Me: Before Mom went to heaven she asked me to take care of you, you will be living with me from here on

He looked down..

Nathan: I'm sad

Me: I know Buddy... I'm sad too, but we are going to make this work. We have to make this work for Mom. She will be very sad to see you sad, we have to work together as a team

Nathan: Can I visit her? Me:

Only when you are older

Nathan: I want to go and sleep Me:

Okay go I'll be right there



He got up from the couch and went to his bedroom. I laid back and closed my eyes.. This was the most difficult thing that I had to do..

NONGCEBO

For a thug, I thought Marco would at least have a tattoo but he was clean. His whole body was clean, free from any tattoos. He was left in his boxer briefs only now, I was totally naked on the kitchen counter. As much as I was very insecure about my body but Marco seemed not to mind at all, I thought it would turn him off but it didn't. He kissed every part of it, squeezed every part of it, and made sure that his touch was gentle enough.. He placed his hands on my waist and picked me up like I was nothing but a feather. He literally put me over his shoulders, my legs hanging over his shoulders. His hands firmly on my butt for my balance, and his face buried in my coochie. I put my hands on his head a bit nervous that I was going to fall, but he had a nice

NOVELSGURU.COM

grip on me.. I stil don't know how he managed tomuffed me in that position, it was the hardest position ever but he had no problems getting through.. When he sawthat I wasn't entirely comfortable he put me down again..

Me: And I thought I was going to fal

Marco: That means you don't trust me enoughMe: Not with that (Laughing)

Marco: I was nevergoing to let you falHe came closer and we kissed..

We continued kissing and he got me off the counter,then he turned me around and spanked my ass a fewtimes. I put my hands on the counter, then he pul ed the smal step ladder that I normal y use when I want to access the upper part of the cupboard. He lifted my leg up and placed it on the ladder, whilst my otherleg was on the floor..

He kissed me on my cheek then went on to suck myearlobe with his hand down tapping my clit and his

other hand gently on my neck.

His crotch was rock hard against my butt, I moved my hand to massage him until his breathing deepened. There more I rubbed him, the more he tapped harder against my clit.. He whispered in my ear..

Marco: We don't have condoms and I'm not going to stop. I haven't had sex for at least two months I'm hoping you are clean too

With my eyes closed I nodded.. We don't know what the future holds, we don't even know if we going to make it out of here. Why not risk just this once enjoy the moment and shut everything else out.. He took off his boxer briefs and bent me a little, he inserted himself in stretching me wider than I have been stretched before. I moaned a little with my hand on his thigh pushing him back a little. He put his hands on my waist and pulled me closer to him, my breath left me for a moment and he moaned as he made his way further in with his grip tighter on my waist...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: You tighter than I thought (whispering) Me: You bigger than I thought

He moved his hand down on my hip, his other hand down on my clit and he started pumping.. It started off a bit hectic but as I got more wet it was becoming very nice..

He leaned over and stopped rubbing my clit, he spanked my partiality exposed butt..

Marco: Fuck Señorita!!

KELSO

I was woken up by a knock, I looked at the time. It was 4am now. I got off bed to check who it was, it was Scorpion..

Scorpion: Kels

Me: Scorp

Scorp: I'll wait for you in the car, we have a van to go and rent

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: So early?

Scorp: Time waits for no man, Sole texted me
Me: Cool
give me 30

Scorp: 30 it is

I was about to close the door..Scorp:

Hey

I looked at her...

Scorp: We going to find himMe:

Yeah I know

I closed the door..

SOLE

I took his jacket and woke him up..Me:

Nath

He looked at me..

Me: Come on put on your jacket



NOVELSGURU.COM

He opened his eyes and looked at me..Nath:

Where are we going Daddy?

Me: I'm taking you to Grandma's house, she will take you to preschool later on

Nath: Okay

Me: Let me help you put on your jacket, I'll come and get you later on okay?

Nath: Okay

NONGCEBO

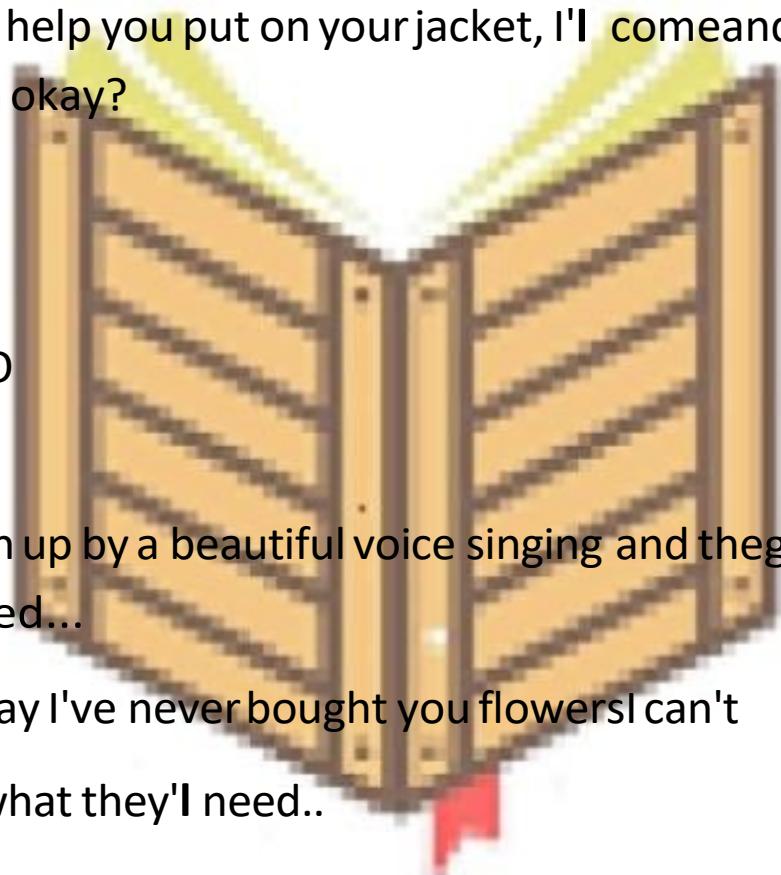
I was woken up by a beautiful voice singing and the guitar being played...

"And I can say I've never bought you flowers I can't figure out what they'll need..

I never thought that I'd love someone, that was someone else's dream..

NOVELSGURU.COM

You give me something that makes me scared



alright, this could be nothing but I'm willing to give it a try... "

Me: Marco?

He stopped playing..

I rose up from the pillow..

Marco: I thought that wasn't loud!

chuckled..

Me: You have a beautiful voice

I got out of bed and switched on the light, he was sitting on the chair..

Marco: Come I'll teach you how to play

Me:
What time is it?

Marco: I'm not really sure

I walked up to him and sat on top of him..

He put the guitar on my thighs and kissed me on the shoulder..



NOVELSGURU.COM

SANDISIWE

Sethu: Sandi are you sleeping? Me:

Not really

Sethu: If we get out of here are you ever going to forgive Sole?

(Silence)

Me: If we get out of here, I'm leaving him Sethu:

I'm leaving Scorpion too

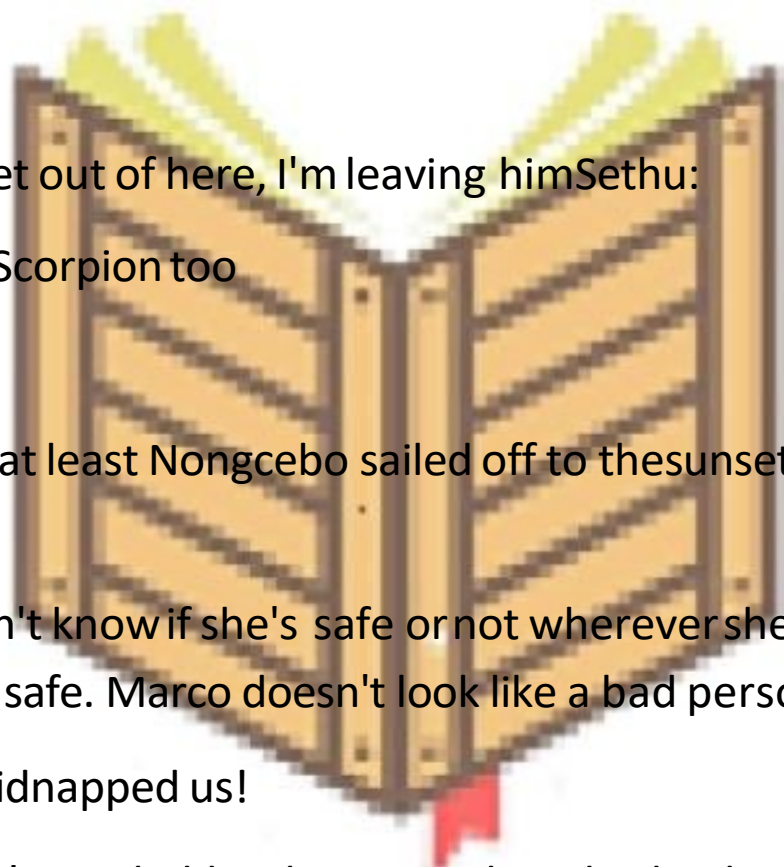
(Silence)

Sethu: Well at least Nongcebo sailed off to the sunset with Mcdreamy

Me: We don't know if she's safe or not wherever she is, but I'm hoping he's safe. Marco doesn't look like a bad person

Sethu: He kidnapped us!

Me: He didn't.. He held us hostage. Though what he did was not good but you can see that he's not a bad person



Sethu: If Marco was a good person he would've let us go

Me: And risk his life?

Sethu: He risked it with Nongcebo, he could've risked it with all of us

Me: They had a chemistry, he wasn't going to risk his life for all of us!

She exhaled..

Sethu: What Nongcebo did is unforgivable, definitely not a good friend

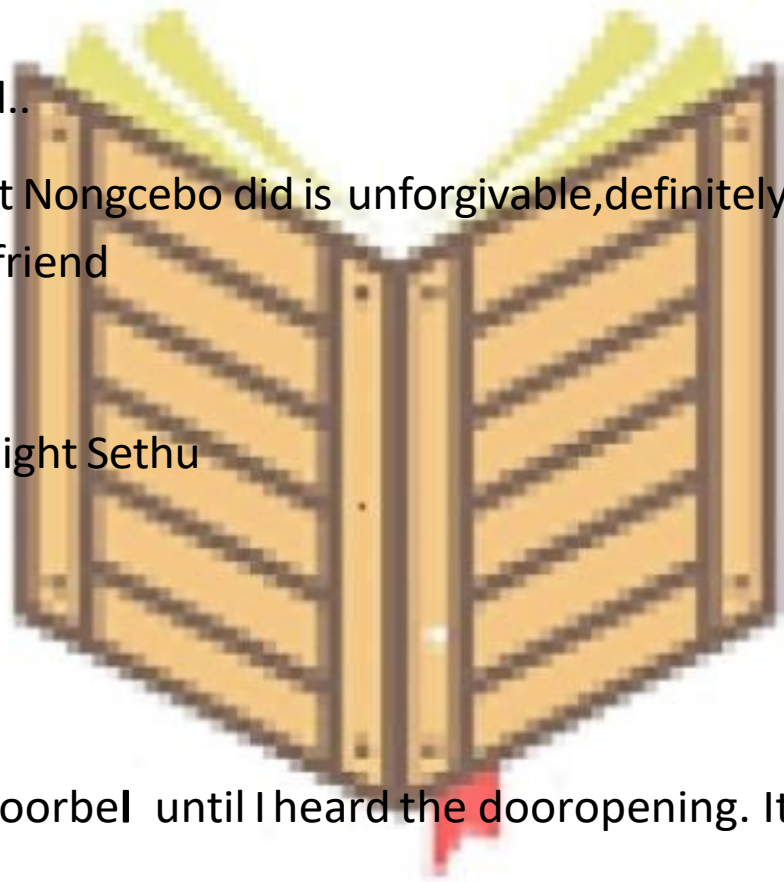
I sighed..

Me: Good night Sethu

SOLE

I rang the doorbell until I heard the door opening. It was my Mother..

Ma: Sole?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Hey Ma

She let us in..

Ma: What are you doing here at Dawn?

Me: I need you to uhm.. I need you to take Nathan to preschool later on

She looked at Nathan..My

Father showed up..

Dad: Who is that at such an ungodly hourMa: It's

Sole

Dad: What's going on?

Me: I'm here to drop off Nathan, I have to be somewhere

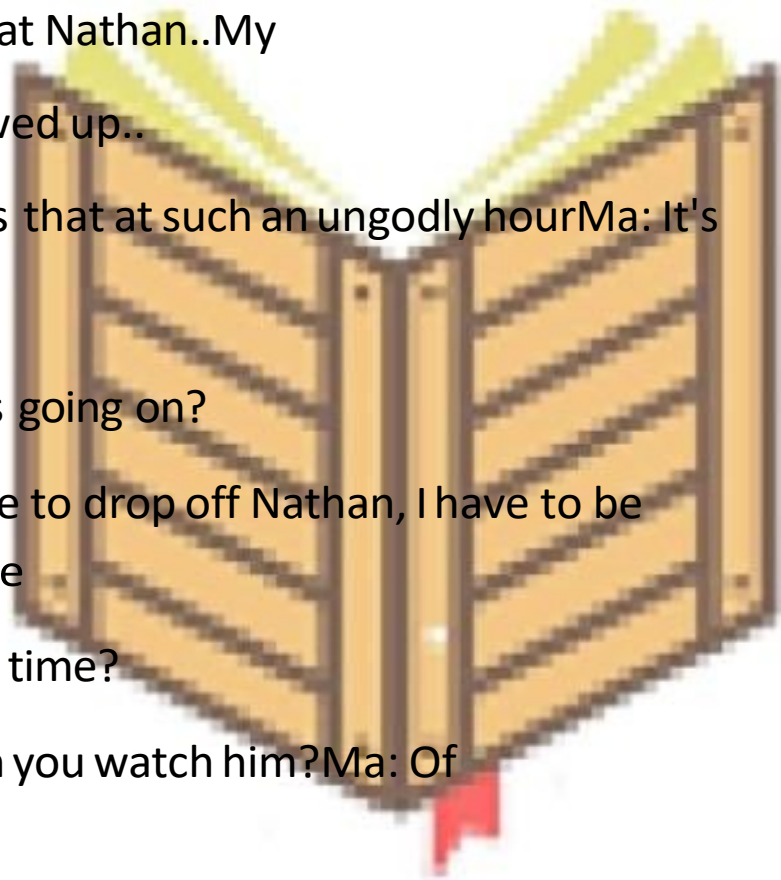
Dad: At this time?

Me: Ma can you watch him?Ma: Of

course I wil

Me: Thank you.. I'll pick him up later Ma: Come

on Bokkie let's get you in bed



NOVELSOURU.COM

I looked at him..

Me: I'll come get you later okay?

Nathan: Are you also going to heaven just like Mommy?

I crouched and held his hands.. Me: No

I'm not going to leave you He nodded..

Me: Give me a hug He

gave me a hug... Me: I

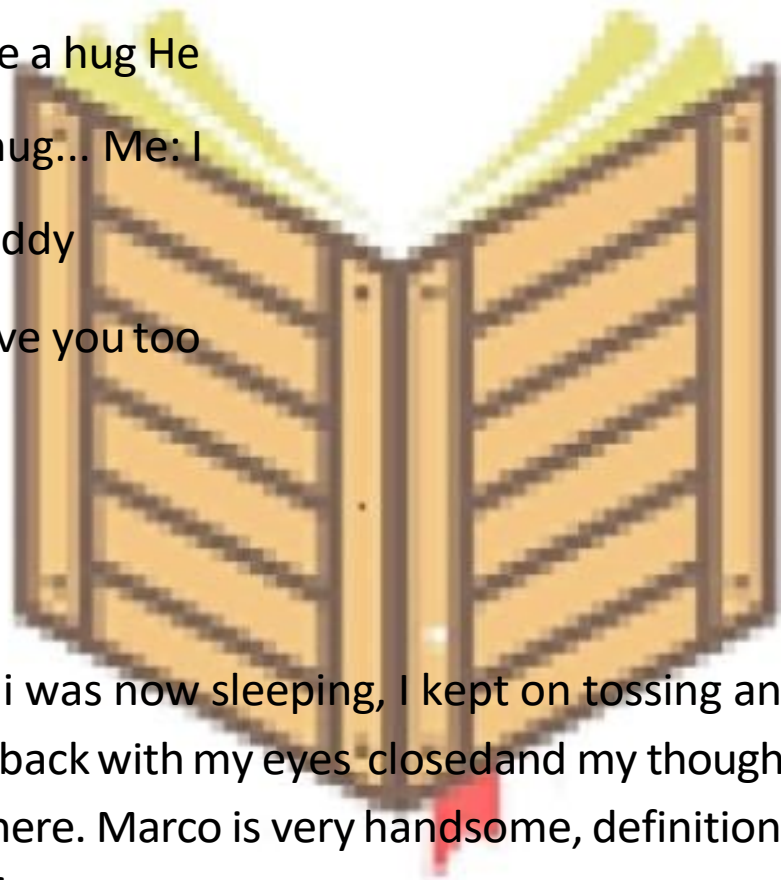
love you Buddy

Nathan: I love you too

SETHU

I think Sandi was now sleeping, I kept on tossing and turning.

I laid on my back with my eyes closed and my thoughts took me somewhere. Marco is very handsome, definition of a true man. A perfect



NOVELSGURU.COM

physique, a great smile and too damn hot! Why did he choose Nongcebo? Yes she's a bit beautiful but I think I'm more beautiful than she is..

What did he see in her? It doesn't make sense..

.

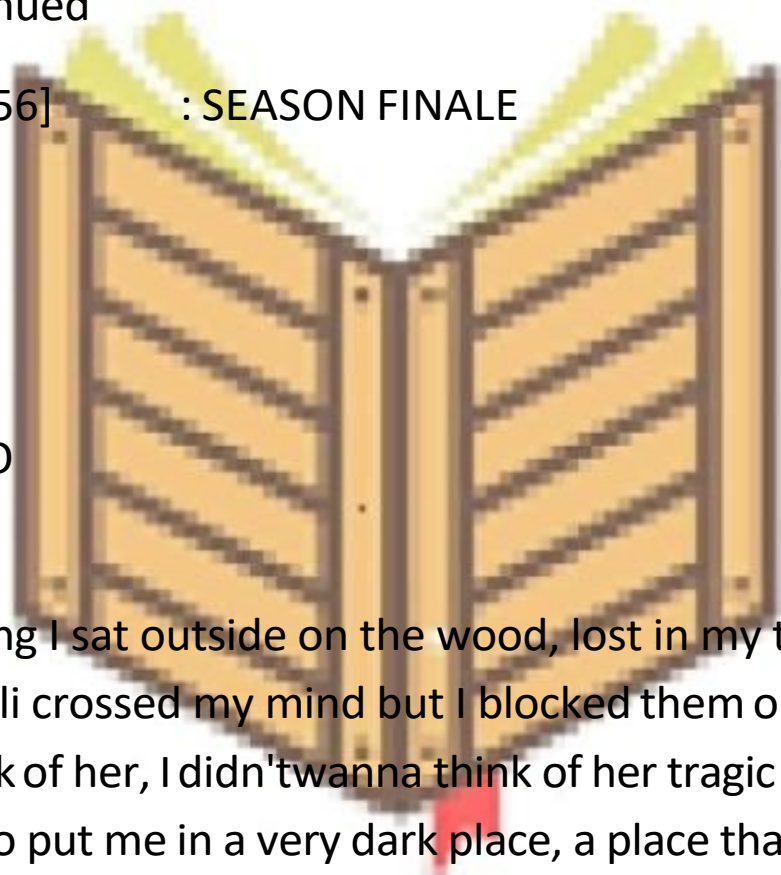
To be continued

[08/24, 13:56] : SEASON FINALE

136

NONGCEBO

That morning I sat outside on the wood, lost in my thoughts. Flashes of Sli crossed my mind but I blocked them out. I didn't wanna think of her, I didn't wanna think of her tragic death. It was going to put me in a very dark place, a place that was going to severely depress me. I've been through the most and I deal with everything but blocking the thoughts



NOVELSGURU.COM

out, I don't wanna think about my pain. If I do, it will kill me slowly..

I felt something hitting me on my back, I turned around to find Marco standing behind me..

Me: What did you throw at me?

Marco: A light stick

Me: It hurt

Marco: That's a lie, with my jacket you won't even feel a stone hitting you

He walked closer.. Marco:

What's wrong?

Me: Nothing, just thinking about life

Marco: Well Luca showed up with his wife Rosetta, she brought clothes for you. Her clothes are going to fit you. You two are almost the same size

I got up..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: I'm going somewhere, you will stay with

them for a while until I get back

Me: Where are you going?

Marco: To handle some business

Me: What business?

Marco: If we wanna see each other after this, then I have to make sure that we both safe from Andre

Me: You going to kill him?

Marco: No I'm not going to kill him

Me: What are you going to do?

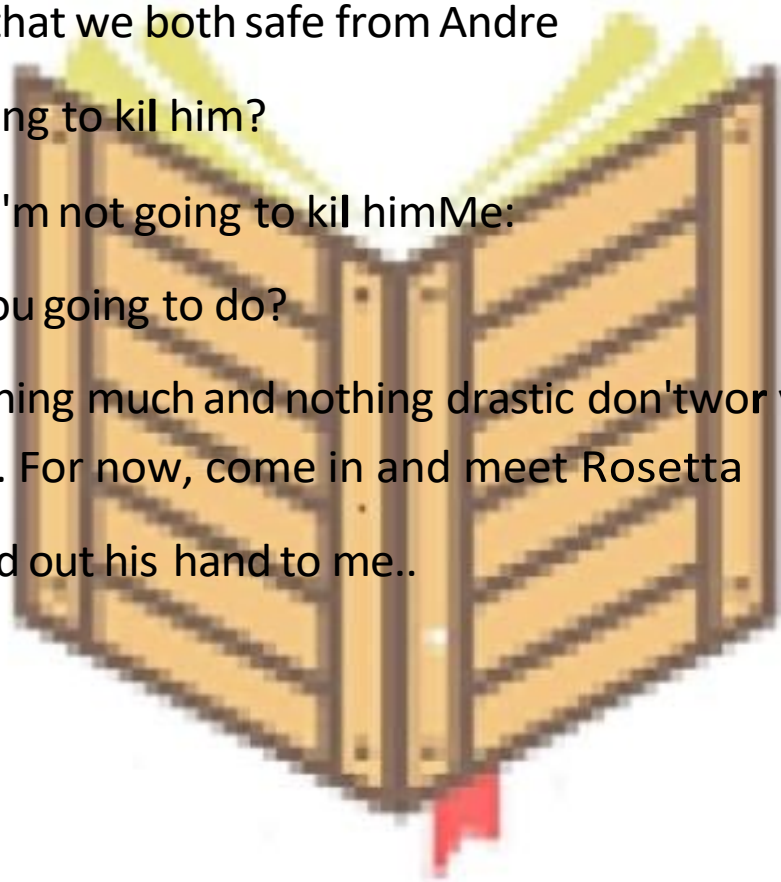
Marco: Nothing much and nothing drastic don't worry about that.. For now, come in and meet Rosetta

He stretched out his hand to me..

SOLE

Lenny: What do you think?

Scorp: A 100k just to hire it for a few hours?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lenny: It's business!

looked at Scorp..

Me: Pay him Scorp:

A 100k?

Me: Just pay the man

Scorp handed Lenny the bag of money..Scorp: A

100k

Lenny took it..

Lenny: I hope you guys won't come back to steal the money back

Me: That's not our style, we don't do business like that

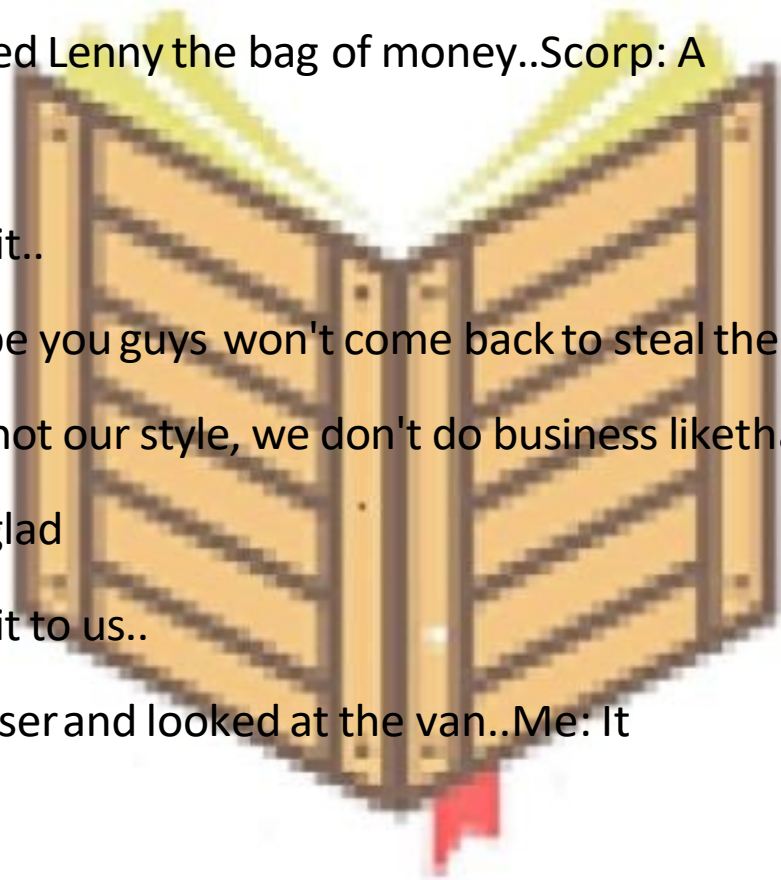
Lenny: I'm glad

He handed it to us..

I walked closer and looked at the van..Me: It

looks legit

Lenny: I know my job



Scorp: Tomorrow we getting Mo out
Sole:
And finally getting the girls Lenny gave us
the keys...

RACHEL

I looked at him..

Me: How are you feeling? Gav:

I'm better

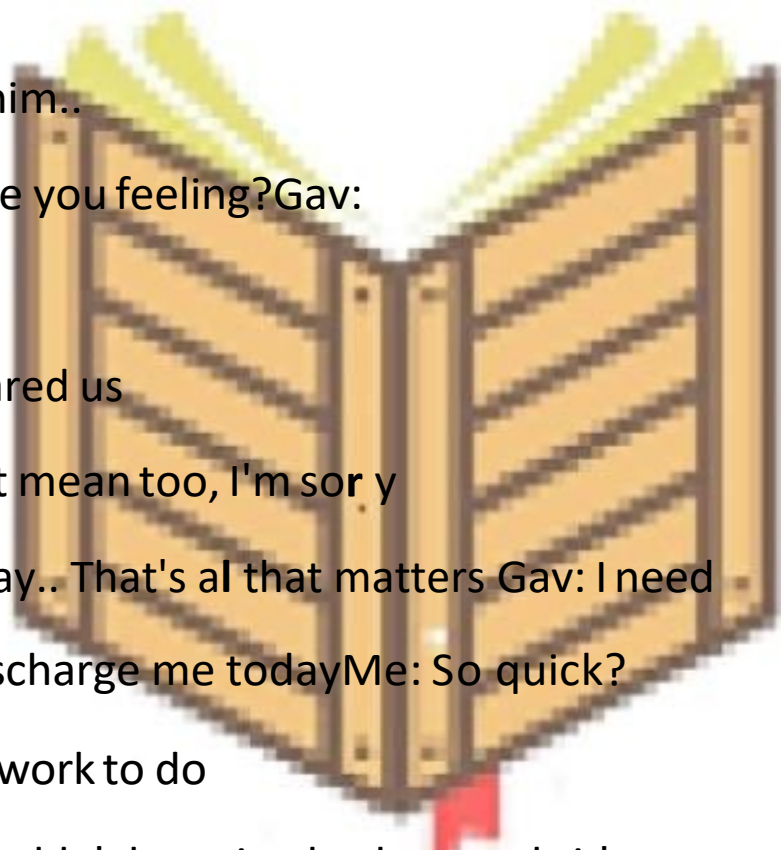
Me: You scared us

Gav: I didn't mean too, I'm sorry

Me: You okay.. That's all that matters Gav: I need
the Dr to discharge me today Me: So quick?

Gav: I have work to do

Me: You shouldn't be going back to work, it's too soon



NOVELSGURU.COM

Gav: I have to find my Daughter, I've lost one Daughter already. Can't lose another one

Me: I've prayed and got assurity that Nongcebo isokay, she's safe

Gav: Have you been shown where she is?Me: No...

Not yet

Gav: Thank you foreverything

Me: It's okay.. I'm always here when you need meI felt a bit dizzy, I put my hands on his bed..

Gav: Are you okay?

Me: I've been feeling a bit dizzy lately, I don't knowwhy

Gav: Sit down

I pul ed the chair and sat down...

Me: Maybe I've been working a lot, my body is complaining

Gav: Have you had time to rest?

Me: I've been feeling a bit restless with everything



that's been going on

Gav: You have to try and rest

He held my hand...

Me: I will try

ANDRE MARTINEZ

I looked at Aldo, the good news is that he didn't die. He was at the hospital but in a very critical condition.. His fiancé walked in..

Her: Hi

Me: Señorita

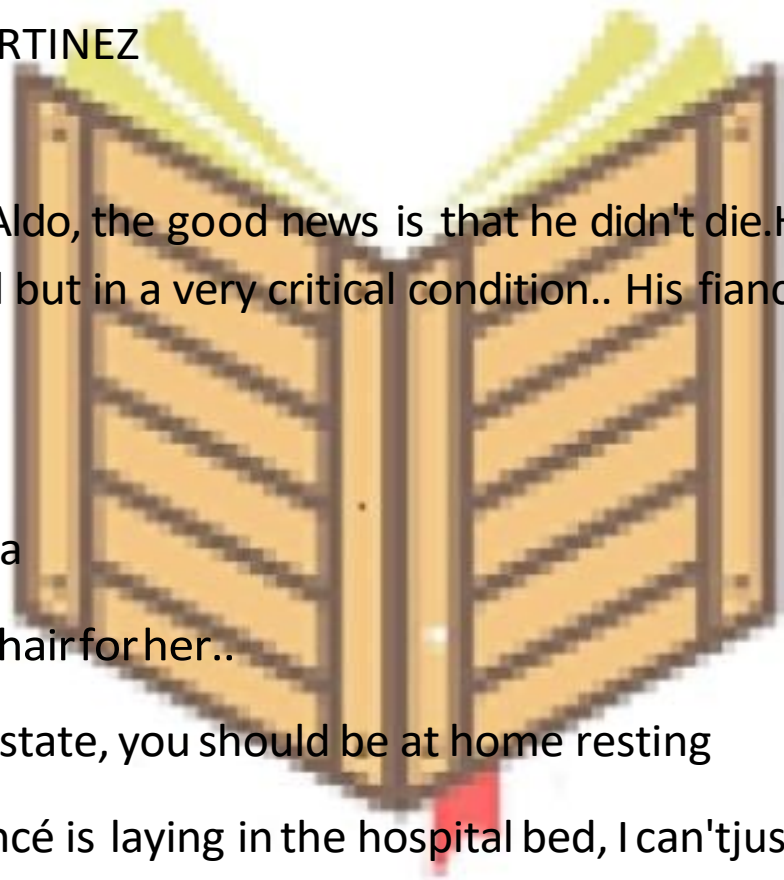
I fixed the chair for her..

Me: In your state, you should be at home resting

Her: My fiancé is laying in the hospital bed, I can't just sit at home and rest

Me: I'm truly sorry about this

She sat down...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: He might not even be present in the labour ward, this is not how we have planned everything

Me: What has your father said about this?

Her: My father wouldn't care if Aldo lives or dies, he doesn't like him very much

Me: Not to sound completely evil, I'm relieved. Thobakgale is the last person I want starting war with me on behalf of his Son in law

Her: That's one enemy you don't wanna have, trust me

Me: I know... You are actually strong I admire that

Her: My childhood was always like this, this is nothing to me. My Father was once involved in an almost fatal accident. I am worried about Aldo but I've lived this life with my Father and my Uncles it's nothing new

Me: I see.. I should get going take care
Her: Thank you for coming

Me: Don't mention it

NONGCEBO

Rosetta was very beautiful..

Rosetta: My clothes fit you more perfectly than they do with me

Me: Thank you for the clothes

Rosetta: You welcome.. It was nothing trust me, just glad that I could help

Me: Are we safe? With Marco gone I don't feel safe
Rosetta: You are very safe with me

Me: We both women what if Andre's guys find us?
Rosetta: I have a gun and I've been trained to kill
I laughed..

Me: What a nice joke
She didn't laugh..

Me: Are you serious?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Rosetta: This is our life, I am not with Luca everyday. When he's gone handling business I have to protect myself because he won't always show up on time

Me: Wow.. That's.. Wow

Rosetta: You should also learn how to defend yourself, Marco should train you

Me: That would be wonderful

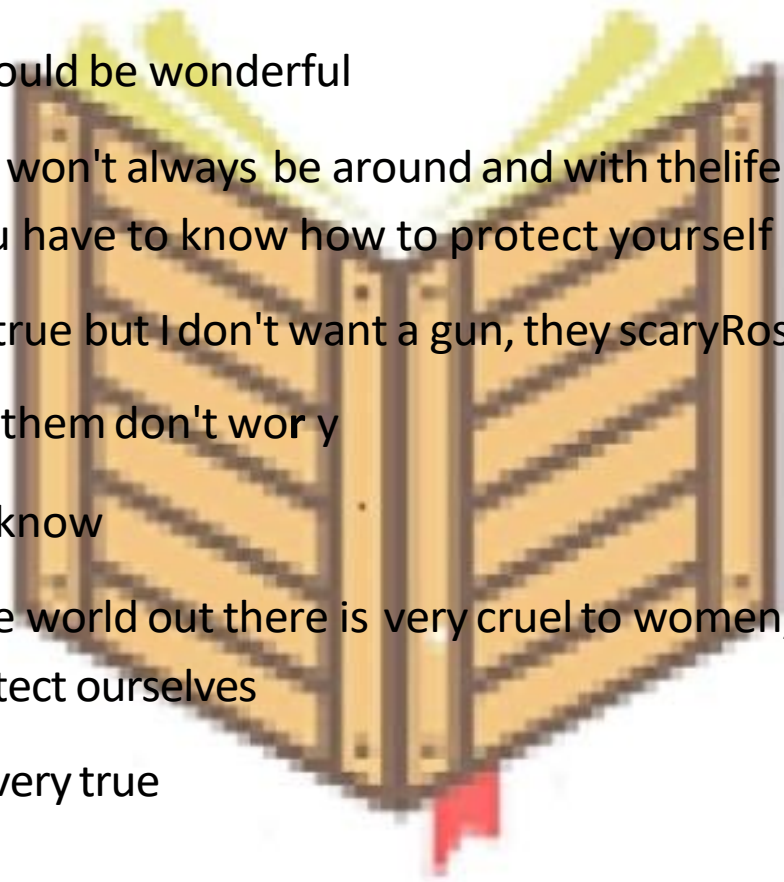
Rosetta: He won't always be around and with the life that he is living, you have to know how to protect yourself

Me: That's true but I don't want a gun, they scary
Rosetta: You'll get used to them don't worry

Me: I don't know

Rosetta: The world out there is very cruel to women, we always have to protect ourselves

Me: That's very true



I was taken to a private area, for a private visit. Who could possibly pull this off?.

Guard: Come

The Guard opened the door and I walked in. Marco was sitting there..

Me: I should've known! He got up..

Marco: Mo

Me: Marco

I walked up to him and we shared a hug..

Me: I thought we were going to see each other after I was out of here

Marco: Well I had to pull a few strings We both sat down..

Marco: So when are you getting out? Me:

Tomorrow

Marco: It's about time



Me: Do you have the other copy of the necklace? Marco:

Yes

Me: I have the original one incase the boys betray me tomorrow and Andre gets a hold of it, we will be relying on the copy that you have

Marco: That's why I'm here

Me: You have the necklace don't you?

Marco: Yes I do and I'm going to use it to turn Andre in

Me: What happened?

Marco: I've met someone, I want a future with her but that won't be possible if Andre is still out there

Me: I understand.. Do you know what that means for you?

Marco: I'll move up a rank in the DL

Me: The bastard who turned Andre in, you'll be a hero in the DL

Marco: The money he has we will share it

Me: That's the plan I need to be well off in another country

Me: That's very true

Marco: It's so good to see you best friend
Me: It's so good to see you too

Marco: Let's do away with Andre for good
Me:

For good! He won't see it coming
Marco: Not at all

SANDISIWE

That morning Sethu and I were eating breakfast..

Sethu: Do you think that we ever going to get out of here?

Me: I hope so

Sethu: You making the best out of your time here

Me: I can't afford to be depressed, why stress about something that I cannot change all I can do is just

NOVELSGURU.COM

have faith

Sethu: If we do get out of here, what are your plans?

Me: I don't know.. All I know is that I want to be with my baby that's all

She nodded..

Sethu: At least one of us got a happy ending I rolled my eyes..

Me: Still upset about what Nongcebo did?

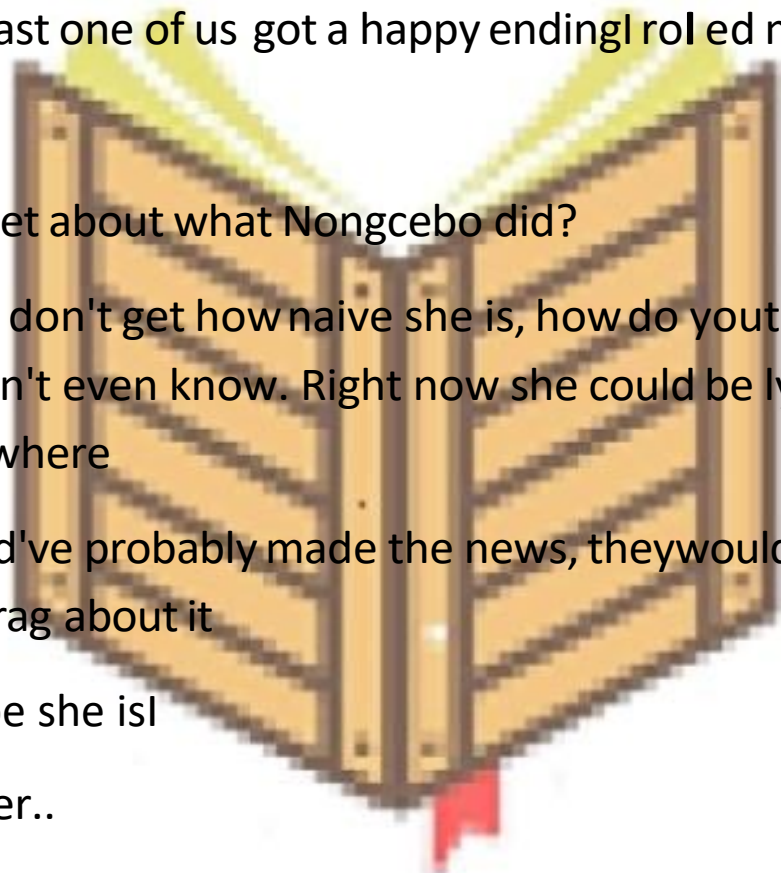
Sethu: I just don't get how naive she is, how do you trust a man that you don't even know. Right now she could be lying in a ditch somewhere

Me: It would've probably made the news, they would've told us to brag about it

Sethu: I hope she is

looked at her..

Sethu: Don't get me wrong, she has to learn the hard way. Nongcebo is too naive for my liking you just don't trust a random guy, a guy that kidnapped you. I hope Marco teaches her a lesson, I hope she



is tied up wherever she is. I hope she's a sex slave to him, that'll teach her. Sometimes lessons are learnt through painful experiences

Me: I'm so glad that we not friends

Sethu: Why? Just because I'm telling the truth

Me: You way too bitter and judgemental for my liking. How can you wish such evil upon another woman? That's very wrong and heartless, it doesn't matter what she did but you don't wish such for another woman. Nongcebo has been through a lot, she doesn't have to go through that again!

.

To be continued

edits

[08/24, 13:56] : SEASON FINALE

137

NOVELSGURU.COM

[THE BREAKOUT PART 1]

SOLE

The next day before the breakout we met with Andre to confirm everything with him. We let him in on our plan and he approved it without any questions..

Andre: Are you sure Modrid doesn't suspect anything?

Me: I doubt

Andre: So we will meet at the Beutilier road, that's where we going to make the exchange

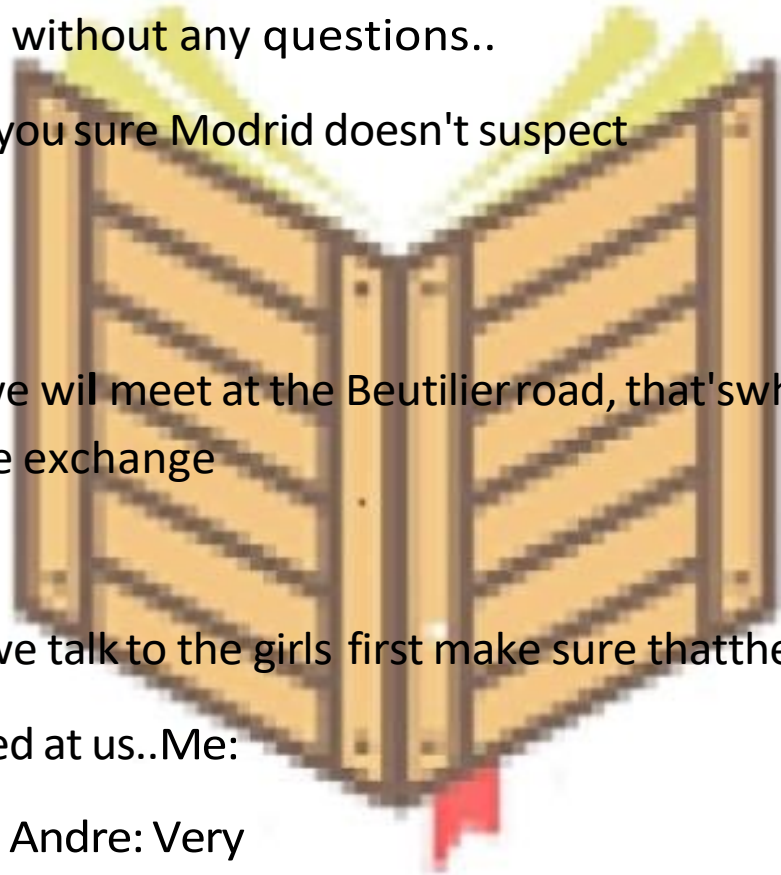
Me: Yes

Kelso: Can we talk to the girls first make sure that they okay?

Andre looked at us..Me:

It's very fair Andre: Very

wel



NOVELSGURU.COM

He took his phone from the table and made the call ..

Andre: Romeo they would like to speak with the Señoritas.. Put the one with the baby on first

[AFTER A FEWSECONDS]

Andre passed me the phone..Me:

Hel o

It was quiet on the other end for a few seconds..Sandi: Hel

o

I got up from the chair..

Me: It's me... Are you okay? Did they hurt you?Sandi:

No

Me: And Avery is she okay?

I walked away from the guys..Sandi:

She's fine

Me: Sweets I am so sorry... I am sorry that I've put you through this

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandi: Just get us out of here

Me: Later today you getting out, I promise Sandi: I

just want to be out with my baby

Me: I swear on my life.. Today you'll be out... Put Nongcebo on,
Kelso and Scorpion wanna talk to her

Sandi: Nongcebo is not here!

looked at Kelso..

Me: What do you mean?

Sandi: She escaped with one of the guys Me:

What?

Sandi: Don't tel the guys whatever you guys have going on if
they hear that Nongcebo has escaped they wil mess everything
up, I wanna be out of here

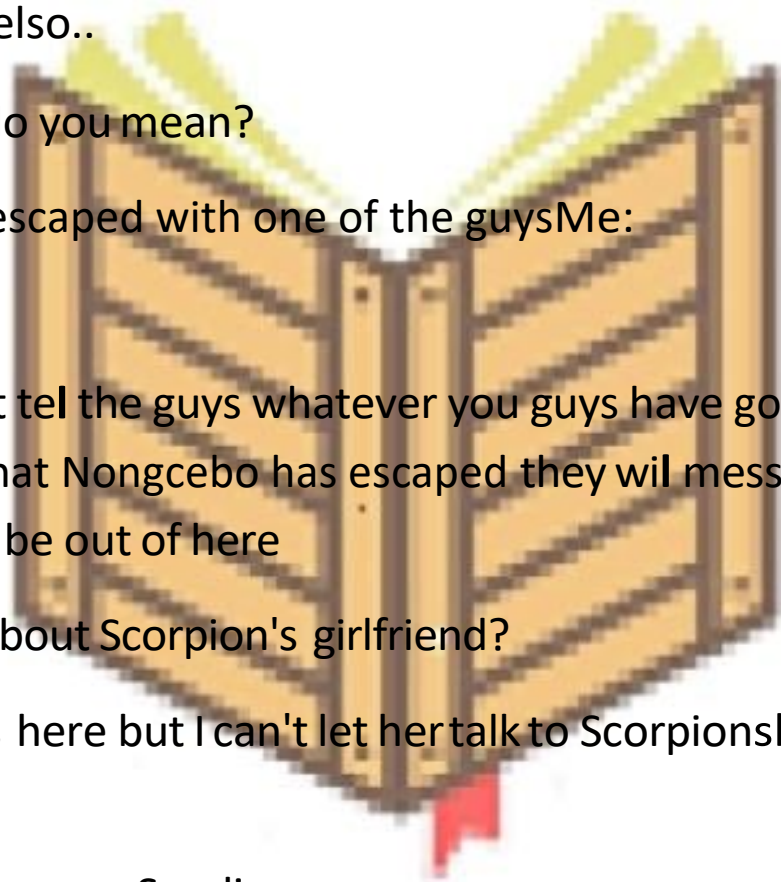
Me: What about Scorpion's girlfriend?

Sandi: She's here but I can't let her talk to Scorpion she's going to
tel him

Me: This is a mess Sandi:

Cook up a lie

Me: Okay I'll do that.. J ust hold on fora few hours.. I



NOVELSGURU.COM

love you so much and I'm so sorry Sandi: I

love you too

I hung up and went back to them..Kelso: And?

Me: They don't wanna talk to us they madScorp:

Who were you talking too?

Me: One of the guys, I was begging him but the girls don't wanna talk to us at all

Kelso: Andre if my wife is n-

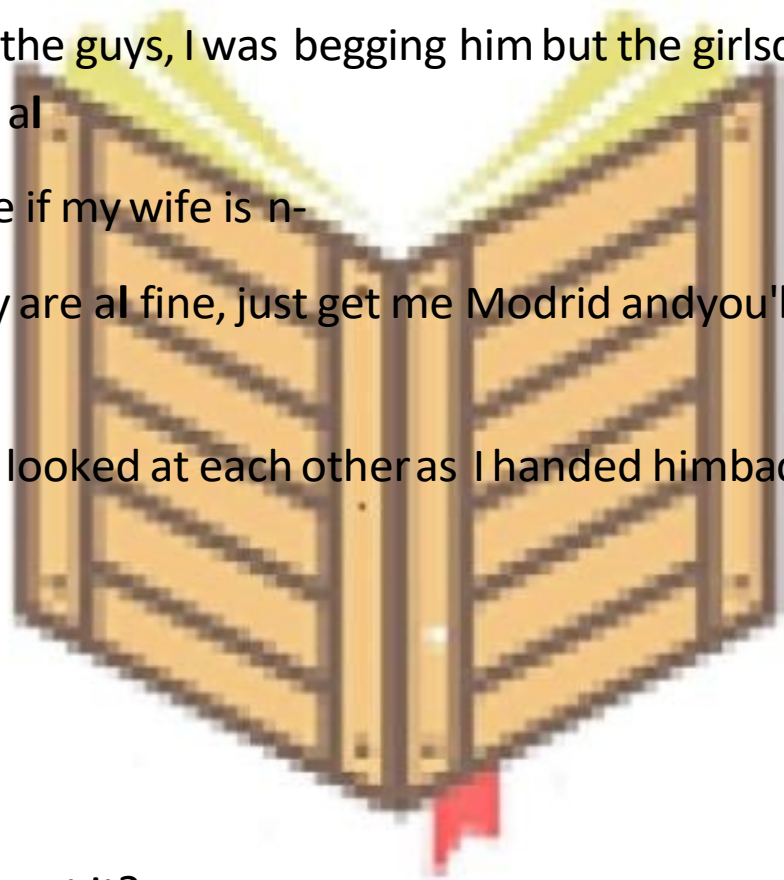
Andre: They are all fine, just get me Modrid and you'll get your Señoritas

Andre and I looked at each other as I handed him back his phone..

MARCO

Me: Did you get it?

Lutha: Yes I did, we have accessed his vault. Got the



NOVELSGURU.COM

evidence and the money

Me: Make copies of the evidence when you receive my call again send it to every authority that side and this side, then keep the money safe

Lutha: I hear you

I looked at Wealth and Rosetta..

Me: Don't mess this up, we only have one shot at this

Lutha: I understand, why the delay?

Me: The guys who are going to break Modrid out we have to make sure that their girlfriends are safe first. When they are out of the way then you cash in the evidence

Lutha: Understood, but I'm off to the beach I might not have a signal later on

Me: Lutha what the fuck?

Lutha: I'm joking

Me: I have another call coming in, I'll be in touch Lutha:

Very well

NOVELSGURU.COM

It was my cousin Luca..Me:

Cougino (Cuz)

Luca: I have the bikes and the ammunitionMe:

Good

Luca: What's the time again?

Me: We going to wait at the Beutilier Road an hourbefore they pass

Luca: Okay

Me: Then we break Modrid free from Andre, did you get the bul et proof vests?

Luca: Yes and the helmets Me:

Good! I'll leave in a fewLuca:

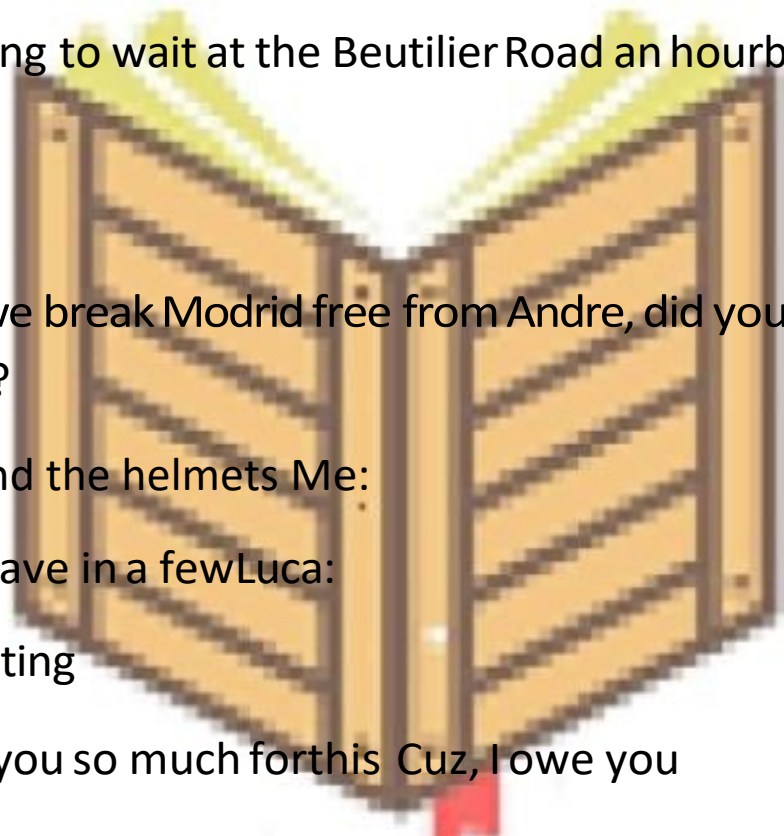
We'll be waiting

Me: Thank you so much forthis Cuz, I owe you

Luca: We family, family looks out foreach other atal times...

Did you get the guy to access the offshore account?

Me: Yes he received the necklace and it led him



exactly to the volt

Luca: That's good.. Good thinking sending the necklace to him a few weeks back

Me: I've always wanted to take Andre down Luca:

Let's do this

Me: I'll see you then Luca:

Bye

SANDISIWE

Sethu walked in..

Sethu: At least the shower is not bad!

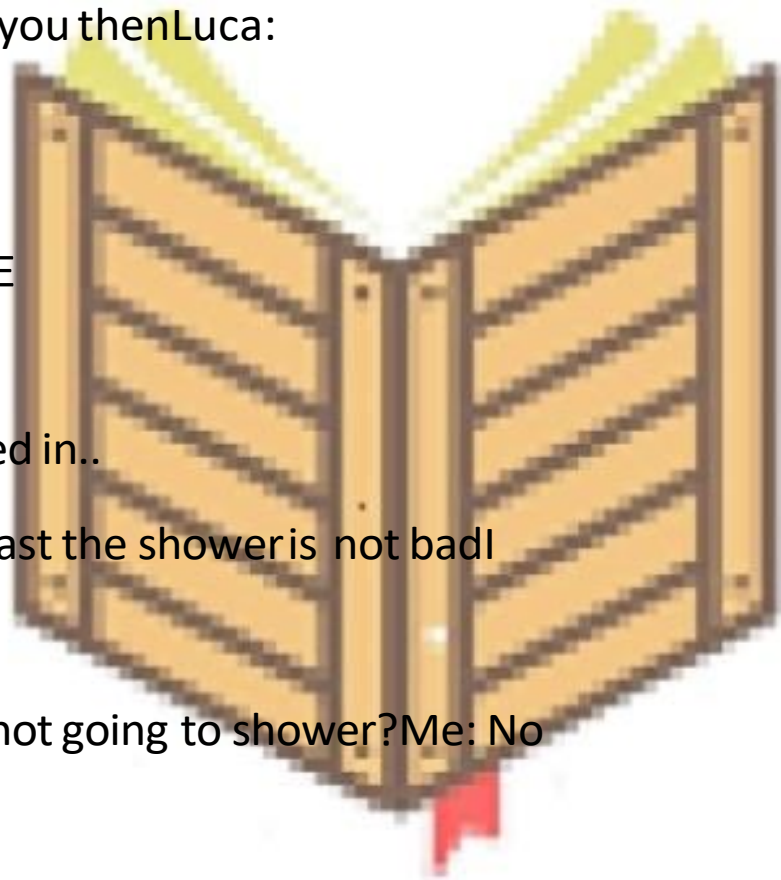
nodded..

Sethu: You not going to shower? Me: No

I'm good

Sethu: What's wrong?

Me: Nothing.. I just being here is starting to get to



NOVELSGURU.COM

me

Sethu: I understand

I am so happy that Sethu was not here when Solemade that phone call, I won't even tell her about this.. She might ruin it all..

Romeo walked in..

Romeo: At exactly 15:00 we are moving you ladies to another place

Sethu: Another place? Why?

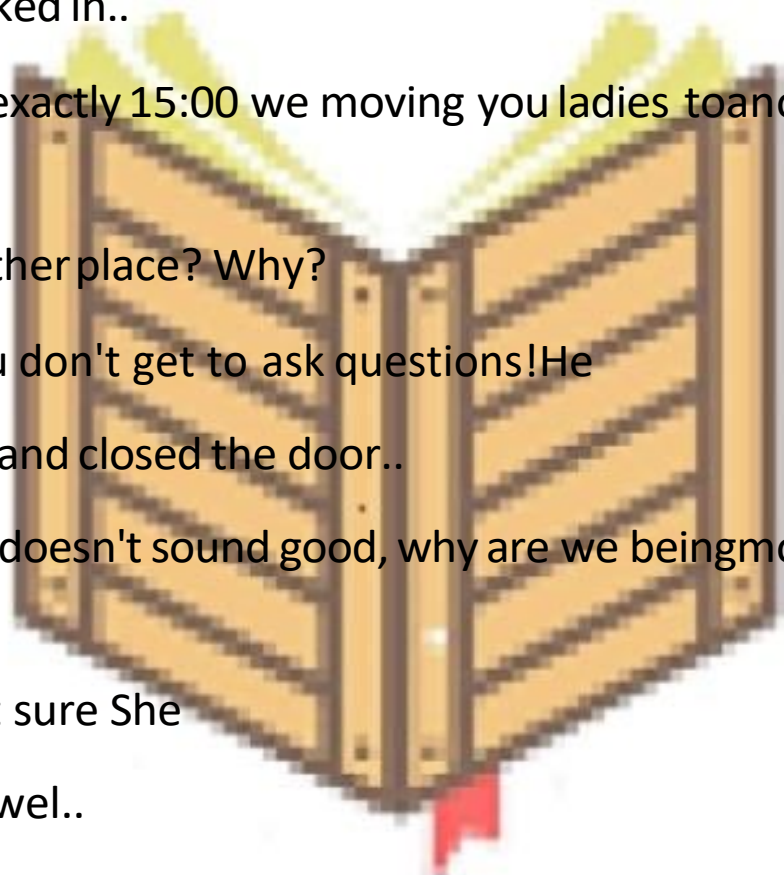
Romeo: You don't get to ask questions! He walked out and closed the door..

Sethu: This doesn't sound good, why are we being moved again?

Me: I'm not sure She fixed her towel..

Sethu: I hope Nongcebo is happy wherever she is whilst we go through all this shit

Thank God we are leaving today, I don't have to see this



NOVELSGURU.COM

woman ever again...

NONGCEBO

Rosetta: That is a very weak punch Wealth
Me: I am not a violent person

Rosetta: When you facing real danger, al of thatchanges

Me: I've neverreal y punched anyone beforeRosetta:

I can tel

Marco showed up.. Marco:

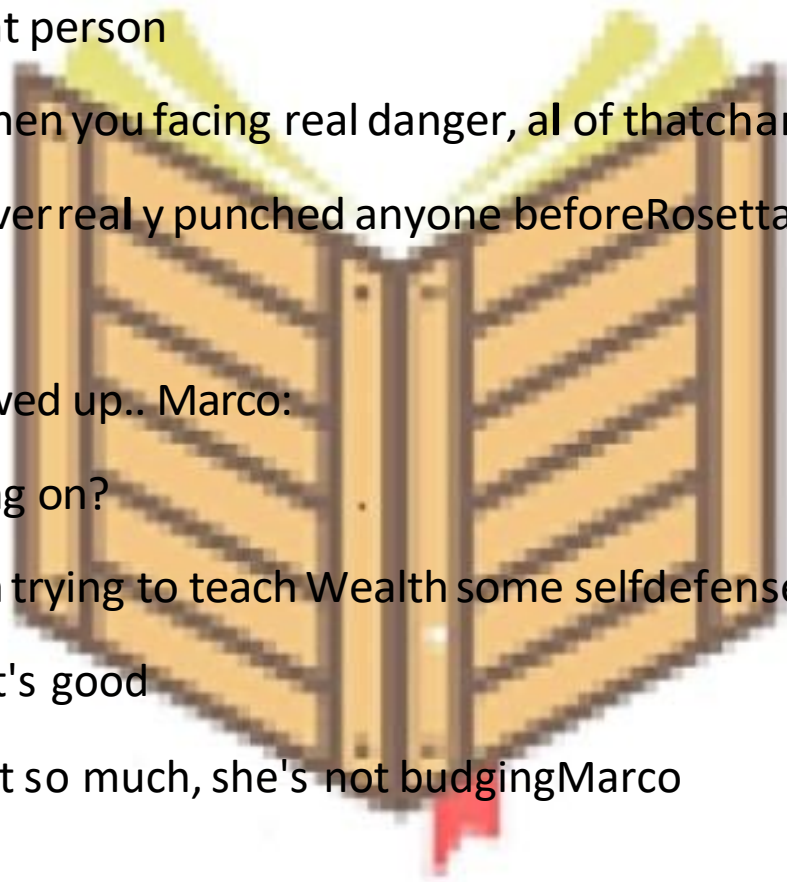
What's going on?

Rosetta: I'm trying to teach Wealth some selfdefense classes

Marco: That's good

Rosetta: Not so much, she's not budgingMarco

sat down..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: Try again

Rosetta: Okay let's go.. Punch my hand!

punched her hand..

Marco shook his head.. Rosetta:

This is depressing Marco looked

at Rosetta..

Marco: Punch her Me:

Wait what?

Marco: Punch her in the face

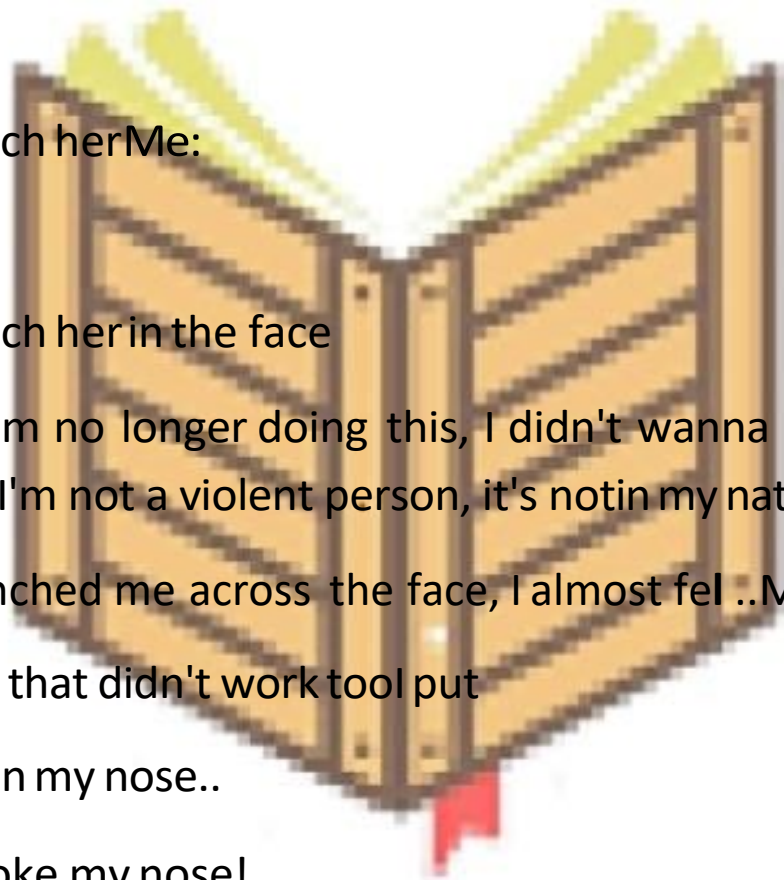
Me: Okay I'm no longer doing this, I didn't wanna do it in the first place.. I'm not a violent person, it's not in my nature a-

Rosetta punched me across the face, I almost fell.. Me: Awww!

Rosetta: Oh that didn't work too! put

my hands on my nose..

Me: You broke my nose!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Rosetta: I tried Me:

I'm bleeding

Rosetta: I'll get you some ice Me:

Awww..

Marco got up and came to me..

Marco: Let me see

Me: Stay away from me!

Marco: When someone punches you, it's meant to aggravate you. Where did the spirit of punching mein the balls disappear too?

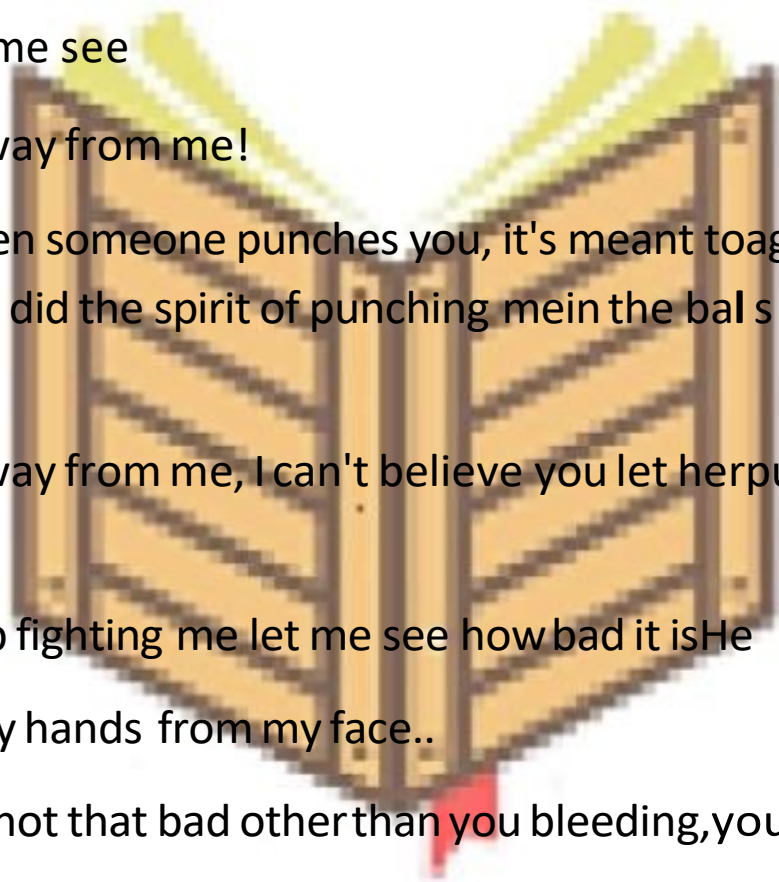
Me: Stay away from me, I can't believe you let her punch me in the face

Marco: Stop fighting me let me see how bad it is He removed my hands from my face..

Marco: It's not that bad other than you bleeding, you'll be fun

Me: It hurts like crazy

Marco: Indeed we still have a long way to go



NOVELSGURU.COM

He pulled me closer to him and hugged me, he kissed me on my cheek...

Marco: I'm sorry

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:57] : SEASON FINALE

138

[THE BREAKOUT PART 2]

SOLE

The moment of truth had finally arrived. We spent almost the remaining hours preparing for the job ahead. We had one chance, and one chance only to execute this plan to perfection so that we could bring the girls back home safe and sound.. We were



NOVELSOURU.COM

changed into our gear, had our fake IDs. We were in motion, we were ready to do this..

We approached the van of the real officers stuck at St Anne street. They were out of the van and looked frustrated standing outside trying to make calls. It was 3 of them..

I looked at Kelso.. Me: 'I'

be right back

I got out of the van and approached them.. Me:

Gentlemen

They looked at me..

Guard 1: We have been stuck here for almost 30 min, we had a puncture. Something that has never happened before

Me: At the station they got worried when you guys didn't call in they sent us

Guard 1: There's no signal Me:

What a mess

Guard 1: Go get the prisoner please, when you're in the



van call the station for help

Me: I'll do that.. I'm really sorry about this Guard 1:

Don't worry about us just move along Me: Hope we
won't get a puncture too

Guard 1: We checked the street it's clear, I just don't know how we
got a puncture

Me: Well I'll get moving with the team, I'll call for help in
the car

Guard 1: Get our registration Me:

Noted

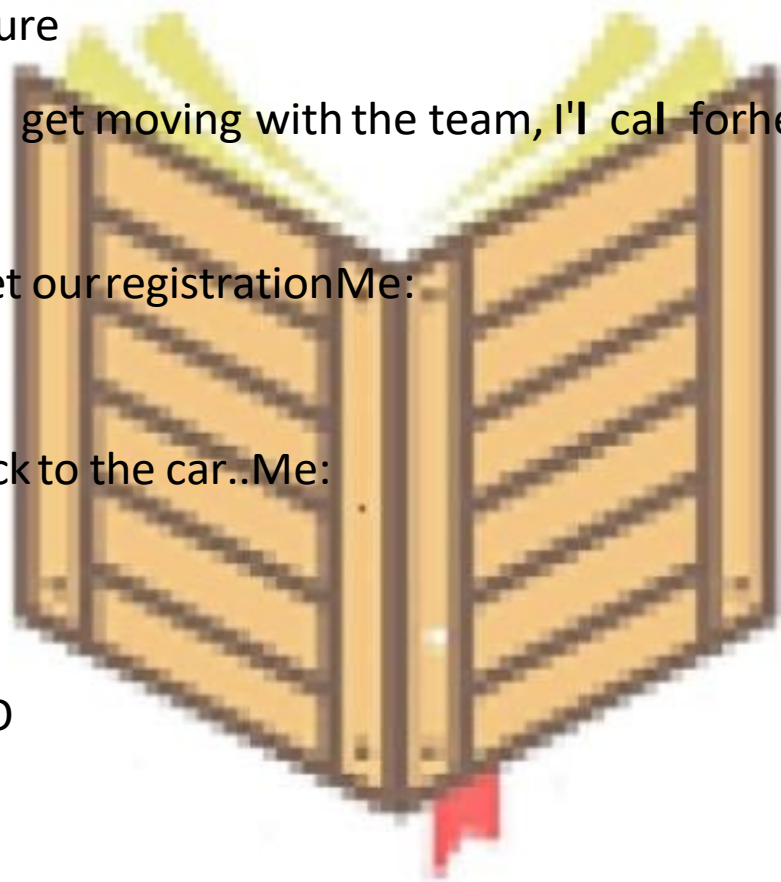
I walked back to the car.. Me:

We clear

NONGCEBO

Rosetta: Here

I took the glass of wine from her..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Thank you

Rosetta: Sorry about your nose Me:

It's okay

She sat down..

Rosetta: Did Marco tell you that you will be moving away from this cabin soon?

Me: Soon?

Rosetta: Possibly before the end of this week Me:

Where too?

Rosetta: Back to your normal life Me:

Really?

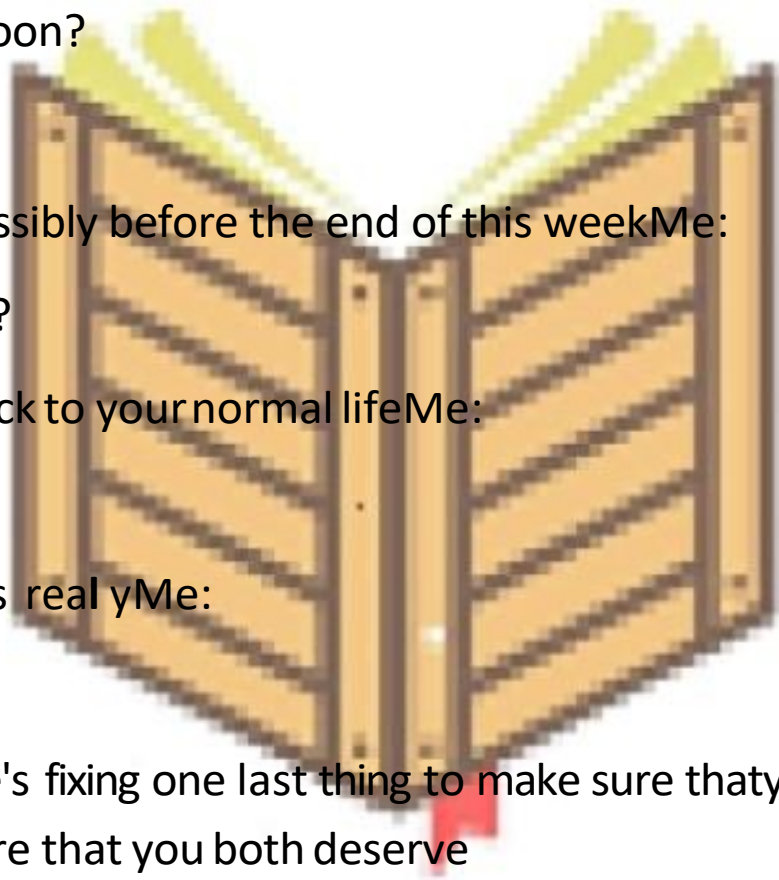
Rosetta: Yes really Me:

Wow..

Rosetta: He's fixing one last thing to make sure that you two will have a future that you both deserve

Me: He didn't tell me that

Rosetta: Guess he wanted to surprise you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I guess so too.. I'm surprised

Rosetta: Let me go and check on our lunch I looked at my ring finger and sighed..

Me: Goodbye Kelso

SOLE

We parked at the gate, one of the guards came to us..

Him: Good evening

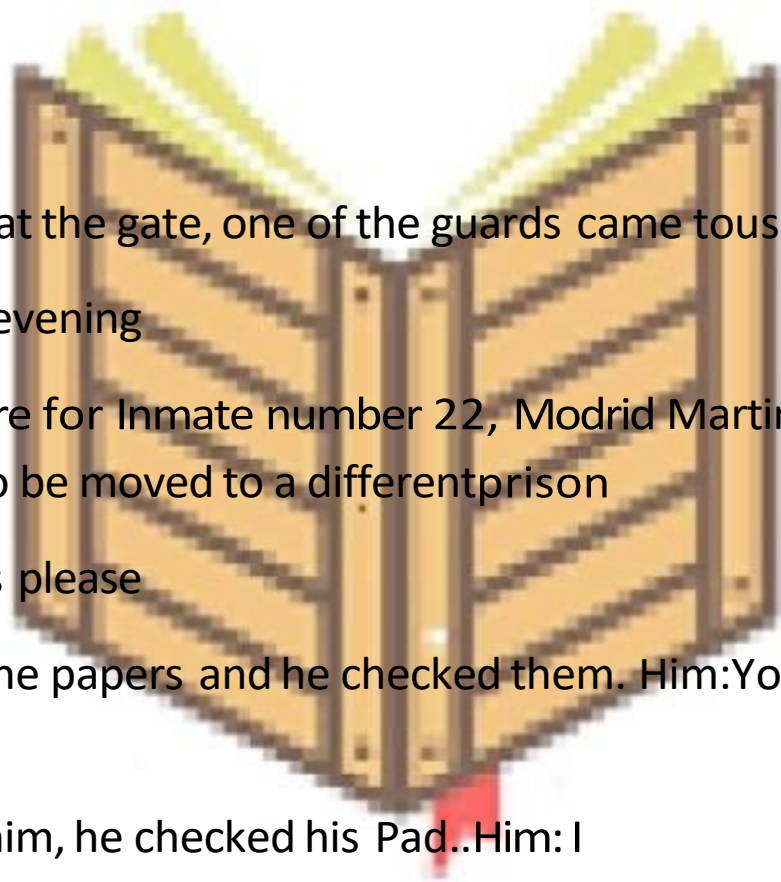
Me: We here for Inmate number 22, Modrid Martinez. He's supposed to be moved to a different prison

Him: Papers please

I gave him the papers and he checked them. Him: Your ID please

I gave it to him, he checked his Pad.. Him: I

have a different name here



Me: The Guards who were meant to get him, they got a puncture since they didn't call the station we were sent to evaluate the situation

Him: I'll have to call the station and confirm

I looked at Kelso.. Then I looked at the guard..

Me: Yes you may... But then you'll be transferred to someone else who will transfer you to someone else too, it's going to be one hell of a process and unfortunately the Prisoner has to be at the airport exactly at 17:00 for his flight. It's 16:00, if he misses his flight Judge Legae will have to schedule him for another time of which more guards will be in danger. You included, you are harbouring the most dangerous prisoner within your premises. How many guards will have to be killed until his next transfer? And you might lose your job over this small inconvenience.. I'm just saying though He looked at me for a while..

Him: I'm going to need your partners IDs too so I can note them down

Me: No problem one is at the back

He walked to the back..

Our fake IDs are not total y fake. J ust stolen identities of guards within the cor ectional servicesystem, if they run them they will see that such people do exist. J ustice just put our pictures on theID cards with fake creditials of guards who exist..

Kelso: Nice one

RACHEL

I rinsed my mouth after vomiting, my col eague looked at me..

Col eague: Are you okay?Me: J

ust feeling a bit sick

Col eague: At least it's knock off time, you can calin sick tomor ow

I nodded...

Col eague: Come let's go

NOVELSGURU.COM



KELSO

they finally let us through, Scorpion was to remain at the back of the van because they might recognize him at the reception, he is the Governor's Son after all ..

Sole and I got out..Sole: This

is it

We were ushered in and we placed our cards at the monitor, the doors opened and we walked in.. We went to the reception and presented the documents..

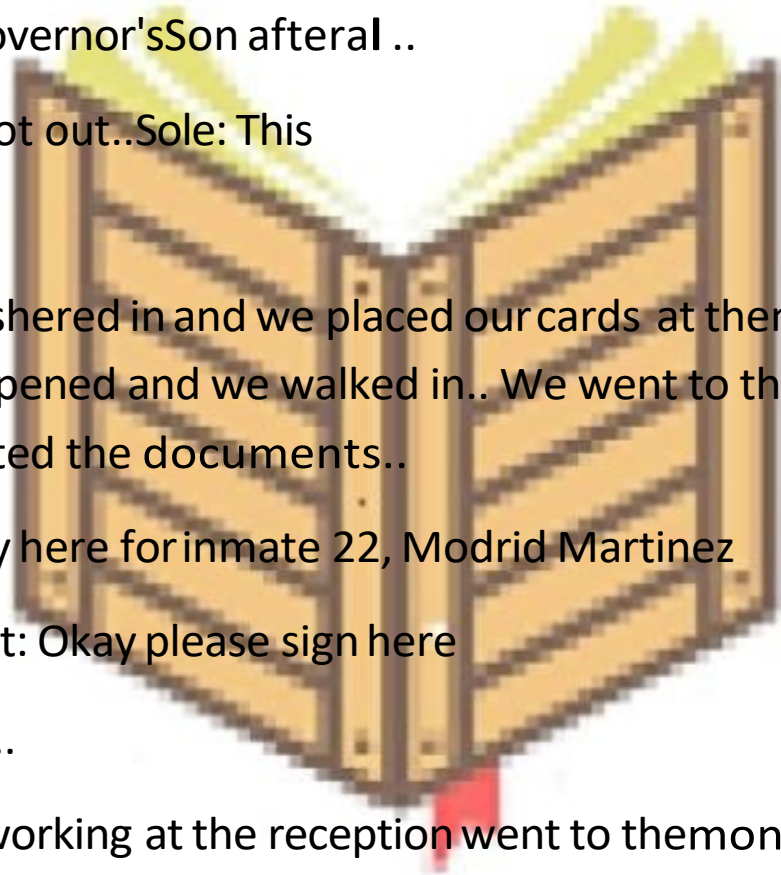
Guard: They here for inmate 22, Modrid Martinez

Receptionist: Okay please sign here

Sole signed..

The guard working at the reception went to the monitor..

Guard: Inmate 22 please come through



He then came back to us..

Guard: He's coming

When I turned around my eyes landed on a familiar face, it was Banza's Mother..

Me: Ohh shit!

I quickly turned around..Sole:

What is it?

Me: Nothing just a familiar face

SANDISIWE

We were at the back of an SUV, they had given me my baby back. I was holding her.

I kept on praying that she will pull through until we get home, at the back we were with Andre Martinez..

Andre: If her Daddy acts fast, you will have enough time to get her to the hospital

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sethu: This is not right.. She's just a baby! This is

not fair

Andre: Life is not fair Señorita, unfortunately babies suffer for their Parents sins

Sethu shook her head..

Andre looked at his gold pocket watch..Andre:

Only an hour left

I held her tight to my chest and closed my eyes...Me: Hold on Baby we are almost there

MARCO

I threw the cigarette down and looked at the time...Me: Only an hour left

Luca was eating candy..Luca:

They'll be here

It was 5 of us with bikes, I don't know how many Men Andre is bringing on this mission.



Me: Give me the binoculars He gave me and I checked.. Me: Still no sign of any Van Luca: And the wait continues

KELSO

They brought Modrid to us. He was chained. The guard at the reception gave us his things

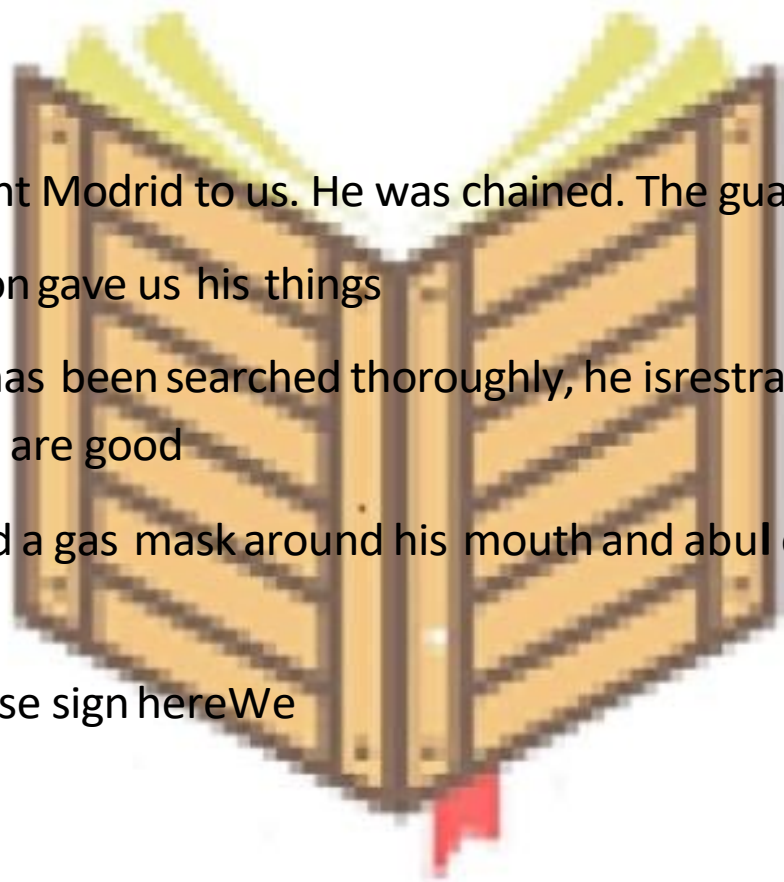
Guard: He has been searched thoroughly, he is restrained so you guys are good

He even had a gas mask around his mouth and a bullet proof vest..

Guard: Please sign here We signed..

Sole: Thank you

Guard: No thank you for taking him off from our care



NOVELSGURU.COM

We nodded and the other guard ushered us out of the building..

Sole: Keep it moving Prisoner

Sole dragged him.. We just need to get to the van then we will be fine..

Scorpion was standing outside of the van looking down..

Sole: Let's go

We walked to the van until a voice behind us called out..

Voice: Kelso?!

I ignored..

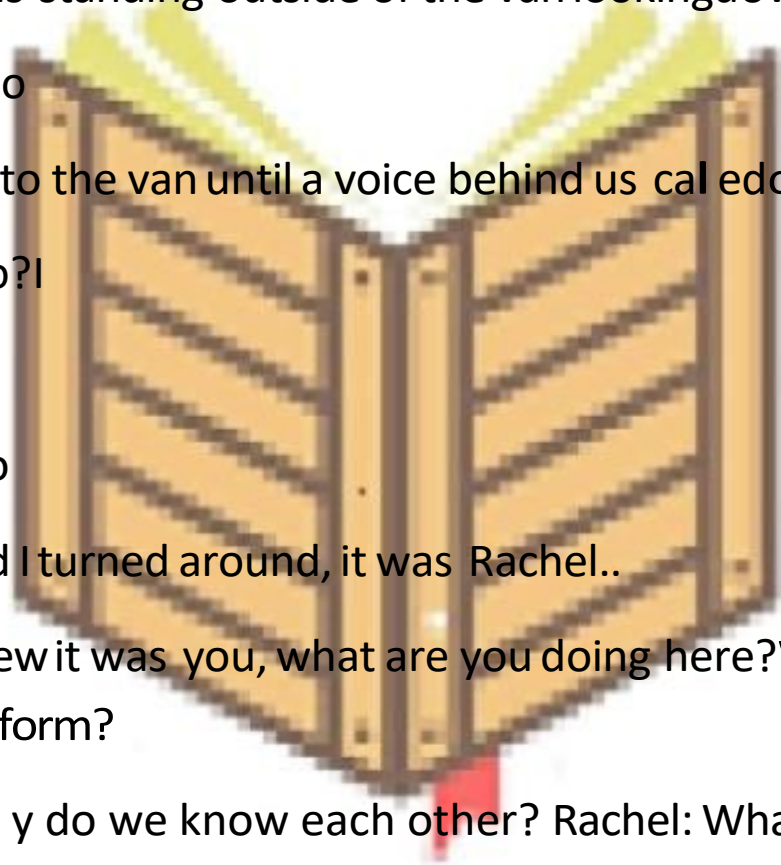
Voice: Kelso

We stopped I turned around, it was Rachel..

Rachel: I knew it was you, what are you doing here? What's with the uniform?

Me: I'm sorry do we know each other? Rachel: What?

Take off the cap!.. Wait is that



Scorpion by the van? What are you guys doing here? What's going on?

Guard: What's going on here? Rachel:

Scorpion! What's going on?

The guard put his hand on his walkie talkie..

Guard: What is going on? Who the hel are you guys? I'm shutting the prison down

Modrid: Fuck! You guys only had one job!

.

To be continued

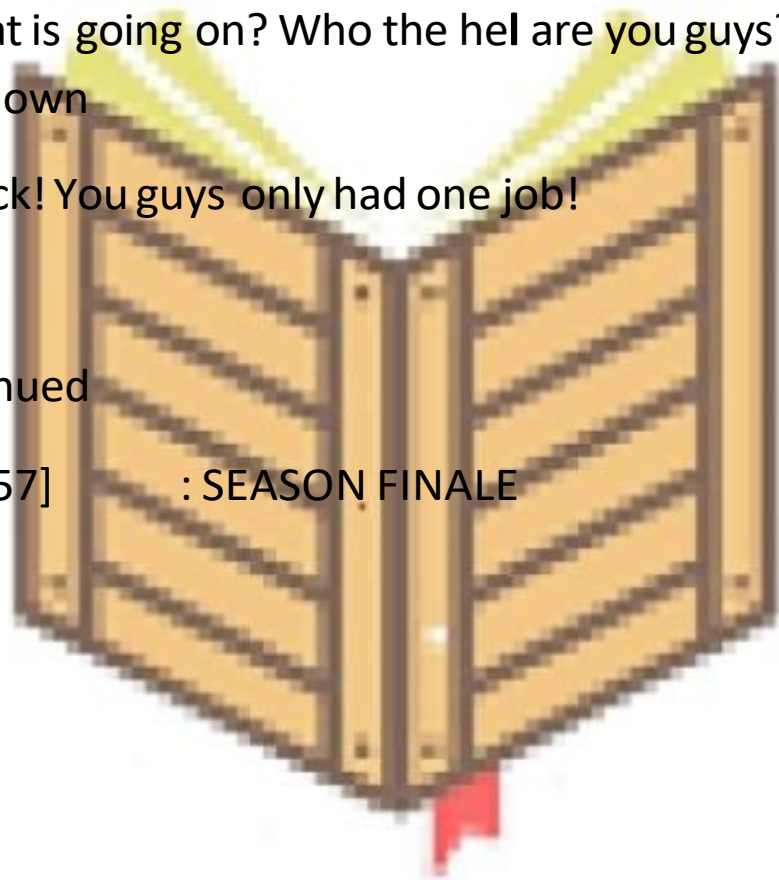
[08/24, 13:57] : SEASON FINALE

139

SOLE

NOVELSGURU.COM

[THE BREAKOUT PART 3]



This was bad, this was very bad. This breakout could potentially turn bad with me and the guys being arrested. I can't have that right now, I have a family to save. I promised Sandy that today I'm going to bring her home.. Kelso pulled the woman to the side, I got closer to the guard. I took out my gun and pinned it to his side, on his left rib..

Me: Give me your ID card

He took it out and gave it to me..

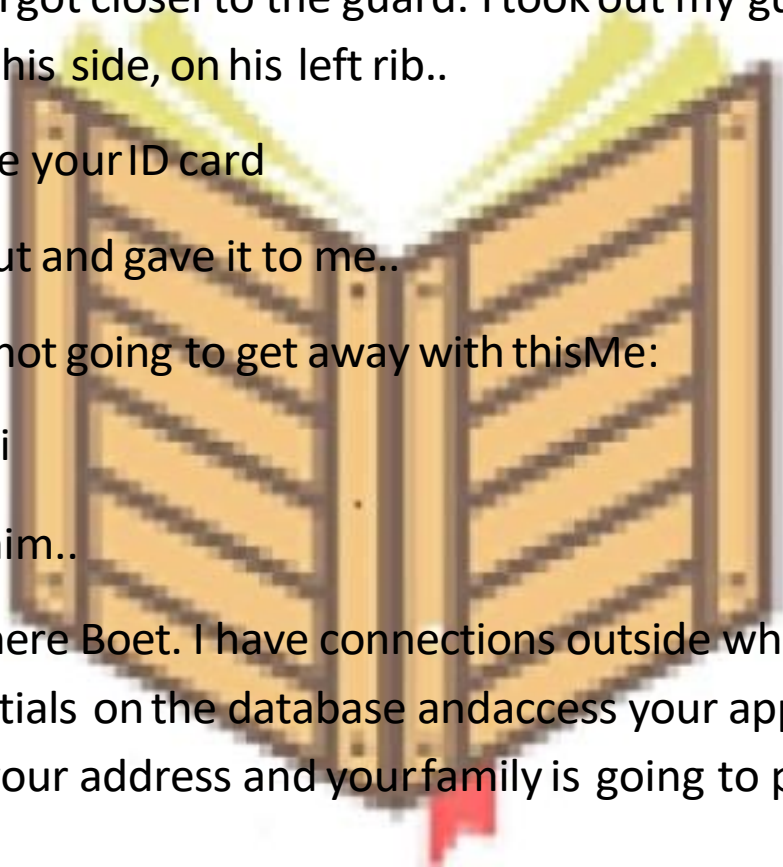
Guard: You not going to get away with this Me:

Steven Kgos

I looked at him..

Me: Listen here Boet. I have connections outside who will run your credentials on the database and access your application, we will get your address and your family is going to pay gravely for this.

Don't act a superhero on something that you can turn a blind eye on, let us go without any repercussions and act dumb because I promise you.



This will turn out very bad for you, do you know how dangerous the Italians are? If Modrid can kill guards do you know what they can do to your family? Don't bring unfortunate events to yourself on something that has nothing to do with you.. Understood?

He nodded repeatedly..Me:

Let's go

I looked at Kelso..Me:

Let's go

He came back and the woman looked at us shocked, we proceeded to the Van and put Modrid at the back..

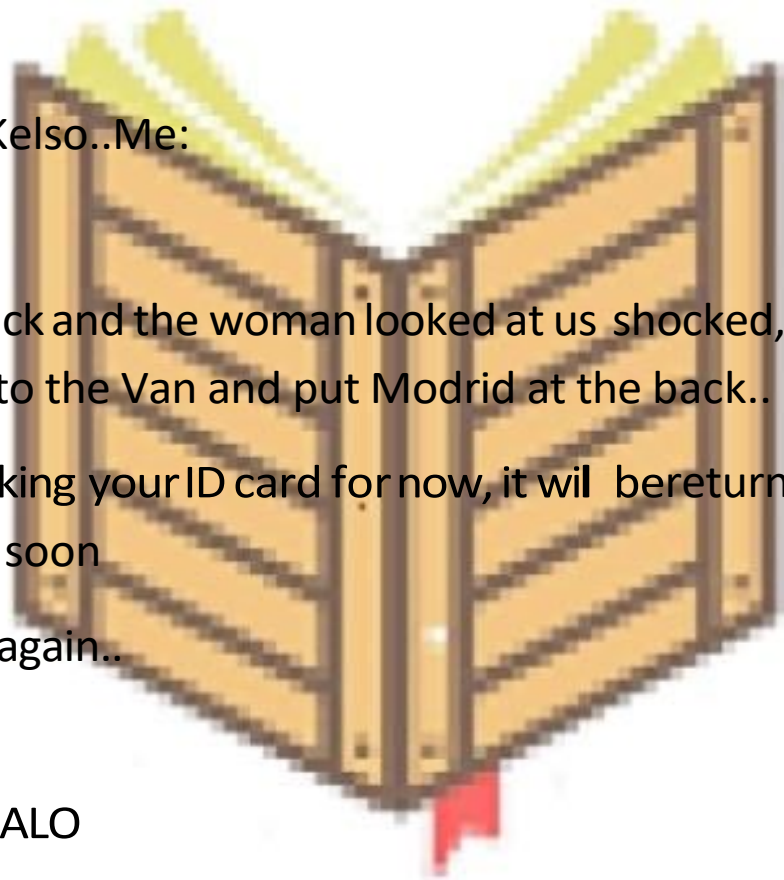
Me: I am taking your ID card for now, it will be returned back to you soon

He nodded again..

GAV KHUMALO

NOVELSGURU.COM

My sister came to fetch me from the hospital..



Sis: How are you feeling?Me:

I'm good

Sis: You scared usMe: I

know

Sis: When all this is done you have to take a trip back home, do a cleansing ceremony. Uphahle, there's something that you not doing right for a darkcloud to hang around your family like this

Me: We will go

Sis: Okay let's go home

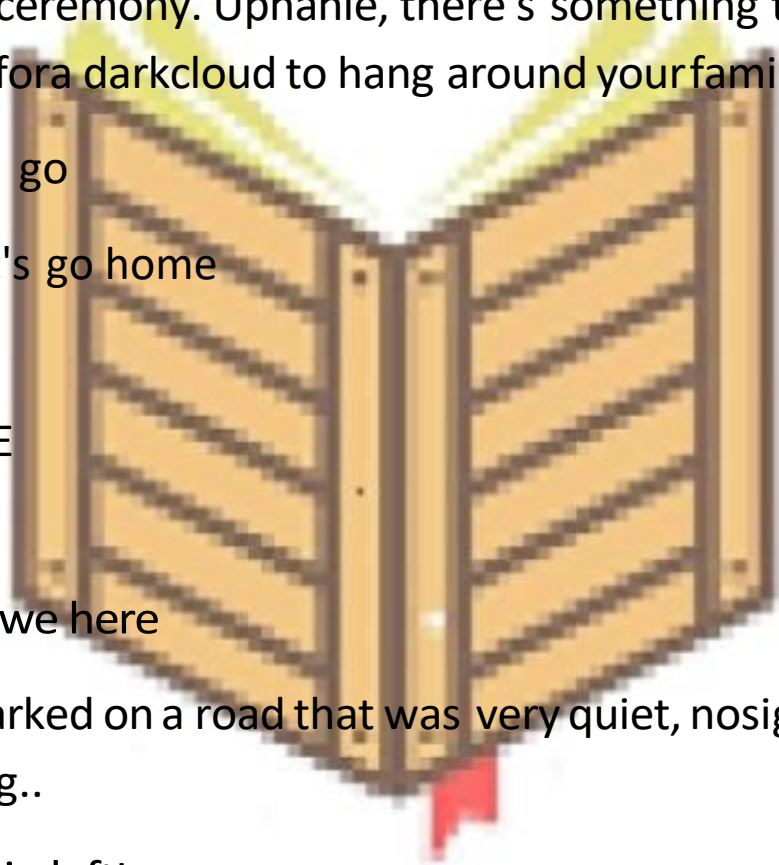
SANDISIWE

Andre: And we here

We were parked on a road that was very quiet, no signs of cars passing..

Andre: 30min left!

looked at Avery..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Andre: If they don't show up, it's game over

Sethu: Why gamble with our lives when we not the ones who did you wrong? Why are we paying for their sins?

Andre: It's always like this. You motivate your enemies to do the right thing by pawning his family

Sethu: This is not a game of chess, you toying with real lives.. Innocent lives

Andre: It is a game of chess to me, right now worry about your boyfriend showing up time is running out

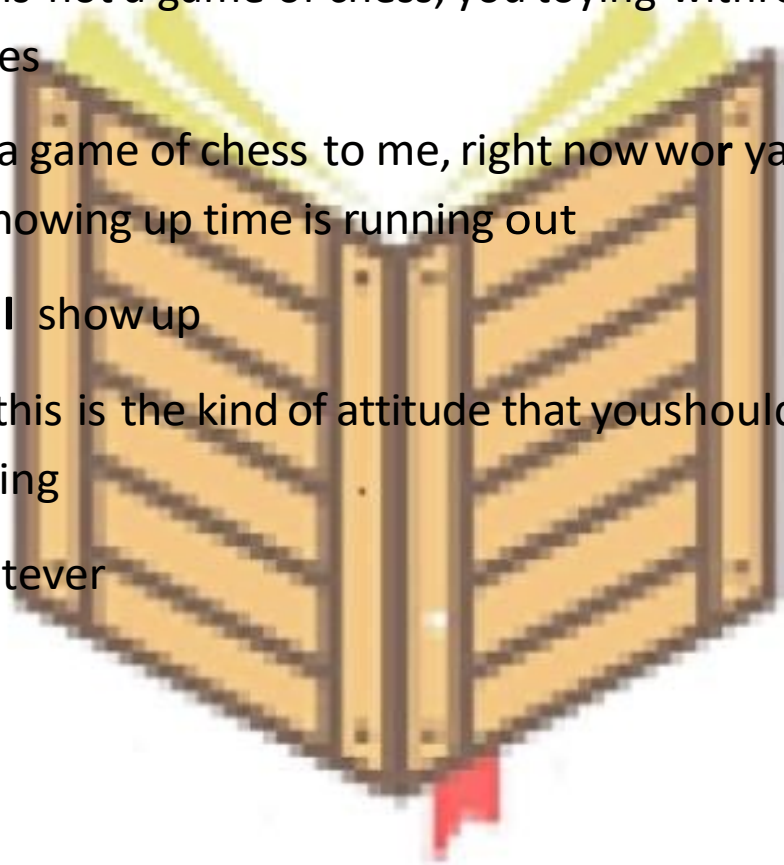
Me: Sole will show up

Andre: See this is the kind of attitude that you should also be having

Sethu: Whatever

SOLE

Kelso: That was wild, that almost went south



Me: I'm just glad we finally got Modrid

Kelso: How far are we?

Me: Not that far

Kelso: We pulled this off

Me: We certainly did!

RACHEL

I was shocked. Kelso didn't explain much to me but I was very shocked. My colleague came to me..

Her: Ready to go?

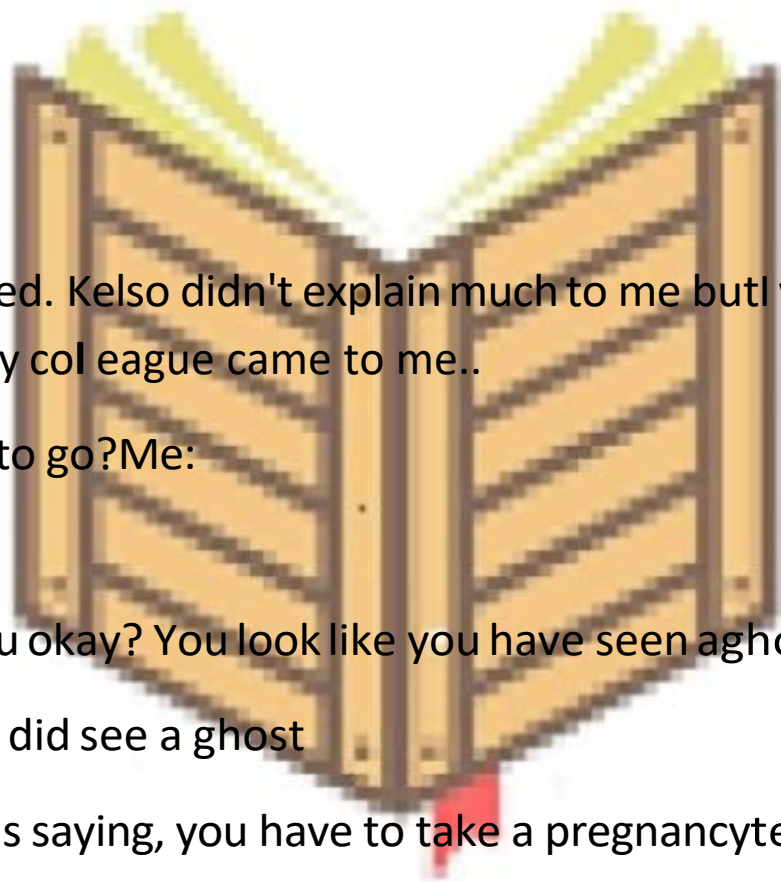
Me: Uh, yes

Her: Are you okay? You look like you have seen a ghost?

Me: I think I did see a ghost

Her: As I was saying, you have to take a pregnancy test Rachel

Me: No I'm not pregnant, it's not possible.. I'm too



old to be pregnant

Her: Just take the test and see if you are not pregnant then we will rule it out

Me: Okay I'll do so and you will be very disappointed

GERTRUDE

I was with Sandisiwe's Mother, she was so devastated. Heard she's not eating, and not sleeping since we learned that Sandi got kidnapped..

Her: If something happens to my Daughter and my Grandchild I will never forgive myself. I should have never listened to my husband, I am a mother! My Daughter should always come first

Me: Don't blame yourself. You married, obeying your husband's word it was a way of you honoring your vows and respecting him

Her: I've lost one Daughter, I don't want to lose another one

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: They say no news is good news. Wherever Sandi is, she won't go down without a fight. She's very strong, your Daughter is strong

Her: Thank you for being there for her when I couldn't

Me: It's okay

Her: if God brings her back to me, I'm not going to neglect her ever again

I held her hand..

Me: It's going to be okay

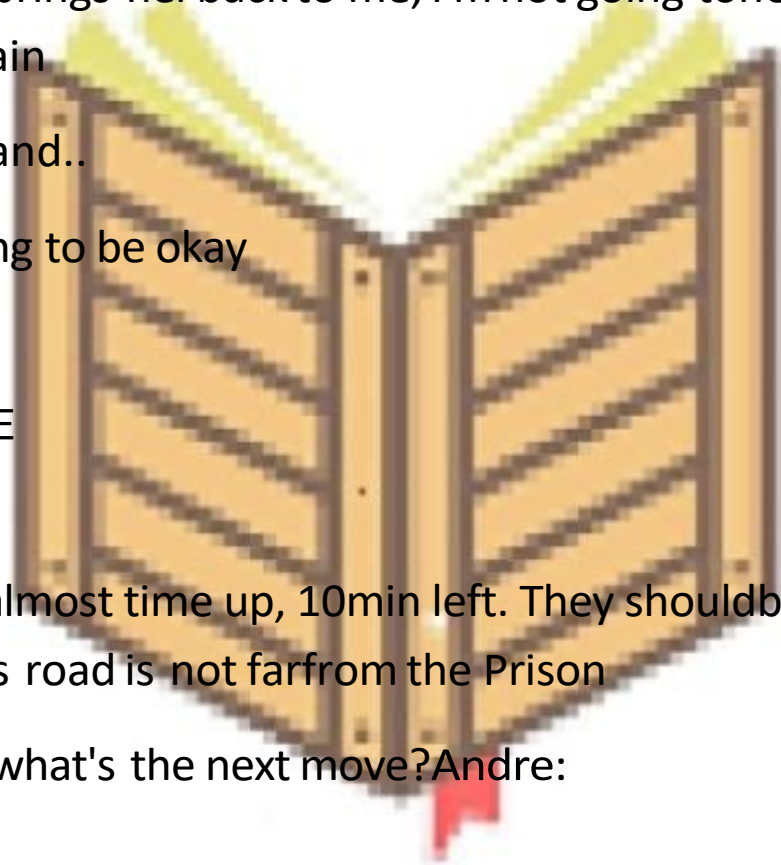
SANDISIWE

Andre: It's almost time up, 10min left. They should be here already, this road is not far from the Prison

Romeo: So what's the next move? Andre:

Kil them al

Me: It's not time yet



NOVELSGURU.COM

Andre: They late

Me: I thought I heard you say 10min left

(Silence)

Romeo: I see a van Andre:

Are you sure?Romeo: Yes

Andre looked at us...

Andre: Congratulations, seems like you not dyingtoday

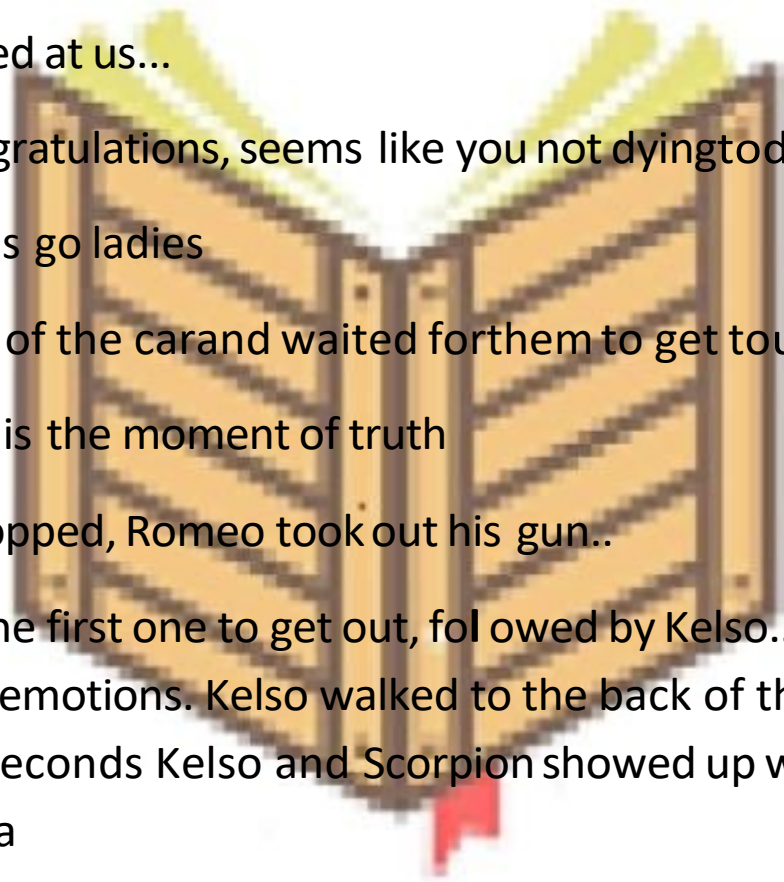
Romeo: Let's go ladies

We got out of the carand waited forthem to get tous..

Andre: This is the moment of truth

The van stopped, Romeo took out his gun..

Sole was the first one to get out, fol owed by Kelso..I couldn't explain the emotions. Kelso walked to the back of the van, aftera fewseconds Kelso and Scorpion showed up with what looked like a



NOVELSGURU.COM

prisoner..

Andre: I underestimated you boys

Sole: We will make the trade in the middle, meet us halfway with the girls

Andre: Very well

He looked at Romeo, Romeo walked us up the same time Sole and Kelso walked up the other guy. In the middle the trade was made.

Andre: Pleasure doing business with you Sole hugged us, I couldn't help myself but cry
Sole: You okay, you guys are okay

Me: Just get us out of here (crying)

Kelso: Wait a minute, where is the 3rd girl?

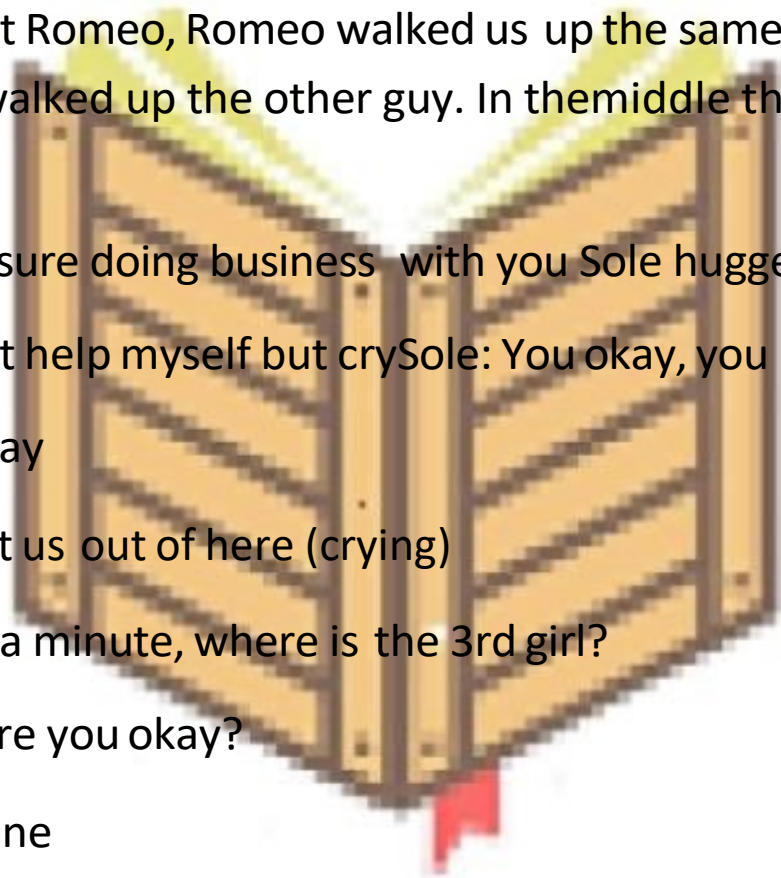
Scorpion: Are you okay?

Sethu: I'm fine

Andre: The 3rd girl escaped with one of my guys
Scorp:

What?

Sethu: Nongcebo left with one of the guys, she



NOVELSGURU.COM

escaped

Kelso: No that doesn't sound right

Andre: Marco it's his name, if you wanna kill him
Sole: Hey Mo..

It was never personal

Mo: I guess you did a bit of a bit of a shitter
Andre:

Goodbye

Kelso: No no no.. Where is my wife? You not leaving!
Romeo: J

ust let it go

Scorp: This was never what we agreed on
Andre:

She escaped

Kelso: A bit of a bit of a shitter!

Kelso walked up to them..

Andre: Maybe we will have a dead body after
Sole walked up and stopped Kelso..

Sole: Don't do this, we will find Nongcebo

NOVELSGURU.COM

Kelso: It's easy for you to say that because you have been reunited with your family

Sole: And we can't find Nongcebo if you are in a body bag, you know I have always had your back..Trust me we will find her just not like this, please...

MARCO

Me: It's going down, the exchange has been made Luca: Are we moving in?

Me: As soon as the guys clear up, there's a baby involved we can't risk the lives of two women and a baby

Luca: Very well

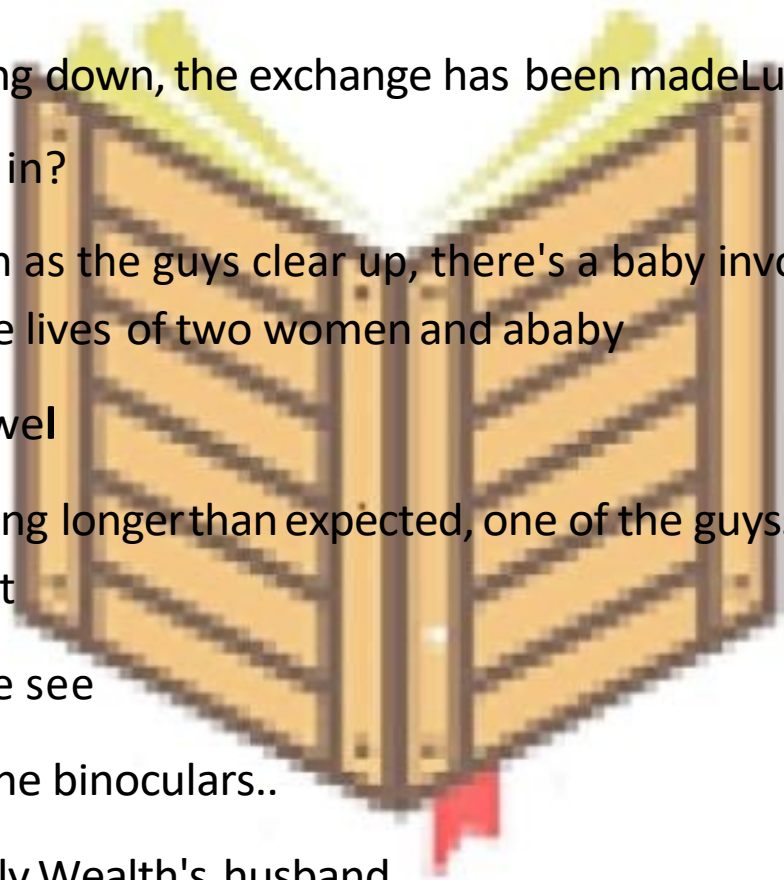
Me: It's taking longer than expected, one of the guys seem to be not having it

Luca: Let me see

I gave him the binoculars..

Me: Probably Wealth's husband

Luca: I would lose it too if my wife was not in the



NOVELSGURU.COM

mix

Me: He's shit! He did a number on her, I'm still going to pay him a visit

Luca: They seem to be clearing up Me:

Good!

.

To be continued No

edits

[08/24, 13:57] : SEASON FINALE

140

SANDISIWE

The first thing that we did when we drove out from there was to take Avery to the hospital. I was very worried but my little angel held on, she was stronger than I had given her credit for. They didn't waste



NOVELSGURU.COM

time in attending to her, they checked her vitals and put her in an incubator. She held on in the most stressful situation, and I was so proud of her..

Sole put his hands on my shoulders...

Sole: You should go home, have a bath and rest
Me: I don't wanna leave her

Sole: I'll be here she's safe
Me:

No I'm okay

Sole: You won't be able to be there for her if you not well yourself

I exhaled.. Sole:

Please..

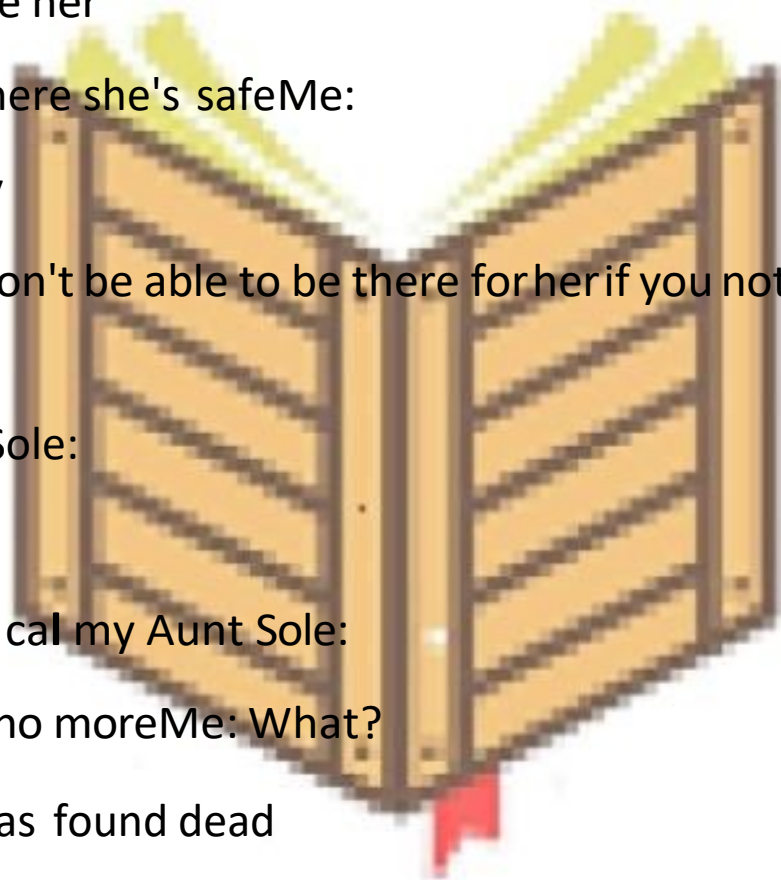
Me: Fine I'll call my Aunt Sole:

Wilsonia is no more
Me: What?

Sole: She was found dead

Me: I.. That's terrible how is Nathan?

Sole: He's having difficulties with it but he will be



NOVELSGURU.COM

okay I believe. Wilsonia signed off al her Parentingrights to me, and gave me ful custody. It was in herWil

Me: I'm truly sor y

Sole: It's okay

He took out his phone.. Sole: You

can cal your AuntI took his

phone..

MODRID

They had taken off the gas mask from me, I was still in restraints though. Andre had his puppy search me and they found the necklace. I'm surprised that he didn't bring along a lot of defense,he definitely undermined these guys to only bring along Romeo. I know Romeo very wel , has been Andre's puppet fora while..

Andre: My own Brother stealing from me

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I learned from the best

Andre: You still mad about Sandy?

Me: You stole her from me, you stole every girl from me

Andre: You don't steal a woman, the last time I checked you and Sandy were done. You left her for someone else when she needed you the most

Me: Whatever Dre.. So what now?

Andre: I will make sure that you go back, Sandy won't feel safe with you out

Me: I see

Andre wasn't ready for what was coming..

SOLE

Nurse: Good Evening Me:

Evening

Nurse: She's so adorable



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: She is

Nurse: Where is her Mom? Me:

She went home to bath Nurse:

Okay it's feeding time

Me: How is that going to work?

Nurse: She pumped before earlier on, here is her bottle

Me: Thank you

Nurse: You just insert your hand in there I inserted
my hand with the bottle..

Nurse: There we go, just like that Me:

This is amazing

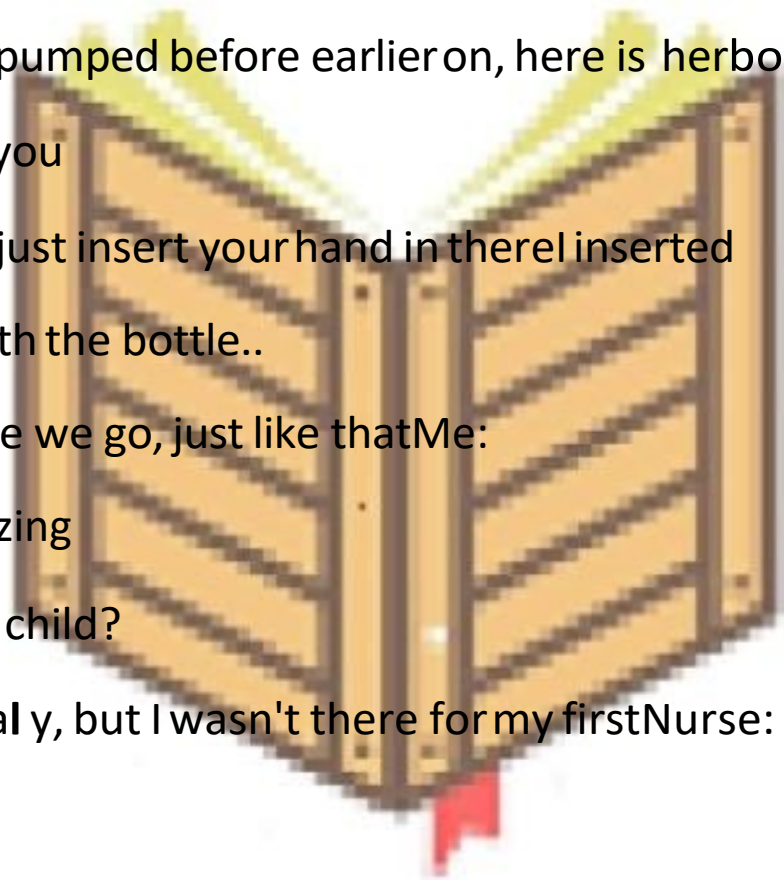
Nurse: First child?

Me: Not really, but I wasn't there for my first Nurse:

Okay

Me: Thank you very much

Nurse: Just press the button if you need anything



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'll do so.. Thank you

She smiled and walked away..

SETHU

Dr: Everything is okay... Though I would like to suggest therapy, you have been through a traumatic experience. We will keep you overnight

Me: Thank you Scorpion

walked in...

Scorp: How are you feeling? Me: I

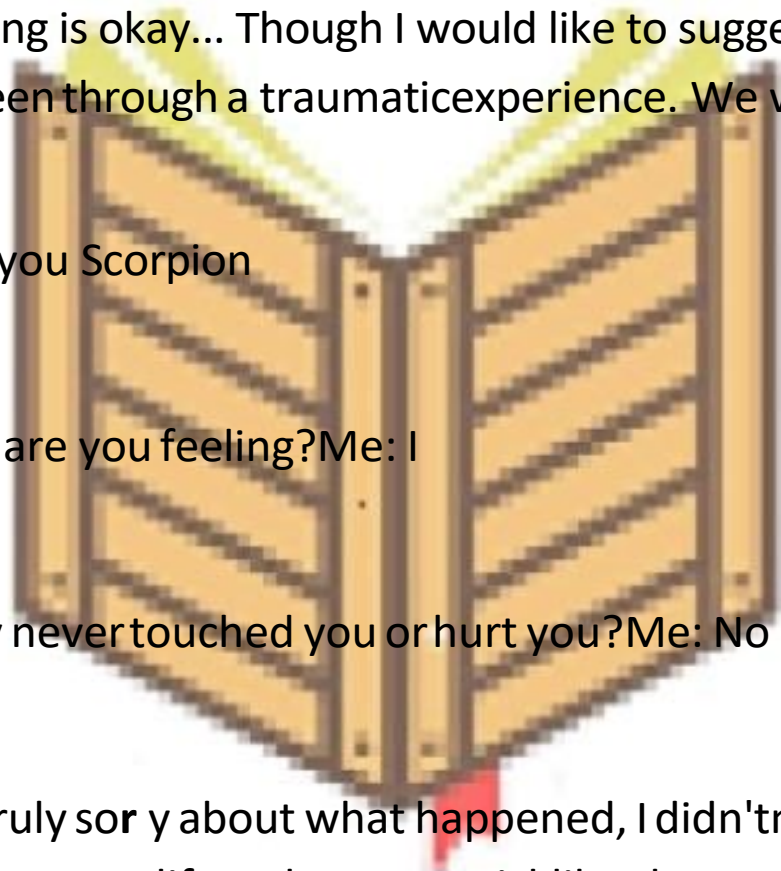
am okay

Scorp: They never touched you or hurt you? Me: No

I'm okay

Scorp: I'm truly sorry about what happened, I didn't mean it to happen or for your life to be put at risk like that

Me: Anything about Nongcebo?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Scorp: Nothing.. What really happened?

Me: I thought we were all in this together, we were there for each other and Nongcebo decided to betray us by falling for one of the guys. He broke her out and she left us there to die, left Sandisiwe's baby to die. She didn't even call for help on the other side, that's what your sister did to us!

Scorp: That doesn't sound like Nongcebo

Me: For how long have you've known her? You've just found out about her not so long ago. Nongcebo is a whore, she's married and sh-

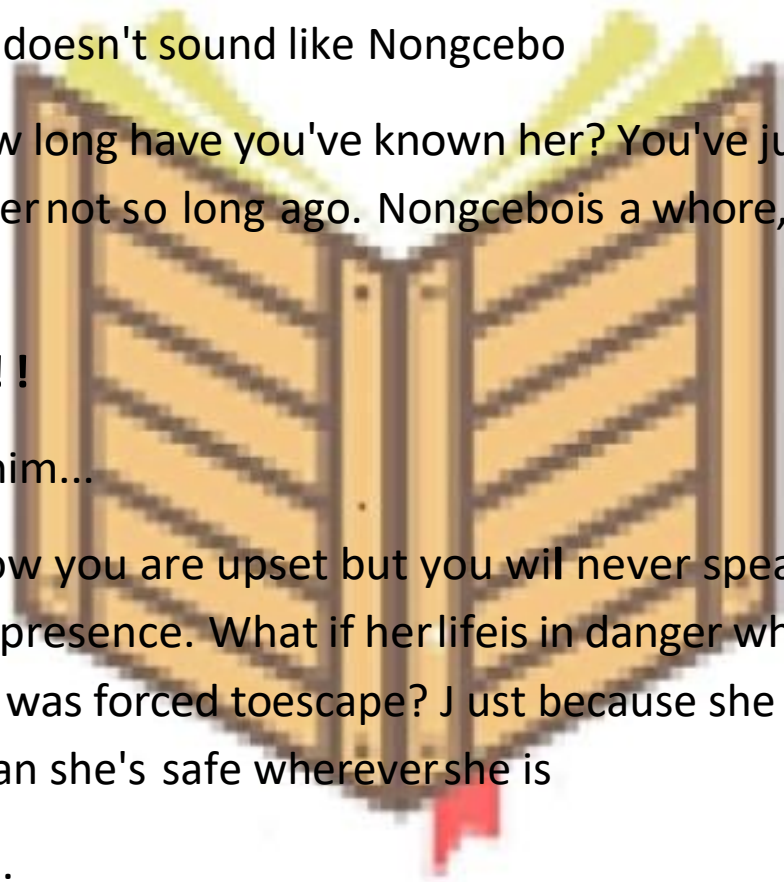
Scorp: Hey!!

I looked at him...

Scorp: I know you are upset but you will never speak ill of my sister in my presence. What if her life is in danger where she is? What if she was forced to escape? Just because she broke out doesn't mean she's safe wherever she is

I kept quiet..

Scorp: Obviously you need some space, Good night



I walked out..

SANDISIWE

As we were driving back home I told my Grandmother about how I gave birth to Avery.

I didn't witness anything, I didn't see anything. I was knocked out when they took her out from me..

Aunt: This is just absurd! I'm grateful that Avery is safe and well, she did well.. Can't wait to see her

Me: She did very well

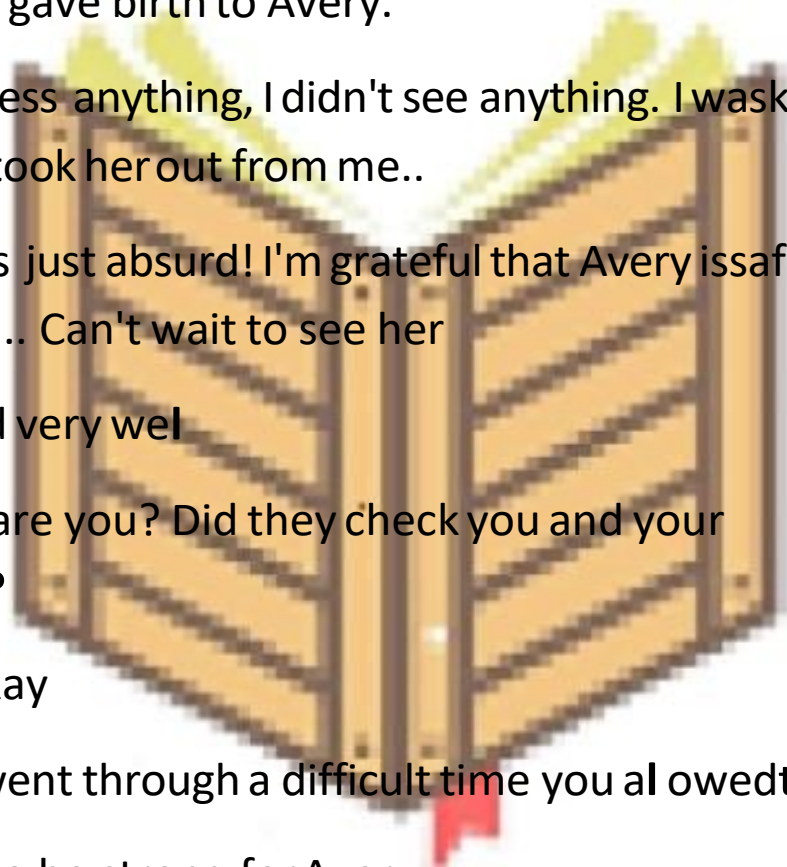
Aunt: How are you? Did they check you and your operation?

Me: I am okay

Aunt: You went through a difficult time you allowed to break

Me: I have to be strong for Avery

Aunt: You are home now. You and Avery are safe,



I'm sure Sole won't allow anything to happen to you guys

(Silence)

Me: I'm leaving him Aunt:

Huh?

Me: I'm going to leave him Aunty, there's someone else I have to think about now. Someone who means the world to me, being with Sole is only going to put us in danger at the time. I can't have that

Aunt: Don't make any rash decisions, think this through first

Me: I will

KELSO

I fetched Scorpion from the hospital..

Scorpion: Where is Sole?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Sole is with his family he won't come through for us anytime soon

Scorp: Sethu said Nongcebo escaped with one of the Men
I sighed..

Scorp: This is all confusing Man, I don't know what to think

Me: Nongcebo wouldn't do that she loves me. If she did escape, she was forced. She could be in danger

I nodded..

Me: We have to ask one of the girls where they were held captive and start from there

Scorp: Maybe we can talk to Sandi, Sethu is impossible right now.. Let's go get something to drink in the meantime

MODRID

I heard the bikes. I smiled a little..

NOVELSGURU.COM



As we were driving, Romeo stepped on the brakes..We leaned forward..

Andre: What's going on?

Romeo: I'm not sure, two bikes just stopped in front of the car

Two other bikes stopped on each side of the car..Romeo:

Fuck!

Andre: I'll call for backup

Andre took out his phone, before he could make that call I hit him on his face with my elbow. He dropped the phone.

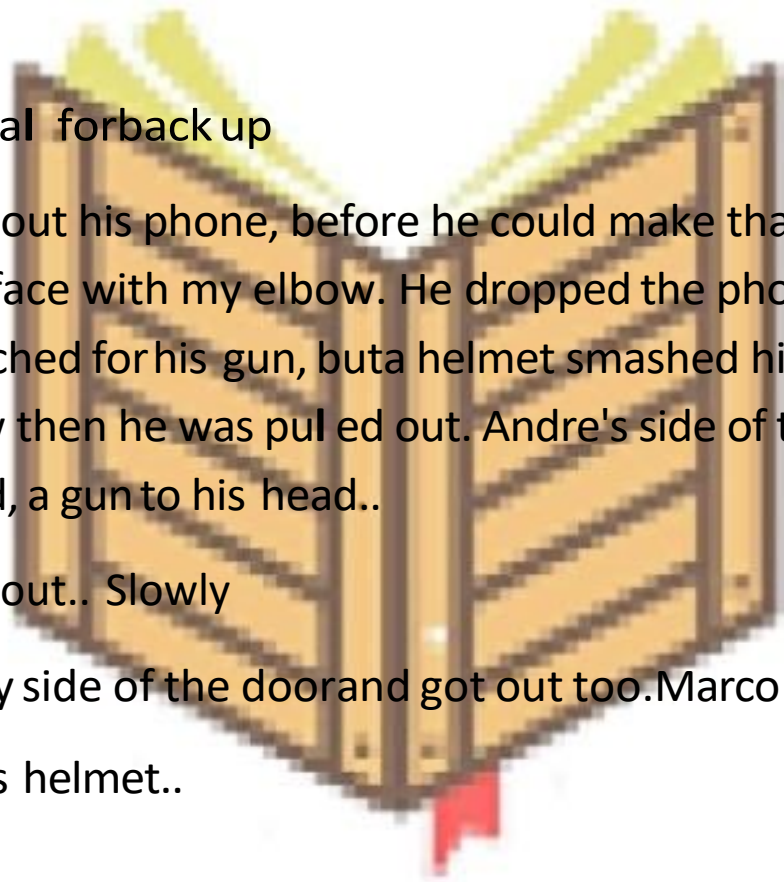
Romeo reached for his gun, but a helmet smashed his side of the window then he was pulled out. Andre's side of the door was opened, a gun to his head..

Voice: Step out.. Slowly

I opened my side of the door and got out too. Marco removed his helmet..

Marco: Mo

Me: Mac



He laughed.. Marco:

Look at youHe hugged

me..

Me: I need to get out of this restraints, have to skipthe country. Is everything set?

Marco: Everything is set, al the evidence has been sent. To Interpol, Andre is not getting out of this one

Me: I knewI could trust you

Marco: We did it

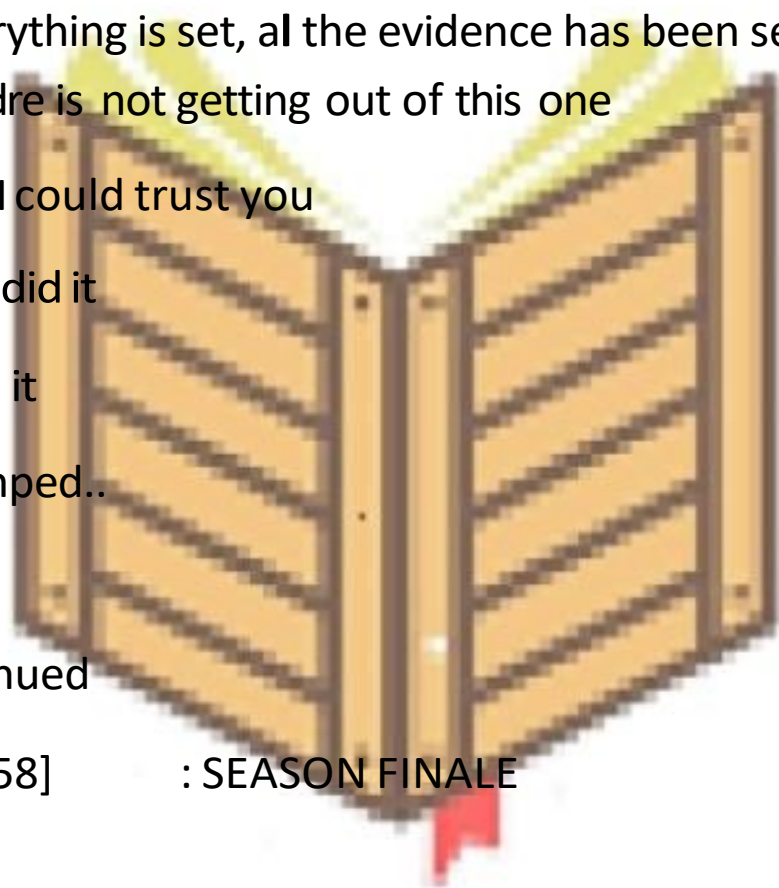
Me: We did it

We fist bumped..

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:58] : SEASON FINALE



NONGCEBO

Marco and Luca were still not at home when we went to bed, I couldn't sleep not knowing if Marco was okay or not. With Andre out there looking for him, I was very worried about his safety.. My

worries were short lived when I heard the door opening, and heard voices. I sighed in relief, I rose up from the pillow and sat up straight. After a while Marco walked into the bedroom and switched on the light, he leaned against the door looking at me...

Marco: Am I in trouble?

Me: Where have you been? I was worried sick about you

Marco: I know Señorita, it took longer than I expected. I'm sorry

Me: Where were you?

Marco: Handling business.. Look if you are opting for a fight can we please do it tomorrow? Right now you have to leave with Rosetta. Back to the City, you

are safe. We are safe. You will be able to see your family once more and friends

I swallowed as my heart sank, he said all of that and didn't include himself in the speech.

Me: Why can't we stay here? I like it here

He moved closer and got in bed, sitting next to me...

Marco: Starting a new life with me means handling a few loose ends from your previous life. You married remember? He's probably worried sick about you, you have to go back home. Take care of that mess first and then we can start on a clean slate

Me: Will I ever see you again?

Marco: Andre is no longer a threat to us anymore, there's no longer an obstacle standing in our way of being together. I will auction my old house and permanently move into the city because I have a business to join that side, and when all is done from your side then you can hit me up

He kissed me on my shoulder..

Marco: You will spend a night at Rosetta's house then tomorrow morning she will drive you back home, are you okay with that?

I sadly nodded..

Marco: She will give you a new phone also tomorrow morning and you can call me anytime

Me: Okay I understand

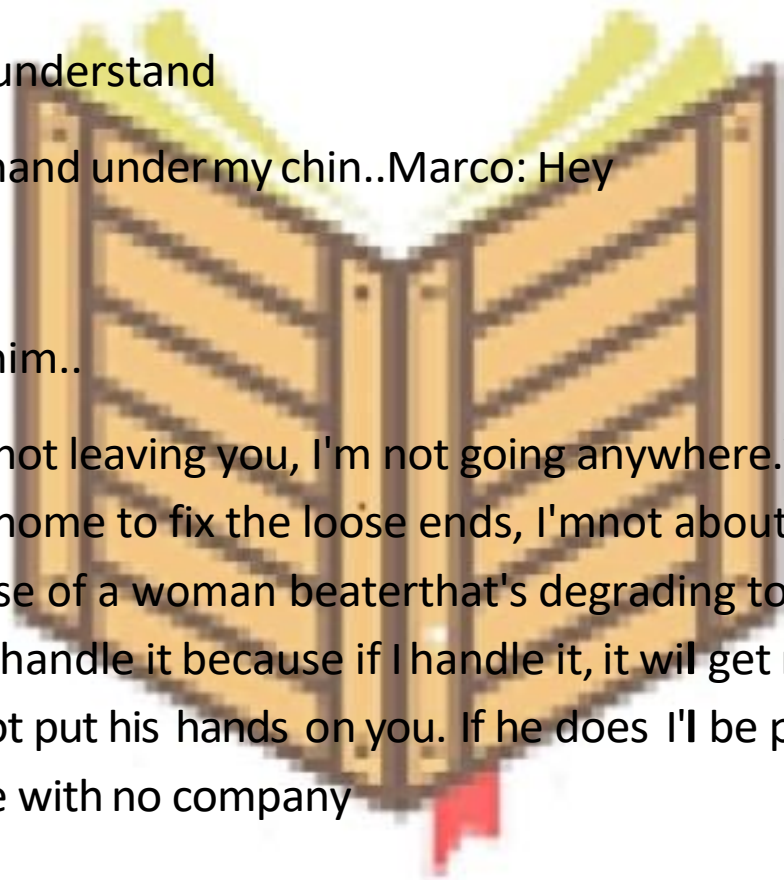
He put his hand under my chin.. Marco: Hey look at me

I looked at him..

Marco: I'm not leaving you, I'm not going anywhere. You just going back home to fix the loose ends, I'm not about to catch a case because of a woman beater that's degrading to who I am. Rather you handle it because if I handle it, it will get messy and he better not put his hands on you. If he does I'll be popping up at his house with no company

I chuckled..

Marco: Come on.. Let's get you out of here, Rosetta is waiting



NOVELSGURU.COM

SANDISIWE

I looked at the time, it was 23:00. I got out of bed and went to knock for Kelo in his bedroom..

Me: Kelo wake up!

He wasn't waking up. I kept on knocking until my Aunt got out of her bedroom..

Aunt: Sandi what's wrong?

Me: I wanted Kelo to borrow me his phone so I can call Sole and find out how Avery is.

Aunt: I'll get mine

She went to get hers then handed it to me..

I walked to the kitchen and called him, he didn't pick up. I called him again, he picked up..

Sole: Sweets

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What took you so long?

Sole: I went to the rest room to take a piss

Me: You left Avery alone? I know I shouldn't have left

Sole: Avery is fine Sweets

Me: Do you know who can get into the ward and sneak her out? I'm coming there

Sole: You need to relax

Me: Don't tell me to relax! You don't know what me and my Daughter have been through because of your reckless lifestyle! You don't know the sleepless nights I had not knowing what they were doing to her! Don't ever tell me to relax when it comes to my Daughter

Sole: Okay I didn't mean to upset you, Avery is fine. Please stop saying "She's my Daughter".. She's my Daughter too!

Me: When my Daughter gets out of the hospital, I'll make sure that you don't ever see her again

Sole: Good night Sandi.. We will see you tomorrow morning, get some rest. I love you

He hung up..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Don't hang up on me! Sole?

I slammed the phone against the counter..Me: I swear!

Aunt: You have to deal with what happened, you need help Sandi

Me: He will never see Avery ever again!

Aunt: Avery has been through enough. Don't think with your emotions, think with your brain. Sole can take you to court if you refuse to let him see his Daughter, the court will grant him visitation rights. Do you want the court to be involved in your Parenting?

Me: The court will never grant him that

Aunt: Yes they will. So long Sole is not a pedophile and no danger to her they will, and with your anger and no source of income. If he can get a good lawyer they will display you as mentally and financially incompetent to raise Avery, and he might get full custody and you will end up with supervised visitations. Is that what you want? You told me his

already taking care of his kid with someone else and that will work to his advantage. Don't let your anger towards him ruin your chances of being a fulltime mother to Avery. Find common ground with him, you don't have to stay with him if you don't want too but don't try to use Avery to fight your battles. It will backfire!

NONGCEBO

Marco strapped the seat belt on me..Me: It's good

He kept on pulling it a bit.. Me:

Marco it's good.. I'm good

He crouched and held my hand..

Marco: You will call me using Rosetta's phone when you guys get to the house

Me: Okay

He looked at Rosetta...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: Drive safely, if you feel like you tired. Pull over at a garage and rest

Rosetta: This is not my first time driving at night Marco

Marco: I'm just making sure Me:

We going to be fine

Rosetta: And we should get going Marco

kissed my hand repeatedly..

Marco: If by 3am I'm not hearing from you guys, I'm there

Rosetta: Ohw dear me here we go Me:

We should get going

He got up and kissed me..

Marco: Please be safe.. I love you Me: I

love you too

He kissed me again, then he closed the door.. Rosetta: I

thought we were never going to leave Me: Let's go

NOVELSGURU.COM

SOLE

I was on a video call with Scorpion..Me: How is he holding up?

Scorp: Very drunk

Me: Get him home safe pleaseScorp:

I'll do so

Me: Tomorrow morning we will meet up and see how we going to get Nongcebo back home

Scorp: No problem.. How is the baby holding up?Me: She's doing good man

Scorp: That's good to hear

Me: Ayt I'll see you guys tomorrowScorp:

Cool

NOVELSGURU.COM

SETHU

My post on Facebook got 500 shares, 300 comments and 3000 liked. I read the comments:

"But this is the real world, she thought about her safety first. I would've done the same, I don't know why you acting bitter you got home safe didn't you?"

I rolled my eyes..

"But friends that we keep, so all that she was thinking about was a dick"

I liked the comment..

"Isn't this the same girl who was said to be abused and went back to the abuser? I'm not surprised she did this"



NOVELSGURU.COM

I liked..

"But what friend are you talking like this about your friend?
What if she's being abused where she is.
You are evil, you chasing clout the wrong way"

I deleted the comment and blocked her..

NONGCEBO

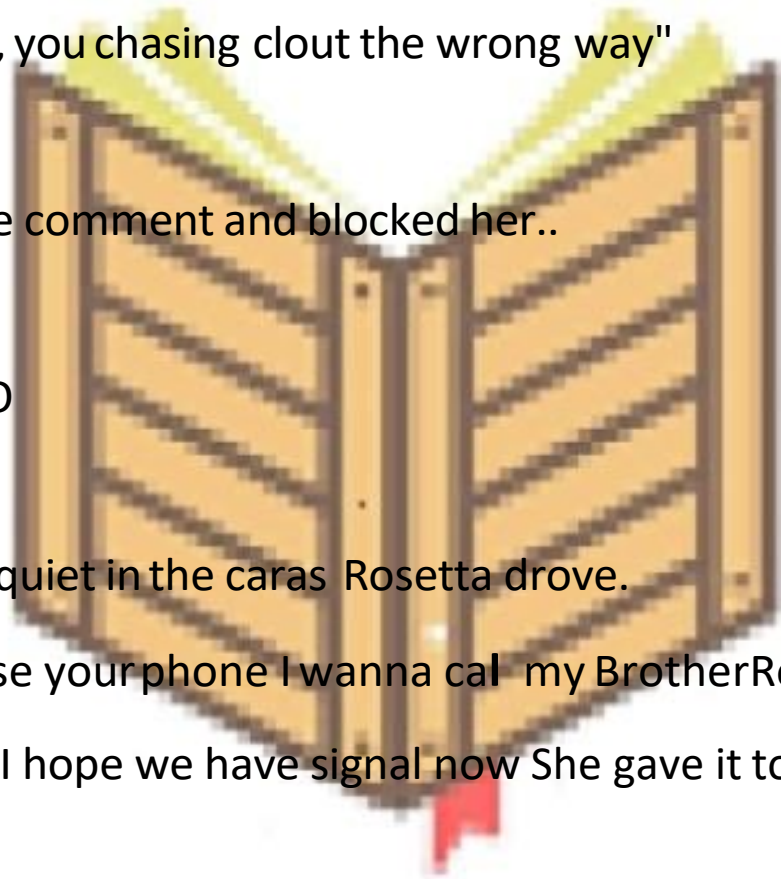
It was very quiet in the car as Rosetta drove.

Me: Can I use your phone I wanna call my Brother Rosetta:

Yeah sure.. I hope we have signal now She gave it to me I
checked..

Me: I think we do **NOVELSGURU.COM**

She unlocked with her fingerprint then I called Lindo.. He
took time to answer..



Lindo: Hel o?

It was a bit noisy where he was..Me:

Hey it's me.. It's Nongcebo He didn't say anything...

Me: Hel o?Lindo:

Wait

I waited, he got back to me and now it was quiet...Lindo:

Nongcebo where are you? Are you okay?

Me: I'm fine

Lindo: Sethu and Sandi got back home, why weren't you with them?

Me: It's a long story

Lindo: Is it true though? That you escaped with one of the guys?

Me: Yes

Lindo: Did he hurt you? Are you okay?

Me: I'm good.. My life was in danger, he actual y saved me from being raped by the other guys.. He



NOVELS.SURU.COM

saved my life Lindo and tomor ow I'm coming backhome

He exhaled..

Lindo: Thank God, so long you safe

Me: J ust wanted to contact you and let you knowthat I'm safe

Lindo: I'm glad.. Guess I'll see you tomor ow
Me: Yes tomor ow

Lindo: Okay I love youMe: I

love you too

I hung up..

MARCO

The carparked in the middle. Modrid got out, Lucagot out too. They opened the back doorand got Andre out and Romeo, they were tied

They walked them inside..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Wait

They stopped..

I took out my gun and shot Romero in his forehead, execution style..

Andre: No!!!

Me: Now do you see that we mean business? He looked at me and clenched his Jaws..

Modrid smiled and walked Andre in, he pat me on the shoulder..

Mo: Nice one

Luca: I'll bury the body Me:

I'll get the shovels

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:58]

: SEASON FINALE

NOVELSGURU.COM

SANDISIWE

The next morning, my Aunt dropped me off at the hospital before heading to work..

Nathan was around..Me: Hi

Nathan

He walked up to me and hugged me, I'm surprised he still remembers me..

Me: How are you?

Nathan: I'm fine Me:

I'm also fine

I looked at Sole..

Me: When did he arrive?

Sole: My Brother dropped him off last nightMe: He slept here?

Sole: Yes... On the bed, Brian said he was crying for me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Avery's ward has a bad..

Sole: I have to go home and get some rest

Me: Okay thank you for being here the whole night

Sole: It's not favour, Avery is my Daughter too. With that being said You and I have to talk

Me: We wil , right now I just want Avery to be fine sol can take her home

Sole: Nathan let's go

Nathan: I wanna stay with baby Avery Sole

looked at me..

Me: It's okay

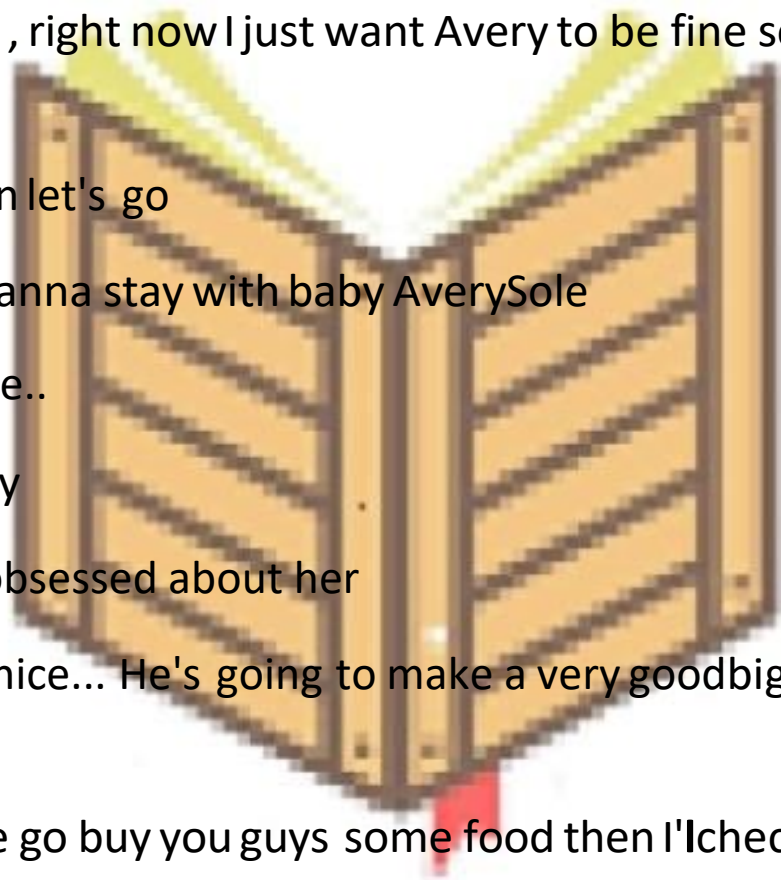
Sole: He's obsessed about her

Me: That's nice... He's going to make a very good big brother

Sole: Let me go buy you guys some food then I'll check on you later

Me: Okay

Sole: Nathan come let's go buy some food



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

The next morning Rosetta and I started off at the mall to get me a new phone. Last night Marco called me on Rosetta's phone but we couldn't talk much because because Rosetta wanted to talk to Luca.. I called Lindo, he was the one who fetched me. We gave him directions...

Me: This is my big Brother Lindo, and Lindo this is Rosetta. The man who rescued me is her Brotherinlaw

Rosetta: Nice to meet you

Lindo: Nice to meet you too, you very beautiful bythe way

Rosetta: Thank you very muchLindo:

Are you ready to go?

Me: Yes

I hugged Rosetta..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Thank you for everything, I'll call you

Rosetta: Please do

Lindo: What happened to your nose? Rosetta:

Oh well I punched her in the face Lindo: Huh?

Me: During training, I was teaching her self defense Lindo: And how did that go?

Rosetta: Not so good but we'll keep on trying Lindo: I'm impressed

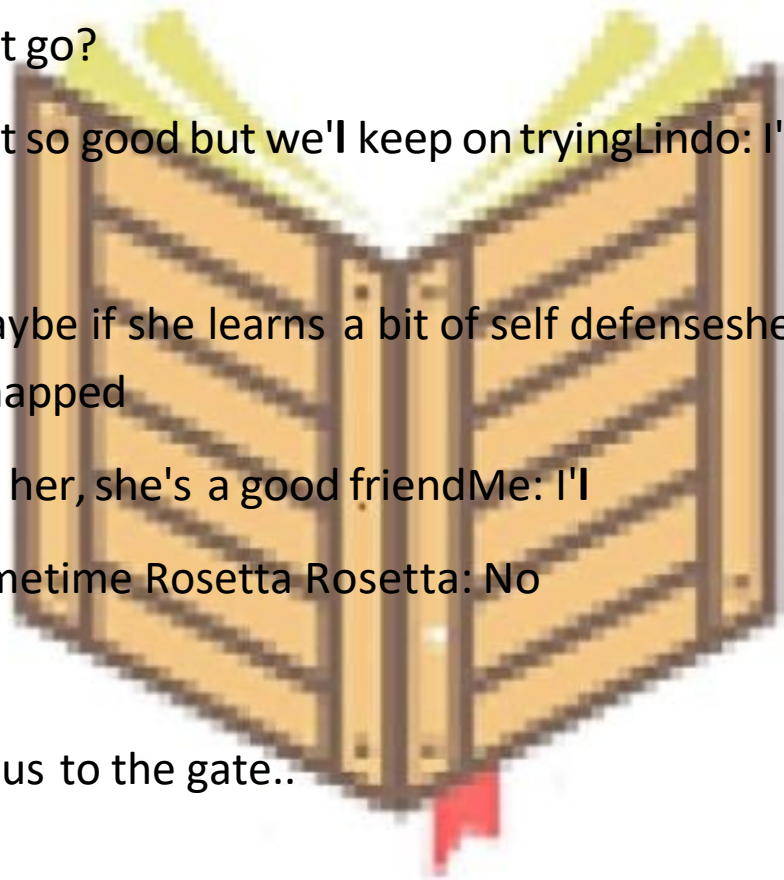
Rosetta: Maybe if she learns a bit of self defense she'll stop getting kidnapped

Lindo: Keep her, she's a good friend Me: I'll

see you sometime Rosetta Rosetta: No

problem

She walked us to the gate..



RACHEL

NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at the pregnancy tests. All 3 of them were positive, how is this even possible? Banza is in his late 20s. I'm in my mid 40s, I thought I was completely done with children

My phone rang, it was Manto..Me:

Hel o

Manto: Good morning, I've been meaning to call you but Banza told me that you had a lot on your plate with regards to Khumalo's family

Me: Yes that's very true

Manto: I was just checking up on you Me:

Something impossible just happened Manto: Yes?

Me: I'm pregnant

Manto: Thank God you've just said that, I was scared to say something. Prior to this, both your ancestors and the Khumalo ancestors visited me. Two snakes, at first I wasn't sure so I burned an

NOVELSGURU.COM

incense. Ngaphahla and it was clear Me:

What are you talking about?

Manto: The baby you are carrying is a miracle baby, it's going to bring a lot of healing to the Khumalo family. With this baby they are bringing back Slindile to you guys, and you should name the baby Slindile Khumalo. Both ancestors blessed you with this baby to show you that they approve of your relationship with Khumalo. Soon you guys will have to do a traditional ceremony thanking the ancestors, and also a traditional wedding ceremony to completely bring both ancestors together

Me: Wow I don't even know what to say Manto:

You very blessed Rachel

Me: I... Let me call you back later, I need to let this sink in

Manto: Okay bye

I hung up. Thinking of it now, in my previous marriage we tried having more kids but I couldn't conceive. Another thing that caused a big shift to

our marriage, and being with Khumalo for a short time already I'm pregnant at my age. I was in awe, it was difficult to comprehend..

NONGCEBO

I looked at Lindo as he was driving..

Lindo: What happened? How did you escape?

Me: One of the guys that were holding us captive, at one point he took me to the bathroom. Wanted to rape me, another guy who was holding us captive Marco. Came to my rescue, then he decided to help me escape to save me from that pain and nightmare

Lindo: That's good.. I don't know what I would've done if you had to go through that again, if we ever meet remind me to thank him

(Silence)

Me: There's more NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindo: What more?

Me: Marco and I we.. We fel foreach other, wedating

Lindo shook his head.. Me:

He's a very good guy

Lindo: He was holding you captive. You don't have to fal forevery guy that saves you, you did it with Kelso. Is this anotherKelso situation?

Me: Marco is different

Lindo: He's an Italian I assume?Me: Yes

Lindo: Those people are dangerous, you guys werekidnapped by them. They have run a human trafficking rig, they sel women and little girls to foreign men. Making them sex slaves

Me: Marco is not like that, why would he save me?

Lindo: Why did Kelso save you and then later on abused you? I don't know if you are naive orthis is adisease

Me: Wow!

Lindo: I'm not ready to deal with Italians they very dangerous

Me: Marco is not like that

Lindo: I'm sure you said the same thing about Kelso
Me: I don't expect you to understand

Lindo: Weren't you fixing things with Kelso? I hated the guy and ended up accepting him because you "Loved" him. Now I have to accept this one because you have fallen in love with him? Maybe we should consider going back to therapy, get to the root of the problem on why you are so attached to harmful guys. After the whole Kelso saga you were ready to move on and concentrate on yourself, you don't really need a man. You need to be alone, find yourself, learn to emotionally attach to yourself.

Why do you fear being alone so much?

Me: I don't fear being alone, I just fell in love
He shook his head again and sighed..

Lindo: Asazi Nongcebo

MARCO

I pulled the chair and sat down in front of him. I lit a cigarette, he was cuffed to the wall.

Andre: You not going to get away with this

Me: But I am.. I am waiting for authorities to build a strong case against you with all the evidence that has been presented

He laughed...

Andre: I have the law on my payroll

Me: That's why we're bringing in the big guns, Interpol. We have made contact with authorities overseas to make sure that you get locked away for good, and if my mind serves me right. You have a lot of pending cases at least in 3 countries. I am vouching for you to be held at the most notorious prison in Mexico

Andre: You're starting something that you cannot finish, you're putting yourself and that Señorita in

danger

Me: See here's the thing. If you contacts so much as break her finger, Sandy with a beautiful smile will be on the first cruise ship to somewhere else

Andre: If you touch her

Me: Please Dre I don't hurt women, but people I know will. Just cooperate, face the law. Pay for your sins and she will forever be safe!

I got up..

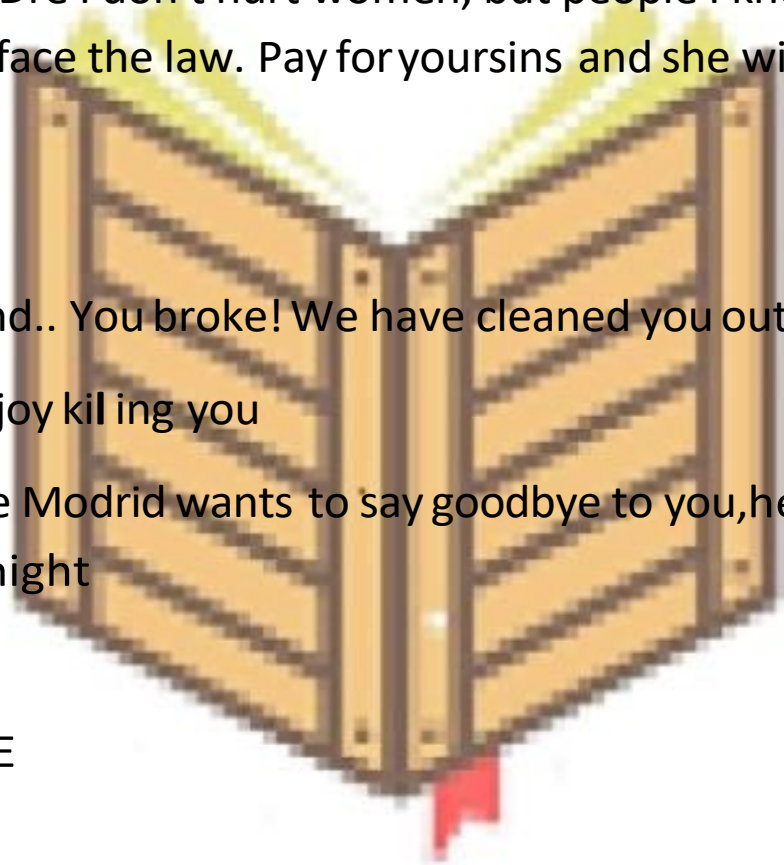
Me: Ohw and.. You broke! We have cleaned you out! Andre: I'm going to enjoy killing you

Me: I'm sure Modrid wants to say goodbye to you, he's leaving tonight

SANDISIWE

Nathan looked at Avery..

Nathan: She's not opening her eyes



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That's because she's sleeping Nath:

She sleeps a lot

Me: She's still a baby, you were once this small too Nath: I was never this small

I laughed..

Me: Eat your burger baby

Nath: Can I share it with Baby Avery?

Me: She can't eat that as yet, but when she grows up she will eat it

He nodded..

Nath: Can I call you Mommy? I

looked at him..

Nath: Dad says you going to be my new Mommy since Coco went to heaven and never coming back

Me: Uhm.. Yes I guess so.. You can call me Mommy because now I have two kids.. You and Avery

Nath: Are you and baby Avery going to live with me and Daddy?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Uhm we'll see baby

He walked up to me, I put him on my lap..

We both watched Avery as she was sleeping.

.

To be continued

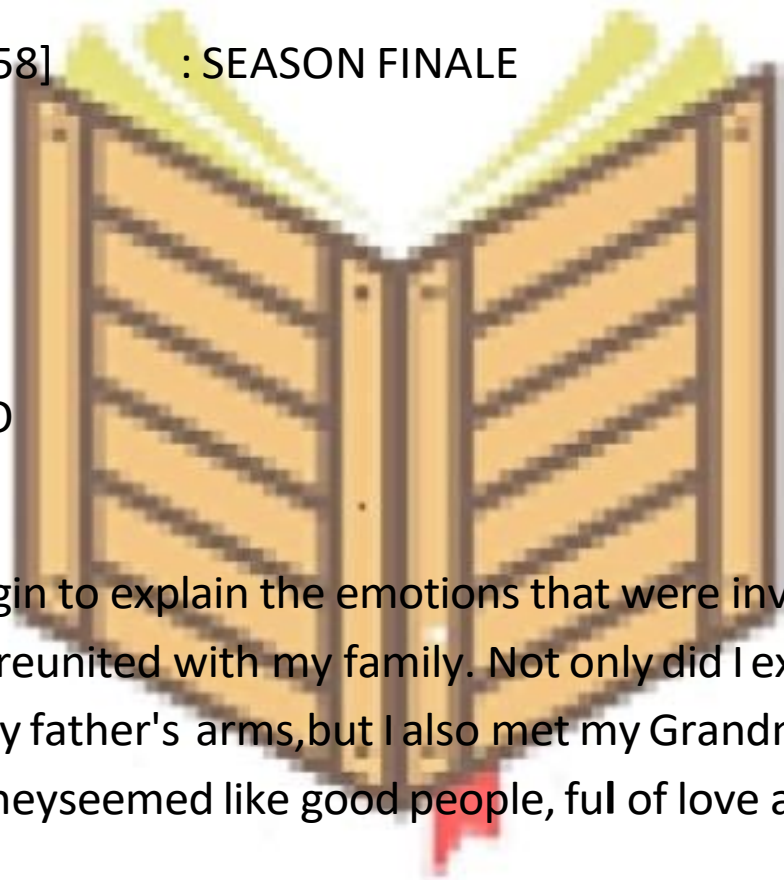
[08/24, 13:58] : SEASON FINALE

143

NONGCEBO

I cannot begin to explain the emotions that were involved as I once again reunited with my family. Not only did I expect to end up in my father's arms, but I also met my Grandmother and my Aunt. They seemed like good people, full of love and warmth.

Being home again reminded me that Sli is gone, and to be buried in 2 days time. Our other relatives will be arriving later on today. My father was very



NOVELSGURU.COM

emotional, he was shaking so bad when I hugged him. The first time I saw him breaking. Marco was right about me coming back home, they've been through enough and my disappearance would've killed my father.. I was very intimidated as we started catching up, it seems like I come from a very that's very well educated. A family of women that was never blessed when it comes to Men and marriages. My Grandmother has had two failed marriages, my Aunt recently divorced. They also touched base on other family members, seems like these women were busy trying to get their own and became intimidating. Just from how they were talking I could tell that success meant more to them, than love and marriage...

Aunt: That's good although specializing in Pediatrics seems like a difficult choice of career, it's very sensitive why not do surgery. That's a bit broad and fascinating. I think you will enjoy it more

I took the glass of water and drank from it..She was making me very nervous..

Aunt: Sli specialized in Maxillo-facial oral surgery, one of the highest specialists after an orthodontist. I thought she was going to go to Oral pathology or oral medicine but hey.. Mfos is not so bad

Me: I think I'm going to lie down, I don't feel too good

Aunt: Of course Darling, please rest a bit. When you wake up later on I'll prepare you something to eat

Me: Thank you

I walked straight to my bedroom.. Aunt:

Shame poorthing

KELSO

Scorpion asked to meet up with me, we met at chisanyama..

Scorp: So ya she's back That

was a relief...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How is she? Is she hurt? Did they do something to her?

Scorp: She seems fine

Me: So the story of her escaping was true after all
Me: Yes, only because she was in danger

I nodded..

Scorp: There's something I have to discuss with you
I looked at him..

Scorp: Nongcebo is.. I don't know how to say this
He ran his hand across his face..

Scorp: She is saying that she's in love with the guy that saved her, apparently they are in a relationship and very much in love
I couldn't help but burst into laughter..

Me: I thought you and I were cool, you don't have to joke like that

Scorp: I'm not joking his name is Marco (Silence)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: He saved her, he was there at the right moment to be her saving grace. In her eyes he is a hero, when I rocked up in her life when she was still going through the most with that old man she was with.

She saw me as a hero and it was easy for her to fall for me, I was her knight in shining armour. She's confused and traumatized

Scorp: That's what I thought but she seems serious about this

Me: So what now? I have to go at it with an Italian?

Scorp: No... I think she needs to attend therapy again, this is not normal. There's an underlying issue that makes her act like this, if we get to the root of the problem maybe it'll help

Me: Nongcebo is my wife and yes I was horrible to her at some point, but I'm not going to give up on her. This little nonsense of affection she's having towards this Italian is not going to last, I'm not going to have it

Scorp: So long you don't hurt my Sister, because if you do. I'll get to you first before the Italian does,

you know that

SANDISIWE

I was reading a magazine busy passing time with Nathan playing a game on his phone, he was making a bit of noise though..

Nath: I need an M6.. Guys I need an M6

He had his earphones on, before reprimanding him I decided to let him be for a while and see what this game is really about..

Nath: I'm at the hospital.. No I'm not sick, my baby sister is sick... Please cover me

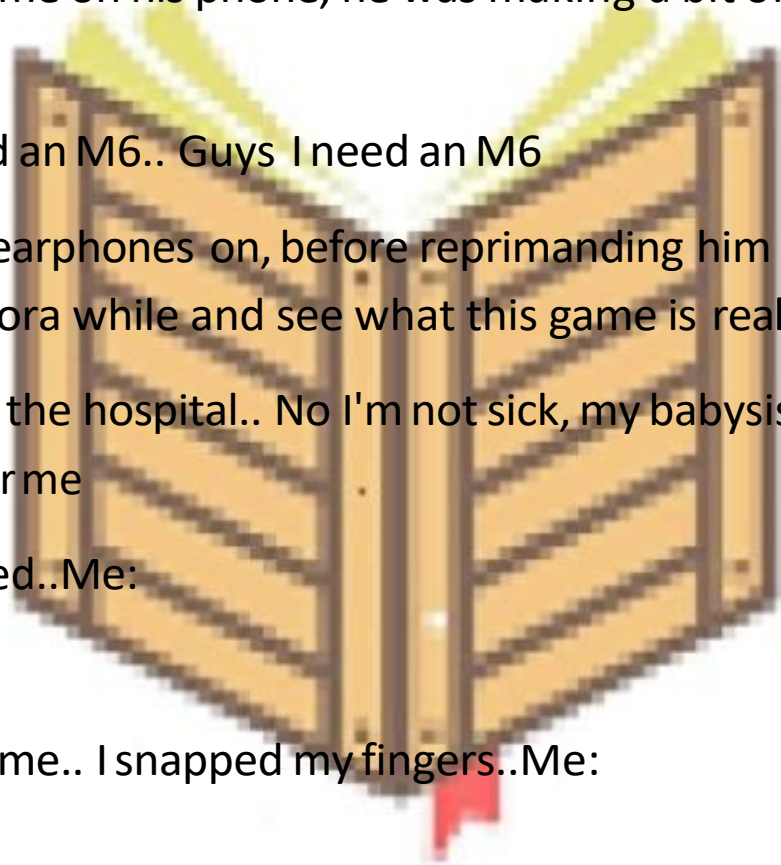
I was amused..Me:

Nathan..

He ignored me.. I snapped my fingers..Me:

Hey!

Nath: Guys let me hibernate my mother is calling



NOVELSGURU.COM

me, please don't bomb me

He took off his earphones and looked at me..Me: Who are you talking too?

Nath: My friends

Me: You play with your friends?Nath:

Yes

Me: What is the game about?Nath:

It's PUBG

Me: Yes but what is it about?He kept quiet..

Me: What is an M6?

Nath: It's a gun

Me: Ohw

Nath: Can I play now?Me:

Yes

I need to talk to Sole about this, I don't think Nathanshould be playing such games. He's way too young



NOVELSGURU.COM

to be playing violent games..

NONGCEBO

I tried calling Marco but I couldn't reach him, I forgot that at the Cabin that area doesn't have a signal. I sighed and put my phone away, I tried to sleep but I couldn't. I took my phone again and downloaded Facebook, I had a lot of inboxes I checked them out..

The inboxes were from women who were busy insulting me, where did come from?

I checked what led to this and found that Sethu posted a long as story about the kidnapping trash talking me. I was mad and hurt at the same time, I called Lindo right away...

Lindo: Hey

Me: What is wrong with your girlfriend? Lindo:

What are you talking about?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: She posted shit on Facebook about me!
Lindo: What are you talking about?

Me: She posted about the kidnapping but she lied about it

Lindo: What did she say?

Me: She said things like I sold them out and sailed off to the sunset with one of the kidnappers. I sold them out for my freedom, I felt them to be abused and tortured. I even endangered the life of a newborn baby by trading her too, the baby was kept in a separate room and had to be rushed to the hospital after the rescue because she was abused and it's all my fault

Lindo: What?

Me: People are saying mean things about me, telling me I should die I don't deserve to live (crying)

Lindo: I knew she was mad about the kidnapping I didn't think she was this mad

Me: She dragged Marco into this, said they had a spark. Marco was interested in her and then I

seduced him and traded them because I was jealous

Lindo: I'll call you back later

How can Sethu do this? Why would she do this?

SETHU

Dr: You are a very strong woman, the world needs more women like you

Me: Thank you

Dr: Have you thought about opening a case? Me: It's still fresh, I still get nightmares from it

Dr: You should this girl has to pay. I hate women who do that to other women. Worse she did that because of a man! Traded you guys and what did she get in return? She should be jailed too. You have to open a case against her

I sighed..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It was a terrible experience. One of the guys Marco, he... At first I thought he was genuinely into me, only to realize later that he actually had a deal with Nongcebo. One time we were having breakfast, he separated me from the others. Took me upstairs to the bathroom, asked me to strip naked

I closed my eyes..

Me: He forced himself on me

Dr: Why didn't you say so when you first got here

Me: He forced me to bath, all the evidence was washed off

Dr: That doesn't matter, you were held captive. Yes they do that most of the time take advantage of their victims and force them to bath. We have to run tests, this is absurd

Me: I told Nongcebo and she told me I deserved it, told me she traded me for freedom.. It was horrible

Dr: I'm truly sorry... I'm deeply sorry about that she hugged me..

Dr: It's okay, they going to pay for this!

SANDISIWE

The Nurse called me, told me I had a phone call at the reception. She stayed behind to watch Avery and Nathan... I went to attend to the call, it was Sole...

Sole: Sweets with regards to the kidnapping are you sure that they didn't sexually violate you?

Me: No they didn't, why?

Sole: I read a disturbing post on Facebook from Scorpion's girlfriend. She's talking about Nongcebo traded you guys for her freedom and that she was sexually violated by one of the guys... Marco, he called her at one point when you guys were eating and took her upstairs and violated her

Me: That is a lie! That happened to Nongcebo, one of the guys took her upstairs and Marco went there to rescue her.. Sethu is lying! She has been lying on Nongcebo throughout! She's bitter because Marco

and Nongcebo had a spark, she had a thing for Marco but Marco was interested in Nongcebo...

Sole: She said some shit about Avery being abused
Me: She dragged my child into her mess?

Sole: She said a lot of shit

I immediately felt a sharp pain passing through where I had been operated, my anger went from 0 to a 100 real quick..

Sole: Sweets?

Me: I have to go and check on them kids

Sole: Okay stay calm she's not worth it, she's probably looking for attention

Me: Okay bye Sole:

Stay calm Me: I'm

calm

I hung up and walked back to the ward.. Me:

Nathan

He looked at me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Borrow mommy your phone for a second

He came and handed me his phone. Sethu has gone too far, there's a line you not supposed to cross and my baby is that damn line!

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:59] : SEASON FINALE

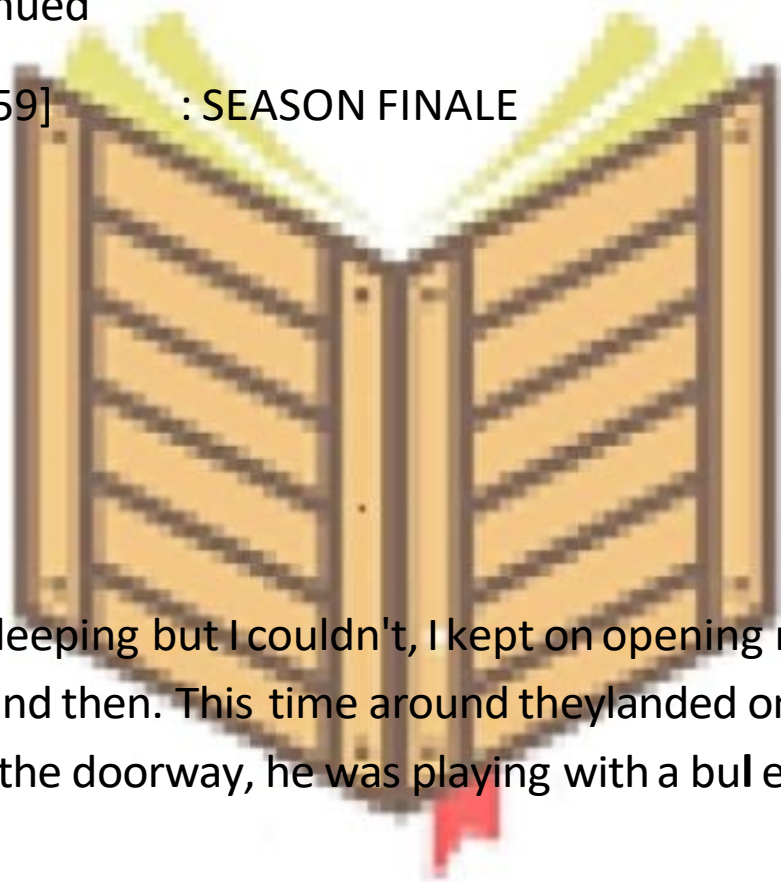
144

SETHU

I had tried sleeping but I couldn't, I kept on opening my eyes every now and then. This time around they landed on Lindo standing at the doorway, he was playing with a bul et..

Me: Hey

He ignored me and kept on playing with the bul et...



NOVELSGURU.COM

I sat up straight and looked at him..

Me: For how long have you been standing there?Lindo:

Long enough

He walked in..

Me: I was just trying to get some sleep

Lindo: Do you know why I fell in love with you?Me: Uhm

Lindo: You were sweet, kind and humble. Different from all the women I've met before and have been with before. You showed no signs of being malicious, you were very humble

I smiled..

Me: Thank you

He pulled the chair and put his foot on it..

Lindo: I saw a future with you. Saw someone to settle down with, someone who was going to be a good wife and a good mother

Me: Thank you I guess (Puzzled)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindo: And right now I can't even look at you, that's show much you disgust me!

Me: Excuse me?

Lindo: Going on Facebook and posting such malicious things about my Sister

Me: Ohw

Lindo: Why?

Me: You were not there, you didn't witness what was happening in there. You don't know what I went through both as a woman and as a human being.

Nongcebo did us very bad, Nongcebo played us..Lindo:

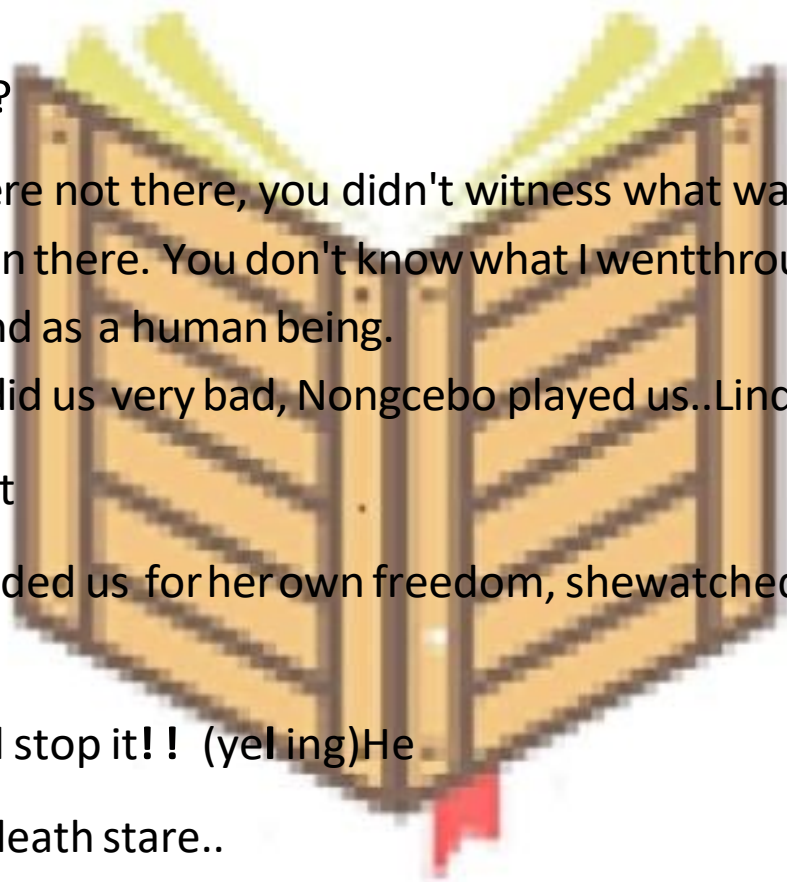
Sethu stop it

Me: She traded us for her own freedom, she watched as th-

Lindo: I said stop it!! (yelling)He

gave me a death stare..

Lindo: Sandisiwe posted on Facebook and said you were lying about everything! She posted a different version of the story one that is very much believable



NOVELSGURU.COM

Tears formed in my eyes...Lindo:

I can't...

He collected himself..

Lindo: I can't even look at you right now. Aren't women supposed to stand and support each other? Do you even know what this could do to you?

Exposing an Italian mafia like that? Haven't you learned anything through your experience? Why so much hate for my sister? What did she do to you?

You don't even know her that well to be saying that shit about her! Nongcebo is nothing like that

Me: It happ-

Lindo: Stop with the lies woman!.. Sethu I loved you with all my heart, I was ready to give you the best life. I was ready to give you that dream, that one dream that every girl has. I was ready to marry you damn it! I was going to make you a part of me, a part of my family! I loved you! I truly loved you!

His eyes became watery...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindo: I don't even recognize you anymore.. What

you did, you took away 80% of that part of me that loved you dearly.. From hereon I want you to stay away from my Sister, don't even mention her on her Facebook because if you do.. I don't believe in hurting women but you'll be my first case, and I'll proudly walk inside those prison bars!

Me: Lindo I'm so sorry.. I.. I was confused, I.. I wasn't thinking straight

He walked close to the bed and put the bullet right next to my hand...

Lindo: This is the last bullet that you'll ever get from me

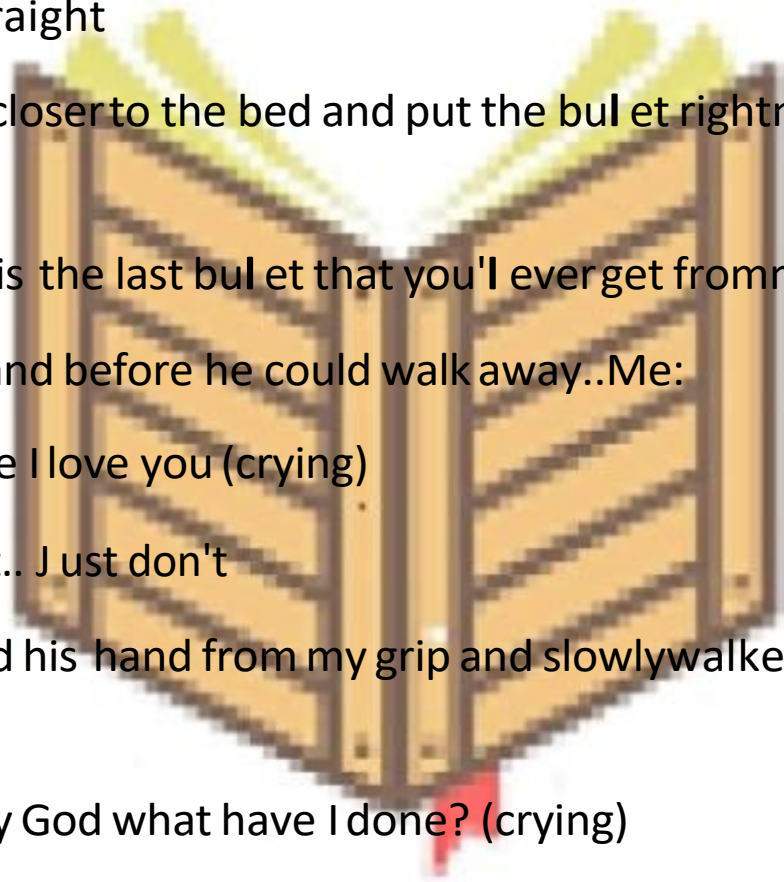
I held his hand before he could walk away.. Me:

Lindo please I love you (crying)

Lindo: Don't.. Just don't

He removed his hand from my grip and slowly walked to the door..

Me: Ohh my God what have I done? (crying)



NONGCEBO

I took a deep breath with my eyes closed, then I exhaled.. I called him..

I waited as the phone rang, then he answered Kelso:

Hel o

I kept quiet... Kelso:

Hel o? Me: Hi.. It's

Me...Kelso: Skat

Me: I.. Uhm.. I'm safe, I'm back home and safe

Kelso: Scorpion told me. It's good to that you back, now I can sleep better at night

(Silence)

Kelso: Are you okay? I mean with everything that has happened?

Me: I'm fine.. I'm okay

Kelso: You don't know how happy I am to hear your



NOVELSGURU.COM

voice

Me: Kelso I want a divorceHe
didn't say anything..

Me: Hel o?

Kelso: Why?

Me: I just.. I don't think I made the right decisionwhen I
wanted us to get back together again

Kelso: Nongcebo where is this coming from?Me: I don't
love you anymore

He chuckled..

Kelso: Don't do this.. Don't do this to me, you confused. You stil
suffering from the trauma thatyou went through, you not
thinking straight

Me: Please don't make this hard

Kelso: Okay.. I wil accept that you wanna part fromme, only if
you want a divorce because you real y don't want to be with
me anymore not because youwant to leave me foranother
Man that you've known forwhat? 3 days?

Me: Kelso please

Kelso: Have you slept with him? I kept quiet..

Kelso: Tell me you didn't sleep with him Me: Kelso it's over, I don't love you anymore

Kelso: And I still do! I still love you! What do you expect me to do with this love that I have for you?

Me: You didn't want me anymore, you had sex with someone else in my presence. You told her you loved her, told me she was a better woman than me! You embarrassed me, shamed me.. Chained me like a dog! Beat me to a pulp!

He laughed...

Kelso: You not going to play that card with me Me: I don't love you, just accept it and move on!

Kelso: Tough shit! You are my wife! You said your vows in front of everyone and God! You said until death, and only death is going to do us apart. If you carry on like this, I'm definitely digging two graves!

Me: Why are you being difficult?

Kelso: Two graves! That's how we getting out of thisshit!

He hung up..

Me: Dammit Kelso!

SANDISIWE

I felt someone kissing leaving wet kisses on mycheek.

Actual y not someone, the smel of his cologne indicated clearly who it was.

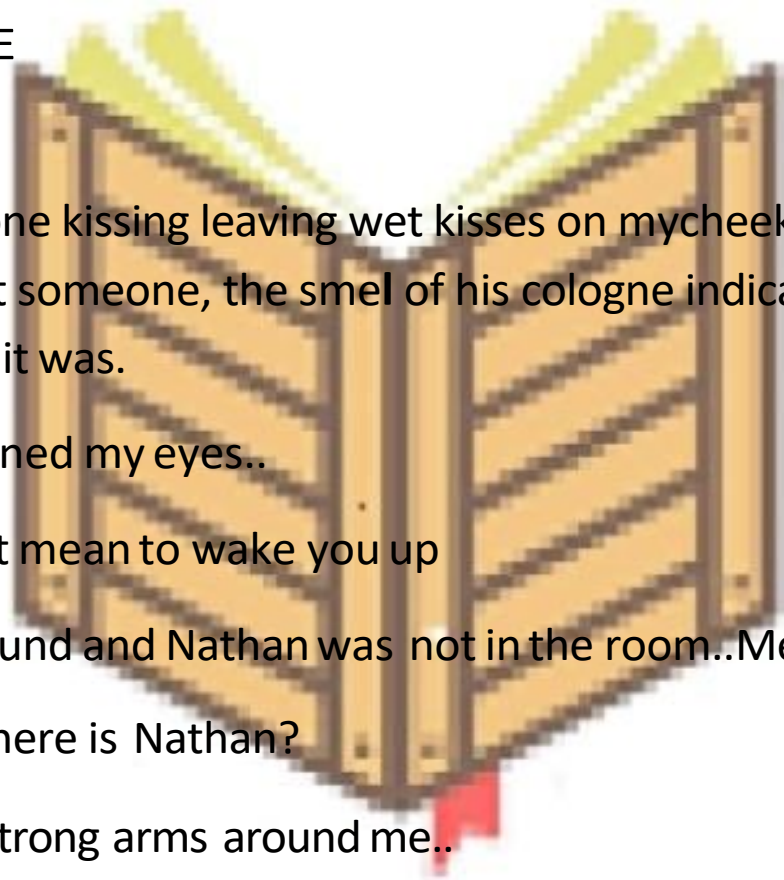
I slowly opened my eyes..

Sole: I didn't mean to wake you up

I looked around and Nathan was not in the room..Me: Ohw my word where is Nathan?

He put his strong arms around me..

Sole: Nathan is okay, he has made a friend. He is inthe cancer room with his new friend



NOVELSGURU.COM

I closed my eyes and exhaled in relief..

I put my hand on his arm that was gently around my neck..

Sole: The Dr said that we will be taking Avery home soon, she's doing very well

Me: He told me too

Sole: Thank you for bringing such an Angel into this world

Me: You should because she took from your side more than she did with me

Sole: Are you complaining?

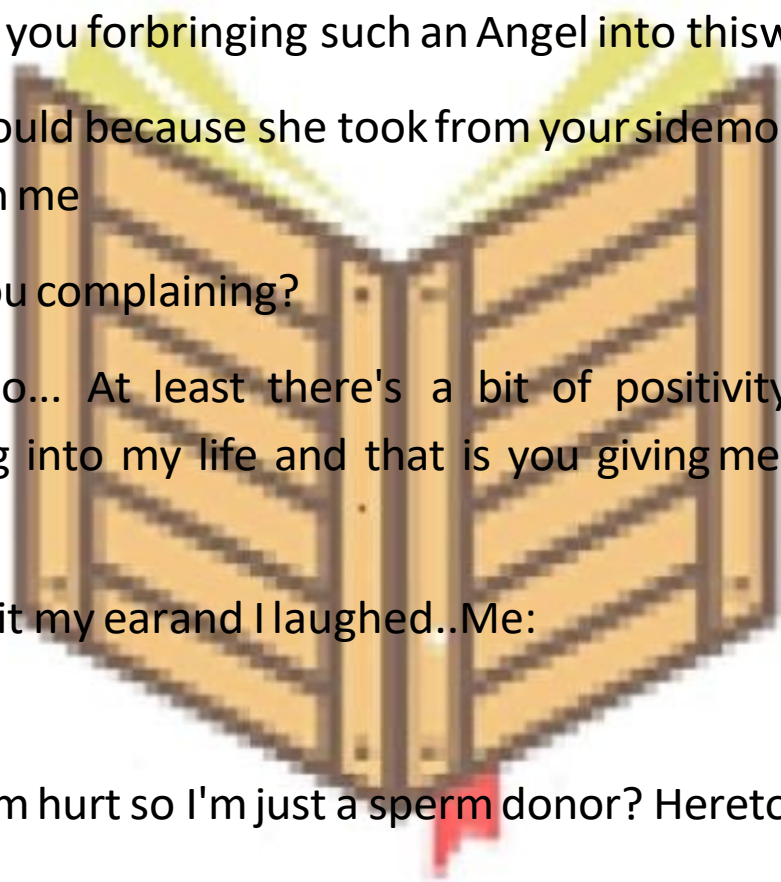
Me: Ohh no... At least there's a bit of positivity that you're contributing into my life and that is you giving me very cute babies

He gently bit my ear and I laughed..Me:

Stop..

Sole: Ohh I'm hurt so I'm just a sperm donor? Here to give you cute kids?

Me: You know what I mean



Sole: I don't know what you mean Me: You definitely know what I mean

Sole: I saw how you put Sethu in her place on Facebook, please warn me next time not to mess with Mama bear

Me: She deserved it Sole: I

love you so much Me: I love

you too

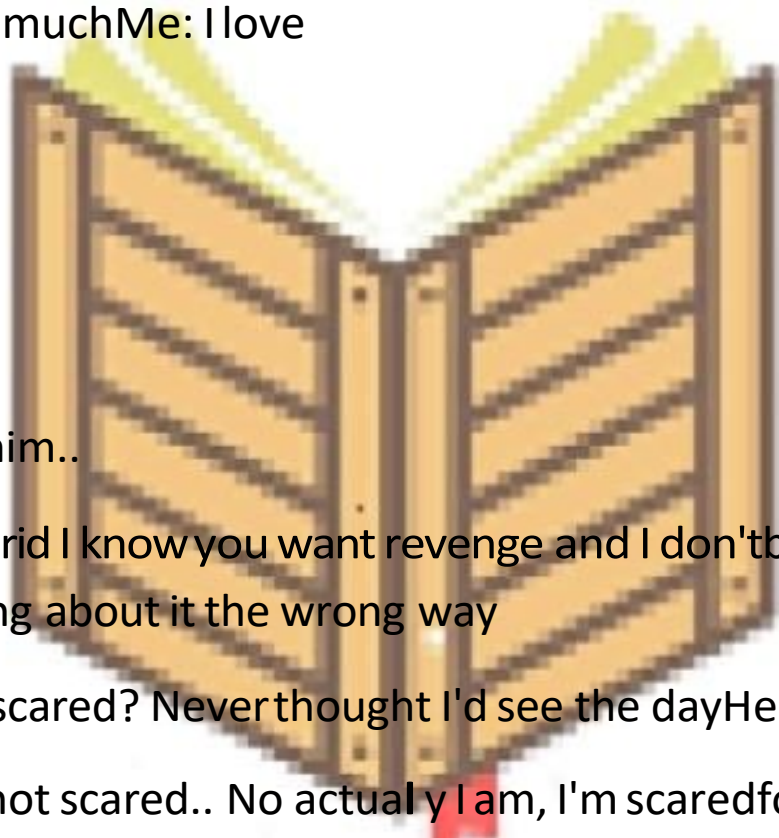
MODRID

I looked at him..

Andre: Modrid I know you want revenge and I don't blame you, but you going about it the wrong way

Me: Andre scared? Never thought I'd see the day He laughed..

Andre: I'm not scared.. No actually I am, I'm scared for you and all the people you got involved in this



NOVELSGURU.COM

mess

Me: It's over Dre, it's al over

Andre: No it's over when I say it's over!! I looked
at my hands...

Andre: I hope you going far, far where I won't be able to find
you because if I do.. I'll even forget that you are my Brother

Me: Authorities will be here to fetch you later on at night, now
everyone will be able to move on freely and peacefully
without Dre

Andre: I hope you
got up..

Me: It's over Dre, you boxed. Just accept it!

NONGCEBO

My phone rang, it was Marco..

Me: Where did you get my number?



Marco: Good day to you too Señorita.. I called Rosetta first and she gave me your number

Me: Where are you? Are you still in the cabin? Marco: Yes but I drove a few miles to make this call

Me: That's sweet

Marco: No that's how important you are

Me: I miss you

Marco: I miss you too... I will be leaving the Cabin tonight

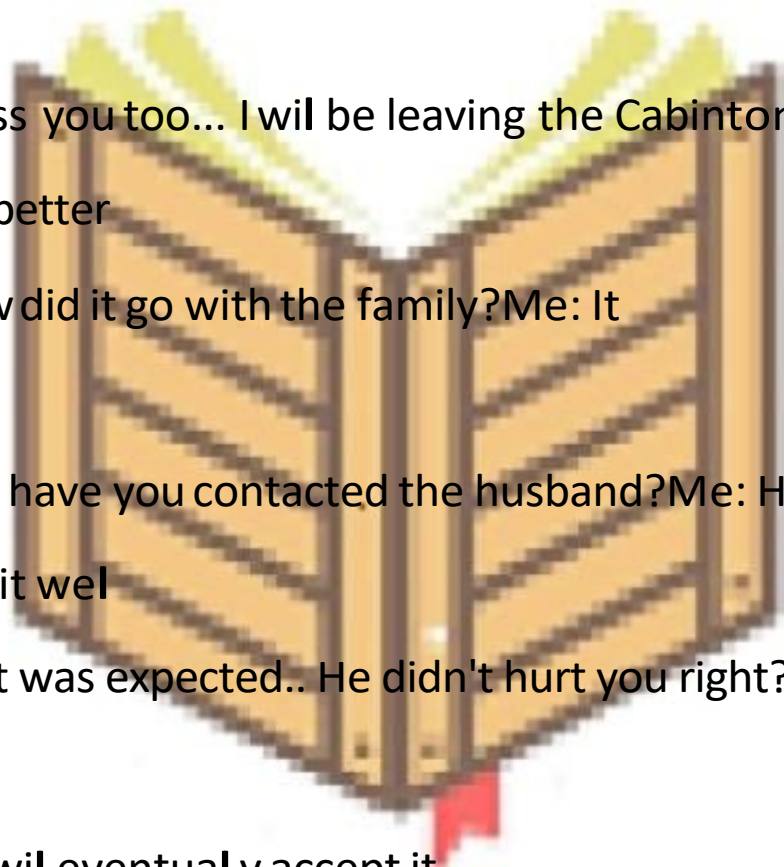
Me: That's better

Marco: How did it go with the family? Me: It went okay

Marco: And have you contacted the husband? Me: He didn't take it well

Marco: That was expected.. He didn't hurt you right? Me: No.. I called him

Marco: He will eventually accept it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: He won't

Marco: Then tel me when I'm needed

Me: I just wish you were here... When I'm with you, everything makes sense. I am able to forget about everything that's happening

Marco: You can't avoid your your problems you have to face them head on. You have to learn to face situations on your own at times. I might not beable to always be there and hold your hand

Me: I know and I understand

Marco: I have to go.. I'l cal you later on later tonight

Me: Okay

Marco: I love youMe:

I love you too

.

To be continuedNo

edits

NOVELSGURU.COM



[08/24, 13:59]

: SEASON FINALE

145

SANDISIWE

[6 MONTHS LATER]

I typed another chapter on my laptop, when Avery's cry disturbed me. I looked at them, she was on the couch with Nathan. Nathan was fully concentrating on his game whilst holding Avery, and Avery was trying to reach for his earphones. He was holding her..

Nathan: No man that's just my baby sister... Okay let's go and loot

Avery's little hand tried to reach out for one of his earphones...

Nathan: Avery wait

NOVELSGURU.COM

Avery cried again..

Nathan: Guys I'll be right back

He put his phone away and stood up, bringing Avery to me..

Nath: Mom

Me: Yes?

Nath: She's crying for you

Me: I didn't hear her crying out for me Avery stretched out her hands to me..

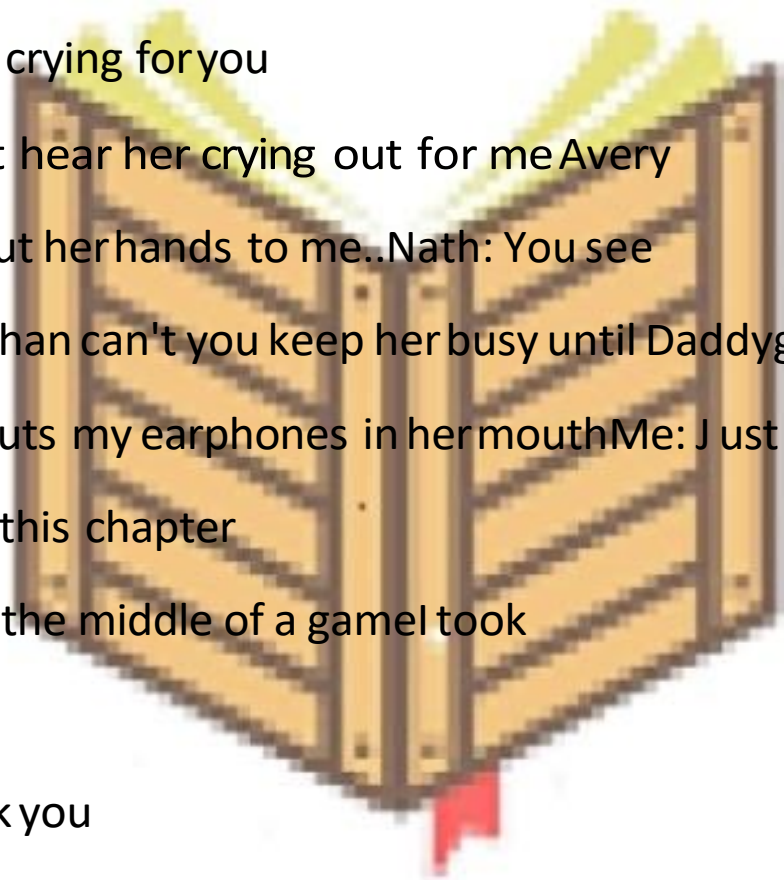
Me: Oh Nathan can't you keep her busy until Daddy gets here?

Nath: She puts my earphones in her mouth
Me: Just until I finish this chapter

Nath: I'm in the middle of a game I took

Avery..

Nath: Thank you



NOVELSGURU.COM

He walked back to the couch. I took my phone and called my Mother..

Ma: Siwe?

Me: How far are you?

Ma: I'm still at the shop.. What's wrong? Me: A very is bothersome

Ma: Sole is not there yet? Me:

No

I heard the doorbell ringing.. Me:

That must be him

Ma: Okay

I hung up...

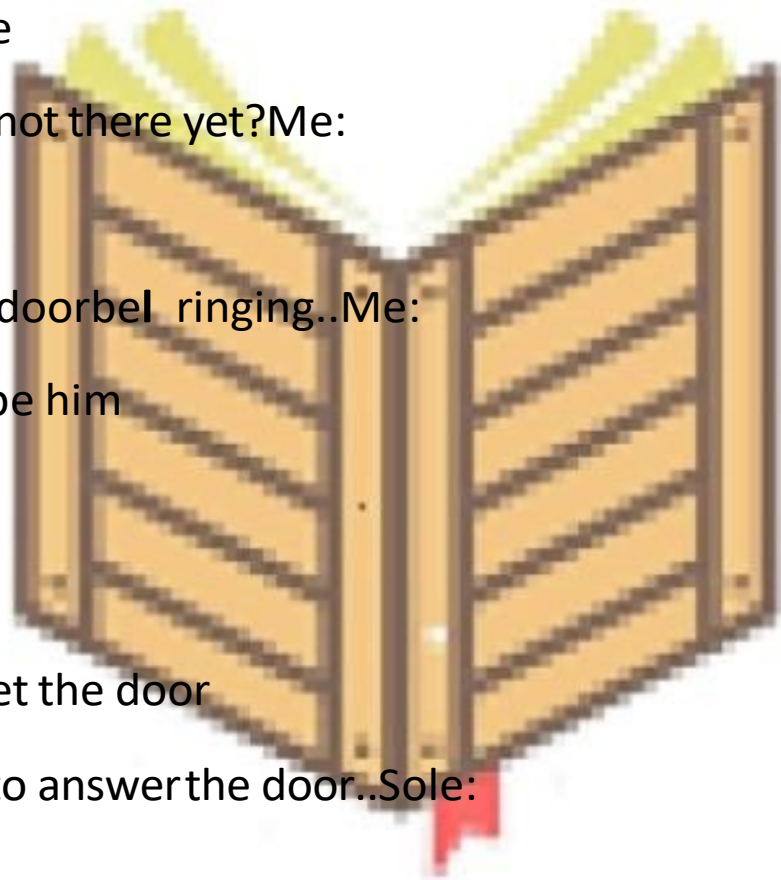
Me: Nath get the door

Nath went to answer the door.. Sole:

Buddy

Nath: Daddy

They both walked in..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Thank goodness Sole

closed the door..

I got up from the chair..Sole:

Sweets

Me: Snowflake

He took Avery from me...Sole:

Bumblebee

Me: Nath get the bags

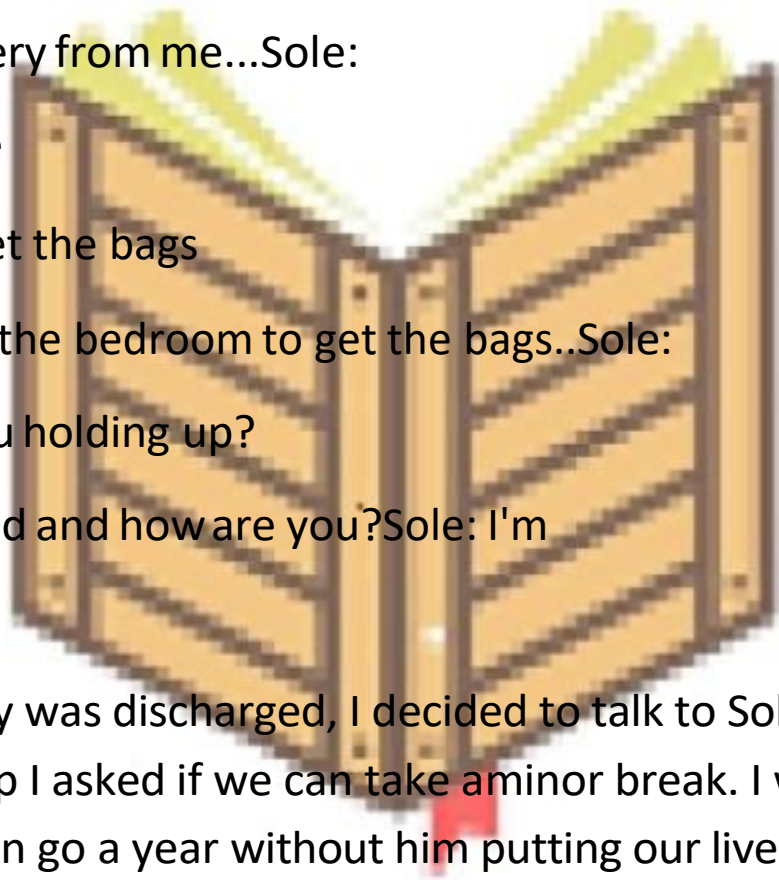
He went to the bedroom to get the bags..Sole:

How are you holding up?

Me: I'm good and how are you?Sole: I'm

good too

When Avery was discharged, I decided to talk to Sole. Instead of a breakup I asked if we can take a minor break. I wanted to see if we can go a year without him putting our lives in danger. If that can happen, then we might have a chance again. Since Nathan wanted to live with me and Avery, Sole was



NOVELSGURU.COM

the one who moved out and gave us the house. My Mother temporarily lives with us, she helps me with the kids because I'm in the process of publishing the biggest book of my writing career, I decided to write about our Kidnapping experience. I have spoken to Nongcebo about it and she gave me her permission. I used fictional characters to protect the Identities of the real people involved... I have released 5 chapters already and people seemed interested, very interested. The book will be selling for R350 available online and at CNA stores across all 9 provinces. Readers beyond the border we still working on how they will get it as most have requested hard copies than buying the soft copies online. This book will make me, and I'm pretty nervous about it

Sole: How is the book coming along? Me:

Chapter 50 now

Sole: Wow you pushing He

looked at Avery..

Sole: Mommy will be doing serious interviews soon,

NOVELSGURU.COM

we'll be seeing her on TV

Me: I got a lot of publishing companies contacting me after reading the 5 chapters but I wanna self publish

Sole: That's a good idea, I'm really proud of you
Me: I'm really excited about this

Sole: And nervous too

Nathan showed up with the bags...
Sole: I'll bring them back Sunday
Me: Okay

He walked closer and kissed me..

Me: Bumblebee I'll see you on Sunday
I looked at Nathan..

Me: And where is my kiss?

I went down and kissed him..

Me: Enjoy your weekend baby I love you
Nathan:

I love you too



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: Okay let's go guys.. We'll call you later
Me: Okay I love you

Sole: I love you too
They left..

NONGCEBO

I looked at the letter... Michel

Michelle: Open it already
Me: I'm scared

Michelle: Give it here

She snatched it from me.. Me:

Hey!

She opened it..

Michelle: Should I read the address too?
Me: No

She read it to herself..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Get straight to the point please, don't make me go into premature labour

Michelle:....

Me: Mich!

Michelle: You in!.. You in! !Me: Are you serious?

Michelle: Yes! Me:

Ohh my word!

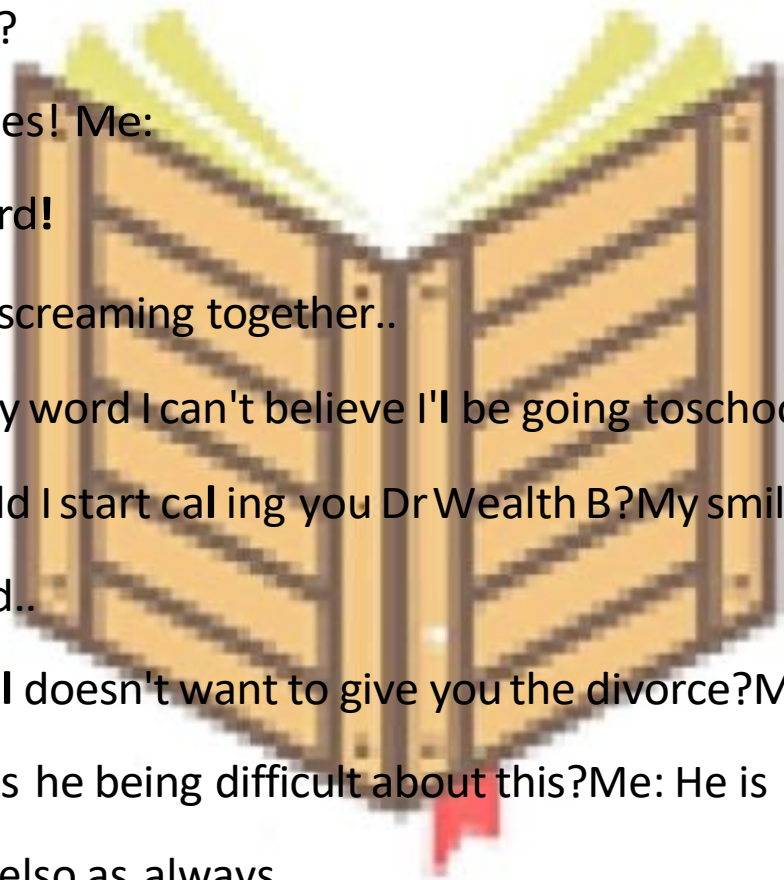
We started screaming together..

Me: Ohh my word I can't believe I'll be going to school next year

Mich: Should I start calling you Dr Wealth B? My smile disappeared..

Mich: He still doesn't want to give you the divorce?Me: No

Mich: Why is he being difficult about this?Me: He is just being Kelso as always



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mich: Can't he see that you are having another man's baby? That you with another man?

Me: I don't wanna stress much about that one

Kelso hasn't bothered me for 6 months, but at the same time he still doesn't want to give me a divorce.. It's frustrating because I really wanted to start on a clean slate with Marco..

Shaun walked in holding a box of muffins and hot chocolate..

Shaun: 2 chocolate and 2 vanilla muffins for wealth..
Already paid for

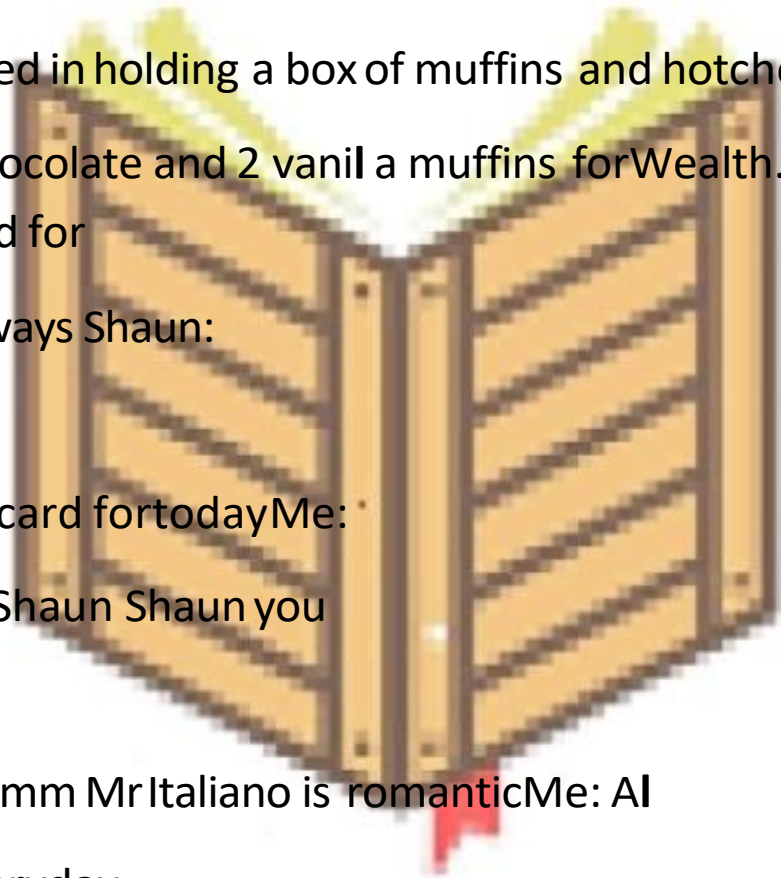
Mich: As always Shaun:

And here i-

Mich: Your card for today Me:

Thank you Shaun Shaun you
welcome..

Mich: Hmmmm Mr Italiano is romantic Me: All
day and everyday



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mich: You happy.. I haven't seen you this happy

Me: I didn't think we were going to get this far.. 6 months into our relationship and Marco still looks at me like he's seeing me for the first time

Mich: You deserve it all girl.. You deserve it all and enjoy it

Me: Thank you

Mich: Go eat before the next patient gets here

SETHU

Ever since my post on Facebook, I was dismissed at work. Now it's very difficult finding another job, I'll be going broke soon and now I'm even thinking of selling my car.

I never thought that the situation with the Facebook post was going to get this messy, Sandisiwe having such a large crowd of followers. She made sure that she buries me with her followers.. I thought Lindo was going to forget about it, but he never did. He

NOVELSGURU.COM

broke up with me that day at the hospital and he was serious about it, he blocked me from his everything and moved on like I didn't exist

I am not sure if he is seeing someone else or still single.. I checked Jobmail again, right now I'll settle for any job that can pay bills..

KELSO

I took off my glasses and walked in. Hangover was killing me. I looked around and saw him, I approached the table..

Marco: Good day

I pulled the chair and sat down..

Marco: Thank you for meeting up with me
Me: Let's try to get straight to the point

Marco: I think you know why I called you out here
Me: If I knew I wouldn't have bothered coming

NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: I just sign the damn divorce papers

Me: The last time I checked, this was between my wife and I.
Get it? My wife and I?

Marco: Sign the papers

Me: I'm not signing anything not when she's scaring
my baby

Marco: Your baby?

Me: I'm not signing the damn papers and next time tell her to
face me herself!

I got up and walked away...

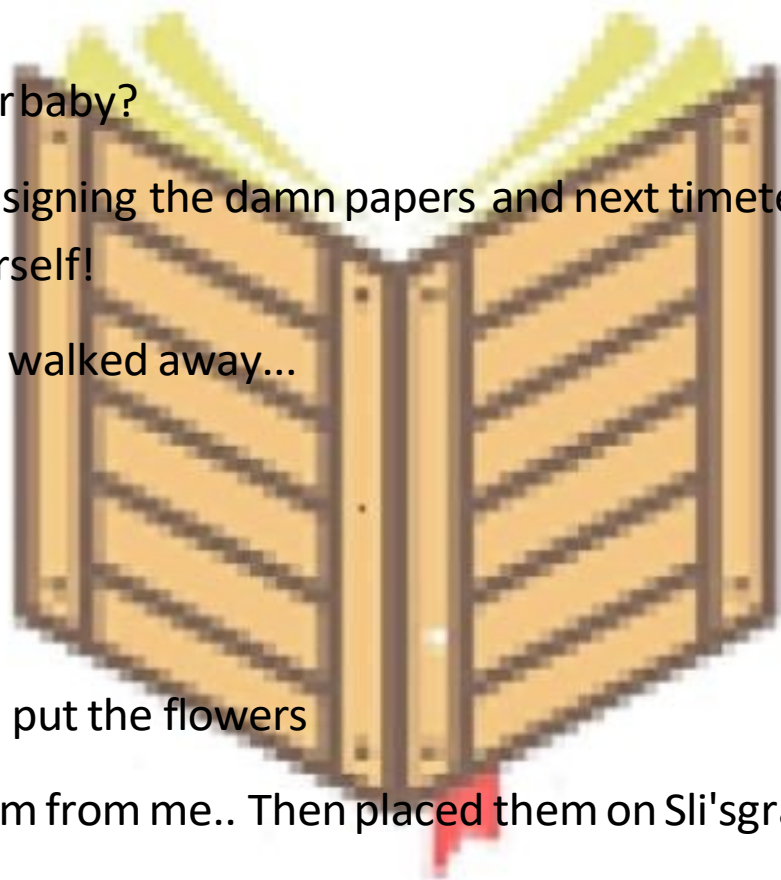
RACHEL

Khumalo: I'll put the flowers

He took them from me.. Then placed them on Sli's grave..

Me: I could've done that you know

He put his arm around my waist and kissed me on



NOVELSGURU.COM

my forehead..

Khumalo: I know

Me: You need to lay off on treating me like I'm sick

Khumalo: The Dr said you must take it easy, the pregnancy hasn't been easy on you

Me: I know, never realized being pregnant at an old age would be this difficult

Khumalo: You not old

Me: Thank you.. You are the best support system

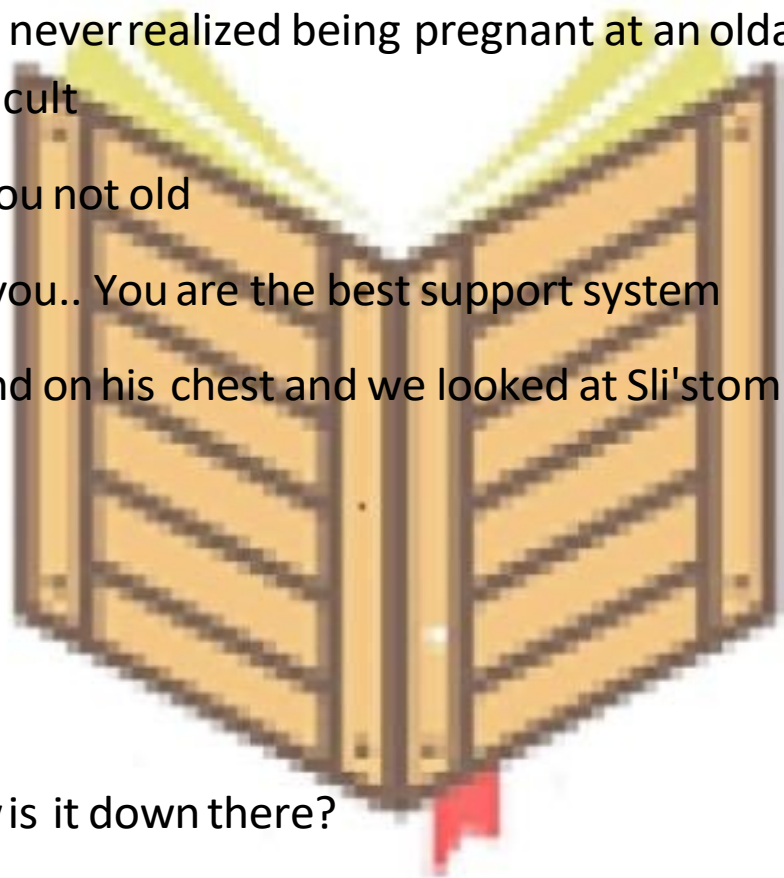
I put my hand on his chest and we looked at Sli's tombstone head.....

ANDRE

Sandy: How is it down there?

Me: It's okay, it's a bit different but I'm surviving Sandy: Ohw Andre

Me: I'm sorry Señora, but I'm going to fix this



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandy: No I don't want you to fix this.. Fixing it wil only open another can of worms, I want you to staythere and pay for yoursins

Me: I'm got the death penalty

Sandy: I don't care! You promised me that you weren't going to hurt someone else ever again but you did! You did Andre, and you have to pay for yoursins!

She hung up...

MARCO

The security gave me his numberplates at theparking lot

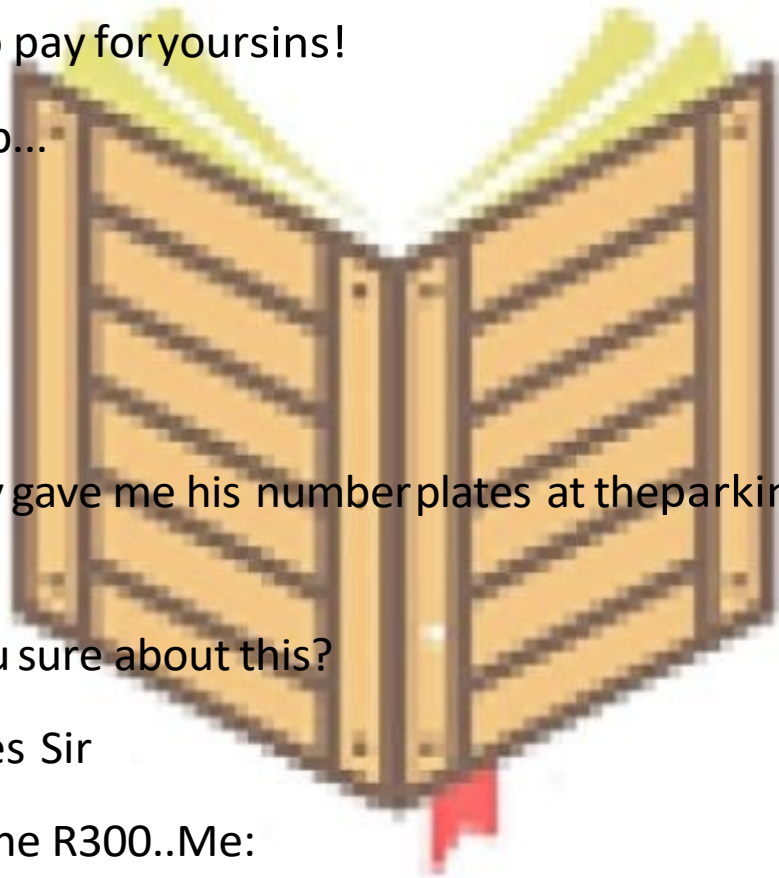
Me: Are you sure about this?

Security: Yes Sir

I gave him the R300..Me:

Thank you

NOVELSGURU.COM



I took out my phone and texted Luca Kelso's number plates..

.

To be continued

[08/24, 13:59] : SEASON FINALE

146

MARCO

Luca stopped by at my house later on that day...Me: Is it done?

Luca: No

I looked at him..

Luca: We have a problem

Me: What's difficult about taking out an amateur gangster?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Luca: The background information you requested just came in

Me: And?

Luca: This kid is more protected than we thought. His father was a general to a gang known as "The 28s". Now the 28s are not only based in one province, they are a very large group in all 9 provinces. If we take him out his father who faked his own death will send a word to his right hand man "Socks" who is currently in Prison. Socks will send a word to the gang, you not part of the DL as yet and even if you were the DL won't support you in this.

We can't take out a gang, they are many. Not forgetting the gang has a powerful individual. The likes of Shadow who is the current acting General, so taking this kid out is not an option

Me: So this kid is more powerful than we thought? Luca: It looks that way

Me: There has to be a way? Can't we set him up?

Luca: He will be out. The 28s rank higher in Prison than any gang, that's their territory. They have cops

on their payrols, and the general won't intervene. One of the members killed his Daughter, Wealth's Sister. He has decided to take a step back in getting on their bad side

Me: There has to be a way, this kid is a pain in the ass to Wealth and my unborn baby

Luca: What if the baby is not yours, there's a possibility

Me: I'm trying not to think of that possibility, even if the baby is his I'm willing to take full responsibility. I love Wealth and loving her child will be very easy. If the baby is his, that's going to be worse. That means this kid will be tied to us, and I don't want him tied to us in any way

Luca: He's father faked his own death, maybe we can blackmail the kid with that. Tell him if he doesn't back off, we going to expose his father

Me: Yeah we can try that

ALDO

NOVELSGURU.COM

Physiotherapist: That's good Aldo, today did well sat on the wheelchair again..

Me: How long is it going to take for me to start walking again?

Physio: If you keep this going, it won't be for that long

My phone rang, she passed it to me. It was an international call ..

Me: Andre

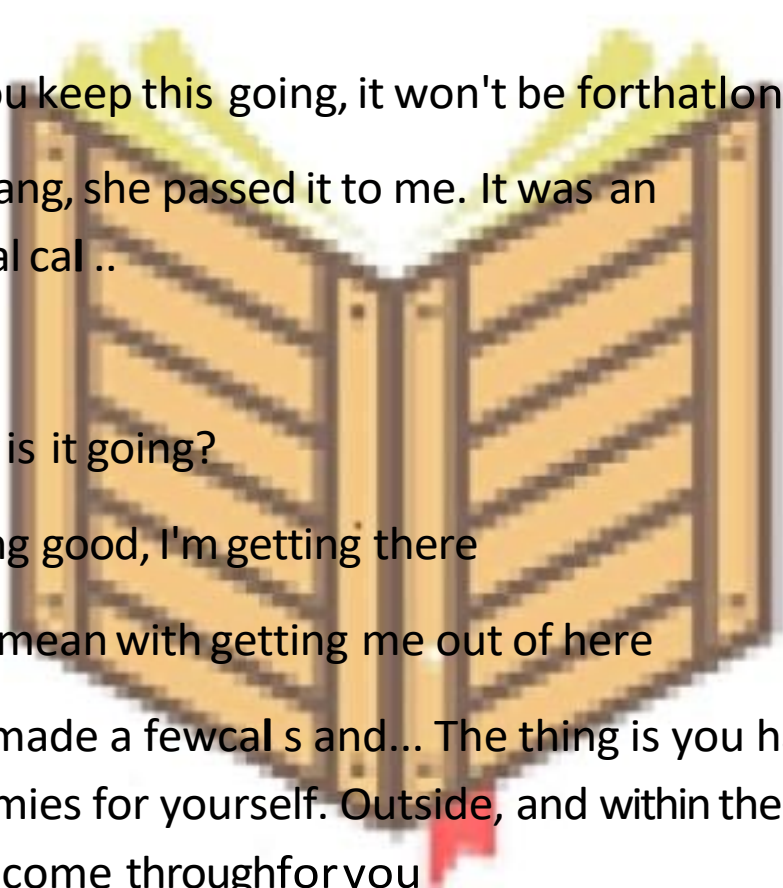
Andre: How is it going?

Me: It's going good, I'm getting there

Andre: No I mean with getting me out of here

Me: I have made a few calls and... The thing is you have created a lot of enemies for yourself. Outside, and within the DL. No one is willing to come through for you

Andre: Bullshit! We have a lot of contacts someone should be willing to come through for me. Aldo I'm



facing a death sentence, they can take me out anytime. I'm being held in a country that's not mine because the damn Interpol and their sidekicks made sure that I don't get away with this

Me: I know it's hard but I'm trying Andre:

Then try harder

Me: I'll do so

NONGCEBO

Kelso stopped by at my workplace, and requested to talk to me. I didn't wanna talk to him but I had to, I really want this divorce..

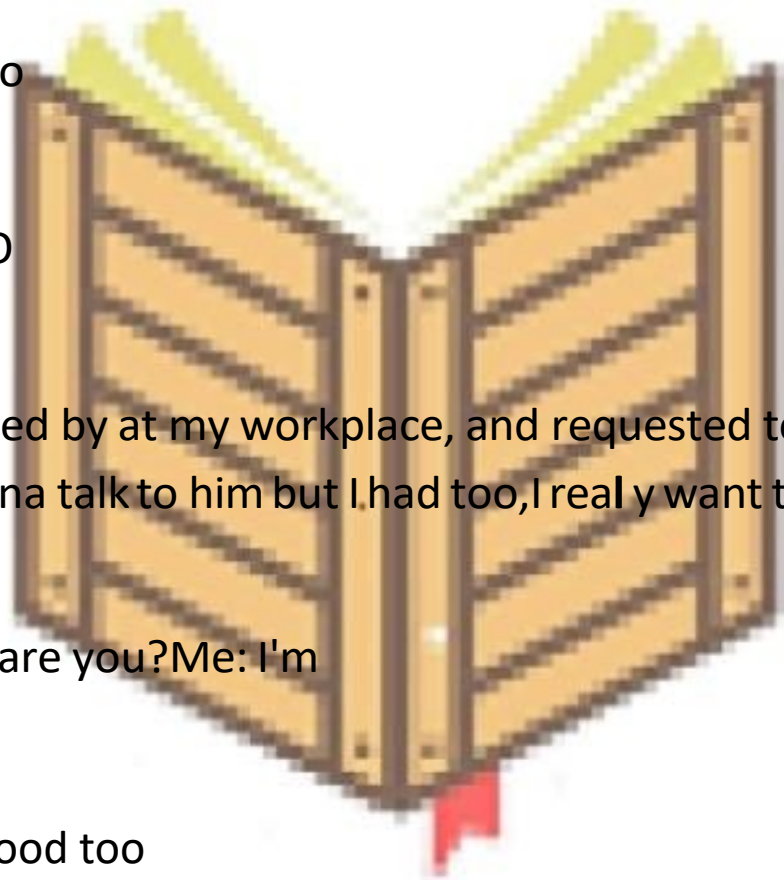
Kelso: How are you? Me: I'm

good

Kelso: I'm good too

Me: Kelso just sign the divorce papers please Kelso: I'm

willing to do that



NOVELSOURU.COM

I looked at him..Me:

You are?

Kelso: Only in conditionMe:

What is that?

Kelso: If the baby is not mineMe:

The baby is not yours

Kelso: We had sex when you came to my place,when you were mourning Sli

Me: That was one time

Kelso: I stil want to make sureI

exhaled..

Me: Fine

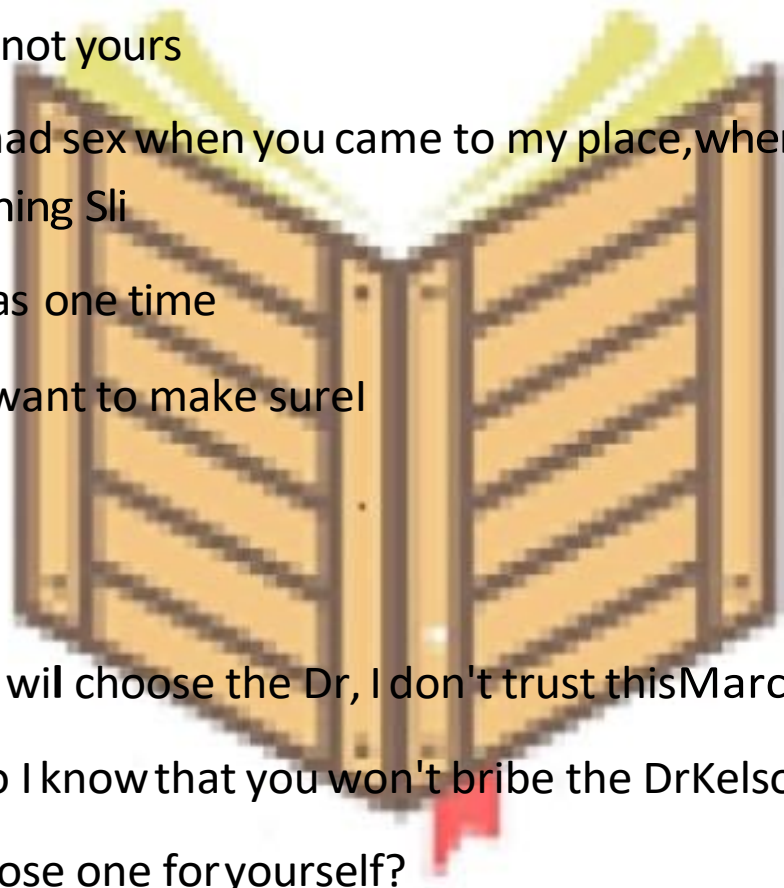
Kelso: And I wil choose the Dr, I don't trust thisMarco guy

Me: How do I know that you won't bribe the DrKelso:

Wanna choose one foryourself?

Me: Yes

NOVELSGURU.COM



Kelso: Then go ahead, but that means we will see two of them.
One that I will choose and one that you will choose

Me: Fine

Kelso: I'll hear from you then

This is going to be a waste of time, I know for a fact that Kelso is not the father..

When he left I went to Mich..

Mich: You very fortunate. Your husband is handsome, your boyfriend is handsome. Do you like create them for yourself and send the designs to God?

Me: No Mich.. I need to see Dr Zondo

Mich: I thought your next appointment was next week?
Baby boy is troublesome?

Me: No it's for something else Mich:

Okay then go ahead

I knocked at his consulting room...Zondo:

Come in

NOVELSGURU.COM

I opened the door and walked in..

Me: Dr Zondo hope I'm not disturbing you Zondo:

No it's okay, what's wrong?

Me: I need to talk to you about something Zondo: Is

everything okay with the baby? Me: The Baby is

fine

Zondo: What can I help you with? It's still a bit early for you to take a maternity leave

Me: No I was wondering if it's possible to do a paternity test whilst I'm still pregnant?

Zondo: Yes it's possible just dangerous, but I know a good Dr who comes off highly recommended for that. Dr Fourie

Me: Can I have his other contacts?

Zondo: It's a she, and you lucky because after tomorrow she's leaving. She's going overseas for some surgery

Me: Okay can I please make an appointment for tomorrow?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zondo: Let's call her and find out
Me: Okay

I sat down...

SOLE

Avery is very fond of Nathan. Have never seen such close siblings. Wherever Nathan goes even to the bathroom, Avery crawls across the floor and follows him..

Nathan seems not to mind that.. I looked at the ring that I was holding, I wanna propose to Sandy.. I took my phone and called my Brother Brian..

Brian: Where are you?

Me: I'm in my flat with the kids

Brian: That's messed up, thought we could go out for a drive

Me: I am babysitting Sandy is busy this weekend

NOVELSGURU.COM

Brian: Understandable

Me: I wanna propose to her Brian:

You wanna do what?

Me: I wanna propose to her. She's the Mother of my kids, she deserves the ring

Brian: It's about time

Me: I don't know if she's going to say Yes, she put me on probation

Brian: Take that leap of faith

Me: I'll do so, but you know in her culture they do things differently

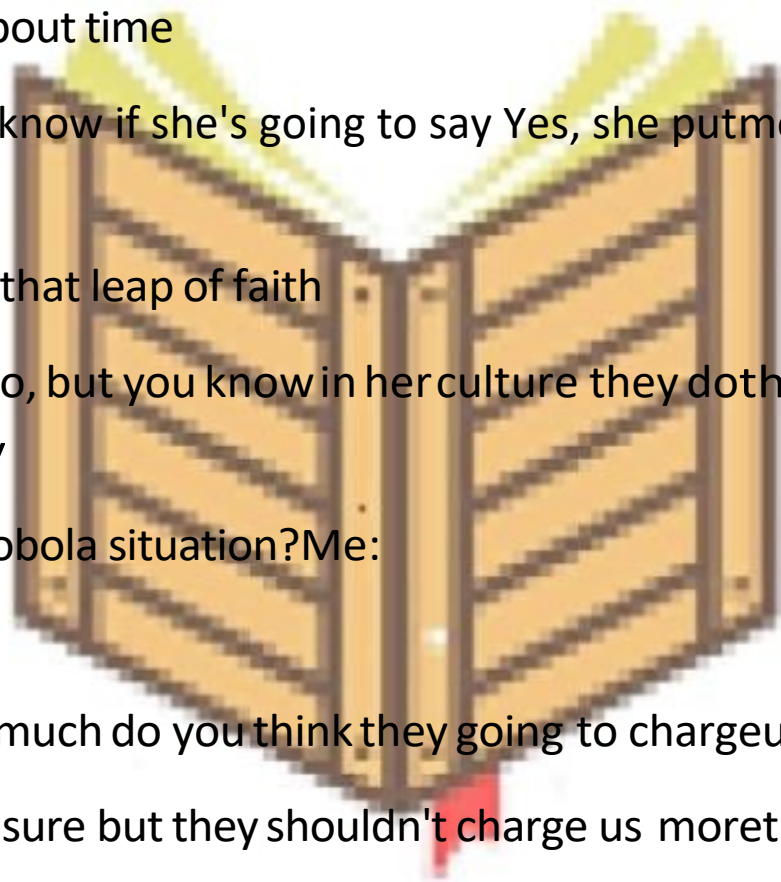
Brian: The lobola situation? Me:

Yeah

Brian: How much do you think they going to charge us?

Me: I'm not sure but they shouldn't charge us more than a 100k

Brian: 100k is still a lot



Me: She's worth it, especially after everything that I've put her through

Brian: I know... Well propose and if she says Yes then I'll talk to Dad

Me: Cool.. I'll let you know

Brian: Okay little Bro

.

To be continued

[08/24, 14:00] : SEASON FINALE

147

NONGCEBO

Later on Lindo fetched me from work..

Lindo: I thought your boyfriend would be fetching you from work

Me: Marco doesn't fetch me from work you know



NOVELSGURU.COM

that, he finds it awkward stopping by at our house especially since I'm still a married woman

Lindo: Kelso still doesn't want to give you a divorce?

Me: No... And now it's worse because he thinks the baby is his

Lindo: Is the baby his?

Me: Honestly speaking I don't know who the father is but tomorrow I have an appointment for a paternity test, I want both of them to come

Lindo: Don't bring Marco along Me:

Why?

Lindo: If he knows the Dr behind the paternity test he might bribe that Dr and the lab that they should the baby is his even if the baby is not his

Me: I can't lie to him

Lindo: I didn't say lie to him, I said don't bring him along

Me: It's been almost 6 months now since Marco and I have been dating. Marco loves me, he hasn't

laid his hand on me. He doesn't even threaten to hit me, he love me. He treats me better, he's very supportive and he makes me very happy. When I was with Kelso, it didn't take him long to abuse him

Lindo: I thought he was not himself when he did that

Me: I know and I understand, but I can't forget all the pain that he put me through. Kelso is abusive innature, even before the witchcraft he used to abuse and mistreat his baby Mama. He is impulsive, he quickly acts on his emotions he's never rational. He cheated on me, worse he slept with her right in my presence. He told her he loved her, that she was better than me. Kelso broke me and Marco is my redemption. Marco came and showed me genuine love, why can't everyone accept that for the first time I'm happy. Yes maybe I shouldn't have moved on from Kelso to Marco right away but what difference does it make? Whether you move on now or in 10 years time it still doesn't make a difference you can still get hurt, it's all about loving a person who will return back that love to you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindo: I hear what you saying

Me: I truly love him and look for the first time I'm in a relationship and I'm not living with a man, I'm still living at home and Marco respects me a lot that he doesn't want us to cohabit, I moved from Makhathini right to Kelso because I needed stability. I needed a home, I needed to get away. Our relationship was not real, I went into that relationship because I was desperate. Desperate for a home, to get away from my Monster

He held my hand and exhaled in defeat..

Lindo: If you feel strongly about this, I will give him the benefit of the doubt then

Me: Thank you that's all I needed

BANZA

I finally did pay Lobola for Manto, then she moved in with us a week after the lobola negotiations. I am happy that he gets along with my family, there's so



NOVELSGURU.COM

much peace.

I hugged her from the back and kissed her on her neck..

Me: This place looks great now, there's more light and more colour.. Do you want us to extend a bit? Maybe include a kitchen?

Manto: Well your Uncle's wife said I should use their kitchen for a while to cook, that it will help me to bond better with them

Me: Auntie just loves your cooking and baking that's all

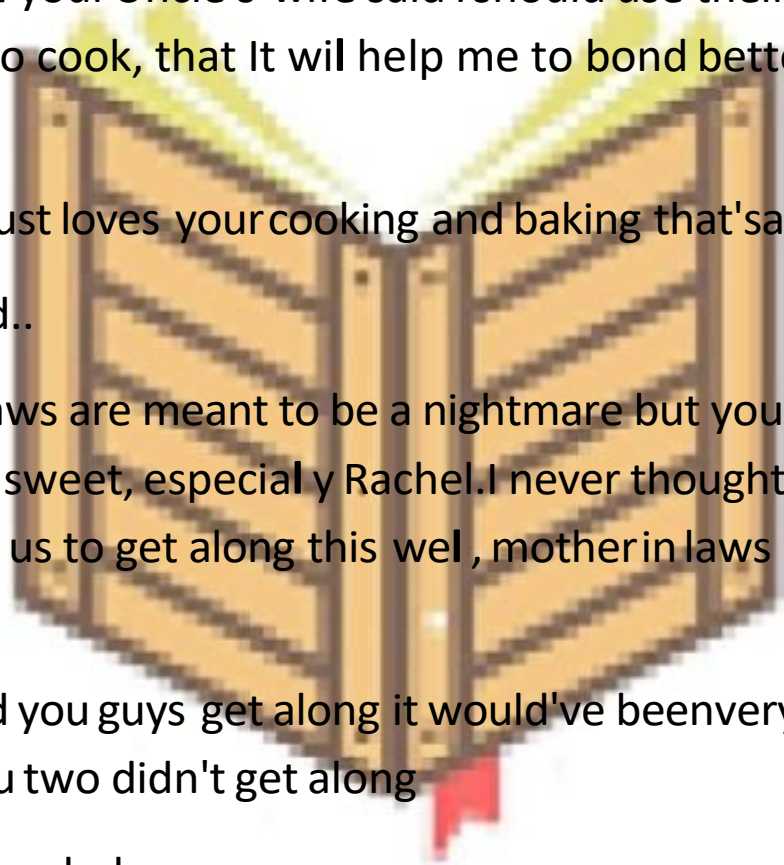
She laughed..

Manto: In laws are meant to be a nightmare but your family is so kind and sweet, especially Rachel. I never thought it was this possible for us to get along this well, mother-in-laws are a nightmare

Me: I'm glad you guys get along it would've been very difficult for me if you two didn't get along

Manto: I know baby

We heard a knock at the door..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I went to check who it was, it was the police..Me:

Good evening

Officer: Good evening.. We looking for Banza?Me: I am

Banza

Officer: Banza you are under arrest for the murder of Makhathini Zulu. You have the right to remain silent, any-

Manto: No this is a mistake

The officer came and cuffed me..

Manto: You making a mistake, you making a mistake!

MARCO

Luca: Hey

Me: Cuz

Luca: I have good newsMe:

Finally!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Luca: I have information that you can use against Kelso, the information comes from a very reliable source

Me: Let me see

He handed me the recording

Luca: Use it wisely and I hope it helps Me:

Thank you Cuz

Luca: Anytime

SANDISIWE

Ma: Sandi

Me: Ma

Ma: You have a visitor Me:

Who?

Ma: Her name is Sethul rol

ed my eyes..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What does she want?Ma: I

don't know

I got up and walked to the kitchen..Sethu:

Hi

Me: Hi

Sethu: I'm sor y to just budge in here like thisMe: What do you want?

Sethu: I just wanted to deeply apologize for what I did, I'm sor y I should have never included your child

Me: You almost ruined Nongcebo's life. You don't lie about such things. Rape is a very sensitive subject, a lot of women have been sexual y violated and they fight the battle every day. Lying about rape is indirectly mocking their pain and being insensitive. Nongcebo did nothing to you, hating on another woman just for a man is ir itating. Women should always stand together, we shouldn't fight amongst ourselves. You real y disappointed me, Nongcebo isa good friend of mine and I met you through her. I

NOVELSGURU.COM

didn't know you and I don't take lightly to people mistreating my friends. I don't wanna mention you talking about my child like that

Sethu: I understand, again I'm sor y

Me: I forgive you but I can't be close with you, I don't trust you. How do I know next time you won't be lying on my baby daddy?

She nodded.. Sethu: I

understand

Me: Thank you for coming and apologizing I commend you on that

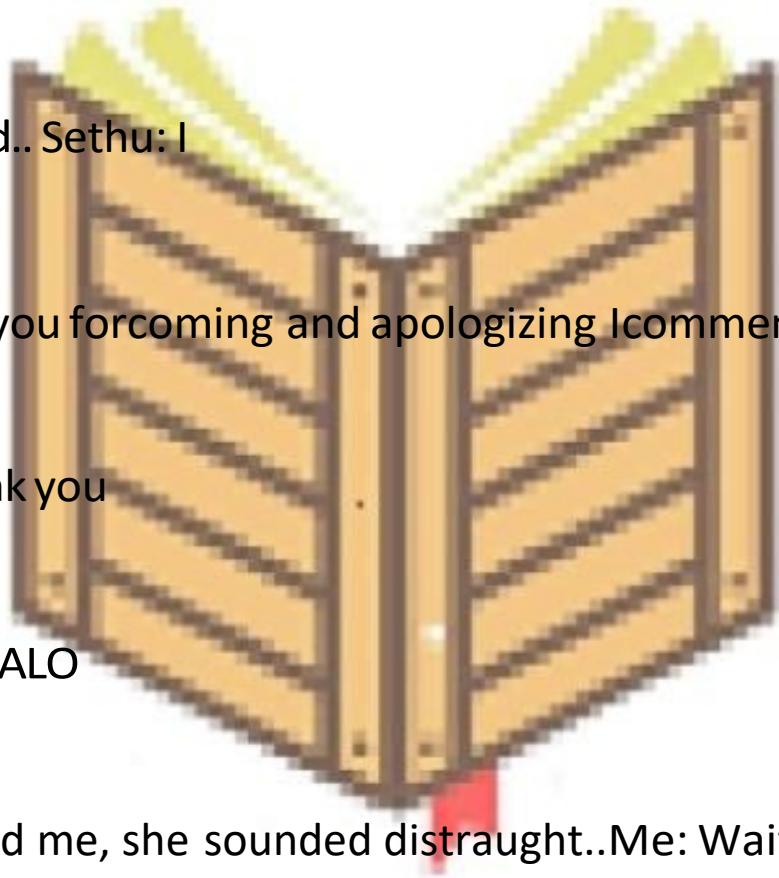
Sethu: Thank you

GAV KHUMALO

Rachel called me, she sounded distraught.. Me: Wait what happened?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Rachel: They arrested my son, Police came and



ar ested himMe:

Why?

Rachel: They saying he kil ed someone

Me: What? Banza doesn't come across as a kil er Rachel: I am so stressed I don't know what to do

Me: Calm down I'll cal you right back, let me make a cal to someone else

Rachel: Okay

I hung up and cal ed detective King..King:

Gav

Me: Detective King:

How are you?

Me: My step son was ar ested today, BanzaKing: Ohw

yes I was working on that case Me: So he did it?

King: Evidence proves so, plus he once handed himself in

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Look Rachel is pregnant and the pregnancy has been hard on her. I don't want her losing the baby over this

King: I understand where you coming from but..

Me: King I'm not asking you for much, I need you to sort this out

King: I respect you a lot Gav but... I don't come to your prison and tell you how to run it, please don't tell how to do my job

Me: King

King: I take my job seriously, please don't insult me He hung up...

KELSO

I was going through Nongcebo's pictures on Facebook. Didn't take her long to upload pictures of her and Marco. She got a lot of hype with that, maybe it's because they are an interracial couple..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Gert: You'll give yourself a heart attack
Me: I

can't give up on her
Gerts

Gert: You love her right?
Me:

With all my heart

Gert: If you love her then her happiness should come first, whether it's with you or with someone else. You put her through a lot, she deserves this. She deserves to experience real and effortless love. Losing Nongcebo doesn't mean you have lost the world, I am actually proud of her that she didn't stay with her abuser. You my son and I love you, but accept this reality. You have no one else to blame but yourself. It's your loss, move on and take this as a lesson to self improve

Me: She might be carrying my baby

Gert: Then you will take responsibility, Nongcebo seems like a good person. If the baby is yours I don't think she will keep him away from you, but let her go Kelso. You owe her that much.. She deserves this peace and happiness

To be continued

[08/24, 14:00] : SEASON FINALE

148

Right after bathing I was on a video call with Marco whilst I still had my towel wrapped around my body..

Marco: Your breasts are insanely attractive, The towel pushed them up a bit

Me: I still don't know how it's going to work with my other breast, with the milk

Marco: We have to ask the Dr
Me: I keep on forgetting

Marco: I'll remind you next week when we go there.. You are insanely beautiful Señorita pregnancy suits you very well

Me: Big as I am.. He's very big

NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: He's healthyMe:

Amore (Love)

Marco: Listen to that, I'm proudl

chuckled...

Me: Anyway I need to talk to you about somethingimportant

Marco: Talk to me

Me: So my Drrefer ed me to a specialist, made an appointment fortomor owexactly at 8am

Marco: Why? What's wrong?

Me: Nothing Amore, I'm giving Kelso a paternity testto clearthe confusion with the baby

Marco: Have you decided how you going to play it ifit's his?

Me: I'm not trying to think about it, I don't wannathink about it

Marco: We weren't together when that happened. Know I'm not leaving, know I wil love you and thebaby so long Kelso respects us. If you want him to

be a part of the baby should it be his, I'm okay with that. So long you two will be strictly parenting and nothing more

Me: Wow you actually taking it better than I thought

Marco: It was before we met, I don't have a right to get mad and overreact

Me: So I'm going with him tomorrow Marco:

I wanna come too

Me: I don't want him thinking that you will bribe the lab and the specialist

Marco: I wouldn't do that. If I do that and the baby comes out entirely black instead of mixed raced then it will be clear that I bribed. I wouldn't do that, don't wanna give you a reason not to trust me. I just wanna be there for emotional support because the baby might be mine too

Me: You are the best baby, I don't know what I did to deserve you

I heard a knock at the door..Dad:

Ngcebo

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Amore I have to go, my Dad is knocking

Marco:
Okay I love you

Me: I love you too

hung up..

Me: Come in

The door opened and my Dad came in...Dad: I'm
going out to the station

Me: Why?

Dad: Banza got arrested

Me:
What? I'm coming

Dad: No please don't..I will handle it, I don't want you stressing
too. I won't be able to handle two pregnant women who are
stressed

Me: I wonder what happened

Dad: Lindo will be home, lock all the doors

Me: Okay
Dad: I love you Kiddo

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I love you too

Dad: I'll be back Me:

Okay

SANDISIWE

I was on a call with Sole..

Me: Avery is not troubling you?

Sole: She's a sweetheart, only troubles Nathan Me: They very close you can't separate them

Sole: They both passed out sleeping next to each other

Me: I miss them already Sunday is far Sole:

Enjoy your freedom

(Silence)

Sole: Sweets can I ask you something? Me: Yes

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sole: Since I'm on probation, am I allowed to propose?

Me: No Sole:

No?

Me: Only 6 months left until your probation comes to an end, so if you propose within this 6 months I will say no. I love you Babe but I have two human beings to think about now and I don't know if we safe with you

Sole: I understand sweets

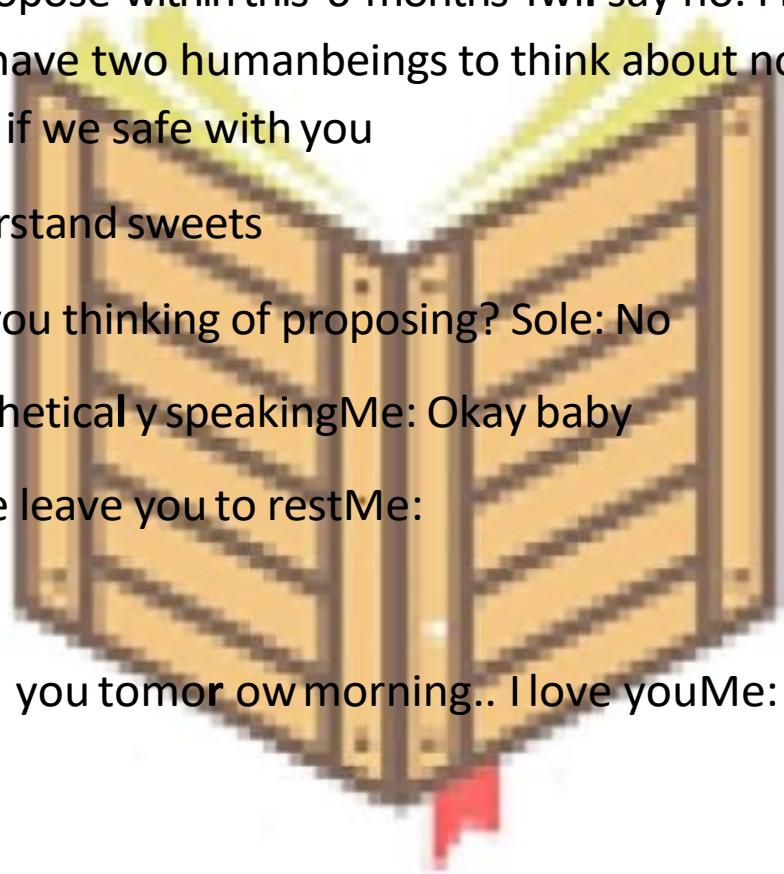
Me: Were you thinking of proposing? Sole: No

I was hypothetical y speaking Me: Okay baby

Sole: Let me leave you to rest Me:

Okay

Sole: I'll call you tomorrow morning.. I love you Me: I love you too



NOVELSGURU.COM

NONGCEBO

I decided to call Kelso to let him know about the appointment tomorrow morning..

Kelso: It's about time Me:

Please don't be late

Kelso: Should I pick you up? Me: No

Marco is coming

Kelso: This should be interesting

Me: Please don't be dramatic about anything

Kelso: I'm not going to be dramatic about it because the baby is mine

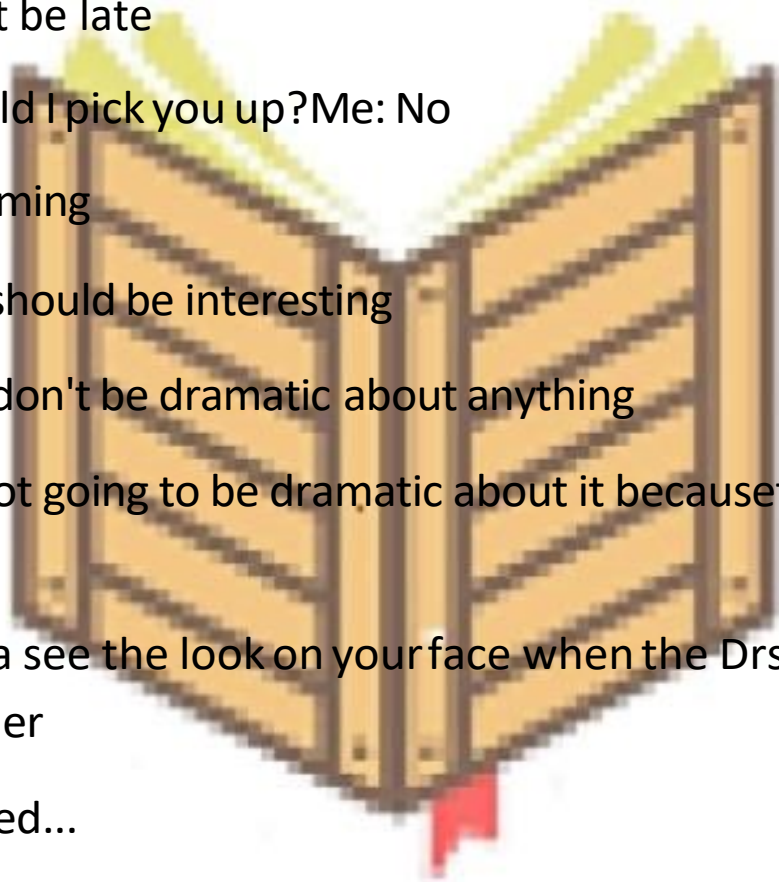
Me: I wanna see the look on your face when the Doctor says you not the father

Kelso laughed...

Kelso: We will see about that Me:

Good night

Kelso: Good night Mrs KB, I love you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Bye

I hung up...

GAV KHUMALO

I asked for King at the station, they let me wait in his office. Rachel wanted to come, I told her not too. I told her I'll handle this. I hope I do handle it, King is difficult..

King walked in after a while..King:

Gav

Me: King

King: I still stand on what I said over the phone Me: King I'm

here as a friend, not the Gav. My Wife is pregnant, already the pregnancy is difficult on her. I don't want her BP spiking up. I lost a Daughter, almost lost my last born. I don't wanna lose another child

King: As a friend and not a detective, I'm doing this

to protect your DaughterMe:

Huh?

King: This is an old case. Nongcebo poisoned her first husband and Banza confessed on tape to smothering him with a pillow. Banza would've longer arrested until the blood tests came in, and proved he was poisoned. She thought she had got rid of the evidence but we somehow found the bottle of the poison and whiskey it had Nongcebo's fingerprints. I let the case go cold only because Banza mentioned that Nongcebo was revenging herself. Apparently she suffered abused from him, had she came forward with the abuse it would've been better.. So I let the case go cold, a woman was avenging herself from her abuser. The postmortem came back and Makhathini didn't die from the poison. He died due to suffocation that Banza was responsible for, I still let the case go cold. Our chief made us revisit cold cases, I had to take back the case because if it landed on another detective both Nongcebo and Banza would go down. I took it only because she's your Daughter and what you want

NOVELSGURU.COM

through with losing your other Daughter, I got rid of al the blood test evidence that incriminates Nongcebo because fingerprints were found on boththe bottles, so I'm pinning it on the suffocation which incriminates Banza only. With his confessionhe wil go down alone. Go home, comfort your wife and get a good damn lawyer for Banza. If Banza doesn't take the fal forthis, Nongcebo wil ... You welcome by the way..

SETHU

The next morning when I woke up, I decided to try Lindo's number again. Miraculously it went through..

Lindo: Hi Me:

Hi.. HeyLindo:

Hey

Me: How are you?

Lindo: I'm good and you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm good too.. Lindo I just wanted to apologize for everything. If it's okay, I would also like to apologize to Ngcebo

Lindo: I think it's best you stay away from her, she's pregnant and she doesn't need drama. You've done enough damage, You almost ruined her life

Me: I understand.. Again, I'm sorry

Lindo: I understand.. Please stop calling me, don't even text me. I don't believe in keeping communication with my ex, I move on. I completely move on

Me: I understand.. I just wanted to apologize
Lindo: Thank you for apologizing

Me: No problem.. Bye

Lindo: Bye

NONGCEBO

Kelso was already at the hospital when Marco and I

NOVELSGURU.COM

arrived. He was at the reception.

Marco and I walked in holding hands, and we went to sit down too..

Me: Hi

Kelso: Hi

Marco fixed the chair for me and held my hand as I sat down, he sat down next to me. I was sitting in the middle..

Marco: You comfortable? Me:

Yes I am thank you

Kelso chuckled whilst shaking his head...

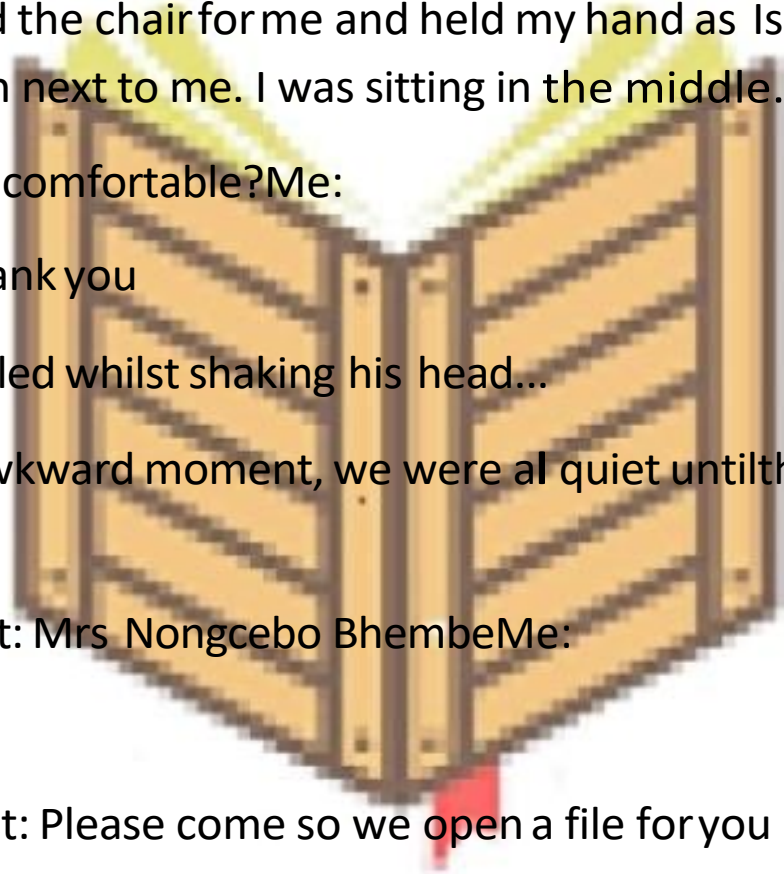
It was an awkward moment, we were all quiet until the clock hit 8am..

Receptionist: Mrs Nongcebo Bhembe Me:

Yes?

Receptionist: Please come so we open a file for you

Marco helped me up and we went to the receptionist, Kelso followed. I filled in everything



with the help of the receptionist..

Receptionist: The consultation including

the test will cost you R2500 Marco: I'll pay

Kelso: I'll pay

The receptionist looked at them.. Kelso:

I'm the husband, I'll pay Marco: Fuck

me!

Kelso took out his wallet and paid, the Receptionist gave us the receipt...

Me: Thank you

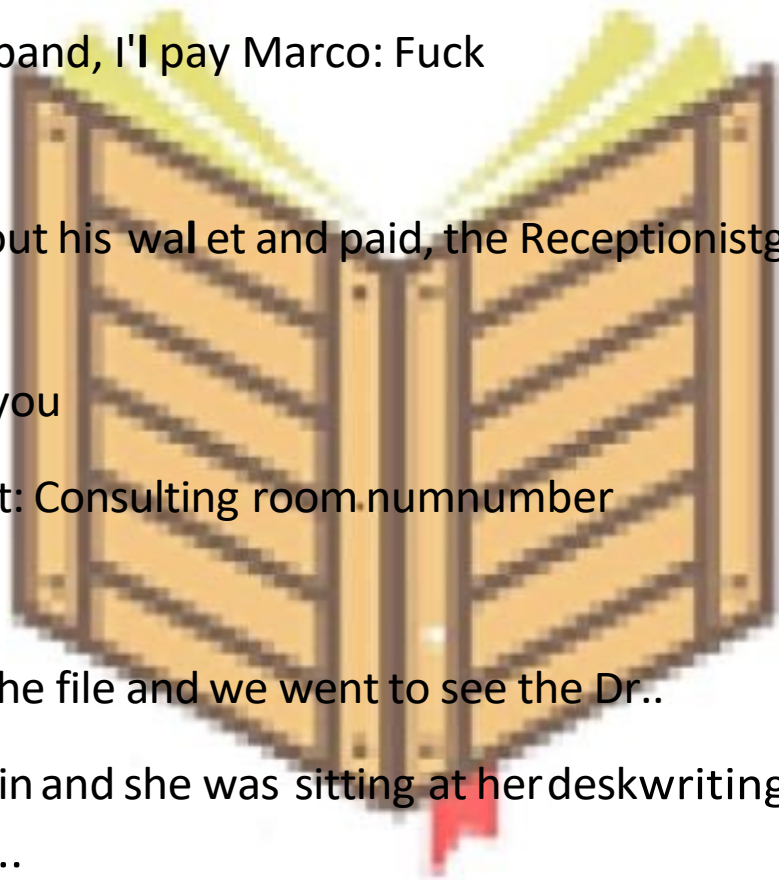
Receptionist: Consulting room number

3

Kelso took the file and we went to see the Dr..

We walked in and she was sitting at her desk writing something..

Dr: Good morning **NOVELSGURU.COM**



She fixed her glasses..

We greeted and I sat down...

Dr: I am Dr Fourie, I'm an Obstetrician and I'll be helping you today

I handed her the file, she read through..

Dr: Oh you're here for a paternity test, the Patient that Dr Zondo told me about

Me: Yes

Dr: Okay... Why the paternity test?

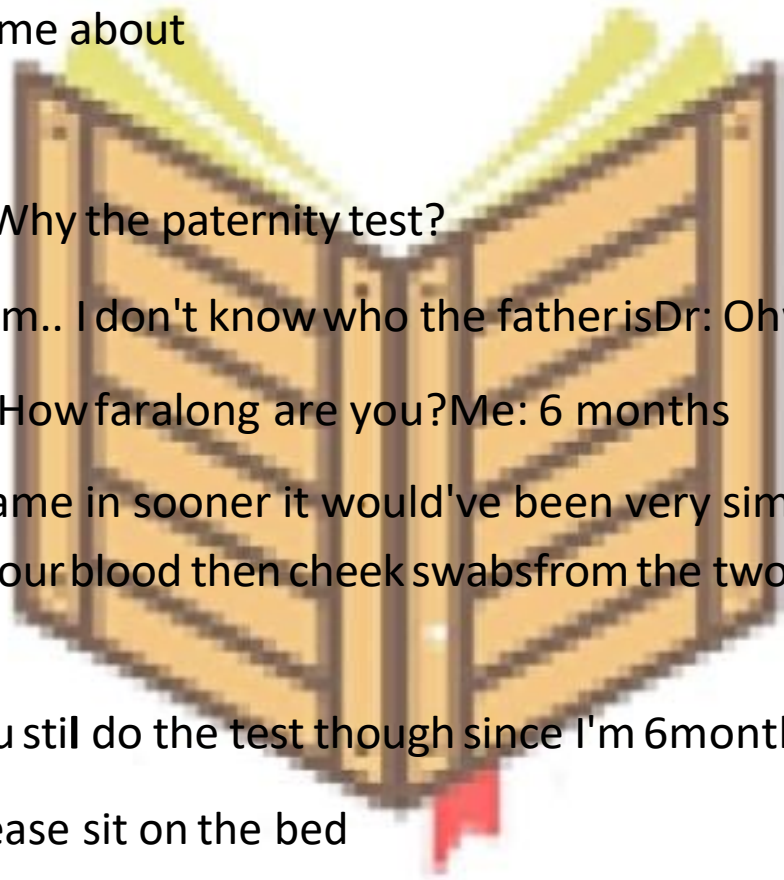
Me: I am uhm.. I don't know who the father is Dr: Ohw..

Ohw I see.. How far along are you? Me: 6 months

Dr: If you came in sooner it would've been very simple. We would get your blood then cheek swabs from the two gentlemen

Me: Can you still do the test though since I'm 6 months?

Dr: Yes.. Please sit on the bed



NOVELSGURU.COM

I got up and went to sit on the bed, she came up to me..

Dr: Please pull your shirt up a bit

I did so and she placed the stethoscope on my tummy..

(Tummy)

Dr: How far along again? Me:

6 months

She shook her head.. Me:

What's wrong?

Dr: Can I do a scan? Me:

Uhm..

Marco: Is everything okay?

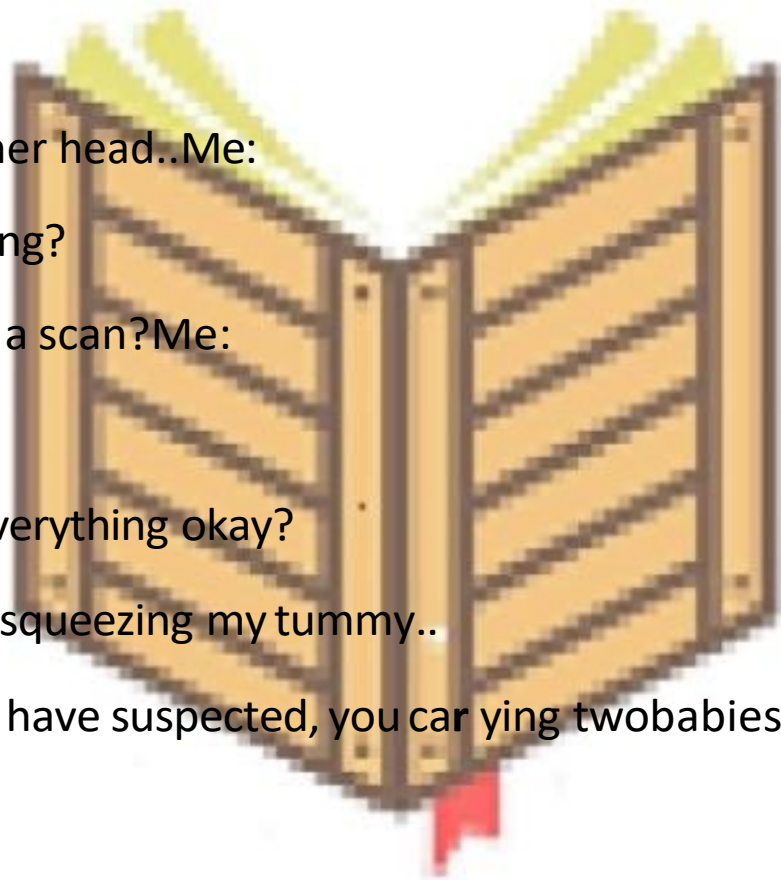
She started squeezing my tummy..

Dr: Just as I have suspected, you are carrying two babies

Me: What?

Dr: Zondo never saw that?

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: I.. Well he never said

Dr: Lazy! That's why it's important to see a gynae or obstetrician, GPs tend to not be serious when it comes to maternity

Kelso: What do you mean she's carrying twins? Dr: Let's do the scan, please lie back

I laid back. She brought a monitor..

Dr: I'll do a 3D scan it will show the babies more clear

Marco walked up to us..

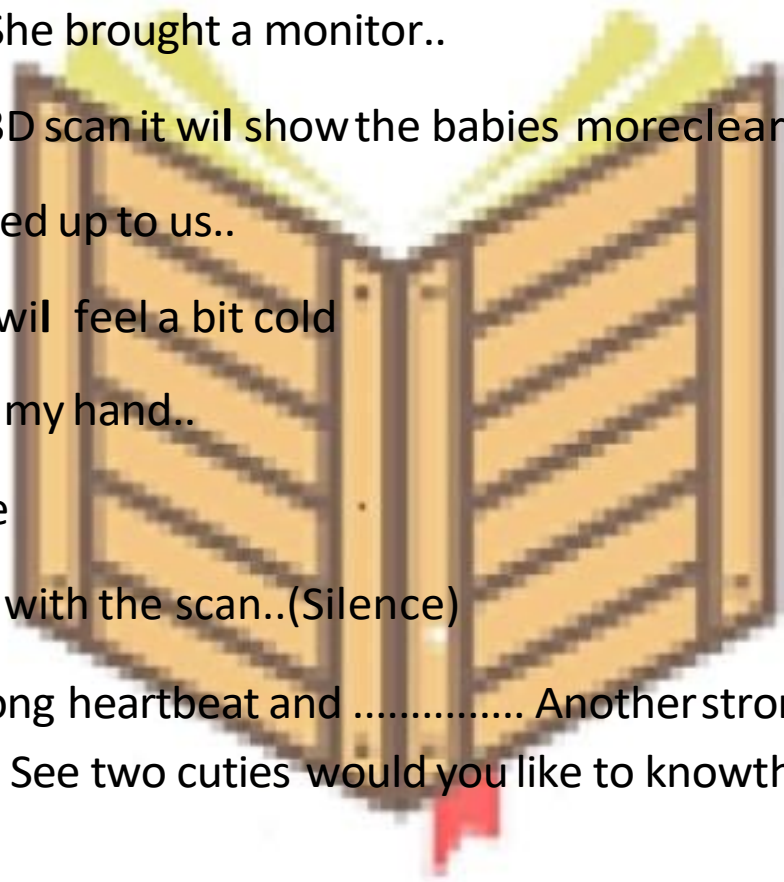
Dr: The gel will feel a bit cold

Marco held my hand..

Dr: Let's see

She started with the scan..(Silence)

Dr: One strong heartbeat and Another strong heartbeat... See two cuties would you like to know the gender



Kelso got closer.. Kelso: This

is crazyMe: Yes please

Dr: We have a boy here... Then we have his Sister..Two babies, a boy and a girl

Kelso: Can't we tel theirrace?

Dr: unfortunately not the imagining is not preciseenough

Me: Is it possible that they have different fathers?

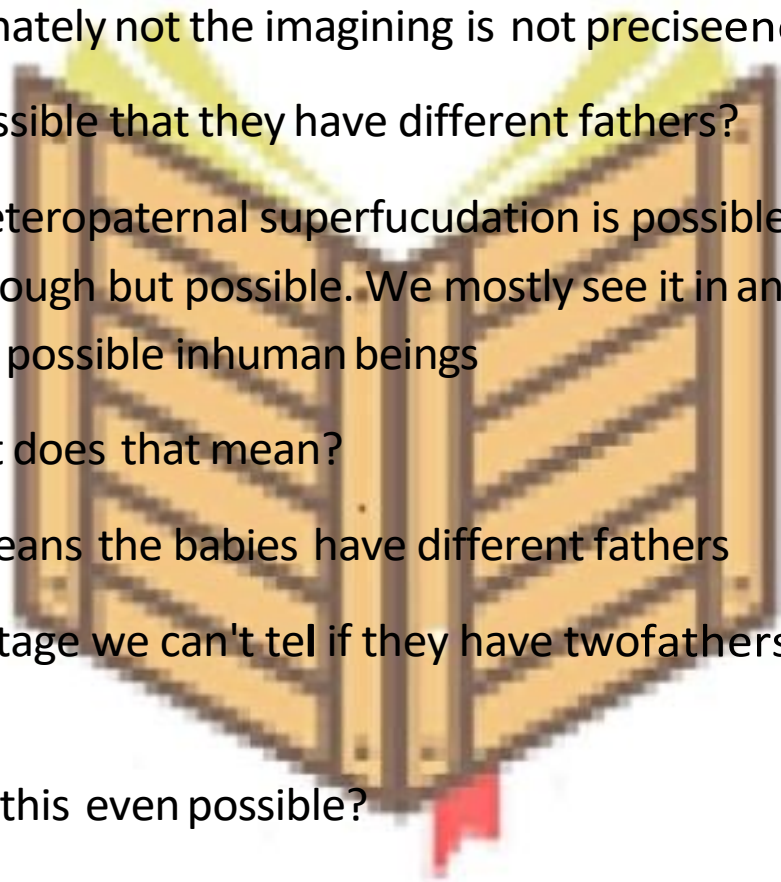
Dr: Yes... Heteropaternal superfucudation is possible, it's very rare though but possible. We mostly see it in animals but it's also possible inhuman beings

Kelso: What does that mean?

Marco: It means the babies have different fathers

Dr: At this stage we can't tel if they have twofathers orone father

Me: How is this even possible?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dr: It means you ovulated twice, I'm guessing you either slept with both men the same day and if not. Then it wasn't far apart from each other

Kelso: Is it possible to clear this confusion with a paternity test?

Marco: No.. If it was identical twins it would be easy since they share the same DNA

Dr: That's right... Even if we test one of you with one baby and find it's a match, it's still possible that you can be a match to the second baby. And it will be difficult testing both babies

Kelso: You pregnant with twins? Me: I didn't know

Dr: I knew you was a bit big to be carrying only one baby... You couldn't even feel the movements that something was off?

Me: I thought my baby was just too active Dr: How did Zondo miss this?

Kelso: So we can't do the test?

Dr: Unfortunately not.. You will have to wait until they born
I sighed...

Dr: All 3 of you seem to be getting along well, I'm sure you will still get along well.. Only 3 months left until she gives birth

We all looked at each other, this was not happening!

To be continued

[08/24, 14:00] : SEASON FINALE

149

MARCO

After our appointment, stunned as we were I walked Wealth to the car. I opened the door and she got in, I fixed the pillow that she uses to support her back. I

NOVELSGURU.COM



strapped the seatbelt on her and adjusted her chair..Me: Are all 3 of us comfortable?

Wealth: We are fine

Me: Okay I'll be right back Wealth:

Where are you going?Me: I'll be back

I kissed her on the cheek, then I went to Kelso's car..Me: Can I talk to you?

Kelso: What now?

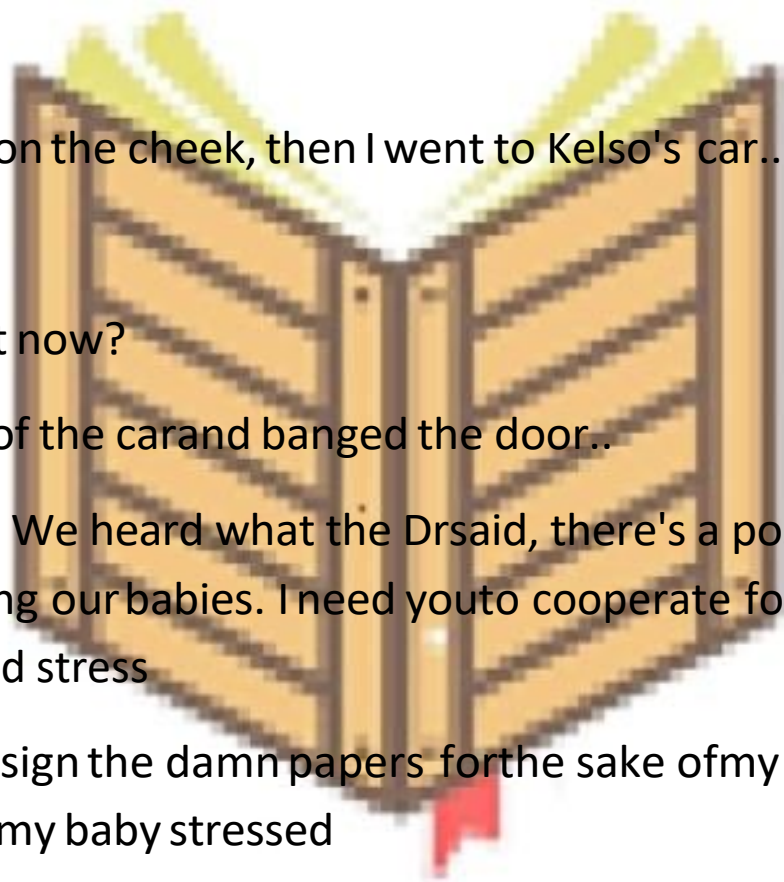
He got out of the car and banged the door..

Me: Listen.. We heard what the Doctor said, there's a possibility that she's carrying our babies. I need you to cooperate for her sake, she doesn't need stress

Kelso: I will sign the damn papers for the sake of my baby, I don't want my baby stressed

Me: Look at that, I didn't have to blackmail you

Kelso: You got the girl but the girl might be carrying my child too.. This is interesting I'm not going



NOVELSGURU.COM

anywhere Marco get used to that. I'll be showing up for every Doctor's appointment from here on, I will be in the delivery room too. Look at that we going to be present at every birthday party, every school play, spend Christmas together if possible because I'm here to stay! Get used to that! It's a lifetime attachment

Me: I am so happy Kelso: So

am I

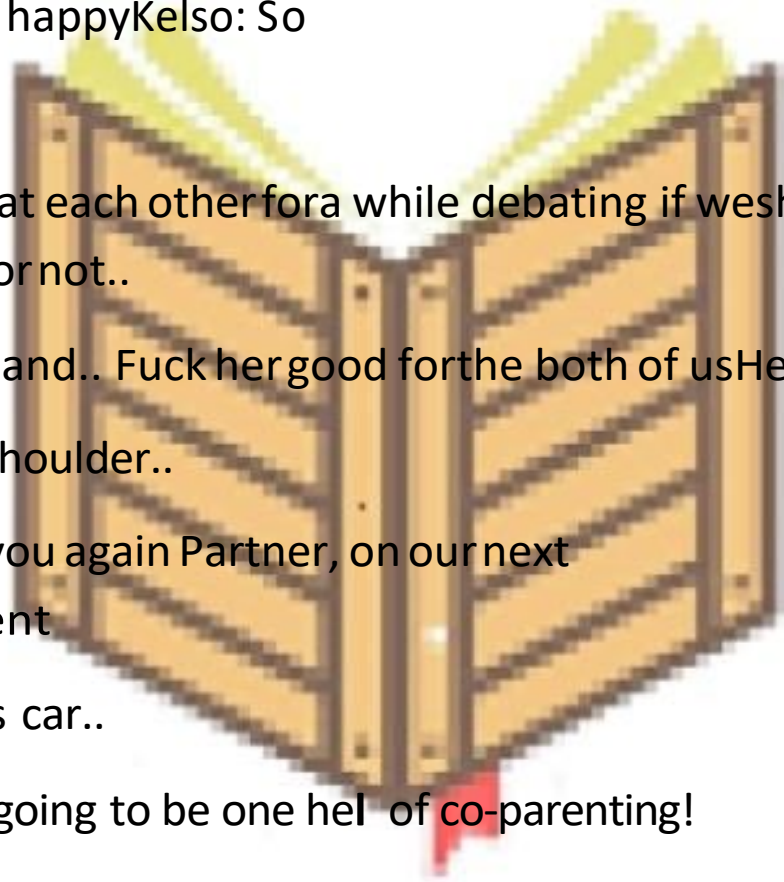
We looked at each other for a while debating if we should kill each other or not..

Kelso: Oh w and.. Fuck her good for the both of us He tapped me on the shoulder..

Kelso: See you again Partner, on our next appointment

He got in his car..

Me: This is going to be one hell of co-parenting!



GAV KHUMALO

NOVELSGURU.COM

I stopped by at Rachel's house to talk to her about this, I don't know how she was going to take it..

Me: You look like you didn't sleep a wink..

Rachel: I couldn't sleep, my Son slept in the holding cells

Me: I went there last night to talk to the detective in charge of the case

Rachel: What did he say?

I could see the the worry and concern in her eyes, I didn't know how to tell her this. It was going to break her more..

Rachel: Khumalo tell me you fixed this

Me: There's a lot of incriminating evidence against Banza, Banza even went as far as confessing and that tape is going to bury him unfortunately. All that we have to do is get him a good lawyer, one that will partition him to not get a heavy sentence

She closed her eyes and started breathing heavily...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: MaKhuzwayo calm down Rachel: My

Son murdered someone?

Me: He did it to free my daughter from this man. He thought doing away with him would be good for Nongcebo... Rachel I've tried believe me I've tried to get Banza off the hook but it's not working... I'm

sorry, the best way is to get him a good lawyer and I will make sure that he serves his sentence without being harassed in Prison

She got up..Me:

Rachel

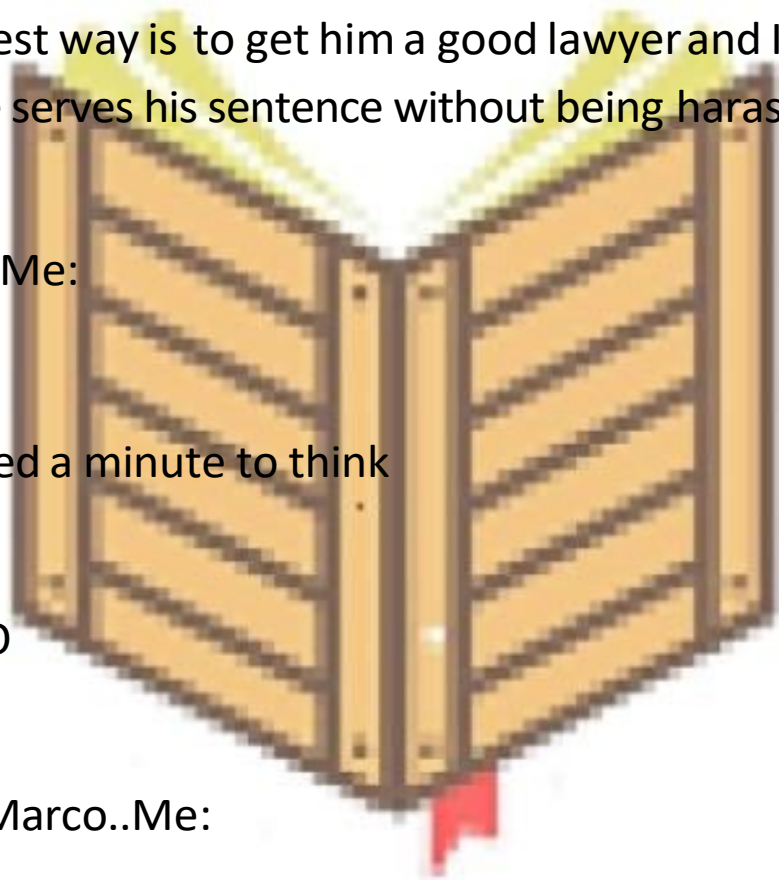
Rachel: I need a minute to think

NONGCEBO

I looked at Marco..Me:

Amore?

Marco: Yes?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What were you and Kelso talking about? Marco:

Nothing you should worry about

Me: I'm sorry

Marco: For?

Me: I should've taken a morning after pill the following day, I shouldn't have let this happen. I'm so sorry for bringing this person into our lives, Kelso has always been a pain in my ass! One that I can't get rid off, to think that I might be carrying his baby too it kills me

He looked at me..

Marco: Don't do that, don't do this. Don't blame yourself and don't resent him because you will end up resenting the baby and the baby is a part of you. If one of the babies is his, you will have to let go of the resentment you have against him before it affects the baby too. The baby is a part of you too, you are the mother and the baby will need your undying love.. If you continue hating him, the hate will go to the baby, the baby is innocent in all of this. Please don't do this, the reason why I fell in love

NOVELSGURU.COM

with you is because of your good heart. I could see that you are a good person, don't let him taint that. Don't let him take that part of you

By the time he was finished with his speech, I was already in tears..

Marco: No.. No.. No.. You putting me in an awkward position
Señorita please don't cry

Me: I'm just.. I'm sor y

Marco: This is not your fault and I don't blame you, I will never blame you for this nor will it change anything between us. Even when he surfaced have you asked why I didn't leave you? I may not trust him but I trust you and that's enough for me. Even if he can come tomorrow and said you guys had sex, I would ask you what happened. What went wrong, because I know you would never do that to me.

Kelso can only break us if you allow him too, I love you Señorita and you love me that's enough for me

Me: Ohh my word (crying)

Marco: Can you please stop crying because it's getting weird for me, I never wanna see you cry

Me: Please pull over

Marco: Ba-

Me: Pull over please

He pulled over, and exhaled..

Marco: I didn't mean to upset you guys Me: It's

okay... We are fine

He got out of the car and came to my side. He opened the door helped me out. He hugged me..

Marco: I didn't mean to upset you Me: It's

okay.. Just that..

Marco: No it's okay, you don't have to explain anything

ALDO

I received a letter from the DL. I knew this was coming, the letter stated clearly that they going to make Marco one of them, they actual y going to



NOVELSGURU.COM

worship that prick especially now that he has put Andre in jail. I don't know why the DL exists, a bunch of rich elites who pretend to be brothers whilst they know very well that they hate each other. Andre had more enemies in his circle than he did outside. The DL is happy that he has fallen, and now they want to replace him with Marco. Any plans I had of taking this guy out are going downhill, from here on Marco is untouchable. I can't get to him nor his family, I can't cross that line anymore because if I go for his family the DL will come for mine..

I can't risk that, I can't risk losing mine over Andre's battles. Despite the loyalty oath I took to serve him, now I have to put my guns down and let this be..

KELSO

I stopped by at Sole's place to tell him the news. He was actually shocked at how this played out..

Sole: Wow I don't know what to say

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm fucken excited about this Man, afteral I getto have something positive that my mar iage brought me

Sole: How is this going to play out? With this trio?

Me: I just enjoy annoying Marco, now it seems I'mgoing to annoy him for life

Sole: Grow up Kelso! You have a baby to think ofnow

Me: Yeah I know but this is going to be fun

I laid back on the couch, Sole shook his head...

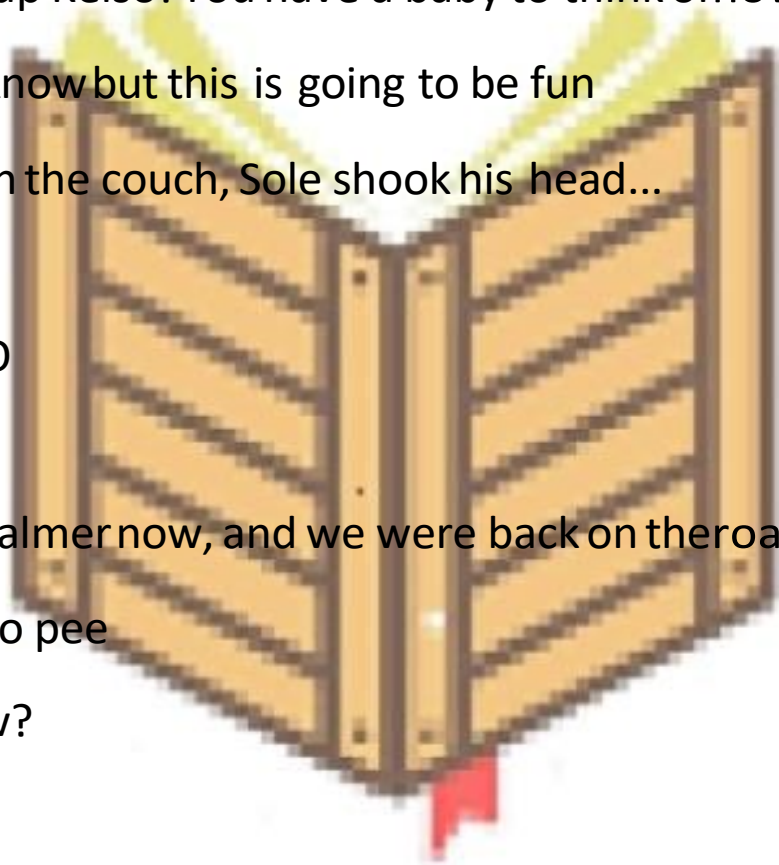
NONGCEBO

I was a lot calmer now, and we were back on the road...

Me: I have to pee

Marco: Now?

Me: Yes



NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: Can't you hold it until we find a gas station? Me: No

Marco I can't, I'm compressed

Marco: This is a nightmare we in the middle of nowhere

Me: Babe you have to pull over

Marco: Hold on

Me: I can't Marco! I can't!

Marco: We in the mi-

Me: Pull the damn car over!

He pulled over.. I opened the door and when I got out, it was too late. I literally urinated on myself, Marco got out too..

Marco: Tell me you didn't

Me: I told you pull over look what you made me do now?

Marco: Let's calm down, let's not start with the crying

Me: You made me pee on myself (crying)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Marco: We in the middle of nowhere far from any gas station, Wealth come on

Me: You made me urinate on myself I'm dripping in urine (crying)

Marco: How did I get myself into this

.

To be continued

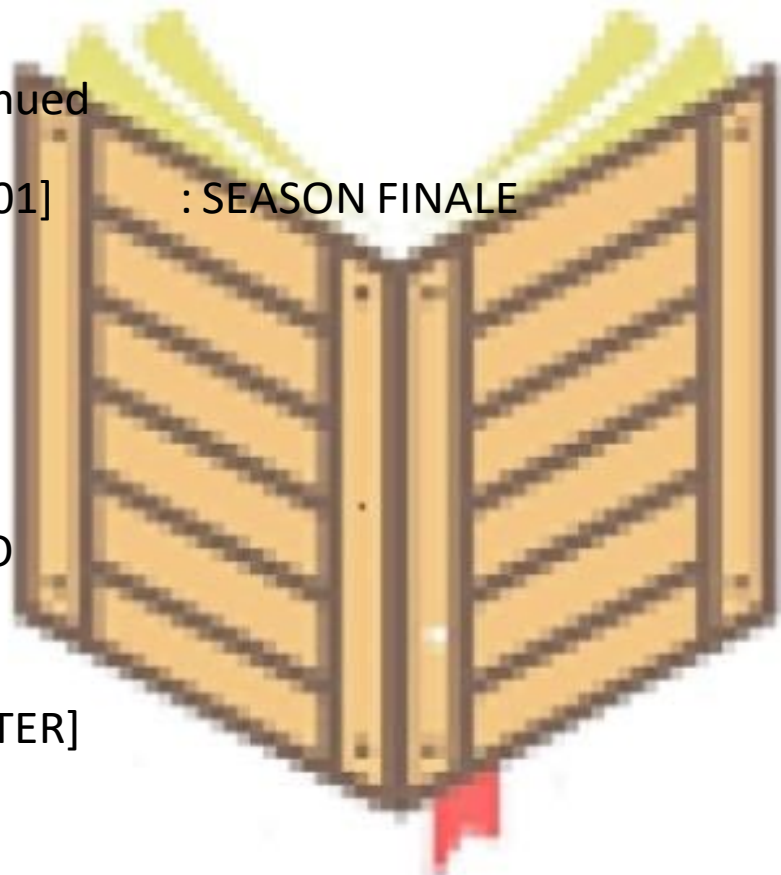
[08/24, 14:01] : SEASON FINALE

150

NONGCEBO

[1 YEAR LATER]

At exactly 4am Lindo came to fetch me. Today it was a big day for me, I was officially registering at the Med school for my MBCHB qualification. This



NOVELSGURU.COM

al seemed like a dream a few months ago. Speaking of a few months ago. About 4-5 months ago, I gave birth to 2 cuties. A baby boy and a babygirl. My Son's name is TJ , and my Daughter's name is Nosibusiso. Kelso is the father to Nosi, and Marco is the father to TJ . Nosi looks so much like her Dad, to top it off she even got the dimples. With Kelso being Kelso, I thought it would be difficult bonding with Nosi, but I love my Daughter very much. More than life itself.. Marco is a great father to both the kids, his undying love for Nosi too made me to love him more. Kelso signed the divorce papers, then Marco and I got engaged. We now living together.. Life seems peaceful, except for Kelso occasionally being unnecessary. He paid damages for Nosi, so Nosi is using Kelso's surname..

Lindo: It's cold

Me: Yeah we left early

Lindo: How is Marco going to survive with the kids alone?

Me: Kelso wil stop by later to get Nosi

Lindo: Kelso loves his Daughter, I've never seen aman love his child like that

Me: He means wel

Lindo: You guys seem to be making this whole Co-Parenting thing work

Me: We trying

Lindo: I must admit, I had my doubts with Marco

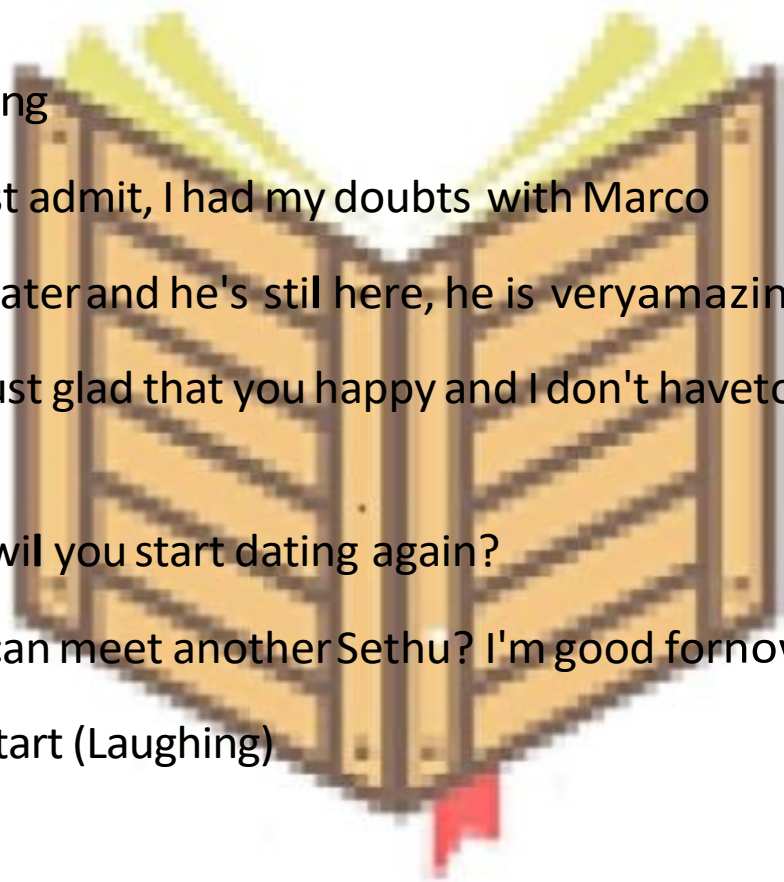
Me: A year later and he's stil here, he is very amazing

Lindo: I'm just glad that you happy and I don't have to be killing anyone

Me: When wil you start dating again?

Lindo: So I can meet another Sethu? I'm good for now

Me: Don't start (Laughing)



SANDISIWE

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: Nathan you going to be late for school I walked in..

Mom: I made you some breakfast Me:

Thank you

Mom: Is Sole around?

Me: No he left early, he has to take Aletta to the hospital

Avery walked in with Nathan, she gave me her bottle..

Me: What?

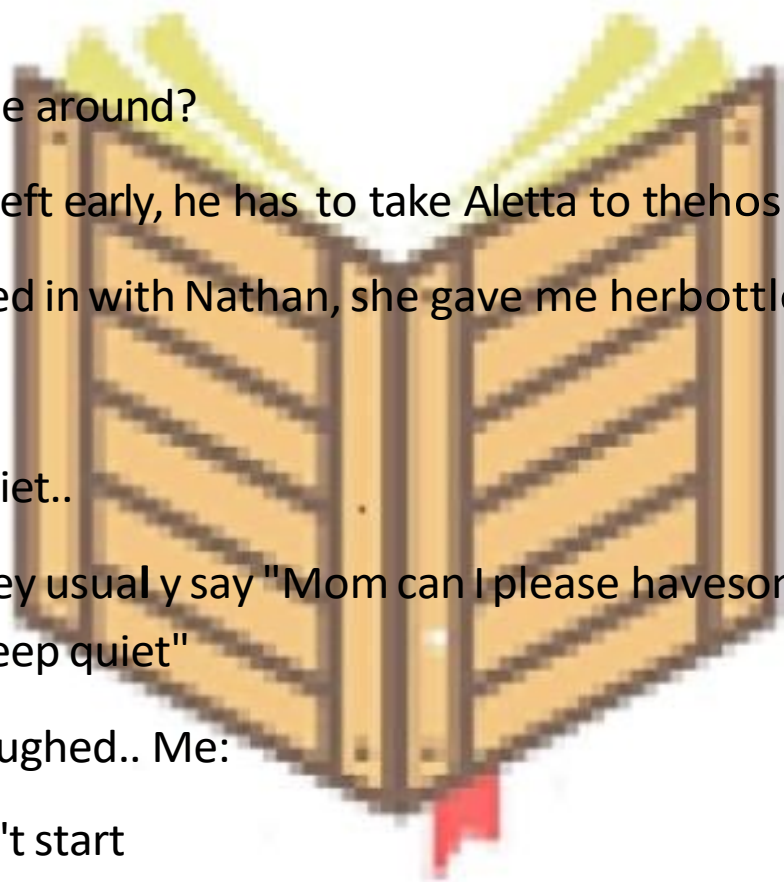
She kept quiet..

Nathan: They usually say "Mom can I please have some milk, they don't just keep quiet"

My mom laughed.. Me:

Nathan don't start

Mom: When are you coming home? The negotiations are this coming weekend



Me: Today it's Tuesday, maybe Thursday
Mom:

Sandi

Me: Ma I have to work

Mom: You are your own boss

Me: Running a publishing company is not a walk in the park, I have to oversee everything

Mom: Okay just be home by Thursday
Me:

Okay guys let's go

After the whole probation period, Sole moved back in and this Saturday we are carrying out the lobola negotiations. My father decided to give him a chance.. I know I have my own company where we publish novels for Authors. It's doing better than I had anticipated, I only started it a few months ago.. The money from my previous book "The kidnap" really did well, I put it to good use by starting my own company...

RACHEL

NOVELSGURU.COM

After the birth of Sli, about a month after she was born. Khumalo and I tied the knot, I am officially Mrs Khumalo now.. I no longer work at the Prison, I do consultations. I am fully focused on my gift now and helping people.

I put his uniform on the chair in the lounge He came to get it...

Gav: Good morning Me:

Good morning

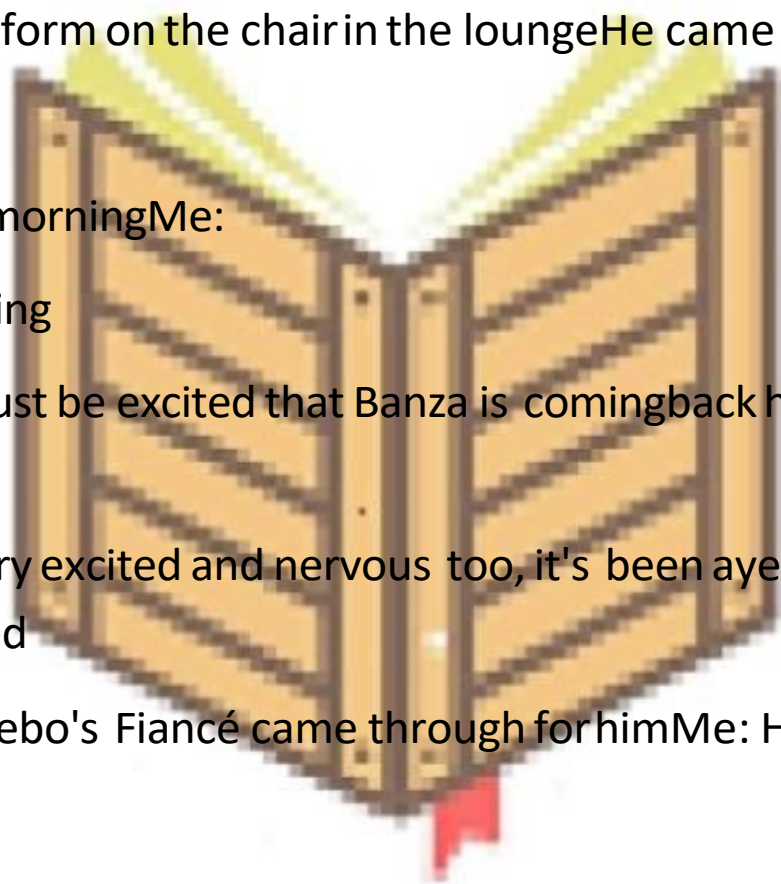
Gav: You must be excited that Banza is coming back home today

Me: I am very excited and nervous too, it's been a year since he was arrested

Gav: Nongcebo's Fiancé came through for him Me: He did

Gav: I'm actually starting to accept him Me: Al

along you didn't accept him?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Gav: What can I say, he seems dodgy

Me: Ngcebo is happy, that's all that matters Gav: I guess

so

KELSO

I looked at the time..

Grams: You keep on checking the time Me: I

wonder if she's still sleeping

Grams: It's now 7am, I'm sure she's still sleeping Me: Nongcebo

said she wakes up early

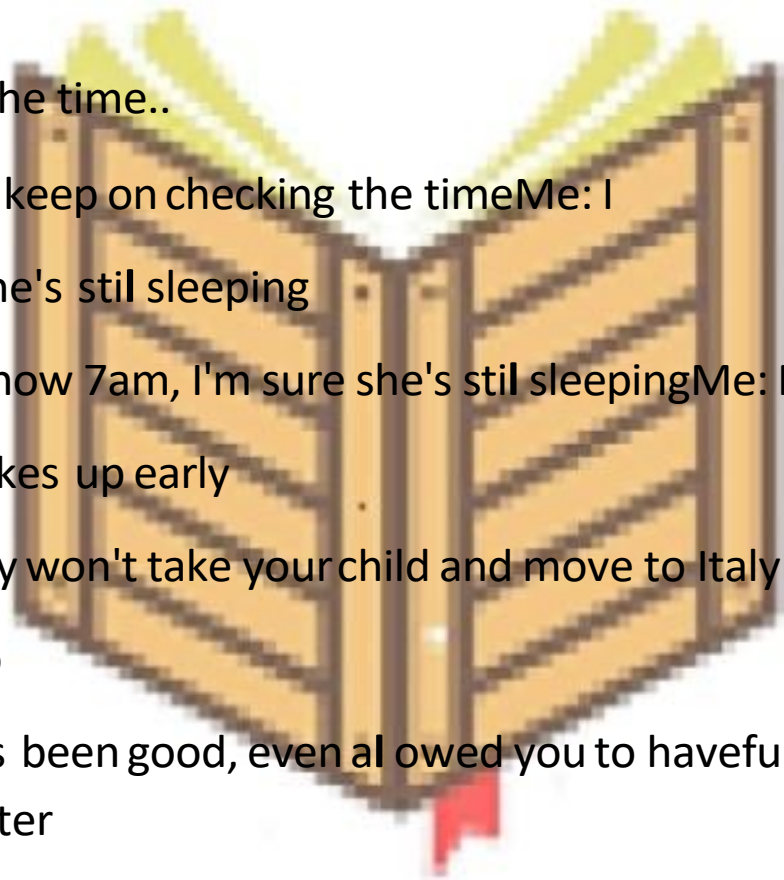
Grams: They won't take your child and move to Italy Me: I can't

trust Marco

Grams: He's been good, even allowed you to have full access to your Daughter

Me: He had no choice, I'm the father Grams: Just

don't make this hard for him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I don't want Nongcebo anymore Grams, she can marry him for all I care. I'm just focused on my daughter that's all, hence why I signed their papers after Nosi was born

Grams: Ohw she is beautiful, she looks exactly like you

Me: That's because she didn't want her to be mine Grams: Don't start

Me: Let me call Nesi and tell her to pack Grams:

Okay

MARCO

I looked at the twins, they were peacefully sleeping. I'm still surprised Kelso hasn't rang my bell as yet. I gently closed the door and called Bongeka, she's supposed to come home today..

Bongeka: Uncle Marco

Me: Good morning cupcake, still sleeping?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Bongeka: Actually I'm packing

Me: Excited about coming home today? And starting a new school?

Bongeka: Yes I am I've missed the twins

Me: I'm sure they missed you too.. Look Uncle is going to fetch you

Bongeka: Okay then Me: See you later Bongeka: See you

later Me: I love you... Bye

Bongeka: I love you too

I hung up and got a text from Wealth:

"Are the twins okay? If they trouble you call the baby sister"

I chuckled. She still doesn't trust me to babysit the twins alone, they can be handful at times though.

Especially when they both start crying...



NOVELSGURU.COM

SETHU

I ended up getting a Job again as a Nurse, I am in a relationship with someone else since things didn't work out between Marco and I..

Life seems to be picking up on my side, and I am in communication between Nongcebo and Sandisiwe anymore.. I like it that way, it's good that way... To keep the peace between all of us...

NONGCEBO

lindo: You next

I got up from the chair and approached the admin. There was a big banner with the words "School of Medicine & Pharmacology"

I will walk out of her, registered to do a degree in medicine & surgery..

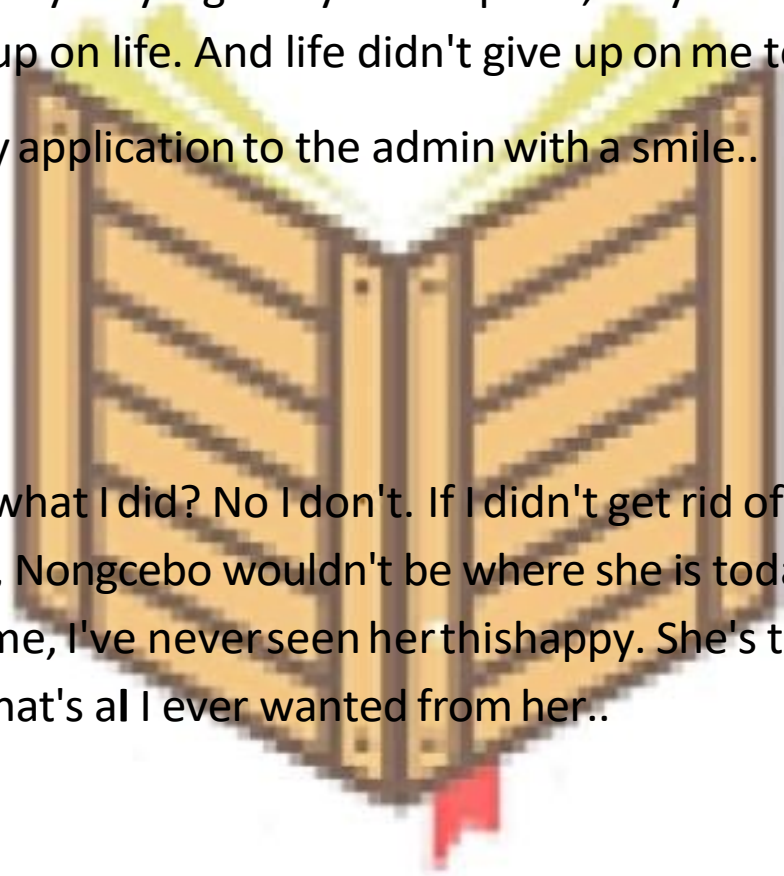
NOVELSGURU.COM

If you told me a year ago that my life would end up this way, I would have denied. After the struggles and abuse from Makhathini, to suffering abuse in Kelso's hands too. I thought my life was over, I thought this happiness was never going to visit me. I thought after two failed toxic relationships, good men didn't exist anymore. Then Marco came my way, my twins came my way. I got my redemption, only because I didn't give up on life. And life didn't give up on me too..

I handed my application to the admin with a smile..

BANZA

Do I regret what I did? No I don't. If I didn't get rid of Makhathini, Nongcebo wouldn't be where she is today. For the very first time, I've never seen her this happy. She's truly happy no lie and that's all I ever wanted from her..



NOVELSGURU.COM

To think that we would be step siblings now? Who would've thought that? I really thought that we would hit it off. At some point I thought we were going to date, after Makhathini I thought she was going to be mine. I don't regret us not dating, Manto is an amazing woman. When I walk out of here today, I'll make sure that I never put her through something like this ever again. She doesn't deserve it, she's a very important person in my life right now and I love her..

SOLE

Dr: Your scan seems fine, no tumor Me:

Thank you

Dr: Any headaches? Me:

No.. Not anymore

A few years ago I volunteered for a test study. They wanted to implant foreign tissues in their subjects,

NOVELSGURU.COM

just at the base of the hippocampus to see if it will improve their intelligence. Out of all the test subjects, the surgery was successful to only two subjects. Myself and to learn later on that the other subject was "Modrid". No wonder he was able to challenge me intellectually.

As long as the implant gives me no problems, I'm still keeping it. My phone beeped it was a message from Scorpion:

"We meeting up later on to discuss the heist, I'll text Kelso too".
Yes we still do heists but we no longer provoke the Italians to stay away from trouble.

Heists is the only way for us to survive..

SANDISIWE

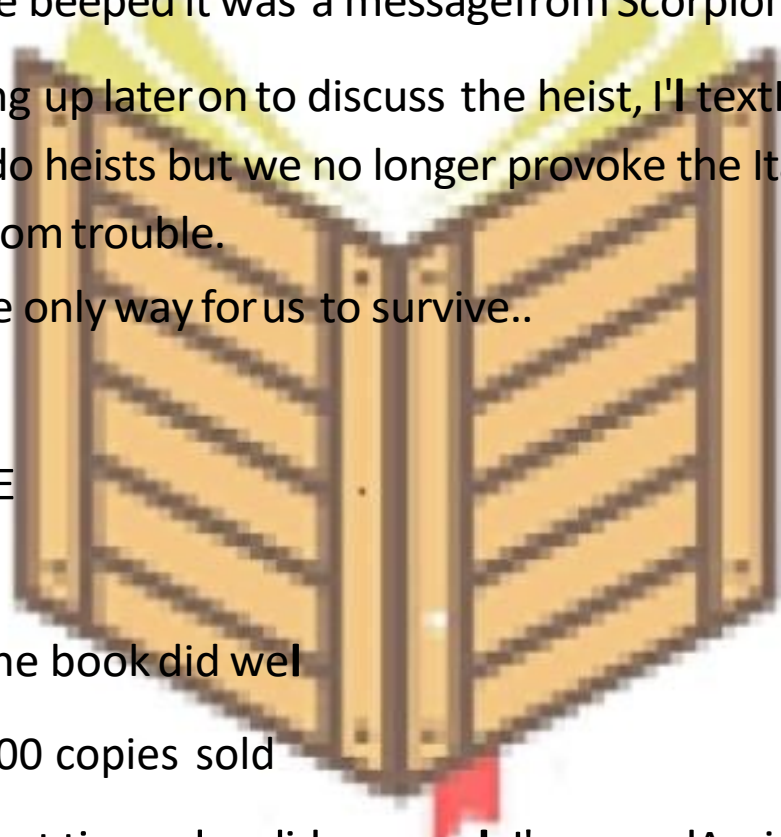
Me: Wow the book did well

Assistant: 300 copies sold

Me: For a first timer she did very well I'm proud Assistant:

It's impressive

NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Please plan the book launch for next weekend

Assistant: I'll get on it now.. Should I bring you coffee?

Me: No thank you.. I'm still fine Assistant: Yes

Mam'

She walked out and I started spinning in my chair.. This is what I have always wanted, to be my own woman. Who said it's not possible? Everything is possible. If you believe in something, stand for it..

RACHEL

After Khumalo left, I bathe Sli. She looked very much like our Sli, our Sli who passed on

Me: There you go baby

This coming Saturday I'll be attending my ex husband's funeral. He couldn't take it anymore, he decided to kill himself.

What a shame, what a great shame..

NOVELSGURU.COM

MODRID

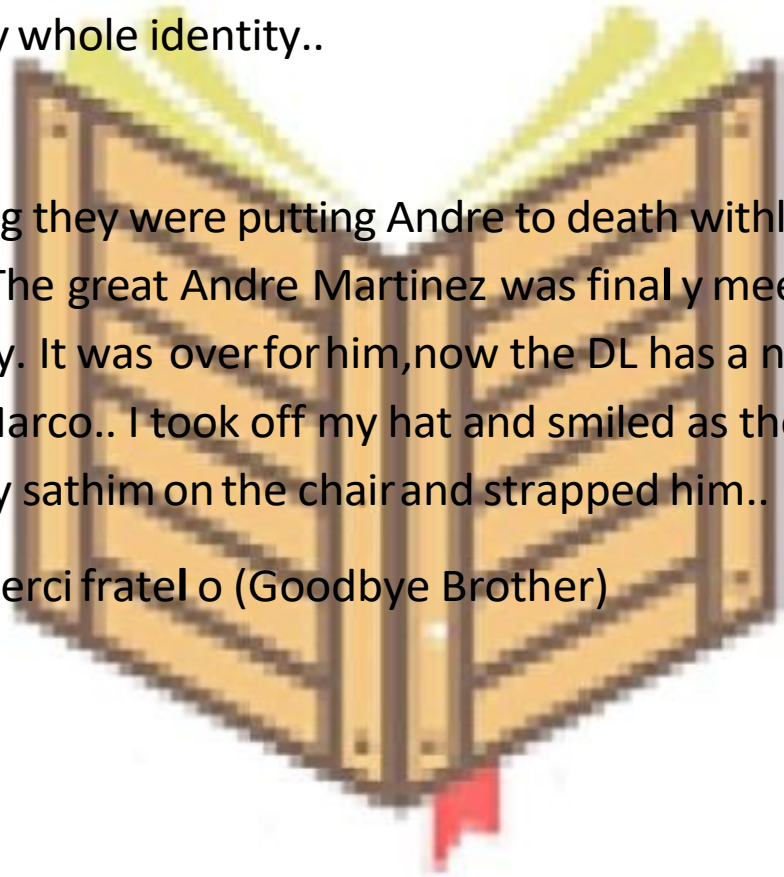
We were ushered in, then we took out seats. I fixed my hat, I no longer go by Modrid Martinez. I changed my name, I changed my whole identity..

This morning they were putting Andre to death with lethal injections. The great Andre Martinez was finally meeting his maker today. It was over for him, now the DL has a new member. Marco.. I took off my hat and smiled as they brought him in. They sat him on the chair and strapped him..

Me: Arrivederci fratello (Goodbye Brother)

MARCO

I read the newspaper, Andre made the front page. He was going to die faraway from home, in a



NOVELSGURO.COM

country that helped bring about his demise. After that, Andre was touchable.

I heard the doorbell ring, it was probably Kelso.. I went to open..

Kelso: Marco

Me: Kelso

Kelso: I'm here for my Daughter

Me: Come in

He walked in.. Me:

I'll get him

I made my way upstairs.. Kelso: Hey

I looked at him..

Kelso: Thank you

Me: For what?

Kelso: It's not easy loving another man's child. I know Nosi is safe with you I don't have to lie awake at night wondering if she's safe.. I commend you for



NOVELSGURU.COM

that

I nodded...

Me: You see, we don't have to hate each other after all

Kelso: I guess so

Me: I'll get her

*****THE END*****

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site
please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting
me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.
Dear Friends please download these books direct from
<https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African
books, and also supporting me Thanks.

NOVELSGURU.COM